

DUNGEON
HUNTER

던전
사냥
유

에이아 현대판타지

DUNGEON
HUNTER

Onhu

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dungeon Hunter

(던전사냥꾼)

by

Onhu

(온후)

Synopsis

I failed and will challenge again.

There is no room for failure in my second life!

72 dungeons and their owners that appeared on earth.

And the Awakened.

I am a hunter that will devour all of them.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rainbow Turtle @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edit by Jaspaaar @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Prologue

“Become stronger! In this world, those who are weak will die!”

Who was it?

A vicious battlefield.

The last words a man gave me before dying. My whole body trembled after hearing those words. I can't remember the name of the man but the words he spat out is still a vivid memory.

13 years old.

After being thrown into the battlefield, I only sought to live. The enemies didn't care that I was young. They would cut my throat if they had the chance.

So I was more desperate. I only thought about protecting my life. I carried the weapons left behind by the corpses and disciplined myself.

I watched those fighting from a ditch. Playing dead to survive on the battlefield and chewing on the flesh of isolated enemies.

A young demon living alone in an unkind place like the Demon World. The Demon World was always at war so I was always in the centre of the battlefield.

Time passed.

My vision expanded and my steps became faster. Like one of those mountain like fellows I used to look at, I wasn't weak anymore.

Most demons were no match for me. Instead they started to avoid me. I cut the throat of numerous enemies on the battlefield.

Thus I climbed to the seat of Earl.

Nobility. They were absolute beings that reigned at the top of the pyramid.

I didn't feel any sensation of pleasure. The Demon World was for the strong. All strong demons had a right to that position. It was natural for a strong person to occupy that seat.

'Stronger!'

This wasn't enough to satisfy me.

Insufficient. I was thirsty.

The Demon World's 12 Dukes and 4 Grand Dukes. They were my real targets.

And if they fell...I could sit in the vacant devil's seat. My dream was to sit on that seat and laugh while no one can disobey me.

Over time, I became quite famous in the Demon World. I made a name as a powerhouse.

My confidence and arrogance grew.

I realized that there was another sky. I challenged the Demon World's 4 Grand Dukes.

But they were really strong. For the first time, I realized what a large difference there was.

I evaded their eyes after losing the battle. So I hid my body in a remote area.

“Are you Randalph?”

A bleak land. It was a place where no signs of life could be seen. It was the first time someone had come here in days.

I was hostile to the man who spoke. And the man laughed.

“I am the devil Death Bringer.”

“ ... ”

I was lost for words. I've never met any devils but I had certainly heard of the name Death Bringer.

“Randalph. Randalph Brigsiel. I'm going to give you a chance. The last chance to be a devil!”

“You are crazy.”

I spat out bitterly. The self-proclaimed devil was discussing himself. Even a dog passing by would laugh. But that didn't stop him from continuing.

“From now on, you are a player in a game I created of this world's destruction. More land, more humans being exterminated! Depending on the results, you might be able to become a devil. If you become the strongest in the Demon World then you will be able to take that glorious position.”

Devil!

I had to swallow my saliva. What a sweet word. I didn't completely understand the game but that one word fully captured my attention.

I might've failed but I still hadn't lost my dream. I had continued training in order to once again challenge the Grand Dukes.

“Of course, you also have the opportunity to refuse.”

The man looked at me with a smile full of cynicism.

“I have to ask this annoying thing. Now, what will you do? Nod if you want to be a devil. Conversely, if you shake your head then I will disappear.”

The man looked at my head.

I couldn't see a dare in his eyes. The moment his eyes lingered on me, I felt like my body was stripped naked. I couldn't move like my entire body was in the clutches of a Leviathan.

I couldn't speak empty words. I never felt such a great presence from the Grand Dukes. All I could do was nod. And my mind became easy again once I nodded.

Yes. There was no other option. So!

*

When I came to, I was in a huge cave.

And the result was that I couldn't become the devil.

Of course, it was normal for things to be cut off in the process. I have no intention of reciting my long history of defeat.

The last war ended with the destruction of the earth and the devil was determined. Only the Demon World survived and Ariel ascended to the throne.

No...I might be alive but I will die soon. I've lost both arms and legs. In the end, I tried to solve everything alone and was greatly injured. I realized the limits of being alone far too late.

“Like a bug. Your survival instinct surpasses most demons.”

The Grand Duke Ariel had told me with hate filled eyes.

I laughed bitterly. If I had a chance to survive. I would find the time to become stronger. That's how I managed to survive until now.

But that seemed to have ended. My powerful survival instincts just led to my death.

It was up to here? In the end, wasn't I just a stepping stone for the devil?

Dammit. If I was given the opportunity again. Give me one more chance!

Just as I was welcoming death. A white light covered me. I was confused for a moment but I was able to know the identity of the light.

It was the essence of the gods that lost.

The planet Earth had become the arena for the demon competition. There were gods defending those places.

Humans rejected them due to the rapid development of science but the lost gods still loved them.

They told me a very long story. I didn't respond to it but I could understand one thing. Immediately after the story ended, I arrived on earth and a woman nodding was visible.

The moment the bright light completely soaked into my body.

[Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master) has been updated.]

[The dignity of an Earl! 200,000pt will be paid.]

[An atrocious number of mana has concentrated!

A very large force is being constrained.]

[The Beginner's Protection Period (240 days) has been applied.]

[A high level creature will randomly be summoned on the 1st floor of a dungeon. This creature will disappear after the

Beginner's Protection Period ends.] [Be careful! The creature summoned at random won't listen to the command of the Dungeon Master.]

...

I was able to return safely to the past.

Chapter 2-4: Beginner's Protection Period

The message window that filled the air disappeared as I looked around.

‘Really...back at the beginning.’

I was in a huge cave.

The blue light flaring that represented a ‘Dungeon Core’ was the only presence.

The right arm that I had lost ages ago now remained in front of me. It couldn’t be. Yet there was only one meaning in this situation.

I really came back to the past! It was unbelievable. Going back in time.

‘Status Window.’

I repeated it in my brain and a window rose in front of me.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: None
Stats Strength: 64 Intelligence: 42 Agility: 59 Stamina: 72 Magic: 50
Uniqueness: None

‘Ha! My abilities have gone back to the past.’

If my abilities were rolled back then it is natural to think that I also returned to the past. I gripped my fists tightly and my eyes lit up.

‘I have hope again. I was given a second chance.’

I had only one infinite desire when I was dying. My abilities were all at the initial stages but I didn’t regret it. Just being given the chance was sufficient.

Besides, I remembered all the methods to become stronger.

‘I won’t lose again.’

I turned and looked at the Dungeon Core. A stone the size of an adult body and emitting blue light onto the rocks was the core of the dungeon.

It was a treasure that had to be defended. I had lost it too quickly before. Now, I won't lose it no matter what happened. I had no intention of losing anything that was given to me.

Swiik.

Soon an even more intense blue light emerged from the core and formed a small image.

Little by little, it took shape until it was finally completed. As I expected, the completed shape was like a translucent fairy.

The palm sized fairy spun around. It had a cute and adorable appearance but the emerald hair and lantern eyes made it a beauty that couldn't be created with machines.

After a while, the fairy nodded and landed in front of me! She bowed to my belly button.

“Hello, Dungeon Master. I am the Dungeon Master's companion fairy, Yihi! Yihi!”

Yihi laughed brightly, revealing her teeth.

‘Yihi’ was her laugh. The name of a fairy that would be kept for their entire life was normally in this style. The owner of a clear mindset.

I spoke sincerely.

“It has been a while. It is good to see you.”

Meeting Yihi again...it had been exactly 25 years.

The fairy desperately did everything in order to help me. In the end, her effort was accepted without receiving anything in return.

At the time, I had been obstinate and wanted to solve everything alone. Now I was different.

I swear on the Dungeon Core; I will never lose Yihi again.

“Thank you for welcoming Yihi, Dungeon Master.”

Yihi waved a small wing. Although she was called a fairy, she was actually more like an insubstantial power relay. This was why Yihi named herself.

“But what do you mean by it has been a long time? Has Dungeon Master seen Yihi somewhere before?”

Yihi placed a finger to her lips while confused. Then her pink lips opened and she blinked her eyes.

“You just appeared. Is there any reason other than that?”

No matter how nice, I couldn't tell her anything. Fortunately I hadn't become that soft.

Yihi clapped her hands! Clap.

“Ah, that's right. Giving explanations to Dungeon Master is Yihi's mission. What are you wondering about? Yihi will tell you everything I know. Or do you want me to recite everything from the beginning?”

I didn't mind listening to Yihi's long explanation. But I firmly shook my head. I already knew the contents and I needed to handle something quickly.

“The description is okay.”

“Really?”

Yihi said as she blinked her wide eyes.

“Isn't this a completely different world? Doesn't it have a different operating system? I can give a short and easy to

understand explanation. Yihi will explain it.”

She pouted as her wings flapped weakly. I understood her anxious attitude.

A fairy was basically a chatterbox. Yihi was no different 25 years ago. If I accepted then she would be talking for several hours until her saliva dried up.

“I’m sorry but there is no need.”

“I understand.”

Her wings drooped. Then she sneaked a peek at me. She was trying to convince me to listen to her explanation with her attitude but it didn’t work.

“I will use the store.”

“Pant! You know about the store? Have you prepared before coming here? No, no way!”

Yihi jumped.

She was starting to make a big fuss. This was the response that I had roughly expected from Yihi.

“Yes, I can read minds.”

“Wah, how amazing. Master! Mind reading!”

‘So that’s why an answer isn’t necessary~.’ Yihi answered herself.

Yihi. She was the representative of simple ignorance.

“I will now open the store.”

Yihi coughed a few times after settling down and then spat into her hand. Soon letters rose in the air.

[Welcome to the Store of All Things.]

A countless number of things were arranged under the message window.

Points (pt) were necessary when purchasing.

I currently had 200,000 pt. I heard that the Dukes and Grand Dukes started with a lot more points.

There were things from common potions to very strong magic

armour. Some were so expensive they needed millions of pt.

But I wasn't looking for an expensive item. My eyes scrolled through the store's list quickly. Then a list called 'Skill Books' caught my eyes.

If skill books were purchased and used then skills could be learnt. It depended on the grade but there were very interesting skills. More pt were needed to learn high level skills.

How I regretted it during the time I lost the dungeon! Now I had gone back 25 years and could use the store again.

There were thousands of skill books. The quantity was also limited. Very good skills often only had one skill book and an expensive price. Perhaps if I bought it then it would disappear from the list of other demons.

Among them were skill books that I wanted.

'All of these.'

I moved my finger faster. Skill Combination (Rare), Far View (Normal), Magnification (Normal), Eyes Closed Tightly (Normal), Outstaring (Normal), and Calm (Exceptional Normal).

Yihi bit her fingers and made a 'obeobeo' sound as I chose six skills.

“M-Master? Shouldn’t you carefully use your points? It is hard to earn points. Yihi doesn’t recommend this. All of them really aren’t very great skills...”

Yihi tried to dissuade me but I had already clicked the buy button.

“Oh my god...!”

150,000 points combusted.

Flop! Yihi collapsed. She seemed to have received a big shock.

She should be.

A Dungeon Core would become stronger with their Dungeon Master and could help them receive the devil’s seat. If the dungeon was kept until the finale then they would be elevated a rank.

Yet 150,000 flew away as soon as she started...it was natural to panic.

Yiing!

There was something rolling around in an empty space. Like a whirlpool. It was the six skill books that I purchased.

The learning method was very simple. Hold the desired skill book and say ‘Learn.’

[Skill Combination (R) has been learnt. You can combine skills below the Rare rating.]

[Far View (N) has been learnt. Increasing the proficiency means you can see further.]

This was the skill learning process. I learnt the remaining skill books. But this was not the end.

“Skill Combination.”

[Please select the skills to combine.]

“Far View, Magnification, Eyes Closed Tightly, Outstaring and Calm!”

[Far View, Magnification, Eyes Closed Tightly, Outstaring and Calm has been selected.

Are you sure you want to continue?]

I nodded my head. This much preparation should be enough.

The highest grade of skill that could be combined was Exceptional Normal. Skills of the Rare grade or higher couldn't be combined.

Yihi was drooling as she stared at me with tearful eyes. Her eyes were asking what I was doing.

Skill Combination looked good at first glance. I could obtain skills not sold in the store but the odds were very low. A majority of the points would just fly away. In some cases, strange skills were created that made the person weaker.

But...

[Congratulations! Unique skill, 'Mind's Eye has been made by combining 3 skills that pierced the heart! Unique rated skills can only be learnt once.]

[Congratulations on being the first person to combine a unique skill. 30,000pt will be paid.]

My lips smiled.

Mind's Eye. It was a skill I wanted.

I used 150,000 points to aim for this. The compensation was also okay. 30,000 pt wasn't a small reward for something that didn't give a title.

“T-that is ridiculous!”

Yihi's voice was filled with astonishment. It seemed so unbelievable that her mouth dropped open.

It was understandable. In some cases, the price of a unique skill book was more than 1 million points. Yihi was also surprised that this unique skill cost 150,000 pt.

Once he opened the status window, the unique skill was added.

-Skill:

Skill Combination (R)- Can combine skills of the rare rating and below.

Mind's Eye-Can see the status window of the opponent.
Hidden Status, Potential has been opened.

There were only two. But I was reassured.

I used the status window to confirm the Hidden Status. There were some changes to the area below his stats.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel
Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master) Title: None
Stats Strength: 64 Intelligence: 42 Agility: 59 Stamina: 72 Magic: 50 Potential: (287/500)
Uniqueness: None Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (U)

Potential had been added. Skills had also been opened.

I nodded with satisfaction. Potential represented the possibilities involved in my growth.

I currently had 287 and the limit was 500. Once I raised all 5 stats

to 100, the potential would be raised to the threshold of 500.

Titles or good armour with stats was required to break through the limit. The Grand Dukes were the only ones who knew the method to break through the limit. Of course, the process wasn't necessary for me right now.

‘This is good to start off with.’

Mind's Eye was a deceptive skill.

Being able to see the opponent's status window was great but it means nothing if that person doesn't have talent.

A person who had the skill in his previous life was ‘Duke Dipella with 30 mouths.’

She liked to experiment with Skill Combination. Many of the points earned were used for Skill Combination. In the process, Dipella coincidentally obtained Mind's Eye.

It wasn't a secret because Duke Dipella had a large mouth. Unfortunately, only one person could learn the unique skill. If someone else used the same combination then Mind's Eye wouldn't appear.

Duke Dipella used Mind's Eye to make a very powerful army. She was a strong leader. The level of Duke Dipella rose above the crowd. She received many benefits as a result.

Duke Dipella exchanged things with other demons and garnered quite a number of points. Those points were used to buy skill combinations. As a result, her dungeon became famous for being impregnable among humans.

Even Grand Dukes who entered Duke Dipella's dungeon would be injured. The level was enough to reach rank 2.

‘It is worth pouring points into learning Mind's Eye.’

Duke Dipella had recklessly used points and stats into abusing Skill Combination so she couldn't compare to the Grand Dukes. Still, Mind's Eye was a useful skill.

“M-Master. What magic is this?”

“It is just magic.”

One of the most important skills had been secured. However, it hadn't ended yet.

I searched through the list of stores. I now had 80,000 points remaining. They needed to be used for maximum efficiency.

‘I need to raise my stats during the duration of the Beginner's Protection Period.’

The Beginner's Protection Period was 8 months.

It wasn't pleasant but he needed to be in the dungeon during that time.

During the Beginner's Protection Period, the Dungeon Master could only attack random creatures that appeared on the first floor. The number was small but they were tough opponents.

It was also true for other demons.

In other words, the Beginner's Protection Period applied to both humans and demons. For 8 months, the demons couldn't directly attack humans.

A human warrior that appeared would need time to adapt to a dungeon. The demons could use this time in the dungeon to relax or plan. That was the Beginner's Protection Period.

I used 20,000 pt to buy an alarm spell.

This skill was different as it used the magic of the Dungeon Core. If someone sneaked into the top floor of the dungeon then the Dungeon Core would sound an alarm. It was an insurance in case someone accidentally invaded his dungeon while training.

Of course, the possibility was close to zero but it was in case something bad happened.

Now lastly...

[Training Room Ticket – 20,000 pt on first use.

The points will be consumed when used a second time.]

I bought access to a training room without hesitation. I only had the opportunity to stay in this room for 8 months.

After the Beginner's Protection Period ended, I would be too busy with new dungeons. Of course, that was on purpose.

‘I need to obtain all the benefits possible within a dungeon.’

Unlike my previous life.

The answer shall be at the end of the road.

*

The training room.

I felt it the moment I entered. An abundance of mana! Just that fact alone made my body feel good.

I looked around slowly. It was called a 'room' but this place was more like a maze. The narrow paths bent and divided into multiple paths like the roots of a tree.

My goal was to see the end of this maze.

'In fact, this is the purpose. The training bonus.'

It could raise my stats very quickly. A weakened body would adapt and accept the original power properly. This was the concept of 'recovery.' In that sense, a mana rich room was the perfect place for me to regain my abilities.

But rather than raising my stats, clearing the training room would give more desirable benefits. The room could raise my stats but clearing it would give one reward.

It was a title. In fact, this wasn't clear. I only heard about it from a story. Still, the odds of getting something was huge. I hoped to acquire a title but points would also be good.

'A title is really tricky to obtain.'

A title was one of the ways to penetrate through blocked stats. It was possible to obtain multiple and duplicate titles but in my past life, I only obtained 2. I survived until the end and still only got 2. So it was difficult to obtain.

However, my Potential had a wall blocking it. Then a title was a

good existence for moments like that.

Especially for me. In the past, I couldn't raise my 5 stats to the threshold. I only achieved 93 points in Stamina. The value was relatively low compared to the others so I went through many troubles.

‘I only used the training room a few times.’

I lost dungeons faster than anyone. Naturally I couldn't take advantage of a long training.

A roaring fire burned inside me. I swore to commit to this life.

Anyway, a title could help me with the wall. Its importance was enough to mention it a few times.

There were restrictions to wearing titles but they could be duplicated. If someone didn't realize the significance of a title then they wouldn't become stronger.

“It has been a while since I've seen this.”

The concentration of mana blocked me from all sides.

A maze was a maze. It was packed so tightly that it was impossible to fly. And I confirmed the items held in the leather pouch hanging from my waist.

If I wanted, I could return to this room at any time but I vowed not to leave until it was cleared. Therefore, I used 10,000 pt to purchase a magic bag. I could put items in it up to 150 times the size of the bag.

It could be everything including food and water. Even a demon would starve after 8 months. I prepared more practical oriented food instead of taste. It was enough if it could stop my hunger.

I shut the leather pouch after checking the items.

‘Let’s run lightly first.’

The training room gave a challenge at each junction. I needed to complete the task at one of several branches in the path.

I ran until the first branching point. After 3 hours, an enormous room emerged. Dozens of primary weapons were placed in the middle of the room. There seemed to be one of each type.

[Please choose your weapon.]

The message window popped up in the air. I chose an iron sword with no regrets. And the other weapons disappeared like a mirage. The mana in the area became agitated. There was a suspicious mana surge.

“Grr...”

Soon a number of cracks appeared in the space. The number seemed to reach 300.

[Get rid of the wolf type Crazyhound! 300/300]

A demon could deal with these creatures with one finger. Crazyhound. But my stats were now restricted so the number of creatures was dangerous.

I used Mind’s Eye to check their status window.

Name: Crazyhound

Stats

Strength: 31

Intelligence: 14

Agility: 42

Stamina: 34

Magic: 9

Potential: (130/130)

Uniqueness: Temporarily summoned to a room. Has an intense hostility towards Randolph Briggsiel.

Skill: Berserk (Normal)

Mind's Eye can't read the description of the skill. But looking at the name of the skill and the name Crazyhound, I could roughly imagine the effect.

‘A mad dog running about.’

They were lacking abilities. The Crazyhounds rushed towards me from all sides.

“Krwaang!”

I didn't become impatient and blocked from all directions. Then I strongly kicked the first Crazyhound into another one. There was a hole in one direction and my sword headed in another direction.

The time between attacking and defending was 0.1 seconds and I didn't make any errors.

In a very short time.

There was a large number of opponents but it was simple to knock them out.

Kaekang! Kaekaekang!

The dead Crazyhounds dissolved and scattered everywhere.

They reverted back to mana. It was natural as they were summoned here in the first place with mana.

The number of Crazyhounds decreased rapidly. After getting rid of 100, the gap widened further and my sword indiscriminately moved between them.

I appeared to be swinging at random but the result was different. A Crazyhound died with every stretch of my wrist.

It took me approximately 10 minutes to eliminate all 300.

[Victory. You have exterminated all the creatures!]

Kukung!

The status window that was floating closed and the stone walls moved. The total number was five. I could take one of five paths.

‘I guess I should decide the rules when moving.’

I chose the one on the very right. I would continue moving to the right when arriving at a blocked crossroad.

Once my rule was established, I immediately moved forward holding the iron sword.

*

“So. You know. Yihi has been thinking...”

As I walked forward.

Yihi sat on my left shoulder while babbling. An insubstantial fairy. The Dungeon Core hadn't been with me for a long time.

I didn't ask any questions and created a unique combination skill. I caused a small amazement.

There was a small thought!

“Ah, my ears. You are insulting Yihi.”

Yihi grabbed her ears. Later, Yihi came up to my ears and started jabbering.

“Anyway. A unique skill is really hard to get. Totally expensive. I

couldn't get it in my entire lifetime. Yet Master just suk! Sak! Bbeong! And it was created. So Yihi!"

Yihi clenched her fists tightly like she was pledging something.

".....?"

"I give up on that idea. Yihi~"

And she just laughed foolishly. Yihi shrugged her shoulders.

"It is a waste of time to worry about it. Is it wise to report something like this?"

Yihi knew the meaning of words but there was a giant, invisible wall standing between her being wise.

"How great."

I blankly came up with an answer. Yihi took it as a compliment and flapped her wings.

"Yihi."

She seemed to be in a good mood. Yihi looked at my face for a moment and gave a silly laugh! And she rubbed her lips against my cheek.

She had the body of a young fairy but she was still a Dungeon Core. Therefore I didn't feel anything.

“ ... ”

I gently raised my hand to my shoulder as I walked. It was like driving a pesky mosquito away. Yihi who was bumped by the back of my hand flew away screaming. I was inwardly glad to see Yihi's behaviour but I had to train her from the beginning.

“Hing. So unfair.”

After a while, Yihi grabbed my collar and complained.

I raised my running speed. I had broken through 5 junctions. There was still a long way to go but I needed to give my body a little rest.

‘Just one more round until I take a break.’

Time was limited. I don't know if 8 months is good enough.

However, it wasn't good to abuse my body. Doing that could possibly destroy it. There was no need to be unreasonable.

I walked a little more and arrived at a junction. A message window instantly surfaced when I entered a huge room.

[Sit in meditation at the specified place. <Time remaining: 72:00]

[If you don't focus then the time will be reset.]

I looked at the rectangular shape in the centre of the room.

The message indicated that I couldn't move my feet for 3 days. Anyway, I was glad that I could rest for 3 days. I don't know why I was asked to meditate but it required mental concentration.

I lightly sat on the ground. And I regretted it.

*

23 days!

That was the time I spent in the meditation room. I spent 23 days on just meditation.

Paduduk!

I grinded my teeth together.

The slightest movement would release my spirit and reset time.

The system that could recognize my mental state was like a scary ghost.

I didn't know I had so many idle thoughts. Concentration was completely different. Not even concentration could empty my mind. The phrase in the message window was a trap.

Therefore, I took 23 days. If my luck was bad then I might have spent 8 months meditating.

'I heard about the training room 10 years later so I didn't hear about everything.'

That...any Dungeon Master could enter the training room. But the news only reached my ears after 10 years. By then, it was much more complicated.

'I can't lower my guard. I need to be a little more nervous.'

I thought it would be easy. It was necessary to be more tense. Beat my neck a few times. Prepare my mind so I could cope with anything that would emerge.

*

[Wield the sword 100,000 times.]

[Do a headstand and move 50 laps around the room.]

[Catch 10 of the 'Madness Rabbit.']

[Endure the 'cursed' state.]

Perhaps I don't have any luck?

I had that thought after receiving the mission at the 80th junction. Once I reached over 90 and was approaching 100, I thought that this was karma.

I laughed bitterly as I continued to explore the maze. There was still time left.

110, 120...149!

If I hadn't set a goal then I would've abandoned it. I didn't give up after passing through room 149 but was forced to swallow my saliva the moment I entered room 150. The room only had one path.

The end?

[Boss, fight against the guardian Arkal!]

The end!

My eyes flashed.

Arkal was an armoured creature 2 metres large. I rushed with all my strength towards Arkal. My stats had become incomparably stronger after traveling through 149 rooms.

Finally, my sword managed to make Arkal collapse.

Suddenly I was standing in front of the Dungeon Core. At the same time, a few message windows emerged.

[The training room’s last boss Arkal has been defeated!]

[The first training room has been cleared. The title ‘Indomitable Warrior’ has been given.]

[All branching points in the first training room has been surpassed. 300,000pt will be paid.]

I finally cleared it after it almost reached 8 months. I closed my mouth firmly as message windows surfaced in the air.

It was natural to check my status window afterwards.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: Indomitable Warrior (Exceptional Unique, all stats +2)

Stats

Strength: 76 (+2)

Intelligence: 48 (+2)

Agility: 72 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic: 62 (+2)

Potential: (338 +10/500)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind’s Eye (U)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 64 Intelligence 42 Agility 59 Stamina 72 Magic 50
Potential (287+0/500)

Strength 78 Intelligence 50 Agility 74 Stamina 82 Magic 64
Potential (338+10/500)

Remarkable growth. The important thing was the title.

Indomitable Warrior. An exceptionally unique title!

Title, skills and items also had ratings like normal, rare, unique, epic and legend. Among them, those with 'Exceptional' after the rating was slightly superior.

It didn't reach the Epic rating but it was superior to Unique. An Exceptional Unique rating.

I had almost never heard of someone obtaining the Epic rating. Until the very end. However, Indomitable Warrior could be comparable to Epic.

A title that increased all my stats. That in particular made it better. It was rare to find things that could enhance stats.

I have a total of 348 stats. This was enough to make me confident about being at the forefront of the 72 demons.

'Is this the pleasure after all the suffering?'

A proverb I often heard from humans. It was like they said. The 300,000 pt was worth the 8 months of work.

Now..."

My objective was achieved.

The Beginner's Protection Period was almost over. The points

were also sufficient.

I lightly nodded.

‘It is time to strengthen the dungeon.’

Chapter 5-8: Easter Egg

March 14th, 2016.

People would never forget this day.

72 dungeons simultaneously appeared with no warning on this day. The dungeons were large enough to be seen with the naked eyes so it was natural that they would block the sky.

People were at a loss from the giant shadow. The scale was so unrivaled that they had no choice but to be overwhelmed.

There were a number of assumptions such as an alien's house, the dwelling place of a god, a subterranean world, etc.

In the end, some brave people were unable to overcome their curiosity. And most people who entered didn't come back.

The survivors who returned from the dungeon alive trembled as they mentioned the monsters. Some people gained a mental illness and others committed suicide.

Then an American man called John posted a video on YouTube. It was a video of inside the dungeon that John took with a mobile phone and it caused a great shock to the world.

The dungeon was filled with all types of creatures. They were

monsters that didn't exist in this world. Any living thing was their enemy! The human body was simply torn apart in front of them.

“Hwiyu~ Is this CG?”

“How terrible!”

“This video isn't a composite image. There is also no CG.”

“The earth will perish in 2020. It is due to these monsters.”

The world was embroiled in unrest as unsanctioned information spread across every country. YouTube, SNS, blogs, personal broadcasting, newspapers etc. Every type of media spread the topic.

Doubts were raised as more days passed. Discord grew over time. After a lot of speculation, the United States Defense Minister gave an official announcement about the dungeon.

“There is a cave. A dungeon. A common place found in fantasy novels have emerged here. We mobilized state of the art equipment in order to observe the inside of the dungeon but failed. No matter how small it is, the creatures inside will attack. Outside the dungeon....there is an invisible barrier that will invalidate all attacks.”

Gulp!

A melting pot of tension. The story of the dungeons was a hot topic in 2016. Information about it started pouring in.

The Defense Minister drank water and continued.

“We have dispatched the special forces to search inside a dungeon. However, firearms don’t seem to work properly inside the dungeons. It is like the space is distorted as bullets won’t fly in the desired direction and bombs won’t explode. We were about to capture some weak creatures but there was intervention from a strong presence. The strike was so quick that it wasn’t visible! We were finally forced to retreat.”

All the reporters and people watching the video were surprised.

It had been several months since the dungeons appeared. Yet it was surprising that the United State’s first words mentioned retreat

More than anything, the fact that modern firearms didn’t work inside the dungeons caused a real shock. The creatures were invincible inside the dungeon.

“Then....is there nothing we can do?” Won’t it be a big deal if they emerge outside?”

A reporter raised their hands and asked a question.

The Defense Minister shook his head.

“The creatures are only tricky inside the dungeons. No matter how powerful they are, they can’t deal with modern weapons once they emerge outside.”

The weapons became useless inside the dungeons. They were able to obtain some data from the creatures after risking their lives. As a result, they concluded that they could kill the creatures outside the dungeon despite considerable damage.

Guns were sufficient against the weak creatures. In contrast, there was a higher probability of a bullet hitting an ally inside the dungeon. So they didn’t commit troops.

Another reporter asked with a puzzled expression.

“Then are we letting the risk stay?”

The Defense Minister gave a shallow smile.

“Have you heard about a Hero? In the east, they are known as brave people.”

“Is that word being spoken these days?”

“Yes, that’s right. They are the only ones that can face the creatures in the dungeon.”

Dungeons had appeared. However, it wasn't just the dungeons.

Heroes also emerged.

In other words, they had awakened. They appeared at the same time as the dungeons.

They called themselves Heroes. Their physical state was outside the limit of normal humans.

In particular, their attacks were fatal to the creatures. The creatures that didn't die from guns were easy to handle.

“More than anything else...the Core will also give aid. It can even be called a Philosopher's Stone.”

Buzz!

There was an uproar among the reporters.

A Philosopher's Stone could be called a 'complete' material.

That's why it was strange that those words would emerge from the mouth of the Defense Minister.

But they were forced to close their mouths as the Defense

Minister continued.

If they hunted a number of creatures then a Core would emerge. The Core was the size of a baby's heart but it contained considerable energy. It looked like a burning stone. And the conflagration would continue for some time. It also produced other energy. It could also be called New Energy.

If the Core was sprayed on wounds, they would be healed without a trace and pouring a little bit into water could cure illnesses. It could also enhance virility or make the body younger.

This alone was worthy for it to be called a Philosopher's Stone.

“Ha....”

“That is ridiculous.”

Very few people were aware of this fact. But today it was revealed to the world.

At the same time, the reporters were puzzled. Why did he come forward with this information?

The United States would've been able to obtain an astronomical amount of money with this information.

But the United States thought differently. 72 dungeons existed.

The secret would be exposed one day. They were determined to use it to take the initiative.

Especially with the number of Awakened slowly increasing. A secret society would continue to cause huge chaos. In fact, that was on everybody's lips at the moment. Humans were an easy race to turn evil. They produced a lot of problems in society.

That was why the United States determined that they couldn't hide their rotten parts. They revealed the secrets of the Core.

“We don't discriminate against the Awakened from any area. We will treat everyone equally.”

The reason the United States did this was simple. It was in order to attract more Awakened!

At first they tried to destroy the dungeons but soon realized the astronomical value of the Cores. The value of the Core was incomparable to oil. Nothing in the world could compare to the Core.

There was a limited number of dungeons but the creatures were terrible. A lot of Awakened were needed to obtain the Cores.

In the near future. If they were successful in their domestication...in addition to solving the world's energy problem, the human race might 'evolve' further.

The Heroes would explore the dungeons and dig up the truth. The Core at the end of the dungeon couldn't be compared to anything. This was an opportunity for the human race to reach the truth. At least they thought so.

“But is the Core really a complete material?”

The reporters still couldn't trust those words.

The Defense Minister laughed at this.

“We are willing to share the Core we have. Any country can make a formal request for it. They can check the purpose of the Core for themselves.”

The United States shared the Core immediately after the press conference ended. It didn't take a long time to demonstrate the effect of the Core.

And....

This became the Era of Heroes.

*

‘The end of the Beginner's Protection Period is approaching.’

Immediately after breaking through the training room, I examined the internal situation of the dungeon using the Dungeon Core. Everything was empty except for the 1st floor but I still needed to determine the status.

‘I think the situation should be fine despite my neglect.’

I couldn’t manage the domestic affairs when stuck in the training room. Looking at the status of the 1st floor, it seemed like it would endure for another few months.

‘But I can’t neglect it.’

There was a need to raise the dungeon guards and make them stronger. In order to do this, I needed to go through each floor organically.

“Domestic Mode.”

Syuong!

[Entered Domestic Mode.]

The Dungeon Core emitted a hologram.

It was a small sized model of the dungeon. There was a total of 31

floors and everything was empty except the 1st floor. In contrast, the 1st floor had countless small, blue dots.

Some red dots were visible at the entrance which meant humans had entered the dungeon.

‘32,144 Kobolds. 87,112 Goblins. 12,246 Earthworms. Meat Rats... around 400,000? That is too many. I need to reduce it.’

I needed to properly control the ecology of the dungeon. In particular, the meat rats were ferocious creatures that would attack all living things in the area due to hunger. They would even eat their own kin.

‘There isn’t a natural enemy. But the number can’t increase.’

If the meat rats were installed on the 1st floor then they would be the only creature remaining there. It was an unhealthy phenomenon.

I pondered for a moment before asking Yihi who was snoozing on my shoulder.

“What is a predator of the meat rats?”

“Huup! Yes, yes? Yihi wasn’t asleep!”

“Wipe up your saliva.”

Yihi wiped her drool with her hands.

“Hmm. The predator of the meat rats? Yihi knows this very well. Cats, snakes and weasels.”

A cat or weasel would be easily hunted by kobolds or goblins. I needed to take care of the physical relationships between different members of the ecosystem.

“What about snakes? I hope for cheaper ones.”

The creatures would also cost dungeon points. Especially when needing a considerable number of predators. I needed to release something that could suppress the meat rats.

“The cheapest Ale Snake costs 20 points.”

The Ale Snake was among the lowest grade of creatures. Instead, it could quickly adapt and assimilate into the surrounding environment. They were suitable rivals for the meat rats who had poor eyesight.

They were also suitable opponents for brave warriors who entered.

“How many should I release?”

“This is how Yihi sees it. Wouldn’t 1,000 solve the problem?”

That would cost 20,000 pt. It was the value of a magic item. However, it was a necessary investment to preserve the ecology of the 1st floor.

“I’ll buy 1,000 Ale Snakes.”

A message window came up at the same time.

[1,000 Ale Snakes have been purchased for 20,000 pt.] [Specify a location to release within the dungeon.]

“Randomly on the 1st floor.”

[1, 000 Ale Snakes have been randomly placed.]

As soon as the message window disappeared, the number of blue dots on the hologram increased.

Purchasing large quantities of low grade creatures was very efficient. Their intelligence was too low and they wouldn’t follow the Dungeon Master’s command. They would just proliferate and die.

This investment was used to defend the dungeon from warriors. The 1st floor had been tidied up. Now it was time for the rest of the floors.

‘I need to adjust the difficulty of the 4th floor to make it slightly trickier. This will allow the sense of accomplishment when getting stronger. Adventures, exploration...releasing a few magic goods will release more motivation to become stronger.’

I intended to help them on various fronts.

A plan to cultivate the Heroes! This was one of several plans I set up.

The first step would be released right now.

I tapped my forehead and started to worry about the positioning of the creatures. The difficulty couldn't climb too rapidly. The stairs needed to be placed step by step in order to be a benefit.

If the difficulty increased too suddenly then the Heroes might not climb the dungeon or would wait until they became stronger.

This would take too much time. In addition, I couldn't get the points if the creatures were too strong. The points invested could be reclaimed.

‘I will mix a handful of Orcs on the 2nd floor. Their breeding rate means I don’t need a lot of them. A few kobold and goblin leaders on the 3rd floor....’

The leaders of the various creatures were more organized. I should be choosy. The leaders were much better than the others in their species. It was necessary to use points to buy them for complex tasks.

‘100,000 points will fly away in an instant.’

I bought them in bulk so all the points seemed to evaporate in an instant. I had 240,722 pt so I needed to save it as much as possible.

‘The Demon World auction is held in 4 months. I need to buy things from there. It will be good to have more points.’

The Demon World held an auction once a year. The auction was held in the name of the Death Bringer. Precious items not sold in stores could be purchased at the auction.

240,000 points was insufficient for what I wanted to buy. At least 1 million points would be good.

‘In particular, purchasing a half-dragon is necessary.’

Slaves were available at the Demon World’s auction. Creatures purchased at the auction could be imported into the dungeon. Sometimes the Guardian of the Dungeon Core would come out.

The Dungeon Core was the most central and important thing in the dungeon. Of course an outstanding Guardian was required to defend it.

A half-dragon had the blood of a dragon running through it!

He was one of the guardians of a Grand Duke. He was renowned in his previous life as a demonic lancer who used a demonic spear. He was ranked in the top 10 of demon creatures. His strength could be felt through the skin.

Krasla was one that especially killed humans brutally. He poured his boundless hatred towards humans. Cruel demons would watch him with eyes filled with admiration. He wielded a spear and took the lives of countless brave humans.

That guy would be emerging in this auction. I couldn't remember the winning price but it was considerable. 240,000 points was probably not good enough.

‘A creature that is measured among the strong.’

If I could get my hands on Krasla then I could get the 1st ranking. Even if I had to use all the points in my hand. He was violent but all slaves had marks on them that wouldn't allow them to betray their masters. A Guardian of a Dungeon Core would get plenty of exercise.

‘I wish I can earn more points....’

I could get points if the creatures in the dungeon killed the heroes. But this was still the early days. Killing the weak warriors would only give a few points.

Doesn't that mean I have to kill a lot of them? It would cause ridicule if I asked that question. I needed to wait for the golden goose to lay its egg.

‘Can I achieve something right now?’

Accomplishing a significant achievement could gain points.

Things like combining a unique skill combination for the first time or clearing out the training room. In addition, I needed to trade with some demons but the 4 Grand Dukes are so hostile that demons won't want to do business with me.

‘Beginner's Protection Period....hrmm. Something like wiping out all the monsters on the 1st floor might emerge.

I never heard stories about things obtained from the Beginner's Protection Period. This was a busy time where demons were adapting. But I could still gain achievements.

Now my skills hadn't died. My bad lucks means something like a Black Warrior or Dark Knight might be summoned.

Right now my skills were high ranking among the demons. The effect of the performance and title from the training room was enough to make me even with a Duke. Of course, they would become stronger as time passed but I had the upper hand for now.

‘I might not necessarily be first.’

The result at the beginning might not carry through. However, first time achievements were valuable. It would give benefits.

Dukes and Grand Dukes were in a different position and didn’t need to think about their 1st floor being wiped out. Their capacity at the starting point was different from others. Of course, they could easily wipe out the randomly summoned monsters.

If they didn’t like adventures then there would be no need to leave and other demons couldn’t touch them.

‘I need to do this in 15 days.’

There was no time left. The Beginner’s Protection Period only lasted for 15 more days.

I made the decision to exit Domestic Mode and moved to the 1st floor of the dungeon.

Kim Yong-woo.

He was a 'Starter' who awakened at the same time that the dungeons appeared.

South Korea had 5 famous Starters. One of them was Kim Yong-woo.

Of course, each of the Awakened were different from the others. He settled on a dungeon invasion strategy where he could quickly build up 'wealth.' Hunting for the Cores that had astronomical value.

He created a guild called Heaven's Will. The other four Starters also operated their own guilds but came second to Heaven's Will.

The inner circle of the guild could make use of the Core. There were those with the jobs of blacksmiths or enchanters. They made weapons for easier dungeon hunting. They had sold weapons to other Awakened and already accumulated assets worth billions of won.

'Life has reversed.'

He had only been awakened for 7 months. His previous life consisted of newspaper delivery, milk delivery and construction work. Now he was so wealthy, his guild owned a building in Gangnam.

‘Yong-woo ah, life is herbal medicine. Herbal. It is like a reversal on the 9th inning with 2 outs, kukuku...’

He experienced luxurious days he never dreamt about since awakening.

Kim Yong-woo. He was one of the chosen characters.

Heaven’s Will was named because he believed he was selected by the heavens. So what if there were a thousand orphans? What was the big deal with college graduates?

There were many in South Korea with money. He didn’t know it before but South Korea was a really good place to live when you have money. If you didn’t have money. You wouldn’t become anything.

Every day he would ignore the people now under his feet. Swimming in private pools in the morning and hot nights spent with models. Every day was like that. Previously he wanted to die dozens of times a day.

Now he was having fun on a daily basis. A laugh emerged from his mouth.

Was this a difference in perception? A place that made people? Like a butterfly evolving from a caterpillar, he was a completely different existence.

He even thought of the other Awakened as insignificant. He truly believed that the heavens selected him. In South Korea, he was the king.

“Shit....”

But he was currently inside a dungeon. This place was in South Korea but it wasn't South Korea.

He could make tons of money from the creatures in the dungeon.

Kim Yong-woo frowned at the wall. Blood was flowing down his thigh. His coat was ripped. The ripped cloth was tied tightly around his thigh.

It would be nice if he had a potion created from a Core but right now he had nothing. He also had no weapons because he ran away and abandoned his colleagues.

‘Those dogs. Stupid assholes.’

All 12 members of the team except for himself had died. He didn't care that he was the only one alive.

No, the real problem was the monster that attacked them.

Rumours had drifted among the Awakened. Stories of monsters

in the dungeons with different standards. It was impossible to come back alive after encountering those monsters.

Kim Yong-woo had laughed at them. He had entered dungeons dozens of times. He saw the same midget creatures every time. He was also confident in his abilities.

He raised his stats more eagerly than anyone else. Even his sleeping time was reduced as he devoted himself.

A large monster coming out. He never thought that way. Yet....today, the creatures had brought a monster. It was a situation where they aggroed it.

Kim Yong-woo's confidence was shattered. The 12 team members were torn apart like paper.

“Huk, huk....!”

Just visualizing it caused him to gasp quickly. This wasn't a rumour inflated delusion. It was the real thing. It wasn't over-rated but underestimated.

He was like a beggar. Wasn't keeping his life like winning the lottery?

However, the possibility of that was low. He ran away without looking back but he ended up heading deeper into the dungeon. In a sense, it was like there was still a stranglehold around his neck.

‘I-I was selected. Heaven’s choice!’

Kim Yong-woo gritted his teeth together. And shuddered.

He was selected so he couldn’t die. That’s right. This was an ordeal from the heavens. The heavens had placed trials for humans to defeat. It was impossible that he wouldn’t pass the trials.

Grrrr!

At the same time, his body became paralysed from fear. Kim Yong-woo slowly turned his head.

Saliva was dripping down. It had an appearance similar to a human but it wasn’t a human. Kim Yong-woo watched saliva drip down from the mouth of the monster dressed in black armour.

‘This is a trial. So this is an illusion. No, I’m still dreaming!’

However, the reality hadn’t changed. The humanoid monster in the armour was still there. It had fangs and nails sharp enough to pierce through skin.

A monster outside the normal standards. A monster that wiped out the team. He never thought there would be two of them.

Kim Yong-woo sensed his own death the moment he made eye

contact with the creature.

‘Please, please....’

The creature approached. Kim Yong-woo closed his eyes.

Grr?

The creature stopped a few steps from him. Then it didn’t move for a while.

Kim Yong-woo opened his shut eyes.

“Dark Warriors...they are a bother.”

At the same time, he saw a man standing on the other side of the creature. He was good looking compared to the creature. A cold atmosphere could be felt from him.

But he didn’t seem as ferocious as the creature. He also had a sword at the waist. Nevertheless, he had a leisurely air around him.

There was a reason why the creature wasn’t jumping at the man.

The man glanced at Kim Yong-woo.

“A guest has come?”

“Ah, no...no, I....”

Kim Yong-woo spoke incoherent gibberish. It was different from his previous cursing attitude. He instinctively felt like begging.

The man said nothing. He just stared at Kim Yong-woo with a ‘hrmm’ expression.

“Still immature.”

What did he mean by immature? But Kim Yong-woo didn’t ask any questions. There was no possibility of asking. He felt like the man viewed him as food, just like the monster.

Grrr!

And he was ignored.

The monster began to move gradually. Then the man pulled out his sword.

Kim Yong-woo’s eyes became as large as a lantern. Heroes with the blacksmith profession. They were able to use a Core to smelt a sword. The Core and iron was mixed together and a very powerful sword was born. The Core would give off a smell.

It was the scent of magic but Heroes with a strong affinity could smell it. Kim Yong-woo was an Awakened that could smell the scent of magic.

And the black sword was giving off a very intense smell.

‘How can a Core smell like this? Is there a blacksmith that can refine the Core to that extent?’

There wasn’t anything within his knowledge. He heard it was only possible with a rare grade skill. There was a rumour that an Awakened in China had a skill of that rating.

But that was an attack related skill. There was no one with a rare secondary skill in smelting. Kim Yong-woo had gathered a considerable amount of information on each Awakened.

Kang!

At that time, the battle began.

The man attacked the creature with his sword. Oh my god. The sword sliced through previously impervious skin! But the attacks did not stop there.

Kang! Kang! Kakang!

Kim Yong-woo didn’t even think of fleeing as he swallowed his

saliva. The man's movement was more than he could imagine. His eyes couldn't see it properly.

However, it was the same for the creature. It's head was targeted and it couldn't retreat. Only once. It felt like one attack would cause the creature to lose its head.

‘The story has changed?’

Creatures with intelligence? Once again, there was no doubt about such a thing. But that didn't explain the man fighting the creature now.

Kim Yong-woo felt a bigger shock than when he was Awakened. It felt like he was being eaten by rough waves.

He thought he was an elephant. Other humans were regarded as ants. Sometimes he would send curses to the ants. They might become heated up but their level wasn't enough to fight him. An ant couldn't afford to anger an elephant.

But...Kim Yong-woo was like an ant in that man's eyes. If he was truly a chosen person then that man wouldn't be in the same bracket.

The tower that was supporting the man called Kim Yong-woo started to collapse.

Chwack!

At that moment, the creature's right arm was cut off. The arm that was harder than steel was severed.

Kung!

The creature fell down on one knee. The man didn't hold back. He instantly placed his sword at the creature's neck.

Degururu....

The creature's head rolled towards Kim Yong-woo.

“Huup!”

Kim Yong-woo stared blankly at it with a shocked face and tried to retreat. But there was a wall behind him. There was no hole to fall back to.

The creature that had been his foe had been alive just moments ago. Kim Yong-woo was so frightened that he probably wouldn't have notice if he wet his pants. The death of the creature just increased his fear of dying.

He sneaked a glance at the man. A pale face. His spirit couldn't calm down.

He had to admit it. The man was an elephant. And he was

considered an ant. He would die if stepped on. An elephant wouldn't feel remorse for killing an ant.

Kim Yong-woo urgently tried to wake up his body after having that thought. He bowed with his forehead to the ground.

“Spare me....”

The man's eyes turned towards Kim Yong-woo.

“Now you can safely escape from the dungeon.”

Kim Yong-woo's body trembled and he felt like crying.

“Y-you will really spare me?”

“Do you want me to kill you or something?”

“Do you need money or....”

“It would be better if I kill you right now.”

Kung! Kim Yong-woo bowed his head again.

“S-spare me!”

The man clicked his tongue.

“Go before I change my mind. 3 seconds. 3, 2....”

“T-thank you!”

Kim Yong-woo greatly humbled himself on the spot. Then he ran towards the entrance of the dungeon without looking back.

The man gazed after him for a while with a hungry expression.

*

[Unbelievable achievement! All the monsters summoned for the protection of the beginners have been struck down!]

[100,000pt will be paid.]

The end of a 15 day journey.

I managed to complete it minutes before the Beginner's Protection Period would end.

‘It was almost too late.’

I shook my head as I checked the remaining time. There was only

3 minutes left. This time I was even forced to use my blood.

‘It is unfortunate that I am not the first.’

Sweat was flowing down my forehead. I wanted it but I hadn’t expected to be the first one.

‘100,000 points is still a decent performance.’

The first person who achieved it probably got 150,000~200,000 points so I regretted being a bit late. I cleaned it up neatly.

But 100,000 points wasn’t a small number. If the achievement window wasn’t displayed then someone else had received it.

‘Achievements not open to the public...’

Achievements didn’t exist indefinitely. The vast majority would disappear after being received 5 times. Therefore most demons didn’t disclose it unless to their faction.

Humans or solo players wouldn’t know about these achievements. That’s why killing the creatures randomly produced during the Beginner’s Protection Period was half a guess.

But I knew the approximate principle achievements. There was a high possibility I could get the related rewards.

3 minutes later, a message window flashed.

[The Beginner's Protection Period is over!]

[The total results of the 8 months.]

[Four achievements have been earned. The achievements gives a grand total of 1,250 points!!]

[Class 3 Easter Egg has been opened.]

....Um?

At first I was baffled by the phrase. Shouldn't the normal phrases about the Beginner's Protection Period appear?

Yet the two lines below that were unfamiliar. Furthermore, the Easter Egg.

I never heard of such a thing. I saw it for the first time. It was at that moment.

['Treasure of the Shadow Emperor' has been opened.

In the Mado Era, magic had developed enough for dragon breeding. The Shadow Emperor was the worst and greediest tyrant of the Mado Empire. He was acknowledge as a god by the humans and his vast legacy has been sleeping for thousands of years.]

[Rewards list has been updated. You can select only one reward.] [Atasha's Sword (Epic), Strength Potion (Medium), King Ma-ryong's Horn, Homunculus, Cruel Army Commander....]

[Warning! The heart of the Hell Monarch sleeping among the treasure has awakened!] [Warning! The Hell Monarch is trying to invade your soul!]

‘Kakaka! Stupid gods! I waited for this point. I will be resurrected. Quietly in this flesh....?! W-wait a minute, this is? This is the body of a mere demon! Kuaaak!’

[An unknown soul has destroyed the Hell Monarch.] [The Heart of the Hell Monarch has arrived safely.] [Reward selection has been completed.]

“Cough!”

I grabbed the heart pouring red blood and collapsed to the ground. And my body started shaking like I had the chills. The heart disappeared into my body.

“Kkuck.”

Ulkeok!

Numerous amounts of blood poured out of my mouth. Following that, blood flowed out of other pores include my nose and eyes. The feeling of blood draining out of my body!

My spirit couldn't endure it.

“Heuu....”

It was like all the pain I've suffered in my life had combined right now. My body twitched like an earthworm. But I never let go of a thin lifeline.

This occurred too fast to prepare for. The pain was only growing stronger. A shallow moan emerged from my mouth.

It wasn't long before I lost consciousness.

An unknown amount of time passed.

“Hoo.”

I sighed heavily on the spot. The blood had been washed clean. The pain had disappeared like a lie. It felt like just a dream.

I would've dismissed it as a dream except for Yihi staring at me with anxious eyes.

“Master! Are you okay?”

“Did I fall down?”

“It has been 3 days. Yihi thought Master was dying. Sniffle! Foolish Master. Sea squirt, sea cucumber, sea anemone.....”

Yihi hit me in the side with a teary face and runny nose. But I had no time to take care of Yihi.

I shook my dizzy head and thought about the situation before I lost consciousness.

‘Class 3 Easter Egg. Heart of the Hell Monarch.’

I was looking the rewards list when the Heart of the Hell Monarch had appeared out of nowhere. It appeared and forcefully transplanted itself into my body.

But the soul of the Hell Monarch had been extinguished for some reason. The only thing left behind was shuddering levels of pain.

‘What happened to my body?’

But now my body was light. It couldn't be compared to before. I moved my body through multiple actions.

‘Perhaps?’

Something might've changed to update my status window. I stopped my movements and opened the status window.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel
Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master) Title: Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

Stats

Strength: 77 (+2)

Intelligence: 63 (+2)

Agility: 73 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic: 82 (+2)

Potential: (375 +10/500)

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has been transplanted
(Full strength hasn't been fully opened).

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (U)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 78 Intelligence 50 Agility 74 Stamina 82 Magic 64
Potential (338+10/500)

Strength 79 Intelligence 65 Agility 75 Stamina 82 Magic 84
Potential (375+10/500)

“...Crazy.”

A sound emerged. I was surprised at the extent of the situation.

My Magic and Intelligence had risen significantly. 15 Intelligence, 20 Magic...I never would've believed it if I hadn't seen it directly. And there was still room to rise.

If Intelligence was high then my speed at learning things would rise. Naturally this meant that skill proficiency would also rise quickly. I could resist more statuses and skills.

Magic increased the destructive power of skills. No matter how good a skill was learnt, it was no use with low magic. In addition, there was a close relationship with dominance. My charisma?

Those two stats were inherently low for me. The stats were good but they weren't easy to raise. However, that persistent problem was solved to some extent with the Heart of the Hell Monarch. I'm grateful that I only need to raise Intelligence a little more.

‘An unexpected gift.’

It was different if I lost control of my body but I had fully accepted the heart. There were many unknown things about the world and this situation fit with it.

I gave a smile.

‘The condition to open it is clearing several achievements in the Beginner's Protection Period....’

The score seen earlier was the grade based on the achievements. And the Heart of the Hell Monarch popping up from the Easter Egg was unexpected. A warning message had popped out twice.

And there was a reason I was convinced of it.

‘Compared to ones shown on the rewards list, the Heart of the Hell Monarch is trash. Is this really a reward of the 3rd degree?’

The Heart of the Hell Monarch was completely different from the epic Atasha’s Sword and King Ma-ryong’s Horn. I didn’t believe that it would be the level 3 compensation.

‘Either the Heart of the Hell Monarch is a mistake or it has created a loophole in the system....’

I stiffened and my anxiety increased.

‘Don’t tell me I’m on an unexpected road?’

The transplant was already completed. If I tried to remove it then I would surely die. I believe that the Heart of the Hell Monarch intercepted the system. Doesn’t that mean I had to accept the side effects?

‘At any rate, it feels good.’

It was somewhat confusing but this was an opportunity to

become stronger in the future. The unexpected harvest made me feel good.

“Master?”

Yihi blinked her eyes with confusion at the smile.

*

The incident was settled after 3 days. I modified my plans for the future while reinforcing the dungeon. It needed to be re-established in accordance with my level.

[Points Remaining: 324,579]

‘I didn’t earn any more points.

I frowned when checking the points. When I last checked, I had 240, 722 points. After adding 100,000 points, I had only earned 857 more points.

‘The level of the humans are still too low.’

I have no choice but to work for more achievements. The only way to quickly earn points was with achievements.

The Heroes needed to be safely raised in the dungeon. The goose that would lay a golden egg was still young.

‘The human I saw a few days ago didn’t have bad potential for a human.’

I had seen a human a few days ago. The name was Kim Yong-woo? He was scared and looked clumsy but the potential wasn’t bad. There was enough growth potential.

I used Mind’s Eye to gaze at his status window.

Name: Kim Yong-woo
Occupation: Hero (Warrior) Title: None

Stats

Strength: 38

Intelligence: 30

Agility: 36

Stamina: 34

Magic: 13

Potential: (150/322)

Uniqueness: 'Heaven's Will' Guild Master

Skill: Basic Swordsmanship (N)

This potential was strong among humans. If he grew up quite a bit then he would be able to hunt creatures alone. My memory couldn't recall a human with that name. There was no uniqueness but his potential was enough.

'Heaven's Will. I've also heard of it.'

I placed my hand on my jaw and pondered. My memory wasn't bad but it wasn't superior. Of course, I couldn't remember everything from my past life. But the name Heaven's Will was familiar so I searched through my memory.

"Ah."

I contemplated for a while before nodding.

My dungeon was in the territory between Korea and China. It was perched on the Bukhan Mountain.

The dungeon wasn't resting on top of the Bukhan Mountain. It was floating in the air. An area of 21 km², height of 4733m....? In fact, it was more than double that size but that was the extent visible to human eyes.

Anyway, Heaven's Will was one of Korea's top 5 guilds. Their fame was limited to Korea because they hardly ever hit the dungeons around the world.

Even so, I remember meeting the Guild Master of Heaven's Will. The most famous magician in the world, the 'Lightning Queen' was among the 10 strongest humans. Low and medium ranked demons were unable to deal with her.

The Lightning Queen had quite a number of specific enemies. There was a thrill when lightning thousands of metres large would strike the ground.

In addition to the lightning, she had a strong army behind her. Riding the lightning was dangerous. I had seen her from a distance when she was fighting 12 people in a rage. I remember that Heaven's Will contained powerful warriors.

'The guild master has changed?'

Kim Yong-woo's uniqueness showed that he was the guild master. Perhaps there was an incident that caused the guild master to be replaced.

‘There is nothing left in this dungeon.’

The Beginner's Protection Period was over. The work in this dungeon was roughly finished.

‘The time has come to leave for the human world.’

I don't have the slightest intention of being stuck in this dungeon. Unlike my previous life, I don't think I will become strong from staying among the demons. I will mix among humans.

The reason for doing this...because of the 4 Grand Dukes.

They had insanely high pride. A strong belief in their own strength. It would be chaos if they mingled with humans and they would never tolerate such a thing. One assassination attempt could cause a war that would last 10,000 years.

In fact, they were impervious to assassination.

Apart from me, all the 71 other demons belonged to the faction of one of the Grand Dukes. So I couldn't go against the Grand Dukes. If they shook things up then Earth would be eliminated in 10 years.

The problem was that the Heroes became stronger and placed strong pressure on the demons over time. The demons were divided into 4 factions but the humans were united. As a result, many demons were destroyed.

But I was an existence that rose from the bottom. I directly killed an Earl and took his spot. In other words, I was an irregular case. I had no restraints.

‘Now is the perfect time.’

My face was known in my previous life. I couldn’t try something like this. But this time was different. The humans hadn’t seen me as a Dungeon Master.

‘I am a Hero.’

A demonic hero?

It was ridiculous but it wasn’t a joke.

A Hero had high potential and could quickly build name recognition. I could also hit dungeons belonging to other demons. I would fly from behind or the front to augment my skills in the dungeon.

It was the perfect plan where the borrowed knife did the killing.

South Korea had many excellent Heroes. There were Heroes of many levels in this world of cramped land masses. The name of the famous Heroes were engraved in my head.

After determining a plan, a location rose in my head.

‘Let’s go.’

Now it was time to go out into the real world.

Chapter 9-11: Raid

The streets of Hongdae were filled with young people. A place filled with the passion and dream of many young men and women.

At Cafe Amoa in the heart of Hongdae, four men and women were gathered. They were dressed differently and the atmosphere they gave off was entirely different from a common person.

They seemed like a combination that would rarely gather together but they were all tied by one common thing.

All of them were Awakened. In addition, each one of them were Starters and a guild master!

“If only this place was Paris. We could have gathered in Paris and once the stores open....”

The woman in her mid-30s waved her hands. She was frowning slightly while talking about flying to Paris.

Wavy, long hair and charming lips. The beauty spot above the nose and slightly droopy eyes gave her a glamorous type beauty.

Then the bald man wearing sunglasses and sitting opposite her smiled and said.

“I like the quiet.”

“Then why did you pick the middle of Hongdae?”

“I don’t like noise but my favourite thing is the vibrant energy of young people. Does Ms. Kim hate something like this?”

The woman he called Ms. Kim was actually Kim Suk-soo. Kim Suk-soo clicked her tongue.

“Well, I don’t dislike money. By the way, why are we all gathered here?”

“Heaven’s Will.”

The woman nodded as she roughly guessed the story.

“Ah. It is about Kim Yong-woo. Didn’t he go crazy? I heard that he is ranting nonsense every day about ants.”

“He used to call me ant excrement.”

“Oh my. Excrement is a little harsh.”

Kim Suk-soo giggled and laughed.

Then a young man with blonde hair raised a coke to his lips and said.

“Ajusshi, don’t humans become crazy every day? Quickly cut to the chase. I don’t have time. I need to meet up with my team to decide a strategy to raid a dungeon.”

“Isn’t the Mithril Guild closed?

“Ajusshi’s information is slow. It resumed again yesterday. The guild members are having a hard time. Those who perished in the Philippines....”

“Curiosity killed the cat.”

The strong, young man knocked on the table.

“Aish! Don’t you know that country was being ruined by creatures and a broker arranged for me to enter by boat? I was clearly invited.”

Kim Suk-soo who had been listening quietly asked.

“That reminds me, how is the area? I heard that martial law has been declared.”

“[Noonim](#). Don’t even say it. Tanks are being called in. Ah, and do you know that the creatures that are killed outside the dungeons don’t drop Cores? Do you understand?”

(Noonim= respectful way for males to refer to older females)

The young man's words were completely different from how he previously spoke to the man wearing sunglasses. He was a young man so Kim Suk-soo was a difficult opponent for him.

“Really? That is really good news.”

Kim Suk-soo didn't have much of a reaction so it seemed like she already knew.

Exactly a week ago, large number of creatures came out from the dungeon in the Philippines. It was that there were 5,000 creatures. The civilians and Awakened received damage but after a few days, the military was organized and started to earnestly clean it up.

It was natural considered the quality of the attack in the first place. But no Cores dropped despite all the creatures killed. There was only one.

There were numerous speculations but the more reliable theory was that creatures needed to be killed in the dungeons. In other words, there was a close relationship between the dungeon and the Core.

Anyway, the Awakened were glad to hear it.

“By the way, what is with those cat like scratches? Didn't the tanks wipe them all out?”

“Well, one of them got lucky. I don’t know much. It must have been a strong creature. Noonim, can we stop this topic? I’m feeling awful.”

“I’m sorry [dongsaeng](#) Noonim was too short-sighted.”

(Dongsaeng=younger sibling. Sometimes used to refer to a younger person who isn’t related.)

Although he survived the raid, members of his guild had died so he naturally felt sad. Unlike the United States, South Korea had no compensation for those who died in dungeons. All of the Awakened that weren’t in a institute had no choice but to go into the dungeon with nothing.

Many of the rich and powerful showed an avid interest in the Cores. If the guilds hadn’t emerged then the Awakened in South Korea would have been their slaves.

“Let’s return to business.”

There was silence until a mysterious woman spoke. She was a similar age to the young man but she had a cold face. A tight skirt and blouse. She gave off the perfect impression of a ‘cold city woman.’

“I met an Awakened.”

The young man complained after hearing the man in sunglasses’ words.

“What about it? Those who haven’t defeated creatures aren’t real heroes.”

“He took care of a monster beyond the normal standard all by himself.”

“Eh? Isn’t that an urban legend? No, a dungeon legend?”

Kim Suk-soo covered her mouth as she smiled.

“Omo, dongsaeng. It is real. The monster.”

The young man made a shocked expression.

“Eh eh? Haven’t they never been seen before?”

“They exist. Dead people can’t attend our meetings.”

“...Get down to business.”

Kim Suk-soo sighed.

“I’m not afraid of the Ice Princess. Hey, Alin. Loosen up your expression. Don’t you know that you will get a lot of wrinkles by the time you are my age?”

“It appears one person has already heard the story.”

Alin and Kim Suk-soo stared at each other.

The young man looked between them before sending a signal to Sunglasses. It asked him to proceed with the story.

“Hmm...I’ve acquired information that indicates the Awakened man is in Heaven’s Will.”

“Heol. Ajusshi, he is a real person?”

“Kim Yong-woo wasn’t talking nonsense.”

There was a moment of silence between the four of them.

Handling a monster beyond the normal standards alone. If it was true, it would be an overwhelming fact.

The presence of these monsters weren’t just mere legend. All the people who had intelligence networks had classified it as Class 1 confidential information. The fact that they were reluctant to talk about it meant it was important information.

These people gathered due to necessity. Everything was for the sake of profit.

“Defeating it alone? No way. You saw a phantom.”

Kim Suk-soo expressed her opinion. The young man also nodded.

It might be different a few years later. But right now, it was widely accepted that none of the Awakened could handle those type of monsters. It had only been 8 months since the Awakened appeared. The Starters were talented but even they couldn't exceed the limits of time.

“Do you know why 12 people raids were created?”

Sunglasses asked politely. This time it was Ice Princess Alin who replied.

“In the worst case scenario, at least one person can flee.”

“That's right. That number should have been sufficient to deal with standard creatures. Even 4 people are enough to kill kobolds and goblins.”

Everyone was silent. Sunglasses wasn't wrong. Humans had come up with the idea of a 12 people raid in the first place.

“And not long ago, Kim Yong-woo's group was completely destroyed.”

The three of them were silent. Except for the guild master Kim

Yong-woo, the other 11 people had died in the dungeon. The only living person who returned was Kim Yong-Woo. The standard of the creatures that could wipe out the raiding party wasn't normal.

“Kim Yong-woo returned alive but he was babbling like a lunatic. He kept talking about an elephant that could handle the non-standard creature.”

“He went crazy. You don't need to take him seriously.”

Kim Suk-soo clicked his tongue. Kim Yong-woo originally had a few screws loose. He seriously thought he was chosen by God. Kim Yong-woo's nature was enough to make them suspicious.

“I thought like that as well.”

“Then why?”

“Recently Kim Yong-woo's attitude has changed. His changed mindset makes him seem like an entirely new person...he even transferred a Bugatti Veyron to that guy. I think that Kim Yong-woo met this person in a dungeon before.”

“Wait, is he human? That car? Really? He didn't just lend it for a moment?”

The man shook his head.

“People never saw Kim Yong-woo driving the Bugatti Veyron. On the other hand, that man was seen driving the Bugatti Veyron quite a bit.”

Then a little boy sitting to their right gave an astonished cry.

“Amazing! This is a special feeling! Tomorrow the sun will rise in the west!”

“...I recognize it.”

Kim Suk-soo and the other people felt their admiration increase. Kim Yong-woo was someone who was really stingy with his money.

Despite controlling the funds of the guild house, he insisted on going dutch when dining together with other people. He would only have a bowl of jajamyeon once a month yet Kim Yong-woo gave a prized car to someone else?

The Bugatti Veyron was widely considered to be the fastest care in the world. There were differing opinions that the Hennessey Venom GT was faster but it was clearly a precious car in South Korea. The speed allowed in this place was very limited.

Kim Yong-woo had been so prideful after he bought it that they were sick of it. Even if Alin asked him for a ride, he would blow her off like she was a fly.

It really was like the sun rising in the west tomorrow.

Sunglasses pulled his cool coffee closer and said.

“Of course, I can’t be sure. It is just a high possibility. And if he is the same person, he isn’t someone who can handle a creature beyond the norm. Even if 100 Awakened are gathered, they would find it impossible to handle the creature. At the time, Kim Yong-woo was the lone survivor so he must have seen something.”

“Ajusshi, aren’t you worrying about needless things?”

“No...it is clear that he has considerable skill. In addition, it is true that he bumped into a non-standard creature.”

“Hey, let’s say he really did meet a non-standard monster? So how did he come back alive?”

“I think he holds a rare grade skill. Therefore he could escape to the outside.”

Rare grade skill! They all swallowed their saliva.

Just like the name, it was a rarity. At least it was in South Korea. The only known user of a rare skill was Chinese.

Even the Starters who woke up 8 months ago only had normal level skills. The man in sunglasses had an Exceptional Normal skill

‘Improve Muscle Strength.’

Skills could be obtained through a particular type of work, certain actions against creatures and completing difficult quests.

Quests could be found on their own but an updated list of quests also existed. Once a month, the quest list updated to coincide with the level of the Awakened. Completing quests with difficulty levels one or two steps higher would give a skill. Sometimes a lot of luck and hard work was required.

“But hasn’t he joined Heaven’s Will?”

Ice Princess Alin said calmly.

The five guilds had similar strengths. Respect was given to all sides. It was an unspoken law to not recruit members that had already joined a guild.

The man raised his sunglasses.

“It is Kim Yong-woo alone who is making a fuss. They’ve never gone on a raid together.”

“Then he can still be taken.”

Alin was convinced as she closed her eyes. She forgave him for calling this meeting of guild masters.

Then the young man said with confusion.

“Ajusshi. I don’t understand. Why are you telling us? Isn’t it better if you alone monopolize him? We aren’t amateurs. If there is any ill will....”

Sunglasses scratched the bridge of his nose.

“I have failed. I was rejected before even speaking one word. I almost died.”

“Heh, even ajusshi fails at times.”

“There are thousands of witnesses in the vicinity of the Heaven’s Will Guild House...they lose their appetite as soon as they see me.”

“Uhh? Is ajusshi really going to give up?”

“You haven’t looked at him. My head would have been rolling on the floor of the restaurant if I said even one word.”

The young man’s expression became determined.

There was something they implicitly agreed on. Sunglasses was the strongest among those gathered here.

In addition, they knew how obsessed he was with becoming strong. He would get whatever he wanted. A boiling spirit that never admitted defeat. Their hairs started to stand up.

If this was true then they absolutely needed to recruit his talent. Even if they had to spend billions of won!

Once he was drawn in, the balance between the five guilds would start to lean towards him.

Maybe they could go up to the next floor. Obtaining the title of the first ones to arrive on the 2nd floor was a great achievement. It was the ‘authorization’ that indicated they were the best guild in Korea!

Since America’s official announcement, the existence of the Awakened was known to everyone. A lot of people made movements behind the scenes.

Now it was a world of dungeons and Awakened. As the Awakened obtained more Cores, the people were forced to rely on them even more.

And having the title of the strongest would be very useful....

“I only want one thing. Information sharing about the rare skill. I don’t want anything else.”

“....I will go first. The answer is yes.”

Alin stood up quickly. There was a red flush on her cheeks.

“Oho, ho. It is already that time. I heard it well. I’m a yes!”

Kim Suk-soo followed suit.

“Hmm hmm! Ajusshi, contact me separately.”

The young man was the last to leave.

Sunglasses who was left alone leaned back in his chair and sighed.

‘Really terrible eyes....’

He saw himself ‘drop dead’ as soon as the other person glared. His breath became short as his spirit was lost. It felt like he was prying into a deep abyss. It seemed like a shower of sweat had flowed.

His body trembled as he remembered those eyes.

*

The sun at noon.

I leisurely sat on a park bench and watched the people. Children were wandering around chatting while it wasn't unusual to see the figure of a woman sweating.

‘Peaceful.’

I was wearing rimmed sunglasses.

Despite the existence of dungeons, they continued to live their normal lives.

And if I didn't take any special actions, this peace would last for quite a long time. In my previous life, I randomly killed humans and the peace ended too quickly. The areas around the dungeon became a wasteland. The city became ruins.

But now I would change that. It was unacceptable to step on anyone like I did in my previous life. If they didn't point a sword at me then I wouldn't become hostile.

For the moment.

‘It doesn't feel bad.’

Wasn't I once dead? Now I was free.

Maybe that's why I felt more generous. I never imagined in my previous life that I would be blending in with humans.

But now I was stronger than in the past. No, to be precise I have the potential to become stronger.

So I don't care. The strong were free. That's why I decided to become a warrior above all others. I needed to make an effort to become a real warrior.

I don't know much about humans in modern times. I couldn't read their culture and behaviour at all.

It was natural. I had no interest in them in my previous life. Humans were just the prey of the creatures but now things were different.

Humans were still peaceful. Especially here in South Korea. Maybe it was because the threat of North Korea was stronger than that of the dungeons.

Now I needed to pay attention to them. It was necessary to analyse and completely investigate them.

So I spent time wandering and observing.

'It is easier thanks to Kim Yong-woo. I was able to save a lot of time.'

It happened suddenly when I emerged from the dungeon. A few

pairs of eyes followed me as soon as I came out.

They were Kim Yong-woo's hired messengers. He had drawn my outfit and rough appearance on a piece of paper and they had been waiting for 2 weeks. His patience was worth praising.

Everything became easier thanks to that.

I met Kim Yong-woo at the Guild House and he proclaimed that he would be my subordinate. He worshipped me. And he knelt down and kissed my feet.

The outrageous actions were all because I saved him. It had been shocking at the time.

I didn't have anything to lose so I humbly accepted.

Kim Yong-woo seemed to be quite strong among the Heroes. It wouldn't be bad to use him to accomplish my goal. I would be in a perfect position behind him. Receiving attention immediately wasn't desirable.

'Now that I have an ID....am I also a person from here?'

I took out my wallet and checked my identity.

Kim Yong-woo had created an identity for him. My name and surname was still the same but my status was listed as a returnee.

When I was 9 years old, I left Korea for the United States and returned after graduating from Harvard University. Kim Yong-woo also graduated from Harvard in the United States.

I was someone who didn't even receive a middle school education. So I didn't care about it. As long as my actions were free.

“Can I sit beside you?”

A woman I saw earlier came up to me and asked. I didn't turn my head let alone answered but the woman naturally sat next to me. She had been following me since I briefly stopped by Heaven's Will in the morning.

‘An annoying woman has come.’

I clicked my tongue.

At first glance, she seemed familiar like he had seen her before. She was different when I knew her but she was obviously the guild master of the Timely Rain Guild. But I gazed at the status window just to be sure.

Name: Alin

Occupation: Hero (Archer)

Title: None

Stats

Strength: 25

Intelligence: 34

Agility: 47

Stamina: 23

Magic: 30

Potential: (169/401)

Uniqueness: ‘Timely Rain’ Guild Master

Skill: Aim (N), Quick Burst (N)

‘Indeed.’

There was no doubt.

The clear eyes, sharp nose and thin lips gave her a striking beauty that stood out. However, half of her face had been burned in a previous life. She was a terrible person who chased me more than anyone else.

I could guess the reason why she chased after me. I was the cause behind the woman’s burns.

So...when my dungeon was on the verge of ruin. The Dungeon

Core was being threatened so I hired a fire creature to guard it, wounding the woman.

Thanks to that, the woman and her guild considered me an enemy that couldn't live together under the same sky. They continued to chase me and pushed me to the brink several times.

In the end, I was the winner but received intensive damage. It took me 1 year to recover.

‘Our destiny has gone around.’

The Timely Rain guild master had come to meet him. I could get rid of her but didn't. I had a hunch that things kept on moving around like a hamster wheel.

If I didn't know about my previous life...the whole thing had now been initialized so it was pointless to argue against it. If I joined hands then I can figure out their intentions sooner or later.

The woman flushed and lowered her gaze. I was using the full power of Outstaring.

I said lightly.

“What do you want?”

Then the ice cold expression somewhat eased off. I talked first so

now I was waiting for a reply.

Alin took out a business card from her shoulder bag. Then she smiled and handed me the business card.

“Contact me.”

“.....?”

Alin’s [eyes remained beautifully curved](#) at my reaction
(This is referring to the eye smile that Koreans like).

She got up and coyly stroked my shoulder.

“Call, I’ll be waiting.”

And she left without looking back. My forehead wrinkled as I was left alone.

‘That human female...what was that?’

It was difficult to understand her intent. She visited just to give me a business card before departing? It was too inefficient.

Why did she touch my shoulder before leaving? If she had a hostile attitude then I could cope with it but it wasn’t apparent.

‘Temptation?’

I don’t know much about women. I had woken up on the battlefield. For 300 years, I only sought to become stronger.

But one of the few things to be cautious of were beauties, especially on the battlefield. Those who held the beauties in their arms would be found dead the next day.

Even the 4 Grand Dukes wouldn’t think of playing that game. But it wasn’t just the Demon World.

Just like demons liked slaughter, a succubus desired men and acted like battlefield scavengers. In my long life, those women were far away from me. The joy of becoming stronger was greater than sex.

Of course, my body had some experiences. I still had a libido. If I didn’t occasionally indulge his body then my mental state would go out of control.

But such acts were done without any kind of special feelings. There was no special senses from my side. I recognized it myself.

‘I am the wrong person to use that type of method on.’

Of course, I was curious about why Alin gave me a business card but not enough to contact her. I abandoned the business card on the ground and stood up.

If there was a business matter then she would find me. If she didn't come then I didn't need to go find her.

Her potential was one of the highest among humans. Among all the people I've seen, she was among the top. Someone with no greed or false nature. If her talents were raised then she would bloom like a flower.

However, I became sure of her character in her previous life so she won't easily follow me. There were also more constraints because she was a guild master.

I needed people to follow me in my own raids. Truly an elite minority. A party that would automatically follow me in the future.

‘Now I need some experience with what humans call a raid.’

Alin was moved to a corner of my brain as I walked in the direction of the parking lot.

*

Ttalkak!

In the early evening, a dark room. The only light came from the monitor. I slowly moved the mouse to operate the computer.

“Um.”

I wasn't very familiar with the small screen and machine. In the past I had never used a computer but I saw it a few times. I had become accustomed to it over the past few days but I still felt uncomfortable using it.

Duk. Duk. Duduk.

My index finger tapped the keyboard. The typical stance of an eagle.

It was ludicrous to think I could use it quickly when I only touched a computer a few days ago. It was to the extent that 300 strokes seemed to be used. I identified all the icons on the desktop.

I adapted to the computer like cotton soaking up water. It was an indispensable necessity for people living in modern times so I needed to learn it, even if it was by force.

‘I need to look at an Awakened online cafe to receive information about raids.’

Everyone had learned about the existence of the Awakened due to the announcement from the United States. Their strength and supernatural powers. Many people were enthusiastic and bombarded the portal sites about them.

It was the same with the Awakened. The majority became aware of each other's existence and the Awakened started to assemble. I heard from Kim Yong-woo that there was a cafe the Awakened could subscribe to.

The main portal site had articles associated with the Awakened. Just pressing three letters on the keyboard would come up with the Awakened as an associated search term.

But the cafe where Saints gathered wasn't something that could be found through a search.

I pulled out a piece of paper from the wallet on my desk. A website address, ID and password was written on the white paper.

‘Here.’

The English words on the piece of paper was typed into the address bar and a black screen appeared. The only thing present was the login box in the centre.

ID and password.

I clicked OK and the background changed to the message ‘Randolph Brigsiel-nim. I sincerely welcome you.’

Then a bulletin board unfolded.

‘VIP.’

The VIP status was displayed in the top left corner. Kim Yong-woo didn't just give me an ID but also made sure I was authorized to view all the forums.

I knew about it at the time. Usually a person would feel hesitant at this type of favour but I was different. My style wasn't to decline anything given to me.

However, I wouldn't receive it unconditionally. I gave him one Core in return. It was a Core he obtained from one of the random high ranking creatures that appeared.

Humans placed tremendous value on this Core. It was the crystallization of pure mana. It didn't matter to demons and high ranking creatures but the one ones could absorb the opponent's Core to grow stronger.

I intended to play an active role in the human world so I pack away any mana before the creatures in the dungeon could get to it.

‘It is good that I packed it.’

I know that I gave a Core with a huge value. Actually, Kim Yong-woo had broken into a sweat when I gave him the Core.

He had a considerable amount of money in his bank account if I took into account his car. It was cleanly washed and worth at least

5 billion won.

In fact, Kim Yong-woo thought that was lacking. The level of the Awakened right now meant they couldn't kill the creature that would drop this level of Core. It was an extremely rare item.

Thanks to that, I could relax in this house.

‘Did he sell it at the secret auction in San Francisco?’

Curiosity rose but I soon turned it off. Money was readily available. And the economy and currency would collapse in approximately 15 years. Even if I could stop it, I wouldn't.

“A lot.”

My eyes turned to the screen again. The homepage was flooded with various posts. A significant amount of real time articles caused a new page after just 1 minute.

There were quite a few Awakened subscribed. If I wanted to view a specific article then I needed to find a separate forum.

First I looked for basic information. There was basic information besides the names of each Awakened. Some were locked and when I clicked on them, a pop up window stated that 100 points was required.

I had 10 points. The information I required was easily accessible so I didn't need a lot of points.

The title was 'Dungeon Entrance Map.' There was a reason why a Dungeon Master bought a map. The only person who knew the dungeon better than me was the fairy Yihi.

I started to read the posts from the bottom.

'I want to know how much details are known.'

I was quickly disappointed. There wasn't any valuable information.

It was an overview from the Awakened about details of the creatures, how to obtain the Core and basic quest information. I didn't need that information.

However, the 'urgent announcements' at the top had some value.

「Emergence of the Ale Snake. Please note that they have a strong attack venom that causes paralysis. Check the attached list for pictures. 」

「Recently the body of an Awakened was found in the dungeon. Test results revealed that it was the result of an inside job. Please pay special attention to the other Heroes on raids.」

「 A monster wave has started in China. Please click on the link for more information. 」

A monster wave referred to incidents where creatures emerged from the dungeon. The official announcements warned the Awakened of dangerous information.

After checking other minor things, he clicked on the forums for those seeking ‘raid members.’

‘People can be found here.’

Sometimes I had questioned it. There was always a schedule for the humans who entered my dungeon. It turns out they could find a raid party here when they wanted.

‘I have to admit this thing called the Internet is useful.’

It was convenient. Hopefully I could handle everything that existed in this world. It really was a civilization of machines. The world ran on extreme imbalance. They were strangely ignorant but managed to use the mana to create tools to help them.

There was a small posting on the forum that I examined closely.

More than 35 stamina. One Hero is required.

I’ve already collected 2 magicians and archers. Beginners will be

refused.

Do you take direction well?

Except for a few, all the post had 'recruitment completed' tags on them. There were new recruitment posts within 10 minutes.

'There is enormous competition.'

There were many demanding requirements with the recruitment. The minimum requirements for a raid always specified certain abilities and skills...and almost all of them refused beginners.

Beginners referred to people who hadn't participated in a dungeon raid once. In that sense, I was also a beginner.

"I still have to send."

After muttering those words, I sent a small note. The eagle like tapping on the keyboard was used to appeal myself.

-Take me. I am strong. Kobolds and goblins aren't my opponent.

A very subjective and objective note. I knew that I was strong. That alone should be sufficient. In case the other person failed to realize it, I wrote three clear sentences.

But no matter how long I waited, there was no reply.

“Hrmm...they are full.”

New posts was constantly rising. I also sent messages to them.

-I'm sorry.

-Find another raid.

-Are you a king?

I sent 29 notes in an hour and only received 3 replies. The reaction from all three wasn't good.

Of course, I was well aware of the cause.

‘The tone.’

There was something called etiquette on the Internet. They couldn't see each other's faces here and needed to establish their identity.

But I was someone who wouldn't even be polite to the Dukes and Grand Dukes. I was on the battlefield as a child and learned harsh curses from my opponents.

This was the language of a strong man.

And I didn't want to. I wouldn't change my speech even if I was struck by lightning.

My personality was made by nature and there was no way to change it. Wasn't it hardened after 300 years? One day I might be able to adapt but that time wasn't now.

'Should I go on a raid with Heaven's Will?'

I shook my head.

'No. I can't give up.'

I am Randolph Brigsiel. And I sent messages to all the posts. One of them would eventually cave in.

Besides, I wanted to see a raid from the bottom. I wanted to view my dungeon from the perspective of a complete beginner. In addition, I had a deep desire to find hidden talents.

The name of Heroes from my previous life. But they weren't the only strong ones. There were those with high potential who died in the early days. I was looking for people like them.

At this time, a new article was posted.

More than 33 stamina. Recruiting for a raid group will be open for 6 minutes. Please note.

8 people are required for the raid. I've recruited 6 Heroes so there is only one position left.

I sent a note just like before. A reply arrived 3 minutes later.

-Randolph-nim? Do you have experience in a raid?

Of course, I had experience with a dungeon. A lot of experience. But I've never participated in a raid. I pressed the keyboard with a bittersweet feeling.

-This is my first time for a raid.

-Well, what occupation are you?

I contemplated for a moment before replying roughly.

-Close combat.

-I understand. These days there aren't many beginners who would send a note so I feel like I should help. Going on a raid... tomorrow at lunchtime, take Exit 3 at Suyu Station and head to 'Street Cafe.'

-Understood.

-Leave your number. Please text or call when you arrive.

I was easily accepted. I sighed and leaned my body against the chair.

‘I would feel more at ease fighting advanced creatures.

Sending a simple note was almost like a war. In any case, my recruitment was completed. I would fight the creatures in a cool manner and the other side would get a good impression of me.

Tock, tock.

The sound was coming from the clock on the wall.

Kim Yong-woo had spent 4~5 billion won on a luxury villa in Cheongdamdong for me. All the furniture and appliances were already in place.

114 [pyeong](#). 5 rooms and 3 bathrooms.

(Unit of measurement)

It was different from a castle but everything I needed was stocked.

I looked up at the ceiling. Everything was different now.

I missed the company of Yihi but her spiritual body was unable to escape the dungeon. Of course, I could always summon myself back to the dungeon. However, if I did that then it wouldn't be easy to adapt.

I could return after I adapted. Anyway, it was clear I would adapt quickly. The difference would help eventually.

I closed my eyes.

This evening would be exceptionally long.

Chapter 12-16: Deception

I wore a black suit, a tie and gelled back my hair. It was the traditional hair style referred to as a pomade. The suit and pomade was the perfect combination. Humans felt the need for a presentable appearance.

I drove my car to an underground parking lot near the appointed place. I drove the car with a great deal of expertise.

Of course, I had a driver's license. I only had it for 3 days.

My field of concentration and memory was superior to humans. Once I became accustomed to driving the car, it wasn't that hard.

After driving for 20 minutes, I arrived at Suyu Station. Once I took Exit 3, there was the 2 storey Way Cafe where the appointment would take place. There was no place to park so I had to go to a nearby paid parking lot.

I drew a lot of attention the moment I walked into the cafe.

"Celebrity?"

"Look. Really cool."

I naturally heard the conversation.

My neat appearance also drew a good impression from the humans. My judgement wasn't wrong. My appearance wasn't lacking.

I experienced similar things several times in the Demon World. I only thought about getting stronger but it seemed like the Demon World had similar standards regarding beauty.

Indeed. Being a handsome man in the Demon World wasn't that helpful.

They could live comfortably if they caught the eye of a strong female demon. However, that would eventually end. Once abandoned, they would never be seen again. Every last one of them was miserable.

Conversely, a beautiful woman was the strongest weapon itself. Some nobles highly valued the beautiful women in their harem. If they became sick then compensation would be given.

This was all unrelated to me...it was just idle thoughts.

I pulled out my phone and called a number. There were a few rings before the other person picked up.

-Hello?

A male voice. I asked carefully.

“Where is it?”

-Who?

“Randalph. Right now I am on the 1st floor of the cafe.”

-Ah, Randalph-nim. Come up to the 2nd floor.

I immediately climbed up the stairs. A man was waving his hand on the 2nd floor. There were a few people gathered around his table. Seven of them. It seemed like I was the latest.

The man put out his hand for a handshake and said.

“Nice to meet you. I am the leader, Yoon Hyuk-soo.”

I used Mind’s Eye to check Yoon Hyuk-soo’s status window.

Name: Yoon Hyuk-soo
Occupation: Hero (Guarder) Title: None

Stats

Strength: 31

Intelligence: 25

Agility: 28

Stamina: 33

Magic: 27

Potential: (144/231)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Smash (N), Track (N)

There wasn't any specific potential.

Tracking skills were a bit unusual but it wasn't a big deal when considering the nature of the Guarder.

I shook his hand and replied.

“Randolph Brigsiel.”

“Oh! Are you perhaps a returnee?”

My skin was too bright compared to South Koreans. It was natural to think that I was a returnee. He was also determining the

ranks.

“That’s right.”

“Somehow that tone....anyway, you are very handsome. Is that why the women’s faces are turning red?”

Yoon Hyuk-soo slyly said as he turned his head. There were three women in the group. I turned towards them while avoiding their eyes.

“Pleased to meet you.”

“Now now. Just sit down.”

I sat down on the empty seat.

The atmosphere around the male members was a little uncomfortable. They were dressed in different clothes while I was the only one wearing a suit.

“Is it okay to enter the dungeon wearing a suit?”

One of the male crew members ended up saying. His eyes were glaring at me like I was the enemy. There was jealousy in that gaze.

I could understand the situation immediately. They were only

looking at the female members of the crew. The pretty women wearing makeup! It wasn't much but they were decent beauties. This jealousy wasn't worth dealing with.

The air became tense before Captain Yoon Hyuk-soo laughed and said.

“Haha. Aren't we also going to change clothes? All the women here are wearing skirts. Come, let's introduce ourselves. I am the leader, Yoon Hyuk-soo. As you know from the forum, my occupation is a guarder. You don't have to worry about getting aggro on you. Nice to meet you.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo turned his head to look at another member. The man sitting on the right side who had been smiling from the beginning then talked.

“I am Kim In-pil. My job deals with command magic. I can control the body of kobolds or goblins.”

“Wah, there are also jobs like this?”

Everyone looked at Kim In-pil with surprise. I didn't see anything about a command magician on the Awakened website.

“It is because my day job before this was an undertaker.”

An undertaker was in charge of funeral homes. In some cases, their job would cause special conditions when awakening.<

But a command magician was certainly a rare occupation. The command magic could control dead bodies. I wasn't remotely interested in it. I immediately checked Kim In-pil's status window.

Name: Kim In-pil
Occupation: Hero (Command Magician) Title: Person who deals with Corpses (Ex N, Magic + 2)

Stats

Strength: 16

Intelligence: 14

Agility: 13

Stamina: 14

Magic: 45 (+2)

Potential: (121/275)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Body Control (N)

Uneven abilities. His physical abilities and intelligence was the worst but magic was very high.

Having high magic wasn't always good. All fights required stamina. They would collapse after using one or two of his strongest spells. So it was better to have it even instead of one stat too high.

I was somewhat unfamiliar with Command Magicians. I had seen specific professions like Shamans or Animal Guardians. But this was the first time I saw a Command Magician that dealt with corpses.

It was close to the ability of a demon. In fact, there were many

creatures and demons with that ability. Of course, the skill was quite poor. At best, only a few kobolds and goblins could be moved.

There was only one thing to praise.

Title.

The rating was low but I knew how hard it was to get a title. The Exceptional rating attached to the Normal title was the only thing I could praise.

“That’s great!”

The eyes of the women shone.

His occupation as an undertaker led to him becoming a Command Magician.

People dreamed of making a big fortune in the dungeons. So it wouldn’t hurt to follow a strong person.

“Hah. It’s not a big deal.”

Kim In-pil laughed. The undersized build and laugh made him seem like a dwarf.

The woman sitting next to the Awakened that caused an uproar

then introduced himself.

“Lee Ji-hye. I am a magician that uses water skills. Nice to meet you.”

“Kim Su-hwan. A pleasure. Let’s do well.”

“Park Eun-taek....a thief.”

The brief self-introduction meant it was finally my turn. I opened my mouth as all eyes turned towards me.

“Randolph Briggsiel. I have a close combat occupation.”

It was an incredibly short self-introduction. And I didn’t even disclose my occupation. But it didn’t matter. Other people were also reluctant to disclose their information. All of them could understand it.

“Close combat occupations should have high strength or stamina. Do you have more than 30 points in the two stats?”

Yoon Hyuk-soo asked. He needed reliable information for the raid.

I replied positively.

“Both have more than 30 points.”

“Ohh. That is reassuring.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo said to the rest of the seven members.

“Once again. I am the leader, Yoon Hyuk-soo. The dungeon is scheduled to begin this evening so there will be a light briefing before that. Randolph-nim and Park Eun-taek-nim are both beginners.”

“Ha, beginners? Both of them? Even if this is a 12 people raid, isn't that a little dangerous?”

“You don't have to worry. I will draw the aggro. This isn't a joke. I'm experienced enough that I'm confident I can handle any creatures in South Korea.”

“I thought it was weird that he came wearing a suit. I suppose I will believe Captain-nim.”

Kim Su-hwan gazed at me with a mocking look and laughed. He started off in a high position so he was filled with arrogance.

Yoon Hyuk-soo started sweating.

I also knew the reason why Kim Su-hwan was acting like this. It was sad but a man still had an animal like nature. The external

conditions were excellent but they still had an inferiority complex.

I inwardly sighed. If things continued then it could turn bad. The briefing lasted for 30 minutes and the atmosphere seemed to relax.

“Everyone. Shall we go eat? I know a good restaurant near here. The briefing can continue there. I will pay.”

“Wah! Captain-nim is amazing!”

In particular, the female members cheered warmly.

Now it was time for lunch. They were also hungry. The briefing was boring so they would rather eat.

Yoon Hyuk-soo had a large smile as he talked.

“Who brought a car? My car is a bit dirty and can only hold one other person.”

The men raised their hands. Four. There were enough cars.

“Then let’s drive our cars to the front.”

They were briefly dismissed. I shrugged as all the men looked confident. They were subtly check each other. It was the start of an invisible showdown.

The women thought this was fun as they followed behind and talked among themselves.

I walked slowly while checking their status windows.

‘This is nothing.’

I was disappointed as I checked the status windows. Today seemed like a basic raid. There was no one with potential.

But I needed to blend in and interact with them for a while. Eventually I would end up in a conflict with them. I would sweep through all of them from the bottom up. I would eventually find everything I need for my dungeon.

Now I needed to learn more about the human heroes. In that sense, Heaven’s Will was useless. They were affected by Kim Yong-woo and were nervous around me. The raids would already have a skewed framework. I was tired of those sort of raids from my previous life.

“.....?”

I stopped for a moment.

A car had suddenly stopped in front of me. An open roof sports car. The stylish appearance made it seem quite expensive.

The man in the driver's seat had a familiar face. He was one of the men seen in the cafe.

His name was Kim Su-hwan. The man who ruined the atmosphere.

“Did you fall well?”

The man laughed, revealing his teeth.

“I'll go first. Come slowly. Or it is fine if you don't come at all.”

The man then stepped on his accelerator.

Buuuong!

The engine made a loud noise as the blue sports car sped off.

“Hmm.....”

I had to take a few moments to interpret the meaning of his words.

‘Vanity. He is proud of the car.’

In short, he came just to show off his car. I didn't know the details of the car.

But...I knew what car I drove.

‘Demons also boast about good rides. Our way of thinking is quite similar in that regard.’

One of the 12 Dukes could command a dragon mount. The dragon was ridden on the battlefield. The breath pouring from the dragon could melt hundreds of demons. If such a thing appeared then my power would be consolidated immediately.

I had been very envious. I shrugged and then moved to the paid parking lot.

*

“Wah! Iron Man's car!”

There were cries as Kim Su-hwans car arrived.

An Audi R8v10 Plus.

The car that the main character, Iron Man/Tony Stark drove. Zero to 100 in 3.6 seconds, 550 horsepower. The sports car that all men dreamed of.

Kim Su-hwan's expression was filled with confidence. Other cars arrived but none of them could compare to Iron Man's car.

"I think my car is good but there is no comparison."

Yoon Hyuk-soo laughed. He seemed envious as he looked at Kim Su-hwan.

"Haha, it isn't bad."

Kim Su-hwan cheekily replied.

The increasing trend meant that Cores were still expensive. One Core smaller than the pinky finger was nearly 1 million won.

Thanks to the United States' announcement, the prices in the black market were far more expensive. Depending on the selling price, they could receive ten or twenty times more for it. Now the market was stable.

But the Iron Man car was over 200 million. Before the announcement, they would have needed to sell more than 200 Cores to buy the car.

Usually a raid had 8~12 people. If each of them took a share then the amount would decrease. Kim Su-hwan hadn't rested until he was able to buy the Iron Man car.

An experienced dungeon hero. So they couldn't help but feel envious.

“Omo. The car is really good.”

One of the females approached and admired it.

“Haha. Thank you.”

Kim Su-hwan laughed straightforwardly.

“Your skill are really good.”

“I've been on quite a few raids. We should go together sometimes.”

“The two of us hunting?”

“I will teach you the methods to get rid of the creatures.”

“I'm jealous. I can only go to a dungeon once a week.”

The woman sighed.

In fact, they couldn't enter the dungeons too much. Those in need of money would blindly jump in. Those who went into battle could obtain the Cores and get lots of money.

But going on a few raids would make them realize the reality.

Ah, the world really wasn't easy. Any wrong move would kill them!

Guilds existed but they strictly screened people. The Awakened with capabilities became the object of envy.

Those lucky enough to live well could secure some safety. Once safety was secured, the dungeon would become a high income job.

Kim Su-hwan captured the attention of the women. It was natural for women to be attracted to strong males.

But their gazes were soon averted.

“Huh, is someone really driving that in Korea?”

Yoon Hyuk-soo was really happy. A super sports car was approaching in front of him.

“What is that car?”

The woman interested in Kim Su-hwan's car asked Yoon Hyuk-soo.

“The Bugatti Veyron. It is famous for being one of the fastest cars in the world. But the price is a monster. Huiyu!”

Yoon Hyuk-soo whistled with envy. A 2015 model. It wasn't even on sale in South Korea yet.

Yoon Hyuk-soo was a car fanatic so he knew all about it.

The fastest car in the world! But the Bugatti Veyron had an extra 0 attached compared to the price of the Iron Man car. Kim Su-hwan's car could be bought 10 times before reaching the price of that car.

The Bugatti Veyron stopped near them. There was a question mark in everyone's head as the door opened.

Gulp!

Their faces all changed. The bodies trembled weakly with admiration. Only Kim Su-hwan had an expression like he was chewing on shit.

“I'm a little late.”

The one who appeared was the returnee Randolph Briggsiel. I smiled and knocked on Kim Su-hwan's shoulder twice.

That alone put an end to all communication. I was talking to Kim

Su-hwan.

‘I didn’t fall.’

Kim Su-hwan’s expression wrinkled even more.

“Where did you borrow this from?”

“I received it as a gift.”

The Bugatti Veyron as a gift? Everybody stared with incredulous eyes.

Even if he had attacked dungeons for 8 months, it was impossible to obtain the Bugatti Veyron. In other words, he was quite rich. They were puzzled about why a rich person would turn to the dungeons.

But there was no further explanation. Everybody was overwhelmed by the sight and didn’t ask any questions.

And after a while.

The beautiful woman admiring the car, the water magician Lee Ji-hye entered my car. The men who were secretly eyeing her looked like a fisherman who had lost a big catch.

*

After eating lunch, the briefing ended.

The majority of creatures that would appear were ale snakes, goblins, kobolds and meat bats. After receiving a few things to keep in mind, they arrived at the entrance of Bukhan Mountain.

Yoon Hyuk-soo explained things as the group walked along the path.

“As you can see, that is the dungeon entrance. It is incredibly tall. Imagine a monster wave where thousands of creatures rush out from the entrance. Isn’t it terrible?”

A monster wave caused considerable damage every time it occurred. The monster wave had killed hundreds of people in the Middle East, China and the Philippines.

There was no law stating that a monster wave wouldn’t occur in South Korea. If they were located near the entrance when a monster wave occurred then it was 100% certain that they would die. Everyone who stepped into the dungeon took that risk.

“But there are soldiers near the city side so it will be safer.”

“The soldiers won’t stop us from entering?”

Park Eun-taek asked. It was the first time a valid question had been asked about the dungeon. Yoon Hyuk-soo laughed bitterly.

“Of course they will pretend not to see us.”

“Huh?”

Park Eun-taek sounded puzzled.

“The Awakened can obtain the Cores inside the dungeon. It is the next generation of energy that the government is willing to let people die to obtain it. Maybe a car that runs on a Core would be developed in the near future? The Core will be the electrical supply. Even revolutionizing medicine....”

Sprinkled a powdered Core on the wound would cure it. Even having a little bit of powdered Core in a drink would cause slow recovery. It could even affect cancer and terminal illnesses.

This was due to the properties of mana. Mana was essential. The original form would endlessly pour in health.

The Core was a collection of mana.

There was an uproar in the medical community. The occupation of a doctor might soon disappear. Especially as Cores were bought in bulk for experiments.

Supply was limited so the demand for Cores didn't diminish.

“Indeed.”

Park Eun-taek nodded as he understood. Yoon Hyuk-soo who was in the lead suddenly stopped.

“Anyway! Can you see the building in front of the dungeon? It is a shop run by the Mithril Guild. Weapons and armour that stop the basic attacks from the monsters can be found there.”

A 2 storey building had been constructed. It was 500m away from the dungeon.

If a real monster wave occurred then it would be the first place hit. The business was very big and contained lots of merchandise.

Yoon Hyuk-soo went up to the armour and weapons displayed in the shop. I thought for a bit before renting an iron sword. It was a pretty good weapon.

I put it on the counter where a man with glasses said.

“Is this your first time?”

“It is my first time.”

“This is charged by hour. A deposit of 300,000 won will be received.”

I obediently took out the money from my wallet.

“Can you prove your identity?”

“Here.”

I showed the identification. He gave the sword back after verifying it. The salesman was tougher than I thought.

After renting the necessary things, the eight people stood at the entrance of the building. Yoon Hyuk-soo looked at me from the bottom up.

“Randolph-nim? Will you be fine getting dirty with blood?”

I only rented a sword. I was still wearing the suit.

The women wearing skirts had already changed into comfortable outfits. Thin padded clothes with body armour.

But I shook my head. We wouldn't be spending a long time in the dungeon so it was troublesome to change. I replied curtly.

“I'm okay.”

“Uhh, just this once.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo didn't really care.

This was often the case with beginners. They would change their minds after experiencing the dungeon.

Yoon Hyuk-soo handed out lights the size of a fist to all the crew members.

“This will light up for 48 hours without charging. Be careful not to lose it because it is precious inside the dark dungeon. Then let's go.”

The entrance to the dungeon was 500m away from the building. It was close enough to be seen with the naked eye.

Yoon Hyuk-soo spoke as the eight people arrived at the entrance.

“Do you remember your positions from the briefing? I will take aggro. The close combat professions in front...”

Each of them were given a position because on their occupation and abilities. It was more optimized compared to walking around randomly.

Soon the entire raid group entered the dungeon.

“From now on, don’t relax. We don’t know where they will come from. Today we won’t enter deep and will just wander around near here.”

Everyone was nervous as they looked around. They were a raid group that had just been hastily constructed today. Time was needed to practice. It would be difficult to enter deeply to fight the creatures.

The square light shone brightly like a lamp rather than candlelight. It was bright enough for them to check the surroundings. But it couldn’t be too bright because the creatures were likely to gather.

“The beginners should stick together hyung.”

Park Eun-taek said as he walked next to me. I nodded lightly in response. The young man had a timid appearance as his eyes seemed scared.

“Hyung, aren’t you afraid?”

“It isn’t scary.”

“Um...it really looks like it. I’m scared to die. I heard the kobolds are ugly and frightening.”

“They are just kobolds.”

In a pyramid structure, the kobolds were slaves at the very bottom. They were a little mean but not very difficult opponents.

Park Eun-taek occasionally talked to me as we walked. Having a friendly conversation with his hyung was a method for him to relieve his anxiety.

Park Eun-taek paid no attention to my short answers.

“Wait.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo abruptly stopped.

He brought his ear close to the ground and listened. It seemed like he heard a sound coming.

Yoon Hyuk-soo stood up after 10 seconds.

“Two creatures. Please wait while I go ahead and draw their attention.”

The goblins and kobolds were obstinate about targeting those they first saw. So the first one to attack would draw their aggro.

Yoon Hyuk-soo briefly disappeared. The remaining people

swallowed their saliva and looked ahead. No matter how good the heroes were, they only had one life.

One mistake could cost them their lives so they needed to be careful. Approximately 30 seconds later, the sound of someone running could be heard.

There were several sounds. Yoon Hyuk-soo and two goblins!

“Prepare to fight!”

The warriors, including myself, stepped forward. The warrior Kim Su-hwan. From behind, the archers and magicians were ready to fight.

Park Eun-taek holding a dagger was a thief and covered the gap between close range and long range attacks. Park Eun-taek was new to dungeon exploration so he licked his dry lips while clutching the dagger firmly.

The Command Magician Kim In-pil was hiding in the back. There weren't any corpses so all he could do was cheer.

Kyaak!

The adult goblins were 1m in size and wielded threatening claws and teeth. The power of their strong jaw meant that flesh could be torn off. One mistake would be instant death.

I gazed at the creatures while holding the sword. Soon the two goblins arrived.

“Water Sphere!”

At the same time, the magician Lee Ji-hye chanted a spell. A sphere of water quickly drifted from her hand. It was followed by arrows.

Kihik!

One of them was hit. But it didn't die. The bleeding goblin became frenzied and rushed forward.

The Guarder Yoon Hyuk-soo lifted his shield and stood in front of Kim Su-hwan. I raised my sword and attacked moderately.

‘I have to pretend. There is no meaning in coming here and not participating.’

Meanwhile, Park Eun-taek stabbed a goblin and took its life. There was only one left now. It was surrounded and easily handled.

“The first hunt was successful. How was it? Can you do it?”

Yoon Hyuk-soo asked as he swept the sweat from his forehead.

“You handle aggro really well. I’ve participated in a few raids so it is really noticeable.”

Kim Su-hwan said as he gave a thumbs up.

The aggro hadn’t switched during the hunt. Yoon Hyuk-soo quickly turned his head away. This level of maintaining aggro wasn’t enough to be called a genius.

Yoon Hyuk-soo stood next to the corpse of a goblin and opened it with a sword. The heart was the size of a small pebble.

Core.

“The size is okay. We will pick it up.”

It was a good start. The Core from the other goblin was larger than average.

Yoon Hyuk-soo recovered the two Cores with glee before clapping his hands like he remembered something.

“Ah, that’s right. Are the beginners okay?”

“I-I’m fine.”

Park Eun-taek stuttered.

The dagger moved and gave a few direct blows. But it wasn't enough to be called a good performance. This was his first hunt so he wanted to impress the group.

I just shrugged my shoulders instead of answering.

It felt strange attacking my dungeon but it wasn't bad. This level of hunting was enough to let me know the general principles.

‘There are still quite a few beginners. The raid group will die if they encounter the wrong opponent.’

Those with high potential could die when they were still beginners in the dungeon. But I inwardly shook my head.

‘I can't lower the difficulty of the dungeon anymore...this section will be left alone. If a human with high potential dies to a goblin or kobold then they aren't worth it.’

It was low enough. If I lowered it any more then it would turn into pulp. No, it was hard to find any creatures lower than the goblins and kobolds.

In this way, I participated in the raid so I needed to look at it from the perspective of the raid members. The weak warriors who made it through a crisis would be helpful.

Besides, it reminded me of when I was thrown on the battlefield. If they didn't an effort then they would die under the pressure. I felt like that.

“Huiyu! It is going smoothly.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo smiled pleasantly after defeating a few creatures.

It had been 2 hours since entering the dungeon and they had already collected 13 Cores. Each person had already earned more than 1 million won. There were smiles of all of the members' faces.

The dead goblins moved slowly behind the party like zombies. This was the command magic of Kim In-pil.

‘The way that they are moving.’

I looked at it curiously.

At that time, Yoon Hyuk-soo said.

“Wait a moment.”

They had been marching for 2 hours. It was time for a break.

But there was no place to relax. They needed a place where they

could notice the creatures approaching. But it was hard to find such places. Only experienced heroes would know such places.

And there were people with a lot of experience in this raid group. The captain Yoon Hyuk-soo saw such a location. They could relax here in peace.

The raid crew sat around and took a break.

“Haven’t we gone in too deep?”

One of the women asked and Yoon Hyuk-soo shook his head.

“Do you think we’ve walked far? In fact, it wasn’t that much. If we walk for 30 minutes then we can exit.”

“Really?”

“We’ve been circling around. Why? Are you afraid?”

“That.....”

The woman smiled awkwardly.

“Don’t worry. Look at this.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo opened a leather pouch and his eyes shone as he

looked at the Cores.

“13! Huhu. The size of each one means we can each get at least [200](#).”

(This refers to price)

“Shouldn’t Captain-nim receive more?”

The octahedral shaped Core would sell for 1.5 times more than the others.

The captain was the one responsible for holding most of the aggro. Furthermore, he was in charge of all the preparations. Everybody recognized that he was exposed to the most risks.

“I have enough.”

“Oh my god!”

The women were all excited. Hunting for 2 hours and receiving 200. This seldom ever happened. Luck was also a skill.

“Should we continue for a little more? Our breathing is fine. Can’t we hunt up to 5 creatures without any difficulty?”

Yoon Hyuk-soo made a suggestion. It was a waste to stop here. They had already earned this much just on the first day.

Suffering for a few hours could earn enough for a month. It was dangerous but they were shaking with excitement at the thought of money. It was necessary to invest time.

“Okay.”

“Let’s go.”

Everyone expressed their approval. I also had no reason to refuse.

I nodded and the raid group rested for 10 more minutes before beginning to move.

*

It ad been 4 hours since they entered the dungeon.

A significant number of creatures had been eliminated on this raid.

“Shall we go back now? I don’t want to go any more than this.”

Kim Su-hwan said uneasily. There was definitely a sense that they had entered too deeply. In addition, everyone was exhausted. They also needed to get rid of any creatures discovered on the way back.

Yoon Hyuk-soo didn't refuse. Instead, he had a condition.

“Then I'll go forward and check one last time. How about it?”

“Well, it is okay if it is the last time.”

“We'll wait for you. Lure them properly.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo left with a easygoing smile while holding his shield. The raid group waited for Yoon Hyuk-soo like the previous times.

However, time passed and Yoon Hyuk-soo didn't return. It had been 5 minutes. There was still no news.

10 minutes passed and they were all filled with anxiety.

“...Why hasn't he come back yet?”

“What do you think happened?”

The females were the first ones to react with anxiety.

Kim Su-hwan sighed.

“I will wait another 10 minutes. If he doesn’t come back then we will return on our own.”

“A-are we going to abandon Captain-nim?”

Kim In-pil who had been listening quietly suddenly spoke. The Command Magician that had always been in the back suddenly came to the front.

“Captain-nim. 10 minutes have passed but please wait another 10 minutes. Wasn’t it posted on the website? Sometimes a chaser won’t return for at least 15 minutes. A chaser has to wait excite the creatures without being killed.”

It was possible to excite the creatures but the smell of blood might lure even more. It was better to avoid such places.

“How can a person be so cruel?”

“Be quiet or die.”

Kim Su-hwan was a veteran. He had gone through this experience a few times. It was useless if they ended up dying as well.

Time passed quickly. Everyone held their breaths as they waited for Yoon Hyuk-soo to return.

And...10 minutes passed.

“Let’s go.”

“Just a little bit more. Wait a little longer. Please.”

Kim In-pil tried but public opinion was already on Kim Su-hwan’s side. Kim Su-hwan refused coldly and turned his body away.

“I’ve waited a lot already.”

“10 minutes. No, 5 more minutes.....”

“Do you really like him?”

Kim In-pil bowed deeply.

“This is a request. He has been my friend for 10 years. My parents died when I was young and he is the only one I have left. I can’t possibly abandon him.”

His eyes shone with tears.

“Can’t we wait 5 more minutes? This matter is pitiful.”

“Ji-hye ssi...hu! I understand. 5 more minutes. After that, we will

go without any regrets. Do you understand?”

Kim Su-hwan had already become the leader of the group. He was the most experienced one here. The other group members obediently followed Kim Su-hwan’s opinion.

“Thank you. Thank you very much.”

Kim In-pil bowed his head several times. The group members were tired as they waited for Yoon Hyuk-soo.

A person couldn’t constantly maintain a tense state. Being tense consumed more energy than necessary. They became physically and mentally exhausted.

The situation was like that now. They had been in a tense state for 4 hours and 20 minutes. Now it was difficult for them to even brandish a sword or fire arrows.

When 5 minutes passed again.

“Something is coming.”

Kim Su-hwan was the first one to notice the abnormality. He leaned forward in the direction the sound was coming from. Then his expression changed! It crumpled.

“Crazy!”

He took one step back and cursed. Everybody was puzzled but I could soon see why.

Kkuruk!

Kiririk!

Yoon Hyuk-soo was coming. He was followed by numerous creatures.

“Run!”

Where?

The only ones who knew the geography of this place was Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim Su-hwan. But Yoon Hyuk-soo was being chased while Kim Su-hwan was in a blank state.

Then Kim In-pil ran towards Yoon Hyuk-soo. Along with the corpses of the creatures killed during the raid.

What should they do? The speed of the creatures wasn't that unusual. It was just impossible to escape when they were completely exhausted.

Kim Su-hwan looked back.

Three girls. Two beginners.

The situation right now. How could they escape the dungeon while being pursued by creatures?

A pessimistic situation.

The creatures were all excited. They would catch up persistently. On the other hand, Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim In-pil were veterans. Survival was their only goal!

There was no need look any further. Kim Su-hwan abandoned the 5 people. He immediately ran towards Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim In-pil.

“W-wait a minute?”

One of the two beginners. The thief Park Eun-taek was surprised but it was already too late. The women also looked devastated.

‘This situation is fun.’

My mouth twisted. Weak humans were being culled. It was no different from the Demon World. They didn’t linger and coldly turned their backs.

The conclusion of this would be a little interesting.

Would they give up?

This wasn't a play. It was the crossroads of survival.

As a Dungeon Master, I saw a variety of situations but this one felt different. It had a faint scent of nostalgia.

“Run away. I'll buy some time.”

A beginner. A thief. Every time I talked to him, he seemed like an innocent youth. Park Eun-taek grasped his dagger with trembling hands.

I was impressed.

‘Sacrifice!’

The five people couldn't even think about fighting. There was only a 1% chance. I didn't expect a sacrifice at all.

It was natural. They had met for the first time today. It hadn't even been half a day since they met.

Then to die for them? It was too unexpected.

He gripped his fists tightly. A noble sacrifice? That was just a

word for death. In other words, he was going to his death!

“Go, now!”

“I’m sorry, I’m sorry....”

“B-be careful.”

“Huk!”

The three women turned away at Park Eun-taek’s cry. They started to run back the way they came. The women knew. They left him here to die.

I gave one last smile to Park Eun-taek before following.

I could easily organize the situation now. But I didn’t. I didn’t feel the need.

After all, they were intruders. They invaded my home without any authorization.

Kim Yong-woo had value but Park Eun-taek was different. He had low potential and low growth so he wouldn’t be any help to me. Well, it would be different if he did whatever it took to survive.

Park Eun-taek moved with extreme sadness. But there was no

chance.

It was a short path and the creatures soon reached him. Park Eun-taek had inflicted attacks on creatures today but it was only one at a time.

His attacks were easily blocked. And....

The result was obvious.

Kwaduk!

Kwaduduk!

“Kuooh, kuaaak!”

The three women with tears, runny noses and messy hair slumped down. They were half exhausted and could barely sustain their bodies.

One of the girls sat down and buried her face in her knees. Another one was holding her chest while breathing roughly. The remaining female continued looking around.

They had squeezed themselves to the limit in order to escape the swamp of death. Their legs couldn't run anymore. There was no conversation. They couldn't even afford to talk.

If only time could stop, no, if they could go back to the past....

“The rest of the people...what happened to them?”

Lee Ji-hye broke the silence.

A magician had high intelligence so she could calmly look at the situation. The other two women didn't answer. Everyone knew there would be a pessimistic answer if they opened their mouths.

Particularly regarding Kim Su-hwan and Kim In-pil. The two men had abandoned them.

“Perhaps...does anyone know where we are?”

Naturally no one lifted their hands.

The women didn't have a lot of experience with dungeons. They never thought about memorizing the terrain of the dungeon during the raid.

Lee Ji-hye looked closely at the faces of the remaining people. She just turned away from me. This was because she knew that I was a beginner to the dungeon.

Of course, I actually knew the terrain of the dungeon. But I didn't raise a hand.

My thoughts were the same as it was regarding Park Eun-taek's situation. I would watch the situation and welcome any catastrophe.

“No.”

Lee Ji-hye sighed.

The area was dark. Apart from me, the others had all thrown away their lamps. They would turn off in the next few hours anyway.

“A plan. Let's focus on a plan.”

“What plan! We're all going to die. I'm going to die!”

One woman was hysterical.

Lee Ji-hye was silent. She didn't say anything as the woman hysterically shouted at Lee Ji-hye.

“You're the one who said to wait 5 more minutes. If you didn't, we would be out of the dungeon by now. Everything is your fault!”

“So?”

“What?”

The woman glared angrily. Whether she believed it or not, Lee Ji-hye played dumb and had a brazen look on his face.

“It is already in the past. Or do you want to kill me?”

“Shameless!”

“If you don’t want to kill me then we should discuss what to do next so that we don’t die.”

My head was busy as I watch Lee Ji-hye acting coolly.

I was remembering her potential. But the sight now couldn’t be explained by mere potential or stats.

Or was I mistaken? I took a deep breath and used Mind’s Eye again.

Name: Lee Ji-hye
Occupation: Hero (Water Magician) Title: None

Stats

Strength: 22

Intelligence: 41

Agility: 18

Stamina: 26

Magic: 35

Potential: (142/277)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Water Sphere (N)

I knew it. I wasn't mistaken.

So what was her nature right now? She was acting cool and decisive. When we were all together, she had acted like a fish out of water.

This person was suitable to be a manager. A person who managed and gave external support from outside during raids....

My eyes sparkled.

‘Good.’

I found an unexpected treasure. I thought I came here in vain but couldn't confirm that the clam actually held a pearl.

I decided to keep an eye on her a little more.

“First, let's re-examine the path we came from. Could you please lend me a light?”

I silently handed her the light.

She placed it down and used a rock to scratch the floor. The rock made a white line that showed the path they took.

But this didn't continue. This was due to the fact that they were running away. No matter how good her memory was, she would eventually get blocked at some point.

“I can only remember up to here. Do you remember?”

The remaining two women were overwhelmed by Lee Ji-hye.

Lee Ji-hye frowned and stared at the ground.

“Well, I think we can't use this path. Those creatures now have the taste of human flesh.”

“T-they might still be alive you know.”

“Who? The three who abandoned us to run away? Or Park Eun-taek ssi who blocked the creatures?”

“Park Eun-taek ssi might be alive.”

It was simply wishful thinking. All of them had heard Park Eun-taek’s screams. There was no possibility he was still alive.

“Only one. We don’t know the way back even if he is still alive. We could also meet the creatures. I don’t want to go back that way.”

Lee Ji-hye was adamant.

The woman who talked before finally asked.

“Then what is that thing on the ground?”

“A map. We need to understand the geography of the area nearby before we start moving. It would be nice if there was pen and paper but I need to use the ground.”

She explained her private intentions.

“I’m perfectly aware of the terrain near the entrance of the dungeon. If a similar terrain appears....”

“What if we end up going deeper?”

I had been watching in silence but now I asked a question. It was more likely to enter the depths of the dungeon rather than the entrance.

Lee Ji-hye carefully explained.

“There is a creature called the Meat Bat.”

“Sometimes we would see it flying.”

The meat bats actually had the highest population in the dungeon. They mainly ate the bodies of goblins and kobolds. They would only attack humans when they were really hungry. Or when their territory was invaded.

“Yes. The meat bats tend to sleep off large meals in the morning and gravitates towards the entrance in the evening.”

“They have such a habit?”

“There are many bugs at the entrance. They learn to hunt by catching the bugs.”

“.....That’s right.”

The dungeons were places that suddenly emerged. Initially there were living beings that lived in that area.

Naturally bugs from the outside were introduced into the dungeons. It was a natural phenomenon for bugs to be found on both sides of the dungeon entrance.

Besides, the creatures couldn't escape from the dungeon without the permission of the Dungeon Master. That's why they were found at the entrance.

It was great that Lee Ji-hye had discovered this information. Some humans had identified the habit of meat bats after 8 months.

I didn't know about it because I had no interest at all. I recently released the ale snakes but that was all.

“From now on, shall we closely follow the meat bats?”

“First we have to identify any danger in the surroundings. Then we will find a colony of meat bats. We need to check if they are heading towards the entrance to eat the bugs. We can't just blindly follow them.”

Safety oriented. A situation like this in an adventure certainly wasn't good.

Lee Ji-hye looked at the remaining people.

“Find the strength to start moving.”

“I-I...I won’t go.”

One of the women declared. It was the woman who first glared at Lee Ji-hye.

“Are you sad?”

“I am sad. Do you want to just sit back and die?”

“It is the same anyway.”

Lee Ji-hye didn’t bother anymore. She turned her head.

“Randolph ssi? It would be much better to move with me.”

“I’ll do that.”

I shrugged and moved slightly, making the two women look uneasy. In this situation, I was the only man left.

“I-I’ll go as well.”

In the end, the other woman surrendered and stood up painfully.

“.....”

The remaining woman gave in as well. Her pride and power wasn't comparable to her life.

There was only one lamp. She couldn't remain alone in this place in the darkness.

Lee Ji-hye made sure everyone was prepared and said.

“Then let's depart.”

*

The area was safe.

They returned to their original position to create some safety measures.

The first thing was that the surrounding spaces were narrow so they could create traps to notice the creatures. They dug at the ground and placed arrows before loosely covering them with grass, turning them into traps.

They were able to relax now.

And the next day.

They filled their hunger with some snacks and drank water before moving. Their movements were as careful as possible in order to avoid the creatures. The problem was that the geography of the place was completely unfamiliar.

They looked closely for a colony of meat bats. Following a colony of meat bats was required in order to escape the dungeon.

The first day was a failure. The second day they ran low on food. I checked my watch and verified that it was the second day.

Water vapour gathered in their vicinity due to Lee Ji-hye's magic. But using it for a long time sharply increased fatigue. And they were also hungry.

The food problem was the first thing that needed to be solved.

“....That can be eaten.”

Lee Ji-hye pierced through the neck of an ale snake with a water spear.

The two women were shocked. No matter how hungry they were, who would have thought of eating creatures?

It looked like a snake but it was distinctly a creature. A creature that attacked people!

Lee Ji-hye didn't care.

The moisture was removed from many of the grass and branches near them and stones gathered.

“Give me strength.”

A fire needed to be kindled.

I readily accepted. Friction would cause a fire. My strength and speed meant it was only a few minutes before smoke rose.

The peeled snakeskin was raised over the fire. Soon there was a golden smell. Even if the meat was raw, Lee Ji-hye would bite it without hesitation.

‘Ice cold computer power, survival skills, ability to take action and not being bothered by the surroundings.

I watched her with a satisfied smile.

‘Really good.’

This level was enough to pass.

‘Now there is one thing left.’

The conditions for exiting a dungeon.

I waited for it to come.

*

Three goblins were hit. It was barely manageable.

But not all of them were safe. One person was bitten. It was the woman who opposed Lee Ji-hye from the beginning.

“I’m sorry....”

She was ill. The side was bitten and bacteria seemed to have entered through the wound. She was boiling hot and on the verge of death. Sometimes she would wake up and apologise.

“It is difficult.”

Lee Ji-hye sighed.

They couldn’t find any meat bat colonies. The more they delayed, the lower the chances of survival would become.

“Why? Are you going to throw her away?”

The eyes of the remaining woman shone. It was just like what happened to Park Eun-taek.

Lee Ji-hye wasn't the only one who abandoned him. Everyone here was an accomplice. It was obvious he knew he would die. There was always a possibility that others would be abandoned.

Lee Ji-hye knew this fact as well. But she shook her head.

“That's not what I meant. Anyway, it seems like a fever...let's look at the situation. I will take Randolph-nim with me to gather food.”

Roles were assigned.

I would go with Lee Ji-hye to gather things like wild mushrooms and grass. But it was unknown if it would lower the fever. Naturally, it depended on the other person's stamina.

A few days later, the only people moving were Lee Ji-hye and I.

*

Lee Ji-hye bit her nails.

The other two women were now complete luggage. The cause was unknown. They might have been infected with an illness.

Lee Ji-hye couldn't easily make a decision.

No matter how cold her personality, she still felt like she had sinned. She would feel it even if those two people lived.

There had to be a way but it felt like she had fallen into a swamp.

“The colony. I need to look for a way to bring them out as quickly as possible. No. I can't be late. They won't survive a day without water. Take care of the people. No. Do....”

She scratched her head nervously. Maybe it would be an unresolved challenge forever. Her expression cracked as she started looking broken.

It was a frustrating moment.

“I-I've found you. I finally found you!”

Lee Ji-hye's eyes widened.

A man's voice was heard not far away from them. I turned around and one person was standing there.

Kim Su-hwan!

The man that had fled in order to survive. Why was he here now? Lee Ji-hye couldn't believe it and asked.

“What is going on?”

“I-it is a relief. Everyone is alive.”

“The other two people?”

“Captain Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim In-pil are dead. I barely survived.”

Kim Su-hwan said with an expression of relief. His expression made it seem like he had been through a really hard struggle. He came one step closer.

“How did you find us?”

“It is a coincidence. I was lost and came across you. Ah, I really thank God.”

Lee Ji-hye frowned.

Did Kim Su-hwan have this type of character? Kim Su-hwan was someone with strong self-esteem and bravado. Of course, it had

been a few days wandering alone but to thank God....

Her sharp judgement wasn't dead yet. Her reasoning warned her of something.

One step. Kim Su-hwan approached.

“But the two collapsed over there. Perhaps?”

“They're not dead. They are fighting a fever.”

“Ahh. I'm glad they're not dead yet. Phew!”

Yet? The nuances were grave.

“This dungeon is too large. It isn't a space where people can endure.”

One step....

“Kobolds, goblins, meat bats! I endured it alone. Let's combine forces to resolve this.”

“Wait. Su-hwan ssi. Stop.”

“What's wrong?”

“I told you something before entering the dungeon. After escaping the dungeon. You would introduce me to your sister in the hospital.”

Kim Su-hwan nodded like it was natural.

“Yes. I remember.”

“Will you keep your promise?”

“Haha. Don’t worry. I promise to honour it.”

“Water Sphere.”

Water flowed around Lee Ji-hye. Kim Su-hwan was baffled.

“...Why?”

“The promise you made wasn’t with your little sister. It was your little brother.”

“Ah! I must have lost my spirit. I’ve spent too much time alone in the dungeon.”

Lee Ji-hye retreated with dismay.

She briefly had a chance to talk to Kim Su-hwan before the dungeon. At that time, Kim Su-hwan had offered to drive Lee Ji-hye. He said he would introduce her to his little brother.

But, who would forget the gender? It wasn't a trivial fact.

Lee Ji-hye made a decision.

“Don't come any closer. If you take one more step then I will attack.”

“Tsk. You noticed quickly.”

Kim Su-hwan's posture changed dramatically.

He placed a sword to Lee Ji-hye's neck. The water sphere impacted with Kim Su-hwan's abdomen but he didn't stop. It was like he didn't feel any pain.

The tone, the atmosphere was strange. Kim Su-hwan didn't feel like Kim Su-hwan. It felt like he would attack no matter what.

It was too late for her to regret it. She couldn't avoid Kim Su-hwan's sword. She instinctively had a premonition of death. She imagined her neck rolling across the floor.

Lee Ji-hye closed her eyes.

And....

“You pass.”

I gave a very satisfied smile. I had been waiting for it.

Lee Ji-hye's wit to shine.

Finally, the last condition was completed.

Chwack!

Kim Su-hwan head fell to the floor. It happened in an instant.

Blood splashed everywhere. Lee Ji-hye's face was drenched with blood. Lee Ji-hye's body was rigidly still in its standing body.

It happened so naturally but it was extremely unrealistic. Someone she thought was a beginner had extremely cold eyes.

Her eyes gazed between Kim Su-hwan's severed neck and I.

I turned away from Lee Ji-hye and looked in the direction Kim Su-hwan came from.

“Until when are you intending to hide like a rat? Come out.”

Jjak jjak jjak!

At the same time, there was the sound of applause in the darkness. The captain and command magician who had been killed appeared.

I smiled.

This was a real smile. The situation right now was so interesting and satisfying that I couldn't help laughing silently.

The captain and command magician Kim In-pil. They were the real masterminds.

The plan had been put together by them. Kim In-pil had manipulated Kim Su-hwan's body.

I had seen the skill proficiency when Kim In-pil commanded two goblins. Although it was marginal, I thought that the dead bodies moved more flexibly and seemed to be complemented by the magic.

‘It seems like he only intends to control the goblins this much.’

Kim In-pil used the manipulated goblin to pull the enemies. The movements wouldn't be so stiff if that was all he intended.

From the beginning, his mind had been filled with calculations to deceive people.

Ha!

Humans like this existed. A person that was more like a demon than a human.

That's why beginners were accepted and they were softly coaxed deeper into the dungeon. Forcefully marching them without a break and then dispersing them with the attack from a large number of creatures.

Consistent from start to finish.

So I was convinced that Kim In-pil was coming. He built this plan just to monopolize the Cores. His bloodthirst was obvious. I, too, was definitely placed in the category of prey.

So I waited obediently.

Approaching me with impure intentions was a sin I could never forgive. I originally decided to remove his head straight away but decided to wait when Lee Ji-hye got involved.

‘Thanks to that, I had some fun watching.’

It was enough compensation for waiting a few days.

“Did you know from the beginning?”

Kim In-pil was puzzled by my dark smile.

“I could smell the stench of a corpse.”

I shrugged.

It wasn't just the smell. The stiff facial expression and strange voice pitch. In addition, there were lots of evidence.

Lee Ji-hye was normal and had figured out that Kim Su-hwan was a corpse.

“A great mentality. Your ability to distinguish things is beyond normal.”

Kim In-pil had a truly surprised expression.

It was normal for people to go crazy after being isolated in a cave filled with creatures for days. I was abnormal by human standards.

The standards of humans.

“W-why did this....?”

Lee Ji-hye opened her mouth after recovering. Her voice was filled with dismay and perplexity.

Kim In-pil spread his arms out wide.

“A dungeon is a really nice place. Dead people are just buried here. Even the body doesn’t leave. It is a place where murder is authorized.”

On the website that gathered the Awakened. The killers stated in the notice were Kim In-pil and Yoon Hyuk-soo.

Lee Ji-hye snorted.

“You are crazy. You made a plan like this just to murder us?”

“Not only murder.”

He pulled out an old-fashioned notebook.

“I keep a diary. Records of skill proficiencies and different magic. This diary was also from before I awakened.”

Each Awakened had a weapon to fit them. The diary was filled with Kim In-pil’s madness. In a sense, it was a weapon that fit him.

The contents of the diary were obvious. In addition, the diary

was filled with stories from before he awakened.

“Murderer...!”

“Haha! Correct. In fact, I wasn’t an undertaker. Would you believe that I worked part time at a convenience store when I awakened? Instead, I was famous for another reason in Incheon. My hobby was pulling out the eyeballs of a living person and collecting them.”

In the midst of the loud Incheon, a few bodies had been found without their eyes. A serial killer that made it into the newspapers of the United States.

Lee Ji-hye blocked her ears.

She didn’t want to believe Kim In-pil’s words.

“My friend here is also a celebrity. He raped women and killed them by breaking their necks! Of course, we are like-minded people. My friend Yoon Hyuk-soo used his tracking skill to chase you. He was really worried that you had died during the chase. Phew! I’m glad, I’m glad.”

The tracking skill normally used to pursue creatures was used to chase people.

Yoon Hyuk-soo bared his teeth. This attack had been planned all along.

“I accepted beginners for a reason.”

“Exactly! How else would two other beginners be accepted?”

“Then Yoon Hyuk-soo disappearing was all an act.”

“Ah, that? It was necessary to draw out Kim Su-hwan. He has plenty of experience in dungeons and is something who frantically tries to save his own life. That friend would become anxious once Yoon Hyuk-soo doesn't return! Will you forgive us for the desperate plan?”

“Is that the whole story?”

“Huhu! If you think that you can beat both of us...please give up that hope.”

Jjikeok. Jjikeok jjikeok.

Kim Su-hwan's head started making a strange sound. Kim Su-hwan rose up again. It still carried the smell of a rotten body.

“Now! The three of us. One of them doesn't tire. We also have decent stamina. Just keep still and you won't die painfully.”

“Speaking unnecessary words.”

I was no longer interested in listening. At first it was like listening to a joke. But I disliked useless and vain people like this.

However, I didn't move.

Unlike those guys, Lee Ji-hye had passed the test I made. Of course, if I was alone then passing the test wouldn't matter.

I turned my gaze towards Lee Ji-hye. Lee Ji-hye was staring at me.

“Make a choice. One of them will die and one will live. Pick the one that dies. And what will happen to the one that lives.

“Randolph-nim, what does that mean?”

“Choose.”

Lee Ji-hye realized that the atmosphere was unusual.

She could feel that I had changed since earlier. She clearly saw Kim Su-hwan's head being cut off.

And now she was holding the cards. A last frantic attempt.

Lee Ji-hye spoke like she was squeezing something out.

“Kill one of them. Very brutally. Leave one of them alive. We still need to leave the dungeon.”

“Who lives and who dies?”

“I don’t know. Just leave one of them alive.”

“Okay. Kill Kim In-pil. Yoon Hyuk-soo, hmmm. I will try to save him.”

“I-I’m asking you. Please.”

I gave a small laugh. Asking for such a simple favour.

The listening Kim In-pil and Yoon Hyuk-soo found out conversation funny.

“Bravo! You are really a masterpiece! The best!”

Kim In-pil trembled. Kim In-pil abandoned the honorifics and smiled.

“I will take the Bugatti Veyron. That car is too good to pass up. Ah, but you should do your best. So that it becomes more fun....!”

Chwaruk!

In the blink of an eye. Kim Su-hwan's body standing in front of him was cut in half.

And I arrived before Kim In-pil.

“First I will cut out your tongue.”

Chuhuk!

A sword was stuck in Kim In-pil's mouth.

“Kkuum!”

“Is it fun to pull out the eyeballs of living people?”

Thanks to the bonus stats from the title, I had 78 points in strength. A human being with that type of strength couldn't be imagined.

I dug my fingers into Kim In-pil's eyes while he was still living.

“Keooooook!”

Froth flowed from his mouth as Kim In-pil passed out from the pain.

A sight that could cause madness. Yoon Hyuk-soo who was familiar with murder was unable to move.

I even dug out the remaining eyeball before saying dully.

“This isn’t fun. Although I’m not in a very good mood.”

Kim In-pil writhed in pain.

He had told Lee Ji-hye that his hobby was torturing the person before brutally killing them. Now Kim In-pil was dying painfully slowly. Or, he might even be eaten alive by the creatures.

I beheaded Kim Su-hwan again while the command magician Kim In-pil had lost his concentration.

I wiped the blood on Kim In-pil’s clothes and grabbed his diary. I looked at it with Mind’s Eye and realized that Kim In-pil’s diary was a very good item.

I put the diary away and turned my head. Now it was time to handle the rest of the people.

Chaeeng!

Yoon Hyuk-soo’s sword dropped as soon as my gaze fell on him. He raised both hands.

“S-spare me.”

“...This boring fellow.”

This guy was boring compared to Kim In-pil. I completely lost interest.

I pulled my sword from Kim In-pil's mouth and stabbed Yoon Hyuk-soo, dealing damage to his internal organs.

“K-Kuaaack!”

Yoon Hyuk-soo grabbed that part of his body and moaned.

“Ooooh....”

Soon Yoon Hyuk-soo looked up at me with lovely resentful eyes. His eyes were asking why I attacked when he surrendered.

A human wouldn't know this but demons were infinitely selfish and would constantly change the laws. Even if he was a murderer, he considered his own life precious.

I gazed into Yoon Hyuk-soo's eyes and he quickly lowered his eyes.

I spoke in a low voice.

“Be a guide. Although you will probably die from excessive bleeding, you can live for an extra hour if the sword isn’t pulled out.”

Yoon Hyuk-soo had no options.

Chapter 17-20: Lightning Queen

The previous evening.

A bluish twilight welcomed us.

‘Not bad.’

I chuckled at the sight of the sunset.

The first experience had a variety of things.

In the end, the only ones that emerged from the entrance were the three women. Lee Ji-hye and I were carrying the two unconscious women.

Yoon Hyuk-soo.....

He walked with the sword sunk in him. It was possible thanks to his high stamina. But he collapsed right in front of the entrance. His eyes were closed like he was sleeping.

‘Things have been resolved.’

Shortly after leaving the dungeon, the two women were transferred to the shop operated by the Mithril Guild. They would handle things for a small fee.

A place for patients was prepared inside the shop. After emergency first aid was completed, they would be taken to hospital.

“What will you do now?”

I asked Lee Ji-hye who was staring at the sky with a blank expression.

“Work hard. I will do my best to live.”

“Do you still plan to continue participating in raids?”

She shook the leather pouch filled with Cores.

“Except for selling my body, there isn’t any other high income jobs for a twenty five year old single woman.”

Somehow I could feel something in her voice. It seemed like she needed money to live a normal life.

Anyway, she hadn’t abandoned the idea of exploring dungeons.

I nodded and asked again.

“Do you intend to join a guild?”

Lee Ji-hye opened her mouth without thinking.

“If I can earn money safely then I will sign up. But the screening of the 5 guilds is choosy. If I can’t join them then is it worth signing up to another guild?”

5 famous guilds existed in Korea.

Each of the were led by Starters and the reliable raids was the biggest benefit. There are various merits but it was a big challenge itself joining the business.

Lee Ji-hye seemed to have applied to all 5 guilds. And failed the steps. It was a pessimistic attitude.

I pulled out a business card from your wallet.

“Take this.”

“A business card?”

“Just mention my name and ask for formal admission. Take it.”

Lee Ji-hye accepted the business card and read the writing in the middle.

“Heaven’s Will....”

“Is there a problem?”

Heaven’s Will was clearly one of the 5 famous guilds.

Lee Ji-hye shook her head.

“No. Rather, what is your relationship with the Heaven’s Will guild master?”

“There is no need to know that.”

“Randolph ssi. Tell me honestly. You are a beginner right?”

“I’ll take care of it.”

I didn’t have the slightest intention of explaining. I just let Lee Ji-hye imagine whatever she wanted. It didn’t matter where her imagination ended up.

Lee Ji-hye was locked in her thoughts.

The scene of Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim In-pil was haunting her head. Those series of actions wasn’t something a beginner could do.

“Perhaps, Park Eun-taek ssi.....”

Lee Ji-hye muttered in a small voice.

Park Eun-taek had thrown his body towards the creatures. As a result, they were able to escape.

However, didn't he have the ability to easily overpower Yoon Hyuk-soo and Kim In-pil? Then couldn't he leave the dungeon on his own?

Lee Ji-hye swallowed hard.

She should refrain from any speculation. Anyway, it had already happened and she couldn't turn back time. Above all, she couldn't easily deal with the man in front of her. She just imagined it.

Lee Ji-hye emptied her head.

‘Excellent.’

I looked at Lee Ji-hye with eyes filled with praise.

She had the excellent judgement to swallow her words. Her potential was low but she could be the manager of his raids.

“A person absolutely can't grasp everything. Anyway...I

understand. I will get in contact with them.”

Lee Ji-hye said with a sigh.

This was an opportunity for her. It was a solid path to enter one of the 5 guilds. She wouldn’t lose a thing even if it was false.

“But what are you going to do with that diary?”

I pulled out the diary left behind by Kim In-pil. It was a diary designed in an old-fashioned manner and gave off the scent of mana.

I used Mind’s Eye to confirm the details again.

Name: Book of Command Spells (U)

Description-A demon’s book of madness. Those with low intelligence are likely to be infected by the madness. If it is used during hunting, the magic power of the diary will rise depending on the system.

The special job ‘Command Magician’ can be inherited.

‘This.....’

I saw a sneak peak in the dungeon but it was amazing.

A unique rating? In other words, a unique item.

The Heroes weren't at the level to obtain a rare grade skill or item. That fact that this journal awakened with Kim In-pil was enormous.

I wondered why a human had this item and picked it up from Kim In-pil.

It also have the ability to inherit a special occupation. It was a unique item at a decent enough level.

‘Kim In-pil had something good.’

A treasure like this being in the hands of someone with no power was a sin itself. Kim In-pil obtaining something so precious.

He must have been a command shaman in a past life. Kim In-pil had died and couldn't keep the treasure anymore.

Those without Mind's Eye wouldn't see the enormous value of the diary and would just think of it as 'japtem.'

I decided to take the diary.

“I’ll take care of it.”

“Burn it if possible. That thing, it must have received a curse.”

Lee Ji-hye shuddered. The eyes that looked at the diary was full of disgust.

The experiences she went through in the dungeon had a substantial impact on her. She had replenished the nutrition but the mental blow would take time to recover.

Lee Ji-hye’s shoulders sagged before she turned and said to me.

“I will go and try. An unknown beginner? Is this really the business card of Heaven’s Will?”

“Go and do that.”

“Oh, I should go home and wash first...I also need to go to the hospital. It is difficult.”

“If it is tough then I can give you a ride.”

“It’s okay. I can’t depend on you so much. It is comfortable riding in a taxi.”

Lee Ji-hye laughed and started to descend the mountain. Perhaps

the next time I saw her would be at Heaven's Will guild house.

I gazed in her direction for a moment before turning back to the dungeon.

‘And I haven't met Yihi.’

She was so busy that she didn't even realize I entered the dungeon.

Yihi was the spirit of the Dungeon Core. She was in charge of various affairs in the dungeon and made it less bleak. It was possible to Yihi to create characteristics like flowers or a lake on each floor.

‘She is busy.’

Right now, building the foundation of the dungeon was in full swing so it must be hectic. I had handed over some points so that she could create necessary things on the 2nd to 4th floors.

‘From the 2nd floor onwards, rare battle gear can be obtained so I need some precautions.....’

I also left this to Yihi. Crafty places were designed to wake up the spirit of the heroes.

It should be proceeding steadily right now.

‘I have to go back.’

The suit was heavy. I didn’t think I would have to wear it in the dungeon for so long. I hit my neck several times before lightly jogging.

*

South Korea was noisy.

It had been 9 months since the dungeons appeared. The first guild to break through to the 2nd floor of the dungeon appeared.

Heaven’s Will.

The guild master who was a Starter, Kim Yong-woo. Those three characters were spread all over various video and print media.

The public television channel, QBS used a vast amount of funds to get an exclusive interview with Kim Yong-woo. A famous announcer would only get 10 minutes of interview time but it caused an explosive sensation in South Korea.

The contents of the interview were as followed.

-Guild master of Heaven’s Will, I’m sure many people are wondering about Kim Yong-woo ssi. Please give a short self-

introduction.

“Nice to meet you. I am the guild master of Heaven’s Will, Kim Yong-woo. As you know, I am an Awakened and one of the Starters. I am 28 years old. Single.”

-Thank you for the answer. Then I will quickly jump onto the next question. The dungeons and Awakened are the hottest thing this year! Does Kim Yong-woo ssi have any idea have this?

“The dungeon is obviously a dangerous place. China and the Philippines have suffered significant damage from the monster waves. But as long as the Awakened are present, the creatures can’t run rampant. When looking at our occupation status window, I think our role is to get rid of the devil that exists at the top of the dungeons.”

-Devil? Are you talking about the devil with two horns?

“Haha. That is everybody’s imagination. Actually, I don’t know what it is. There might be a real god, aliens or humans from an underground world.”

-I can’t possible imagine it. Now, this is the next question. Recently the popularity of the Awakened in the entertainment industry is soaring high into the sky. How do you see this?

“A good phenomenon. The Awakened are still people. We suddenly went through a change but we still have emotions. I hope

you look at us without any discrimination.”

-I understand. Then I will finally get down to business. 12 people have succeeded in capturing the 1st floor?

“They are the elite 12 members of my guild so capturing the 1st floor with a strategy wasn’t that difficult. It was more difficult finding a way. We spent a whole week finding the path to the 2nd floor.”

-Amazing. I know how scary the creatures in the dungeons are from looking at the videos. They are horrible looking and cruel so it is unbelievable that you can easily hunt them. Are there many differences between the 1st and 2nd floor?

“Orcs appear. The size is 1.5 times larger and it has the nose of a pig. The thick muscles and tough leather means that we almost died several times. Other than that, treasures are hidden all over the place. A scroll that allows you to jump 500m at once, a leather pouch that allows items twice the size to enter, potions 10 times more effective than grinding up Cores, a sword with a rare rating... that is all on the 2nd floor.”

-Wah! The descriptions are really eye-opening! Does that mean the 2nd floor is a treasure trove?

“It could be seen that way. But we have to be careful. The orcs are really scary. They frightened me during my encounters with them. If I met them alone then I would instantly flee.”

-The creatures are so ugly that I don't even want to see them in my dreams. Heaven's Will guild master Kim Yong-woo, can you please say one final thing.

“Don't panic if you one day awaken. I hope you think of it as a blessing. And there is a chance for everyone to receive a blessing. We are the protectors of humanity and also contribute to humanity's development. The dungeon is a very dangerous place but humanity can use the knowledge to take on step further. It is over.”

The video went up on YouTube and the interview spread all over the world. It achieved 300 million views and foreign news media aired it with subtitles.

The thought of treasure being found in the dungeon in South Korea naturally made people go crazy.

Due to this, South Korea became even more aware of the Awakened. They were looked upon very favourable, except for the sports industry.

Heroes. The guardians of humanity.

The power of those words was beyond imagination. The Cores were used to cure some terminally ill patients and was successful in giving the Awakened a good image.

There were also devices that utilized the actual Core and there

were heated debates about the importance of the Awakened.

Foreign celebrities were among the travelers heading towards South Korea. The only thing on their mind were the treasures unearthed in South Korea.

Korea became the subject of the world's interest!

At its heart was Heaven's Will.

And behind that...a man by the name of Randolph Brigsiel.

*

There was a strange atmosphere during the meeting at the guild house of Heaven's Will. A total of 45 people were staring blankly at the man at the entrance.

There was silence for a while. Even the sound of saliva being swallowed died. There was tension in their faces.

1 second felt like an eternity.

The man moved. The man that held the room's attention opened the door to the guild master's room.

After a while, the silence was broken. They could barely keep

their senses.

“My house, my house.”

“I can’t lose my composure. What is his identity?”

“Just because he succeeded in the raid. Anyone could...this dirty South Korea.”

Little by little, there was the sound of complaints. Most of them were from people that just joined the guild. They dreamed of going on a formal raid but the guild chose depending on their performance so far.

“Sunbae-nim. Is that guy really that good?”

Eventually, one of the new members couldn’t tolerate it any longer and asked a muscular man sharpening his weapon.

He was one of the 12 elite members that attacked the 1st floor in Heaven’s Will.

“How many times have I told you? He is someone who defeated the orcs. If it wasn’t for him then we would have been wiped out.”

“I can’t believe it. He doesn’t look like it....”

The muscular man frowned.

“I assure you, no one here can beat the orcs in a one on one fight. That man did it. He took on 2~5 of them alone.”

“Does that mean even Sunbae-nim can’t win against the orcs?”

“The orcs are enemies that protagonists in fantasy novels often face. The kobolds and goblins aren’t their opponent. I would lose 8 out of 10 times if I fought them.”

The people who heard it couldn’t believe it.

The muscular man was considered as the top 5 powerhouses in the guild. Yet he said that he could only win 2 out of 10 times. They still weren’t convinced that the orcs were so strong.

All members of the guild wanted to participate in the 1st floor invasion. They had quietly waited for the top members of the guild to get some results.

But among them, a man they didn’t know had participated in the raid. He didn’t participate in any guild meetings so their nerves were scratched when he appeared.

Of course, the man was well known within the guild. They were aware that the guild master had gifted him with a Bugatti Veyron.

In contrast to their snobbish words, each one of them felt their spirit being crushed in front of a giant and felt a crushing pain in their stomach.

No matter how proficient they were, they had never seen something like him. The man proved his skills to the 11 people participating in the raid. And they kept repeating ‘excellent and ‘strong’ in regards to him.

Even an orc was no match. It was no wonder there were complaints.

“Skills are secondary. Is he making a personal raid group within the dungeon? He brought in a female manager and a woman cleaning the toilers...rather than a raid group, it is like he wants to create a flower garden.”

There was another problem.

The guild gathered the optimal personnel as needed to form raid groups. Now the man was creating a raid group with fixed members of the guild.

Making a raid group would create a fuss.

The separation of powers would affect the guild. The guild members wouldn’t just belong to the guild anymore. They could refuse the guild master’s commands and only move according to the direction of the raid captain.

There were many members that made a fuss.

Lee Ji-hye had been brought in as an outside manager. And he had taken a newly entered girl away. The guild's new hire that had only been there for a month was snatched away like a falling fruit.

The man's behaviour was just making a mockery of the guild's traditions.

Thus there was talk that he planned to make his raid group a flower garden.

And the crucial cause of this turmoil...the fact that both women were beauties was to blame.

The muscular man stopped polishing his weapon and clicked his tongue.

"The leader has given his approval. We are not a mere guild."

"I want to hear your thoughts."

"This might not be a bad thing for the guild. He definitely has the skills. A skill with the rare rating is definitely worth investing in. I also believe in the results he has produced so far."

"If Sunbae-nim says so. Ehyo!"

The guild members sighed as the muscular man shrugged.

“Think about it. We’ve cleared the 1st floor and established ourselves as South Korea’s number 1 guild. That means you will get benefits. The dungeons have appeared for 8 months and now you will have some opportunities to play. Why are baby chicks acting so impatient?”

There were standard requirements.

A much smaller number of monsters now existed on the 1st floor of the dungeon. Information arrived that they were disappearing here and there. The reliability was 99.9%. It was good news.

“Our chance has come?”

All the guild members hoped to explore the 2nd floor of the dungeon. They didn’t think the chance would come easily.

The personnel who participated in the raid all received tremendous rewards. The various treasures found on the 2nd floor transcended the rewards received by killing the creatures on the 1st floor.

The muscular man smiled.

“In the near future, 3 raid groups filled with 12 people each will

be formed to explore the 2nd floor. It was originally scheduled to be announced a week later but it should be okay for me to tell you this.”

“Heok! Really?”

36 people would be mobilized for 3 raids filled with 12 people.

All the people who heard the story had wide eyes. The muscular man turned his head and calmly said to everyone who was listening to the story.

“So raise your skills. I’m saying this to all of you. Life is a battle. If something goes wrong then it will end at once. If you want to gain some achievements then build up your skills.”

“Ah.....”

“In that sense, do you want to participate in a 10 day special training?”

Flash!

Hands started to move like lightning.

“Me!”

“I’d like that very much, special training!”

The muscular man’s eyes shone.

“Express hell training. You can’t mess around. If you’re not good enough then you will die. Do you still want to go?”

It was like cold water had been poured on a wildfire.

Hell training. He aimed to show them the real hell.

“Those who want to go, follow me.”

The muscular man stood up with his weapon.

He was one of the 12 members who participated in the raid with Randolph Brigsiel. He was convinced that only the strong could live in the future.

He had been moving at a lukewarm pace. Continuing to the 2nd and 3rd floor of the dungeon. He didn’t stand a chance with his state right now.

‘I’ve been too complacent with my skills. It has been a few months at best....’

An example of the strong becoming lazy.

But there was a strong man in the guild he wanted to follow.

A wall.

And he would go beyond that wall.

‘Huhu!’

The muscular man, Kim Tae-hwan.

He was a man who would laugh while jumping into hellfire.

*

“The outside is quite noisy.”

I said to Kim Yong-woo after hearing the noise outside from the sealed room.

Kim Yong-woo just laughed while raiding my proposal about establishing a raid group.

“There are multiple times when they are noisy. Thanks to Randolph-nim clearing the 1st floor, you are now a perfect target. The time of your proposal....”

“A festival.”

There were no festivals in the Demon World. They divided the spoils of victory and enjoyed the atmosphere but they didn't have any idea of the concept itself.

In that sense, a human festival was very lively.

“Are you interested? In fact, I would have rented a huge hall sooner or later. It is pretty fun.”

Despite being a miser, Kim Yong-woo wrote something down. He was using his position as a guild master.

I shook my head.

“That's okay. Rather, just make sure that there is no problem with the proposal passing.”

Kim Yong-woo scanned it and roughly shook his head.

“You don't want it formally?”

“Still, it is good to get things straight.”

“Hrmm...there is no problem with the proposal itself. I've already heard about an independent raid group that only focuses

on attacking dungeons.”

It was the first time I submitted official documents but the story of the raid I was creating had already spread through the guild. The speed at which the issue spread through the guild had spread beyond imagination.

Kim Yong-woo looked at the proposal and muttered.

“The raid name ‘Devil Hunters’...somehow it reminds me of the black flame dragon.”

Devil Hunters. The name of the raid group would be reduced to D.H.

The name was a reminder of my goal to get rid of all the demons in the dungeons and to become the devil.

“There shouldn’t be any changes.”

“I think it looks great. Should I seal it now?”

Kim Yong-woo who had his attitude changed asked him. I nodded and Kim Yong-woo immediately stamped the proposal.

This was the moment that the raid group Devil Hunters was launched.

“How are you going to fill the other group? One manager and one new member. You are walking down a very hard path. Wouldn't it help to recruit more influential people?”

Right now I was thinking about the future of the raid group. I intended to make the strongest raid group but had only found one appropriate person for it.

“My methods will take a bit of time. But I am confident they will become the strong raid group. It won't be bad from the guild master's position.”

It wasn't bad for a guild to have many strong members.

Kim Yong-woo handed the proposal to me.

“I'm at your disposal. I am Randolph-nim's faithful servant. I will follow Master-nim.”

“I never expected this when I rescued you.”

It was really surprising. I had been wandering the dungeon when I came across Kim Yong-woo and decided to help him. I hadn't hoped for something like this.

Kim Yong-woo just grinned.

“Studying and social experience, I just used every chance I

received to do well. Isn't it thanks to Master-nim that I broke through the 1st floor? I don't think my choice was wrong this time."

Kim Yong-woo.

He thought he was an elephant. But he realized that he was lower than an ant. Instead, he decided to stand next to the elephant.

This was the secret of his life. Otherwise he wouldn't have become the guild leader of one of Korea's top 5 guilds.

I received the proposal and said.

"As long as you're not pretending in order to stab me in the back, I will help you. I hope you made the right choice."

"Ahh! Don't say that even as a joke."

Kim Yong-woo waved both his hands.

"Only you know whether it is a joke or not."

I gave him advice just in case he was prepared to betray me. It was in order to properly scare him.

I turned my body.

The proposal was stamped so now I was going to plan my raid group.

“Will you participate in the festival?”

Kim Yong-woo asked before I opened the door.

“I will make a decision at the time.”

“Then I will send you the official documents when the schedule has been determined.”

“Thank you.”

“It is natural.”

Kim Yong-woo’s eyes blazed with his loyalty.

I ignored him and opened the door of the room.

‘This time I will participate.’

I wasn’t very interested in a human festival but not participating would cause discord within the guild.

I didn't care but there was a need to create an amicable relationship. In order to be a member of Heaven's Will, I needed to participate in a minimum amount of activities. I was aware that the other side had no flexibility.

‘I need to slowly build the foundation.’

The creation of my own raid group! The most urgent thing was to collect all the members.

This time, the new member known as the ‘Lightning Queen’ in my previous life appeared in my head and a warm smile appeared.

*

The spacious hall on the guild house's 3rd floor.

It was the space given to the Devil Hunters raid group. It was a wide area for only 3 people but it would become narrow once the positions started to fill up.

There was no furniture and I felt a strange tension as I entered the empty hall. The manager Lee Ji-hye and newly recruited member Yoo Eun-hye were in a standoff.

Stiff expressions were on their faces.

I slowly opened up.

“What’s going on?”

Lee Ji-hye confirmed my presence and said.

“Captain-nim. You shouldn’t pick her.”

“Unni. Wasn’t it just a mistake? It couldn’t be helped.”

“Have you accidentally killed someone?”

“I’m sorry. But you’re not dead!”

It was indeed a meaningful conversation. Lee Ji-hye seemed to be acting unfair towards Yoo Eun-hye.

I looked over their appearances and nodded.

There was a faint burning smell from Lee Ji-hye’s hair so I could guess the reason.

‘It is due to Yoo Eun-hye’s passive.’

In my previous life, Yoo Eun-hye had been called Lightning Queen. She had a young appearance like a student and the bob cut and mischievous eyes gave him an impressive appearance. However, she was afflicted with some type of passive.

I use Mind's Eye to take a deep look at Yoo Eun-hye's status window.

Name: Yoo Eun-hye
Occupation: Hero (Lightning Magician) Title: * Dozen Lightning Strikes (R, Magic +4)

Stats

Strength: 20

Intelligence: 44

Agility: 15

Stamina: 14

Magic: 45 (+4)

Potential: (138/423)

Uniqueness: Has received the protection of the spirit of lightning. A state received after being hit by lightning and standing on the door between life and death.

Skill: Lightning Bolt (N), Electric Current (N, Passive)

It was a truly strange status window.

Her potential was outstanding. The owner of the highest potential I had seen until now. It was comparable to Timely Rain's guild master, Alin.

The problem was the uniqueness. It was the part about receiving the protection of a lightning spirit.

Perhaps due to the lightning spirit, her body acted as a big lightning rod. If lightning struck then it would directly hit her. As a result, she even received a title.

She might suffer a bit but it wasn't bad. There were many toxins and waste running through the body. The owner of this talent could be called a genius but....

‘The passive Electric Current is the problem.’

The lightning had a comfortable place and wandered inside the building. She unknowingly spread this aura everywhere she went. This was the reason why Lee Ji-hye's hair was burnt.

“Don't come any closer. If you take one more step then I will attack!”

Lee Ji-hye warned. She didn't want to attack the enemy but she needed extreme patience to endure the charred hairs.

Yoo Eun-hye had a long face.

“Unni's hair was so beautiful that I inadvertently touched it. But my passive was activated. Unni, we are Hye sisters. Huh? I won't do it again.”

Lee Ji-hye and Yoo Eun-hye. Both of them had names that ended in Hye. People should overlook a small mistake.

But Lee Ji-hye had no intention of forgiving her.

“We are not sisters. How can you call me unni when you burned my hair?”

“Don’t you think it looks good? No, I’m kidding. So don’t be like that. Sometimes I just joke around for fun. I’m sorry unni!”

“You....”

“Stop.”

I finally spoke.

I needed to control the situation.

“Emotions shouldn’t consume you in a raid group.”

Lee Ji-hye held out her burnt hair and whined.

“But...”

“I told you to stop.”

I firmly said.

The Devil Hunters raid group had been formally launched so I needed to discipline them. I was the leader of the raid group and Lee Ji-hye and Yoo Eun-hye were only members.

The atmosphere was heavy as Lee Ji-hye closed her mouth.

“You are the only manager of Devil Hunters. Your job is to check the status of the members and to organize the schedules, such as when we take a job overseas. Don’t disappoint me from the start.”

“I’m sorry.”

Lee Ji-hye bowed her head.

She was a bit confused at first but she realized something after coming to Heaven’s Will.

A man that even the guild master listened to! An overwhelming amount of charisma flowed from him. The man talked strangely but it was hard to reject him. He gave off a strong impression.

It was the first time she met a guy like this. A person like that made her the manager.

She couldn’t disappoint him from the beginning.

‘Saying it one time is enough.’

I was strong compared to humans. And Lee Ji-hye was a wise woman. It wasn’t necessary to repeat it. I decided to stop my harsh words at this point.

I pulled out a small vial and handed it to Lee Ji-hye.

“Take this. It will solve the problem of your hair.”

Lee Ji-hye’s eyes blinked as she took the vial.

“What is it?”

“A potion I obtained in the dungeon. It is much more effective than grinding a Core up.”

“Ah.....”

Lee Ji-hye’s expression seemed like she had been slapped. Simply grinding a Core into a potion couldn’t revive dead cells.

However, it was a different story if it was one of the treasures obtained. Lee Ji-hye moved her shoulders and freaked out.

“I-I can’t receive this. If this is a treasure from the dungeon....”

“If you don’t take it then I will throw it out.”

“Yes?”

“Like I said. For me, this is an item that I don’t need.”

My body wasn’t weak enough to need an inferior potion like this. A wound on my body would need an advanced potion to cure. Lee Ji-hye seemed really moved as she looked at me with tears in her eyes.

“T-thank you. I will treasure it.”

I inwardly shook my head.

I didn’t understand the uproar over a little bit of burned hair.

However, I heard that hair was important to women. In particular, women invested a lot into maintaining long, straight hair.

Perhaps hair was even more important than their lives. Thus Lee Ji-hye’s attitude was natural.

“C-Captain-nim?”

Yoo Eun-hye who was watching the scene asked.

“.....?”

“What am I doing here? Cleaning? The laundry?”

“Why do you think that?”

“Well, hehe. I’m not doing something like that?”

“There is no need to. You are different from those people.”

I had no intention of giving up such a critical power.

Yoo Eun-hye was confused that she wouldn’t be cleaning and asked.

“Then what am I doing? Ah! Rubbing your shoulders? My hands are amazing. Perhaps you might become addicted to it?”

Then tragedy would occur when her passive was activated.

Based on her kindness, Yoo Eun-hye somehow reminded him of Yihi. Yihi would probably scold him angrily if she heard his thoughts.

“You seem to be misunderstanding something. Did you think I brought you here to run errands?”

The sullen Yoo Eun-hye closed her mouth.

“I’m honestly not sure. Do you know what my nickname is?”

Human lightning rod. I've been struck by lightning a number of times. My body even lets out electric currents. Do you know how much disruption and damage I cause to the area? Of course, I know I have a pretty face but Captain-nim is unlikely to bring me for that reason."

Yoo Eun-hye who was in charge of chores had suddenly become involved in Devil Hunters. That was 3 days ago. Yoo Eun-hye had been worrying about it for 3 days.

"Just have confidence in yourself."

"That is to say, yes. Sometimes I think that people don't see me as a woman."

"You are amazing. I have high expectations for you."

"Expectations....?"

"Yes. Show all the people of Heaven's Will how excellent you are."

"Hehe. I will burn them. It feels nice. This is the first time someone had expectations from me. Still, I'm sorry. You are probably going to be disappointed."

Yoo Eun-hye laughed.

From an early age, no one ever had any expectations for her. Many people were scared of her and wouldn't come close.

She was struck by lightning and visited a shaman but the shaman just proclaimed 'This is karma from a previous life. Build up your virtue.'

Even her family and relatives were unnerved and saw her as a burden.

Yoo Eun-hye was delighted when she Awakened. She could finally be called a talent. However, the passive Electric Current flowing through her body brought her back to despair.

'It is serious.'

If Yoo Eun-hye was useless then the vast majority of humanity was less than trash. The flower hadn't blossomed yet but I need to fix that mentality.

'I should make a move.'

Her thoughts were full of self-deprecation. If that continued, it was natural for her health to fade.

Furthermore, Yoo Eun-hye was a magician not a warrior. All her abilities were focused in intelligence and magic, not the physical traits of a tough warrior.

The door between life and death!

In the past, she learned some knowledge while dealing with tough opponents. I didn't personally experience how great she was. It would be a shame to waste that talent. In the past, Yoo Eun-hye didn't fully understand her talent or ability as a magician.

Of course, I had no intention of letting the past life repeat itself. Leaving this neglected would be a sin.

If Yoo Eun-hye was perfectly raised then she could ride the lightning and aim it at enemies.

In order to do this, she needed to increase her physical skills through training. Right now her state was too imbalanced.

"Follow me. I will be starting your training from today."

I exited the hall.

*

"...This is the dungeon?"

Yoo Eun-hye said as she looked at the entrance that seemed like the giant mouth of a lion.

“Haven’t you seen a dungeon before?”

Of course it was a dungeon. Yoo Eun-hye had a horrified look on her face.

“We are just two people.”

“I am a raid captain and can deal with them.”

“You might be a raid captain but I’m not strong! How many times have I seen the dungeon?”

I replied like it was no big deal.

“Is that so? Don’t worry. From now on you will see it a lot.”

Yoo Eun-hye felt like crying. That wasn’t what she meant.

“W-what if I don’t want to? Ignoring my words.....”

“No, I will keep it in mind.”

It was like a situation where I heard a confession.

“Then why.....”

“Do you think you will die here? I won’t let that happen.”

“D-don’t tell me we really came here for training? A dungeon?”

“Yes.”

“Oh my god.”

Unbelievable!

Yoo Eun-hye felt dismay.

An influential leader. However, he was the only capable one. Perhaps she would be a burden.

“Don’t use any magic. You can only deal with the creatures with your sword.”

“Huh? A sword, you want me to use a sword? Is Captain-nim well?”

Yoo Eun-hye was currently carrying a longsword. She thought she was just carrying the weapon for him. It was enough to make her curse.

“That’s right. You have to use the sword.”

The confirmation killed her. Yoo Eun-hye's body shook.

While Yoo Eun-hye was crying silently, I looked at my plans for the future.

While the demons were using the training room to get stronger, the Awakened were also experiencing noticeable growth.

Killing creatures or completing quests would cause them to grow. It might be doubted because it couldn't be seen but experience was always been gained.

I could see it rise with Mind's Eye. The potential opening. And the way the abilities rose depending on their actions. Using a sword against the creatures would have a higher chance of physical abilities rising.

‘It is best to raise the abilities evenly.’

Let's imagine that a magician had 100 intelligence, 100 magic and 30 points for everything else. Obviously their body would explode from an enormous hit from a creature. There were constraints on using magic successively.

Magic wasn't that easy to use. A double-edged sword. A power that could cause miracles but also rebound on the user.

“Eu...in the end I entered.”

Yoo Eun-hye muttered as she stumbled after me into the dungeon. Signs of anxiety were clearly evident. She was so scared from the beginning that she couldn't open her mouth any longer.

“Don't worry. You aren't going to die in a place like this.”

It was sincere.

Yoo Eun-hye's level of talent was a frontrunner in the world. In my previous life, she had raised her level to being one of the 10 strongest humans.

Unless she encountered a Duke traveling in my dungeon, she could kill anything in here.

“I will believe in Captain-nim.”

The desire for survival emerged in Yoo Eun-hye's eyes.

I just laughed.

The story about how I dealt with the orcs on the 2nd floor of the dungeon was famous within the guild. It was funny that the master of the goblins and kobolds couldn't handle them. Yoo Eun-hye followed without saying anything.

“Finish off the two kobolds that are coming.”

“Heok.”

“Get ready to fight. But once again, you shouldn’t use magic.”

“I-I will try.”

Her tone changed. It will filled with tension.

Yoo Eun-hye had been to dungeons several times. Despite not killing a lot of creatures, her high intelligence meant she could recover from panic. She wouldn’t give up easily.

“I can do it, I can do it, I can do it.....”

Yoo Eun-hye hypnotized herself. She sincerely wanted to live up to my expectations. She also wanted to prove to herself that she wasn’t useless.

It was a good thing. If she continued being frightened by the creatures then I would have been disappointed. It was important to have the will to fight.

“They’re coming.”

I said in a low voice.

“I will deal with one kobold. And the remaining one is up to you, Yoo Eun-hye.”

“Yes, yep!”

Kieeek!

The two kobolds could smell that prey was present and hurried.

I reached out and a sword appeared out of thin air.

It was a magic sword with a rare rating that I used 20,000 points to purchase. A weapon had been necessary to handle the higher ranked creatures summoned during the beginner's protection period.

The appearance was different from an ordinary long sword. However, it issued a very sharp light in the darkness.

I grasped the sword lightly and said while looking at the kobolds approaching.

“The kobold has similar strength to you. Don't use straightforward attacks. Just like the goblins, be careful of their nails and teeth.”

I demonstrated for Yoo Eun-hye. I moved as slowly as possible

and showed her some normal moves.

Kiik!

The kobolds barely reached my chest. The location was a little low to handle with a sword but there were little tricks that could kill them.

Duk.

I kicked the ground. Dust rose up.

The two kobolds hesitated for a moment. I pierced the kobold's forehead in that moment.

“They are short-sighted. Their eyes aren't good. Thus, they will briefly panic when there is smoke. In the meantime, use that chance to attack the head. It is best to cut off their heads.”

At the same time, I removed my sword from the forehead and cut the neck. One kobold was perfectly handled in a moment.

“Now it is your turn.”

Kieeeeek!

The remaining creature went berserk. Its two eyes turned red

and it kept snorting. It had a furious appearance.

Gulp.

Yoo Eun-hye barely maintained her spirit. She was barely holding herself together.

I stepped back. I didn't attack it so the aggro wasn't on me. Naturally the kobold would aim at the target closest to it.

‘You aren't going to die. But I won't act as your guardian.’

I would stay in the background until Yoo Eun-hye's life was in danger. Handling the creature alone would greatly increase her stats. Pushing herself to the limit would raise all her abilities.

She needed to cross the wall. But she needed to climb it alone. Yoo Eun-hye was now facing her first wall.

“Huup!”

Yoo Eun-hye took a deep breath and moved her feet like I did. Dust went everywhere.

The kobold hesitated. It was only for 0.5 seconds but Yoo Eun-hye didn't miss the gap.

Bam!

But it was shallow. The sword barely pierced the skin of the kobold. Yoo Eun-hye hastily pulled out her sword and moved it to the neck.

At that moment, the kobold raised its hand. It was a posture to catch the attack and allowed it to keep its neck.

Instead, the arm it lifted flew.

“Ah!”

Yoo Eun-hye cried out in a sad voice as her blow was blocked. She cut its arm instead of its neck. What was she supposed to do now? Finally she turned and looked at me.

But she didn't put down her sword.

‘No.’

Her high intelligence meant she could find a resolution. She also had a strong supporter.

Yoo Eun-hye looked at the kobold.

The kobold was in pain from one of its arms being cut off. Its

behaviour was noticeable. Yoo Eun-hye felt some hope after seeing its status.

‘Again!’

She raised the sword up high. She lacked the strength to pierce through the thick leather. That’s why she used a strike with all her power.

Bam! Bam!

The sound of the sword hitting flesh could be heard with every swing. Soon the cries of the kobold stopped and it became silent.

“Haack. Haack....!”

Teong!

Yoo Eun-hye threw the sword to the ground. She sat on the floor and breathed harshly. She only fought for 2~3 minutes but sweat was pouring down.

The body of the kobold was completely unrecognizable.

“Well done.”

I smiled with satisfaction. I knew she had thought of giving up

when the kobold blocked the second attack to the neck. Because I didn't tell her what to do if it was blocked.

But Yoo Eun-hye overcame the crisis by herself. The wall had cracked. That's why I was satisfied.

I pulled out a handkerchief prepared in advance that Yoo Eun-hye used to wipe off the blood. A potion was also used to heal any wounds.

The passive Electric Current attacked my body but I didn't care.

Yoo Eun-hye watched her wounds being healed with a blank stare before asking me.

“D-did I do it correctly, Captain-nim?”

“Yes. It was admirable.”

“Ah.....!”

At first she hadn't thought it was possible. But in the end, she did it alone. Yoo Eun-hye's body trembled as she was inspired.

A great performance in front of the captain. Normally her passive skill put captains off from accepted her as a member. The Cores also needed to be divided after the hunt was over. Now there was no need to do that. She could handle one kobold alone.

Yoo Eun-hye didn't want to lose this feeling. To Yoo Eun-hye who had lived most of her life with a sense of defeat, this feeling was more precious than anything else.

“If you want then we can stop here today.”

I said. I deemed that this was sufficient for the first day. She followed me pretty well and I was pleased with her performance.

But Yoo Eun-hye shook her head.

“Ah, it's nothing. I am able to do more. I think I can.”

“Is it really okay?”

“Yes.”

“Then don't lose that willpower.”

Willpower was very important. A commitment that she wouldn't stop.

‘Not bad!’

Yoo Eun-hye had been scared in her previous life. She wanted to prevent any danger to her body. Safety-oriented behaviours were

soaked into her body.

But now Yoo Eun-hye was different. The blood of the warrior inside her had woken up. She would grow wonderfully in the direction I set.

‘Soon she won’t have to work to control the lightning in her body.’

I looked at Yoo Eun-hye with shining eyes.

There was a sufficient amount of time.

Now I had to check her willpower.

She came here on a forced march but now it was different.

Lightning Queen!

The name of a magician who handled lightning in her previous life. This time she would be lightning.

Chapter 21-24: 2000 VS 800

10 days.

Yoo Eun-hye completely changed.

Her confidence rose and she acted more aggressively. Her physical abilities rose to a state similar to a warrior. With a little more help, she could take care of the dungeon alone.

Then after a long time, I finally returned to the top floor of the dungeon.

‘I need to find a skill book for Yoo Eun-hye. An electric current is flowing through her body so she needs to move onto the next step.’

In a previous life, I was a solo person. I did everything alone and tried to get as strong as possible. It took me more than 10 years to realize what was wrong.

Now wasn't the time to be stingy. Besides, Yoo Eun-hye was very important to my plan. There was no reason to refuse just because of money.

I hadn't seen Yihi in a long time but there was no change. She was sitting on top of the Dungeon Core with a troubled expression.

Then her wings flapped once she realized that I came.

“Ah, Master! Why did you only come now?”

“What’s going on?”

“The 2nd floor has been broken through. At this rate, wouldn’t they continue breaking through the 3rd and then the 4th floor?”

“Already?”

I had judged that the 4th floor would be impenetrable for the next 6 months. But it was already breached? Yihi nodded at my question.

“They gathered quite a lot of people and are rushing. People from an unlikely country. There are also some white and black people. Yihi was creating a garden on the 3rd floor when those guys came up and surprised me.”

Yihi kicked the Dungeon Core with her feet.

While creating a garden on the 3rd floor, foreigners had entered the dungeon. 72 dungeons existed in the world and mine was the only one in Korea. Why did they bother coming to Korea just for a dungeon?

I thought about it for a while before finding the answer.

‘They are seeking treasure.’

This was the only dungeon where treasure was unearthed. That gossip had spread across the world and the greedy ones had heard it.

“How many people are there?”

Yihi moved her hands to draw a great circle.

“As much as th~is!”

“Accurately.”

“I don’t know the exact numbers. Initially a group of more than 100 people entered...ah, they were also Chinese. How do I know? Yihi has scanned and picked up 3 languages. Chinese is one of them.”

“Many people.”

I acknowledged the seriousness after hearing Yihi’s words.

“Hing! Yihi has seen at least 500 Chinese people. Together with the other humans, aren’t there thousands of them? Of those, 200 people had died on the 2nd floor.”

“What about the current situation on the 3rd floor?”

“They haven’t engaged yet. The leaders are wary.”

“Status of the creatures on the 3rd floor.”

“There are 5 goblin bosses, 4 kobold bosses and they all have 200 troops each. There are also 200 orcs.”

From the 3rd floor onwards, there were goblin and kobold bosses. They had intelligence and knew how to use tactics. Hitting them recklessly would just cause defeat.

“Impenetrable.”

“I agree.”

Yihi agreed.

Even if they had a lot of numbers, many limitations existed. There was no chance if he placed creatures in large quantities.

The orcs were in the minority and it would be great if there was an orc lord. However, an orc lord was an advanced creature and required 120,000 points.

If an orc lord was placed on the 3rd floor then all the Awakened

that stepped foot there would die. The kobolds and goblins would also disappear.

Could it be moved to a different floor after the war? However, there was nowhere to place the orc lord. The 120,000 points couldn't be ignored. It wasn't easy to use the points.

Apart from the 20% given to the Dungeon Core's guardian, I needed to use them on all floors.

The 1~4th floors were places for the Awakened to level up. I could leave the orc lord on the empty 5th floor but it was unlikely for anyone to reach there so the summoning would be wasted.

‘I will reserve the summoning of the orc lord.’

I contemplated for a moment before saying.

“I have to meet the goblin and kobold bosses. I needed to check their intelligence. Yihi, how many points are left now?”

“About 560,000.”

“...Did I hear it wrong?”

“It is exactly 562,433 points.”

When I last checked, I had 320,000 points remaining. In the two months I had been away, I had gained 220,000 points.

Usually I earned 5,000 points a month. Every time a weak Awakened was handled, I would earn 200 points. Handling the elites would earn a little over 600?

Humans tended to team up in groups of 8 or 12 people when entering the dungeon. I thought that earning points moderately was good and didn't feel the need to release stronger creatures on the 1st floor.

In my absence, I could gain 600 points with every Awakened that died. No, I needed more points than that to build my dungeon.

“Ha. Quite a few people have barged in.”

A group. I couldn't ignore the power of human unity.

Yihi flew over and sat down on my shoulder.

“In addition to the humans uniting, quite a few from foreign countries are wearing gear to sneak in. Quite a few of them were exterminated on the 1st floor. Yihi thinks that it serves them right.”

“Right now there are 800 Awakened on the 1st floor.”

“Won’t Master lend a hand? Right now Master is capable of stepping on the humans like ants.”

“Certainly...but, okay.”

In my previous life, I had rushed out alone. But now I was unwilling.

I didn’t want to lost the dungeon like I did in my previous life but I also didn’t want to be on the sidelines as the other demons devoured the world.

I envied the demons that could move a large number of creatures. Fighting alone on the battlefield couldn’t compare to the contributions from a large number of creatures.

‘Okay.’

War, war.

My dungeon was engaged in a large scale attack. There were many foreign Awakened. They voluntarily entered my dungeon.

Then shouldn’t I directly go and sweep them away?

I grudgingly acted. Confronting them in person wasn’t difficult but it would take away all the fun.

It was only in name but I had received the title of Earl in the Demon World. I didn't have any creatures that followed me.

‘I placed treasures on each floor. Humans are quite partial to treasure. They tend to lose their lives over it.’

Human greed was a strong animal. It was easy for them to die over greed.

‘By the way, the Chinese. Their quantity is different.’

As time passed, the number of Awakened increased. Right now, one in ten thousand people awakened but that ratio would gradually go higher. But China had a large population. Now more than 100,000 had awakened so 500 people wasn't a lot.

“Master. There are many points so shouldn't you release the golem? The golem can take care of the enemies and won't cause trouble to the ecology of the 3rd floor. The plants will also grow faster so the surrounding scenery will become better. The garden that Yihi placed will make the scenery very lovely. Yihi~”

Yihi gave some selfish opinions.

Her goal was advanced creatures like orc lords or golems. However, there were different good parts among the advanced creatures. An orc lord that cost 170,000 points was 50,000 more expensive but it wouldn't affect the ecology.

However, the nature of the golem was too much. It was a destroyer that would wipe out the balance. For now I didn't need it.

‘I will take over the role of floor master.’

A floor master existed on each floor. It was only of the essential requirements for constructing a dungeon but I still hadn't arranged such presences. Because I didn't think there was a need to place a floor master on the lower floors.

But this time a floor master was required to rally the creatures. A war with many saints on the 3rd floor. I couldn't ask another floor master for assistance so I would handle such a role directly.

I shook my head and said.

“The creatures right now should suffice. 200 orcs and 1,800 kobolds and goblins, for a total of 2,000. Compare it to the 800 Awakened. We have the upper hand in terms of numbers.”

“The Awakened on the 3rd floor have a significant level. In particular, two people among the Chinese have fairly strong skills. It looks like a rare skill so won't Master have a hard time fighting?”

One orc could take care of two Awakened.

The problem was the goblins and kobolds. In order to take care of

one Awakened, at least five were necessary. Looking at the calculations, it would be a close battle. There were 2 Awakened with a rare skill.

‘I hope there is a sea.’

I felt my heart beating faster. I remembered fighting against advanced creatures. I wanted to taste a similar power with my own hands once in a while.

Moving units in battle according to my command. Excitement rose up just imagining it. In my previous life, I quickly lost the dungeon and didn’t even have such thoughts.

Gathering points to strengthen myself. Soon I hit the limit but realized it was the wrong choice too late.

In fact, I had experienced a large number of creatures following behind demons after going to other dungeons.

“First I will meet with the kobold and goblin bosses.”

There was a shallow smile on my face.

*

The dungeon’s 3rd floor.

A magnificent view unfolded. About 1,800 goblins and kobolds were gathered in one place.

The 9 bosses were standing in front of me.

“Dungeon Master! I came here with all my henchmen. Kobolds are stronger than goblins.”

“Dungeon Master! I came as well. Goblins are strong unlike the snot-nosed kobolds.”

“Dungeon Master! I am the best. My kobolds are the most durable and strong.”

The 9 bosses started talking in a display of their personality. It was a funny competition to see who was stronger.

Two hours ago, I used magic to inform them that I was the Dungeon Master and to gather. The Dungeon Master's rights were absolute. The goblins and kobolds absolutely couldn't ignore my commands.

“It is good to see you.”

I said briefly before the 9 bosses started talking again.

“I am also pleased to see you.”

“I am even more pleased.”

“I am the most pleased.”

The bosses naturally had bad brains. They were goblins and kobolds.

The 9 bosses simultaneously welcomed me but there was no rudeness.

‘My goals.’

I pressed my hand against my forehead. Could I really take these guys to war?

‘Crazy.’

Anyway, my role was to direct them. Winning a difficult fight would make me feel an even greater pleasure.

“Humans have come to the 3rd floor. Does everybody know about it?”

The heads of the 9 bosses nodded in unison. They weren’t nervous about the intruders.

“I know.”

“It is disgraceful.”

“I’ll obliterate them.”

Their hostility was excellent. There was a common enemy so the troops weren’t going to be split apart.

“Those fellows have entered my dungeon in order to seek treasure. As a Dungeon Master, I can’t condone this so I am giving you a chance.”

“Condone?”

“Dumb goblin, you don’t understand. It means to eat them.”

“No. Condone is the name of my friend.”

I should refrain from using hard words. In the meantime, I had thought that Yihi was simple. Rather, now Yihi seemed smarter.

I said with exceptional patience.

“It means they can’t be forgiven. I won’t let the humans go.”

“Okay. I also hate humans!”

“I will show you the bravery of the kobolds!”

“Grrruk! I hate humans.”

Unified hearts.

However, their motivation was a little lacking. They already weren't seeing the humans as enemies. I needed to increase their willpower.

‘I guess I need a reward.’

Just like slaves, those without motivation would have their efficiency deteriorate.

A whip and carrots.

This approach wasn't just limited to humans but any beings with intelligence.

“I will give a reward to the boss with the most merits during this war. Do any of you have a wish?”

And they were given hope.

The goblin boss on the very left of the line replied immediately.

“Females! There are only males. I want to spread my seeds.”

“I agree. Under these circumstances, there can only be matings between males.”

“I can do all by yourself!”

One of them answered and the rest of the bosses agreed.

The 1,700 kobolds and goblins gathered here were all males. I had summoned a number of female orcs for breeding but the goblins and kobolds were pending.

Their inbreeding was too complicated and the orcs’ reproduction was superior. Of course, half of them were likely to die of birth defects before they turned 1 year old.

Meanwhile, the orc’s population would be controlled through hunting.

‘In the first place, goblins and kobolds have the same roots. They hate each other but had to calmly admit it. However, their selfishness means they reject other species as superior. In particular, they might threaten the lives of the orcs unlike the ale snakes or meat bats on the 1st floor.’

It was a situation where the orcs still needed more numbers. A proper balance was the most important factor when organizing the ecology of a dungeon.

‘Their numbers will significantly reduce in this war. Not bad.’

Even if their numbers multiplied indefinitely, they would be reduced during a war.

I nodded.

“Okay. If you eliminate a lot of humans then I will bring in some females.”

“Kiek! I’ll work hard!”

“I will catch more than the goblins!”

“I will catch the most.”

The advantage of these guys lay in their numbers, not their brains. From the beginning, they couldn’t even count all of their fingers and toes. It would be a hassle to have those brains follow a plan to kill the Awakened but I could leave it to Yihi.

They jumped as Yihi popped out with a small laugh. It was an unflattering appearance.

“We will be organizing the troops from now on.”

A confrontation was inevitable. If the orcs joined the fight then the odds of winning would increase. So it was necessary for separate units in order to operate them effectively.

I remembered the wars I saw in the past and started assigning the roles to the bosses.

*

The party of 800 Awakened was located at the entrance to the dungeon's 3rd floor. They were divided into 6 groups and gathered at their respective bonfire.

They lost a number of colleagues on the 2nd floor so the atmosphere was depressing.

But some weren't affected. The Chinese Awakened. There was a lot of them so they had suffered relatively less losses than the other Awakened.

“Hao! [Henhao](#)!”

(hen=very, hao=good in Chinese)

“Hahaha!”

A Chinese person was dancing with an orc skull while the people around were clapping their hands in response. The majority of the dance was like acrobatics.

The eyes of the rest were on the dancer.

“They are having a festival.”

Daniel who was sitting in front of a bonfire spat out bitterly.

The American called Daniel had come to the dungeon with five people and one of them had died on the 2nd floor. Naturally it was impossible for him to feel good.

“Leader. Shouldn’t we act separately? If we find treasure then we can monopolize it. Then we won’t have to wait our turn.”

A huge man with red hair like a chicken said. He seemed to have lived a wild life as his whole body was scarred.

Daniel shook his head.

“No. We don’t know the creatures and their numbers on the 3rd floor. We can’t escape from this group until we check it out. If a more annoying creature than the orcs exist then we’ll be killed on the spot.”

“Do you remember those gargoyle like monsters in the Middle East?”

Foreign people had participated as mercenaries when the

monster wave occurred in the Middle East. There were other creatures in addition to the kobolds, goblins and orcs.

In particular, the gargoyles that resembled 2 metre large eyeballs were powerful. They fired a short-ranged sharp beam that could cut the body as soon as it hit. The gargoyles also had sharp teeth and excellent resilience to attacks. If they were petrified, after a short time their physical strength would recover.

Many Awakened fell victim to them. Although they were eventually intercepted by dozens of fighters, the thought of them was enough to make him piss in his pants.

“When thinking of the treasure that exists here, it isn’t surprising that creatures more demanding than the gargoyles exist. If there are only 5 of us then we will definitely be wiped out.”

Daniel’s opinion was valid. As the leader of the team, it was natural for him to worry about the lives of his team members.

The chicken haired man clicked his tongue.

“But I don’t like the Chinese people. They are the [black society](#). Look at that festival atmosphere after people died from the orcs. This might actually stimulate the creatures instead.”

(common Cantonese reference to the triads, the Chinese organized crime)

“I don’t like them either. However, be patient. The atmosphere

will slowly return.”

“Leader. By the way, is there really treasure? There was only one staff found on the 2nd floor. Doesn’t it only increase magic efficiency by a little bit? It is a questionable treasure.”

“There are things greater than the staff. The Korean Heaven’s Will guild found remarkable things. In particular, the spatial jump scroll would be worth a lot. Just obtaining one of those would make this expedition a success.”

The spatial jump scroll could really be used a lot. It could be used as an extra life or for malicious things. If it was released at a secret auction then many people would come to buy it.

The chicken haired man scratched his head.

“But everyone else will be thinking similar things. That’s why all these guys surged into the dungeon.”

Daniel laughed.

“Right now humans are greedy animals. In that sense, we can’t blame the Chinese for sitting back and watching. All those gathered here...it is thanks to them that we easily reached the 3rd floor.”

It didn’t matter how many people came in, whether it was separately or together. The Chinese or other foreign Awakened

were capable people.

The place they came from might be different but they penetrated through the 2nd floor thanks to that. Although one of the team members was sacrificed.

The chicken haired man opened his mouth with disgust.

“Ah, I don’t know. I just hate those guys. Leader, we should act properly this time. We have to live well for the sake of the dead, Jack.”

“We will do that.”

Jack was the name of their colleague killed on the 2nd floor. The atmosphere become solemn for a while as they ate their soup.

“Koheok!”

At that moment, screams were heard out of nowhere.

Daniel and the whole team hurriedly held their weapons as they looked in the direction of the screams.

The Chinese person dancing while holding the orc skull had a wooden arrow sticking out from his head.

“Fuck!” (Chinese)

It happened in an instant. The Chinese people stood up carrying weapons.

Daniel and his team nervously looked ahead.

Kiruk.

Kieeek!

At the same time, they could see hundreds of kobolds dripping saliva. The leader of the kobolds was the size of an adult male and had a crossbow aimed.

He was the one who fired the arrow towards the dancing Chinese person.

“Kill them all!” (Chinese)

The Chinese people firmly ran towards the crowd of kobolds. Their appearance was quite different from those seen in a video medium on YouTube. Their attitude was a problem but the sight of 500 people coming out was certainly impressive.

Hwiiik.

Pasak!

The arrows that came flying were cut by the swords of the Chinese. After the element of surprise was gone, the Awakened can easily deal with the sloppy archery skills.

“Grruk! Kieeeeek!”

After the arrows were blocked, the kobold boss immediately turned and shouted. It seemed like they were giving up.

The kobolds started to flee in an orderly manner. They were followed by crowds of Awakened.

Even if they failed to get treasures, the Cores were still money. It was easy to obtain a number of Cores.

“Leader. Shouldn’t we go after them?”

The chicken haired man said while watching the Chinese run after the kobolds.

Daniel shook his head.

“Our team will remain in place. There is something strange.”

“What does that mean? Those guys are kobolds. Isn’t that why

they ran away?”

“It is the one in the front. The boss. He knows basic strategy.”

“Hey, Leader. He is still a kobold.”

Once a kobold, always a kobold.

The chicken head man was well aware of the levels of the Awakened. Even if it was a boss, it couldn't deal with the Awakened.

“I don't have a good feeling.”

Daniel's instincts were very good. He knew the moment Jack died on the 2nd floor and informed the rest of the members.

“We don't know the geography of the third floor at all. A great number of people will die going out there.”

“Well. I understand. Understood. I will do as Leader says. But will we move at a later time?”

“We weren't going to accompany them until the end anyway. They are only guides to prepare for a situation. We will act separately as soon as I grasp the situation.”

The chicken haired man clapped at Daniel's situation.

"This is why I like Leader!"

Daniel was able to calmly analyze the situation.

"Richard, you are our quickest member so I want you to scout. Determine whether it is a trap or not."

"Okay."

"Andy. Secure the perimeter."

"Understood."

"What do you want me to do?"

"A simple thing."

"Me? Me? What do you mean, Leader?"

The eyes of the chicken haired man shone.

Daniel looked at the pot that was half filled with soup and said.

"Eat the soup. There is too much left."

*

The number of those chasing the kobolds gradually decreased.

The geography of the cave was very complicated and the numbers dropped one by one as they couldn't keep up the speed.

At first there were 500 people but now only 100 remained.

The people in the lead realized that something was weird but it was too late by the time they tried to turn back.

Chwiik!

Chwiiik!

The Awakened were dismayed. Creatures sprung up from every direction. They wouldn't have been surprised if goblins or kobolds emerged. But the creatures that appeared were 200 orcs!

Despair appeared on all their faces.

‘There are more than I thought.’

I used a crystal ball in order to determine the battlefield in real time. I had two crystal balls and magic could be used to show the

scene surrounding the other crystal ball.

The crystal ball showed the battlefield with the orcs. Thus I could view the battlefield in real time from a remote location. It was a magic tool that cost 5,000 pt.

‘It is simpler than I thought.’

I ridiculed the 100 Awakened that had followed until the end. They never even imagined that the kobolds would be a lure.

They thought the kobolds were running away scared. Most of the Awakened that came this far were the Chinese whose thinking was too narrow.

This was the worst result.

‘This is a ridiculously good result for a 1-time operation. Now I will slowly bleed them dry.’

I had the power of my home ground. Furthermore, this operation brought a few advantages.

Now, what method would annoy them?

The smile on my face couldn’t be erased.

*

Each of the Awakened had red eyes. The skin at their mouths was peeling.

Over the last few days. They hadn't been able to sleep.

The goblins, kobolds and orcs roaming around randomly attacked so they had to pay close attention 24 hours a day.

Some of the Awakened that stormed off in anger didn't return. Dozens of Awakened had died. The number of Awakened had dropped below 700.

There was a proposal to exit the dungeon but the Chinese didn't agree. They only received one staff so they maintain an unwavering attitude not to leave. The large black society also helped quite a bit in the battles. To be honest, the creatures were no match for their power.

There was still hope.

"The situation isn't good."

However, Daniel's thoughts were different.

"The kobolds, goblins and orcs are united. Their movements aren't common. Someone behind them...who is it? They must be

very strong to exert influence over the creatures. Advanced demon? Or...Dungeon Master?”

The situation was enough to cause him anxiety. Daniel had an excellent sense of smell, especially regarding danger.

Now that feeling was at its peak. He hadn't felt such apprehension since awakening. Even his time as a mercenary in the Middle East wasn't as high as this.

“There is something. The opponents haven't lost their leisurely air. Confidence that they can wipe us out anytime...What are they playing at? Have I been careless since the beginning?”

Daniel had a habit of talking to himself when he was extremely nervous. It was at that moment.

“Leader?”

The chicken haired man asked Daniel with confusion as Daniel stood up.

“This is the only opportunity to get out of the dungeon. Let's go.”

“What does that mean?”

“We are in front of an ant's hell. Once we enter, we can never come back. The creatures have stopped playing with us. It means

the presence behind them is moving. The kobolds, goblins and orcs don't have the patience to kill us slowly. Those guys appear to act independently but are actually cleverly linked."

"Leader. Richard hasn't come back."

Richard. Their fastest colleague was sent to scout.

In fact, Daniel was skeptical about whether he would return. More than 100 people had entered deep into the dungeon and none returned alive. The only thing that greeted them was death.

The body and head was so compromised that he couldn't determine if Richard had died. But everyone knew. He died. However, the chicken haired man didn't acknowledge it.

At the very least, he wanted to see the dead body. The chicken haired man was such a person. He believed in camaraderie.

Daniel ground his teeth together.

"We need to preserve our power when moving. There is no way the black society will continue moving passively. We will remove our team here. Our team will be removed so that we don't die!"

"Leader. Richard hasn't come back."

The chicken haired man could only say the same thing.

“Richard is dead. You know in your heart that he is dead and not coming back. It would be strange if he returned.”

“Richard.....”

“Shut up! Richard would want us to leave the dungeon. Ricard isn't a fellow with high pride. But he didn't return which means he was torn apart by the hideous monster! But you want us to wait for him? If we stay in this place then we'll be torn apart and eaten by the orcs!”

“Leader. I'll wait.”

“This...this bastard!”

Daniel's body trembled as he sat back down again. It was his declaration of surrender.

The other team members also agreed with the chicken haired man's opinion.

Let's wait a little longer. Their eyes were saying.

It was natural for a leader to follow the opinion of his team.

“Thank you Leader. This is why I like Leader. Do you know my heart?”

The chicken haired man was in mourning. They had been together for over 10 years. Most of that time was on the battlefield so they trusted each other more than anyone else.

Daniel frowned.

“Don’t speak another word. If you say something then I will drive my sword into your mouth.”

“Well, isn’t Leader good? You are so kind.”

“Damn.”

Daniel placed his hand on his forehead.

“Kik!”

“Huhuhu!”

The remaining team members laughed.

The dark atmosphere was lightened a bit. Furthermore, there was still 700 Awakened left. Their situation wasn’t gloomy.

*

The black society started moving.

The Awakened moved with purpose.

Among the 700 Awakened remaining, 400 of them belonged to the black society.

It was natural for them to move in this dangerous situation.

Furthermore, they hadn't been doing nothing over the past few days. The Awakened with navigation or geography skills had found the place with the creatures.

This place was the destination of the black society. They would wipe out the creatures on the 3rd floor once and for all.

“Those monster scum. Today will be their funeral!”

“Kill them. Return everything to them.”

The Awakened had suffered over the past few days so they were in a poisonous state. In particular, those that lost their colleagues were furious.

They wouldn't be shaken any longer. Even now it felt a little too late. The group had argued about when to wipe out the creatures. They wanted to turn back time and reverse their inaction but it was too late.

However, Daniel thought this was much better.

If they rushed in at the beginning without a plan then they would likely be wiped out. Identifying the geography and using the momentum to hit them all at once was better.

‘Nevertheless, I still feel this anxiety.’

Why?

The feeling in his heart was getting stronger. Like he was stepping into an ant’s hell.

But when he judged it objectively, they didn’t lack power compared to the creatures. The only challenging thing about the creatures was their number.

No matter how he speculated, he couldn’t see the person behind the creatures.

‘Richard. Please don’t hate us.’

There had been a chance to escape the dungeon.

But Richard was dead. If the ghost of Richard cursed them then the future would likely be really difficult. However, Daniel didn’t stop moving his limbs.

Biiiiik!

The leader of the black society blew his whistle. It was the stop signal.

In front of them was a swamp. It was quite wide but not very deep so they could walk through it. They moved quickly without any disruption to the ranks.

They slowly stepped foot into the swamp.

“Keep your ranks! Slowly, move slowly...eok!”

When halfway across the swamp. Goblins emerged through the swamp. They grabbed the feet of those crossing the swamp. The ones that were dragged away screamed in pain.

Didn't they confirm that there was no risk before crossing?

But Daniel could soon see the reason why. The goblins were riding creatures through the swamp.

Swamp worms!

A low class creature that inhabited the swamp. They normally fed on small insects in the swamp environment. They were small creatures on 80cm in size. Instead, they were very strong. They

weren't very threatening to the Awakened but the kobolds and goblins could move on them.

An ambush. The ranks were disturbed. It was accurately divided in half.

“Prepare to fight! Prepare to fight!”

The Awakened prepared to attack the creatures heading towards them from the swamp.

Chwiik.

Chwiiik!

However, they flinched as a frightening sound was heard from one side.

The 700 people had been divided into groups of 300 and 400. They couldn't join in the middle. The orcs crossed the swamp to where the group of 300 people were.

Kiiik.

Keeeeek.

The remaining 400 were safe but that didn't last long. A group of

1,000 goblins and kobolds had appeared. They were completely trapped.

Those split apart had no choice but to fight.

“Guarders more forward!”

“Forward!”

“Protect the damage dealers!”

“Come up! Don’t panic!”

The languages were different but they could understand. The next moment, the two groups started killing at a fast speed.

“Damn!”

Daniel spat out as he wielded his sword.

A kobold’s head flew through the air.

“Be careful!”

The chicken haired man kicked the kobold that was coming up behind Daniel. The body of the kobold was torn apart.

“You can leave the back to me Leader.”

“Run into the swamp!”

Daniel hurriedly shouted.

“Eh? Swamp? Aren’t the goblins there?”

“It is a deception tactic! There aren’t many of them in the swamp. They want to tie us up here! Anyway, it is better if we quickly join up with the guys on the other side!”

“Only us?”

“Everyone!”

“Okay!”

The chicken haired man waved his sword around like it was a toy. It attracted the eyes of the nearby people.

“Follow me!”

Puhung!

A kobold's throat was cut.

The chicken haired man then winked towards Daniel.

“I really wanted to try this Leader.”

“Louder!”

The chicken haired man laughed before shouting.

“Me!! Follow me!! “

The chicken haired man rushed towards the swamp while shouting. Daniel and his team arrived at the swamp.

They quickly cleaned up the kobolds and the two groups quickly followed behind when they noticed.

One, two and soon one hundred openings were created. The kobolds and goblins had small bodies and couldn't cross the swamp without the help of the swamp worms. Before long, everyone succeeded in joining together on the other side.

Although there were 200 orcs, there were still 700 Awakened. Handling the kobolds and goblins crossing the swamp was like child's play.

The situation was reversed!

Hope bloomed even more.

*

‘Ha. There was someone who could use his head?’

I licked my lips.

I thought it would be easy to take care of those guys.

It wasn't possible to prevent them from crossing the swamp. They had noticed and crossed the swamp.

‘War is difficult.’

It wasn't an easy thing. I never participated in any war strategies like this.

The first bite hadn't succeeded.

Still, it was a pity.

I had prolonged it for days in order to create a toxic environment. The creatures had deliberately allowed their movements to be scouted.

I wanted them to come running. It was only half successful so I thought it was inadequate.

‘It can’t be helped.’

Anyway, I was satisfied. I was in the best mood for a war.

I had yet to wage a war in South Korea so these guys were like a special dish. They would just die in the dungeons of other demons anyway.

It was better that I eat their points.

I made a mask out of bones. It covered exactly half my face and caused a feeling of fear.

The higher the magic, the more the opponents felt fear. It was an effect caused by many rare class goods.

Hiiing-!

I wore the half-skull mask and turned to the horse next to me. ‘Inferno’ had a tail and mane made of black fire.

A cousin to the unicorn, it had a long horn on the forehead. It was different from the size of an ordinary horse. The steed had an overwhelming presence.

An intermediate creature that was a means of transportation. I thought about the upcoming Demon World auction and purchased a mount in advance.

I mounted Inferno and stretched my hand out into thin air.

The space distorted and a sword emerged.

‘I will depart.’

I clicked my tongue while holding the sword.

*

The hands of an orc grabbed the shoulder of an Awakened. The strength of the orc was enough to tear apart the floor so the situation was obvious.

However, the Chinese Awakened that was caught didn’t panic.

Rather, it was the orc that was struck 20 times in the blink of an eye. 20 slash wounds were carved on the body of the orc as it dripped blood.

It was the work of the Chinese Awakened, Lai Feng.

He had a rare skill that could speed up the agility of his body for 2 seconds. Even the name of the skill was Accelerate. This strength and stamina would run out after using it a few times but it exerted absolute power in an emergency situation.

Lai Feng immediately cut off the head of the orc. In no time at all, the vast majority of the 200 orcs had become corpses. The goblins and kobolds crossing the swamp weren't a threat compared to the orcs.

Victory!

Hope appeared in the eyes of Lai Feng and all the Awakened.

There were still approximately 500 Awakened left. Their confusion had quickly turned to defense. They used their numeric superiority to cut the throats of the orcs.

Lai Feng checked his body.

'I can use it once more.'

Accelerate.

It was a juggernaut skill for 2 seconds. Looking at the state of his body, he could only use it once more. A double edged sword that affected his body.

But it was enough. Anyway, the remaining creatures were just orcs and kobolds.

“Just a little more! Exert yourself a bit more! Victory is right in front of us!”

Lai Feng exclaimed.

At the same time, the surviving Awakened flocked to his side. They planned to get rid of the remaining creatures.

Tuuk! Tuuk! Tuuk!

The ground shook strongly as the hundreds of Awakened moved their feet. The kobolds and goblins were dismayed as they approached. Moving in a line meant the creatures couldn't come readily.

Seokeok!

More than anything, Lai Feng's blade wasn't dull yet. The rare grade skill wasn't the only thing he had. No matter how tired he was, Lai Feng was one of the best warriors of the black society.

Every time his blade moved, the head of a creature would roll to the ground. The dungeon was filled with the corpses and blood of the creatures.

Even some of the goblin and kobold bosses couldn't avoid death.

Kieeek!

Kihiiiik.

The creatures tried to resist. But that was it. Even now, their numbers were steadily decreased. Little by little, smiles blossomed on the faces of the Awakened.

Dagudak. Dagudak.

An entirely different existence arrived.

“.....”

Everyone was silent.

The description?

Yes, like a grim reaper.....

A reaper like existence. Maybe it was the reaper itself.

A huge steed with a mane and tail of black fire. On top of it was a man.

Only half of his face could be seen. The rest was covered by a skull mask. He wore a black cape and was holding a sword in one hand.

At that moment, fear rose in all their bodies. It was a similar fear to when they first faced the creatures but the quality couldn't be compared to that time.

Lai Feng tried to suppress his trembling fist. It was so strong that blood flowed through his fist.

The air had changed again. Just a few minutes ago, he had been vigorously wielding his sword while thinking of victory.

Now he wasn't. The emergence of that man had changed the air. The soldiers were useless when paralyzed by fear. This couldn't continue. Lai Feng felt a strong pressure to reverse the atmosphere.

Lai Feng made a decision and moved.

He had the Accelerate skill. Even some other skills with the rare rating couldn't compare to Accelerate.

When this skill was used, he could be called invincible for 2 seconds. No matter how confident the man was, he would have no choice but to die after being cut 20 times.

Lai Feng looked at the man surrounded by flames.

He couldn't be careless. It might be humiliating for a warrior but he needed to endure for the sake of victory.

But Lai Feng didn't know. The eyes of the man had penetrated through Lai Feng. The man already knew everything that Lai Feng was planning.

“Huup.....!”

Lai Feng moved closer to the man and activated Accelerate.

The world slowed down as Lai Feng moved faster. His sword moved twenty times. The essence of 20 sword strikes stretched out from Lai Feng's body. Lai Feng used his most powerful sword strikes!

‘It is over!’

From the man's view, Lai Feng was infinitely slow. Rather, he seemed like a turtle. It was over. He won. The man only had an overwhelming presence.

At the end of his 20 strikes, Lai Feng's sword pierced through that man's throat.

Ah, victory!

Now the atmosphere would change back. Lai Feng turned his head and shouted. But no words came out.

‘Why is my voice...?’

And that was the last thought Lai Feng had.

“You saw an illusion.”

I laughed as Lai Feng’s head fell to the floor.

That thing was just acceleration. It was a suicide skill that pushed the brain and muscles. His mind hadn’t recognized it even in death.

Anyway, that body wouldn’t have lasted more than a few years. He would have eventually met a very painful end. It might be a blessing for Lai Feng that I killed him now.

‘Wasn’t there one more person with the rare skill rating? Or are they already dead?’

I turned and looked at the 500 remaining Awakened. One orc could deal with two Awakened. If I counted simply then there should be 300 left...but such a simple comparison wouldn’t work.

Plenty of survived thanks to the owners of the rare skills.

Unfortunately, the other one already seemed to be dead.

The ending of the rest was decided.

Genocide!

They were like fish caught in a net.

There was no reason to spare them.

Anyway, they were the ones that came in after hearing of the treasure Heaven's Will found in the dungeon. They were fish that entered my pond.

The vast majority of the crowd were now a special dish for me to appease my anger. I wasn't hungry but they couldn't be allowed to touch my farm.....

One day I would be taking the attitude of other demons but not just yet. There were many chances that I could monopolize.

I dismounted from Inferno's back while thinking of taking them out.

“Dungeon Master!”

A man came forward and kneeled.

‘.....?’

I knew the language of several countries including English. Therefore I could understand the man’s words.

“Please calm down and forgive us. We were silly sheep blinded by treasure.”

“Are you crazy, Leader?”

“Pow!”

“Squat down!”

Everyone looked at the man’s behaviour. He seemed crazy.

“Please!”

But the man didn’t care. It wasn’t a simple fear as the man’s body trembled with sincerity. The man could feel something the others couldn’t.

I was interested and used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Daniel Drew Martin

Occupation: Hero (Guarder)

Title: None

Stats

Strength: 33

Intelligence: 41

Agility: 31

Stamina: 35

Magic: 15

Potential: (155/308)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Insight (Ex N), Second Sense (Ex N)

Second sense and insight!

The ratings were low but the combination of the two skills caused a synergy effect. That’s how he could see my power.

But even if he knew the truth, in their eyes I was just an unusual creature. That’s how the man came up with the idea to kneel down.

Of course, that didn’t mean I would change the ending. It was mere admiration.

“If you let us live then I’ll make sure they don’t bother Dungeon

Master again. You will never see us in the dungeon.”

“It is a little bit difficult.”

There were plenty more people who wanted the treasure in this dungeon. If these people lived and talked about my existence then the number of people entering the dungeon would decrease.

“Yes....?”

Daniel seemed surprised.

He never imagined that I could speak English. Frankly, it had been a gamble. There was a large chance communication wasn't possible. The gamble was a success.

It was true that I found it a little interesting.

So I suggested a game.

“10 minutes.”

“The time to get away?”

Colour returned to Daniel's face.

500 people scattering. With his skills, he could at least save his

remaining team members.

However, I shook my head.

“I will attack for exactly 10 minutes. You will block it. I will stop attacking after 10 minutes.”

I declared while pointing my sword at Daniel.

“First of all...yes, you.”

Chwack!

Degururu....

Daniel couldn't even speak before he was struck by my sword. The game started the moment his head fell to the ground.

“L-Leader!”

10 minutes.

500 people remaining. I needed to wipe out 1 person every second.

I kicked Inferno lightly.

“These bastards! Kill! Kill them all!”

Hiiing!

Inferno started moving.

The chickened haired man came running but I ignored him. He was the most enraged among all the people.

I would place him last on Daniel’s behalf. The slightest mercy.

And humans became corpses every time I swung my sword.

“Stop! Stop it!”

They formed a tight defense but I pierced through them. I besieged the army. The huge breakwater was neutralized.

Swiik!

Hwaaak!

Flying arrows and magic.

I also ignored this.

The current level of the Awakened couldn't damage my body.

“Kuaack!”

“H-help me!”

Time passed by simply as I stabbed and slashed. The desperate and terrified crowd dropped their weapons and tried to run.

However, none of them could escape from Inferno. Inferno was equivalent to a unicorn. Those that tried to escape through the swamp had to greet the goblins and kobolds.

At exactly 10 minutes, there was only one person remaining. Out of numerous bodies, only one was alive.

“How lucky.”

I kept my promises.

But that was different from safely leaving the dungeon. Even he wouldn't be able to escape.

I didn't know but the chicken haired man was in a towering rage at Daniel's death. Just like the name Awakened, his anger woke up the potential in his body.

The creatures gradually disappeared under his sword.

I held the reins and turned my steed. The remaining creatures followed behind me. The man that was left behind with all the bodies.....

The man cried out.

“Damn. Damnnn!”

The man with a chicken like hair.

He was the sole survivor instead of Daniel.

Chapter 25-26: Dungeon's Internal Stability

The kobold and goblin bosses.

At first there was 9 but now only 5 remained. 4 had died during the war. And the 1,700 troops had decreased by more than half. The war was that violent.

Of course, I took care of most of the Awakened alone but a promise was a promise. I considered the number of creatures left and presented them with some females.

The just summoned female kobolds and goblins were frightened but I didn't worry about it and placed a fixed number with each unit.

“Kiek! Dungeon Master! Thank you!”

“Increase the number! Make the kobolds strong!”

“I worked hard. Now I won't be alone!”

The ones that survived until the end.

I sent them away and looked at the points.

[Points Remaining: 1,174,357]

I felt more comfortable looking at the message window floating in the air. I gathered a million points so I could achieve my purpose at the Demon World auction.

‘The power of advertising.....’

To be honest, I hadn’t expected so many Awakened to flock here. I simply promoted about the treasure for the growth of the Awakened.

It was unexpected that I would get such a fervent response from overseas. I was always happy to receive an unexpected gift.

I firmly pressed my index finger to my forehead.

‘Should I increase my investment a little more?’

It was definitely tempting.

At this time, one million points was a massive amount. No, that amount of points couldn’t be ignored even in my previous life.

I could even summon the high class creature, a griffin. Of course, the level of the griffin was low compared to other high class creatures but the flames and lightning could be enough to cause a disaster.

The current level of the Awakened was low so letting it loose would wipe out hundreds or thousands of humans. One alone would be enough to destroy a small country.

There were not any demons at the moment with one million points. I could definitely get an advantage in the Demon World auction.

In addition to Krasla, I could obtain several other things. If so, using a lot of points on the dungeon would be bad.

‘So far, I’ve placed 40,000 points on the treasures in this dungeon. If I increase it to 100,000 points...the hidden items will be found by others outside the Heaven’s Will guild. I can’t just intentionally leave things for the Heaven’s Will guild.’

I’ve received news from Kim Yong-woo that the other 4 large guilds were recruiting members to raid the dungeon.

They would obtain some of the final benefits.

Some of the Awakened would die from the creatures in the dungeon but others would obtain the treasure.

It was a sacrifice I was willing to take.

‘I have to do it before the other demons notice...they might

decide to follow my dungeon. I have to eat everything up.'

The 72 dungeons were different depending on the nature of the demons. It was the early days so they were guarding against being too strong. Little by little, they would learn the importance of points and start to raise the awareness with the Awakened.

My dungeon was highly likely to be their role model. Then I needed to maximize the benefits before that.

I planned to use the colourful treasures to entice the Awakened. Items as well as gold and silver valuables were placed all over.

"Phew~ it is hard! I thought I would die because of these heads.

Yihi wiped the sweat from her forehead.

I had Yihi collect and count the heads of the Awakened after the battle ended. Thanks to that, Yihi was exhausted. If the numbers didn't match then she had to start again.

I listened to her manner of speech.

I said with a smile.

"Yihi. Did you decorate a garden?"

Jjikkum!

Yihi was startled.

I heard that Yihi was decorating a garden for me. But she didn't understand why I decided to mention it.

"Y-Yihi determined that it is good...t-this is the modern world. Yihi thinks a dungeon should be bright and beautiful. This dingy dungeon doesn't fit Dungeon Master's style! Dungeon Master is great so the dungeon also needs to look great!"

Despite stammering, Yihi spoke with utter conviction.

I lightly nodded.

"I'm not blaming you."

"...Yes, really?" You really aren't punishing me?"

Yihi's eyes became wide. Her wings started to flap again. She had spoken loudly to hide her sins. It was easy to understand her reaction.

Yihi's mind was better than the kobold and goblin bosses. But that didn't mean that Yihi was smart. Her brain was frantically stuck in a corner until I coughed.

“Hrmm! Can you make it so that creatures don’t enter the garden?”

“Of course. A safety zone setting? It isn’t large so Yihi can easily set this part. It would be sad if creatures came in and broke the trees.”

Safety zone setting. He had heard of it before but never used it.

But now it seemed necessary. The Awakened needed a place to relax. It was a great base to encourage being stronger in dungeons.

It was time to earnestly lay out his dungeon.

“First, bring me to the garden that you made.”

“Huh? I-I haven’t finished yet.”

“No. Let’s talk after seeing it.”

“Hing.....”

Yihi turned with a long face. It was an attitude that stated she didn’t want to.

However, I did not withdraw my decision. Yihi seemed to realize this and her shoulders slumped.

“I understand. Follow me Dungeon Master. Don’t expect a lot.”

“Yes.”

I didn’t have any expectations.

Yihi pouted and muttered ‘it would be good if you have some expectations’ to herself. Of course, I just ignored it.

I started to move along after Yihi.

In fact, the 3rd floor was too wide to walk. A magic circle could be used to move quite a distance.

There was a magic circle inscribed in each floor of the dungeon for the Dungeon Master to move. It was invisible to human eyes and only the Dungeon Master and spirit of the Dungeon Core could use it to move through the large dungeon.

I had a terrible thought.

‘The size of the dungeon is several times larger than what can be seen with the naked eye. My dungeon is located on the Bukhan Mountain but the size that humans reported is much smaller.’

The size was awesome when looking at the dungeon with the naked eye.

An area of 21 square kilometers and a height of 4733 meters. It was the size of a major city and had a similar width to Nauru in the Republic of Oceania. In addition, 4700 metres was twice the size of the Baekdu Mountain.

Yet not all of it was visible. It was actually much greater than that. It would be crazy to walk around a large place like this.

Some Awakened had actually starved to death. The dungeon jammed most equipment of modern civilization so those lost would end up dying.

Syuk!

The patterned red light of the magic circle wrapped all over the place. Soon I could confirm that the surroundings had changed. They were moved to the place that Yihi wanted.

Kaaang!

Kaaang!

The sound of hammers tickled my ears as soon as I arrived.

‘...This is staggering.’

I was overwhelmed by the view.

First, there was the appearance of five dwarves hammering eagerly.

Yihi was authorized to create the dungeon environment and she could give that authority to others. In particular, building features was too strenuous for Yihi so she was allowed to use the dwarves.

The problem was the appearance of the garden. It looked more like a strange structure than a garden. At first glance, it seemed like a palace of poo.....

No, it was the shape of poo.

It far transcended my imagination of a lovely garden.

“Eh, Noonim has come?”

“What? Noonim came? Where?”

“Who is that man?”

Yihi permitted the dwarves to see her. The five dwarves stopped working and came running over as soon as they saw Yihi.

‘Noonim?’

But the nickname was strange.

I could roughly understand the situation from Yihi's expression.

“You guys! Didn't Yihi tell you to work hard?”

“We did!”

The dwarves lined up and replied at the same time.

Yihi's expression still wasn't good. She placed both hands on her waist and said.

“But why are you still not finished?”

“Time.....”

“Materials.....”

“Uh huh. Excuses! You haven't finished making it! Didn't Yihi tell you to reduce the time you spent sleeping and eating?”

Humans would call this a vicious employer. The dwarves made a tearful face.

“That is realistically impossible Noonim.”

“Spare us. I haven’t even eaten one meal today.”

“I really am going to die under these circumstances.”

And Yihi bluffed.

“I guess you haven’t suffered enough? Recently the orcs have been worrying about food. Do you want to become the orc’s rice?”

“T-that....”

The dwarves closed their mouths with an expression indicating they thought it was still unfair.

My eyes noticed the blisters on the dwarves’ hands.

“Yihi. Stop.”

I finally spoke up.

Yihi seemed to be very strict to other people. Then Yihi clapped her hands.

“Ah, greet him as quickly as possible! This is the Dungeon Master. Your real master! Treat him more politely than you treat Yihi! Do you understand?”

“Heok! Dungeon Master!”

“Quickly. Don’t you understand what I mean? Do you really want to be chewed up?”

“M-Master-nim!”

The dwarves immediately dropped to the ground and bowed.

I was at a loss for words at the sight.

The dwarves had suffered so much under Yihi that they looked at me like I was a monster.

“...Rise.”

“No! How can we dare look the Dungeon Master in the eye?”

“You are excused from meeting my eyes. Rise.”

“I-I see.”

The dwarves were small. They were larger than a fairy but only reached up to my navel. Even if they were excused, there was no chance they could meet my eyes.

I convinced the dwarves to stand up. Then something caught my eyes and I flinched. I couldn't hold my tongue and said.

“What on earth are you making now?”

The dwarf in the middle who seemed to be the leader spoke.

“Noonim said that Dungeon Master wanted to create a resort for a break.”

The structure that was in the shape of a poo was supposed to be a retreat.

I didn't dare think deeply about how Yihi visualized the design. It would be interesting if I ever got the chance to look inside Yihi's brain.

The wrinkles.....

“How long will it take before it is completed?”

The dwarf peeked at Yihi and said.

“I-If there are sufficient materials than 5 days.”

“Pretty fast.”

“We are good at making things.”

Their faces were full of pride.

I nodded.

“I want to install one that is half the size on floors 1~5. The deadline is one month. Yihi, provide the necessary materials for the dwarves. And you don’t have to work like you are now.”

“R-really?”

“You will get 3 meals a day and 10 minutes to rest every hour. And in the future, you will get at least 6 hours sleep.”

I didn’t want the dwarves to die before they finished.

These conditions couldn’t be allowed to continue. At a minimum, I needed to maintain their lives.

“Ohh! Dungeon Master! My master!”

“I believe. I truly believe it!”

They shed tears of joy.

They were genuine tears.

The dwarves kneeled down and started sobbing.

I looked at Yihi. My eyes asked 'did you bully them?' but Yihi just pretended ignorance as she turned her head and hummed.

'Hmmm. Did Yihi have this talent?'

It was slightly embarrassing but it wasn't bad.

The sight in front of me was still surprising. I never entrusted points to Yihi in my previous life. The dungeon was quickly lost so I never discovered Yihi's talent.

But come to think of it, it was a great whip and carrot.

Yihi squeezed the people like a vicious owner and then I would walk in. The environment improved only a little bit but they would cry tears of joy.

It would be good once Yihi's talent matured a little more. It would be difficult if the workers kept dying. Yihi needed to gain a little more experience in this area.

They were summoned with points so I needed to squeeze every drop of blood from their flesh and bones.

Three meals a day, a rest for 10 minutes every hour and 6 hours

of sleep would be enough for them to survive.

‘The design is a bit strange...but I’m not planning to rest here.’

The Awakened wouldn’t care as long as they were safe. They would willingly enter the palace of poo if it meant a place to escape the horrible creatures.

So it didn’t matter how good the design was.

“M-Master. How is it? Isn’t it beautiful?”

Yihi asked shyly.

Yihi and I had moved from the 3rd floor to the vicinity of the Dungeon Core. The Dungeon Core was emitting more light, exposing Yihi’s nerves.

I lightly nodded.

“It is beautiful in several senses.”

“Yihihi.”

Yihi smiled widely.

Fortunately, she didn’t inquire about the multiple meanings.

“Yihi. Comply with what I just said.”

“I understand.”

“However, you don’t need to change your behaviour. Make sure they work hard like you did up to now. I’ll leave it entirely to you.”

“But is that okay?”

“I don’t have much time to be present in the dungeon. I will temporarily entrust the dungeon to you.”

Yihi’s eyes shone at the trust I put in her.

“Can I really have such a huge responsibility?”

“Yihi. I will be fairly busy in the future. I don’t have time for a pile of work. And I will continue to entrust important things to you in the future. If you act like this every time then I will be quite disappointed.”

“No! Yihi would never disappoint Master!”

Yihi quickly shook her head and clenched her fists. I was confident that I could leave the ecology of the dungeon and the dwarf workers to her.

“I trust you.”

“Yihi~”

“Yihi. Enter Domestic Mode. This will be an opportunity to bring the orcs on the 3rd floor to the 5th floor.”

“I understand Master!”

Syuong!

The Dungeon Core played a hologram.

I was looking at the status of the 100 orcs on the 3rd floor. Many orcs had been lost. Their numbers needed to be multiplied.

The first 50 had increased to 200 in 9 months so these were nasty damages.

The orcs had a gestation period of 3 months and gave birth to 5 babies. And they became adults after just 6 months.

In fact, normally it would be 1 and a half years but the peculiar mana of the dungeon stimulated growth. The original numbers would be restored after 4 months.

‘It is a little too long.’

One orc cost 700 pt. The goblins and kobolds were 35pt so the orcs were expensive compared to them.

‘However, it is necessary to add them up to the 5th floor.’

It couldn’t continue like this. I didn’t mind the Awakened clearing every floor up to the 4th floor. They needed to feel despair once they reached the 5th floor.

I looked at the list of creatures that could be purchased.

[Lowest Grade Creatures]

- Goblin 2Lv-35 pt
- Ale Snake 1Lv-20pt
- Meat Bat 1Lv-20pt
- Slime 3Lv-200 pt
- Skeleton 4Lv-500pt
- Zombie 4Lv-450pt
- Mimic 5Lv-1200pt
- Gnoll 2Lv-80pt
- Crazy Hound 2Lv-120pt
-

[Low Grade Creatures]

Orc 2Lv – 700pt

Mud Golem 5Lv-2,000pt

Puppet Doll 2Lv – 900pt

Snowman 3Lv-999pt

Giant Man-Eating Flower 4Lv-1,400pt

Sleep Moth 3Lv-1,100pt

Gargoyle 5Lv-1,900pt

Harpy 5Lv-1,200pt

.....

Several windows simultaneously emerged. A significant amount of time was spent cleaning it up and finding the desired creatures.

And the universal strength was divided into Lv, with the highest level being 5. The lowest of the Low Grade creatures were the 2Lv orcs.

This was a universal value. But it couldn't be trusted unconditionally. I needed to look at the good points.

“I should start with the mud golems.”

The 5th floor would be the place where the Awakened experienced despair. There would be such a tremendous rise in difficulty from the 4th floor that the Awakened would have no choice but to reverse their path.

Or be killed.

There were two entrances to the 5th floor. I bought mud golems and placed them at the entrances to the 5th floor. 30 puppets were also placed in the surroundings to assist.

The puppets were scavenger tools in the Demon World. Various metals, drugs, magic and witchcraft were used to make the puppets only follow the commands of the owner. Despite not being agile, they were very powerful and better in combat than the orcs.

‘The harpies breeding are okay.’

Each floor needed at least one species that could breed.

The kobolds, goblins and rocs needed to be balanced properly by natural predators but the harpy’s breeding rate was far slower.

While the mud golems and puppet dolls were defending the entrance, at least 50 harpies were necessary. I placed 80 harpies on the 5th floor.

A total of 260,000 points was used on the internal affairs. The remaining points were a little over 910,000. This was further

reduced by increasing the treasures in the dungeon.

‘This much will recover soon. The amount of treasure in this dungeon means that the Awakened will swarm like moths.’

Numerous Awakened in South Korea wouldn’t take the risk. This was the impact of the guilds and the website. This narrow land was controlled.

On the other hand, it was different regarding those from overseas. The Awakened sneaked into the dungeon. They were the ones who would replenish the points consumed.

“This much is fine.”

“Have you finished?”

“Yes.”

I nodded and Yihi shut off Domestic Mode while staring at me.

“Why are you looking at me like that?”

“Yihihi. No reason.”

I couldn’t understand the fairy sometimes.

“Now I will go. I will leave the rest of the work to you.”

“Please leave it to me!!”

Yihi answered quickly but her face was grouchy. The Dungeon Core was connected to me but the fairy Yihi was tied to the Dungeon Core. It was natural that she would be upset whenever I left.

Yihi was a fairy but she was a fairy who liked chatting. She needed someone to converse with.

“By the way...it seems like you need a means to communicate with me.”

I said with a laugh.

I was sure there would be a magic to communicate with Yihi if I browsed the store.

“Ah! T-then do you mind if I inscribe a magic spell on Dungeon Master’s body?”

“You can use magic?”

In my previous life, I never heard that the fairies of the Dungeon Core could use magic.

They were only helpers. Their bodies had no physical impact and the role of the fairy was to give advice on dungeon management.

I couldn't help feeling interested.

Yihi wriggled her fingers.

“There isn't a lot available. I don't like to use it. But Dungeon Master has been very good to Yihi. So I asked the question.”

“Go ahead. Where will you inscribe it?”

“That.....”

“That?”

“The lips.....”

“I understand. Come and inscribe it.”

It wasn't a big deal. I also wanted to see the magic of the fairies.

Yihi flapped her wings as her cheeks turned red.

“T-then I'll...?”

“I hate to say it twice. Do it.”

“Please close your eyes.”

“Do I have to?”

I wanted to see the magic with my own eyes. Therefore I was puzzled when she asked me to close my eyes. She told me.

“The magic works better that way.”

“Weird.”

Fairy magic?

However, this was the first time I knew the fairies from the Dungeon Core could use magic. It was enough to allow her some free range.

I closed my eyes.

Yihi stopped and flew in front of my face for a while.....

Jjuk!

Then something collided with my lips. I frowned slightly and opened my eyes to see a message window floating in the air.

-A remarkable achievement! The first person to receive the blessing of the Dungeon Core’s fairy.

The title ‘First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing’ has been given.

‘This.....’

A title!

I had the Indomitable Warrior title. But now I obtained a second title.

I forgot Yihi’s actions as I hurriedly checked the status window.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic +6)

Stats

Strength: 79 (+2)

Intelligence: 64 (+2)

Agility: 74 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic: 82 (+8)

Potential: (382+16/500)

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has been transplanted
(Full strength hasn't been fully opened).

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (U)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 79 Intelligence 65 Agility 75 Stamina 82 Magic 84
Potential (375+10/500)

Strength 81 Intelligence 66 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 90
Potential (379+16/500)

The rating was also unusual.

Unique. A unique title!

It was a precious title that increased magic by 6. The effect of both titles increased my magic from 82 to 90.

Once the stats reached 90 points, it was an entirely different world. Magic had a deep connection to the power of the magic and control over the surrounding environment.

Once magic was opened up, the demons would be able to feel my majesty. They would shrink back in surprise. In my previous life, I struggled with low magic and intelligence but now magic was the highest.

I swallowed and smiled at Yihi.

Yihi had wrapped herself into a ball as she felt shamed. She seemed to be waiting for my anger.

But the blessing gave me a title so I couldn't bring myself to be angry.

“Thank you.”

The words were strange in my mouth.

It was awkward. I never thought that I would one day be sincerely thanking someone. But now was the time to share my gratitude. I couldn't keep quiet just because it was awkward.

Yihi sensed my sincerity and laughed.

“Yihihi. It was nothing. Now I can talk to Dungeon Master when I want to. Yihi likes this!”

“Please refrain unless it is an emergency.”

But a fairy was talkative.

If I let her talk freely then she wouldn't stop attempting contact.

“...Yes.”

“Now I am really going. Take good care of the dungeon.”

“Don't worry. And go carefully Dungeon Master.”

Yihi humbly lowered her head.

I waved my hand as a reply and left the top floors of the dungeon.

Chapter 27-32: Demon World Auction

I left the dungeon and headed straight for the guild. I had been away for a week so Kim Yong-woo was glad to see me.

“Master-nim. Isn’t it too difficult to get in touch with you?”

I was standing blankly in the Guild Master’s office.

“I go where I want and when I want. If you want to support my freedom then I have no obligation to report to you.”

Kim Yong-woo licked his lips.

“...Yes, that’s true. You come and go like the wind. Master-nim has the power to break any walls in the city.”

The level of the Awakened was slowly rising but Kim Yong-woo had seen a scene that couldn’t be imitated. A person who overwhelmingly crushed an advanced creature.

If he wanted something then he would get it. Kim Yong-woo was sure that his judgement was correct. There was already a huge positive impact on his guild.

Therefore, he had to act carefully.

Kim Yong-woo didn’t know my true heart. Kim Yong-woo just

carried himself excellently. This was what allowed him such opportunities.

I said with a smile.

“I know what you are worried about. But don’t worry. If you don’t pierce my back then I will continue acting as a Heaven’s Will Guild member. On the surface.”

“Haha...of course. And Master-nim, please don’t say something so scary like you did last time. I shiver every time I hear it.”

Kim Yong-woo stroked the goose bumps that appeared on his wrist

There was no lie.

Kim Yong-woo’s attitude was consistent with existences stronger than him. But I could feel assured since there were few with such strong presences among the demons.

“Did anything happen while I was away?”

Kim Yong-woo nodded at my question.

“There was. There are rumours that a large number of foreign Awakened who entered the dungeon didn’t come back alive, the 4 guilds are planning raids, the National Assembly has passed a

legislation regarding the Awakened...what do you want to know?”

“I have no questions.”

1,000 foreign Awakened had knocked on the door of the dungeon. No matter how cautious he was, there was bound to be rumours.

Furthermore, I had wiped 500 of them out myself. I didn't know the other parties. But if I didn't open my mouth, the secret would be buried forever.

Kim Yong-woo said like it wasn't a big deal.

“I knew that.”

“Take this.”

I took out a folded sheet of paper. Kim Yong-woo unfolded the paper and frowned as he looked at it.

“Is this a picture of a poo?”

“You saw it well.”

“Ha. It really is poo. Surely this isn't a work of art? If people really line up for art like this...I don't understand that field.

“It is not a piece of art.”

It wasn't a piece of art but something I drew!

Admiration crossed Kim Yong-woo's face. He had wondered if his Master had different taste.

Kim Yong-woo asked him.

“Then what is it?”

“A safe zone where creatures can't enter. Isn't it fascinating?”

“Yes...?”

Kim Yong-woo blinked his eyes.

He wasn't sure how to respond. It was the first time he heard of something called the safety zone. It wasn't easy to lightly accept it.

I gave it to him and said.

“There are structures like these on the 3rd floor of the dungeon. Creatures can't invade these structures.”

“Wait a minute. The 3rd floor?”

Kim Yong-woo couldn't understand it.

With the strength I demonstrated, it was simple enough to climb to the 3rd floor.

Nevertheless, the surprise reaction meant he still underestimated my strength. I clicked my tongue.

“Why are you so surprised?”

“T-then you found the path to the 3rd floor? You fought the orcs?”

“It wasn't that complicated.”

“Hah. Really wonderful. Can you tell me the path?”

“I wouldn't bring it up if I wasn't going to tell you.”

“Ah!”

Kim Yong-woo clapped his hands.

He inwardly calculated while smiling.

Once they climbed up to the 3rd floor, the safety zone meant they could easily seize the treasure.

He couldn't even imagine the benefits that could be obtained. He had to seize the opportunity.

“Occupy it. Then you will be able to take a lot of benefits.”

“Of course! This...there will be a commotion.”

Dungeons had something like a safety zone.

There weren't many places where they could relax without the threat of creatures. The influence of the guild will likely be reorganized again.

If they occupied the area then the Heaven's Will Guild would be able to keep their position. It wasn't impossible for them to jump one step further.

“I will depart after one week. Take Yoo Eun-hye with you. You can pick the remaining 10 people.”

I told him the strategy to attack the 2nd floor.

The elites would be organized, including Yoo Eun-hye. Yoo Eun-hye was in her growth phase. I wanted her to experience various situations.

“I understand. But the form of the structure is a little strange.”

I stayed calm.

Yihi was behind the design of the structure.

I really couldn't understand Yihi's senses.

‘One day I might understand it.’

There was no law that we needed to have similar tastes.

Kim Yong-woo admired the picture on the paper, ‘no matter what it looks like.....’ and sighed with eager eyes.

*

One week later.

A raid with 12 people was prepared, including Yoo Eun-hye.

The personnel were similar to when we captured the 1st floor and the 2nd floor was cleared in 5 days.

Gold, treasures, rare items, magic tools and the presence of the

safety zones meant there was once again a huge uproar among the Awakened.

The 4 guilds including the Mithril Guild succeeded on the 4th floor but it was buried by the achievements of the Heaven's Will Guild.

Safety zone.

A place where the creatures couldn't invade.

A place like that was special for the Awakened who risked their lives every time they entered the dungeon. At least it meant they were a place where they could relax.

A place of absolute rest in the dungeon. It would lift some of the heavy burden. The belief that something could change centered on the safety zone.

The guilds immediately started on aggressive strategies. The location of the safety zones could be determined through various video media.

But that was it.

The best guild in Korea was still the Heaven's Will Guild. The news also drew in more Awakened from overseas.

I instantly recovered the lost points and reached 1.5 million points in just 2 months. I was probably the only demon with that much points.

The Dukes and Grand Dukes.

At best, they would have half the amount?

My confidence soared into the sky at the amount of points. This would be a huge deal once I used them.

There was no need to be cheap with my points. I had a purpose.

And exactly 1 year after I returned.

That evening. A blue message window flashed in the air.

-After 30 minutes, you will be transferred to the Demon World Auction.

You can be accompanied by one creature.

I smirked.

Finally, the Demon World Auction I had been waiting for arrived.

*

Demon World Auction

The auction was hosted in the name of the devil.

If they were lucky and had the required points then rare items, creatures or skills could be purchased.

It was called a festival of points.

The Demon World Auction sold exactly 100 items in one day. Among the 100 objects, some of them were useless but most of them had a quality rating.

Of course, there was a set amount of points for the lowest bid.

A few years before I returned, the lowest bid at the auction house for the 5Lv high class creature was 39 million points.

The lowest bid for a dragon was 15 million points. The amount of points for a balrog was so ridiculous that it wasn't sold. One Duke took 5 years to gather the points required to purchase a dragon.

At any rate, it was quite unbalanced.

However...this was the first auction.

‘My biggest chance.’

The devil Death Bringer had created an unfriendly game.

I was grateful for my previous life.

The details of the Demon World Auction were thoroughly kept a secret. The demons only knew about the existence of the Demon World Auction when the summoning message appeared.

Of course, the demons had collected points for the auction.

But, I had gathered it. 1.5 million points.

When looking at the past, it wasn't an enormous amount. But considering that it was only 1 year, 1.5 million points was a ridiculous amount.

The first Demon World Auction was likely to have very cheap prices. With a little luck...I could use this to my advantage.

It wasn't impossible to be in the lead of the 72 demons! Desire filled my eyes. My anticipation and tension rose to the maximum.

Once the dimensional portal opened, I was summoned into a wide room 200 pyeongs large.

‘I’ve arrived.’

It was a location outside the Demon World. It was another world where dark spirits lived.

This was the heart of that place. Instead of the devil, the barren land was governed by dark spirits.

Hiiing.

Inferno appeared next to me. The creature I chose to take with me was Inferno.

I looked around.

There was nothing in the room. There was only one large door at the entrance. The door was made with thick logs coarsely cut.

Kkiik.

Soon an elderly man with a curved back opened the door.

“Randalph Brigsiel-nim?”

“Are you a gnome?”

“Kihihi. I am a corrupted gnome.”

It was customary to call the dark spirits corrupted. But other than the dark spirits, a few other elemental spirits lived here.

I nodded.

“Right.”

“Rather, are you Randolph Brigsiel?”

“That’s right.”

“Then follow me. I will direct you to the auction house.”

“Before that, would I be able to see the auction items?”

I wanted to preview the auction goods. The only reason the auction was kept secret was to stimulate the demons.

Dark spirits were thirsty for points obtained from the demons. Their aim was to raise the prices in order to obtain more points.

It was similar to Yihi trying to become the Fairy King.

“That isn’t difficult...kihihi. Do you have many points? Are you anxious because you want to buy things?”

“A moderate amount.”

“I understand. Let me guide you.”

The dark spirit started to guide me silently.

I got on top of Inferno.

The castle was wide beyond belief. It was enough as I moved while riding Inferno.

The dark spirits had a fast speed. They had a spiritual body. Having no flesh meant it was natural for them to be quick. They could run to some extent.

I could hear an uproar as I moved.

“How dare a dark spirit treat me like this. I am a Marquis under Grand Duke Upa-nim.

“I don’t know whether Grand Duke Upa has the right to the throne. I only listen to the king of the spirits!”

“So why did you force summon me! I will directly meet the Spirit King. We better leave here safely!”

“So, in the name of the devil.....”

“Don’t carelessly use that name!”

“Hu! It can’t be helped.”

The dark spirit blew up its body. It exuded a tremendous presence.

A high class dark spirit! Even demons would panic in front of it.

‘That person?’

A Marquis of the Demon World.

A close aid of the Grand Duke Upa was overwhelmed. He was similar to me in my past life. Just a different direction.

Lost in hedonism, his dungeon was filled with succubus that subjugated the encountered Awakened. They would then be killed off by the demon.

I was impressed as I recalled it.

“I am lucky that my guest is cooperative. Kihihi.”

The dark spirit guiding me in the shape of a gnome laughed.

“You are high class?”

“I am advanced. It is my dream to become high class. Kihihi!”

I checked using Mind’s Eye and it was correct. Its abilities were lower than me but it couldn’t be ignored. Perhaps a high class spirit would be on a level similar to a duke.

This was a place ruled by the dark spirits. They would be scary opponents for a Marquis.

A number of the high class spirits were assigned as greeters.

I continued to be interested in the spirits while moving.

After a long trip, I arrived at some great doors that were 20 metres in height.

The doors opened and inside were the 100 items put up for auction.

There were creatures as well. The creatures were also some of the items. Tools to enhance the dungeons.

Krasla who I wanted was among them but others also gave off a solid impression.

‘That woman.....?’

A demon was looking around at the auction items. I was shocked as I saw her.

‘Grand Duke Ariel!’

I couldn’t forget.

The name of the demon who won in my previous life. Her military power was enough to make her the strongest.

I never thought I would encounter her in a place like this.

I swallowed my saliva and used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Ariel Diablo

Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Devil’s Descendant (Epic, Magic +10)

* Weapon Master (Ex U, all stats +2)

Stats

Strength: 73 (+2)

Intelligence: 74 (+2)

Agility: 79 (+2)

Stamina: 71 (+2)

Magic: 75 (+12)

Potential: (372+20/500)

Uniqueness: One of the four Grand Dukes. Governor of Underhell and master of 18 demons.

Skill: Weapon Cheat (Ex U), Power of Words (U), Waterspout (Epic)

[Relative Comparison]

Ariel Diablo

Strength 75 Intelligence 76 Agility 81 Stamina 73 Magic 87
Potential (372+20/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 81 Intelligence 66 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 90
Potential (379+16/500)

‘Indeed.....’

I had slightly higher stats. But this wouldn't have happened without the Heart of the Hell Monarch and Yihi's blessing.

Both of us had increased our abilities by more than 40. The Grand Duke Ariel had restored her power quickly.

I had already reclaimed approximately 80% of my previous power. The rise of my stats was becoming smaller.

But Ariel was different. She might not rest until filling up all of the 500 potential.

On the other hand, I could catch up with Ariel and even become stronger than her in the future.

Ariel didn't have memories of a previous life. The Heart of the Hell Monarch also hadn't fully opened.

Skill...it couldn't be helped.

I was a physical type in the Demon World. All the skills learned from my past life had disappeared.

However, Ariel had a powerful skill in the Demon World. A fearsome power that could separate the sky and land.

Now the skill rating was likely to go up one or two steps.

It seemed like she hadn't recovered all her power from the Demon World yet. The skills also weren't the same.

'She hasn't learned Abyss Sword yet?'

I didn't see Ariel's patent skill, Abyss Sword.

It was a fraudulent skill that returned everything it hit to 0 but I didn't see it in Ariel's status window.

'It means her stats are still insufficient to learn Abyss Sword.'

It made sense. Abyss Sword couldn't be used without all her stats restored.

A very powerful skill was a double edged sword. If she used it recklessly then her hand would be ruined.

Grand Duke Ariel was studying the weapons. She had a title of

Weapon Master so she could skillfully handle all weapons. If a good weapon was found then she would want to buy it.

I looked over Ariel once again.

She had two long horns on her forehead that proved she was the devil's descendant, pointy elf like ears, a beautiful visage and the atmosphere of an untouchable woman. Ariel Diablo.

“Hrmm?”

Ariel turned her head and looked at me.

I glanced at her.

“This is the first time I've seen a demon like you. Who are you?”

I was currently wearing the half skull mask.

Of course, both of us had met. But even if I took off the skull mask, Ariel wouldn't remember me. She was a noble existence that wouldn't memorize the faces of each demon she met.

I remembered how broken my body was after challenging Ariel. I had no choice but to give a bitter laugh.

“Randolph Brigsiel.”

Ariel's eyes changed.

Because I had opened up my magic power at the same time I said my name. However, it didn't work. The high magic that caused fear in the opponent was obsolete in her presence.

“That is a nice aroma of magic power. Are you under any Grand Dukes?”

She didn't remember despite telling her my name. I did not mind.

In the final moments of my previous life, she said my survival instinct was like a bug. She didn't know my name even at the end.

But the past was gone. I would force her to hear my name so much that she couldn't forget it.

I would be a true enemy. Someone who could go shoulder to shoulder with the 4 Grand Dukes.

“No one can be above me.”

My goal was the devil. I wouldn't allow the Grand Dukes to take my place.

An interested expression flashed on Ariel's face.

“You have skills or you are just speaking thoughtlessly...either way, it isn't a wise move.”

“Just because it isn't wise doesn't mean I won't get an unconditional victory.”

Sometimes strength and stubbornness could bring about victory. In fact, Ariel had been the final winner in my previous life.

Ariel launched assault after assault on Grand Duke Upa. Not 1 bit of wisdom was involved.

Yet she was talking about wisdom. I couldn't help finding it funny.

I knew it. Ariel laughed.

“That's right. A fight between warriors starts with hitting the body. Strategies using the head isn't necessary. The one who becomes the devil won't be stupid.”

Then she erased the smile and looked straight at me.

“Attendant. If you don't serve another demon then serve me. Your thoughts are similar to mine.”

It was at that moment.

-Power of Words (U) has been used. Mind's Eye (U) has successfully detected it.

-The detection method is successful and the control of Power of Words has lowered.

Defended against 50%.

-Intelligence calibration 66! Defended against 85%.

-Your magic is higher than the caster.

The 20% calibration effect means 102% has been defended against. You are completely beyond the control of Power of Words.

Ariel Diablo activated her skill 'Power of Words.'

But I completely neutralized it.

My stats were slightly superior. Mind's Eye meant I could detect the unexpected effect of Power of Words and my superior magic meant I wasn't affected.

But it was dicey.

If my intelligence hadn't risen due to Heart of the Hell Monarch then I might be under the control of Power of Words.

‘I can’t be lacking intelligence.’

There was a high relationship between intelligence and resistance.

No matter how high my magic, if intelligence was low then I would be weak to abnormal states. But both intelligence and magic combined was higher so I could be free from the influence.

I coldly looked at Ariel and said.

“I reject.”

“Haha!”

And Ariel gave a big laugh before saying.

“A knockdown. I thought you were just a cold guy but now I see that you truly have skills. Defending against my Power of Words! I should cut off your head now.”

She meant it.

It was no accident that normally a Grand Duke occupied the throne.

They all had their own view of the world that they moved in. They would immediately kill those outside this framework.

Ariel had stepped on all the other demons and Grand Dukes to reach the throne.

“Leave unless you think you can fight me.”

This wasn't the Demon World. A world ruled by the King of the Dark Spirits.

Those with power were bound to have a rough relationship with him. However, even the Grand Dukes had common sense.

I lightly provoked her but Ariel just looked like she had found a cute toy.

“Huhu! Randolph Brigsiel. Today I will step aside. This is indeed an interesting place. I won't cause a dispute today.”

Ariel turned around and left.

I had a moment of hesitation.

This was the first time Grand Duke Ariel had called my name. She always said I was like a bug and barely remembered me. My name was never said by her.

‘The past and the future is different. By my hands.’

I gripped my fists tightly.

More than anything, I once again thought that my direction was right.

“Kihhi. Incredibly scary. That is the famous Grand Duke Ariel Diablo.”

The dark spirit released its breath.

Ariel Diablo. She was quite famous here for her overwhelming ability. Even the advanced spirits would feel the pressure.

I slowed by pounding heart and said.

“Do you have something to increase the rating of a skill?”

“Do you mean the Sage’s Leap?”

“Yes.”

“Kihhi. You have good senses. A great item. Then please come this way.”

I seemed to be lucky. It was comfortable when thinking about it.

‘I need to get my hands on it.’

An item known as Sage’s Leap sometimes appeared in the Demon World Auction. Its efficacy was worth millions of points and there was always a heated competition every time it appeared.

However, I didn’t need to bother with the competition. I was a demon with 1.5 million points. Demons barely had 1 million, let alone 1.5 million.

The dark spirit stopped and pointed towards a small bottle of water.

“This is it. Ah, be careful of your hands. There is an enchantment around it. If you touch it then your hand will be destroyed.”

I knew that. There was an invisible enchantment covering the goods. But I could feel a strong repulsion when my hand got close to it.

A warning not to touch the goods.

It was an outstanding defense that even advanced creatures couldn’t touch. An advanced creature would be evaporated on the spot. I never thought about touching it directly.

I opened up Mind’s Eye.

-Name: Sage's Leap

Description-Alchemy Can increase the rating of all skills below Unique (U). If used on a Unique (U) skill, it will increase half a step towards Exceptional Unique (Ex U). There will be no effect on higher ratings.

That's right.

I nodded and said.

"I will buy it immediately."

"Kihihi. Guest-nim. I'm not sure if you know but most demons only have an average of 130,000 points. The price to purchase it immediately is fixed. If you want to purchase the Sage's Leap immediately then you need 520,000 points. Wouldn't you rather get it much cheaper at the auction?"

130,000 points.

It was lower than I thought. It was fortunate that I had 1.5 million points.

'I guess I don't have competition.'

Only average. A few demons might have more than that.

But my points were more than 10 times the average. 520,000 points was a burden but I had expected it.

‘I need to purchase the Sage’s Leap.’

There was a need to buy it immediately. There were many things at the auction that I might not be able to purchase until the end.

I wanted to raise the rating of Mind’s Eye.

There were many unresolved functions with Mind’s Eye. I realized the additional effects thanks to Ariel’s Power of Words.

It saw through Power of Words so if the rating of Mind’s Eyes increased, wouldn’t it be able to detect and see through sealed items?

A few sealed items always appeared in the auction. Some demons bought sealed items for an expensive price only to be dissatisfied.

In my previous life, Duke Pella who used Mind’s Eye couldn’t detect the rating of sealed goods. Wasn’t it because the rating of Mind’s Eye was too low?

Sage’s Leap wasn’t something that could be purchased simply

with a lot of points.

The Grand Dukes and Dukes had all controlled it in my previous life. The Grand Dukes would hand over Sage's Leap to certain demons but Duke Pella had never earned it to increase Mind's Eye. Of course, I was excluded from the prizes.

It was very difficult to raise the rating of skills obtained in the Demon World.

Mind's Eye had been stuck at a unique rating.

‘It is worth experimenting with.’

At the very least, upgrading Mind's Eye would increase intelligence. I wouldn't be as vulnerable to other states. I could prepare a wider range of moves.

My abilities might even surpass Grand Duke Ariel! So I didn't think the damage would be too large.

“I will buy it immediately.”

“Kihihi, purchasing it immediately...eh?”

“I hate to say it twice.”

The dark spirit looked at me for a moment. The eyes expressed that it couldn't believe it but then its expression turned serious.

“Wait a moment.”

The dark spirit left the warehouse.

After 5 minutes, the dark spirit returned and was accompanied by a representative of the auction.

The auction manager was sweating.

It was in the form of a corrupted fat man. The owner of a 150kg belly fat came out. No matter if it was a spiritual body, it still seemed exhausted.

“Pant pant, you want to buy Sage's Leap at once?”

“.....”

I frowned at the dark spirit. I hated saying the same thing many times. I started to feel irritated.

“Kihhi...that's right. This guest wanted to purchase the Sage's Leap immediately.”

The dark spirit that guided me saw my eyes and answered on my

behalf.

“Then please look at this.”

The auction representative held out a sheet of paper with a contract written on it. I thoroughly examined the paper and sensed dozens of magic spells contained in it.

I placed my right hand on the paper without any delay.

-Sage's Leap has been purchased. 520,000pt will be consumed.
-You have 1,032,447pt remaining.

Soon a blue light emerged from the paper.

The light flowed towards the location of the Sage's Leap.

The enchantment around the Sage's Leap gradually weakened and disappeared.

The auction manager stuttered with incredulity.

“T-the deal has been completed. Congratulations.”

I ignored his words and grasped the Sage's Leap.

After pulling out the cork,

Gulp! Gulp!

I drank it all at once.

-The Sage's Leap has been consumed. Please select a skill to raise the rating.

1. Skill Combination (R).
2. Mind's Eye (U)

I only had two skills. There was no place for Skill Combination right now. I raised my hand into the air and chose number 2.

-Mind's Eye (U) has been raised to Mind's Eye (Ex U).

No more message windows popped up after that.

‘Finished?’

It was the first time I was taking Sage's Leap. I had to check the status window.

‘It is over.’

I nodded my head.

I confirmed the rating of Mind’s Eye had increased.

What was different?

Was there anything different?

I was about to use Mind’s Eye to scan the goods when the dark spirit interrupted.

“Hmm hmm! “Guest-nim. Now it is time to enter the auction house. In fact, time is a bit tight right now.”

“I understand.”

There was no hurry.

I would be able to see any changes while the auction was in progress.

I slowly followed the dark spirit out of the warehouse.

*

The place was reminiscent of a large opera house.

There were grandstands filled with hundreds of seats separated into 2 levels on 4 sides of the hall, 6 chandeliers decorated with various jewels, hundreds of lights made by magic, singing boys and dancing girls...it combined to create a classical atmosphere.

The auction would take place here.

Now the auction was waiting for the last guests to arrive before starting.

Upon passing through the huge door, I looked around to my left and right.

My eyes noticed 4 seats located on the 2nd floor of the hall.

Each Grand Duke and their people were sitting on different sides of the hall. They looked at me for a moment before turning away.

Only Ariel looked at me with strange eyes for a little while longer.

I felt like laughing. In other words, it meant I was sitting alone in the centre of the seats.

I wasn't a demon follower of any of the 4 Grand Dukes.

That position was snatched by power.

Originally, the demon with the name of Brigsiel was a follower of a Grand Duke. I wasn't sure if the devil had planned to invite the original Brigsiel. Whether it was accidental or authorized, I was the demon that ended up being invited.

Either way.

‘This situation is fun.’

There was a similar situation in my past life. However, I was in an exceptional condition compared to my past life.

There was no point in any ass kissing at the auction. I would buy the things I wanted to buy. In order to buy it, I wouldn't care about the competition.

‘I will eat up everything.’

Acting freely? In my past life, this seat would be filled with thorns. The Grand Dukes looked at me with cold and contempt filled eyes.

Malicious jeers and boos. I could hear things like ‘bug.’

I would look forward to destroying those cold gazes in the future.

‘Grand Duke Ariel, Upa, Pandemonium and Okullos...in addition, they have good expressions on their faces.’

I sat down in the centre of the grandstand along with my creature.

I crossed my legs and looked around with an easy, disinterested expression.

Unfortunately, this auction was a stage for me. I would be the focus of a single play.

They wouldn’t even be the supporting roles. Those who thought of themselves as protagonists would be surprised once it started.

They would ask ‘who is he?’ Of course, it would only end with questions.

I wasn’t going to announce that I was from South Korea. It wasn’t time yet. I needed to reserve a little more power. And I couldn’t allow the 4 Grand Dukes to even guess my location.

In order to find out, the 4 Grand Dukes would have to share information about the locations of their demons’ dungeons and that was an impossible task.

‘The Grand Dukes are competing. Cooperation won’t work.’

The demon owners of each individual dungeon was confidential information. The relationship between the 4 Grand Dukes wasn't good so the information wouldn't be released.

But I knew. The dungeon positions of the Dukes and Grand Dukes was firmly grasped. This could be a very powerful tool if used correctly.

Information was power and there were means available to cut off their limbs.

However, cutting off their limbs would be for later. Right now I needed to concentrate on the auction.

After a few moments, lights started to gather on the stage. Soon a man in clown makeup appeared from backstage.

“Guest-nim. Thank you for waiting! My name is Dubolong and I am responsible for the auction today.”

A face that was only seen once a year.

Dubolong. One of the high class spirits that was a close aide to the king. A level-headed person with the ability to embellish and make people laugh. He was the eyes and hands of the King of the Spirits.

All things related to the king flowed through him. It would be

good if I could improve my relationship with the Spirit King.

‘The Demon World Auction is only held once a year so this opportunity needs to be seized.’

The spirits. They could communicate with each other even if they were in different worlds.

If I could communicate with Dubolong then I could know the items for next year’s auction in advance.

This was a trick that Grand Duke Upa had used for decades.

Upa who became close to the Spirit King could obtain goods before the auction.

There was some type of deal like ‘I will spend more points at the auction.’

The dark spirits wouldn’t just obtain points through the auction.

And there was no law stating I couldn’t take that position.

It was necessary to make them sure. That I was the best among the demons gathered here!

Dubolong’s eyes looked over all the demons. And paused for a

moment as he came to me. His eyes were different from when he saw the other demons.

He seemed interested in me for a reason.

I was a demon who had already spent 520,000 points before the auction started. I made eye contact and smiled lightly.

Well...sitting alone on the grandstand might have also played a part.

Soon Dubolong confirmed the faces of all the demons and said.

“Today you heard a rough explanation regarding the summoning but I will formally say it again. This is a place where points can be used to buy goods, the world’s largest auction brought to you by the devil Death Bringer! A festival held once a year for you to get your heart’s desire. Now, let’s introduce the first auction product.

At the same time, nearly a dozen dark spirits emerged from the right side of the stage. They were moving a huge, wheeled cage with a very familiar existence inside it.

Dubolong spoke in a cold tone.

“We had a lot of worries. What would be best to start the auction? There are 100 products but what is the most outstanding example? So we have prepared this. The legendary true demonic dragon ‘Aojin’ written in legends, Krasla who is half dragon and

half elf!”

The half elf Krasla trapped behind the bars growled like a wounded beast.

A two legged tribe of creatures with an intelligence that matched the demons. Humans were the prey of creatures but the demons viewed the elves in the same way.

I thought about it.

‘I will make it different.’

Krasla looked just like he did in my previous life.

I opened Mind’s Eye and took a deep look.

Name: Krasla
Occupation: Demonic Lancer
Title: * Person with Dragon’s Blood (R, Strength + 4)

Stats

Strength: 74 (+3)

Intelligence: 69

Agility: 65

Stamina: 72

Magic: 77

Potential: (357+4/437)

Uniqueness: A slave inscription is carved on the body.

Skill: Dragon Stampede (U), Demon Sprint(R)

I inwardly nodded.

He had higher potential than Yoo Eun-hye and also had unique skills. Even his stats were shameful.

‘This?’

There was someone right behind Krasla.

She seemed to be a relative but I didn’t remember her face.

Dubolong explained.

“And this is his younger sister, Chrisley who is at the end of her life. This is a perfect situation of 1+1 so the winner will get both with no conditions. Although an elixir can help her recover...it isn't recommended. All the pathways in the body are blocked so she is unlikely to grow even if she recovers. However, her face is smooth and you can use her for any purpose.”

Dubolong laughed politely as he explained the rest.

“Now, the auction will start with 0 points! I assure you that Krasla isn't an easy opponent for any demon to deal with! I'm not disparaging the abilities of my guests. He is someone with the blood of a true demonic dragon mixed in. If you want him then speak without any hesitation. If you miss out on this then the boys and girls on the ceiling will laugh.”

One of the Grand Dukes raised their hands.

“10,000.”

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim! 10,000 points have come out.”

And another Grand Duke raised their hands.

“20,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim! It is going up fast!”

“50,000.”

“Grand Duke Pandemonium-nim! 50,000 points have come out. Any more?”

Everyone became a little hesitant.

50,000 points was a lot for some demons.

Even the Grand Dukes couldn't afford those points.

It was because they didn't know what else would emerge in the auction.

There were still plenty more auction products. Krasla was great but they couldn't invest all their points in him.

“100,000.”

“Ah! Now all the Grand Dukes are participating. Grand Duke Okullos-nim has called 100,000 points.”

100,000.

This was indeed a large sum.

Grand Duke Okullos smiled leisurely.

It was filled with derision about not investing in this treasure.

Anger appeared on the faces of the 3 other Grand Dukes.

As the only guest in the central grandstand, I raised my hand.

“200,000.”

The whole area became silent.

Even the boys and girls on the ceiling didn't laugh.

Such an amount of points was trifling to me.

“200,000! Earl Randolph Brigsiel-nim has called 200,000 points!”

The overwhelmed Dubolong called out my full name.

The shock couldn't be avoided.

Someone called out 200,000 at the very beginning.

No, it was actually a cheap price to purchase Krasla and his sister Chrisley. It was like a gift.

But the demons gathered here thought differently.

I smirked.

Yes, become curious. Continue being curious and remember me clearly.

Randolph Briggsiel.

I would make sure they remembered my name!

“200,000 points have come out. Any more?” If no one makes another offer then Krasla will be sold to Randolph-nim!”

The demons expressions changed after Dubolong’s words.

At the same time, they started to formulate strategies.

I wasn’t the only demon with 200,000 points.

Each faction had a few.

But they were important.

There were many excellent things so they couldn’t compete for

Krasla.

Even though the devil created the points system, it wasn't a fair exchange.

In short, exchanging or stealing points was considered illegal and would be subjected to a penalty.

Both sides would have their points decreased by 20% for several years so it was a severe penalty.

In the end, all the factions could only come to one conclusion.

The auction was just getting started. There would be better items than Krasla. This was clearly just the start.

Dubolong wouldn't debut the most outstanding product in the beginning. They would hold onto the points to hopefully obtain rare items or skills.

'Be calm.'

When looking at it from an objective viewpoint, their choice was right. The demons with many points would have an advantageous position in the auction.

'I need to be calm but.....'

I barely prevented my mouth from twisting into a smile.

The spirits and demons had no idea.

The true value wasn't Krasla but Chrisley!

I became happy the moment I used Mind's Eye. I inwardly let loose a huge laugh.

They were deceived by her sickly appearance and didn't realize her true value.

It was natural. I only knew about it because Mind's Eye allowed me to see the status window. If it wasn't for Mind's Eye then I wouldn't have noticed Chrisley's value.

'She wasn't a prominent person in my previous life before I died.'

Krasla had a reason to hate humans.

I felt like I had picked up an item with the epic rating. I came here for Krasla but my real achievement was his sister Chrisley.

'I am the only one who knows the value of the treasure.'

Chrisley was the greatest treasure. I could see her potential through the dust. This probably hadn't happened in my previous

life.

My heart pounded at the thought of what she would become under my hands.

I once again used Mind’s Eye to confirm Chrisley’s status window.

Name: Chrisley
Occupation: None Title: * Person with the Blood of a True Demonic Dragon (Epic, Intelligence +6, Magic +6)

Stats

Strength: 19

Intelligence: 94 (+6)

Agility: 21

Stamina: 10 (-9)

Magic: 28 (+6)

Potential: (172+3/478)

Uniqueness: Born as the successor of the true demonic dragon's enormous strength. However, the 9 severed yin vein she was born with has given her the curse of the ice dragon.

Skill: None

Crazy.

This was the only word that could describe her potential and intelligence.

Krasla and Chrisley both had titles regarding the blood of a dragon. But the rating was different. Chrisley was the real thing.

In particular, her intelligence had reached 'beyond the transcendental wall' as it reached 100.

100!

An astounding figure.

Pure abilities were hard to raise between 80~100. But after it reached 90, raising it was like reaching for the stars in the sky. That's why I needed titles and items.

Furthermore, the scale required for the stats to go up by 1 after reaching 90 was different every time.

The title meant she reached 100 but even her pure ability was 94. Realistically, it didn't make sense.

What this meant...she was immune to all different states. If she had an epic skill and magic was also over 100 then she could be called invincible.

Anything else?

Intelligence also affected magic casting speed, the force of the skill and it had a close relationship with skill level.

Higher rated skills required a strong body to use but high intelligence could offset some of the penalty.

In addition, the speed of raising the skill level would increase.

Even if learning normal rated skills, a person with 100 intelligence meant the rating might increase to unique.

Intelligence was an all-round stat.

However, it was hard for intelligence to reach that high unless they were born with it, had a special bloodline or the help of items like the Heart of the Hell Monarch.

Chrisley met two of the three requirements. Therefore, she managed to have 100 intelligence.

‘The problem is stamina.’

1 stamina. The ice dragon’s curse was to blame for the -9.

It caused her to be near death. Even breathing would be painful and she was barely hanging on with her robust spirit. She had a pale complexion and could barely stand up by herself.

Jjak jjak!

Dubolong clapped after waiting 30 seconds.

Nobody raised their hands. The final bid was determined.

“Krasla has been sold to Randolph-nim for 200,000 points!

Congratulations. The item will be automatically moved to your dungeon at the end of the auction.

I smiled.

Originally Krasla should have gone to Grand Duke Upa. Perhaps he would have offered a little more than Okullos' 100,000 points but my bid of 200,000 was too high.

'I've overcome the biggest hurdle.'

My mind felt more at ease.

The dark spirits removed Krasla's cage and brought something else.

What now?

I relaxed and paid attention to Dubolong.

"The following auction item is the 'Shiny Gauntlet!' It is strongly recommended for those who prefer melee combat. The intense glare will blind your opponent! Its firmness is beyond belief and the right user can bring out its power. It can be compared to the auction item previously introduced. Starting at 10,000 points!"

Dubolong was introducing the Shiny Gauntlet that appeared to be at least a unique item. But I couldn't help inwardly laughing at

the result of Mind’s Eye.

-Name-Shiny Gauntlet(Rare)
Description: A shiny gauntlet that has been polished tens of thousands of times. It is very hard.

‘A scam.’

A skillful seller.

And scammer.

That was my assessment of Dubolong.

The Shiny Gauntlet shone beautifully like its name. The description explained that its hardness was its best strength. It would create a synergy with very hard armour.

Dubolong said. He compared it to the item just introduced at the auction.

There was no way it could compare to Krasla and Chrisley. I was sure of it after seeing the name.

Despite being lacking, it was likely to get a high price at the auction. The auction meant they were likely to think ‘that is a nice item!’ and would bid.

Emotion was bound to be involved when looking at an item or skill.

A rare skill book would cost 50,000 points. If sentiment was involved, a scroll worth only 20,000 points might be bought for 50,000 points.

I kept my mouth closed as others drooled over it. 3 of the Grand Dukes were made to desire it.

Dubolong also knew this fact.

He couldn’t act if he didn’t know. He calmly and subtly arranged things. He used his tongue naturally.

“10,000.”

“It has started with Grand Duke Ariel-nim. 10,000 points!”

“20,000.”

“He truly doesn’t rest. Earl Randolph Brigsiel-nim! 20,000 points have come out!”

I shrugged.

‘I am willing to do this.’

I played along now that I realized Dubolong’s intentions. This way I could ensure that the opponent consumed more of their points.

“30,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim! Now, any more?” If there isn’t then it will be the winning bid.”

“40,000.”

“Once again, a bid by Earl Randolph-nim! A truly discerning eye.”

Excellent.....

He truly had a good lip service.

“50,000!”

“It can’t be, Grand Duke Upa-nim! 50,000 points has come out!”

Grand Duke Upa’s voice was mixed with irritation. None of the others gave anymore bids so Grand Duke Upa bought a

miscellaneous item for 50,000 points.

“It has been sold for 50,000 points! Congratulations. It will be sent to your dungeon shortly after the auction ends.”

I laughed lightly.

Japtem was japtem. The Shiny Gauntlet was japtem. Yet it was bought for 50,000 points.

It was natural for laughter to emerge!

Results like this could also occur at the auction. Demons bought items at an overpriced value. At this point, Dubolong seemed to notice my intentions.

Dubolong’s eyes stared at me. He seemed to view me different from the other demons. I had succeeded in carving my name into his mind.

Several more auctions passed until the 10th auction item made an appearance.

“This auction is a little special. A sealed dagger! We don’t know what item might emerge once the seal is loosened. It is like a lottery but this is a great opportunity to obtain an epic rating! Starting at 50,000 points.”

One of the things that I wanted came out.

I opened Mind's Eye the moment I saw the gleaming dagger.

-Sealed weapon. The seal has a very high rating so using Mind's Eye will give a penalty.

Penalty.....

I had to experience it once in a while.

Besides, I could read the rating and description of the sealed item.

My gamble was half successful.

I needed to receive the penalty to confirm the other half.

I ignored the warning and used Mind's Eye.

-Name-Howling Dagger (Ex R)

Description: A dagger with the strong poison of a banshee. It will eat away at the spirit.

* It is possible to use the rare grade skill 'Acceleration' 3 times a day.

-A penalty will be given for the very high seal.

Strength -10 for 72 hours.

Bidul!

I felt a sudden weakness as my body staggered.

'This is the penalty?'

The message window stated that my strength would be degraded for 3 days.

'This is enough.'

At least it didn't permanently decrease.

I didn't bother bidding and the weapon was bought for 50,000 points. Grand Duke Ariel had the first and last bid because the other Grand Dukes didn't participate.

They hated to gamble. The starting bid was too expensive.

A sealed weapon came out again at the 15th auction.

I took a deep breath and used Mind’s Eye.

Name-Blunt Sword (N)

Description: A sword that has lost its capability as a weapon.

-A penalty will be given for the very high seal.
Health -10 for 72 hours.

“Huhup!”

I managed to withstand the sense of anemia.

It was a lot of pain just to confirm a junk item.

‘I am going to find something. Obviously.’

Before I returned to the past.

An epic grade equipment had been found twice after being unsealed. There were some never disclosed to the public so it might actually be three or four.

The odds were low but it wasn't impossible to get an epic item at the auction.

The 21st auction.

A sword once appeared again.

I once again opened Mind's Eye while remaining silent.

-Name-Wrath (Epic, Set Item)

Description: The last piece made by the mythical blacksmith Oswen that even the gods opposed. Characterized by the 7 deadly sins, the evil contained in it was so powerful that Oswen reportedly went crazy.

“Wrath, such pure evil!”

* Strength +7, the 7th Epic grade skill ‘Wrath’ is available.

A ‘Seven Sins’ set item has been found. Collecting the same

type of set items will increase the effect.

-A penalty will be given for the very high seal.

Agility -10 for 72 hours.

‘It came out.....!’

I ignored the awful feeling of helplessness.

My gamble was a complete success.

Epic rating. And part of a set?

If set items were collected then a more powerful force would be exerted. Once all 7 items were gathered, an absolute power could be unleashed.

Normal, rare, unique, epic and legend was a chain with legend at the peak.

Even in my past life, I only heard of two items with a legend rating. It would be difficult to find a higher rated skill or item.

Those labeled with a ‘Set’ were even more rare.

An epic set? It was in the realm of dreams.

If all the set items were collected then it would have a value two steps above its rating.

If I could obtain all of the Seven Sins then I wouldn't need to worry about equipment anymore.

My weak body trembled.

Krasla and Chrisley were unpolished gems. It would take time to smooth them out.

But Wrath was already completed and had the potential to be completed.

Furthermore, I could use it to enhance my own strength. Increasing my own strength gave me greater joy than that of my colleagues or creatures.

‘It can't be helped since I have the soul of a warrior.’

A warrior proved their worth through fighting. It was natural to have a strong attachment to weapons.

My eyes deepened as I looked at Wrath.

‘Quite a lot of points have been exhausted. Now they should have 200,000 points at most.’

During the previous 21 auctions, I had stuck to my role as random bidder.

Sometimes I was successful in making a purchase and including Krasla and Chrisley, I spent 257,000 points.

The dark spirit said that the demons had an average of 130,000 points.....except for my 1.5 million points, there was a total of 7.86 million points. When subtracting the 2.57 million spent at the auction, the 71 demons had a total of 5.29 million points left.

It would be an average of 75,000 points. On the other hand, I still had 830,000 points.

I turned and looked at the sides of the hall.

So far, only two demons had used 200,000 points at the auction. There were still two factions with more points. They weren't competition but I needed to watch their dynamics carefully.

“This is a sealed weapon. An unusual scent of magic can be felt from it! Let's start at 50,000 points.”

Dubolong introduced with confidence.

I immediately raised a hand. I knew the value of Wrath.

“50,000.”

“Earl Randolph-nim! 50,000 points have come out. Any more?”

“60,000.”

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim! She still has points remaining!”

Ariel participated.

She had bought a single sealed weapon before.

It was a fairly decent weapon with the rating of exceptional rare (Ex R). She didn't have much points remaining but saw a significant sealed item.

‘This isn't a pure discerning eye. Ariel Diablo is a weapon master. She might be able to identify a little bit of the sealed weapon.

It wasn't surprising.

“70,000!”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim. It has come to 70,000. Steeply rising!”

Other than Grand Duke Ariel, the Grand Duke Upa also participated. I wanted to relax but they insisted on a competition.

Of course, those two were busy staring at each other but I couldn't give up an epic set item.

“100,000.”

“Earl Randolph-nim! He doesn't care about looking nice. 100,000 points have come out!”

“110,000.”

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim!”

“120,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim!”

“150,000.”

“Where is his limit? Earl Randolph-nim!”

Grand Duke Ariel and Upa finally realized and turned towards me. Of course, there wasn't anything good in their gazes.

But Ariel was already at her limit. Earlier she had used 50,000 points so she didn't have much remaining. Upa was also in a similar situation.

I? I could afford it.

They became certain of that.

“3,2,1! Congratulations. It has been sold to Randolph-nim!”

Dubolong clapped loudly.

Wrath had become mine.

I was also able to buy an additional 6 items at the auction.

The unique rated skill ‘Lightning God Technique,’ the unique grade ring ‘Paranormal,’ an Agility Potion, an exceptional unique set item ‘Death Wand,’ a rare grade ‘Flower of Eternity, and a whole village of dark elves was bought for a total of 650,000 points.

The list of items obtained.....

-Name-Lightning God Technique (U)
Description: A recipe from someone studying lightning.

Lightning can be freely handled up to a 12 star cultivation.

-Name-Paranormal (U)

Description: A ring that randomly gives one of 5 different blessings. All stats + 2 for one hour, recovery, Magic +5 for 30 minutes, grant a powerful attraction and infinite energy. One of these blessings can be given once a day.

-Name-Agility Potion

Description: Agility has permanently increased by 1.

-Name – Death Wand (Ex U, Set)

Description: A wand used by the King of Death. His achievements in the art of death is tainted with fear.

* Magic +4, bound item, Undead Creation (U) skill is available.

-Name-Flower of Eternity (R)

Description: A beautiful flower that doesn't need to be watered and will bloom forever. It has an effect of making the surroundings beautiful.

The village of dark elves couldn't be described in detail but it was a small place with 50 people.

However, the mature dark elves could display a combat force equal to Lv3 mid grade creatures.

They could be purchased separately but I couldn't miss the chance to obtain them for a much cheaper price.

Lightning God Technique, Paranormal and Agility Potion were things that I could use.

In particular, potions that permanently increased stats were incredibly expensive. I would drink it later when I was blocked by a wall.

The Death Wand had a wonderful synergy with the command magic book I discovered the other day. The Death Apostle and Command Magician professions had a synergy effect so I planned to transfer them to Chrisley.

The combination of her intelligence and potential gave me high expectations for the creation of an unprecedented necromancer. If

she grew a little more then I could entrust her to act as the proxy of the Dungeon Master.

A Dungeon Master had to deal with death. The set-up of a perfect substitute.

Flower of Eternity...I purchased it for 3,000 points and would naturally give it to Yihi. I should give her something like a flower. It was the first time I bought a gift so it was fun imagining Yihi's reaction.

‘This isn’t the end.’

I used a lot of points at the auction.

However, I acquired something after using the points. Even I didn’t anticipate that an Easter Egg would appear again.

-A remarkable achievement! More than 1 million points have been used in the first auction.

7th grade Easter egg will open.

-‘1 extra stat’ has been acquired. You can raise the desired stat at any time.

“Hahaha!”

After the auction ended, I exited with a big smile.

The results were better than expected so I was satisfied.

The 7th grade reward fell short of the 3rd grade Heart of the Hell Monarch but the compensation wasn't bad. I could raise any stat I wanted by 1 point at any time.

It would be useful since raising a stat above 90 was hard. Things like the Agility Potion played a huge role at that time.

“Stop.”

I had just left the huge hall where the auction took place.

A Marquis stood blocking me.

A demon that filled his dungeon with succubus.

I could guess that he was one of Grand Duke Upa's entourage.

I suppose they thought it was unfair I took all the good items. No, maybe they were wondering how I managed to raise so much points.

I walked forward while ignoring him. He was acting under the orders of a Duke or Grand Duke. There was no need to worry.

“This lowlife is ignoring me?”

Suack!

A spear flew towards me.

He couldn't tolerate it anymore and attacked.

But there was an overwhelming difference in abilities. Even if my abilities had declined, only a Duke or Grand Duke could face me.

I caught the flying spear.

“This attack?”

“Ik.....!”

He tried to pull take back the spear.

“You! Let go! You will regret it!”

“Regret? You are the one that is going to regret it.”

“Turn over the Death Wand. That item is wasted on a lowlife like you. If you pass it over then I will be happy to let you leave.”

The reason for the fight was the Death Wand.

“Lowlife.....”

I laughed bitterly.

In the end, I was still called a bug.

I had to hear that word even in this life.

I maintained my hold on the spear and summoned the sword.

I strongly pulled the spear and cut off the left arm.

“Kuaack!”

“It is too late to figure it out.”

It happened in an instant.

His abilities fell far short of mine.

The demon glared at me with cold eyes.

“In my eyes, you are the lowlife. Tread lightly or you will cease to exist.”

I smiled coldly and prepared to cut the remaining arm.

It wouldn't be too late to kill him after returning to earth. Killing a demon here would cause any long-term relationship with Dubolong to crumble.

Pasak!

Just as my sword was about to move, a black sphere passed by.

The sphere was embedded in the ground and started to absorb the surrounding area. It was a skill I was familiar with yet the sucking power wasn't as strong as I remembered. But once the skill was used at its maximum value, it wasn't strange for a building to fly away.

A familiar skill.

At the same time, an overwhelming presence could be felt everywhere!

“The parent showed up after the child is hurt.”

I shrugged while holding my sword.

The Grand Duke Upa was the one restraining him.

A 'black hole' that sucked in everything around it was his patented skills.

Standing next to Grand Duke Upa were many demons.

“To not lower your head after seeing me, I can't believe there is someone like this.”

I could tell his personality from his tone.

Arrogant and self-righteous.

A presence distinctly different from me.

“This demon under my feet? I don't remember how he got there.”

Upa's expression became stormy.

“How cheeky. But it is a fact that you attacked one of my demons. Shouldn't you explain this?”

He asked for an explanation of the attack.

I spoke with annoyance as I roughly explained.

“He attacked me first.”

“I don’t see your arm cut off.”

“Just stick it back on.”

It wasn’t difficult.

I had vaguely expected this situation.

I expected it and acted moderately.

In fact, if I was excited then the demon would already be dead. Kim Yong-woo spoke about an elephant and an ant. It was that type of difference.

I was stronger from the beginning.

Despite that, I only cut off an arm.

Why?

This wasn’t the Demon World. A place ruled by the King of the Spirits!

“Be quiet or I will slash your neck.”

“My neck? Haha!”

Cutting my neck.

I was someone who survived and went back to the past.

I wouldn't die in a place like this.

“This guy..... If you don't act moderately then I won't forgive you. Pakan. Stop his mouth for me.”

Duke Pakan.

One of the 3 Dukes beside Grand Duke Upa.

He nodded and went forward.

The atmosphere swiftly became grim.

I opened Mind's Eye.

Name: Pakan Griolli

Occupation: Demon Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title: * King of Wolves (Ex U, Agility and Strength +4)

Stats

Strength: 80 (+4)

Intelligence: 63

Agility: 65 (+4)

Stamina: 68

Magic: 77

Potential: (353+8/500)

Uniqueness: The master of Griolli, the barren land of wolves.

Skill: Wolf (U), Regeneration (U)

[Relative Comparison]

Pakan Griolli

Strength 84 Intelligence 63 Agility 69 Stamina 68 Magic 77
Potential (353+8/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 71 Intelligence 56 Agility 66 Stamina 72 Magic 80
Potential (329+16/500)

(All stats -10 due to a penalty).

I shook my head.

He was slightly better in terms of stats. The penalty was to blame.

I looked at five sealed items at the auction with Mind's Eye so my stats were -50. If I was in my normal state then I could beat him easily.

The same was true for the skills. But I could use Lightning God Technique and Wrath to reverse the situation.

‘The difference between a Duke and Grand Duke is large.’

The vast majority of Grand Dukes had stats close to 400. Meanwhile, the Dukes were situated between 340~360. Indeed, a Grand Duke. They were completely different.

And my growth was enough to put me shoulder to shoulder with a Grand Duke. It was true that I had a penalty but I just shrugged it off.

At this time, some demons emerged from the auction.

Grand Dukes Ariel, Pandemonium and Okullos.

They looked at the situation between Pakan and I with interested eyes.

Of course, most of their interest was focused on me.

I was the only one among the 72 demons who wasn't in a faction.

A demon who generously used a huge amount of points.....

Was I strong or weak?

They would contact me if I was strong or discard me if I was weak.

I felt like turning and spitting at them.

A cold type of calculation.

“Listen, fledgling demon.”

Pakan roared like a beast.

King of the Wolves. Lord Griolli. A loyal warrior. But it was in vain. A foolish and stupid guy.

The evaluation of Pakan Griolli passed through my head.

“You don’t need a weapon? A dog demon?”

“Spoiled bastard. This is my weapon.”

Pakan said as he showed off his sharp teeth and nails harder than steel.

“Is that so? Then let’s go.”

I raised my sword.

And the moment I dropped into an attack posture.

“...Stop! This is the temple of the Spirit King! Nobody is allowed to run wild through it!”

A high class spirit showed up.

Dubolong was standing next to it and he winked at me.

I was a VIP customer. In addition, I made his role fun so he had some goodwill towards me.

‘Just in time.’

I immediately put down my sword.

I had no intention of fighting any longer.

“A spirit is barging in on these matters? He insulted Grand Duke Upa-nim! He deserves to be punished.”

Pakan had a fiery temper so he outright protested it.

It was also the first time he stepped foot in the Spirit World. He was a person who only followed Grand Duke Upa’s words.

I just laughed.

Really stupid.

He should have figured out how important the dark spirits who organized the auction were. Taking a step back would benefit each other.

Grand Duke Upa also didn’t stop Pakan. An annoyed expression was also on his face.

They were forcefully summoned to participate in the auction.

It felt like a provocation from the dark spirits and now they were interfering. The accumulated anger had flowed over.

‘Everyone makes mistakes at first. Pakan and Upa are making an irreversible mistake.’

I’m not sure of other places.

However, this was an absolute place to the dark spirits.

The temple of the Spirit King.

How could the dark spirits ignore and walk away from such behaviour?

They were tying a rope around their necks.

Based on the agreement between the spirits and the demons, the spirits were able to prevent certain demons from participating in the auction.

Especially in the early days, those that couldn’t participate in the auction would find themselves falling behind the other demons.

Yet Upa and Pakan didn't know this yet. That's why they acted like this.

“Spirits? Grand Duke Upa might have power in the Demon World but this is the Spirit World! This isn't the place to act wildly!”

The body of the high class dark spirit trembled in anger.

Several spirits gathered behind its back.

Despite this, Pakan didn't care.

“Bah! So how are you going to stop us? We are demons!”

Spirits shouldn't interfere in the matters between demons.

The other demons also thought like that.

But the spirits had different thoughts.

“But this is the Spirit World. You traveled here so you need to follow our laws!”

“You summoned me by force but I have to follow your rules? Don't be so overconfident!”

“The spirits organized this due to the will of the devil. Then fine, if you don’t want it! Grand Duke Upa and his demons will be banned from the auction for 3 years.”

“Okay. I wouldn’t come even if I was allowed to!”

Pakan declared bitterly.

The story ended with Pakan’s declaration.

‘Haha!’

3 years! A masterpiece.

Grand Duke Upa and his demons couldn’t participate in the auction for 3 years. They wouldn’t realize the gap that would occur until it was too late.

‘One of them has dropped out.’

It was expected. He was a demon. Grand Duke Upa took the trap.

A desirable outcome. I played the strings a little bit and it aligned perfectly.

“The spirits will deal with any fights that take place here.”

The dark spirit waved. Then Pakan growled out.

“Ridiculous! Who dares.....”

“I agree. Do you have any questions?”

I interrupted Pakan. I wanted to put an end to this now.

At the same time, the face of the high class spirit changed. Dubolong’s face softened.

“Randolph Brigsiel-nim. Are you going to cooperate on this matter?”

“There is no reason not to cooperate. This is your land.”

“Thank you.”

“Huhu! It is like the human saying. When in Rome, do as the Romans do. Please note that Rome is the name of a country.”

“Human beings are decent when it comes to respect. Earl Randolph Brigsiel-nim. I am curious about the circumstances but.....”

The tone was completely different from when it dealt with Pakan.

Anyway, I was competing with the other demons. I didn't care about them.

On the other hand, I would foster a good relationship with the spirits. We would shake hands from the beginning.

The demon frowned as they looked at me. Grand Duke Upa and Pakan had hostile eyes.

I didn't care. I didn't need them in my framework.

'I am going my own way.'

I didn't know what would happen in the future. But it was certain they would run rampant.

However...I just walked away.

*

The auction ended.

I was able to return safely to the dungeon.

Yihi was sleeping on the Dungeon Core.

‘It seems like she slept all day.’

A fairy originally liked to sleep a lot. She didn’t have a physical flesh so she could sleep for a couple of days.

She didn’t even notice the Dungeon Master had come back.

I pulled out a small stone the size of a nail.

The auction representative Dubolong. A close confidant of the Spirit King had given me a gift.

‘I can contact him with this.’

The stone was a tool that made communication possible. However, it wasn’t a simple gift.

Dubolong didn’t say it openly but I could guess what the gift meant.

‘He will inform me of auction goods in advance.’

I could plan in advance if I knew the products. It was possible to get good items, skills and creatures. I could save time over the next few years thanks to Grand Duke Upa and Pakan.

Gaining a harmonious relationship with the spirits through an

antagonistic atmosphere. And I would continue with their tacit consent.

It was a win-win situation. There was no reason to resist.

Yiing.

At that time, a crack in space appeared on the right side.

I turned my eyes away from the stone.

‘Arrived.’

The first thing that made its appearance through the crack was Wrath.

Following that was the Death Wand, Paranormal, Flower of Eternity, Lightning God Technique and the Agility Potion.

It was the transfer of the purchased items.

“Hup! W-what the? What just happened?”

Yihi suddenly woke up and blearily looked around. She didn’t even think to wipe away the saliva at her mouth.

I ignored Yihi and placed all the items in my magic bag.

Chiiiiing!

Soon the crack became larger and 50 dark elves walked through. Most were young adults but it was a reasonable price.

One adult dark elf normally cost 6,600 pt. But I bought 50 adults for only 80,000 points.

I smiled as I saw the two people walking behind them.

Krasla and Chrissy Grassley!

I looked at them with an expectant expression.

Chapter 33-37: Krasla And Chrisley

‘They are nervous.’

I could read the nerves in their facial expressions and gestures.

In particular, Krasla was looking at me with tough eyes but his body was trembling slightly. His eyes were filled with strength in an attempt to protect Chrisley.

It was ludicrous to go against the Dungeon Master but...it was an instinctive behaviour as a brother.

Anyway, Krasla’s actions weren’t over the limit. He didn’t show his teeth towards me.

‘It is due to the slave’s mark.’

The auction house had imprinted a seal on his body and soul.

The moment he tried to oppose the Dungeon Master, his body would experience unbearable pain.

Even Krasla couldn’t relax knowing that.

“Greetings to the Dungeon Master.”

The 50 dark elves simultaneously kneeled.

“Are you the chief?”

I asked an adult who was in front of the dark elves. He was the only elderly, white haired figure.

The aging dark elf nodded.

“Yes, Dungeon Master!”

“Your name?”

“Julliom.”

“Is everybody from the same village?”

“That’s right. Although they were sold separately in the auction, Krasla and Chrisley are also from the same village.”

I touched my jaw.

The dark spirits usually paid something in exchange for the auction items. It was how the spirits filled up their auction items.

In some cases, they were caught by the corrupted but.....

Anyway, it was very rare for an entire auction to pass through an auction.

In addition, Krasla and Chrisley were sold separately at the auction.

There must be something important about the village or there were circumstances that made them contract with the dark spirits.

I was silent for a while before Julliom said.

“The true vampire clan took an interest in Chrisley and there was no way to escape. Therefore we made a contract with the dark spirits.”

“I didn’t ask anything.”

“Dungeon Master is someone who will lead all of us. It is natural to describe the situation.”

They gave me the explanation without even asking.

‘The true vampire clan.’

I recalled the features of a vampire.

They had hot blood. They consumed the yin of women in order to try and cool their blood.

But they had targeted Chrisley.

“Is it because of the ice dragon’s curse?”

Ice dragon’s curse. It was a powerful restraint that ran through the veins.

Julliom’s eyes widened.

“...You know about it?”

“The magic is so strong that it is impossible not to notice.”

A moderate cover.

I easily figured things out due to Mind’s Eye. There was no need to bring up distrust.

“That’s right. Krasla has the blood of a true demonic dragon but Chrisley has barely survived since she was born. Nevertheless, how could we hand her over to the vampires?”

They either didn’t know or deliberately omitted it.

‘The latter.’

Chrisley had the best blood of the true demonic dragon running through her. That part was purposely omitted. I got a strong impression of a desire to hide and protect her.

I snorted.

‘An entire village wouldn’t enter a contract with the dark spirits just to escape some vampires. It was to ensure that Chrisley living inside the dark elf village would be protected from the vampires.’

It was omitted but it wasn’t in order to deceive me.

Although it definitely wasn’t true loyalty.

It would be very challenging to swear allegiance to a person they didn’t know.

I wanted to make Krasla and the dark elves follow me deep in their bones. In order to do this, I needed to know how where to place the line.

‘Anyway, I hold the key.’

I recalled Lightning God Technique.

Yoo Eun-hye had been blessed by the spirit of lightning and gained the ability to use lightning.

If I used Lightning God Technique then it might be possible to unblock the yin veins.

I had 90 magic power so it would be possible if I had the power of lightning.

There was no law that the blocked veins couldn't be fixed.

'Time is a problem...I need to extend her life with the elixir.'

Chrisley life force was exhausted so it was a situation where she could die tomorrow. But I needed to use the time to learn Lightning God Technique.

The thing that could buy that time was the elixir. It cost 100,000 pt and was an absolute remedy.

I checked my points soon after returning from the auction house. I needed to take steps to buy the elixir.

'They must have signed the contract in order to obtain the elixir.'

They probably just used the vampires as a pretext to obtain the elixir.

Chrisley was a significant presence to them so they sold themselves to the dark spirits. The whole town had signed a contract just to protect Chrisley.....

Of course, this was just something I predicted.

I wiped the thoughts from my head and said.

“Do you want me to pity you?”

“No. It is just one of those things that happened.”

Julliom shook his head.

I smirked and said.

“Then from now on, you will be members of my dungeon. Are you aware of what you should be doing?”

“Stop the humans coming to invade the dungeon?”

There seemed to be some basic education.

“That’s right. Right now, fearless human beings have started climbing up this dungeon. Then wait at a given location and prepare to defend that place. That place is...the 15th floor should be reasonable. You will consult with Yihi and the dwarves.”

I've only set up the ecology up to the 5th floor but placing the dark elves on the 6th floor would collapse the balance. The current Awakened could only defeat low grade creatures.

So it was reasonable to place them on the 15th floor.

Yihi flew over and sat down on my shoulder. Then she laid both hands on her waist.

“Ahem. You hear that right? I am Yihi. Listen carefully to my words.”

“The fairy of the Dungeon Core.”

Julliom lowered his body.

Yihi raised her nose even higher.

“Yihi. You are assigned to the 15th floor. I have other work to do.”

“Yes~”

Yihi flew in front of the dark elves.

Then she said with a sinister expression on her face.

“Follow me. Yihi will be your guide. But if you don’t come along properly then I will leave you behind!”

Yihi guided the dark elves.

“You guys, you should be well prepared. Yihi isn’t very nice. I won’t pamper you. If you make a large fuss while working then I will throw you to the orcs!”

“We will keep that in mind.”

Julliom and the rest answered mechanically.

A good attitude.

Yihi continued with a smile.

“But hopefully the work will go well. I don’t want Master to scold me. Compensation...well, I should give you something. Tell me what you want?”

Saying that before working?

Yihi seemed to have widened her mindset.

Julliom spoke carefully.

“That...then, can we receive an elixir?”

“What? Elixir? That’s pretty expensive!”

“But I think that the Dungeon Master can buy it..”

“Well, you’re right. Dungeon Master is great. He can drink an elixir every day like it was water. He can even bathe in elixirs.”

Yihi lied without even blinking.

Julliom stuttered with surprise.

“T-truly great. I realized from the auction house. Compared to the attitudes of the Grand Dukes.....”

“But why do you want an elixir?”

“An elixir is required in order to improve Chrisley’s status.”

“The one behind the large dark elf in the back?”

“Yes...her body has been very weak since she was born.”

The ice dragon’s curse. The strong yin was a curse that meant she

would die before twenty years passed. An elixir wouldn't cure it but it would improve her state.

Yihi thought for a moment before smacking her lips together.

“I can't give you an elixir. Yihi doesn't have permission for this. Do you know how hard it is to make 100,000 points? Points don't just emerge from the ground.”

“Then the Dungeon Master has to approve it?”

“This whole place is Master's dungeon. You guys are no different. You must make yourself useful to Master. If Master approves then you can get the elixir. In contrast, if you make Master angry then Yihi doesn't know what will happen! Do you want something other than the elixir?”

“No. The elixir is necessary.”

“Then should Yihi give some advice?”

“You are very clever so we will listen.”

Yihi smiled with satisfaction.

The kobolds and goblins were stupid so the dark elves were quite good in the eyes of the fairy.

“Okay. Listen carefully to Yihi’s words. First, Dungeon Master hates things that go round and round. If you want the elixir then go and tell him directly. Of course, you should prepare something equivalent in return. If you just say ‘Give me an elixir!’ without giving anything then Dungeon Master will plug his sword into your asses!”

The dwarves were used to jokes like this.

However, Yihi’s words were very shocking to the dark elves.

“Where will he plug the sword?”

“Didn’t you listen to Yihi’s words?”

“Ah, no. The sword...so he will plug the sword.”

“Yes. And unlike Yihi, Dungeon Master will be annoyed if you repeat the same things. I recommend that you speak articulately.”

“Thank you. You have been very helpful.”

“Yihihi. So you should listen to Yihi’s words. If you follow Yihi’s words then you will have no problem getting the elixir!”

“Yes, we will also keep this in mind.”

There was no answer that she didn't like.

Yihi thought this was hilarious.

“Hum hum hum! Originally I wasn't going to do this but I like you so I will make a specific garden for you on the 15th floor. Something real~ly great!”

“Thank you.”

Julliom said in a grateful tone.

But...it wasn't unknown if this gratitude would remain after the garden was completed.

*

While Yihi was leading the dark elves to a higher floor.

I pulled out the 'Lightning God Technique' skill from my bag.

‘In this life, this is my first attack skill?’

I only had Skill Combination and Mind's Eye.

But Lightning God Technique was an attack skill.

-Name-Lightning God Technique (U)

Description: A recipe from someone studying lightning. Lightning can be freely handled up to a 12 star cultivation.

This was the description of Lightning God Technique. Of course, it wouldn't be entirely learned until he had all 12 stars.

Furthermore, the rating of Lightning God Technique was unique. It was an excellent rating for such a vague explanation.

However, there were many reasons why it was necessary to become familiar with the Lightning God Technique.

The power of Lightning God Technique could help Chrisley as well as allow him to adjust and repair Yoo Eun-hye's passive.

And...maybe, I might be able to get my hands on a special achievement.

“Gain.”

-Lightning God Technique (U) has been learned.

Although the accomplishment is low, you've succeed in

forming 1 million watts (1MW) of electric energy in your body.

‘Electric Power’ has been added to the status window.

The messages that continuously popped up!

The first attack skill ‘Lightning God Technique’ has been added.

‘Good.’

I felt a strange sensation. I took a few deep breaths as it felt like a snake was coiling around my body.

Then the power of the Lightning God Technique settled in my body.

Chiik!

Static electricity sparked around my body.

‘Not yet.’

This had a unique rating for a reason. Yoo Eun-hye could also cause sparks. I learned a few things from experimenting with her.

I closed my eyes.

Lightning God Technique.

It was a snake. It was very sensitive and moved slowly but efficiently.

Once loose inside my body, it licked my flesh with its tongue. It was still in the first place where it entered my body. Then it looked around the perimeter.

The snake paced for a while before choosing a safe path and beginning to move. It moved between my feet and my head as it caused the passages to widen.

After a while, it became hungry and would roam the bloodstream swallowing up magic power. After it swallowed until it was full, the snake made its home just below my belly button.

And as if it was excreting...it changed the magic power scattered around to fit its home. The original magic power gained the property of lightning.

I allowed it to move freely.

However, I was slightly worried.

The magic power flowing through the bloodstream. It was also linked to the Heart of the Hell Monarch.

But there was no friction between the snake and the Heart of the Hell Monarch.

Rather, it didn't even come close to my heart. It was like the presence of something scary had chased it away on purpose.

Still, the passages were clearly laid well. In the future I would be able to use the Lightning God Technique more efficiently.

-Lightning God Dan has successfully been created.

2 stars can be used to communicate with Lightning God but a 3rd star is needed to form a dan.

4 million watts (4MW) of electric power has been born in your body.

Lightning God.

Was Lightning God the name of the snake?

I started laughing.

It was indeed a grand name.

I contemplated the Lightning God that had fallen asleep. The magic power in my bellybutton area had the property of lightning.

This was the only Dan.

‘The electric power is 4 million watts.’

The electric power seemed to increase with every star. After roaming around my body and absorbing 4 times the energy from my magic power, it had fallen asleep.

A single dan had been created.

‘It is tired.’

Magic power conversion. It was no wonder why the snake was physically and mentally fatigued.

But then I opened my eyes.

‘I should check the rest of the items.’

There was Paranormal and Wrath left.

I should start. At the very least, I needed to check them.

I pulled out Paranormal that was in the shape of a ring. It was a

unique rating and had an option that could reverse the situation.

-Name-Paranormal (U)

Description: A ring that randomly gives one of 5 different blessings. All stats + 2 for one hour, recovery, Magic Power +5 for 30 minutes, grant a powerful attraction and infinite energy. One of these blessings can be given once a day.

In particular, the all stats +2, magic power +5 and recovery blessings were like sweet honey. The infinite energy and charm was useless but there was a fairly high probability of receiving three out of five.

I immediately placed Paranormal on my left hand index finger.

There wasn't a particular reason for sticking it on the index finger.

I would just be reminded of the blessings whenever I saw the index finger.

The index finger was used to indicate direction. I had some distinct goals and I would be reminded of them every time I looked at Paranormal.

The size of the ring also fit tightly to my left index finger.

“Paranormal.”

The four letters in my mouth. All the conditions were met so I said the name of the item.

Soon a message window told me what blessing was given.

- One of the 5 blessings of Paranormal, ‘Endless Stamina’ has been applied.

An infinite amount of energy will be received throughout the day. With this ability, it isn’t impossible to get the title ‘King of Virility.’

“.....”

I was lost for words.

Blood naturally shot to below my abdomen. The blessing of Paranormal even had that intention.

‘Huh, there is even a title.’

I was still a man. It would be false to say that I didn’t have sexual desires. It existed moderately but desire didn’t make me go crazy like an animal.

It's just...the thought of such a title made me nervous.

‘I need to work on it in the future.’

A title was difficult to obtain. Even a low grade title could help raise the stats. After thinking about this challenging opportunity, I took out the last item ‘Wrath.’

Wrath.

An epic grade item. And one of the Seven Sins.

It was extraordinary just looking at it.

The black handle didn't reflect the light and the end curved like a scimitar. However, it wasn't a scimitar. A thick sword approximately 1 metre long. It didn't seem like a long sword or a bastard sword.

Really mysterious!

What had Oswen aimed for when making a sword with this appearance?

I used Mind's Eye to read the description once again.



-Name-Wrath (Epic, Set Item)

Description: The last piece made by the mythical blacksmith Oswen that even the gods opposed. Characterized by the 7 deadly sins, the evil contained in it was so powerful that Oswen reportedly went crazy.

“Wrath, such pure evil!”

Options: Strength +7, the 7th Epic grade skill ‘Wrath’ is available.

It raised stats but there was also a skill attached.

Having two options attached was quite rare plus it was a set item...it was absolutely unbelievable.

I watched the ‘Wrath’ skill.

Then an explanation for Wrath came up.

-Skill:

Wrath (Epic) - Strength, magic power, agility and stamina will rise as you enter berserk mode. However, there will be a significant decline in intelligence. Throughout the week, intelligence will gradually recover while you are caught in the

desire to destroy.

In other words, it was a skill that significantly increased my physical abilities. But intelligence would drastically drop.

It would recover over a week but it was unknown what symptoms would occur. What's more, I already had a penalty of -10 due to the auction.

'I need to use the skill.'

I didn't care.

Low intelligence didn't mean low mental strength. Intelligence just had a secondary guiding role. If I was caught up in the destructive urge then I could escape if necessary with my willpower.

Furthermore, it wasn't a permanent condition. It might produce irreversible results over a short period of time but this was my dungeon.

Who would make an attempt on my life here? It wasn't an option for now.

"Wrath."

The two characters were captured in my mouth.

At the same time.....

-Strength, stamina, agility and magic power has risen by 8.
Intelligence has reduced by 20.

The 'Wrath' state has taken over. Defended against 15%. Low intelligence has failed to defend against it.

My memory cut out.

*

I opened my eyes.

At that moment, a painful headache could be felt. There was also a worn out feeling in my jaws. I could barely raise my neck from the pain.

“Um.”

I was forced to drip some saliva. The entire top floor had been completely destroyed.

Yihi's body was trembling as she stared at me with fear.

“How many days have passed?”

“Y-Yihi was wrong, Master. In the future I won't fall asleep or bother Master. S-so forgive me. Don't hurt Yihi.”

Yihi said with tearful eyes and a runny nose.

I stiffened.

‘Damn. That state was more effective than I imagined. I never thought I would lose consciousness.....’

My body didn't move to my will. It was unpleasant. The appetite for destruction had taken over.

Something had happened in order to make Yihi terrified of me.

“Yihi. I will not harm you.”

Yihi sneaked a glance at me.

“Really.....?” You really won't hurt Yihi?”

“I was testing a skill and the state took over. It wasn't my intention to make the surroundings like this.”

Fortunately I didn't touch the Dungeon Core. It must have been instincts.

'The Wrath skill suppressed my consciousness but my instincts still remain.'

I sighed and pulled out the Flower of Eternity.

"Take this. It is a flower I purchased at the auction house. It won't wither without water and will grow beautifully."

"Hiing....."

Yihi sniffled as she carefully lifted the Flower of Eternity.

She had a spirit body but came from the Dungeon Core. This was why she could exercise physical force.

I said afterwards.

"Do you know how many days I have been in that state?"

"It has been seven days." And Yihi has fearfully spent that time underneath the Dungeon Core. I was really sad that Master was going to hurt Yihi."

“I will prevent this from happening in the future.”

“Yes Master.”

Yihi answered while wiping at her runny nose and tears.

I clicked my tongue.

My thoughts towards Wrath were too shallow. It wasn't easy to regain my mind in that state.

‘I have to be a little more careful.’

I hadn't expected that my consciousness would be entirely taken away.

In the future it seemed like I needed to move more carefully. I had rushed into it due to feeling impatient. I needed to make sure never to repeat this mistake.

‘It also lowered intelligence.’

No matter if it was a secondary role, having it too low wasn't good.

I frowned and checked my status window.

Name: Randolph Briggsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

Stats

Strength: 79 (+9)

Intelligence: 64 (+2)

Agility: 74 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic Power: 82 (+8)

Potential: (379+23/500)

Electric Power: 4MW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has been transplanted (Full strength hasn't been fully opened).

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (Ex U), Lightning God Technique (U), Wrath (Epic)

A week had passed and all my stats had recovered.

The stats that fell from the auction penalty had also recovered. Due to the option attached to Wrath, strength had also increased by 7.

The status window itself had no problems.

‘I will refrain from using it unless it is an emergency situation.’

The real problem was the situation after activating the skill. Strength, agility and stamina might rise but intelligence fell instead. In that state, I couldn't even use Mind's Eye.

I would just be like a mad warrior.

Of course, there was a penalty but the Wrath skill was very attractive. It was rare for a skill to increase abilities.

The item itself increased strength by 7 and the rest of his physical abilities climbed by 8. When looking at just strength, that was a total rise of 15. The destructive power of that alone was enough to slash an ogre.

Anyway, it was an absolute advantage in the area of close combat. But due to the state that couldn't be avoided, I had to refrain from using it unless the circumstances were special.

"Ah. And Master. The dark elf Krasla wanted to see Master a few days ago. I thought I was going to die but should Yihi call him?"

Yihi who was staring at the Flower of Eternity suddenly spoke like she remembered something.

I nodded my head.

"Call him. Right now I am fine."

“Yes. By the way, Master. You look very tired. Did you know that Yihi was a little bit of a beekeeper? I can get delicious honey. You should drink honey when feeling tired.”

A psychic.

Her attitude quickly changed from before.

Her appearance became more joyful after finding out I had regained my sanity.

This was why it was hard to hate the fairy of the Dungeon Core.

Yet I took the self-righteous path and ignored her during my previous life.....

“Bring it.”

“Yes! Master, please wait a minute. Yihi will mix a delicious blend. Then I will call Krasla.”

“Yes.”

Yihi then went to harvest the honey.

She was still holding the Flower of Eternity tightly.

I gazed after her and thought about Krasla.

‘It must be about her.’

I had expected Krasla to come sooner or later. I couldn’t meet him for a week so he must be worried sick.

‘I wanted what he will offer in exchange for the elixir.’

It was interesting.

No matter how unique Krasla and Chrisley were, nothing in this world was free.

*

“Lulu~”

The secret garden. Lush grass, trees and flowers.

This had a different atmosphere to the dungeon and was the place that Yihi prized the most.

While the Dungeon Master was committing brutal violence, she had completed it.

She had used points to change the structure and topography of

the dungeon as well as decorations.

A corner of the garden. Yihi arrived at the bee farm in a corner of the garden while humming.

“M, M, Master two big weapons “

Paranormal had given him a blessing of ‘infinite energy,’ causing his virility to shoot up.

The two weapons she was referring to was his sword and his organ in his lower extremities.

Yihi sang a strange song while diligently working on the bees.

Hello? Delicious honey?

The bees just shrugged in response.

She wanted to tell that beekeepers that the Dungeon Master was now sane but Yihi didn’t publicize the matter.

Yihi was his representative!

“La la!”

Her song wasn’t over yet.

Yihi's gaze headed elsewhere.

It was a linden tree in the centre. It had a hole where bees were eagerly gathered.

Yihi pulled out one that was visible. Honey dripped down as Yihi flew.

“Master has two weapons!”

Yihi flushed as she visualized Dungeon Master's two imposing weapons after being taken over by the state.

*

I frowned as I looked at Krasla in front of me.

“Absurd.”

And I sneered fiercely.

As expected, Krasla had come to the top floor in order to appeal for an elixir. It was just a direct fastball.

But Krasla's expression was serious.

“I know this is an unreasonable demand. But, I, Krasla, really need the elixir. I will dedicate my entire body to Dungeon Master.”

Krasla kneeled down.

Krasla’s strength when it grew was truly worthy. If he faced one of the 12 Dukes right now then he could push them greatly.

But there was a serious problem.

Was his head just a decoration? I purchased Krasla so naturally that meant I could use him as I liked.

Yet he wanted to exchange himself for an elixir? A ridiculous joke that I never heard of before.

“Aren’t you mistaken? You will assist me? Haha!”

It was impossible for such words to be okay. I was expecting a little bit more.

In my past life, he had been one of the 100 strongest creatures. I had no doubt that he could show that type of capabilities.

But he was greatly mistaken if he thought he could just offer his loyalty. It showed how shallow Krasla was.

“My power is comparable to a Death Knight or Dark Warrior. The ogres and even the vampires aren’t a match for me. Hopefully I will be a sword that Dungeon Master can use well.”

He listed his specifications.

I didn’t conceal my derision and asked.

“Sword. So you are asking to be my sword. Then you can slay Julliom and the entire village of dark elves here?

“What does that...?”

Krasla’s eyes widened.

He was already disqualified from his position as my sword. A sword needed to be wielded. It couldn’t have any doubts.

I scoffed and formed a cold expression.

“He dared lie to me. He said he didn’t want Chrisley to be a victim of the vampires so a contract was signed with the dark spirits. It is really ridiculous sophistry. Do you really think that I would believe him?”

“A misunderstanding! It wasn’t a lie...”

“No?”

“That’s correct. Our village has relied on each other for many years. Chrisley’s body in particular has been weak since birth.....”

“Ha!”

My body started shaking at Krasla’s words.

I opened up my magic power in order to pressure Krasla. In other words, I was telling him to change his attitude.

‘Or I will punish him.’

This wasn’t something that could be solved with conversation. I had definitely given Krasla a lot of opportunities.

It seemed he needed a proper education.

I said with a little bit of anger.

“Krasla. You have wasted your last chance. I offered you a favourable gesture but you just spat it on the ground. Even if it was at the last moment, if you had given me the truth then I would have believed in your loyalty.”

My eyes and voice was filled with rage. Anyone looking at me

would know that I was really angry.

The reason was Chrisley!

I wanted her.

She had the blood of a true demonic dragon so her background wasn't ordinary. I didn't understand why they were so dedicated to Chrisley.

If I could listen to the story then I could get a relationship with a true demonic dragon or obtain some benefits from it.

But Krasla had betrayed my expectations. It was ridiculous for a slave to hide something from his master. No matter how high the potential, I didn't need a slave like that.

Education. And a punishment was required.

The slave mark meant he could die with one word but that was too dull.

"Listen, Krasla. This is a weapon. Use it to try and stop me. But if you can't do that then be prepared for the mass genocide of the dark elves."

My hand squeezed Wrath.

Krasla was a Demonic Lancer so I offered him a long, red spear.

It had an option of increasing the owner's abilities to a total of 362. But Wrath caused my total stats to be over 400. There was a difference of at least 40.

I had the upper hand when just looking at the physical abilities. I also had an extensive amount of combat knowledge. No matter what, Krasla wasn't my opponent.

Krasla was also aware of this fact.

Sweat dripped down his face as he swallowed his saliva. Tension was evident in his eyes.

'That is good but.....'

His skills?

Could he show something more than his potential?

I ran while holding my sword out. Giving time to someone strong or weak was a luxury that I never learned. I always tried my best to smash the enemy.

Chaang!

Krasla managed to lift his spear to block the sword. Krasla's body stumbled slightly from the explosive power. A single clash. Krasla judged that he couldn't face me in power so he started moving faster.

Skill 'Demon Sprint.'

The spear seemed like a vortex as he tried to pressure me. It felt like several spears were simultaneously heading towards me. It was difficult to find the real one hidden in the dazzling movements.

However, it was still insufficient. Demon Sprint had a rare skill rating. The skill wasn't enough to narrow the gap between their overwhelming abilities.

Chaang!

Tuk!

I rolled and the red spear hit the ground. It was a simple task to determine where the spear would hit.

Krasla looked at me with a dazed expression.

He never imagined that I would identify his skill. It was proof that he had never met someone strong.

“Is this the end? At this level, you aren’t worthy of being my sword!”

I snubbed Krasla.

Krasla’s fists clenched as he turned red and his eyes narrowed. It was like a reptile’s eyes were looking at me.

Black scales started to form on his face and his teeth and nails started to change.

Dragon’s Stampede!

It was Krasla’s skill with a unique rating.

“Grrr.....”

Krasla made a sound similar to a beast.

I was very curious about his state and used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Krasla

Occupation: Demonic Lancer

Title: * Person with Dragon’s Blood (R, Strength + 4)

Stats

Strength: 74 (+4)

Intelligence: 59

Agility: 65

Stamina: 83

Magic Power: 77

Potential: (358+4/437)

Uniqueness: A slave inscription is carved on the body. The skill 'Dragon's Stampede' has been triggered. After all previously learned skills have been used, the racial special skill can be activated. After Dragon's Stampede is completed, the active skills will return to its original state.

Skill: Dragon's Breath (U), Hard Scales (R), Sharp Attack (R), Danger Detection (Ex R)

His abilities hadn't changed. Instead, the skills had changed.

The existing Dragon's Stampede (U) and Demon Sprint (R) was gone and had been replaced with four other skills.

'An unusual skill.'

I had never fought Krasla in my previous life. I had only heard rumours. This was the first time I had seen the skill Dragon's

Stampede.

The previous learned skill had triggered some special skills. It was good if a skill could be evolved but it was useless if they didn't know how to use it.

Dragon's Stampede was an ambiguous skill.

'I need to be careful of Dragon's Breath. The rest is just melee combat.'

Melee combat. I was the best in that field.

I laughed and raised Wrath.

At that moment, Krasla moved.

I took a step back and wielded Wrath. Krasla showed a tremendous reaction rate as he avoided the sword while moving forward.

It was like he had perceived the movement before I made it.

'Danger Detection skill.'

It became clearer after several more attacks.

Danger Detection was always on.

But it wasn't universal.

Even without the skill, I was able to read all of Krasla's movements. But Krasla only relied on his senses to read my movements.

The difference was very huge.

The sword was thrust indefinitely. One miss would be an irreversible wound!

Puok!

“Kkuck!”

Wrath was thrust deep in his chest. Krasla shouted as blood gushed out.

“Not yet.....”

But Krasla's eyes were still full of fighting spirit.

Krasla grabbed my sword and took a significantly deep breath.

Huum.

There was a pulsating sound as a significant amount of magic power was detected.

I soon realized the identity of the magic power.

Dragon's Breath!

I sucked the magic power that Krasla gathered into my mouth.

Kwajijijik!

Lightning God Technique moved due to the disturbance in magic power.

The Dragon's Breath had a fire attribute while I let the lightning attribute flow through my sword. The two different types of magic power clashed inside my body.

“Keooooook!”

The skill wasn't cancelled but it ran rampant.

The aftermath affected Krasla. Smoke started to rise from all openings in his body. A large amount of blood started flowing.

The reason he hadn't died instantly was the dragon's blood.

I pulled back the blood stained Wrath.

I said calmly and cruelly.

“I won.”

*

The 50 dark elves received my call and went up to the top floor.

They stared with wide eyes and disbelieving expressions at the tattered Krasla. Krasla was called the clan's ultimate warrior!

It was unbelievable.

Krasla was lying unconscious on the floor. It was obvious from his state that he was the only one who received significant damage.

And I was sitting on top of Krasla's body while wearing a half skull mask.

“You're late.”

“It is great to see Dungeon Master.”

Julliom identified the alarming atmosphere and kneeled down.

The rest of the elves also took the same position.

“It doesn’t look like everyone is here?”

Julliom quickly answered.

“Chrisley’s state has worsened so she can’t come up here. Please forgive us.”

“I made it clear that all the dark elves were to come to the top floor. Isn’t this the same as not listening to me?”

Julliom’s eyes filled with panic.

“T-that is impossible. Dungeon Master is our sky and owner.”

“You tried to deceive me. Listen.”

I stood up and stared down at the dark elves.

“Listen to my words without any interruptions. I gave you many chances to tell the truth but you seem intent on hiding it. To my disappointment, Krasla even showed a shameful appearance when fighting with me. He even disagreed with my commands. Why should I treat you guys nicely? You aren’t even qualified to be

called slaves.”

Gulp!

The dark elves swallowed their saliva.

The opened magic power was effective in planting fear in them. The powerful magic power weighed down on their shoulders and they couldn't even say excuses.

The moment they tried to open their mouths, their neck seemed to be cut. They could only shake and bow their heads.

It was what I intended. I also wore the skull mask to create this situation.

I looked down at the dark elves and declared.

“The sin will be paid with your lives.”

“Wait a minute. Please wait a minute, Dungeon Master!”

Shortly after the declaration.

Julliom urgently raised his head from the floor.

Most of the slaves were in a downwards posture. But I didn't

show anything on my hardened face.

“Who gave you permission to speak?”

“I will tell you everything. So please judge us wisely!”

Kung! Kung!

Julliom hit his forehead against the ground. Blood flowed down his face but he didn't seem to care.

Somehow I could see his fierce struggle to survive.

He realized that I wasn't lying. And indeed, it wasn't a lie.

Krasla and Chrisley might have high value but I had no regrets over the fate of the rest of the dark elves.

Julliom gazed at the other dark elves with sadness in his eyes.

Then the previously fainted Krasla stretched out his hand towards Julliom.

“No.....”

Peok!

I kicked Krasla in the stomach. Krasla's body flew a few metres before landing on the ground. Krasla was stunned once again.

At the same time, there was a short but long silence. To the dark elves, it felt like 1 second or 1 minute had passed.

“It has to be a very important story. If it isn't good then all of you, including Krasla and Chrisley will be hurt.”

I said without any emotions.

It was really uncommon for me to be merciful. Despite becoming more magnanimous after going back but I was curious about Chrisley's story.

A true demonic dragon was a legendary creature. It could easily devour the devil. It was obvious that anyone who owned it would become similar to a devil.

Julliom finally opened his mouth.

“I-I only want to ask one more thing before that. Please.”

“I'll allow it. Go ahead.”

“My story will be a big help to Dungeon Master. Then can Chrisley become your eternal companion?”

Eternal companion. I had heard of it before.

It had a similar to a wedding among the dark elves and was conducted through a special ritual.

The ceremony would take place under the full moon as a naked man and woman entered. For a period of time before that, they would only consume water and would carve lines of blood on each other's bodies.

During the ceremony, their bodies couldn't be mixed until it was completely purified of any wastes and then the bond would come to fruition on the following full moon.

The dark elves had strong vitals so it was possible for them to starve for a month.

The problem was that I didn't know why I should do that with Chrisley. There was no reason to do such a troublesome thing.

"You don't know your position."

I said coldly and Julliom reacted urgently. He didn't wipe up the blood that spurted everywhere.

"T-that's not it! It's just...I was just thinking it would be a great help to Dungeon Master."

“The ceremony will help me?”

“That’s right. And in order to explain it, I need to tell you Chrisley’s pedigree first.”

“Go ahead.”

“Chrisley was born from the Sun King Aojin-nim and the Moon Queen Shilla-nim. She inherited the thick blood of the dark elves and the true demonic dragon.”

I knew from the title that Aojin’s blood flowed through her. But there was also the blood of the dark elves.

The top dark elf among dark elves.

I never imagined that her other parent would be linked to a top name among the high class creatures.

“Then what about Krasla? Did he inherit the same blood?”

“Technically not. He just had Aojin’s blood infused in him. He is Chrisley’s guard. He doesn’t know but he was essentially created to protect Chrisley.....”

I lightly nodded. Indeed, I had felt something strange from the title.

‘Krasla’s title was ‘Person with Dragon’s Blood.’

Aojin’s lineage running through his blood was lower. It could be understood through an infusion of blood. Now it seemed to fit the facts.

Julliom then continued.

“But the alignment of the two bloods are too different. In addition, the balance didn’t match. The Sun King’s blood was a little more dominant so the remaining blood of the Moon Queen developed a curse.

Really a true demonic dragon. It was enough to stop the characteristics of the dark elves.

I could make a guess about the curse.

“That is the ice dragon’s curse.”

“That’s right. The elixir is the only hope to improve it. But the elixir is a divine drink! It is an item that we don’t even dare dream about. But due to the combination of Aojin-nim and Shilla-nim’s blood, Chrisley is destined for death so there is no other way.”

Certainly her life would have already ended once she was old enough. It was amazing that she was even still alive.

“Is that why you committed yourselves to the dark spirits?”

“It was the only way remaining...due to our lack of strength. We tried to obtain an elixir as collateral but the dark spirits wouldn't budge. Instead, it told us how we could obtain an elixir. Use the points of a Dungeon Master in order to obtain the elixir.....”

“Reckless.”

An absurd gamble. In addition, the elixir would recover some of her strength but it wasn't a solution. They knew that but recklessly formed a contract for a chance at obtaining an elixir.

I looked at Julliom like he was stupid.

“We were desperate. The helplessness of not being able to do anything! We couldn't let go of the child that is the incarnation of the dark elves. Anyway, now Chrisley only has a life span of a few months left. This final gamble was based on the entire clan's desire. So...Dungeon Master! Please take pity on Chrisley. The dark elves will devote themselves to your so Dungeon Master, please help Chrisley. Save the life of our child, please, please!”

Kung!

Julliom pounded his head into the ground.

‘Ceremony.....’

He was asking me to undertake the ceremony. It would tie Chrisley to me as well as improve the situation. If I agreed then Julliom and the dark elves would die for me with smiles on their faces.

I thought for a moment.

Chrisley had that type of history. This was a much bigger fish than I thought.

‘If I can solve the problem of the energy imbalance then both the dark elf and true demonic dragon nature can be expressed. Interesting.’

Simply put, I had to punch yin magic power into her blood. But that wasn’t enough.

‘The true demonic dragon’s blood will burn up the yin magic power. Conversely, it can upset the balance in Chrisley’s body and ignite a battlefield. It is an impossible task. Harmony...yes. Harmony is needed. This is called yin-yang?’

This was an essential part of the universe. If I mixed it without removing either of the yin or yang then problems wouldn’t occur.

It was possible in theory.

‘If I take advantage of the Lightning God Technique to harmonize the blood of the dark elf and true demonic dragon then it isn’t impossible. I need more research.’

Lightning God was nestled in my body.

I had a sudden thought.

The snake changed the property of the magic power to lightning. It was possible to neutralize the other two properties.

And couldn’t I eat the magic power? I might be able to use Lightning God to take advantage of the results.

Of course, I could only successfully absorb 10% if I embraced Chrisley but that would be a considerable help.

‘Time. Time is needed.’

My achievements in that skill hadn’t reached the appropriate level.

Anyway, this story was likely to be a great help to me. It was good that I heard it.

I turned my attention back to them.

“It isn’t a bad suggestion. If this is true then I will help restore Chrisley. I will also review the ceremony.”

“T-then?”

Eyes full of expectations turned towards me. I shook my head and betrayed their expectations.

“But I will say one thing. I have already declared your deaths. So.”

The hearts of the dark elves started pounding.

Their lives could be taken with one word.

I slowly opened my mouth.

“All of you will move on all fours and bark like a dog. Forget that you are dark elves. I will closely watch you for one month. During that time, if you act like people instead of dogs then your lives will be taken. Conversely, if you perform wonderfully then I will use the ritual to heal Chrisley.”

The dark elves needed to act like dogs for one month.

This was a very good status upgrade. At least dogs were beasts with absolute loyalty to their owner.

Other demons wouldn't have allowed them to live.

Julliom looked up at me with strange eyes.

I said with a cold smile.

“Bark. Dogs don't talk.”

*

After a week.

The dungeon's 15th floor.

“Bark! Bark!”

“Pant pant pant.....”

Surprisingly, the dark elves fully adapted to being dogs. The 50 dark elves crawling on all fours was a spectacular sight.

It was even reproduced when it came to the meals. This was the amazing result of their obsession with life and fulfilling their lives desires.

Chrisley was the only exception to that position. But she couldn't even walk so it didn't matter.

In contrast, Krasla rolled around like a loyal dog. And Krasla was the most passionate one among the dark elves about imitating a dog.

“It is time to eat ~ Yihi brought the dog food.”

Yihi mixed in several different types of foods to look like dog food.

Yihi was viciously monitoring them. Yihi liked Julliom but the Dungeon Master's command was absolute. Yihi persistently watched the dark elves day and night.

“Bark!”

Julliom was the first to take initiative.

He had to set an example. To be honest, I didn't think he would stay as a dog when he first started imitating it.

Julliom ate from the dog bowl and then Krasla sat next to him.

“The food also looks good to Yihi. Next time, I'll give a living chicken as a specialty. The taste of biting its neck.”

Yihi's attitude changed and she really treated them like pets.

The faces of the dark elves darkened but they didn't dare show it to Yih.

They just shook their ass hard like there were tails there.

*

It had been a month.

The dark elves faithfully obeyed what I said.

This area surprised me a little bit.

Yihi wouldn't be negligent when guarding. Yih always faithfully followed my commands. She would catch the slightest hint of a mistake. But they held on tenaciously.

The dark elves proved their value. They would be quite useful as guard dogs.

And I didn't just play for a month.

I raised the achievements of the Lightning God Technique to 7 stars. I also studied Chrisley's interior and concluded that it was possible.

Exactly one month afterwards, I fed Chrisley a bottle of elixir. A few days later, I could determine that Chrisley's appearance had changed as I led her to a moonlit place.

Today was the full moon.

The time with the most yin magic power.

Chrisley's body was stiff with tension.

A mixed-race dark skin. The contrast between the yellow skin and white hair looked good. The eyes an unusual soft purple...her features had a sickly appearance but she had a voluminous body. A beautiful woman that many people would focus on.

I threw off my clothes. The ceremony would be conducted in the nude.

We had carved each other's bodies for one month and it would be combined on the last day. The ceremony was also needed in order to stabilize the magic power inside Chrisley's body.

I looked Chrisley up and down and said.

"Take it off."

Chrisley's eyes became resolute.

She was aware of her predicament.

She succeeded in recovering some stamina due to the elixir but the ice dragon's curse was unaffected. Instead, it actually gnawed away at her life force quicker. The other dark elves might not know but Chrisley did.

That was the reason why.

Chrisley opened her mouth.

“Dungeon Master. I want to say something.”

“What?”

Chrisley looked at me with soft, violet eyes.

“My body isn't normal. I drank the elixir but my status is getting worse. I have five or six months at best. My body is becoming as cold as ice...I can't comply with Dungeon Master's wishes.”

It made a lot of sense.

In the first place, the elixir wasn't an absolute cure. She had received heaven's vengeance since she was born so the elixir couldn't stop it. It would only increase her life by a few months at best.

It seemed like she was giving in so I asked.

“Why are you asking me this? The Dungeon Master can give you an unlimited amount of elixirs.”

Then Chrisley shook her head.

“I can’t do something so disgraceful. And no matter how much I drink, the elixir can’t cure my body. Wasn’t Dungeon Master also aware of that fact before the ceremony? As a child, I dreamed of someone rescuing me but I’ve already given up on that. This ceremony will only cause misfortune...I’m sorry to Elder Julliom but I can’t meet your expectations.”

“Then do you want the rest of the dark elves to die? Their lives will be collateral if you are useless.”

Chrisley’s eyes widened at my words. It was an expression showing she would comply.

“It is destiny.....”

I frowned as it seemed like she had given up.

Was she frustrated because her last hope, the elixir failed? An attitude of meeting death. Her attitude was more like a worm than a cockroach.

Chrisley saw my face and said.

“Dungeon Master. We have also come from the Demon World. That is a place defined by power. I know deep down that Dungeon Master has mercy. After Elder Julliom deliberately hid me, he was forced by another demon elder to cut his hair and was ridiculed. Despite losing his old life, he promised you this ceremony in exchange for the elixir...I will return this favour.”

I was impressed with Chrisley.

Not many demons would keep promises unless their life was at risk. Demons could be very cruel to those who were weak.

But unlike ordinary demons, I could see the potential of others with Mind's Eye.

However, those with high potential could still be weak. Those who were lacking right now could be a great help to me later.

For those people, I would show them a wide generosity.

A prime example was Chrisley in front of me. If it wasn't for Chrisley and Krasla's presence then Julliom would have died. Having them imitate a dog was troublesome.

I smiled and opened my mouth.

“How are you going to pay me back? Don’t you have five or six months at best to live?”

“I am saying this with a smile. My body might be cold...but I am prepared. I am strong enough to undergo the ceremony. It is up to you.”

The ceremony was one of the most glorious moments in a dark elf’s life. It was given to me.

She was convinced that her time was running out. I didn’t like that attitude towards death.

Either way...

‘I would go into the pit laughing.’

I didn’t like her words.

There was a need to correct her attitude towards death. I would fight desperately in the face of death.

Chwaak!

I forcefully tore apart the thin silk dress that Chrisley was wearing. At the same time, her resilient breasts and body were revealed.

But she did not resist. She had accepted the whole thing.

I looked down at the breathtaking sight of Chrisley's body and said.

"I will help you live. So you will have to live for me."

*

Today was the full moon.

It was when yin magic power was the most powerful.

In response, the inherent power of a dark elf in her power raised its head slightly.

Even so, it was still lacking compared to the blood of the true demonic dragon so balance was important.

The Lightning God Technique had reached 7 stars. The amount of electric power was 6.4 million watts. It wasn't comparable to real lightning but it would be introduced through skin contact.

I placed my hands on Chrisley's body and slowly moved the Lightning God. I wanted to see the areas where the yin magic power was blocked.

‘I need to pierce through one.’

Originally magic power would flow hot throughout a body. In contrast, I could feel a cold magic power. It also flowed slightly differently through her body.

Chrisley’s yin magic power was badly accumulated in some areas.

After piercing through, a wide passage would appear before it was clogged again. I gently touched the yin magic power.

‘Lightning God. It is your turn.’

The lightning snake in my abdomen. Its name was Lightning God.

The Lightning God twitched with annoyance but moved into Chrisley’s body.

Chrisley who was watching my actions widened her eyes as she felt something entering her.

“Put up with it. Don’t make a sound.”

“.....!!”

Kwang!

At that moment, the 6.4 million power of Lightning God arrived at the first gateway.

Lightning God aggressively slammed its head into the first blockage.

Chrisley's body trembled. Somehow she managed to suppress the groan as her fists clenched tightly. Her ten toes scraped the ground. Her body bent like a bow as a cold sweat appeared but she didn't make a sound.

‘Tricky.’

My expression was also determined.

Just before, the impact had failed to pierce through. I needed to drill through the first gateway but I didn't know if Chrisley's body could hold on.

But I couldn't wait until the next full moon. The magic of the dark elf was bursting so today was the day! This was a golden opportunity to absorb some of the true demonic dragon's magic power.

If I could at least surpass one gateway.....

“It won’t be easy. Don’t let go of your spirit.”

I was unfamiliar with whispering sweet words to someone. The best I could do was to tell her to endure it.

Chrisley nodded while biting her lips.

Lightning God continued its barrage as its tail shook wildly.

Kwang!

A rough storm occurred.

It looked even more painful as Chrisley’s body twisted. But my hands didn’t fall from Chrisley’s body.

Energy was leaking from her body. I was safe but that wouldn’t last long.

If magic power flowed back from Chrisley’s body then I could receive a big wound. It was self-explanatory what would happen if I withdrew Lightning God now.

My eyes became more serious.

I had to see it through to the end once I started it.

*

Chrisley couldn't regain her spirit.

The unimaginable pain made her want to drift away.

She thought she had become used to pain but this was different. It felt like thousands of needles were inside her body.

But she had to be patient. She also didn't make a sound.

Honestly, any man would feel something in front of Chrisley.

A feeling where they wanted to save her.

She didn't have any hope.

There were numerous attempts to save her. They all ended in frustration.

The elixir had been her only hope and even that failed.

Therefore, Chrisley's heart had 'given up.' Krasla oppa and Elder Julliom had great expectations but she wasn't expecting much.

If there were fewer expectations then she wouldn't be disappointed.

And despite the elixir improving her status, she didn't say anything once it started deteriorating again. Their eyes would fill with sympathy.

But this man...he didn't have any sympathy in his eye.

Why?

His eyes seemed to see through her.

At first, she thought it was just an excuse to take her body. She was well aware that many demons wouldn't give up such a sweet ritual.

It was impossible but...if the life of the clan was saved for the elixir then she would spend what remained of her life devoted towards him.

'Is it possible?'

But the thought sprouted in her brain.

A pain that a demon couldn't adapt to was serious.

Kwang!

“.....!!”

Who?

The pain was the only evidence that she was alive.

She gave up and descended into the pain.

The intense pain in her body made her feel strange. It was like every one of her cells was surviving a little bit more.

‘Ah!’

Kwang!

Was she mistaken?

The shock was painful. Rather, it was an awful pleasure.

Her blood moved more quickly. It felt like the vitality in her body was fluctuating and spiking.

Chrisley was convinced.

The forbidden curse in her body had relaxed a little bit!

‘Can I live?’

She threw a questioning look towards the demon.

She wanted to do many things but her body was too weak.

She tried to say something.

And with that joy and hope, Chrisley lost consciousness.

*

The full moon shone. Moonlight flowed in an enclosed space.

In the meantime, there was a noticeable change in Chrisley’s appearance.

Her pale complexion took on a dignified atmosphere. A body with an unparalleled beauty. Her expression also came alive. It was hard to believe she was the same person who had accepted death.

The magic power of the true demonic dragon and dark elf was harmonized as much as possible.

I smiled towards Chrisley who was standing a little bit away from me.

I carefully moved towards her delightful breasts. Then my mouth opened and my tongue caressed her chest.

My tongue moved along the blood lines carved on Chrisley. I bit my tongue while it brushed against the blood marks. It was like a fuse had been lit.

Usually my fingers would carve new marks but today was the last day. The ceremony was different.

My entire body was engraved with many blood marks. Chrisley's blood was needed for the ceremony.

I felt a warmth in my chest and opened Mind's Eye.

Name: Chrisley
Occupation: None
Title: * Person with the Blood of a True Demonic Dragon (Epic, Intelligence +6, Magic Power +6)
* Blessed by the Moon (Ex U, Magic Power +8)

Stats

Strength: 23

Intelligence: 94 (+6)

Agility: 21

Stamina: 27

Magic Power: 46 (+14)

Potential: (211+20/478)

Uniqueness: A person with the true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf Shilla’s blood, the end of her growth can’t be seen.

Skill: None

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 19 Intelligence 100 Agility 21 Stamina 1 Magic 34
Potential (176+3/478)

Strength 23 Intelligence 100 Agility 21 Stamina 27 Magic 60
Potential (211+20/478)

Stamina and magic power had risen significantly.

Her physical abilities were still low but it was an incredible

growth when looking at the past.

Of course, I also went through changes. It was only a change to the Lightning God Technique.....

I stared with bitterness at my status window.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

Stats

Strength: 79 (+9)

Intelligence: 64 (+2)

Agility: 74 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic Power: 82 (+8)

Potential: (379+23/500)

Electric Power: 6.4MW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has been transplanted (Full strength hasn't been fully opened). Changes have occurred in the Lightning God Technique since swallowing a huge amount of magic power. The results are unpredictable.

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (Ex U), Lightning God Technique (???), Wrath (Epic)

No stats increase or title.

That damn snake had swallowed all the dragon and dark elf magic released from Chrisley. It was now lying underneath my belly button looking like it was dead.

Thanks to that, there were three question marks next to the Lightning God Technique skill. This was the first time I couldn't anticipate the results.

“Take this.”

I took out the command magic book and the Death Wand.

Despite the blood marks engraved on my head, Chrisley was still puzzled by my behaviour.

“Dungeon Master. What is this?”

“A new occupation and skill and a wand for you to use.”

Chrisley’s face filled with determination and she said.

“.....I will learn it to the best of my ability.”

“Learn it after you are fully recovered. Do you know how?”

“Yes, I studied while under the contract with the dark spirits.”

I didn’t bother explaining any more. I noticed that Chrisley was having trouble balancing her body.

She had been unsure of my intentions during the last month. After breaking through the first gateway, her attitude towards me had completely changed.

I gave her hope!

After escaping from her constraints, Chrisley changed completely.

In addition, she seemed to have figured out my personality. Since the first day, Chrisley had never worked against me.

‘Time to go out.’

It was time to leave the dungeon and return to the guild. I had been away for more than a month.

‘I don’t know how Lightning God Technique will change but.....’

I shrugged.

It had already passed. Lightning God had absorbed all the magic power. I could only hope that it progressed in a good direction.

I still looked at Chrisley. Chrisleys’ cheeks flushed.

The ceremony wasn’t over. Combining the bond was still required for the ceremony.

Chrisley carefully put down the book and Death Wand and nodded. Her mind was prepared.

I pulled Chrisley towards me.

Then I devoured her lips.

*

The ceremony ended the next day.

I left the dungeon. Krasla was next to me.

“Dungeon Master. Is it okay if I join you?”

Krasla asked under the intense sunlight.

The pointed ears of a dark elf was hidden with the help of a magic earring. At first glance, his skin looked like a black man. Furthermore, the earring had the option of automatically translating every language. It wouldn't be an issue if Krasla accompanied him.

“Chrisley told me. You have the role of a teacher among the dark elves.”

Krasla nodded at my words.

“That's right. I've taught the dark elves basic swordsmanship

and how to deal with some creatures.”

“You will do the same now. You will teach my humans.”

I never learned from someone so my teaching skills were embarrassingly bad. Someone was needed to teach Yoo Eun-hye and the other Awakened in my group.

So I used Krasla. In addition, it wouldn't be bad if he was used as a member of my raid group. Krasla currently had no work to do in the dungeon anyway.

Krasla's eyes widened and he clapped with an understanding expression.

“The humans under you? Ah, you are playing?”

“Similar.”

Right now, it was a game that couldn't be seen. The level of the humans were far too weak.

Krasla's eyes lit up.

“I understand. I won't interfere with Dungeon Master's game.”

After fixing Chrisley, the eyes of the dark elves had changed

towards me.

For them, Chrisley was the incarnation of a dark elf.

Faith!

Faith.

So it would work. The dark elves would obey any decisions like they were my dogs.

Krasla was the same as well.

His true role was Chrisley's guard. He was happier than anyone that Chrisley was cured.

In fact, Krasla was the one who tried hardest to imitate a dog during the previous month. Chrisley was more important than his pride as a warrior. He would die for her.

Now his position was completely concluded.

I said casually.

“In the future, just call me Master.”

“I understand Master!”

They both started descending the mountain.

Chapter 38-40: Heaven's Will

The guild house located in Yeoksam-dong, Gangnam.

It was a 5 storey building that the Heaven's Will members could use at any time. In less than a year, Kim Yong-woo had earned enough from the dungeon to buy a building in Gangnam.

For some reason, today there were hundreds of people lining up outside the guild house of Heaven's Will.

“Awakened number 359! Awakened number 359, please come in!”

Several helpers dressed in yellow were directing the people in front of the building. The people in front showed a number to the guild helper and were allowed inside the building.

Krasla looked at them with amazement and said.

“This place is Heaven's Will, Master?”

“That's right.”

I lightly nodded.

I had described Heaven's Will to Krasla while descending the mountain. He was going to be staying here in the future so he was a bit stunned.

It was the first time I had seen so many people lined up outside the guild house.

‘Are they all Awakened?’

I used Mind’s Eye to look at the line and found that all of them were Awakened.

‘It must be a recruitment.’

The personnel of the guild was increasing.

Thanks to the safety zone, a stable core was formed and now they could raise the guild. Heaven’s Will was a presence that couldn’t be ignored in South Korea.

It was natural to increase the manpower.

“Earth is a fairly funny place. The buildings aren’t that high.”

Krasla expressed his admiration.

He had been in this state since descending the mountain.

Earth and the Demon World were completely different worlds. Krasla had lived in the poor area of the Demon World so it was

natural for him to be amazed.

However, he wasn't overwhelmed by it. Besides, he was aware of things like science and technology.

A zone of strong people. Krasla came from a place where the winners gobbled up everything. A warrior who was always tense found it a pleasure when they could relax.

Actually, it was difficult to Krasla to experience an unprecedented tragedy in South Korea. This wasn't his home.

Krasla's total stats equaled 362 and his strength was equivalent to an advanced Lv3 creature. At this level, he was impervious to most modern weapons.

I said to him.

“This is unusually severe. At any rate...let's go.”

It wasn't an uncommon sight in Gangnam. I could see it in the future anyway so there was no time to be surprised.

I walked towards the entrance of the guild house. It would be funny if a member of the Heaven's Will raid group Devil Hunters needed to stand in line.

“What is that?”

“Don’t interrupt!”

“Bastards, are your eyes filled with knots! Don’t you see this line?”

There was a hail of protests. The Awakened cursed at him.

“Master. What should I do?”

Krasla frowned and asked me.

It was a good thing. I thought he might have moved after hearing the harsh words. Asking my opinion meant that Krasla was aware of his position. A slave wasn’t supposed to move without a command.

“Ignore it.”

“I understand.”

Reacting was a terrible idea.

It would just waste time.

I was at the entrance when a yellow dressed person blocked my path.

“If you are interested in joining the guild then line up.”

“Who are you?”

“A member of Heaven’s Will, Kim Cheol-sun. If you don’t line up then you can’t go inside.”

Kim Cheol-sun. Who was this?

I had never seen his face before. He must be a new member that joined while I was gone.

“Randolph Briggsiel. I am the captain of the Heaven’s Will raid group, Devil Hunters.”

“There isn’t a raid group with that name in Heaven’s Will.”

“That’s impossible. I have a spot and Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye are members.”

“There are no guild members with that name. I’m sorry but can you listen to the instructors?”

It was a strange twist.

I had frequently left the guild. Of course, I was gone for more

than a month this time but for the raid group to be gone?

It was a really troubling reaction. There was also Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye.

‘Strange.’

It was definitely odd.

It would be normal if he never heard about the raid group. But he also didn’t know Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye’s name.

Kim Cheol-sun’s expression crumpled up.

“Can you stop standing here? Do you know how long people have been lining up? Ah, fuck. Or are you a foreigner who doesn’t speak Korean well? Randolph what?”

“Master. Should I also ignore this?”

Krasla asked.

The magic earrings gave unnecessarily detailed translations so he could understand all the vulgar words being spoken.

I thought for a moment and said.

“Is Kim Yong-woo here?”

“No, is the guild master your friend?”

“He’s not inside?”

“What does it matter if he is inside? You are really crazy.”

Kim Cheol-sun grabbed my shoulder.

I didn’t budge despite his attempts to forcefully throw me.

“Eh? What? Why aren’t you moving?”

He started doubting his own strength. His total stats barely passed 180 so of course I wouldn’t even tremble.

“Bring me to Kim Yong-woo. Or I will go find him myself.”

“What’s going on?”

Another yellow dressed guild member spoke.

He came over to Kim Cheol-sun.

Kim Cheol-sun withdrew his hand from my shoulder and

shrugged.

“No...this guy called the name of the guild master like he is a friend. The captain of the group Devil Hunters? Do we have such a raid group?”

“Devil Hunters? Isn't the naming sense like that of a king's?”

“Both of them are foreigners. One black and one is white. Handsome. Are they models? Perhaps they have the wrong building?”

They seemed to be ignoring my words. I tried to handle this quietly but it couldn't be helped.

“...I will go find him myself.”

I threw a glance towards Krasla.

Krasla nodded and took out his spear holder. A long, red iron spear popped up.

“Kill then?”

“Alive. Moderately breaking the body is okay.”

“I understand.”

The guild members, including Kim Cheol-sun, had absurd expressions on their faces. They had been selected to join the guild. Yet this person wanted to use a spear against them.

Kim Cheol-sun and the other guild members pulled out their own weapons.

“Aren’t those just good words? You will be the ones chopped up in combat.”

Kim Cheol-sun who was holding his sword in a leisurely manner laughed. The most outstanding new members had received a rare grade sword as a gift.

This was a treasure with a very high cutting force. Naturally he would look confident.

“This sword is familiar.”

It was similar to a sword that I sprinkled over the dungeon. In the end, it was a sword taken from my dungeon. It felt weird seeing him boast about it.

“I understand Master. 5 seconds will be enough.”

Krasla took an attack posture with his spear.

“Oh! Those dirty words! You will regret it.....!”

Before his words finished.

Puhung!

“Keheok!”

Kim Cheol-sun was hit by the dull end of the spear and fell down like a frog. The remaining two guild members walked a similar path.

Three guild members were collapsed on the ground. Krasla said 5 seconds but it took less than 5 seconds. A truly overwhelming sight!

It had happened with hundreds of applicants watching.

“Master. Their bones are too tender so they fainted after I broke it. Should I continue?”

Krasla said as he placed his leg on Kim Cheol-sun’s right arm.

The force was different from a spear so he could control it to break a bone, not take their lives.

His actions were very cautious.

I shook my head.

“That’s okay. Let’s go.”

*

Familiar faces started to be seen after entering the guild house.

They were astonished when they saw me like I was a dead man who had returned alive.

‘I’m being treated as a dead man.’

I organized their reactions in my head.

It had been more than a month without any guild contact so they seemed to think I had died.

Of course, even the Devil Hunters raid group that I formed was disbanded. But it was still questionable where Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye were.

I went to the elevator and pressed the button for the 5th floor. Just as the door was about to close, many guild members boarded.

“Y-you are?”

Among them, a man turned towards me with his mouth wide open.

I lightly greeted him.

“Your name was Kim Tae-hwan? It’s been a while.”

I lightly greeted him.

He was one of the 12 people that I cleared the 1st floor with. A moderately influential person in the guild.

In addition, he also planned some hell training in the dungeon so he was fairly popular.

He closed his mouth and frowned.

“I thought you were dead?”

I threw a glance towards Kim Tae-hwan who was going to the same floor as me.

Then I answered with a smile.

“Who said that?”

“A guild member saw you entering the dungeon.”

“Stupid. Don’t you know my skills?”

“It is natural to think you were dead after entering the dungeon for more than a month.”

“So the raid group Devil Hunters has been dismissed?”

Kim Tae-hwan’s eyebrows rose.

“It seems like you are going to meet the guild master but there is no room in this guild. There are many new people with good skills. I also have a rare rated skill. I can also deal with two orcs.”

A claim like he was showing off.

Handling two orcs.

But Kim Tae-hwan’s attitude was somehow awkward.

I was puzzled and asked.

“Is that something to celebrate?”

“I don’t want to hear those words. I’ll be leaving now.”

Ding dong~

Soon the elevator doors opened.

5th floor. The place where the guild members were resting could be seen. Kim Tae-hwan exited the elevator first. The others followed behind him.

“Master. Should I sweep everything away?”

“That’s fine.”

I said to Krasla.

I needed to know what the problem was first before solving it.

“I will meet the guild master.”

I would make a detailed assessment after hearing the story.

I didn’t think that Kim Yong-woo would dismiss my raid group.

Moments ago, Kim Tae-hwan had went off with the other guild members.

In their eyes, my raid was an eyesore.

Kim Yong-woo would have been helpless after I was away for a month or so.

I could understand that much.

On the contrary, I didn't think he needed to be punished.....

‘By the way.’

The piercing gazes that came the moment the elevator opened.

I turned and looked at them.

The 5th floor was a multipurpose room with many paintings.

Half the people had familiar faces while the other half was unfamiliar.

The personnel had significantly increased over the last month... most of the existing guild members were paying attention to me.

They weren't friendly. I noticed that some were staring at Krasla and I like we were enemies.

Kim Tae-hwan had frowned but he hadn't looked at me like an

enemy.

Then,

‘Advice?’

Be careful of others since they would also grow, was the meaning behind his words.

I had thought his attitude was unnatural. There was no reason to suddenly boast of the new personnel and his rare skill.

I simply misjudged it as the logic of a strong man.

In the end, it turned out like this.....

‘Ha!’

Laughter burst out.

A unique situation.

This was the 5th floor. A place that was like a picture gallery. But now it looked different from before. They were divided into several groups. A sight that was definitely discrimination.

Factions.

I came up with the word. At any rate, a lot of changes had occurred in a month.

I walked forward while ignoring them.

The guild master's office was on the central left. I stood in front of the door and said to Krasla.

“Wait here.”

“I understand Master.”

Rattle!

I opened the door and saw Kim Yong-woo wearing glasses while looking through some paperwork.

“Who? I told no one to come for a while.....”

“It's me.”

Kim Yong-woo flinched as he heard my voice and turned towards me. He gave a cry of ‘heok!’ and fell out of his chair.

After a few moments, Kim Yong-woo sat back at his desk as he took his glasses off and rubbed his tired eyes.

“I’ve been awake for three days and three nights so I must be dreaming...”

“I heard that raid group Devil Hunters was disbanded.”

Kim Yong-woo was shocked as he heard that name.

“Y-you are really Randalph-nim?”

“Is there a fake Randalph?”

“Ohh, oh my god! Thank god!”

Kim Yong-woo trembled. He seemed like someone who was meeting a real god and didn’t know what to do.

“I want to know why the raid group was disbanded.”

I cut to the chase and Kim Yong-woo swallowed his saliva at the question.

“Everybody knew that Master-nim had died. O-of course, I didn’t think that.”

“Why is my death the cause of the raid group being disbanded?”

Kim Yong-woo had nothing to hide so he naturally said.

“No, that’s not it! It is a misconception. The raid group wasn’t disbanded. It’s just...should I say it is in a temporarily postponed state?”

“Postponed state?”

“Yes. That’s correct. 20 days ago, problems started to emerge as the guild expanded. It was pointed out that too much preferential treatment was given to Devil Hunters.”

“Go on.”

Kim Yong-woo licked his lips and started to tell a long story.

“At first I ignored it. There were protests but my heart considered it an easy matter. But the flames continued to spread. It became a witch hunt. They argued that it was ridiculous to keep a raid group that only had 3 members.”

Kim Yong-woo wiped the sweat off his forehead and continued.

“At the time, I was busying expanding the members and occupying the safety zones. I misjudged and didn’t take care of it properly. I thought I could resolve it when Master-nim came back.”

“But I didn’t come back.”

I was busy solving the problem of Krasla and Chrisley and was gone for more than a month.

This incident happened in the meantime.

Kim Yong-woo said with a gloomy face.

“Yes. More time passed...the atmosphere became worse for every new person that came. The new and existing guild members started speaking up. There are the people that I established the guild with. They decided to get directly involved with the operation of the guild.”

Kim Yong-woo shrugged.

“It is all my fault. The guild has become bigger and gathered more attention. I never imagined that guild politics would occur. So I have become useless, huu! Now I live my life buried in a pile of paperwork. Really, I’m really sorry.”

Kim Yong-woo bowed deeply.

A gesture that wasn’t false.

He himself admitted that he didn’t have an academic background.

He had risen to the position of a guild master but this was the first time he had operated a guild.

It became noisy and the guild split into factions. It was too late once he noticed it.

Without realizing it, guild politics had occurred and his power as a guild master weakened. The guild house and guild was established by Kim Yong-woo but it was jointly established and funded with other people. It was a reasonable decision.

‘Any guild would have the desire to grow.’

At first, there was a harmonious atmosphere.

A few members joined for the fellowship but there was a big meaning placed on the formation of raid groups.

But Heaven’s Will had grabbed the tile of best guild in South Korea.

Many greedy people desired to touch it.

Perhaps that was how Kim Yong-woo lost his title of guild master in my previous life. I could imagine what would happen if this situation continued.

I organized my thoughts for a moment before saying.

“Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye?”

Kim Yong-woo explained this as well.

“Due to the atmosphere, they were sent back home. Their withdrawal is also pending. Untangling both situations...but, I can do it now that Master-nim has returned.”

“Do so. Isn’t there a problem remaining in the guild?”

“Huh?”

“Those who created the factions. They are the cause of all this dissonance.”

“T-that’s right.

It was mortifying but true. Kim Yong-woo’s voice trembled.

I said flatly

“Announce that the raid group Devil Hunters has returned. Write a list of those who will cause problems and hand them to me.”

Kim Yong-woo immediately looked at me.

He was trying to figure out the meaning of my words.

Kim Yong-woo had seen me hunt the Dark Warrior. He knew that my skills transcended dealing with two orcs.

But I wasn't the type to help someone. Those with strength had declared neutrality. I had the attitude of not wanting to get involved in complicated matters.

Kim Yong-woo nodded.

“I understand.”

“What is the format of the new staff recruitment?”

There was nothing to hide. Kim Yong-woo responded fairly easily.

“An audition format. The Awakened had fully settled into society

so I thought it wouldn't be bad to create an entertainment program. Something like a common music audition program. But why.....?"

Kim Yong-woo asked why I was curious about the audition.

It wouldn't be bad to influence the people who would join the guild. Expansion of the personnel led to the formation of factions. Of course, their gazes would be focused on the audition.

"I want to become a special examiner."

"You want to participate in the audition as a judge?"

"Is that impossible?"

Kim Yong-woo shook his head.

"No. I can add you at my discretion."

"Then I guess there isn't a problem."

I smirked.

It wouldn't be a bad surprise.

Originally the spacious hall on the 2nd floor belonged to the Devil Hunters.

It was now decorated and used for the audition.

The five judges sitting on a white table were like celebrities in Heaven's Will. This was being shown on TV so the hopefuls had a strong desire to be recruited.

“Number 362. What skills do you have?”

One of the examiners asked the large man wearing a nametag with 362 on it.

“Normal grade Long Jump, exceptional normal Increase Eyesight! I am faster than any creature.....”

“It's okay. Can you show us the Long Jump?”

“Yes. It is possible.”

“Try it.”

Number 362 took a deep breath.

The man jumped approximately 6 metres with a large smile. It

was good enough but the expressions of the judges didn't seem pleased.

"Let's test your skill Increase Eyesight. Can you see these letters?"

The judge wrote down very small letters.

It couldn't be seen unless the person was very close.

Number 362 opened his mouth with a grumpy expression.

"...It isn't visible."

"I understand. By the way, your physical stats seem a little low. The skills can't be utilized properly. Were you lying when you created your stats table?"

"No!"

"Hmm, I will believe you. Then please wait for a little bit."

The five judges started to write down their scores.

The scoring determined who would enter.

Skill, skill utilization, reliability, stats and other factors were

looked at in order to give a score out of 100.

Those with an excellent grade would enter the 2nd test. If they fought against a goblin or kobold and won then they would pass. Those that gave a good impression would be drawn into the group of one of the five judges.

But the number 362 Awakened didn't need to worry about that.

"Next is number 363. You have a title? Foul Mouthed Person?"

Number 363 was also a man. He scratched his head and muttered.

"Haha, it turns out that I often curse....."

"Well, it is great that you have a title. The skills are also unusual. Loud Singing, Low Morale. What are the effects?"

"If I yell loudly or swear at them then they will flinch. Can I show you?"

"It will affect people?"

"The effect depends on your intelligence. In return, a lot of people will cry."

"I'm begging you to keep the level weak."

There were many people in this hall.

If he cursed then everyone here might suffer mentally.

“Hmm hmm!”

Number 363 cleared his throat.

“Hey! These scum like bastards should fuck off!”

“Hoh.”

“.....?”

“It lasted a few seconds. Great confidence.”

The eyes of everyone, including number 363 turned towards the entrance.

A pale man was standing next to the guild master, Kim Yong-woo. The man who gave a mocking laugh was handsome.

The judges were watching the man more than the guild master. Rather, the guild mater didn't even enter their eyes.

“.....!!”

At the same time, their eyes will filled with amazement. It was like they were meeting a ghost.

‘That jerk?’

Number 363 frowned.

He had seen that guy at the entrance.

He had seen it. Number 363 had roughly cursed and insulted him. The man with black skin had handled 3 guild members and now the person accompanying him was with the guild master.

‘That bastard? What is it?’

Number 363’s blood quickly cooled.

*

The atmosphere instantly changed as Kim Yong-woo and I entered.

It felt like cold water had been poured on them.

I laughed as I received the attention of the five judges and dozens

of applicants.

Especially the judges.

They were individuals of Heaven's Will that had appeared on TV several times. Looking at their reaction, they didn't seem to welcome my appearance.

The judges received this assignment because they had influence.

Was this the so called political arena? It was obvious that Kim Yong-woo's presence in the guild was less than I expected.

"Hmm hmm! The guild master of Heaven's Will, Kim Yong-woo. I came so why are you so panicked?"

Kim Yong-woo cleared his throat a few times before saying.

"Guild Master!"

"Wah, it is really Kim Yong-woo. It is the first time I'm really seeing him."

Unlike the judges, the participants looked at Kim Yong-woo like they saw a miracle.

Although his position had diminished in the guild, he was still

the guild master of Heaven's Will. Currently one of the most famous people in South Korea!

Then Kim Yong-woo introduced me.

“Thank you for your welcome. But I am not the hero of today. The main character is this man right here. He is the leader of the raid group Devil Hunters, Randolph Briggsiel-nim!”

Kim Yong-woo reached out to me as he spoke.

“He was one of the 12 members who cleared the 1st clear and had the most achievements. The story of him fighting 2 orcs alone is famous throughout the guild! That is enough for him to qualify as a special judge.”

“Wait a minute, Guild Master. Shouldn't we receive advance notice if there is going to be a special judge?”

The faces of the judges changed dramatically.

It was evidence of their recent influence in the guild. And it would continue to have an impact afterwards. The new members would remember and inevitably follow one of the judges.

Now a new person was going to sit in that position? In addition, he was the leader of the raid group Devil Hunters? It was ridiculous.

Moreover, the dormant Devil Hunters had been directly mentioned by the guild master. It was a formal announcement that he was resurrecting it.

The captain who was thought dead had returned but...they hadn't thought it was possible due to the current situation of the guild. It didn't matter how strong the captain was.

The guild master was already wounded. It would be different a month ago but now he was a stranded boat.

However, Kim Yong-woo just laughed. And he restored the atmosphere.

In other words, Devil Hunters was Kim Yong-woo's last card. After a few months, he would have been deprived of his guild master seat at the general assembly. Until now he hadn't resisted.

"This matter was just decided today. And wouldn't an objective assessment proceed better with six people instead of five?"

The faces of the judges cracked.

"Are you saying that we are unable to evaluate properly, Guild Master?"

"You are good. But isn't the captain of Devil Hunters influential?"

He has sufficient qualifications.”

“That is just a story.....”

The judges’ expressions were filled with ridicule.

I had participated in the raid to clear the 1st floor. Now people had showed up with one or two rare skills so it was nonsense to judge people based on the past.

The captain and members of Devil Hunters would be free from the guild’s influence. This wouldn’t benefit the guild.

Actually, a lot of people thought that Devil Hunters was favoured due to the captain have a rare grade skill.

Kim Yong-woo sneaked a glance at me.

I nodded and he gave a dark smile.

“The judges who didn’t participate in the raid of the 1st floor might not understand. Okay. Then let’s do this. First all of, Randolph will have the right to be a special judge. Then I will arrange a place to check the qualifications.”

“A place?”

Many members were dead set against Devil Hunters.

The majority of guild members had a backlash against the name. It was worth a listen.

“A tournament? A raid group composed of 8 people with spar with each other. That place will be used to determine whether Devil Hunters disappears or not. In contrast, if they win then Devil Hunters will be a raid group given preferential treatment. This will also solve the ranking issue dividing the group. So what do you think?”

A potentially great work!

This was Kim Yong-woo's plan. The guild was divided so this was an attempt to manage it.

I noticed Kim Yong-woo's intentions.

The introduction of rankings?

His head seemed to work quite well. If I won then the power would tilt towards Kim Yong-woo. This was a golden chance to solidify his position.

The current balance between the factions would have no choice but to fall. It was based on an intuitive measure of my strength.

A gamble based on my victory.

‘It isn’t even a gamble.’

I shrugged.

It would be enough if the tournament was a solo exhibition. It was organized for 8 people but they would just be background noise.

Kim Yong-woo calculated that I could defeat 8 people. He was convinced but he underestimated me.

‘I will put together a temporary crew here.’

And by participating as a judge, I could gather the remaining members.

I would pull in some new hires of the guild. If I added Lee Ji-hye, Yoo Eun-hye and Krasla, there were 4 people. But Krasla was in a different class. I didn’t need to add more people after Krasla.

I nodded my head.

But it was good that he thought of such a thing in a short amount of time.

‘It would be good if Kim Yong-woo was a little more intimidating but.....’

In fact, Kim Yong-woo lacked social skills. It was the reason why his side became like this.

It was a funny thing but I was also to blame.

“Will you make a formal announcement?”

One of the judges asked and Kim Yong-woo replied positively.

“Of course. The details will be determined in an emergency meeting tomorrow. I’ll just tell you in advance. Of course, this story might not matter to some people.”

Each of the five judges were influential. If they agreed then the entire guild would.

“Okay. I accept.”

“There are no objections.”

All five judges accepted the offer.

Then Kim Yong-woo formally introduced me again.

“The special judge, captain of Devil Hunters Randolph Briggsiel-nim. Now, let’s welcome him with applause!”

Clap clap clap!

Kim Yong-woo clapped first and the judges reluctantly followed. The prospective recruits had watched dumbly but they sensed the atmosphere and clapped.

“I am Randolph Briggsiel. Thank you.”

My first words were very heavy.

Number 363. A man with a title about cursing.

I sat in a chair and used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Kim Chun-won
Occupation: Hero (Bard)
Title: * Foul Mouthed Person (R, Magic Power +4)

Stats

Strength: 24

Intelligence: 33

Agility: 35

Stamina: 36

Magic Power: 38 (+4)

Potential: (166/325)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Loud Singing (N), Low Morale (Ex N)

“Is the Low Morale skill related to cursing?”

Number 363, Kim Chun-won nodded with surprise.

“Yes? Ah, yes. That’s correct. This is a skill. I never intended to swear……”

“And what is the Loud Singing skill?”

“Song……”

It seemed to be related to the bard occupation.

“Try it out for me.”

I was the only one who paid attention to him. The other judges already had no expectations for Kim Chun-won.

Kim Chun-won sensed that the atmosphere was good and his confidence increased.

“Hmm hmm! Seoul under the sky ~ the sky! My dream came closer, kek, da!”

The outcome was determined the moment I heard his voice. The voice was so loud that some people even blocked their ears.

The five judges sighed or rubbed their foreheads. Nothing could be seen from my facial expressions.

Scoring began and I made an assessment of Kim Chun-won. An assessment of skills, skill utilization, reliability, stats and confidence!

I gave satisfactory points in all areas. It was a ridiculous and wildly subjective scorecard.

If it wasn't for me then Number 363 might have failed. But I didn't mind.

Rather, that's what I hoped for. I would only give good points to those about to fail. If they passed due to my scores then they would follow me.

Anyway, the number 8 was just a pretext. I only needed rough members. Frankly, just having Krasla was enough. There was no need to bother with anyone else.

‘This has its own fun.’

Scoring human beings.

I thought it was quite an interesting entertainment.

I continued to give extremely subjective scores.

*

A piece of paper posted on the bulletin board on the 1st floor of Heaven's Will.

Despite how busy they were, the words were enough to capture the attention of all guild members.

It was the flyer associated with the competition.

Tournament name, Heaven's Will!

A meeting that would take place in exactly one month in order to determine the fate of members of Heaven's Will.

The qualifications and number of participants, preferences given to the winners and the introduction of rankings were all written on that sheet.

It was planned after an impromptu meeting but it flowed smoothly. Everyone who attended the audition already knew about it from Kim Yong-woo's words. It was passed down through the five judges.

It was no wonder that the plan passed.

The people in the guild wanted to show off their skills. The dungeon was unable to fill this thirst.

This was an opportunity to them.

Those who believed their skills were undervalued, new guild members or those who wanted to raise their position in the guild.

Furthermore, the eyesore that was the Devil Hunters would participate.

Approximately one week passed.

The tournament of the Heaven's Will guild was a hot story.

There was an instant reaction to the post.

“8 people? Then we have the strongest group. All the existing members.”

“This time, there are 2 new hires with terrible skills. This is not a game.”

“Leader Kim Tae-hwan, will you participate? Didn't we follow you through the hell training?”

And none of them expected Devil Hunters to succeed.

Krasla might have defeated 3 members at the entrance but apart from him and Randolph, the remaining 6 were trash.

They wouldn't be able to do anything against the Awakened with rare grade skills.

Those 6 trash weren't even calculated in the first place.

It was unthinkable that they couldn't defeat such a configuration.

Chapter 41-42: Group Training

Exactly one week after the audition.

The day after the results were announced, I ordered Devil Hunters to convene.

‘There is a wide assortment in the group.’

I looked at Krasla and the six people gathered in front of the guild house early in the morning and nodded.

Four of them were new. They were new hires who passed the recruitment.

There was a reason I gathered them so quickly after the successful candidates were announced. It was possible due to the work I did in advance.

All four of the Awakened were on the verge of failing until I gave them high scores. It was natural for them to follow me into Devil Hunters. Although it was only temporary.

This wasn't a bad thing for them either.

“Captain-nim. Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye...ah, no, what should I call you?”

One of the four temporary members said. He was Kim Chun-won.

A bard with a title regarding cursing.

Now he was in his mid-twenties but his mouth couldn't stop cursing.

“Come.”

But I didn't answer and shook my head.

Along with Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye, I had the required tournament criteria of 8 people.

I would win the championship with an assortment of people.

Furthermore, the tournament had a significant scale according to Kim Yong-woo. It was the introduction of the first ever rankings and each Awakened had a chance to earn some merits.

If so, I needed to be on top. It would be easier to obtain good Awakened if I was known as the strongest in South Korea.

Victory was quite important but I couldn't reveal everything. There needed to be an emphasis on human capabilities. I needed to obtain the title of the strongest but I couldn't move in a manner impossible for humans.

“Captain-nim!”

As expected, it took less than 3 minutes for two women to talk to him.

Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye.

At the same time, the four new member swallowed their saliva. Yoo Eun-hye had a youthful cuteness while Lee Ji-hye was an intellectual beauty.

It was no wonder why the men gazed at the rare beauties.

Yoo Eun-hye ran over and lightly hugged me with tears in her eyes.

Jjirak! Jjirak!

I could feel electric currents. Yoo Eun-hye’s passive was triggered.

Now it didn’t even tickle me. I had the Lightning God Technique. Although Lightning God was sleeping, the power was still dwelling inside my body.

Yoo Eun-hye’s passive output wasn’t higher than the power in my blood.

“I knew you were alive!”

Yoo Eun-hye wiped her eyes on my suit.

I had gone back and forth to the dungeon with Yoo Eun-hye many times. Maybe it was because I wasn't affected by her passive but she carelessly revealed her emotions.

“Welcome back.”

Lee Ji-hye also made a welcome expression. It seemed like she hadn't slept as her makeup hid dark circles.

“How have you been doing?”

“Well.”

“First let's move to a different place.”

The eight people needed to gather power.

I forcibly removed Yoo Eun-hye and led them to a pre-reserved cafe.

*

A luxurious cafe located on the 2nd floor of a building.

There was a large table in the centre where eight people were sitting. On the table were cups of coffee or drinks and homemade cakes.

He had reserved it for the whole day so including the owner of the cafe, there were only nine people present.

Except for the owner, the other people were the members of Devil Hunters.

“Ya, as expected of Captain-nim! You are really different!”

Kim Chun-won quivered and made a fuss.

In contrast, Yoo Eun-hye, Lee Ji-hye and Krasla’s reactions were calm. It was only renting the cafe.

After the turmoil subsided, I said coldly.

“I think there will be many questions. But first, you guys have joined due to the ranking competition. And of course, I don’t expect a lot from you.”

Yoo Eun-hye had been trained by entering the dungeon but this time there were four new members. They were tools to fill the insufficient numbers.....

What could I expect from those that would be used once and then thrown away?

Of course, their potential was higher than average or they had special skills or titles. If the Devil Hunters were needed for an emergency raid then they would join. They could also fill in the numbers for regular raids.

After watching for a bit, I would decide based on the result whether to temporarily include them or not. Even after the competition was over, there would be a variety of people I could use for temporary work.

The excellent ones could be formally adopted as members but I honestly had no great expectations.

One of the new hires frowned like he was chewing shit.

“Captain-nim. Aren’t your words too severe?”

“You will regret it. We each have our own rhythm as Awakened.”

Complaints poured out from the new hires.

Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye knew my skills to some extent so they kept their mouths shut.

“You would have already been dropped if it wasn’t for me.”

“.....”

The new hires stared dumbly.

I talked with a cold smile.

“However, you can’t just participate using the name of Devil Hunters. You should have basic skills. Starting from tomorrow, I will train you for 3 weeks. This is a confirmed issue and can’t be avoided.”

The inside of the cafe was quiet.

“It won’t be that.”

I sipped an Americano while enjoying the aroma.

They had decided to participate but there was no hurry.

It was enough if only Krasla and I participated. Both of our skills would be acknowledged but the entire group Devil Hunters needed to be recognized. It was necessary to make sure the rest of the members were moderately trained.

I put down my cup.

Then Lee Ji-hye who had been looking at me asked.

“Captain-nim. Can you roughly describe the ranking competition?”

It wasn't a big deal if I told them so I opened up.

“The ranking competition itself is simple. Eight people in a raid group are gathered to fight the opponent. Depending on the results, we will be given a ranking. But this ranking competition isn't just limited to Heaven's Will. Famous guilds will be participated so this will have an influence on the future rating of the Awakened in South Korea.”

Gulp!

The expressions of the new recruits changed. It was the first time they heard about the ranking competition involving other famous guilds.

“...We will unconditionally win.”

Lee Ji-hye determined the contents of my words and said with a sigh.

“By the way, who is the person next to Captain-nim?”

Yoo Eun-hye who had been watching quietly asked about Krasla.

They wondered about the man with black skin.

“Krasla will train you. His primary weapon is a spear but he can use other battle techniques.”

“It is good to meet you. I am Krasla.”

Krasla spoke for the first time.

The eyes of the members widened. It was surprising to hear Korean spoken in that voice. Dark elves often had a beautiful voice and Krasla did as well.

“Wah! You have an amazing voice!”

Yoo Eun-hye spoke her honest opinion.

“Are you sure of his skills? He seems to be lacking spirit!”

But voice didn't have anything to do with capabilities.

Kim Chun-won shrugged.

Krasla seemed quite thin. This was also the nature of the dark elves. Even if they exercised, they wouldn't gain muscles. Krasla didn't budge. He continued sitting silently like a stone statue.

I just laughed.

“You will see tomorrow.”

He wouldn't be able to say such words after a day.

One million copies of Kim Chun-won couldn't even compare to one Krasla.

I had time to relax after that statement. The atmosphere quickly became harmonious with occasional laughter.

But my ears could already hear their screams.

*

A pension in Ganwong-do, Chuncheon.

Behind the blue mountains and rippling river existed a well-appointed open air training ground for Devil Hunters.

Everyone cried out ‘Wow!’ from the clean air and vast nature as they slept overnight. But that good time passed quickly.

The moment they changed into comfortable clothes, their hell began.

Krasla greeted the new members while holding a red spear!

He said with no expression.

“Bring out your weapons.”

“What did you say?”

Kim Chun-won was a bard but he had a dagger at his waist and the other members also brought out their weapons.

“First I will see your skills. And any person that manages to hurt me will be excluded from training in the future!”

“You! What a ridiculous guy.”

Kim Chun-won licked his dagger with his tongue. He was feigning an evil impression. The action was meant to intimidate.

Of course, Krasla was still expressionless.

“Don’t get excited. As Captain-nim pointed out, your capabilities are insignificant. First of all, I’ll check the magic.....”

Lee Ji-hye calmly analyzed the situation. Then all of a sudden, Kim Chun-won took off his jacket and rushed forward with madness in his eyes.

“You cocky bastard! I will kill you, you fucker!”

He sliced all around the upper body!

Kim Chun-won used the momentum.

His first performance of licking the dagger seemed to have failed. But he couldn't see the body anymore. He hadn't expected it after rushing with the dagger.

However, he didn't know about Krasla's strength.

Ppak!

“Keheok!”

Kim Chun-won spun 360 degrees and fell to the floor. Krasla had struck him hard in the legs.

“Don't get excited.....”

Lee Ji-hye sighed.

Krasla moved fiercely like a hurricane.

“Get ready everyone! Water Sphere!”

Chwahak!

Her occupation was a water magician.

Water flew from Lee Ji-hye’s staff and smashed into Krasla.

The remaining three members attacked with their weapons but it was already one step too late.

Ppak! Ppak! Ppak!

The sound of popping occurred three times until only Krasla and Lee Ji-hye were standing.

It happened in the blink of an eye! An overwhelmingly ridiculous situation.

Lee Ji-hye had a bemused expression before she laughed and lay down her staff.

“I surrender.”

At the same time, there was one person missing.

‘She is needed. Where has she gone?’

The captain had gone somewhere separately with Yoo Eun-hye. At this moment, Lee Ji-hye felt envious.

Then Krasla looked at Lee Ji-hye and clicked his tongue.

“You can’t do that!”

*

At the same time.

I was at the foot of a valley with Yoo Eun-hye.

“The water is clear. Captain-nim, take a look at this.”

Yoo Eun-hye enthusiastically watched the water bubbling in the water.

She would receive training with the members but something needed to be done first.

Right now she couldn’t control the passive skill ‘Electric Current (N)’. I wondered if it was possible with the Lightning God Technique.

Additionally, the valley was very rich in lightning attribute.

Usually more than 3 sides of the valley were blocked so there were many cases of the energy emitted from a lightning storm being trapped. There was a high probability that I could find the answer here.

The residual lightning energy in the valley would have a synergy effect.

“Yoo Eun-hye. We didn’t come here to play.”

“Hik! I understand! But why did you only take me?”

Yoo Eun-hye smiled and playfully asked.

There were multiple occasions of hunting in the dungeon but there was no sign of that this time.

I spoke like it wasn’t a big deal.

“From now on, you will see your passive skill Electric Current.”

“I have a passive skill?”

Yoo Eun-hye asked with confusion.

There was nothing to hide so I spoke the truth.

“Recently I mastered a lightning skill. I should be able to match the wavelength of that skill with Electric Current. If it works then the trigger of your passive will disappear.”

“Really? So now you are a lightning skill user! Ah, it is like that. What are you going to do Captain-nim? Will you hold my wrist like in martial arts novels? No. Then there would be no need for you to take me to a place like this.”

Yoo Eun-hye spat out words quickly.

I stared at Yoo Eun-hye’s face.

“First of all, take it off.”

“Oh, so I need to take it off. Take off.....”

Yoo Eun-hye suddenly retreated with surprise. She hid her breasts with both hands and glared at me.

“I’m disappointed, you’ve been so bad Captain-nim!”

“I don’t know what you are talking about. I’m not interested in your body.”

In fact, it was as I said.

Yoo Eun-hye was a beautiful human but she was incomparable to Chrisley. It was the same for her body as well. Chrisley had a superior body.

Of course, the standards of beauty was different. She had her own charm but I didn't feel the need to touch her. Let alone the difference in colour. If I wanted something then I could get it anywhere.

Yoo Eun-hye made a perplexed expression.

“Then why do you want me to take it off?”

“I need to take a close look at how Electric Current flows outside your body. That way I can distinguish the wavelength. Outside and inside, both sides are needed.”

“Is that why we entered the valley?”

“This area is rich in lightning magic power. It is a place where Electric Current can be maximized. Will you take it off now?”

“I understand. But do I have to take off my underwear?”

“Underwear can stay. I only need to look at the flow of Electric Current.”

There was no need to see the whole thing. Exposing two thirds of her body would be enough to examine the wavelength direction.

Yoo Eun-hye asked doubtfully. She put down the hands covering her breasts.

“Aish! You really surprised me when you told me to take it off.”

“You don’t have to worry that I will feel lust towards your body.”

“Heol...then isn’t Captain-nim blind?”

“That answer is a joke.”

‘It isn’t a joke.....’ Yoo Eun-hye mumbled. It felt like a toothpick had been mercilessly stabbed into my lungs. But she didn’t do anything. A team member couldn’t question the captain of the raid group!

Yoo Eun-hye glanced at me a few more times before closing her eyes. And she slowly raised her sweatshirt from the bottom.

Soon her smooth skin was revealed. I could glimpse her ribs and Barbie like breasts.

She was wearing white underwear and Yoo Eun-hye proudly placed her hands on her hips.

“Hmm hmm. Are you enjoying the sight?”

“It is a pity about your breasts.”

“...I’ve very sorry! Sorry that my breasts are small! I am still growing! Soon you will be begging to see it!”

Yoo Eun-hye sat down and pretended to cry.

I pushed Yoo Eun-hye.

Plop!

“Fu! Fu! W-what are you doing?”

Yoo Eun-hye who fell into the water strongly protested but I didn’t pay attention.

“Shut up. I will examine your body.”

“Huh? Huk!”

Kwajijijik!

A strong current was flowing through the valley!

The electric current flowing in Yoo Eun-hye's body and the residual energy in the valley combined to show a wide effect.

“W-what? What is this?”

Yoo Eun-hye's body shook as she asked with confusion.

“Just sit still.”

“Don't come! Ah, no, Captain-nim! This isn't a joke! No matter what Captain-nim.....”

I had the Lightning God Technique so I stepped into the river in the valley. And there was no effect as I walked up to Yoo Eun-hye.

Yoo Eun-hye stared at me blankly.

I said flatly

“Didn’t I say it? I have a lightning skill.”

“I-is that right? Great, Captain-nim.....”

“From now on, I will work on matching the wavelengths. Close your eyes and concentrate on the skill.”

“Loyalty. I will do as you say.”

Yoo Eun-hye instantly relaxed.

I placed my hand on Yoo Eun-hye’s breast.

“Huk!”

“Quiet.”

Yoo Eun-hye bit her lips.

I moved the power stored from Lightning God Technique into Yoo Eun-hye’s body.

It would be easier if Lightning God was awake but right now it was sleeping due to eating all the magic power. I had to do the task

by hand.

‘It isn’t as hard as I thought.’

Was it because of the Electric Current skill? I could clearly see the direction of Electric Current inside Yoo Eun-hye’s body.

I followed the direction of Electric Current. It was moving randomly rather than in a cycle.

The passive skill couldn’t be controlled but of the direction it was flowing in. It was possible to adjust and correct it to a certain extent.

“Imagine a faucet. The amount of water released would be adjusted according to each twist so you can control the skill. From now on, remember what I am telling you and how it feels.”

Yoo Eun-hye needed to feel how Electric Current moved.

The method of controlling Electric Current was given to her.

Even the slightest knowledge would cause a wide difference. It was up to Yoo Eun-hye whether she accomplished it or not.

‘The skill rating might rise.’

Yoo Eun-hye had received the protection of a lightning spirit.

It wasn't impossible to change or raise the rating of the skill.

I inwardly spurred on the task.

*

“Looking at the shoulders before attacking. This is correct. The shoulders will move shortly before the weapon is wielded. But looking in the eyes of the opponent is more certain. If you can perceive the subtle differences then victory is yours.”

“There is clearly a transition point where the opponent will switch between defending and attacking. Identify it. It will be easier to hit.”

“Linkage. You just need to the right link. If you pull them one by one then you will be able to face a strong opponent.”

Krasla lectured the people.

The members were gathered together while Krasla diagnosed the way they used the weapons.

“You have short hands. A thick sword like a bastard sword would be suitable.”

“You lack flexibility in your wrist. This is a fatal weakness for an archer. Shouldn’t you use a crossbow instead?”

“...Why is a bard holding a dagger? Self-defense? I’d rather you hold a harp. That would be better.”

His knowledge was beyond that of Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye.

The next day, a blacksmith arrived to get the dimensions of the body and custom weapons were produced. The weapons arrived exactly three days later and Krasla’s ruthless sparring was established.

“Attack all together. You should move according to your particular level. But the conditions are the same. Anybody that manages to hurt me will be excluded from any training!”

They couldn’t say no.

Every day was a series of hell training where they couldn’t do anything. In addition, there was no possibility of their levels lowering.

Everyone had fire burning in their eyes as they held their weapons.

Bam! Peok!

But there was still a large slamming sound.

Everyone was sick and tired as they stretched out on the floor while Krasla lectured them.

“It was good that you read me. However, you responded too fast! This will give the enemy time to judge you.”

“Kim Chun-won. There is no answer. A total impasse. I might recommend to Master a quick suicide.”

“A magician has to believe their colleagues! They will act as proper shields so you should freely use your magic. You should trust in them a bit more.”

The training continued the next day, the next day and the next day.

Eventually the new members were affected by the heat.

“It’s a scam! Our levels can’t match you!”

“We are just punching bags! He just wants to break us!”

“Hehe. Hehehe!”

Kim Chun-won was half insane. Kim Chun-won’s spirit was

becoming increasingly strange as Krasla defeated him. He had been conceited but now he encountered someone much stronger than him.

Of course, that wasn't just confined to Kim Chun-won. They were learning how to deal with a very strong opponent.

Naturally it was hard.

Once Krasla pushed them in the lessons, it was then the turn of Captain Randolph Briggsiel.

“It is electric massage time.”

The complexion of the members turned pale. The training was hard but not enough to make them want to die.

But the electric massage was different. It was so terrifying that they really feared death! Just thinking about it made them want to die!

The electric massage could be called a hell massage. Kim Chun-won had the bad luck to be the first target.

“Just relax.”

The most terrible words came from the mouth of the commander.

Relax by going to the afterlife?

Kim Chun-won felt an instinctive fear and turned to run but Krasla appeared out of nowhere and grabbed him. Kim Chun-won grudgingly had to give up.

In fact, the electric massage itself wasn't a big deal. It felt like power was inserted into the body to relieve the muscles.

But the problem was the pain before that started.

“Grrrrrrr!”

Kim Chun-won bit his lip and didn't make a sound.

The captain finally let go.

“It is strange since it took longer than usual.”

But that ended instantly.

“Next.”

There was no one who would volunteer. They were too busy looking at each other.

Kim Chun-won thought bleakly about their future.

They were like new, laboratory mice caught in a cage. A hole to escape out of didn't exist.

However, there was one exception. One person had no worries.

It was Yoo Eun-hye.

“Ah, cool!”

Only she was free from the harmful electric massage. It was due to her lightning skill.

Eyes followed her with envy and jealousy.

Yoo Eun-hye just laughed awkwardly at them.

Thus the short and long 3 weeks passed by quickly.

*

Today was the last day of training.

There was an excited mood. They were finally free from the hell training so there was a bright smile on their faces.

And I finally had the time to check the system.

I opened up Mind’s Eye to look at the status window.

I first looked at Yoo Eun-hye.

Name: Yoo Eun-hye

Occupation: Hero (Lightning Magician)

Title: * Dozen Lightning Strikes (R, Magic +4)

Stats

Strength: 28

Intelligence: 56

Agility: 26

Stamina: 25

Magic Power: 55 (+4)

Potential: (190+4/423)

Uniqueness: Has received the protection of the spirit of lightning. A state received after being hit by lightning and standing on the door between life and death.

Skill: Lightning Bolt (Ex N), Electric Current (R, Passive)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 20 Intelligence 44 Agility 15 Stamina 14 Magic 49
Potential (138 (+4/423)

Strength 28 Intelligence 56 Agility 26 Stamina 25 Magic 59
Potential (190 (+4)/ 423)

Only a few months. There was a remarkable growth compared to the first status window I saw.

Furthermore, the rating of Electric Current and Lightning Bolt had risen. Especially in the case of the passive with the power efficiency was strengthened.

I turned my head and checked Lee Ji-hye this time.

She also showed significant growth.

Name: Lee Ji-hye
Occupation: Hero (Water Magician) Title: None

Stats

Strength: 24

Intelligence: 44

Agility: 23

Stamina: 29

Magic Power: 48

Potential: (168+277)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Water Sphere (N)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 22 Intelligence 41 Agility 18 Stamina 26 Magic 35
Potential (142/277)

Strength 24 Intelligence 44 Agility 23 Stamina 29 Magic 48
Potential (168/277)

It was fairly steep compared to when I first met her in the dungeon. It was good growth considering her low potential.

In addition, the four new members showed a satisfactory growth for only 3 weeks. Their physical abilities had increased from 3~8.

But it wasn't simply their stats that had risen. They learned the basic foundation behind using their weapons. They were absolutely different from before.

All of them looked confident.

They might have wept for 3 weeks but there was no comparison for before.

‘I think they are ready.’

Ranking competition, Heaven's Will!

Finally my group was perfectly equipped.

‘These guys should be properly listed on the roster.’

I would eat those people from Heaven's Will.

Devil Hunters would bite those fellows.

Of course, I hadn't forgotten.

The names on the list that Kim Yong-woo gave me.

I would sweep them up in the ranking competition.....

I faintly smiled.

Taking care of it with my own hands?

I looked forward to the ranking competition in a few days.

Chapter 43-44: Ranking Competition

Ranking competition!

It was only a few days until the competition that would divide the Awakened into ranks.

Kim Yong-woo leaked the information to all the other guilds and used a banner on the homepage of the Awakened cafe to attract attention.

It was a rare opportunity to see the Awakened fight. The other guilds could also confirm the strength of Heaven's Will.

Kim Yong-woo generously used his money.

The ranking competition was held at the transformed Seoul World Cup Stadium. He rented an enormous lobby.

The admission was free. Famous celebrities were also invited.

Anything else? Information about the teams participating in the ranking competition were also promoted.

There was no need to say that Kim Yong-woo's account balance decreased significantly. However, Kim Yong-woo didn't scrimp on the costs. It was a cheap investment if it would preserve his position as guild master.

The reaction was hot.

News about it hit the individual stations and newspapers and the reporters were all talking about it.

In particular, the large cable tv channels were spreading the news about the Awakened. It was possible to raise a large amount of profits from the ranking tournament.

At this point, the famous guilds that were watching started feeling itchy. The name of Heaven's Will would rise significantly among the public.

“Do you want to participate in the ranking competition? Yes. Each guild can have one raid group participate. Specifically proceed. Come up with the most powerful configuration for the raid group.”

Kim Yong-woo didn't mind.

Kim Yong-woo was hoping to get more attention from the audience.

Thus, he was determined to involve all 5 guilds.

Even though each guild could only have one raid group, that was enough to cause a huge stir.

Determining who was stronger among the Awakened was a subject of constant attention in the public. In addition, there was an intense rivalry among the 5 guilds. No one could predict the results if the strongest teams from the 5 guilds participated.

The expectations of the public and the Awakened rose to an unprecedented level.

The strongest would win the tournament. That perception was embedded in everyone's mind.

People came from all over the country to watch the competition. The interested foreigners and Awakened from overseas also got on the planes.

“Wealth has come to Korea!”

Kim Yong-woo had a dark smile on his face.

*

Bambabam~

The huge sound of trumpets.

An orchestra wearing white were lined up and playing wind instruments.

A magnificent performance that contributed to an inspiring atmosphere.

After it finished, cheerleaders entered the centre of the stadium.

Their uniform was a short skirt and top that exposed their navel. The shiny red and blue dressed females danced wildly and sensually.

“Hwiik!”

The mouths of the men naturally rose.

The Seoul World Cup Stadium that could house 64,000 people currently had 40,000. And that number was still steadily rising.

The cheerleaders finished and then it was the turn of the invited singers.

“Mori! Mori!”

A famous idol group had been invited, Mori!

This 5 member group had outstanding skills and was currently a hot topic in South Korea. An outstanding sight.

The atmosphere was further heightened.

After Mori was sent off, members from Heaven's Will including Kim Yong-woo appeared.

Exactly one hundred and sixty eight people! They were the members of Heaven's Will participating in the competition.

In particular, Kim Yong-woo was here to speak some words as the host of the competition. Kim Yong-woo grabbed the microphone and said with a smile.

“Ladies and gentlemen, welcome to the first ranking competition. Welcome. I am the leader of the Heaven's Will guild, Kim Yong-woo.”

After the formal greetings, Kim Yong-woo turned his head.

“These are the proud faces of the people from Heaven's Will who will participate in the ranking competition. There were 21 raid groups in this place but I've also issued a special invitation to 4 other raid groups. The rankings for these 25 raid groups will soon be decided. An exciting feast that will make your heart pound! Who will win?”

Tension filled the faces of all the participants.

It was the same for the visitors.

Kim Yong-woo laughed.

“Then I hope you enjoy the three day festival and I will end the boring speech here. Thank you!”

“Waaaaahhhhh!”

The deafening shouts!

The ranking competition had now started.

*

Preliminaries.

It would choose what raid group would advance to the main round.

Half of the 21 Heaven’s Will raid groups were scheduled to fall in the preliminaries.

The 4 special raid groups were invited so they would advance to the main round.

It was naturally for the participants’ eyes to filled with fire.

“Captain-nim. Our first opponent is called Black Panther?”

Kim Chun-won said while they were in the waiting room.

Lee Ji-hye replied.

“That is the name of the raid group. All 8 people in it helped establish the Heaven’s Will guild. They are equipped with several good equipment and have considerable skills...it won’t be easy to fight them from the beginning.”

“Are you afraid of being hurt?”

I asked and Lee Ji-hye shook her head.

“It’s not like that. Isn’t there a shield that blocks a certain amount of shock? There are also sleeping potions in the warehouse. I’m just a little worried that we are meeting a strong group like Black Panther at the beginning.”

Participants in the competition would carry real swords and weapons. There were some safety measures. The right to hold some shield items.

Enchanters had worked with blacksmiths to create a shock absorber.

The shield would last throughout the battle until it broke. If the

shield broke in the struggle then that member would be left out of the team.

There were also numerous sleeping potions prepared in the warehouse. A number of potions found from the dungeon would be committed to the ranking competition.

The physical burden was significantly less but Lee Ji-hye was still worried.

They needed to win against a strong raid group. It felt like someone was influencing the bracket.

“There’s no need to worry. You guys don’t need to do anything.”

It was true that they trained for 3 weeks but they were still at a human standard. Their weapon handling, technique and skills couldn’t be compared to the opponent.

A wall mounted TV in the waiting room relayed videos of the tournament.

The first preliminary was the ‘Akbari’ raid group against the ‘Misteik’ group.

Akbari was the raid group where Kim Tae-hwan was the leader.

In the list that Kim Yong-woo handed over, Kim Tae-hwan’s

name was on the side of the Devil Hunters. His words in the elevator really was advice.

“What? Is this imitating the special forces?”

Kim Chun-won muttered in a small voice. The members of Akbari had ink marks on their faces and were wearing orange shirts.

The shirt had ‘Victory’ written on it in traditional characters. Victory...it wasn’t guaranteed.

At the same time, the whistle was blown to announce the start of the ranking competition.

“Doesn’t the Akbari team have a lot of warriors? In contrast, the Misteik team has their close and long ranged attackers appropriately placed.”

Yoo Eun-hye said from next to me.

Looking at it simply, Akbari seemed to be at a disadvantage.

They only had warriors so they couldn’t cover the gap. Defense was limited. In addition, the guarder on the enemy team could prevent the attacks while long ranged attacks were used.

Then the voice of a broadcaster came from the speakers attached

to the TV.

-Unbelievable! The powerful assault of the Akbari raid group. Hasn't the guarder raised his shield? It will enter into a melee!

-Foolish. Look here. Haven't there already been some people with broken shields?

-Kim Yoo-won, it is impossible for him to continue! Ah, that must hurt. Even so, Akbari isn't stopping their assault!

-The best. Misteik has fallen into chaos. But isn't a black light coming from Kim Tae-hwan? What is that skill?

-Magic Power Cohesion. A skill that raises the cutting force of the sword. Ahh! Misteik's guarder is unable to block it and was pushed back!

-In the end, it turned into a melee. Huh...a great breakthrough power.

-Misteik's long distance members are sticking to the same skills! Keep their eyes open or a mistake will occur!

-It seems to be almost over. It is obvious they would be hurt after failing to block the opponent's hit. This ranking competition, they are still lacking but it is rather interesting. Let's continue.

There was an overwhelming response after Akbari was decided as the winners.

It reminded the audience of gladiators fighting in a coliseum so there was a hot response.

“...I’ve done some research on Black Panther in advance. Do you want to know about their formation and operation?”

Lee Ji-hye suggested after realizing the importance of tactics.

It wasn’t simply gathering 8 people together but also involved psychological warfare.

But I said firmly.

“There is no need.”

“Huh?”

“Krasla and I are good enough.”

“Captain-nim. The stories about the Black Panther raid...”

“I hate to say it twice.”

“...I understand.”

Lee Ji-hye nodded. She knew that I wasn't helpless. It also wasn't strange if she thought Krasla was stronger than me.

However, this time was different.

It was very desirable.

People were trying to contain the Devil Hunters raid group. The ones who wrote the bracket...maybe Kim Yong-woo didn't even get a chance to touch the bracket list.

Lee Ji-hye wanted to smash Black Panther in order to change the impression of them.

“Devil Hunters raid group! Devil Hunters, come with me please! Your preliminaries will begin in 5 minutes!”

A yellow dressed helper opened the door of the lobby and yelled.

Our turn had come.

Tension filled the eyes of all the members except for Krasla.

I took the lead.

“Let's go.”

My mouth was in a smirk.

An overwhelming force.....

I would make sure to use this opportunity to clearly show it.

Spacious ground.

There was a line between the 16 people.

However, there were differences in their formations.

Black Panther had 4 people in the front and 4 people behind while Devil Hunters had 2 people in front with 6 people in the rear.

In particular, the members of Devil Hunters were all wearing skull masks. But they didn't give off an intimidating presence so the opponents and spectators were puzzled.

-What do you think? They aren't guarders.

Of course, I was in the front lines along with Krasla. And the reason we stood in front.....

Biiiiik!

Kung!

It was to bridge the gap between the opponents. I wouldn't even give them time to breathe.

The moment the whistle sounded, I pushed off strongly against the ground. Dust rose as I arrived in front of the opponent.

“Eh? Eh.....”

Kwajik!

There was no need for swords.

I advanced too fast. My fist hit the other person in the abdomen.

Chaeeng!

The shock absorption shield broke. The necklace that the shield was attached to broke.

A single clash.

Neither defense or offense. Just a one-sided strike.

“Uweeek!”

The opponent coughed out blood before collapsing.

But that wasn't all. I used the residual power of Lightning God Technique the moment I made a fist.

This meant.....

The lightning power would gnaw at the blood vessels and cells and would slowly kill the person.

Of course, the future of the humans had already been somewhat decided.

The Black Panther raid group was one of those slandering the Devil Hunters. It couldn't end simply with one blow. I needed to pop that attitude of theirs. I would finish them off before they could even start.

“Kkack!”

Krasla thrust his spear at the opponent's body. He had spun it round and round before striking. The shield was destroyed and the body received considerable damage.

Sheep and wolf?

No.

It was like a tiger, lion and wasps hunting sheep. It was like the scene of thousands of worker bees being massacred.

They were no match for us.

It was like a storm was striking them.

The members of Black Panther collapsed one by one until they were all on the floor.

-What...this.....

The bleachers were quiet.

Even the broadcasters couldn't say anything.

A scene that reminded them of something beyond the 'standards.'

Biiiiik!

The whistle that blew sounded louder than ever.

*

Swept away!

We fought 3 more times and Krasla and I ended it every time. We were the raid group that dealt the most injuries.

After the first day of qualifiers finished, the videos were spread over the internet.

The netizens felt envy as they saw the many attractions and the performance of the idol group Mori. But among these stories, many of them were about the raid group Devil Hunters.

[Devil Hunters raid group? They seem too strong. No other raid group can match them.]

[Aren't they like Barcelona?]

[Heaven's Will isn't weak. We still don't know. The strongest in each guild hasn't come out yet.]

[Only two people in Devil Hunters finished the match. Nothing has been seen from the remaining six.]

The reactions were divided into two types.

But they had to admit that the two members were strong enough to end things.

Public opinion wondered about ways to deal with Devil Hunters. Everyone searched for exclusive methods to defeat the Devil Hunters.

But they realized such methods were useless the next day.

The 2nd day.

It was the main competition.

The skull mask wearing Devil Hunters had risen to the top. Their attitude was more casual than yesterday.

I don't know why they would be worried. In the end, there were only two protagonists on the stage. I had to admit that I made a scene on the first day.....

-Now, the biggest issue that has surfaced is the appearance of the raid group Devil Hunters. Their opponent is the strongest raid group of the Mithril Guild, 'Grizzly.' Weren't there some shocking moves yesterday?

The broadcasters looked at the stage with expectations in their eyes.

Yesterday's preliminaries were only held with the Heaven's Will Guild.

But today, the main competition was different. The strongest raid group from one of the four guilds. In fact, before yesterday it had been expected that Grizzly would be the winner.

Biiiiik!

At the same time, the whistle was blown to announce the start of the match.

But no one moved.

All 8 members of Grizzly were wary of Krasla and I.

I read their intentions in an instant.

‘They intend to wrap around both of us.’

I smiled.

They could try but they wouldn’t be able to catch my ankles.

“Guarder! Strengthen shield!”

“Strengthen Shield!”

Chuck. Chuck.

The 4 guarders started moving in a unit. It would act as both defense and offense and seemed to be a provocation.

“Power of Breath!”

There was even a blessing from a priest?

The formation was extremely defense focused.

It was certainly a strong formation to deal with a powerhouse. They intended to wait until I exhausted myself piercing the defenses.

But this was a different situation from normal.

I pulled out Wrath for the first time in this competition. My strength that reached 86 wasn't something that could be stopped by the guarders and priest.

Kwang!

The shield's surface rippled before exploding in all directions.

-Ah, is that the effect of the item?

-Amazing!

None of them thought the results would be pure power.

They thought it was the effect of Wrath.

Kwang! Kwang!

There were wild screams every time the shield exploded. The guarders stepped back and retreated but were mercilessly struck by Krasla's spear.

The Mithril Guild's strongest raid group, Grizzly.

But the scene wasn't much different from the preliminaries.

This was halfway to the finals. The raid group Devil Hunters hadn't been defeated yet. There were no rivals for the Devil Hunters. The other team would definitely be broken.

It wasn't just the performance of only two people.

Only there were only 4 people left, the rest of the members would handle it. The opposing team was already helpless due to our attacks and couldn't fight back.

It was similar to dealing with leftovers but the members didn't have any complaints. They knew that they could reach this point thanks to me.

The competition had already been decided from the start.

In the end, no surprises happened.

S rank!

The ultimate proof indicated South Korea's strongest raid group...it was the moment the name Devil Hunters became known to the public.

*

After refusing numerous interview requests, I returned to the dungeon.

Devil Hunters were nationally recognized and each of the Awakened had the S rank attached to them. The ultimate title that only belonged to the strongest raid group!

There was no need to raise a fuss. It was to the level that I wanted.

‘Thanks to this, I can accelerate my plan.’

I had originally planned to slowly increase the influence of my raid group. Thanks to Kim Yong-woo and the ranking competition, I could progress much faster.

In my previous life, there wasn't the ranking competition.

There were many Awakened that competed against each other but they weren't divided into ranks.

In the future, the Awakened would co-operate with each other depending on their country. But the ranking competition that Kim Yong-woo developed thanks to my presence had changed the future.

I had only come back here for a little over a year.

The clear image of the Awakened?

I thought it would take 3 years for my plan.

'I don't need to bother with such a troublesome thing.'

My plan had been reduced by 2 years.

If I returned to the guild and trained the members then the time would be dramatically reduced.

But there was no need to do such an annoying thing.

'It is time to prepare a monster wave.'

Monster wave.

A large number of monsters would escape the dungeon to invade the country!

I had been preparing the dungeon.

My original plan was to execute it 2 years later after obtaining the title of the strongest so I had been preparing all year for it.

I arrived at the top floor of the dungeon and lightly touched Yihi's forehead who was dozing against the Dungeon Core.

“Ya! Aish! Who!”

Yihi frowned while waking up and rubbed her eyes a few times.

“It is good.”

“I-I just fell asleep. Yihi has been waiting for Master to return.”

The saliva at her mouth indicated that it was an obvious lie.

I ignored it and asked.

“That’s okay. How many points are left?”

“Um. Wait a minute. After using 100,000 points to purchase the elixir, there is 163,752 points left.”

“It is slightly lacking.”

I had used most of my points buying things from the auction. Of course, my balance was bankrupt but I didn’t regret it.

Yihi was confused.

“Why Master? Did you want to use the points?”

“I want to buy a few Ogres and Twin Head Ogres.

“Uhh, it is incredibly lacking.....”

Yihi tried to calculate it while talking.

The advanced ogre was 40,000 points while the twin head ogres was 250,000 points. I had 160,000 points so 4 ogres was the limit. I couldn’t even dream of obtaining a twin head ogre.

I stroked my chin for a moment before saying.

“Convene the dark elves and dwarves. I need them to do some

work.”

Chapter 45-47: Dungeon Attack Record

The dungeon's 6th floor.

I changed the terrain using Domestic Mode. I've completed the ecology up to the 5th floor but the 6th floor was still empty.

I was hoping to raise some special creatures there.

But changing the terrain itself required points. I used roughly 100,000 points and changed a large chunk of the 6th floor to lava.

Kururung!

The transformation of the dungeon's 6th floor started.

First, the ground split apart. A volcano would intermittently pop up every 30 metres. 5 volcanoes were created in this manner and they started spewing out lava.

The specified lava zone was completed.

Of course, it couldn't end here.

I placed the 3Lv creature 'Pyrock Larva' on the lava field.

The pyrock larva was a creature that cost 1,200 pt. It was

expensive for a palm sized larva but I bought 40 of them. There was no hesitation as I purchased it.

‘They will duplicate once they become adults.’

Once the pyrock larvae grew into an adult, it could live outside.

The red larva would grow to 3 times its size before unraveling and forming an intermediate creature approximately 1 metre in size with the tail of a dragon and the wings of a bat.

But the pyrock weren’t often sold as adults. It was because 99% of the larvae died before becoming adults.

There was a need for very strict management so the dark elves and dwarves were called.

‘I need to find the source of magic power associated with the creature.’

The pyrock was a creature that lived on stones containing fire magic power. The volcano and lava meant the fire magic could be instinctively felt.

I bought the pyrock larvae due to the above reasons.

Yihi looked at me with confusion.

“Master. It is very hard to raise the pyrock larvae. The adults are very strong but Yihi knows that they aren’t easy to raise. Although they are already purchased.”

“I know.”

“Doesn’t the store sell adults? Yihi thinks you should just get an adult pyrock. I saw a very cute one.”

Yihi didn’t believe in my skills. In addition, Yihi was curious about why I was raising them.

I wanted the pyrocks for one specific reason.

‘The dungeon contains 4 altars of different magic properties. I need to find the fire altar.’

This was also information he obtained from his previous life.

If the 4 altars with different properties were found then it was possible to raise more powerful advanced creatures.

I would use the pyrocks to find the altar. It would be good if they found the altar.

I confirmed in my previous life that it gave achievements. And releasing the more advanced creatures would kill more humans and wouldn’t bring me benefits.

But things were different now.

I stood at the peak of the Awakened in South Korea. A monster wave would stir up the Awakened and would shake the country. I stood at the peak but it currently lacked impact. I was free to do a monster wave if I wanted.

There was one obvious effect.

Standing at the peak position...a monster wave was a golden opportunity to become recognized by other Awakened and civilians.

More than anything else.

‘The leaders of this country aren’t taking the situation seriously enough. After identifying the movements of the creatures in the dungeon, there has only been a lukewarm response. I need to break that perception.’

South Korea.

The vast majority of people were hanging on to the security measures. There was the issue of North Korea but they were slow to cope with the dungeon.

There had to be a real threat to make the country move.

It was inevitable that the country's leaders would use the dungeon as a propaganda tool. It was something I saw in my previous life.

‘The Awakened need to be more desperate in order to grow. A competitive environment. And...if I become a symbol then it will be a big boost when hitting other dungeons.’

It was a choice I would make for the future.

In addition, the Awakened would raise awareness by protecting the civilians and they would desperately fight to become stronger for their survival.

Those with a sense of entitlement would use it as a driving force behind their corruption. I would be able to cut off the rotten ones.

There was another reason.

This was an opportunity to debut Chrisley. I intended to make her appear as the Dungeon Master.

The conclusion of my plan!

It would be a while before the creatures could find the altar.

My points were scarce so I couldn't use it at the moment.

“Master?”

Yihi spoke in a puzzled tone.

I began to talk with a relaxed expression.

“Yihi. Are the dark elves and dwarves gathered together?”

“They were gathered a while ago. Do you want Yihi to call them?”

“Yes.”

I nodded and Yihi flapped her wings quickly.

*

“It is great to see Dungeon Master!”

“It is great to see Dungeon Master!”

The dark elves and dwarves.

They kneeled down before me.

Chrisley was included among the dark elves. Moreover, she seemed even more beautiful. She was at a level of the goddess of beauty and even I was forced to admire her.

I didn't easily go crazy with desire over a women but this.....

I opened up Mind's Eye.

I wanted to see the results after one month.

Name: Chrisley
Occupation: None
Title: * Person with the Blood of a True Demonic Dragon (Epic, Intelligence +6, Magic Power +6)
* Blessed by the Moon (Ex U, Magic Power +8)

Stats

Strength: 26

Intelligence: 94 (+6)

Agility: 28

Stamina: 32

Magic Power: 55 (+18)

Potential: (235+24/478)

Uniqueness: A person with the true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf Shilla's blood, the end of her growth can't be seen.

Skill: Body Control (R), Undead Manufacturing (U)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 23 Intelligence 100 Agility 21 Stamina 27 Magic 60
Potential (211+20/478)

Strength 26 Intelligence 100 Agility 28 Stamina 32 Magic 73
Potential (235+24/478)

The Death Wand gave an addition 4 magic power.

After her health was restored, her stats rose up rapidly.

But I was surprised to see that Body Control had transformed into a rare skill.

It had only been one month.

Body Control had risen from the normal rating to rare.

‘Ha.’

Is this the power of 100 intelligence?

The growth rate of the skill was unbelievable.

After a few months, it didn’t seem impossible for Body Control to reach the unique rating. The same was true for Undead Manufacturing.

Anyway, it was good that someone under my command had grown.

I shook my head and opened my mouth.

“Do any of you have experience leading an army?”

Two people raised their hands.

Dark elf Julliom and dwarf Stein.

Both of them were leaders of their village.

“Only two?”

“It will depend on your criteria of the army, Dungeon Master.”

Julliom carefully expressed his opinion.

“Leading more than 500 would be good.”

“Then there are two more people.”

Three dark elves.

I moved my line of sight.

“Dwarves?”

“One more.”

“A total of five. That should be okay.”

I couldn't randomly release the monster wave. A commanding presence was needed to lead them.

“The five of you step forward. Chrisley is permitted to take two steps.”

Chrisley moved forward with the five people behind her.

The dark elves and dwarves gathered together. Chrisley was two steps away.

“A week later, the 1st monster wave will take place. It will be composed of 5,000 orcs, kobolds and gnolls and will create trouble for the humans.”

“Dungeon Master. The 1st?”

Julliom asked an appropriate question.

“The 1st monster wave is just a device intended to awaken the human’s awareness. Except for Chrisley, you five will step out. It doesn’t matter if the creatures are lost but all leaders have to return safely. The next monster wave will occur after two months. At that time, Chrisley will be in charge of the mission. In addition, the quality of their creatures will change.”

The 1st wave would just be a teaser.

I clenched my fists tightly and said.

“Time is running out. First, I will assign 1,000 creatures to each commander. You have a week to train them in the basics. Go forth from the dungeon and devastate the humans!”

“As you command!”

“As you command!”

The six commanders including Chrisley bowed their heads deeper.

“The remaining dark elves and dwarves will have a separate task. They were take care of the pyrock larvae that I’ve released on the 6th floor. After the pyrock larvae sticks out from the ground, letting them rest for 30 minutes is enough. There is a place with no lava so build houses to live in the area.”

I quickly divided their roles.

The 1st wave that would take place after one week!

I was busy preparing for the move.

*

The 3rd and 4th floor were filled with 500 orcs.

4,500 kobolds and goblins.

There were an additional 20 harpies and goblin and kobold bosses that would be part of the 1st wave.

An army that humans could defeat.

There were no nuclear weapons. It was different with tanks and fighter jets but the regular infantry would find it difficult to deal with the creatures.

Even if they were armed with modern weapons, there were no humans that didn't fear death.

Kung! Kung!

The footprints of the creatures rang through the dungeon.

The creatures were neatly lined up on the dungeon's 1st floor.

I raised my right hand as I slowly moved forward.

"Let's move out."

"Let's move out!"

Kung! Kung!

The army of 5,000 creatures left the dungeon while being led by the 5 commanders.

*

The South Korean troops near Bukhan Mountain.

A number of soldiers were deployed in case the creatures emerged from the dungeon.

It wasn't easy for civilians to reach here and they were positioned in a place where they could observe the entrance.

But it had been more than a year and the creatures hadn't left the dungeon.

Discipline had been neglected and now it was just a routine patrol.

The troops stationed at the dungeon brought entertainment such as a pack of cards.

“5 matches.”

“I'm sorry. I also have a match.”

They were playing at the table originally used for operation planning. They squandered money and now there were only two people remaining.

But now it seemed to be ending.

The soldier who lost money had a long face.

“That is our Captain-nim. Just a little bit is acceptable. Ha! Today Captain-nim should buy chicken for the kids of our squadron.

The captain tsked at his men.

“You rascals, you think that I should buy chicken for the kids? I’m going to use the money to go and see Madam Jeong.”

It was at that moment.

Just as all the money was being swept up! The door opened and someone came in.

The captain frowned.

“You should knock before you come in.....”

“Captain-nim! I-it is serious! A monster wave!”

The captain laughed.

“Are you high?”

“You must be dreaming or something.”

“That friend’s words are a little strange.”

The other soldiers also laughed.

Teong!

But more patrolling soldiers kept entering through the door and the atmosphere changed.

“M-monster wave!”

“An estimated number of more than 4,000! The creatures are exiting the dungeon!”

*

Tang! Tatang!

Gun shots resounded from all over the mountain.

The smell of gunpowder and blood filled the air.

“Son of a bitch!”

Dududududu!

The armoured vehicles were blindly firing machine guns at the goblins.

A few distracted goblins were killed.

The creatures didn't fear death.

The soldiers at the front all received the same fate.

The goblins attacked while neglecting their lives.

“Kkack!”

In a brief instant.

The soldier's face was instantly torn in half by the sharp teeth of the goblins. The soldiers were instantly killed. It was a gory sight but at least they didn't have to suffer from being eaten alive.

Kieeek!

Something penetrated through the forehead of the goblin that was eating the soldier's neck.

The goblin was riddled with hundreds of holes from bullets.

The soldiers near the body opened fire.

“Die scum!”

The soldiers frowned at the sight.

There were the remains of vomit at the corners of their mouths. This scene was very common here.

The creatures didn't fear death but the soldiers definitely did!

The permanent post at Bukhan Mountain had received a surprise ambush. There was no radio contact under conditions like these.

The soldiers used the bullets and grenades in their arsenal and barely survived.

There were already a shootout against the creatures inside the garrison. Out of 150 soldiers, only 10 barely survived.

Their faces had already darkened.

“Captain-nim, are you okay?”

“Shit! Do I look like I’m okay? All the wounded people, follow me! Move!”

They didn’t know.

There might be more creatures in the vicinity.

The troops would have no future if they met the orcs.

The wounded soldiers started moving.

But who knew?

That it would be like he said.....

Chwiik. Chwiiik.

“Shit....”

The captain cursed as he heard the familiar rough breathing of an orc.

The 7-Eleven near Buksan Mountain.

Today a convenience store worker called Kim Gun-sam gulped as a scantily clad woman wearing a fine silver blouse and short hot pants entered.

“Welcome~”

The woman ignored him and went to the corner where the tampons were. Kim Gun-sam secretly admired her while drinking.

‘Hya! Look at that rear.’

The curve of her butt was emphasized by the hot pants. It was natural for the eyes to be drawn there.

‘A person who works in the nightlife? I often see women like this in the red light district. Hehe.....’

The value of the land around Bukhan Mountain had dropped due to the dungeon.

It was dangerous working near a dungeon but he had grudgingly accepted the job at the convenience store.

He had been working the part time job for a couple of days.

His mind had transformed into an oasis.

There were plenty of cheap entertainment places near the convenience store.

The woman placing items on the counter had that ‘good feel.’

Kim Gun-sam looked at the cold wind blowing outside.

‘She must be freezing.’

She was sexy but there were disadvantages to it.

Kim Gun-sam coughed and said.

“Hmm hmm! 8,800 won. Would you like an envelope?”

“That value should be covered by you.”

“Huh?”

“My ass, didn’t you keep staring at it?”

“I don’t know what you are talking about Customer-nim.”

Kim Gun-sam hastily said with embarrassment.

And how did this woman know when she didn't even turn her head?

His conscience pricked but he had to deny it.

The woman stared at Kim Gun-sam.

“Should we check the CCTV? You were definitely looking at my ass!”

Why did this woman know that he was staring?

‘This day?’

Kim Gun-sam was about to protest when he saw something outside the glass windows.

“Look!”

“C-c.....”

“What?”

Eobobo. Kim Gun-sam's finger trembled as he pointed outside.

The woman turned with a frown but she soon showed the exact same reaction as Kim Gun-sam.

“Ah.....”

“Creatures!”

Both of them were gazing towards the same place.

Hundreds of creatures were moving on foot.

*

Monster wave.

The phenomenon that involved creatures coming out of the dungeon.

It had already happened a few times in other countries but South Korea officially had the 5th monster wave.

The soldiers stationed near the dungeon sacrificed themselves but weren't able to repel the advance of the creatures.

The creatures that came down from Bukhan Mountain immediately attacked Gangbuk-gu and Eunpyeong-gu.

(gu=district)

The residents were evacuated after noticing the existence of the creatures but [Ui-dong, Suyu-dong and Galhyeon-dong](#) were destroyed.

(dong= neighbourhoods in the districts. Ui-dong & Suyu-dong= Gangbuk-gu. Galhyeon-dong= Eunpyeong-gu)

In fact, many people were already concerned.

It was common sense that a monster wave would ravage cities near the area.

But the media and government talked about the soldiers stationed there so the people believed that creatures would be tied up in the dungeon.

However, the military's response was dull.

Central Seoul's economy, culture and transportation couldn't cope with it.

As a result, the casualties reached 1,732 people.

When including the wounded, it reached over 2,000 people.

They succeeded in repelling the creatures that emerged from the dungeon but it caused them a massive headache.

*

‘So they are trying to hit the dungeon.’

I was watching the scene while relaxing from the top floor of the dungeon.

The Dungeon Core was showing it through a hologram so I was entertained.

The pride of the army might have been crushed if the Awakened hadn't joined them. It was the perfect response of an idiot.

There was an intense surge of magic power inside the tower.

What was magic power? Originally it was the fundamental power.

It was the source of modern civilization in human hands. They gnawed on the source instead of using it properly. Even if it worked, I didn't get any bad feelings from it.

The Awakened could use the magic power to use modern weapons more efficiently.

But an army consisting of normal humans trying to invade an army?

I started laughing.

‘Killing ordinary people won’t give any points but.....’

Only the existence of the Awakened gave points. Other dungeon creatures and demons also gave points but normal humans were worth nothing.

Of course, a public massacre would earn him some achievements.

Contributing to the destruction of the earth.

And if I killed 100 million people then a title and achievement could be obtained.

I would rather receive the contributions from killing the demons. Killing everyone in South Korea would be insufficient to reach 100 million. It was very tedious work.

It was better to use the demons.

‘I should give a gift to Chrisley. The volume produced with Undead Manufacturing will be fun.’

I smiled as I determined the future of those entering the dungeon.

Anyway, using the Undead Manufacturing skill would raise the proficiency.

It was recycling.

‘But...it didn’t feel good to have my dungeon ignored.’

Before the monster wave happened, the army had ignored me for North Korea. What did that mean?

They seemed to be looking down on me.

My army only consisted of 5,000 low level creatures but.....

‘I will welcome them as the Dungeon Master.’

Of course, I wouldn’t be greeting them directly.

I wasn’t going to show my official appearance.

An army of humans meeting the Dungeon Master?

It didn’t fit.

It was different from the Awakened entering in large numbers. Even then, only a few creatures handled them.

After summarizing my thoughts, I had Krasla gather the dark elves.

The dwarves were left alone. Right now they needed to take care of the pyrock.

And the propagating harpies were in charge of the 20 mud golems and 30 puppets on the 5th floor.

*

Kuong.

Kuong.

The 20 golems that were 4 metres high and weighing 2 tons were lined up in a row.

They were made of hardened mud refined through alchemy and magic.

Among the intermediate creatures, there were none that was inferior to them.

Next to them were the 30 puppets made out of metal in the form of human beings.

The dark elves had climbed up one by one on both shoulders of the mud golem. They are armed with a bow and short dagger.

The dark elves could shoot arrows in the dark and could swing their knife quickly like an assassin.

In addition, the synergy with the dungeon meant that the dark elves were invincible against the humans.

Their number reached 40.

The combined total of 120 wasn't a large amount.

“Stop!”

Hwaruruk!

The fire horse, Inferno!

Krasla was sitting on Inferno.

The magic earrings were removed and his original appearance was regained.

In addition, there was an extremely determined look in his eyes.

‘Inferno has been entrusted to me. In other words, I had to launch an overwhelming force that will devastate the enemy!’

Dungeon Master.

I directly lent him Inferno.

He was a general and his enemy was a country.

No matter how brief it was, Krasla had experience and knew how weak their army was. They couldn’t use their tools and would be easily beaten.

Tactics? Strategy?

There was no need.

A frontal attack!

So I would completely break them.

Krasla and his troops were on the 1st floor. Scouts confirmed that the enemy was 500 metres in front of them.

Krasla raised his red spear.

“The enemies are in front. The dirty humans should withdraw

their footsteps. Their numbers are plentiful but they are weak! We will trample on them for Master!”

Joy rose in the eyes of the dark elves.

They came from the Demon World. A world where the strong ruled. It was natural for the weak to be stepped on.

The dark elves might be weak in power but this was a chance to prove their worth.

They were pleased!

Krasla extended his spear and kicked Inferno to move forward.

Ihiking!

Inferno started to run.

Krasla shouted in a loud voice.

“Sweep through those guys without leaving one of them behind!”

*

The Philippines, China, India, France and South Korea.

It was the order that the monster waves occurred in.

With the exception of France that didn't have the dungeon secured properly in the first place, the troops stationed nearby rapidly coped with it.

There were thousands of casualties and property damage due to the tanks so the amount of people complaining were very high.

The current government tried to reduce the danger of the dungeons through propaganda but it only worked on certain groups.

The damage and danger of the dungeon was enough to shake public opinion.

In order to change the flow of this, a meeting was held in a secret bunker between the Defense Minister, President, head of the Security Council and the Lieutenant General.

Kwang!

“If this operation fails then we will all die. It should be fine. But didn't we lose contact with the team not long after they entered the dungeon? Lieutenant General Choi Chun-ji. Did you install the wire connection directly?

The president slammed his fist down on the table while the sweating Choi Chun-ji licked his lips.

“President-nim. Don’t worry. The power of the Special Division is unbeatable. The creatures won’t be able to stop their firepower.”

“Lieutenant General Choi Chun-ji! It is obvious that they will sweep through the dungeon. The problem is doing it with minimal damage! I can’t relax let alone breathe until I know what is going on!”

Lieutenant Choi Chun-ji had a frustrated heart Didn’t he know how great the power of one division was? A division specially organized to handle the dungeon.

The armed Special Forces contained k1a1 and k2 armoured tanks which were considered as the strongest.

It wasn’t a power that the creatures could face.

The soldiers also had the latest firearms.

“Don’t worry Sir. Even though communication was lost, we can still receive from the signaler. We just need to wait a few hours and we shall receive very good news.”

Lieutenant Choi Chun-ji was confident.

He couldn't be anything else.

There were a number of political relationships tangled up in the dungeon but it was just a matter of performance. It was easy to deal with the people's complaints.

Thousands of creatures were wiped out so Choi Chun-ji couldn't understand the president's attitude.

The president's fist trembled.

"It must be like that. If you don't want your throat cut...by any means!"

*

Unlike Choi Chun-ji's hopeful observation, the situation of the soldiers wasn't very good.

8,000 people could easily move past the creatures but as they got deeper into the dungeon, more things started to malfunction.

First, the wire communications and radio were jammed. The tanks started emitting smoke and firearms stopped working.

"Division Commander-nim. All communications are jammed. It will take 5 hours for the signaler to return to the dungeon entrance. What do you want to do?"

“Continue the operation. We can handle the creatures.”

The Division Commander firmly gave an order to continue the operation.

The faces of the soldiers darkened as they heard those words.

They already knew that the products of modern science would become jammed in the dungeon. The United States had already made their information about the dungeon public. No, they knew there was a high chance the operation wouldn't work.

But the soldiers had to follow the command. A few of them spoke words of complaint.

“Eh. I have no interest in going up.....”

One of the soldiers muttered to himself. The surrounding soldiers nodded their heads in agreement.

Those with wealth and power only cared about the Cores but the soldiers felt frantic. They weren't interested in the inside of the dungeon.

The Awakened were the ones meant to deal with the dungeon.

To capture the dungeon using only the strength of humans, it

felt.....

“What is that?”

“Why is the ground shaking?”

“Stop!”

Kuwuong!

Kuwuuong!

Suddenly a loud sound could be heard from a short distance away. The soldiers were puzzled and turned their flashlights and torches in the direction.

A horse was approaching at a very fast speed. It was ridiculous but the horse was on fire! Someone was riding on top of it.

It was first time in their lives that they saw something like that. The mouths of the soldiers dropped open. The unusual horse was a surprising sight.

But the soldiers lost their spirits the moment they saw something else.

Dozens of huge golems!

The sight was overwhelming.

Next to them were shining metal dolls that moved quickly.

“Prepare to fight! Prepare to fight!”

It became a full length battlefield.

*

What was the reason for dividing the creatures between floors?

This arrangement was solely conceived for the Awakened. It could be used to raise them, increasing the points.

But...humans couldn't even step foot in the dungeon. There was no need to wait by dividing it among floors.

In addition, the humans weren't Awakened and couldn't resist the creatures inside the dungeon.

Modern weapons were certainly powerful but it was limited inside the dungeon.

Almost all firearms jammed or caused a fatal error.

Didn't they know that? Or were they ignoring it?

“Master. The humans are really stupid. If Master allows it then Yihi will make them go and bow down like dogs! Of course, there would be a tribute in exchange. A kiss is probably sufficient ~ yihhi.”

Yihi said while looking at the progress of the battle through the crystal ball.

I had to admit that Yihi was stupid so I didn't have an answer for her.

Yihi quietly approached but I raised my hand.

I grabbed Yihi between the thumb and index finger of my right hand and stared at the crystal ball.

*

“Shit. Aim the muzzle correctly!”

“I-it isn't firing properly! The focus of the scope is slightly changing!”

“Throw grenades!”

“The safety pin isn’t pulled properly? It isn’t popping out!”

“Aaaagh!”

Noisy!

8,000 soldiers were attacking.

The bullets fired from the gun would move slightly away from the aimed target. If they closed their eyes and fired then there would be friendly fire.

A thrown grenade wouldn’t explode or the extent of the explosion would be reduced. Any golems hit were quickly restored.

The dolls made of metal?

They were a similar size to humans and had sharp blades.

They were capable of stabbing and piercing.

The division commander told them.

“Are the tanks moving?”

“No! It will take time to repair the engine! None of the tanks are moving!”

“Damn!”

The division commander frowned as he heard those words.

The situation was rather disturbing. The grenades didn't even work properly. It was the first time he had seen modern weapons disabled like this.

“Swords! Take out your swords!”

The division commander shouted.

The soldiers regained their spirits at the commander's loud voice.

They immediately put away their guns and pointed their greatswords at the incoming puppets.

Chiing!

But the greatsword was only good for damaging biological existences. A common human that wasn't Awakened couldn't damage the metal puppet.

It was limited to just scratches.

But the puppets were moderately put in check. The golems were

very big so their movements were slow.

The real problem was the dark elves with dark skin riding them while wielding long spears.

There was approximately 40 of them.

But they couldn't be resisted.

They moved in the darkness like shadows.

The Special Forces struggled but they had limits.

They learned how to deal with humans but weren't prepared to face such strong creatures.

The result was very bleak.

“After all...keok!”

The division commander about to order a retreat was beheaded.

Krasla!

He had narrowed the distance with Inferno and swung his spear.

The soldiers were helpless before his breakthrough power. The soldiers on the front lines started to die one by one.

The dark elves quickly understood and only aimed at them.

A chain of confusion!

A situation that had exploded out of control.

At this moment, they all sat down with ‘despair.’

*

The security conference.

The president leaned back in his chair and stared up at the ceiling with a pale expression.

It had been two days since contact had been disconnected.

As more time passed with no contact, the mood of the conference room sunk like they were at a funeral.

“Still...no contact?”

The president spoke in a voice mixed with phlegm while Lieutenant Choi Chun-ji kept his mouth tightly closed. It had been

a few days with no contact so the worst result must have happened.

After a long moment, Lieutenant General Choi Chun-ji spoke up.

“I’ve sent a search party. Just wait a little longer.....”

“A little longer, a little longer! How long is a little bit? If this operation fails then take off your clothes.”

Choi Chun-ji shut his mouth at the president’s words.

They all knew.

Previously there were only 1,700 casualties so it was difficult to imagine 8,000 people being wiped out.

The special troops of South Korea. It would be fortunate if Choi Chun-ji’s only consequence was taking off his clothes.

At this time, the defense minister carefully spoke.

“President-nim. Measures...we need to establish them.”

The president tapped his finger on the desk as he sighed.

“Apologize to the country. Is there any other method besides

resigning?”

“Sir, the results are still unknown. The soldiers might return after brilliantly performing the operation.....”

“Don’t bother. I know a lot of people are dissatisfied with the current administration. The backlash will just get worse over time.”

The president continued with a determined expression.

“Okay. Let’s cover it up as much as possible.”

The next day, the news related to the dungeon and the soldiers were extremely limited. The information was deliberately concealed from all media, information agencies and organizations.

Questions were just answered mechanically with ambiguous words like ‘soon there will be news.’

Even the portal sites weren’t safe. A large amount of data was censored or deleted on the forums.

But no matter how hard they tried to hide it, cracks started to form and they could’nt stop the water from rising.

In the first place, it had been impossible to pull the wool over their eyes.

After a month passed and the soldiers didn't return, public opinion completely turned against the current government.

The Awakened played a decisive role.

Some guilds searched inside the dungeon and found the tanks that the soldiers had used. There weren't any bodies lying around but it didn't look good.

It was almost like a story.

After a few days, uniformed zombies began to occasionally emerge on the 1st floor. The appearance of the soldiers wandering around was terrible.

The public exploded like a spring.

At first it was just a peaceful protest but things couldn't be easily resolved. They were all parents or family of the soldiers.

In the end, the president apologized by resigning and a number of candidates ran for the presidency.

A reporter from the United States, John also covered these series of events.

It was titled 'The Useless and Ridiculous Pride Along with

Ignorance caused the Worst Result.'

At the same time, he published a book called 'Dungeon Attack Record' that detailed the monster wave that took place in South Korea and heavily criticized the government.

Thus, 2 months passed since the first monster wave occurred in South Korea.

Chapter 48-54: Place Of The Fallen Gods

I looked at the lava fields on the 6th floor filled with satisfaction.

The adult pyrocks that the dwarves and dark elves raised were flying around on wings.

Except for the fact that their wings were similar in size and shape to a bat, they looked like miniature dragons.

4 pyrocks had finished growing to the 3rd stage. One adult would be useful so this harvest was larger than expected.

An adult pyrock was an intermediate 4Lv creature. It was one level lower than Inferno but boasted the efficiency of 20,000pt.

40 pyrock larvae cost 48,000pt while 4 adults would be 30,000 pt each.

“Good work.”

I praised their performance.

Julliom and the dwarf chief Stein fell to their knees.

“It is natural. Dungeon Master!”

“What do you want? If it is appropriate then I will give it to you.”

Julliom looked around nervously before saying.

“...Is Yihi here?”

“She went to gather honey.”

“Then...can you change the garden?”

“The garden?”

Julliom cried out with a desperate expression.

“The large structure with the bizarre shape that is on our floor. The fairy told me it is a garden but as an elf, it is indescribable...”

Yihi professed to Julliom that she had made a great garden. She seemed to be talking about the shit-shaped structure. The dark elves’ sense of aesthetic received a shock from the structure.

I lightly nodded.

“I’ll allow it.”

“Thank you!”

“What do the dwarves want?”

I looked in the direction of the dwarves.

The chief Stein’s eyes lit up.

“Dungeon Master. I’ve found some unusual minerals all over the dungeon. Will you allow me to dig it up and refine it?”

“I will also allow this. However, half the things created will be sent to me.”

“I’ll remember that, Dungeon Master!”

The dwarves were a species obsessed with making things.

Unusual minerals were found in this dungeon. Half of them would be turned over to me.

‘And I should give a separate floor for the dwarves.’

I looked at the excited faces of the dwarves. They had a lot of work to do so I should assign them a floor.

‘Sooner or later, the Awakened will pass the 4th floor in order to reach the 5th floor. After that, they will taste the frustration of the

lava filled 6th floor and their stamina will be consumed.'

I was locked in thought.

The 5th and 6th floors would trouble the Awakened. Then it was necessary to adjust the pace on the 7th floor.

'Repair their weapons and recover their stamina. A type of safe zone...'

Normal demons absolutely won't allow this. But I was walking on a totally different route.

To some extent, understanding humans was a favourite game in my previous life. Because of this, I know how to utilize their focus.

This flexibility only existed for me.

'Gaining information from the Awakened in exchange for them killing the creatures. It is very tedious to collect things one by one. Chrisley will also find making undead easier.'

Making undead could quickly increase the Undead Manufacturing skill.

Anyway, the magic power inside the creatures would just return to the dungeon or be eaten by other creatures. It would be very tedious. So it was a good idea to leave this with the human

Awakened.

I spoke after organizing my thoughts.

“Listen dwarves.”

The dwarves turned to look at him.

“We are listening.”

“I will give you a place to stay on the 7th floor. But your role is to help the Awakened, not stop them.”

The dwarf chief Stein said in a terrible tone.

“...We don't understand your words, Dungeon Master.”

“The dwarves will live on the 7th floor for the convenience of the human Awakened. They will be tired and weary at first but after your welcome, they will soon ask for information. Tell them what you know. In addition, repair their equipment and obtain the dead bodies of the creatures. Those are the two tasks required of you.”

I had to be careful with the information posted on the internet. I couldn't write down everything so the role of the dwarves was very important.

It wasn't enough to get their bodies. I was always seeking more efficiency.

“Bring the corpses obtained to Chrisley. However, report to Yihi the information that you shared with the Awakened. Aside from that...you don't have to care about the Awakened.”

“The humans are suspicious people. What if they attack first?”

“The current humans have very low levels. And their numbers will be reduced before reaching the 7th floor filled with dwarves. Their numbers won't be enough to threaten you.”

“We will follow your words!”

Losing some dwarves wouldn't give me a lot of damage. One of them cost 5,500 points so there was no reason I couldn't increase their numbers by 100.

After the performance report, I looked at the 4 pyrocks again. They were floating on the lava while looking at me. Their instincts meant they naturally gravitated to the Dungeon Master.

But it was clear that someone had been gentle with them.

“Who has trained the pyrocks?”

Julliom replied.

“Chrisley, Dungeon Master.”

I knew it.

I could guess who had a hand in raising the pyrocks. Ever since Chrisley underwent the ritual, she had never betrayed my expectations.

I nodded my head.

“Chrisley come forward.”

Chrisley who was sitting in the middle of the dark elves came forward. Apart from Yihi, she was the only one allowed so close to me.

I was glad to see the adult pyrocks but Chrisley’s overwhelming growth was more satisfying.

Especially after she turned a great number of humans into zombies. Thanks to that, it was possible to fill the vacant spots left by the monster wave.

In this current situation, Chrisley was the most useful one.

I studied her face and said.

“Chrisley. From now on, you will find special places in the dungeon with the pyrocks. Is it possible to navigate to places with strong magic power?”

“It is possible.”

Chrisley answered confidently.

I nodded.

“Okay. Lead the pyrocks and look for a place with strong fire magic. Don’t forget to report it to me first before entering.”

“I will keep that in mind, my Dungeon Master.”

3 days later.

Chrisley came looking for me.

“I found three places with powerful fire magic.”

I was expecting it to take a week so I was surprised at the quick turnaround. No matter how quick the feet of the dark elves, 3 days was quite short for the pyrocks to search. They must have wandered the dungeon without sleeping.

I spoke with a satisfied smile.

“Let’s go together. Guide me to the place with the most intense magic power.”

Chrisley laughed, revealing a dimple.

“I will gladly do so. My Dungeon Master.”

In the meantime, she had started adding ‘my’ to Dungeon Master.

Was it due to the ceremony? Somehow it felt like my ears were ringing.

*

The dungeon’s 29th floor.

The pyrocks that had been acting like hyperactive dogs suddenly stopped in front of one wall.

‘There’s something there.’

I had 90 magic power. I was able to sense the wavelengths of magic power flowing around to a certain extent.

I placed my hand on the wall and noticed a portion that was thinner.

I gathered power in my hands and immediately struck it down.

Kuang!

My superior strength and the power of the Lightning God Technique meant the dungeon wall didn't stand a chance. I repeated the actions several times and soon the wall was completely demolished, revealing the other side.

It was at that moment.

-Great achievement! One of the four altars that exist in the dungeon, the Altar of Fire has been found.

Once the altar collapses, magic power will start circulating around the dungeon. In addition, the barrier outside the dungeon protecting it will evaporate.

-2 Fire Golems have been given as compensation.

Beyond the walls were two enormous fire golems protecting the altar.

‘I’ve found it.’

Advanced 3Lv creatures. This was compensation and I was able to obtain two creatures that were worth 170,000 pt.

‘I should look for the other altars later.’

Previously I quickly lost my dungeon. I didn’t know where the altars were. A demon in my previous life only found it by chance.

“Fire golems...”

Chrisley muttered. The pyrocks following her shrunk back in fear. The other creatures were in an entirely different class.

“Don’t be scared. The fire golems won’t move without my instructions.”

“I understand. By the way, what is this place?”

“The fire altar. It adjusts the flow of magic power through the dungeon.”

Anyway, I was the one who could get the fire golems working.

I was about to leave when Chrisley opened her mouth.

“Letters are floating in the air. Do you see it?”

“Letters?”

I looked around the altar and didn't see any letters. I never heard of such a thing but Chrisley wouldn't be lying.

“I think the information is related to the dungeon.”

“Read it.”

Chrisley carefully opened her mouth.

“This is the place of a fallen god. A place inside the dungeon. I am the God of Wisdom, Minerva. Thy will...thou who obtained my wisdom, I will give you one last gift.”

My expression changed the moment I heard Chrisley's words.

Minerva!

It was the name of one of the gods who played a decisive role in my return. I had made a deal with them at the end in order to return.

So why was that name here?

In addition, I couldn't see the letters. The phrases were only visible to Chrisley.

‘Maybe it is because Chrisley’s intelligence reached 100.’

It was just a guess.

And at that moment, a crack appeared over the altar. The crack was infused with chaotic magic power and divine power.

A giant creature was revealed through the crack.

Kkiruk!

It had an eagle’s head but the size was no comparison. A creature completely different from the fire golems.

“G-griffin!”

Chrisley was shocked.

One of the finest lightning creatures, a griffin...!

It was a high class creature and the difference between medium and advanced creatures was like the difference between heaven and earth.

‘Ha!’

I looked at the griffin sitting on the floor. It had a noble presence that made even the fire golems look small.

I opened up Mind’s Eye to check the status of the griffin.

Name: Griffin
Stats
Strength: 88
Intelligence: 77
Agility: 69
Stamina: 84
Magic Power: 85
Potential: (403/405)
Uniqueness: A pet raised by the Goddess of Wisdom Minerva. But as a last favour after her death, it recognizes Randolph Briggsiel as its new owner.
Skill: Fire and Lightning (Epic)

A high class creature with stats beyond 400.

It was similar to my level when I had Wrath, my titles and all the special options. But unlike me, the griffin was optimized for attacks.

If a griffin appeared right now then it would be a disaster. Right now, there were no demons with high class creatures. High class creatures could only be obtained from the Demon World Auction or special events.

‘Are there more in other dungeons?’

This was the last present from Minerva. Yet there were three more altars that might have something there.

But...

What about the other dungeons?

The place of the fallen gods. I had an agreement with the fallen gods. If the other dungeons contained the places of fallen gods then there might be gifts left for me in those dungeons.

‘I have to change my plans a little bit.’

I got an unexpected harvest.

The high class griffin meant it wasn't necessary to cause a monster wave. An overwhelming power that would dominate

humans.

The purpose of the monster wave was to quickly increase the growth of the Awakened. They would grow and remain vigilant.

Now I could use the griffin and Chrisley. If I used them and the advanced fire golems to produce a monster wave...

‘The gods. I will accept their gifts.’

I formed a strong fist.

Originally I planned to raise the Awakened and preserve the creatures in my dungeon before hitting the dungeons of other demons.

That idea was still unchanged.

But...there was a chance to obtain similar gifts from other demons so I should probably check the dungeons near me.

I started looking for the most vulnerable dungeons in the neighbouring countries.

Where were the nearest dungeons to Korea?

China and Japan. In particular, there were five dungeons in

China. But China was huge so it wasn't particularly geographically close. I would rather cross the sea towards Japan.

'The dungeon in Japan is under the rule of Grand Duke Upa's faction. The name...Adol?'

I pondered over it.

I needed to choose the dungeon carefully.

I would be passing through an area under the supervision of Grand Duke Upa. He had one of the biggest forces but I didn't care for Upa. In the latter half of the war, demons started acting selfishly in order to get their hands on points and dungeons.

If a demon killed another one then they could take over the dungeon and absorb the remaining points. The intact points in the dungeon could be obtained as profit.

This information was only revealed after 5 years due to the brutality of Grand Dukes Upa and Ariel. Of course, it went without saying that the process involved a fierce struggle. The remaining two Grand Dukes, Pandemonium and Okullos embraced strategy over plain destruction.

Anyway...

The situation right now was the most important. It was highly likely that Earl Adol from Upa's faction was in Japan. Grand Duke

Upa would give most of his attention to the dukes under his command.

‘I have to kill Earl Adol.’

My goal was set.

‘If I increase my dungeons then I can clear the Demon World Auction in a minimum of 2 years. That was my original schedule but it is okay.’

Obtaining advanced creatures from the altar would give me a definite advantage. The demons that didn’t have the points to participate in the auction would strengthen their dungeons instead.

On the other hand, some might have delayed strengthening their dungeon to save points for the auction...

The damage caused by killing Adol would be tremendous.

Although I had advanced creatures, Krasla and Chrisley, the losses caused by taking over a new dungeon might take years to repair.

But it was a different story now that I had the high class griffin. The griffin was specialized in attack and Adol’s dungeon would be powerless in front of it.

‘The first dungeon that I explored in my previous life.’

The distance was close so after losing my dungeon, I headed to Japan first.

I quickly passed through the dungeon.

‘Certainly...I remember he was a very disgusting bastard.’

Normal demons under Grand Duke Upa were rare. It was also true for Adol.

He had a hobby of playing with the orcs, kobolds and gnolls. It seemed to excite him to make the orcs wear sexy underwear. The creatures didn’t understand and gave birth to mutated children. Their minds were twisted and they became filled with lust and envy.

I frowned as I recalled it.

A demon I didn’t want to deal with. It was Earl Adol.

‘His dungeon contains a lot of creatures, especially orcs. A griffin is their natural enemy.’

Memories of my previous life were evoked.

If I could obtain more advanced creatures from the dungeon then I could use them to push against Adol's dungeon.

Japan was a bit far across the sea but the idea remained inside my head.

‘Anyway, that is for one day in the future.’

My plan had changed but my ultimate goal was still the same. I began to prepare to strike Adol's dungeon with excited eyes.

*

Fire, ice, earth and wind golems.

In a little more than 2 months, I was able to find two golems of every attribute.

In addition, I collected 250,000 more points during that time and had approximately 410,000 points. Therefore I bought the 2Lv advanced creature ‘Turtle Island’ without worrying.

It was smaller on the ground but would grow to the size of a small island once in the water. The size and defense made spending 110,000 worth it.

But I didn't just want to move the creatures. I decided to use the

remaining 300,000 points on a lich. The lich was an advanced 4Lv creature so it would match well with the griffin.

‘Lich...the skills it can use are quite unconventional.’

The lich’s power increased with more corpses.

It could explode or move the dead bodies. In addition, many of the creatures had minor skills that were useful.

So I finished the configuration.

The list of creatures that would hit Adol’s dungeon were as followed.

Krasla and Chrisley.

40 dark elves.

4 pyrocks.

2 advanced golems from the 4 attributes, for a total of 8.

1 lich.

1 griffin!

The dwarves were busy creating their village on the 7th floor. Turtle Island was purely a means of transportation. Anyway, they would be a great help when targeting the dungeon.

An elite and organized group would be striking the dungeon. The power was enough to destroy half of South Korea.

My expectations would be lower without the griffin but I nodded lightly at the configuration of the creatures.

*

Kung!

First the 8 golems escaped from the dungeon. Huge figures over 10 metres.

The fire golem caused flames to roar while the ice golem froze the greenery. The earth golem gathered earth together to form special soil while wind blasted around the wind golem's body.

They were followed by 4 pyrocks who looked like miniature dragons with bat wings, 40 dark elves and Krasla who was riding Inferno.

Finally, the soldiers observed Chrisley riding on top of the enormous griffin.

This was a completely different scale from the crude 1st monster wave. Everyone's instincts clamoured not to get near.

“...Should we attack?”

The chain of command couldn't respond to the soldier's question.

What should they do?

Of course, if they fought then there would be a counterattack.

After the 1st monster wave, tight defenses were formed around the dungeon. They hadn't expected that the creatures to emerge would be beyond their imagination.

At that moment, someone suddenly shouted.

“L-lich. I heard that a lich wiped out hundreds of thousands of soldiers and some Awakened in France! I saw a video of it.”

“What? Lich?”

“Crazy...wasn't the monster wave in France called Nightmare Day?”

“I heard tactical nuclear strikes were required...”

The soldiers started buzzing. Everyone present was terrified at the existence of the lich.

The monster wave that took place in France. There was the appearance of a lich. In the case of France, hundreds of thousands of soldiers and Awakened died.

They were able to handle other creatures but the lich caused a huge headache. The lich's body was immune to any attack skills.

In the end, tactical nuclear strikes were used to deal with it.

“...Should we attack?”

“Wait. I'm still thinking!”

A decision couldn't be easily made. It was difficult to attack but they couldn't allow the creatures to enter the city. The damage would be incomparable to the 1st monster wave. It couldn't be allowed to happen.

There was no choice in the first place.

“Damn. Get ready!”

“Ready!”

The tanks aimed at the creatures heading away from the dungeon.

“Send a request for support! We just need to buy some time!”

All eyes turned to the west.

The troops gathered here had stopped the 1st monster wave but they honestly admitted that they couldn't defeat the lich.

However, it was enough if they could buy some time.

This was an operation mobilized by the United States Forces Korea (USFK). They just needed to buy time for the support from the USFK.

Kwang! Kwa kwa kwang!

Soon all the firepower was concentrated on the creatures.

“Poor humans...”

But Chrisley who was playing the role of general didn't care. These crude attacks couldn't hurt the advanced creatures.

Chrisley lightly slapped the griffin. And the griffin turned its head! It sucked in everything around it as it took a deep breath.

Huuung!

Hwaaaaack!

The epic grade skill, Fire and Lightning! A wide area breath skill emerged from the mouth of the griffin.

At the same time, the fire and lightning evaporated everything it touched including the tanks. The sight after the skill ended was even more disturbing.

A decimated field!

“Huaaaah...!”

The surviving soldiers flopped to the ground.

Their fellow soldiers had disappeared without a trace. The only thing left were some lower bodies on the ground...it was like a natural disaster.

This was the grandeur of the high class creature, the griffin.

One attack was enough to make them at a loss.

The government in Seoul declared an emergency.

The area was urgently evacuated as dozens of jet fighters flew in the sky. Numerous tanks and armoured vehicles also moved in the region.

Some news helicopters risked their lives to broadcast the scene but eventually the words 'Doomsday' was caught in their mouths.

"The creatures are flocking. The brave soldiers of South Korea are fighting but...the creatures are too powerful."

"Is this the end of South Korea?"

"We don't know when the troops from the US will arrive to help. Please pray for the soldiers."

Every person stopped working and carefully watched the tv screen. They could only sit and pray.

The griffin's lightning skill that evaporated everything and the overwhelming strength of the golems. The dark elves' maneuverability and the pyrocks fought against the fighter jets.

The situation didn't look favourable at all.

It was decided that the soldiers couldn't stop the advance of the

creatures.

“Ah! The Awakened! The Awakened has appeared!”

A reporter relaying live from the helicopter cried out.

The camera rolled quickly.

The lens showed a series of people running towards the Awakened.

They had finally come.

I smiled.

Hundreds of Awakened were around me.

*

The eyes of all humans were focused on South Korea.

There were magic items that could conceal the atrocities but I didn't want to use them.

A long-awaited S rank. I started to prepare as soon as I received it. All through false acting!

Despite the plan changing, the result still ended up with the awareness of the Awakened increasing. I recruited Awakened and sold the name of Devil Hunters. Among them, there were some with low and moderate potential.

‘Food.’

Yes, food.

The initiation ceremony...a large amount of food gathered under the pretense of ‘saving South Korea!’ They didn’t realize they were just feeding themselves to the tiger.

Humans acted as true ‘heroes’ but wasn’t that just script that I wrote?

Of course, I didn’t include Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye in this.

I needed to fatten them up a little bit more before consuming them. In a word, rabble!

The Awakened gathered here were unlikely to reach the limits of their potential. They were just lumps of points.

At the same time, all the people seeing this were respecting them as ‘true heroes.’

“Defend South Korea!”

“We are heroes! Heroes who don’t fear death!”

The momentum of the Awakened were growing.

They could only watch during the 1st monster wave but now it was different. The strongest Awakened that would protect South Korea.

Furthermore, the word ‘hero’ existed in the status window.

It heightened the ridiculous atmosphere.

The battlefield was filled with the corpses of the soldiers but the Awakened had faced numerous deaths in the dungeon.

Kwakwang!

The lich used the skill ‘Corpse Explosion.’ Strong magic power washed over the corpses of the soldiers.

Hundreds of corpses became zombies. Their physical abilities had weakened a lot but the soldiers felt enormous pressure.

The intelligent Awakened went after the necks of the zombies. The guarders and magicians also poured out their skills.

Kuaaang!

The body of the earth golem shook!

The echo passed through the ground and caused an earthquake. Dozens died but it didn't stop the Awakened.

“Charge!”

And finally, my turn came.

A group composed of 100 people followed me.

“Do you see it? The appearance of the struggling heroes!”

“There is still hope. The advance of the creatures has slowed.”

All media outlets were broadcasting it.

The army stepped back while the Awakened went forward to block the monster wave.

The eyes of millions of people were fixed on them. The real time broadcast meant that people were cheering for the Awakened on the internet.

The housewives doing housework forgot about as they watched the screen, professionals at work looked at their phones while others drank in a bar and focused on the television.

“Ahh...! So terrible. The lich is a vicious creature.”

“Awakened. No, Heroes! Have strength. Everyone is cheering for you.”

The battle situation still wasn't good. But it felt like things were gradually tilting to the side of the Awakened. Such hope burned in everyone's chest.

“Look at this! Hundreds of heroes are marching towards the larger creatures!”

“The one leading them is the captain of the raid group Devil Hunters!”

Devil Hunters!

That name was engraved in everyone's ears at that moment.

Kuaang!

After a fierce competition, the earth golem fell.

“Wahhhh!”

“A golem has collapsed!”

The dying Awakened were revived by the news. Already more than half of the Awakened had blood spilling on the ground!

Now one of the earth golems had fallen. At that moment, all the Awakened and people watching the scene screamed.

‘If they knew the real truth.’

I smiled at such a reaction.

Naturally this was a screenplay that I wrote. The earth golem was lying on the floor but it hadn’t really reached the end of its strength.

I was an absolute existence to the creatures in the dungeon.

After some moderate attacks, it fell according to my command. There was no need to speak. I just needed to open up my magic power in order to convey my meaning.

The earth golem succumbed to it so the attacks stopped.

The Awakened who were fighting briefly hesitated.

“Ehh, what’s going on?”

“The griffin is coming down!”

The Awakened with observation skills discovered that griffin was the name of the creature.

And the creature that caused fear in the sky was descending. Half of the damage had occurred due to the griffin. The griffin was more terrifying than 8 golems. Such an existence descending to the ground caused goosebumps to form.

But the thing that caught their eyes was the person riding the griffin. A beautiful and dazzling sight. But somehow the woman gave off a cold impression!

It was Chrisley.

She landed in front of me and asked.

“Great skills. What is your name?”

It was unlike her usual tone.

She was placed in an awkward position but right now she was acting. Chrisley was performing my command with a cold expression.

She wore a half skull mask but this one covered the left side of her face.

There was a simple reason for this.

‘I doubt the demons are watching but I should be careful.’

The demons weren’t interested in human civilization. And the demons felt the need to destroy humans. Their pride was very strong so they isolated themselves. Something like human culture would never enter their eyes.

Even if it was broadcasted on television, the demons wouldn’t be interested enough to give it a single glance.

My name might eventually leak to them but they wouldn’t move until they were confident. No, would they even make a move?

It would undoubtedly take them a long time to confirm this. I was certain of this because I knew the nature of the demons. During that time, I had confidence that I could get ahead so that they wouldn’t be able to touch me by the time they noticed.

I looked Chrisley in the eye.

“There is no need to know that.”

“Huhu. You really have courage. But I don’t love people like that. Humans like you are stupid for stepping into the dungeon owned by me. Someone like you is called an Awakened?”

The translation magic and voice amplification spell meant that Chrisley’s words were clearly heard.

Everyone panicked at her remark.

Dungeon Master! 72 dungeons had simultaneously appeared in the world. Many investigations were being made but almost none of the mysteries had been revealed. This was the first time an owner had been revealed.

Chrisley turned her head.

“Listen humans.”

She was calm and dignified.

Her intelligence was 100 and her magic power was also very high. A beauty and poise that couldn’t be shaken by anyone.

“Not long ago, I became aware that humans had entered my dungeon. Those dirty feet dared enter my dungeon without permission so I gave them direct punishment.”

Her tone and nature seemed to slightly mimic the Grand Duke

Ariel. Grand Duke Ariel was a cold demon and this was quite effective on the humans.

The people who heard her words were resentful. If that was true then the 1st monster wave wouldn't have happened.

However, Chrisley just continued without caring.

“But that wasn't enough. You really don't know anything. It won't be difficult for me to get rid of this country. You saw that just now.”

Her words had power. People had seen the overwhelming combat strength of the creatures. If she called out all her creatures...

Just imagining it was horrible.

“Humans. I am speaking to the Awakened. I am the king of the dungeon and your destiny is to kill me. Just like you killed the mighty earth golem in front of me!”

Chrisley's eyes became more intense.

“I am a Dungeon Master. I like a strong challenge. The ability for the heroes to grow is truly remarkable. Facing strong people gives me great happiness. Continue to grow stronger in the future...but I can't stand for weak and ordinary humans to step foot in my dungeon.”

Kung! Kung!

Grrruk! Grrruk!

Her mood seemed to worsen.

The tense people around her clenched their fists as they waited.

After 30 seconds.

Chrisley slowly opened her mouth.

“I will only permit the heroes to enter my dungeon. I firmly believe that one day they can become strong enough to challenge me.”

It was at that moment.

One of the silent Awakened suddenly shouted.

“Wait! Then what is the monster wave? If you were intending to remain quiet then why the monster wave?”

Chrisley replied with a flippant attitude.

“I’m not the master of the creatures in my dungeon. Not all the creatures are under my control. So if you heroes want to keep this country, your family and your friends! Make further efforts to become stronger. The creatures beyond my control will gradually escape the dungeon.”

Suitable bait.

The 7th floor dwarf village was accessible to humans and the Dungeon Master was notifying them that not all creatures were under her control.

Chrisley looked at me with curious eyes.

“Your eyes are filled with life. One hero, there are thousands of golems sleeping inside the dungeon that can level this country!”

This was a lie. Something to create fear in the hearts of humans.

There were only 8 advanced golems. If there were several thousand golems then they really could smash the earth.

Chrisley spoke with a lot of strength.

“Humans. Heroes! Reach me. On that day, I will tell the world the truth.”

The speech ended and the creatures started moving. But they

weren't moving back to the dungeon.

Chrisley gave off the impression 'Since I already came out I might as well visit other dungeons' as she refused to return. In addition, her overbearing presence said 'if someone makes the wrong move then I will release the creatures sleeping in the dungeon.'

Everyone could only watch quietly as the parade passed by.

Submission. It was a tacit declaration of defeat.

The dungeon was an unknown place. There were bizarre creatures they had never experienced before.

It might be able to resist other countries but it was impossible to prepare measures against the dungeon. It wasn't possible to destroy the dungeon itself. Every firearm that entered the dungeon was neutralized.

What should they do?

The 21st century. Various countries would go to war for their own interests. But it was impossible to understand the dungeons and creatures.

An overwhelming force that humans couldn't resist so it could be considered a natural disaster. Natural disasters would cause great damage but would pass one day.

But people didn't give up hope. Although the troops were defeated...

The Dungeon Master directly mentioned it.

The last card left for them was the heroes.

*

The body of Turtle Island in the sea started to rapidly swell.

It absorbed the water and quickly grew to the size of a small island.

Soon the creatures boarded it. And I was also among them.

We disappeared like smoke after reaching the east coast of South Korea.

Just like Chrisley, I was wearing a skull mask that covered the right half of my face. It seemed like one mask that had been split in half.

Dark black smoke rose around me like steam. This fog was caused by a creature called 'Shade' so that the humans wouldn't recognize me.

But combined with the skull mask, it created a strange fear.

“It went better than expected.”

Chrisley who was next to me opened her mouth.

The scenario went better than she expected. Initially she was awkward but assimilated over time. No one doubted that she was the Dungeon Master.

Chrisley’s cheeks turned red.

“It feels like putting on a costume.”

“You should become familiar with it.”

“I will remember that, my Dungeon Master.”

She replied without even turning her head. I had carefully explained human science to her.

That’s why Chrisley was comfortable. After my explanation, she eagerly used her brain. She was starting to take the initiative. From training the pyrocks to following the script, she showed complete obedience.

“Depart.”

I said after all the creatures had boarded Turtle Island. Soon the holes on Turtle Island released intense, compressed air to create a powerful shield of air.

Turtle Island took advantage of this air shield for large scale transport. It also acted as a strong form of defense.

Turtle Island began to dive into the sea.

The dungeon wave that took place in South Korea was broadcasted live around the world. The world had no idea where the creatures went after leaving the dungeon.

The creatures were moving around so they couldn't relax.

Everybody was lost for words at a report that a giant turtle dived into the waters of the east coast. The creatures onboard the turtle disappeared in one move.

Destroyers and submarines urgently tried to search for them but it was too late.

And the giant turtle once again appeared at Kamakura City, Kanagawa Prefecture, Japan.

It arrived at Sagami Bay in less than a day.

Kamakura had no large buildings and was filled with many small houses huddled together.

‘We’ll walk from here.’

I had intended to advance to Tokyo immediately but the water depth of Tokyo Bay was too low. I judged that it would be better to move slowly from here.

Turtle Island once again dived back into the sea once all the creatures were off. I opened up my magic power to become familiar with the surroundings.

Chrisley asked with confusion.

“Where is this place?”

“A country the humans called Japan.”

“...This place is going to become filled with turmoil.”

Chrisley laughed bittersweetly as she summarized the situation.

“C-creatures! Run!”

“Eh? Those are creatures? Are they shooting a movie here?”

The humans were greatly surprised and started fleeing. But there were many humans who didn't...

At any rate, it was only a matter of time until Japan's self defense forces arrived.

I smiled coldly.

"We can arrive in half a day. Nothing will stop us."

In fact, it wouldn't even take half a day. All the creatures could arrive in Tokyo in a few hours.

There was no reason to treat Japan differently from South Korea. This territory would be under my jurisdiction so I needed to show an exceptional performance.

"Trample on all of them."

At the same time, the 8 golems started moving heavily.

There was an event nearby and people started running away as soon as they realized the situation.

The golems were at least 8 metres high and they were taller than the surrounding buildings that were only 6 metres. They lightly smashed or stepped on the buildings.

Tatang! Tatang!

The police received a tip but they weren't very helpful. The crude pistols were only useful against creatures like the kobolds. The lowest level creatures were the vanguard but the guns just tickled the medium and advanced creatures.

It was impossible as the golems reached out and squeezed the police cars.

I followed behind the huge golems causing destruction. The dark elves and pyrocks used their mobility while corpses were turned into zombies and joined their ranks. There were already over 300 zombies.

‘A high value.’

The expensive creatures were quite worthy. The 4Lv advanced lich cost 280,000 points but it was worth it.

The griffin caused overwhelming destruction but the lich stimulated the primordial fear of humans. Just that alone made it easy to work.

The griffin flew low above the ground and Chrisley told me.

“My Dungeon Master. The human soldiers aren't far away.”

Fairly fast. It had only been 30 minutes since I left Sagami Bay. The difference with South Korea was huge so I admired their reaction speed.

“Prepare to meet them. The griffin will suffice.”

“I will follow your command.”

Chrisley bowed her head and lightly kicked the griffin. The griffin spread its wings and flew into the sky.

Soon the Fire and Lightning skill could be seen as it melted the Japanese self-defense forces.

Japan’s dungeon was over a radius of 3 kilometres in Tokyo Park. The size of the dungeon was different from South Korea’s dungeon but the composition was similar.

The size was always different from the outward appearance. This dungeon had 35 floors but I remember that the structure was complex.

‘We’ve finally arrived.’

I clicked my tongue as I stood in front of the dungeon.

Handling all the obstacles would be time consuming.

South Korea was my headquarters and this was the enemy's territory. Crushing the dungeon of Adol who belonged to Grand Duke Upa's faction would be a declaration of war.

Of course, I wasn't really interested in Adol and Japan...It was just a formal work. Soon this area would be under my jurisdiction so I needed to let them know fear.

‘Adol. I’m back.’

There were many differences between what I was seeing now and my previous life.

At that time, I was the underdog who lost my dungeon. I had come to Japan thinking to make this dungeon mine.

Of course, it was another loss. I had a severed arm and barely managed to run away. It required 8 potions to restore my severed arm.

Just thinking about the humiliation made my body tremble.

But...the dungeon looked very small to me now.

Could Adol stop the current me?

At that time, I was alone but now I had many powerful creatures

around me.

Griffin, lich, dark elves and pyrocks!

I was much stronger than before.

‘Please don’t disappoint me.’

I slowly entered the dungeon.

Unlike my dungeon, Adol didn’t gradually increase the level of his creatures. He had no interest in the ecology and randomly placed it.

The first thing I saw were the orc shamans. General Awakened wouldn’t even think of entering the dungeon.

It was followed by gnoll champions and arc goblins.

Quite a number of them had been mutated. There were very few creatures naturally born with mutations in my dungeon.

My heart was a little envious when looking at them but only the strong would survive. The ecological balance would completely collapse. The foundation to raise the Awakened would also be lost.

A vicious cycle. This result was due to Adol’s insensitivity.

‘Similar to my previous life.’

A few floors were for breeding. But this type of configuration continued to be repeated. I was sure of it due to my experience.

“I will take the lead from here.”

I knew the inner configuration of the dungeon. I led the creatures through the dungeon maze.

I mercilessly used Wrath as I quickly navigated the dungeon.

*

The dungeon’s top floor.

The demon Adol was in the middle of having sex with an orc when the fairy of the Dungeon Core approached.

“Dungeon Master. Someone is trying to invade.”

Adol’s expression crumbled.

“This lowlife bastard! I told you not to tell me when the someone is acting!”

“I-I can feel some great magic power. There are 8 advanced golems and a griffin...”

“Crazy bastard! A griffin is a high class creature! There is no way to get one yet!”

It was dismissed as a ridiculous story.

The fairy of the Dungeon Core shed tears.

“Really...another demon is invading.”

“Guyo! You damn young bastard. This isn’t the first time you’ve said such things. A fairy is really mischievous and conniving.”

The name of the fairy was Guyo. Just like many fairies, its playfulness made it cross a river of no return.

Adol’s fairy was very mischievous and full of lies.

Even if the fairy had a spiritual body, Guyo didn’t have a death wish.

Adol was a deviant demon that copulated with orcs. Guyo was regularly cursed at by Adol.

But now Guyo’s expression was desperate.

This was the one time Guyo wasn't lying.

The high class griffin and advanced creatures were rapidly rising through the dungeon. From the beginning, they never seemed to get lost at all.

Right now Adol was just snorting incredulously.

It was upsetting that Guyo's words weren't believed.

"The real thing..."

Chwiiik!

Adol was immersed in his previous actions.

Guyo's desperate words were covered up.

*

"How poor."

I said reluctantly as I climbed the dungeon.

Was this originally such a lousy place?

In my previous life I had struggled in Adol's dungeon and now I was easily climbing it. The Dungeon Master was in charge of management and summoning the creatures.

The Dungeon Master should be commanding the creatures from the top floor but I couldn't sense his presence. It felt like they were just 'released' freely.

I lost one arm to something like this.

A dungeon at this level...

Bbuduk! I gritted my teeth.

Almost a year and a half ago. I used that time to actively rise. But judging by the state of the dungeon, this guy had no awareness.

'The other demons will start moving soon.'

Adol.

This guy was so busy with sex that he forgot his duties to the dungeon.

It was shameful for a dungeon to be treated like this so luckily I was here to save it. Would it be able to stand for the next 10 years? In fact, Adol came to a bad end under the hands of the Awakened.

However, the growth of the Awakened in Japan was a lot slower. Adol failed to properly manage his dungeon and everything in Japan was slowed.

But...it won't happen now that I came here.

I would thoroughly change everything.

“My Dungeon Master. I have noticed many orc warriors.”

The griffin flew low. Chrisley spoke from above.

‘Did the strong creatures instinctively gather on the upper floors? The level has risen slightly.’

This would also happen if a Dungeon Master didn't manage this place.

They could freely leave this place.

The more powerful creatures wanted to occupy the upper floors. That's because it was more stable to be near the magic power emitted by the Dungeon Core . That's why stronger creatures were assigned to the higher floors.

I nodded and said.

“Wipe them out.”

The 25th floor.

There was a great number of advanced orc lords. The orc shamans, orc warriors and arc goblins were the best among the intermediate class creatures.

On the other hand, I had nine advanced and high class creatures. A high class creature could easily take care of the intermediate ranked ones.

Quite a few ran away after detecting us. Those who stayed would have their blood spilled in vain.

The scene of a Dungeon Master's dominance. Even if they died, the role of a creature was to prevent any intruders.

‘They won’t leave here alive.’

It was easy to take care of them. I was disappointed and appalled at how weak the enemy dungeon was.

‘There aren’t much points but...’

The creatures in the dungeon gave me a very small amount of points.

At best, they were the standard of 20 minutes of work?

It was still better than nothing.

“Chwiiiik!”

“H-elp!”

The orc warriors were rabble. There was no need to use the griffin. The dark elves were organized in a line while the creatures begged for their lives.

But I already gave orders for their slaughter. The dark elves didn't spare those begging for their lives.

I laughed quietly.

Adol's creatures were a disappointing sight as I swept through the dungeon.

‘By the way.’

I was puzzled.

‘Adol. Did he still not notice?’

Even if Adol hadn't noticed, the Dungeon Core fairy would have noticed it. There were no defenses so it seemed like he really didn't know.

'It has to be.'

Anyway, I had no choice but to feel like Adol was dull as I approached the Dungeon Core.

I had already come up a considerable way so I would notice if troops were gathered.

"Chrisley."

Chrisley who subduing the creatures responded. She immediately descended with the griffin.

"What happen, my Dungeon Master?"

"Hand me the voice amplification ring."

"Here it is, my Dungeon Master."

She pulled off the ring from her finger and handed it respectfully to me on bent knees.

'Itchy.'

I shook my head as I wore the ring. I didn't know why but hearing the words 'my Dungeon Master' made my body itchy.

“Cover your ears.”

The cleanup had finished.

Soon the dark elves, Krasla, Chrisley, the pyrocks, the lich and the golems blocked their ears. I opened up my magic power in order to dominate the creatures. I cleared my throat.

And I shouted louder.

“A-dol-!!”

Kurururu!

Due to opening up my 90 magic power, my voice rang through the dungeon like lightning.

Kurururu!

The dungeon shook. Adol was forced to stop his activities with the orcs.

“What is this magic power?”

“T-the intruder...”

Guyo’s body trembled with anxiety.

The intruders on the 25th floor were already approaching the 26th floor. There were only 10 floors left until the top floor. The intruders were coming without hesitation like they knew the way.

Judging by the speed, there was half a day remaining. It was quite late to prepare.

“My dungeon? Who?”

“A demon. Along with his creatures.”

“So all that nonsense before was true?”

“That’s right...”

Adol’s expression became determined in an instant.

“This useless brat! Why are you only saying this now?”

“I-I tried to tell you...”

A baseless accusation. Guyo tried to say hundreds of times that the intruder was coming. Adol had just ignored Guyo and focused on sex.

Adol spoke with a frown.

“Look up the exact configuration of the creatures that are invading. No, don’t. The crystal ball that shows the entire dungeon. Bring it.”

The crystal ball was specially modified in order to view the whole situation inside the dungeon. Adol had spent 100,000 points on it but it was worth it.

A Dungeon Master couldn’t know the details of those invading the dungeon without the crystal ball. Domestic Mode didn’t show the people invading.

Otherwise he was forced to borrow the power of the fairy but Guyo kept lying to him. Therefore, Adol had to purchase the crystal ball and modified it.

Guyo whined while carrying a huge crystal ball.

Soon Adol confirmed the magic power by injecting magic power into it.

“...This guy?”

“Who is it?”

“Somehow he looks familiar.”

I skull-masked man and woman. A dark elf in front wielding a red spear. Adol thought for a moment before clapping.

“Ah! That guy!”

Demon World Auction!

Krasla and Chrisley were sold there. And the one who bought those two...Randolph Briggsiel.

A demon that the faction of Grand Duke Upa hated.

He couldn't forget.

“It is too bad I don't have a means to contact Upa-nim.”

Grand Duke Upa only gave that to the dukes that followed him. Of course he didn't know Earl Adol.

He also didn't have a way to link to other demons. In the end, he had to handle the intruders himself...

“Huh...is that really the high class griffin? 8 advanced golems and a lich as well? Dragon cake was raked up over there. Great!”

“What?”

But now wasn't the time for admiration.

The creatures were coming to the top floor where the Dungeon Core was.

Guyo was anxious but Adol just snorted.

“Bah. It doesn't matter if he has some advanced creatures. No matter how superior the high class creature, we have the numbers advantage. It is impossible for them to win.”

High class creatures were extremely rare in the Demon World.

There was little chance to meet them but among the high class creatures, the griffin was on the low level. Adol believed that his higher number of advanced creatures could deal with it.

Adol stared at the crystal ball.

Randolph Brigsiel...

‘Upa-nim will look at me differently if I catch him.’

Due to that guy, Grand Duke Upa had suffered ridicule from the other Grand Dukes. Upa wouldn't forget something like that. Adol's prestige would climb if he handed over Randolph Briggsiel's head.

“Guyo. Bring the advanced creature Ornish!”

“O-Ornish? Isn't it still unstable? It will be hard to control.”

“I will direct it personally. As the Dungeon Master, it won't be able to resist my magic power.”

Now Guyo was convinced.

The Dungeon Master's commands were absolute. He could control 'Ornish' directly.

Adol gave a strange laugh.

‘There might be a high class creature but I have a hidden card. Randolph Briggsiel! I will make you regret coming to my dungeon.’

Unlike Randolph Briggsiel, he didn't use any points at the auction. He used the collected points and special mutation skill to create 'Ornish'.

A powerhouse comparable to a 5Lv advanced creature!

The result of a year of hard work.

Ornish would be a match against the griffin.

*

‘He started moving.’

I smirked after noticing that the behaviour of the dungeon started changing.

This behaviour meant that the Dungeon Master Adol finally noticed.

I happily increased the marching speed.

I was looking forward to the reunion with Adol.

It would be disappointing if I came up here without facing a satisfying opponent. Just imagining his power caused a smile to form.

And once I reached the 30th floor, I met Adol who was accompanied by countless creatures...

“Who is this? Are you Randolph Brigsiel?”

It was like meeting a friend after not seeing them for hundreds of years.

I looked around at all the advanced creatures in the surroundings.

6 advanced 2Lv orc lords, two advanced 3Lv giant trolls. Behind them were thousands of orcs and trolls.

Indeed, a formidable power.

I shrugged.

“You remembered.”

“A demon would be very stupid if they forgot! Have you come to swear allegiance to Grand Duke Upa-nim? Or a special pledge to me?”

“No. I know that you can’t contact Upa.”

This was Grand Duke Upa’s nature. At most, he would only have Adol tell him where his dungeon was.

Adol’s face changed at my words.

“Hu! Are you that anxious to die? Or are you confident because of the griffin?”

The griffin was flying in the air. The griffin was designed for attack. No matter how advanced the creature, it wouldn't be able to endure such large numbers.

“Is now the time to be talking?”

“Don't worry! But before entering into battle, I will introduce you to my son Ornish.”

An odd shaped creature emerged from among the trolls and orcs.

That type of appearance...I couldn't describe it.

The size was 2 metres. Broad shoulders like a troll and the face was as ferocious as an orc. There was a long horn on its forehead and the wings were like a giant gargoyle.

I had never seen a creature like this.

I opened up Mind's Eye.

Name: Adol Luph

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Abnormal Sexual Tastes (U, Intelligence +6)

Stats

Strength: 69

Intelligence: 68 (+7)

Agility: 68

Stamina: 61

Magic Power: 70

Potential: (336+7/500)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Life Combination (U), Body Manipulation (U)

[Relative Comparison]

Adol Luph

Strength 69 Intelligence 75 Agility 68 Stamina 61 Magic 70
Potential (336+7/500)

Randolph Brigsiel

Strength 88 Intelligence 66 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 90
Potential (379+23/500)

Name: Ornish

Stats

Strength: 85

Intelligence: 51

Agility: 78

Stamina: 86

Magic Power: 75

Potential: (375/391)

Uniqueness: An organism created by Adol Luph. The skin and tendons of a giant troll, the heart of an orc lord, the wings of a gargoyle and the horn of a unicorn were ingredients used.

Skill: Instant Regeneration (Ex U)

[Relative Comparison]

Ornish

Strength 85 Intelligence 51 Agility 78 Stamina 86 Magic 75
Potential (375/391)

Randolph Brigsiel

Strength 88 Intelligence 66 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 90

‘Life Combination?’

In other words, it was a skill to create mutations. But its abilities were equal to a 5Lv advanced creature. A level that wouldn't be sold in the stores...it was understandable when looking at the ingredients.

‘He must have used a minimum of 700,000 points.’

The 700,000 points weren't worth it when considering the attack stats.

It could grow a little bit more but 700,000 points could buy something more useful at the auction. It also only had one skill ‘Instant Regeneration.’ It would be useless in large scale wars.

‘There are 8 advanced creatures.’

2Lv advanced orc lords, 3Lv advanced giant trolls and Ornish made up the main forces.

If I invested in the Demon World Auction and the Awakened then it would take me 3~4 years to reach this stage.

But obtaining the 8 golems and the griffin had dramatically

reduced my time frame.

“Isn’t it dignified?”

Adol’s face was filled with confidence.

Pisik!

A sound was heard.

I laughed and raised Wrath.

And then said.

“Sweep them all up.”

Kuwuong!

The 8 golems headed towards the orcs.

The orc lords pushed with their giant axes but couldn’t stop them. The orcs had a high reproduction rate but the orc lords were no match for the golems.

Charung!

Hwaaack!

Lightning poured from the mouth of the griffin.

Hundreds of orcs evaporated.

“What are you doing? Stop the golem! Make sure the griffin falls!”

Adol was frustrated.

Shortly after the battle started. His creatures were being overwhelmed.

‘Numbers aren’t everything.’

Sometimes too many numbers could get in the way. The large number of orcs were just food for the griffin as they were destroyed.

Orc lords? Advanced grade 2Lv. The lich and golems had a higher rating. The lich and golems were very strong in power.

There were only two giant trolls.

The remaining ‘mob’ could be entrusted to the griffin.

This was a strategy I planned as soon as I obtained the griffin.

Adol grinded his teeth together.

“Ornish! Kill the griffin! Don’t let that damn bird fly in front of me!”

Kuweek! Ornish dripped saliva as it started moving.

I was about to use Wrath on Ornish when Krasla came up to me.

“Dungeon Master. Give me the chance to deal with that guy.”

I hesitated for a moment before saying.

“Krasla. You want to take on that orc variant?”

Krasla bowed his head even deeper.

“That’s correct. It is only an orc variant so there is no need for Dungeon Master to make a move.”

Krasla definitely wanted to be pitted against Ornish. The stats weren’t very different but Ornish appeared insane. The odds were in Krasla’s favour if he used his skills.

“I’ll allow it.”

“I will definitely bring you victory!”

Cheok!

Krasla ran with his spear. Ornish who was rushing towards the griffin was forced to stop as Krasla intercepted it.

‘Now...’

If not Ornish then there was only one opponent left.

Adol.

Ornish certainly wasn’t worthy to fight me.

The kings should fight among themselves. I should at least fight a Dungeon Master.

I moved around the dark elves. I walked without stopping until I arrived in front of Adol.

“We seem to be the only ones left.”

“T-this!”

Adol's face was flushed.

There was no choice.

The griffin was wreaking havoc among his creatures. An Earl was lacking compared to a Duke or Grand Duke.

I kicked the ground.

Wrath moved vertically and struck his shoulder.

“Kkuck!”

It happened in an instant.

Adol stared at his torn left arm with disbelief.

There was a difference of 60 stats between them. Besides, I had crossed the ‘junction’ that was 400 points so Adol couldn't resist.

I leisurely placed Wrath on my shoulder and said.

“Do you know why Adol was sent from the Demon World Auction?”

“What?”

Adol who was in pain stared at me.

I shrugged.

“His ego is strong so shouldn't I pay back his kindness? Isn't it good that the spirits intervened?”

“Don't talk nonsense!”

“Duke Pakan Griolli and Grand Duke Upa stood in front of me. And then he realized. That they wouldn't be able to stop me.”

Adol's expression distorted.

“Bullshit! Grand Duke Upa-nim afraid of someone like you? You've only given me one wound!”

That blind, rotting faith.

But I didn't pay attention to it.

“The other three Grand Dukes were watching. Pakan and Upa fell in favour. A Grand Duke and his faction were forcefully removed. So I can take care of Upa in the future. He won't be able to beat me.”

“This...!”

The 4 Grand Dukes.

The demons had infinite faith in the Grand Dukes.

But that way of thinking was wrong. It wasn't easy to change Adol's opinion towards Upa. Therefore I didn't bother.

Adol wouldn't be logical involving this matter. Upa's followers didn't care even if he was a sadistic bastard.

‘This isn't a lie.’

A thin smile.

In addition, there was no benefit in being under Upa's employ. I was the critical factor involved in making Upa lose some privileges.

Thanks to Dubolong's help, he wasn't able to return to the Demon World Auction. And it was like a 'declaration of war' to Grand Duke Upa.

I declared.

“I will start with you. I'll cut Upa's limbs off one by one as I move

up from below. He is too much of a nuisance to let it go.”

“I will tear out your mouth!”

Adol’s body started to transform. His muscles became bigger.

The Body Manipulation (U) skill.

But my eyes were still cold as I watched him.

“How foolish.”

I raised Wrath again.

This was just a provocation.

In the end, Adol was just a great disappointment.

*

-Incredible achievement! A demon has been slayed for the first time!

2,000,000pt will be paid.

Adol's throat was cut.

A message window rose up stating that 2,000,000pt were paid.

‘Ha!’

In one year and a half, I had earned approximately 2.5 million points. But killing Adol gave me 2 million points all at once.

This was a huge first achievement but...it meant the demons weren't fighting each other yet.

In addition, it was likely that a party of human Awakened had previously gained the achievement first. The Awakened grew steadily until they could match the capabilities of the demons.

Eventually there were one or two parties of Awakened that could defeat the dungeons. Among the dead were demons.

Kiik. Kieeek!

I turned my head towards the sound.

Ornish started to glow after its master died. It instinctively moved to perform the last command that Adol left behind. But it couldn't use its regeneration ability so the assault was just suicide.

Soon Krasla's red spear sliced off Ornish's head.

The thousands of orcs were killed by the griffin while the giant trolls and orc lords were defeated by the golems.

Of course, there was some damage. 9 dark elves and 3 golems were lost.

“Not bad.”

I nodded.

It was less damage than I thought. There was also the reward from the achievement.

The results were beyond my expectations.

*

The dungeon's top floor.

I stood in front of the Dungeon Core fairy that was trembling with fright.

“What is your name?”

“G-Guyo.”

Guyo?

Guyo seemed to attach ‘Guyo’ to the end of his speech. A fairy’s name was usually something like this.

I said confidently.

“Guyo. You are dependent on me. Your previous master Adol was a very poor guy. He had a zero chance of becoming the devil. But as you have seen, I am different.

Guyo’s expression changed at my words.

Guyo had been worrying about this for a long time.

Gulp!

Guyo swallowed hard.

The fairies made a bargain with the devil to help the demons in order to become the Fairy King.

If their demon died then the fairy had two choices.

First of all, the fairy had no concept of death. But without the

Dungeon Core, there was no energy. If a fairy lost the energy of the Dungeon Core then it would have to start from scratch again. This time could take billions of years.

So the first choice. Start again with a new core.

Second. Accept a new master. However, a new contract with shackles needed to be formed. Sometimes the shackles were so powerful that it could lead to their destruction. The penalty of losing the contract would significantly increase.

The following opportunities would be destroyed. Starting from scratch could mean eternal annihilation. It is an entirely different concept of death. An extreme fear that only the fairies would feel.

So...a fairy had to choose carefully.

Their new master must be someone with a chance to become the devil. It wouldn't be able to accept a third demon. The energy of a fairy's soul was used to form the contract and there wasn't enough for a third chance.

Guyo looked up at the man.

At the same time, he remembered the battle.

He had overcome the difference in numbers, Ornish and the Dungeon Master. He already owned a high class griffin so Guyo felt dizzy at the thought.

At the very least, Guyo never sensed anything like this from Adol.

Adol was very angry after the discovery of the intruders. He had a very hostile attitude after hearing the name Grand Duke Upa.

The man said he overcome the powerful faction. The man seemed very confident. He had no hesitation to use his power.

Growing up...he might really become the devil.

Guyo slowly opened his mouth.

*

I was still waiting.

I knew the importance of this selection so I remained silent.

After several minutes passed, Guyo opened his mouth.

“Guyo won’t be mistreated?”

“As long as you faithfully fulfill your duties.”

“T-then...please let me meet the other fairy. Then I will decide.”

Guyo seemed to have already made a decision in his heart.

“That won’t be difficult.”

Fortunately this requirement was simple. I accepted and recalled an image of Yihi.

Thanks to the fairy’s blessing, I could connect and have a conversation with her.

‘Yihi.’

-Who is it?

A fast response.

I verified that the connection was working and said.

‘Can you manifest where I am?’

-Ah, Master. Yihi thought that I was having a psychotic break. I suddenly heard a voice inside me. I’m really glad it wasn’t like that. It can’t be helped. This is the first time Master spoke to me inside my head. It is natural that Yihi was confused. By the way, isn’t that the dungeon in Japan? It is regrettable that Yihi can’t

help you in that dungeon. Ah, that's right. What is the result? Yihi was so curious that I've been teasing the bees. Of course, I have no doubt that Master will win...

I broke the connection.

I nodded towards Guyo.

“Loosen the wards.”

“Ah...! Y-you have received a blessing! The fairy scent on your lips! Oh my god!”

Guyo's eyes became as large as a lantern. And Guyo's wings flapped excitedly.

“T-then it is okay. I accept. You are a friend of the fairies. I will believe you.”

The attitude changed by 180 degrees. It seemed like the blessing of a fairy was an important thing.

It was solved simply.

Guyo started flying in the air. The wings of the fairy sprayed powder in the air that formed letters.

“What is thy name?”

“Randolph Brigsiel.”

Intense light poured from the letters.

Guyo spoke with a serious expression.

“Does Randolph Brigsiel agree to be the fairy Guyo’s new master?”

“That’s right.”

“As the master of a dungeon, will you do your best to become the devil?”

“Of course.”

“The contract has been completed. Devil bless this fairy!”

The end?

It was the first time I had obtained a lost dungeon. The contract was much simpler than I thought. I was slightly bewildered.

Paaack!

There was an enormous surge of magic power from the Dungeon Core.

And...

-A unique achievement! The first occupation of a dungeon was successful.

-The title 'First to Occupy a Dungeon' has been given.

-The title of 'First to Occupy a Dungeon' has transformed into 'Dungeon Hunter.'

-Congratulations!

'Dungeon Hunter' is a special title given to the one who achieved two conditions at the same time, being the first to hunt a demon and the first to occupy a dungeon.

-Hunt more demons.

There are many more dungeons to occupy! Challenge an incomprehensible area. There is no way to know what is at the

end.

The title was changed.

I was puzzled and checked my status window.

Name: Randolph Briggsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: *Dungeon Hunter (residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

* Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic +6)

Stats

Strength: 79 (+9)

Intelligence: 64 (+2)

Agility: 74 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic Power: 82 (+8)

Potential: (379+23/500)

Remaining Stat Points: 3

Electric Power: 4GW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has been transplanted (Full strength hasn't been fully opened). Changes have occurred in the Lightning God Technique since swallowing a huge amount of magic power. The results are unpredictable.

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind's Eye (Ex U), Lightning God Technique (???), Wrath (Epic)

‘Rating...none.’

This was a title?

The rating itself couldn't be seen but the description meant there was a chance to obtain '140' stats.

70 dungeons, 70 demons!

It was virtually impossible to handle all of them by myself but my expectations were high.

Residual stats could be used to break through the limits. If I reached my maximum potential of 500 then the residual stats could be used to break through the limit.

I could sense the difference after having one of my stats break through to 90. I couldn't imagine the difference once it reached 100. After reaching 100, it was also possible to rise to 110 and 120.

Maybe even more than that.

‘Crazy.’

It was indeed a crazy title. And the title fit me perfectly.

I was walking alone. I would feed on the demons and their dungeons to reach the top. Hunting them would make me stronger and increase my stats more than some titles.

The status window showed my remaining points.

I received 1 stat point from the easter egg at the Demon World Auction. And this time I gained 2 for a total of 3 extra stat points.

“Haha!”

A bright mood.

To be honest, I couldn't remember any useless title in my previous life. However, hunting and conquering more dungeons would increase the territory I needed to protect. It was like a double edge sword but the title of Dungeon Hunter could make it a legendary treasure.

‘It isn't over yet.’

The smile lasted for a long time.

Adol was killed and I obtained his dungeon. Now was the time to look for additional benefits in the dungeon.

“Guyo. How many points did Adol have?”

Guyo hesitantly said.

“4,500...points.”

“...”

My smile was erased in an instant.

It was fortunate that I obtained 2 million points for being the first to hunt a demon. Adol had clearly used a lot of points to make Ornish.

I decided to invest 500,000 points in the Japan dungeon.

This had to be done first.

I used Domestic Mode to check the status of the dungeon.

The creatures were mixed together so it would take a long time to divide them.

At any rate, the breeding situation of the creatures wasn't bad.

40,000 goblins, 10,000 kobolds, 10,000 gnolls, orc shamans...

“What happened with the arc goblins? There are too many of them. Did Adol summon them?”

The arc goblin was an intermediate 2Lv creature. It was similar to the common goblins but had much higher strength and agility. it was a tyrant known as the ‘Little Predator’ that ate all life around them.

There were 48 arc goblins. That number almost reached 50. Speaking of which, I could occasionally see arc goblins wandering the top floor.

Adol liked orcs so it was surprising to see any goblins.

Guyo shook his head at my question.

“No. The arc goblins were a natural occurrence.”

“There should be a limit to the mutation. That is ridiculous.”

“I don’t know...”

Guyo was grouchy.

I started thinking.

‘Is this specific to the dungeon?’

The wavelength of magic varied between dungeons. The creatures would adapt differently. It was very rare but sometimes demons could find that specificity to use it.

This was probably why the goblins multiplied.

‘The wavelength of magic in this dungeon is a good match for the goblins. They can reproduce depending on the climate, flora or fauna.’

This was worth experimenting with.

“Guyo. Other than the goblins, push all the creatures in one place.”

Under the Dungeon Master’s command, it was possible for the fairy to supervise the creatures.

It was hard with the orcs and trolls who had low intelligence.

Of course, there was still a method with the creatures with low intelligence. If a kobold or goblin boss was summoned then control would be easy. It was necessary to spend a little bit of time on separating the creatures.

“I understand. This is the first task you gave me so I will work hard.”

Guyo said while flapping his wings. The wounds from Adol were very large.

‘He doesn’t say his name.’

This was different from Yihi. Was this the difference between self-esteem? The physiology of a fairy differed between individuals.

His jaw tightened.

‘An arc goblin will reproduce for survival. I should try some different experiments.’

I had returned but I didn’t know everything.

In particular, I was ignorant about anything related to dungeons.

But I was determined to take on this challenge.

I would be directly involved in the ecological improvement of the dungeon. It felt like I was a god. Perhaps this was meant to make the demons take more interest in the human world.

Either way...if my experiment was successful then I could apply it in South Korea. It would be more efficient if I could breed a large number of creatures that matched the wavelength of the dungeon.

While I concentrated on these matters, I had Chrisley search the Japan dungeon with the pyrocks.

The first thing I did was separate the creatures by floor.

The goblins were on the 1st floor, the kobolds the 2nd, the gnolls the 3rd, the 4th floor were the orcs and the 5th floor the trolls.

Now that they were separated, the natural predators disappeared.

‘The specific reproduction of the goblins. It will change when predators are gone.’

I was most interested in the goblins.

I wondered whether a large number of arc goblins were born to protect themselves from enemies or if it was influenced by the wavelength of the dungeon.

There was a noticeable change in the reproductive rate. The birth rate lowered after the predators disappeared. After observing the for 1 week, I was able to determine that it was reduced by 30%. This is somewhat credible.

In addition, the goblins had a hard time giving birth. Eight of them would die at once so the population would rapidly decrease in 6 months.

With no natural predators, it showed a similar birth rate to the dungeon in South Korea.

I saw it as natural selection. I needed to make certain choices if I wanted to maintain the population at a constant ratio.

But I confirmed that...the main cause of death was dystocia.

‘The survival rate is very high.’

537 goblins were born in a week.

519 safely came into the world.

18 had died due to dystocia.

That was different from my dungeon. The death rate of the goblins in South Korea due to dystocia was 20%. If this place was

South Korea's dungeon then 100 out of 537 would have died.

The difference between the figures were too big.

‘There is something.’

This feeling was never wrong.

If Japan's dungeon was optimized to goblins then the South Korea dungeon must be optimized to a certain creature.

‘It might be due to the wavelength of the dungeon or the climate and environment. A source that allows the creatures to live in the dungeons. However, this transition doesn't always match their body. If Japan is goblins...I need to find out the breed for the South Korea dungeon.’

All the creatures I've summoned so far. All of them failed to show optimization. I had no choice but to individually check the different species.

‘Of course, it would be foolish to fill the dungeon only with creatures matching the wavelength. If Japan's dungeon was only filled with goblins then the weakness is obvious...I need to reasonably adjust the ratio. I just have to reference this.’

I thought about it in advance.

This was the type of worry associated with developing a country.

At any rate, it would help the development of the dungeon to find the species that matched the wavelength. This was still a hypothesis but if my theory was correct then I wouldn't need to waste a large number of points.

“My Dungeon Master. I found a place that I think is the altar of fire.”

Chrisley came with the griffin and pyrocks.

I looked at her for a moment.

Even the griffin seemed to be obedient to Chrisley.

Anyway, she came at the right time.

I ended Domestic Mode.

The only things left would take time.

I nodded and said.

“Guide me.”

All dungeons contained four altars with different attributes.

The altar regulated the internal flow of magic power and maintained the powerful barrier outside the dungeon. If all four altars collapsed then the barrier would disappear and the dungeon would be exposed to human firearms.

Therefore, each altar had two advanced golems protecting it.

They were set to automatically attack if someone other than the Dungeon Master approached.

In contrast, the Dungeon Master could move them in any way.

But...I was more curious about the message left by the gods.

Sentences that required 100 intelligence to read.

I wondered why such high intelligence was needed as I had never heard of a demon reaching 100 intelligence. It meant that the demons couldn't reach 100 intelligence.

Then the gods determined that I would someday reach 100 intelligence after returning and set that as the triggering condition.

Of course, the sentences wouldn't appear if I wasn't near.

I checked it through Chrisley.

‘Isn’t it too easy to obtain?’

This was a ‘gift.’ It would be fine without the trigger condition. But it was easy to obtain and easy to use. Wasn’t there any restrictions?

The degree of the gift was a griffin. The level might be low but it was still a high class creature. A creature that was sufficient as a hidden card. I judged that there must be some conditions.

Something that could be easily found with 100 intelligence...if I reached it then I could receive the ‘gift.’

But I didn’t reach 100 intelligence. I could only read it because of Chrisley.

Like right now.

“This is the place of a fallen god. Here is our grave and our shackles. We have returned to our origins. I am the Earth God Geb. Together with my will...receive my last gift.”

South Korea’s dungeon had words left by the God of Wisdom Minerva.

Now Chrisley read similar but subtly different words.

Minerva spoke about the place inside the dungeon while Geb seemed to give a cryptic phrase.

Grave and shackles. Return to the origins...

I pondered on the meaning for a moment.

Kururung!

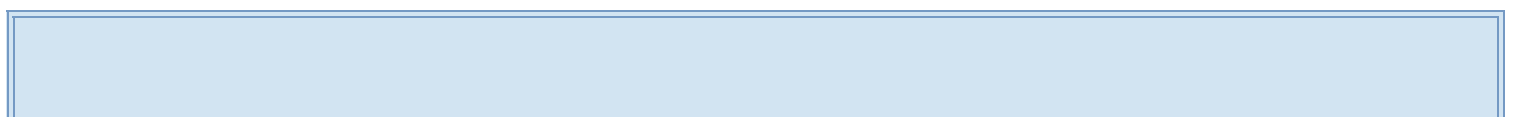
A crack above the altar. Chaotic and holy magic power from Geb rose in the local area. A huge creature soon appeared through the tear in space.

‘Gigantes!’

4 metres tall. A giant warrior wearing black helmet and armour. Red eyes that reminded me of the dignity of a high class creature could be seen in the opening of the helmet.

Similar to the griffin that could be called a 1Lv high class creature.

I opened Mind’s Eye with dry lips.



Name: Gigantes
Stats Strength: 94 Intelligence: 71 Agility: 75 Stamina: 92 Magic Power: 74 Potential: (406/414)
Uniqueness: A black knight of the giant species that is a close aid to the Earth God Geb. He has a very noble character. He will not bow his head to anyone. Passing a test is required to obtain him. Skill: Gigantic Slash (Epic), Arms of the Earth (Ex U)

Gigantes.

He was looking at me with very angry eyes. It seemed a test was needed.

I started laughing.

‘Let’s take a look.’

Chapter 55-56: Gigantes

94 strength and 92 stamina. These two physical abilities were over 90.

I was well ahead in magic power.

‘I need to raise my intelligence as soon as possible.’

It was disgraceful that I was lagging behind Gigantes in intelligence. However, I decided not to invest the remaining points in intelligence.

I took out Wrath.

“Chrisley. I am going.”

Chrisley’s eyes were very wide and she said in a worried tone.

“Will you be okay?”

“I won’t fight a losing battle.”

I wouldn’t come out if I wasn’t qualified.

Gigantes might have the advantage in physical ability but that was it. The total sum of my stats was similar to Gigantes. I would

use my strong attack skills, techniques and judgement to win.

Chrisley glanced at Gigantes before bowing to me.

“Please be careful, my Dungeon Master:.”

Soon Chrisley led the griffin and pyrocks away from the altar.

I also commanded the two fire golems guarding the altar to move out of here. The golems pushed through the thin walls until I was left alone with Gigantes.

“You have been waiting a long time.”

“You, defeat me! Then, I will follow.”

This place was prepared for me.

Gigantes had a short pronunciation.

I held Wrath and took an attack stance.

“I was going to do that from the beginning. Paranormal.”

Paranormal was a unique grade ring. An item that would randomly trigger one of five blessings.

-Paranormal's blessing! A powerful attraction has been granted.

I clicked my tongue. I was given charm. It was actually the most useless blessing.

Kung!

I strongly pushed off with my feet.

Jijijik!

At the same time, an electric current spread through my body. I momentarily reached out for Lightning God.

I could confirm it through my inner eyes. I could take advantage of magic power. I preferred a fierce struggle involving sweat and blood but this would still work.

I took advantage of magic power when using skills.

Kururung!

Gigantes struck the ground with a large hexagonal shaped club. The dungeon started endlessly ringing.

94 strength. An incredible power that could push a mountain! I wouldn't survive if I was standing in front of it. My stamina was 82 so it was a little low to defend against Gigantes.

‘Now!’

However, the large actions meant it was easy to avoid. Luckily Gigantes' agility wasn't high so I could read his movements.

I struck with Wrath the moment Gigantes' club hit the ground.

Chwaruru!

A strong current flowed from Wrath towards the ground. The current soon reached the club that Gigantes' hands were wrapped around.

“Hup!”

There was a relationship between intelligence and magic power. And Gigantes didn't have high magic power. Lightning God Technique was able to deal a decisive blow thanks to that.

Gigantes' hands momentarily loosened from the club. I immediately removed Wrath from the ground and kicked off. I jumped high in the air and aimed Wrath at Gigantes. No matter how high the stamina, there was no creature that could survive

losing its head or heart!

But my plan was doomed to fail in the execution stage.

Kurururung! The ground of the dungeon surged up to defend Gigantes' head. But I couldn't break it because it wasn't ordinary rock.

Kakang!

The problem was that it was strengthened by a skill.

Arms of the Earth (Ex U) skill. A specialized skill for defense.

Wrath couldn't pierce the wall and Gigantes strongly swung his club.

'Dangerous!'

The club was being filled with a strong magic power.

Gigantes had two skills and the remaining Gigantic Slash (Epic) was used. Gigantic Slash wasn't a skill that I could counter.

I hastily retreated as Gigantes prepared the attack.

Gigantes wielded the club that had a significant amount of

condensed magic power.

Kwaaaaang!

Intense vibrations. The surrounding pressure was sucked into the club. A 10 metres large crack was formed. It stretched out along the ground and walls.

I barely managed to avoid being hit by it.

Truly an epic level. It was comparable to the griffin's lightning. Rather, the attack power seemed slightly stronger. The griffin's lightning attack was a wide area attack while Gigantes' skill was more concentrated.

I frowned.

Once the skill ended, half of the altar had vanished without a trace.

‘It isn't impossible to repair but.....’

Literally a mess. I seemed to have chosen the wrong place. It was evident that the altar would require a considerable amount of time to fix.

Either way, I could be sure of one thing with this attack.

‘Not that bad.’

I didn’t have to use the Wrath skill.

I calmly looked at Gigantes.

Arms of the Earth gave him superior defense but Gigantes couldn’t attack while it was active. It also took a little bit of time to trigger. And Gigantic Slash exerted absolute havoc but it was easily avoided.

I should target these two properties.

I determined my course of action and immediately jumped up again. Gigantes was also aware that I was floating in the air. He tried to swing his club at me as I struck his body with Wrath.

Chiik! Wrath scratched Gigantes. My physical ability was lower but I used ‘technique’ to my advantage.

I narrowed the distance to Gigantes’ throat. If I was this close then Arms of the Earth wouldn’t trigger.

Pasak!

I used all my power to pierce his neck but it couldn’t go in deeply. I struggled to cut the skin. I wasn’t embarrassed to stick my body close to Gigantes.

‘My strength is low but that isn’t the reason. It feels like I am hitting a wall. Does Arm of the Earth also enhance the physical abilities of the body?’

Dirt seemed to fall from the cut on his neck.

Tsk!

I didn’t think there would be a second wall around the body.

“G-grrr!”

But that didn’t mean nothing happened. Gigantes had hard skin but I used magic power. The magic power that filled Wrath caused damage to the wound.

“Mischief, here, up!”

Gigantes was very angry. Smoke rose from his body as he started gathering power.

Gigantes was preparing Gigantic Slash.

I quickly switched from offense to defense and prepared for the shock. But...this Gigantic Slash had a subtly different feel to it.

‘It will hit everywhere!’

I started frowning.

I deemed that it was impossible to avoid so I poured all my power into the Lightning God Technique. I would use it to offset the Gigantic Slash.

There were a difference in the skill rating but I had much higher magic power. I poured all my power into the skill.

But it didn’t take me long to figure out that it was the wrong decision.

Kuaaaaaaang!

It seemed like a lightning storm was occurring. It was a disaster because the slash wasn’t lacking magic power.

The vibration of this Gigantic Slash couldn’t compare to the one before. The width was dozens of metres...I pulled up all my magic power with gritted teeth.

I overlapped the wavelength of magic power in order to increase the density. The layered electric shield stood before me to block the Gigantic Slash.

Jijijik! Jijijik!

I had created exactly 7 layers.

7 layers was the limit of the Lightning God Technique but it was instantly being peeled off by Gigantic Slash.

2nd layer, 4th layer, 6th layer. Finally the 7th layer of the shield broke.

The damage of Gigantic Slash had greatly decreased during this time but I was forced to face the rest with my body.

“Cough!”

The slash hit my chest.

I was forced backwards and coughed up blood.

‘It is unfortunate.’

I wiped off the blood at my lips while confirming the injury. There was a large wound from my shoulder to my bellybutton. It scratched the sleeping Lightning God at the same time. Blood relentlessly flowed.

If I dragged the time out then it would become more disadvantageous.

Should I use the Wrath skill?

Oddly enough, I had a strange confidence that I could win without using Wrath. I was experiencing the aftermath of the attack so I couldn't understand it.

“Cough!”

But...at that moment my body started feeling feverish. This feeling was similar to when I received the Heart of the Hell Monarch. Blood started moving around my entire body.

Magic power was flowing from my heart. The magic power flowing fiercely started eroding my entire body. My expression hardened.

‘The flow of magic power is reversing!’

I gritted my teeth.

Magic power reversal. A phenomenon that could kill a demon!

I had already experienced something like this. I knew the feeling well. Definitely. The power from Gigantic Slash had flowed into my heart.

The magic power contained in the Heart of the Hell Monarch

transcended imaginable levels. But if it awakened then it would increase my magic power and intelligence. Fighting Gigantes wouldn't be a problem.

I urgently focused mentally.

I corrected the flow of magic power. The maximum amount of magic power was given to the heart while the rest was focused on repairing the wounds.

Potions or elixirs wouldn't be helpful. Forcefully sealing the magic power might cause unknown side effects.

The only way was to restore the magic power reversal. But an unexpected thing happened once again.

I had been hit by Gigantic Slash between my heart and my bellybutton.

Lightning God sleeping underneath my bellybutton started waking up. Then it swallowed up handfuls of the magic power like it was hungry?

Lightning God was incapable of going near my heart. It acted like it was fleeing from a horrible existence. Now it wasn't acting like that. It was defiantly gobbling up the magic power.

I stopped putting boundaries on the magic power. So it started overflowing again. It would be beneficial if I could reduce it...in

my calculations there weren't any losses.

Thus Lightning God started devouring the magic power. At that time, all my focus was on Lightning God.

-Heart of the Hell Monarch has woken up.

-‘Lightning God Technique (U)’ has evolved to ‘Lightning Elemental (Epic).’

‘Lightning Elemental’ is a common property of the spirits. It has been reborn as a special spirit after swallowing the magic power of a true demonic dragon, dark elf and Hell Monarch.

I opened my eyes.

The sight before me didn't look any different from before. But a very big change had happened inside me. I could be certain of one thing.

My spirit felt refreshed. My magic power was stable and it also healed my injuries. Lightning God was even more lively than before.

‘Status window.’

I could easily see the changes this way.

The status window soon surfaced in front of me.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl(Dungeon Master)

Title: *Dungeon Hunter (residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

* Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, all stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic +6)

Stats

Strength: 79 (+9)

Intelligence: 72 (+2)

Agility: 74 (+2)

Stamina: 80 (+2)

Magic Power: 85 (+8)

Potential: (390+23/500)

Remaining Stat Points: 3

Electric Power: 16GW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has has woken up.

Skill: Skill Combination (R), Mind’s Eye (Ex U), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Wrath (Epic)

-[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 88 Intelligence 66 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 90
Potential (379+23/500)

Strength 88 Intelligence 74 Agility 76 Stamina 82 Magic 93
Potential (390+23/500)

Intelligence had greatly increased. It rose by 8. It was as sweet as discovering an oasis in the desert. My low intelligence was already

holding me back.

And magic power by 3. It was remarkable considering that my magic power had already reached 90.

Also...my original 4GW electric power had instantly transformed into 16GW. 1GW was 1,000 megawatts so it had grown by 250 times. Considering that original figures of the 12 star Lightning God Technique, it had increased by 4 times.

Finally, the skill had changed. The three question marks had disappeared and it changed into Lightning Elemental (Epic).

A epic grade spirit? Almost none of the common spirits reached beyond the rare rating. An epic rating was equivalent to a high class spirit.

I called Lightning God out of my body.

‘Come out.’

Jijjik!

The form of a snake made out of lightning emerged as I called. It was only the size of a skull but it gave off a strong presence.

This snake was Lightning God. The snake didn't look that different from the way I imagined it when it was wandering in my

body. I nodded and turned my head.

“You have been waiting a long time.”

“You, blocked it. Changed. I wait! You, knight!”

Gigantes looked at me with curiosity.

I just laughed.

I had blocked the maximum power Gigantic Slash. The status window said that Gigantes was a knight of a god.

He had high intelligence and respected the opponent.

That’s why he didn’t attack me.

‘A gift is a gift.’

It was a welcome but unexpected gift.

This whole thing hadn’t gone as I planned but surprises like these were the fun part of the ‘Devil’s Game.’

Even if I returned...thinking of all the elements waiting for me that I hadn’t experienced in my previous life made me excited.

The path wasn't fixed. The path to the Devil's throne wouldn't be smooth. Reaching the peak of the Demon World was my goal. That was the only reason to get my hands on the name 'Devil.'

I was convinced from the time I first made that goal.

"Then the 2nd round will start."

It was the start of a full-fledged struggle.

Lightning God evolved into a lightning spirit!

At first I thought it was the size of a skull but it gradually became bigger during the battle. Soon the snake was large enough to be called a type of 'dragon.'

The epic grade skill used my high magic power to drill through Gigantic Slash.

'The electric power is rapidly reducing.'

I had a total of 16GW. 1GW was disappearing every minute. This meant Lightning God would work for 16 minutes tops.

'16 minutes is not enough.'

However, Lightning God definitely came in handy. It could neutralize Gigantic Slash and penetrate through Arm of the Earth.

Gigantes couldn't withstand the high magic power accumulated in each strike. He only endured due to his high magic power.

“Kuwaaahhh!”

Gigantes couldn't think straight due to the attack on all sides from Lightning God. It was just a matter of time. Eventually Lightning God entered his body.

‘It is certainly a great power.’

Gigantes looked a little tired.

Lightning God shut down the pure muscles. He had transcended the border of 90 stat points. But it was impossible for him to cut off the magic power.

Electric power reduced twice as fast. There was only a few minutes remaining at most. I needed to bring an end to this now.

“What, this! You, no. This can't be!”

Gigantes shouted like a beast.

I shrugged.

“I gained a new skill thanks to the time you gave me. Weren’t you aware that I changed?”

Gigantes had noticed the changes inside my body. He waited until the change was completed. Therefore he didn’t have the right to complain about the skill.

As expected, the furious Gigantes couldn’t fight anymore.

“Grrrr! Lost!”

“Did I pass the test?”

“Yes! You, I now follow.”

Hwiririk!

I put away Wrath and Lightning God. Lightning God rapidly became smaller as it was sucked into my body.

‘Two high class creatures.’

Griffin and Gigantes!

It was a ridiculous performance for less than 2 years.

High class creatures were very limited until the second half of the war. Only Dukes or above could handle a high class creature...I looked at Gigantes with pleasure.

Kung!

Then the wounded Gigantes kneeled down.

“Master!”

I exited the altar with Gigantes.

Chrisley was waiting for me in front of the wall.

“You’re safe.”

“You must have been worried.”

I spoke like it wasn’t a big deal.

The magic power reversal was a bit dangerous but I still had the ‘Wrath’ skill remaining. But the result was like I expected.

“I am your faithful servant. I spend every day worrying about you.”

“Tell me if there are any problems. I feel good today so I will listen.”

I obtained a lot.

Having a high class creature with a certain degree of intelligence like Gigantes would solve some of my problems. It also felt good to have my skill rating increase.

Then Chrisley said with pink cheeks.

“T-then...my Dungeon Master. Tonight...”

She didn't say anything else. But I could understand her meaning. There had been little contact with Chrisley since the ceremony.

And after going through several dangers? I also felt desire swell.

“There is no need to wait for night.”

I roughly kissed Chrisley.

My consciousness was engrossed and I didn't come out until three days later.

The task of taking over the Japan dungeon.

I obtained a few items that originally belonged to Adol.

‘Modified Dungeon Crystal Ball and Seed of the World Tree. This is good.’

The Dungeon Crystal Ball was an magic item that allowed me to see inside the dungeon. It required 100,000 points to purchase so I gratefully accepted it from Adol.

And the Seed of the World Tree. It was a useful item to change the terrain.

If I planted the Seed of the World Tree then a dense forest would grow overnight. A size that couldn't be compared to the small forest that Yihi made. It would be impossible to get through one layer of the forest.

‘An item that wasn't mentioned in the shop.....’

I remember it came out a few times in the Demon World Auction. But the Seed of the World Tree hadn't come out in the previous auction. This meant Adol gained it separately but I didn't know the source.

Anyway, it would be very effective when planting it in an area of

dark elves.

Due to the nature of the elves, the forest would get more power. If I was lucky then a World Tree might emerge. There was only a small chance but a World Tree emerging would give many effects. Increasing the propagation rate or elements...it was an item I expected a lot from.

“The connection of the link?”

“Just a little bit more.”

The fairy Guyo was busy concentrating at the Dungeon Core. It was to create a link between the South Korean and Japanese dungeons.

As the Dungeon Master of the South Korea dungeon, I could create a link with any dungeon identified as ‘my dungeon.’

I didn’t have to walk back to South Korea’s dungeon. And it was like I expected.

“Ah! Master, the link is connected!”

The Dungeon Core started to resonate.

Kuuuuong!

The barrier outside the dungeon was released for a while as a magic wavelength connected between the dungeons in South Korea and Japan. Meanwhile, all the creatures between the dungeon instinctively dropped from the intense magic power.

A red light stretched in a straight line from the Dungeon Core. A light of the same colour came from the South Korea dungeon and met in the middle of the Sea of Japan.

The lights tangled with each other. It furiously moved up and down before the 'Light Barrier' was completed between Japan and South Korea.

An overwhelming sight. Everyone was captivated looking at it.

This barrier disappeared after approximately 30 seconds.

'That's great.'

At that moment, a magic circle was engraved near the Dungeon Core.

*

I left Japan's dungeon with the creatures.

The dungeon in South Korea hadn't changed a lot.

Yihi flapped her wings crazily.

“Master. Who is Guyo? Huh? Who is that bum? I believed...Yihi is disappointed because I thought I was your only fairy.”

“Is it because of the position of Fairy King? Don’t worry. So far you have the upper hand.”

The position of the Fairy King.

A competition between the fairies. The Fairy King didn’t mean they became stronger but they could stand above other fairies. Therefore the strongest candidate would become the next Fairy King. The fairy had a spiritual body and a long life span.

“Hing. Yihi is still disappointed. Master made Yihi sad. Now I don’t want to give you honey anymore.”

“Little thing! Rude!”

“What are you?”

Yihi had never seen Gigantes before! She stared.

“Little thing! Master, rude!”

She came to the conclusion that Gigantes had a horribly scary

face.

Yihi furtively glanced at Gigantes.

“Y-Yihi, this, do you think I am scared? Y-Yihi is the fairy of this Dungeon Core! I-if you are mean then Yihi will feed you to the bees. I won’t forgive you.”

Yihi placed both hands on her waist. However, she was still avoiding his gaze. Even the fairy of the Dungeon Core was afraid of Gigantes’ face.

I shook my head and said.

“Yihi. Tell me the history of the creatures you purchased from the store.”

I planned to breed a species that fit South Korea’s dungeon.

Yihi pointed her finger.

“Y-you. Today you are lucky. Y-you should thank Master. Yihi was going to punish you. Today I am busy so I will skip it.”

Yihi said this but her body was shaking.

Anyway, she was the subdued winner in the showdown with

Gigantes.

Chapter 57-60: Breeding Species

South Korea, Japan and the world were surprised.

There was no precedent for creatures emerging from a dungeon only to move to another dungeon. The lich in the army of creatures was enough to cause astronomical damage.

In addition. Resistance was impossible.

The one who referred to themselves as a Dungeon Master was a beautiful woman with long ears! Her emergence was the most crucial thing.

The ones who dwelled on the top floor of the dungeon. A god, ruler of another world or even an alien. There was various types of theories.. If humans reached beyond their limit and arrived on the top floor then they could find the ‘truth.’

But then something unpredictable happened.

Everyone was focused on the message left by the Dungeon Master.

‘Climb up to the top floor. Then I will tell you the truth of the world.’

The world’s scholars analyzed and studied the ‘truth of the

world' but it was ambiguous.

After two days, an amazing sight was seen between South Korea and Japan.

A surge of magic power. And a barrier of light.

In particular, South Korea and Japan were in an uproar.

“A sign that the world is ending.”

“I will follow her!”

People predicted the end of the world.

Even ordinary people could feel the intense surge of magic power as their hearts beat wildly. The Awakened familiar with magic power couldn't sleep for three days and nights.

Everybody wondered what happened between the two dungeons but the truth wasn't revealed to humans.

And various groups started to worship the Dungeon Master as 'God.' People who felt fear instinctively started to follow the strongest.

Meanwhile, Japan asked South Korea to take responsibility.

It was a funny story but the creatures from South Korea traveled to Japan. They wanted South Korea to reimburse them for the astronomical damage but South Korea was still recovering.

In the end, Japan is anxious to turn public opinion and started to blame South Korea. This caused the relations between the two countries to worsen.

A few months passed but public opinion was still gloomy. Thousands of people crossed the river of no return overnight (suicide). The rate of domestic crime plummeted sharply.

Something was needed to break through the atmosphere. South Korea's leaders selected the Awakened.

*

“Orcs are swarming 150 metres to the left!”

“Guarders forward! Damage dealers circle closely while ranged users ready your skills!”

“Don't just believe in the healers! They have to prioritize their own safety! Don't let our ranks be disturbed!”

South Korea Dungeon's 4th floor.

The Awakened holding weapons were greeted by a swarm of orcs.

Originally capturing the 4th floor was a long time away but the country's mood meant the Awakened's rapid growth was inevitable.

The Awakened felt overwhelming fear at the army of creatures but something grew in their bodies at the same time.

The 'Heroes' were growing.

This was attributed to the hope that they would someday reach the Dungeon Master.

All 5 guilds organized a raid force. There were exactly 120 of them! Each guild sent 24 and they managed to reach the 4th floor. But in the process of reaching the 4th floor, 20 of them died.

However, the 4th floor had too many orcs. Orcs were the only things that could be seen.

In the meantime, the Awakened had grown and the elite members could take on the orcs 1:1.

100 elite Awakened had gathered here. A handful of orcs weren't a problem. As many as 20~100 orcs would appear. There was so many of them that it was frustrating.

“That is the way to the 5th floor! We just need to pass this crisis but then we will be stepping foot in the unknown!”

“Forward!”

Their abilities rose against the orcs. This was much faster growth than the lower floors. The added ability and experienced meant they could grow rapidly on the 5th floor.

Chwiiiik!

Roughly 80 orcs appeared. The Awakened were prepared.

*

“Unni. I don’t have a good feeling.”

“It is okay. Haven’t we broken through up to here?”

“If only Captain-nim was here. Where on earth did he go?”

On the stairs to the 5th floor.

Yoo Eun-hye gently nodded at Lee Ji-hye’s grumbling. The females of Devil Hunters were also included in this raid.

“Unni. Our Captain-nim. After the 2nd monster wave stopped...

where did he go?”

The Dungeon Master admitted that their Captain was the ‘strongest among the Awakened’ on that day. He then disappeared like he evaporated. He hadn’t been seen since the mess in South Korea.

Lee Ji-hye shrugged.

“Let’s see? He is like Hong Gil-dong. He will suddenly show up one day.”

“Even so, he abandons us until that time. I’m very upset.”

Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye weren’t included in the monster wave attack. They were indignant but absolutely obeyed their captain.

“Are we still not enough?”

“Heheng! Weren’t we specifically chosen by the guild?”

Yoo Eun-hye’s growth was dazzling. She experienced a change in her skill and trained even harder.

“Yes. You are excellent.”

Lee Ji-hye laughed.

The Awakened finally set foot on the 5th floor.

Yoo Eun-hye shook her head.

“There is something different here.”

“Hasn’t the dungeon changed? This is the form of a somber cave.”

The captain of the Mithril Guild raised his hand.

“There is a lot of mud in front. Be careful when moving...”

Kuwuong.

It was at that moment.

The muddy area started to join together? The mud united into the form of a mud golem.

Those watching the scene were at a loss for words.

Kung!

Kuong!

Other mud golems emerged.

The Awakened were urgent as they noticed the puppet dolls next to them.

“Prepare to fight! Keep your ranks!”

In the end, the 100 Awakened decided to retreat.

There wasn't that many of them but the orcs were no comparison. Of course, there was a chance they could break through the mud golems and puppet dolls. But then the harpies appeared in their air.

It was an irreversible situation so they made a judgement.

They decided to retreat.

Their numbers were reduced by half by the time they came out of the dungeon.

However, they obtained good quality magic items on the 3rd and 4th floor. The 5th floor was a 'place of frustration' but the embers of hope weren't extinguished.

If they knew a little bit more about the creatures on the 5th floor then they could come up with a strategy to penetrate through.

The eyes of the Awakened became more intense due to the death of their colleagues.

*

Sha-Sha-!

I grabbed the neck of the young creature.

With the lower half of a snake and the upper half similar to humans, this species was incredibly poisonous and dangerous to touch.

But that didn't apply to me.

Sha-!

The 3 month old young were playing around me. Those that were still young tried to attack me with their long tongues.

There were many young creatures that showed a similar rate of growth.

“Nothing strange has been seen yet.”

I touched my jaw.

I wanted to find a decent breeding species for the South Korean dungeon. I used 7,500 points on the young creatures but none of them showed a noticeable growth.

A large majority of the pyrock larvae died before they became adults. And it was the same for the other young.

I had purchased 10 young creatures to figure out the effects of the wavelength of magic power. 20 adults were also purchased...but I couldn't help having high hopes for the newly born creatures.

I let go of the neck of the young creature and moved to the next floor.

I was currently on the 12th floor.

The 13th floor was selected to breed the werewolf species.

The giant wolves were 2 metres in size with purple fur.

They were capable of bipedal movement and had the mane of a lion. They were 3Lv intermediate like the dark elves but their aggressive tendencies made them very strong.

Kaekang!

I scratched the ears of the werewolves. This was the first time I was visiting the nest of the young werewolves just born.

Werewolves were famous for their strong maternal love. But she just sat there and restlessly watched me.

“Well...I don't know yet.”

There were three pups.

There didn't seem to be any mutations. Their growth rate was similar to that of a general werewolf. It wasn't at a level that would catch his eye.

I moved to the next place.

14th floor.

This floor was for the lizardmen and trolls. The two species had a bad relationship and tended to get into fights. I deliberately placed those two species on the same floor in the hope that a stronger species would be born due to the struggle.

Yet the reproduction rate of the two species were very small. I didn't have an infinite amount of points so I limited it to 30 of each species.

‘The competition means that the breeding rate increased by 1.5 times. The problem is that many of them die.’

Unique bodies also couldn’t be found.

Was it too short a time?

I checked on a daily basis but couldn’t distinguish any differences that would be caused by the wavelength of the dungeon’s magic power.

Maybe the werewolf, lizardmen, and trolls didn’t match the magic power.

I moved to the 15th floor where the dark elves lived.

The Seed of the World Tree had been planted and a forest grew overnight.

I opened up a little bit of my magic power.

“It is great to see Dungeon Master!”

The chief of the dark elves, Julliom came to greet me. After that, some of the other dark elves came.

“Where are the rest?”

Their numbers seemed very low.

Julliom answered my question.

“They are moving timber to the 7th floor to be used for the houses of the dwarves. The rest are making sure the Seed of the World Tree sprouts properly.”

“It won’t be easy. It is the Seed of the World Tree but most of the world trees have died.”

In my previous life, there was only one demon who succeeded in obtaining a world tree.

Grand Duke Okullos.

His dungeon was impregnable due to the world tree. The growth rate of the creatures rose and earth elementals were naturally produced. In addition, the leaves of the world tree increased the healing rate. The roots were excellent materials that could be used to make unique rated products.

In addition, the world tree led to a rise in mutations and allowed more unique creatures to form. It was a blessed fortress.

Anyway, Okullos managed to obtain the world tree. After that, he received many challenges but all of them failed.

I didn't know how he did it.

'My luck has to be good.'

Having great expectations would lead to disappointment.

I was interested in the world tree from the beginning.

"We will spare no effort to make the world tree bud."

Julliom spoke in a serious tone.

The dark elves were ultimately elves.

They would feel great pride if they managed to make the world tree grow.

Two world trees existed in the Demon World. Powerful dark elves were allowed to live there but they were denied permission to go near those places.

That's why Chrisley was so important to them.

Either way...they would receive direct benefits if there was a world tree on the 15th floor.

I could understand their desire. I didn't need to pour cold water on them. Striving so hard to chase something deserved praise. It meant they would be productive.

I scratched my chin and said.

“Do you have any news to convey to me?”

“News...?”

“I heard that two babies were born not long ago.”

Two days ago, Chrisley had told me very excitedly that two children were born. I wondered if they might be affected by the wavelength of magic power. The dark elves couldn't avoid it.

Julliom clapped his hands.

“Ahh! You mean the twins. I was thinking about having Dungeon Master see them after the ceremony. You are just in time to see them.”

The dark elves had a special ceremony for the naming.

Julliom had a very thrilled expression on his face.

He interpreted it as the Dungeon Master showing interest. I had

no intention of releasing that misconception so I just nodded.

“I will see them.”

“I will bring you to them.

Julliom talked to some dark elves near him. They couldn't ignore the procession of the Dungeon Master.

This was an unusual luxury so they didn't feel bad.

I moved slowly through the forest with Julliom.

‘This forest was made with the Seed of the World Tree. There is definitely a concentration of magic power.’

It wasn't the magic power of the world tree but it was enough to help the dark elves. Maybe it would appear in the future. The dark elves weren't greedy and even the emergence of the timber satisfied them.

After 10 minutes, I walked to a small house made of woven vegetation. This was the newly created residence of the dark elves.

It was immediately built after I allowed them to tear down the shit shaped structure that Yihi made.

“This is the place. Dungeon Master.”

In the middle of the settlement. Unlike the other residences, it was a huge house.

“This house is made with the best quality wood and a full weave. The dark elves will stay at home for 3 days after their children are born. They need to eat leaves and dew for the ritual blessing.”

Julliom gave a separate explanation.

The house seemed to be a substitute for the World Tree. If they succeeding in germinating the seed then the ceremonies would take place under the World Tree.

“The house looks quite good.”

“If Dungeon Master wants then I will build you a large house on the top floor.”

“It is an interesting suggestion but Yihi won’t stay quiet.”

“...The fairy will definitely complain.”

Yihi was the owner of a strange taste. She created structures with an incomprehensible design. If a conventional wooden house was raised on the top floor then only complaints would come from her mouth.

“Dungeon Master has come.”

“Dungeon Master has come.”

I passed a bunch of dark elves who respectfully bowed their heads.

I ignored them and entered the house where the ceremony was being held. It looked like a 2 storey building from the outside but it was just one floor with a high roof.

Two children were wrapped in large leaves.

“These are the twins who were just born. The one on the left is a girl while the other one is a boy.”

There were adult dark elves in the house. Not just anyone could enter before the ceremony finished.

I came closer to the children.

Kyaaah!

Kyaruru~

There was no animosity from their magic power as the children

looked at me.

I used Mind’s Eye on the two children.

Name: None
Occupation: None Title: None

Stats

Strength: 1

Intelligence: 4

Agility: 1

Stamina: 2

Magic Power: 13

Potential: (21/384)

Uniqueness: 51 hours has passed since being born.

Skill: None

‘This...’

I was surprised at the status window.

The children had identical status windows like a printed book. But I was surprised at their potential.

They were dark elves. It was low compared to Krasla and Chrisley but the quality was enough to give them the value of an advanced 5Lv creature.

Of course, this was just potential. Still, the important part was clear.

‘South Korea’s dungeon is appropriate for breeding dark elves?’

I couldn’t confirm it yet. There were only two. A little more experimenting was required.

And maybe this was just a trait of this dark elf tribe. I couldn’t rule out the possibility of the dark elves had slight traces of the true demonic dragon’s blood in them. The result was an outstanding genius like Chrisley.

‘It might just be because of good blood.’

Sometimes that could happen. The blood might decline but the genetic materials would still be passed down, sometimes surpassing the limits of the species.

I couldn’t rule out the possibility that this was one such incident.

“That...Dungeon Master.”

Julliom spoke carefully.

I turned and looked at Julliom.

“Go ahead.”

“Would you give names to the children?”

“Name?”

I asked with wonder. It was the first time someone had asked me to name something.

Julliom replied seriously.

“That’s correct. It would be a huge blessing if Dungeon Master names the two children.”

“How blatant.”

I started laughing.

Julliom’s intentions were easy to read.

He wanted me to accept Chrisley more fully in my heart. Julliom’s face was flushed and very easy to read.

I didn’t not like this.

If Julliom didn’t take advantage of an opportunity like this then I would consider him incompetent. I knew one or two ways to solve it.

This was still within my tolerance limit. And if there were results then I would give him a reward. There would be more guarantees at a later date.

Julliom sensed the subtle signs and urgently kneeled down with his forehead to the ground.

“D-don’t misunderstand, Dungeon Master. The dark elves understand that we are your subjects. We are your faithful servants. Faithful slaves. This is just for the sake of Chrisley’s peace and happiness. And since this is the first time children are born since we’ve been here, our tribe would be honoured if you name them. We don’t expect more than that.”

I thought that attitude was dramatic. It was like they had been waiting for a chance to receive names. It must be some sort of habit. It wasn’t like I intended but...

I opened my mouth.

“Rise.”

Cheek!

Julliom immediately got up.

I told him.

“The boy will be Roy. The girl Rose.”

Julliom swallowed his saliva and asked.

“May I ask what that means?”

I was silent for a moment.

What was with this neurosis like reaction? Julliom’s nervousness over the names was irritating. He seemed to think he would be punished like a dog again.

“Brave and good.”

“Thank you. In the future, the children’s name will be Roy and Rose.”

The meaning of the names didn’t matter.

I smiled while looking at the children. Due to nature of the dungeon, they would grow quickly and become full-fledged dark elves in a few years.

If their potential filled up then it was like getting hundreds of thousands of points for free. They would fight for me in the future. I touched the cheeks of the two children before turning away.

“Dungeon Master. There will be a celebration to commemorate today. It would be an honour if you participate.”

“I’m busy.”

Julliom thought it was regretful but didn’t mention it again. He knew that I hated things being repeated.

‘Now I should look at the dwarves.’

I left the house and headed to the 7th floor.

Unfortunately, there weren’t that many dwarves. They were busy building houses for when the Awakened would visit in the future.

A workshop was also built. I could see separate building tools. They would be tricking the human Awakened so planning would make things much easier in the future.

‘Creatures giving quests to human Awakened.’

Each Awakened could be given regular or randomly occurring quests that would give them skills, items, stats, etc.

They needed to pay attention to ‘irregular’ things. Arriving at a specific location or finding a specific animal.

I hoped that the Awakened would become curious about the quests. And if possible...I hoped to attract more Awakened to the dungeon at the same time.

The Awakened could receive the quests in a group. If they formally registered the quest then the rewards would be divided.

It was literally 'food' to move the Awakened.

It would be worth a try.

'The problem is still the breeding.'

Everything was going smoothly.

But there was one thing.

Breeding a species that matched the dungeon's magic power.

'Time is on my side.'

I couldn't be impatient. I could return at any time.

Right now, this was worrying me so I needed to see it through to the end.

I carefully started to search. I compared them to the creatures

living in Japan's dungeon. It was a very time-consuming task but I put in effort and care.

I focused carefully.

And as a result, I managed to find one unique point in South Korea's dungeon.

'The creatures of the animal species are more active. The subtle potential is high. The speed of reproduction is also significant.'

In contrast to Japan's dungeon. I searched through hundreds of specimens.

'This explains the rampant meat bats on the 1st floor of the dungeon.'

I saw the abnormal proliferation of the meat bats and solved it with their enemy the ale snakes. But that reproduction speed alone didn't make it suited to the dungeon.

It was just one of many criteria. Now that I knew the wavelength fit animals, it was time to take the next step.

'Minotaur, mammoth, saber tiger, dark bear.'

I decided to add 4 different species to the dungeon for reproduction.

Each species had a distinct attribute.

The minotaur was an ox, the mammoth an elephant, saber tiger a tiger and dark bear a bear. And all of them were intermediate 3Lv creatures.

It was an enormous but necessary expenditure. Anyway, breeding the species would naturally reduce costs. This wasn't an investment loss.

The moment he added the four species to the dungeon.

-Great achievement!

15 species that can be 'properly reproduced with each other' have been released in the dungeon for the first time.

600,000pt will be paid.

Definitely, this wouldn't give him any damages.

'This achievement.'

I looked at the floating message with curiosity.

A first achievement.

The reward was greater than those of typical achievements.

A huge 600,000 points. A significant portion of the points used to purchase the creatures was recovered.

‘An accomplishment regarding the breeding species...’

I stroked my jaw.

This meant there were achievements related to breeding species.

Taking all the first achievements! I was hoping for that. If I found the right key then I could sweep all the achievements. I might be able to gain extra points as income.

‘A challenge.’

Seeing something through to the end was my nature.

The same applied to this as well.

One side of my mouth raised as I started to worry about the achievements.

*

-A remarkable achievement!

The first 'hybrid' has been successfully created.

350,000pt will be paid.

Tak! I clapped.

The result was as expected.

I bred a werewolf and crazyhound and made a successful hybrid. This wasn't hard because they were both canines.

Of course, this was almost impossible without the absolute authority of the Dungeon Master. The werewolves were proud wolves. They would never consent to mating with the crazyhound that was on a lower level than them.

But if the mating succeeded then they would look after their offspring. I looked at the pup covered in blood.

It was literally a hybrid. The default name was 'little werewolf' and it looked like a werewolf but with shorter legs.

The potential was also lower.

But the important thing was the ‘achievements.’

I gained significant revenue without spending a lot of points. In 2 months, I managed to collect 350,000 points.

Currently, I was earning 40,000 a month from the Japanese dungeon. The South Korean income of 110,000 was quite amazing.

‘Gather it little by little while preparing for the Demon World Auction.’

It had been 9 months since the first Demon World Auction.

The Spirit World would have finished preparing the items for the next auction. It meant that Dubolong would soon be contacting me.

‘And...there will be massive monster waves occurring worldwide before the Demon World Auction.’

It was the demons finishing their preparations.

They observed and learned that points was needed from the first auction. And the monster waves would be used to try and secure more points. The main purpose of the monster wave was to hunt the Awakened.

I also moved the creatures against the Awakened in South Korea

and Japan and earned a great deal of points.

Close to 500,000 points...

Of those, I had 2.7 million points remaining. Originally I had 3.2 million but I used 300,000 on the dungeon in Japan and not long ago, I bought 40 dwarves for 200,000 points.

And even if I rested quietly for the next 3 months, I would still receive 450,000 points. If I gained a few more achievements then I could easily get 4 million points.

4 million points in 2 years! I could use those points to buy high class creatures.

My mouth twisted.

How much had the other demons collected?

‘At best, it would be 800,000 points in 1 year.’

But not all the demons would have that many points. I could be sure of one thing.

There were many uses for points. Self-reinforcement, strengthening the dungeon, purchasing creatures and various experiments.

The demons wouldn't necessarily hand everything on the Demon World Auction. Especially since this was the 2nd year. But the basic preparation...4 million might be a little short.

Even if I caused a monster wave. I could incite and tear up hundreds of Awakened. I would gain approximately 150,000 points.

'Most of the achievements for the monster wave have been gobbled up.'

There were still more first achievements available when it came to breeding species.

It was obvious that there were more achievements.

I should have more than 4 million points by the time I traveled to the Demon World Auction.

*

After 1 more month, I was able to simultaneously gain two more achievements.

Multiple message windows appeared in the air.

-Incredible achievement!

The first one to succeed in raising 20 adult pyrocks. The probability of the pyrock larvae becoming adults has increased by 1%. They are creatures that can't be sold in stores because of their awful survival rate.

450,000pt will be paid.

-Great achievement!

The first achievement for releasing 5 'appropriate breeding species.'

300,000pt will be paid.

These achievements came from 20 pyrocks, fire slimes, lava spiders, fire lizards and lower creatures released in the lava zone.

This meant I reached 3.3 million points.

I was proceeding steadily.

The lava zone was a 'modified zone' but no more achievements appeared when I added several other species.

Either way, it was a very satisfying result. The moment that I was laughing with pleasure.

-Achievement Quest-Breeding Species

A quest available to a Dungeon Master who gained 1,000 related achievement points.

Find and breed creatures that match the wavelength of the dungeon's magic power.

The deadline is 45 days. The compensation will vary depending on the number of creatures and how well they match the wavelength of magic power.

“...”

My smile was erased in an instant.

‘Achievement Quest?’

My head naturally tilted.

I had heard of ‘Special Quests’ but this was the first time I saw ‘Achievement Quests.’

Special quests were quests that automatically renewed after a certain period of time. There were a wide range reserved for Awakened and demons or quests that were only for demons.

But I hadn't heard of the demons receiving other types of quests. No, I hadn't even thought about it.

'Is this related to accomplishing 4 breeding related achievements?'

It was definitely interesting. Besides, the quest content was related to the work I was going to do.

'Adol didn't receive this quest.'

The breeding species in Japan were the goblins.

But Adol never received the quest.

It meant the quest was impossible to get unless there were several achievements.

I could tell from the state of the dungeon.

I read the message floating in the air again before nodding.

'I should resolve this.'

Beast type creatures had been released in advance.

The three most active had expanded quickly.

The numbers varied but it was apparent there was a difference.

Those with a matching magic power wavelength didn't just breed quicker. Magic power was a source of power. If this source existed then something was bound to differ.

Originally animal type creatures didn't adapt easily. They would only adapt after some time. But a dungeon with matching magic power was like a comfortable home. They didn't need time to adapt.

There were three such species.

Minotaur, saber tiger and dark bear.

Unlike the other 3, the mammoth looked very uncomfortable. The expansion in the area was slightly unnatural. It was often restless.

I decided to save money on the mammoths. This was a conclusion I came to from close observation.

'The answer will emerge if I look at the bear cubs.'

And there were other variables.

First, I had to pick the species that would take priority.

Was the breeding rate okay? Was the potential higher on average compared to the same species?

The growth rate and presence of anything unique.

‘Experiment.’

In order to find a more reliable result, I doubled the number of creatures. The purchased ‘breeding species’ were not included in the quest. But the deadline wasn’t long. I need to draw a conclusion within 45 days.

The compensation absolutely had to be more than the 400,000 points that I used. No other demon would be crazy enough to spend points like this.

But I couldn’t pave the way without an adventure.

This was the first Achievement Quest so it was well worth the investment.

‘I need to increase the breeding rate.’

I acted in a more bold manner.

I decided to give them natural enemies.

Depending on the presence of predators, the breeding rate could increase by a maximum of two times. It didn't matter if the adults died since I needed their young.

I placed a large number of orcs without any concern.

The orcs were lower grade creatures but there were a lot of them. All three species were intermediate 3Lv but that number was enough to be a threat.

In addition, I could get more information by observing their fights.

*

Chwiiik!

Chwiiik!

Dozens of orcs stuck together and snorted roughly. At first, there were hundreds but now only this small amount was left.

Dark shadows were lurking around.

They came like shadows so it wasn't easy for the orcs to prepare.

‘Saber tiger! Chwiik.’

One orc shouted.

This was the identity of the species threatening the orcs.

At first, they had succeed in hunting a few saber tigers. On that day, the orcs fed the orc hero who dealt the final blow.

But the next day, one or two orcs in the surroundings started to disappear. It was only after dozens of orcs disappeared that they realized the saber tigers were making a counterattack.

Since then, every day was a series of struggles.

But the orcs were a lower grade creature. The level they belonged to also wasn't high. They couldn't stop the saber tigers that worked covertly in the dark.

Of course, the saber tigers received some damage but the orcs were on the brink of being wiped out.

Gruuuuah!

“C-chwik!”

A clear advantage?

The saber tigers glided out of the darkness. Intense auras coming from every direction!

The orcs trembled weakly.

I observed through the crystal ball the actions of the minotaurs, saber tigers and dark bears against the orcs.

The saber tigers were the only ones that showed the most overwhelming strength.

The minotaurs and dark bears were shaken when the enemies emerged. There was a difference in the time they took to initiate a counterattack against the orcs.

Blitz tactics.

The saber tigers were the first ones to wipe out the orcs.

The mobility was better than expected and the saber tigers moved with confidence. They quickly identified the capabilities of the orcs.

‘Unfortunately, no unique body was born but...there is a difference in potential.’

The minotaurs, saber tigers and dark bears were all intermediate 3Lv. They would have similar stats and potential.

However, the newly born saber tigers had on average a 10% higher potential.

At this point, I was certain of it to some degree.

‘It is the saber tigers.’

I decided to breed the saber tigers in South Korea’s dungeon.

Long, sharp fangs. Quick and knowing how to take advantage of the dark! They were a perfect fit for South Korea’s mountainous terrain.

I immediately tried to change the terrain. If the environment was the same and the magic power wavelength matched then I had high expectations for the breeding.

“Yihi. How many points will it cost to set up the entire 18th floor?”

Yihi watched calmly from next to me.

“Do you want the number or height of the mountains to be different?”

“Is it possible to create a rolling mountain range?”

Wide mountain ranges.

This place would be optimized for the saber tigers.

Yihi stretched out her ten fingers and started to count.

“Master. I’ve been doing the calculations. It should be around 250,000 points.”

“Set it up.”

Well, it isn’t that hard. But is it worth it? The number of saber tigers is too low right now.”

“The numbers are increasing.”

I purchased an additional 100 saber tigers from the store.

It was a bold decision.

The compensation for the achievement quest was unknown so pouring 500,000 points into it was foolish. Changing the terrain would increase the consumption to almost 800,000 points.

But that was for common demons. I had a lot more points than them. Other demons didn't have this level of wealth and I could consider it an 'investment.'

I didn't know when this opportunity would come again.

It was better to use the points for a chance to gain higher compensation. In addition, this was a quest...the first achievement from it would certainly follow.

'I don't think that any other demons have completed this achievement quest.'

I calculated that I wouldn't receive great damage.

Yihi's eyes popped out.

"M-Master! What are you doing? You will be in a bad mood and regret the points later. Yihi is sure of this. Master will regret it the next day like I did when I secretly made the forest terrain...hup!"

Yihi hurriedly blocked her mouth.

But I already knew what she meant to say. Yihi was the opposite

of the other fairies that liked lying. She was very clumsy and hardly ever lied.

“Change the terrain.”

“Ah, I see. Yihihi.”

Yihi thought she was safe and laughed awkwardly.

“I will change the terrain and then Yihi will give you another honey tea.”

Didn't she say she wouldn't give it to me anymore after I returned from the Japanese dungeon?

‘She forgot.’

Fairies often forgot trivial things.

And in the first place, she was able to be a beekeeper because of the forest. Not long ago, Yihi changed the 15th floor into a forest terrain.

Well...I had checked the status through the crystal ball.

I had handed over the points to her so excessive consumption of points wasn't embezzlement. Delicious honey. Yihi had low

standards when it came to this.

Yihi didn't know this and was just laughing 'yihhi' while changing the terrain.

Indeed, the terrain change caused the breeding rate to noticeably increase. This could be called a synergy effect with the creatures.

However, there wasn't much time.

There was 30 days left.

I needed to make as much offspring as possible.

I could open up the Dungeon Master's magic power but this would have side effects. The first was that the creature was more likely to die than be modified. In fact, this was confirmed through the werewolves.

For now, I just needed to induce breeding as naturally as possible.

I spent each day working on the dungeon's internal affairs.

Then the stone that Dubolong gave me started shining.

'He finally got in touch.'

I took out the stone. A little bit of magic power was injected and a voice came out.

-Randolph Briggsiel-nim. Do you remember me? Dubolong. I am in charge of the Demon World Auction.

I nodded my head.

“I remember.”

-Ahu! I'm glad. I was worried that you wouldn't remember me! In fact, this is taboo in the Spirit World which is why I am only contacting you now. I know that Randolph-nim is our best auction client. Haha.

“Did you just contact me for a greeting? Then I am a little disappointed.”

-No, are you joking? Do you think this is the gift? You shouldn't be upset about carrying this stone. I am planning to give Randolph-nim a real gift...perhaps, would you like to know the list of auction items in advance?

It was right to the point.

This was exactly what wanted.

“I have a little bit of interest.”

-Haha! Then feel at ease. In fact, this is a gift but it is close to the auction. However, Randolph-nim doesn't need to worry about any damages.

“This will also benefit you.”

-Indeed! Earl Randolph Briggsiel-nim! Your words are different from other demons. I will send you the list as soon as possible. It is hard to send a piece of paper while avoiding the radar system but Randolph-nim is one of our VIP clients.

He might be patronizing me but it was true.

In fact, access from the Spirit World to this world was virtually sealed off. Passing even one sheet of paper through was a gamble.

‘But it is necessary.’

I was an existence that would become a thorn to the demons.

I would benefit them.

That alone made the dark spirits specifically cater to me. Points was essential for them to increase their ‘status.’

If I used a few more points then I was sure that their attitude would change.

But this wasn't spoken. If they let me know the auction goods then I was more likely to purchase.

After a while, a piece of paper fell from the space next to the Dungeon Core. It was filled with the name of 100 different auction items.

“You sure are reliable.”

-Thank you.

“I should be thanking you.”

A perfect win-win situation!

A secret agreement was forged in a moment's notice.

I couldn't know the details from the list since it only had the name of the items. But I could figure out how to efficiently distribute my points.

‘There are quite a few things to buy in this auction.’

I touched my chin while reading down the auction list.

Indeed, the 2nd year had better items than the 1st year.

But I couldn't see any high class creatures. It was understandable that the dark spirits would hold back those types of creatures.

Of course, I couldn't be sure. I didn't know the exact number of high class creatures that existed. Or something special like Krasla might appear in the auction.

Either way.

'The amount I can purchase depends on the reward of the achievement quest.'

I stared at the dungeon through the crystal ball.

Most of the female saber tigers had a bulging belly.

As of today, it was the 30th day of the quest. It was a situation where 4~5 saber tigers would be born at a time and I was expecting at least 100.

I waited for that time to come closer.

Soon, several message windows popped up in the air.

-Achievement Quest-Breeding Species has been completed.

The saber tiger matches the dungeon's magic power wavelength by '99%.'

A total of 166 has been successfully bred.

The compensation will be calculated based on the intermediate 3Lv creatures.

The basic compensation is 1,500,000pt and an additional 1,717,768pt has been paid.

'3.2 million for one quest...'

The basic compensation was considerable. Especially when considering that I received 2 million points for being the first to kill a demon. Plus, there was the additional compensation as well.

I already got a lot of benefits from my investment.

My points had increased to 5.7 million. I had assumed that I would only reach 4 million.

But this wasn't the end.

-Incredible achievement!

The first 'Achievement Quest' has been completed!

The achievement quest has given the concept of a 'bonus' that will occur when the score is more than expected. Depending on the user's actions, it might be possible to acquire more compensation.

800,000pt will be paid.

6.5 million!

"Hah."

It was so outrageous that a laugh couldn't even emerge.

*

The remaining time until the Demon World Auction was 15 days.

Even that time wasn't wasted. I didn't play around.

I left the dungeon after a long time with Krasla and headed to Heaven's Will.

The raid group Devil Hunters was on the 2nd floor and staring

breathlessly at the wall mounted TV.

“Oh my god. The real world is being ruined.”

“30 monster waves taking place simultaneously in different places...heok!”

Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye’s eyes widened.

“Unni, are we going to move? We are flooded with requests for help. We can’t just sit here sighing. I don’t know what to do.”

Lee Ji-hye shook her head.

“They are hoping for Captain-nim. What help will we be?”

“Still...the number of deceased has already passed over five digits.”

“Have you forgotten almost dying when targeting the dungeon? Are you going to waste your life here?”

“Then we can only watch? Those who have strength should act.”

The two women filled with concerns were having a heated discussion.

Kung!

Krasla struck his spear on the ground. At the same time, their eyes shone as they saw me.

“Captain-nim!”

Their faces were filled with joy. This was my first appearance since the 2nd monster wave in South Korea.

“Where the hell have you been?”

Lee Ji-hye whined.

I ignore her and said.

“The Devil Hunters raid group will now focus on preventing the monster waves. We will start to move this evening.”

“Ya, as expected of Captain-nim! This is why I like Captain-nim ~”

Yoo Eun-hye laughed and winked at me.

She saw me as an apostle of justice. But that wasn't my real purpose.

‘The purpose of the monster wave is to earn points. But I can’t stand still.’

I needed to stop it as much as possible.

That was the primary plan.

And while moving, Devil Hunters could gain the spotlight.

It was funny that I was humanity’s strongest hope against the demons.

Chapter 61-63: 15 Day War

Rock Creek Park, Washington, United States.

A large number of creatures poured from the entrance of the dungeon that covered 3.65 square kilometres.

Hundreds of intermediate 2Lv spider like creatures called arachne and the advanced 3Lv arachne queen that governed them.

Their size was different from general spiders. One of them was two metres while the arachne queen was more than double the size.

The arachne moved on their 8 legs and started to surround the soldiers.

South Korea had an unprecedented strong monster wave so the United States had committed a massive force to surround the dungeon.

In other words, they were well prepared.

“Start the attack!”

The soldiers simultaneously attacked the arachne. Thousands of bullets bounced off the outer shells of the arachne.

Although they had faced general lower grade creatures, the arachne were intermediate grade. The solid outer shell easily stopped the bullets.

Kwarurung!

The ground shook as a claymore mine buried in the ground burst.

But unlike the bullets, it was effective.

Kieeek!

A surprise blast. A few of the arachne lost their legs and torso. This was followed by snipers firing at the eyes of the arachne. On top of that, there was an outpouring of attacks from the tanks.

It became a scene of carnage. It was expected since they had inferior strength to the creatures.

The queen moved through the battlefield and woke up all their senses.

The queen soon scattered an intangible, odorless hormone around her. The arachne responded to their queen through their sense organs and soon moved to specific positions.

This allowed the giant spiders to march while avoiding the

mines. They were followed by a pile of light, silver coloured thread.

“Kuaaaaak!”

“F-flesh! My flesh!”

The threads melted down anything that it touched.

The strong acids of the spider webs melted the human bodies and even the armoured tanks.

The arachne moved rapidly at 80 km/hr and rapidly covered the humans. The strong jaws then bit off the heads or limbs of the humans.

The legs were also a formidable weapon. The soft bodies of the humans were slashed by legs that were as sharp as a knife.

“Fire support request, Alpha Charlie 221 Bravo Delta 445. We are engaged with at least 200 creatures. Requesting close air support.”

Soon after the radio request, several hundred jet flights flew over.

The time it took the jet fighters to reach the dungeon was 3 minutes.

Tung! Tung! Dududududu!

The fighters flew low and commenced machine gun fire. The bullets that could even pierce the thickest iron alloy directly hit the arachne.

Dozens of arachne responded quickly by aiming their web but it didn't reach.

The queen with eight legs looked at the sky filled with jet fighters with her eight eyes.

Kiik! Kiiik. A command was released with her hormones and the arachne legs started looking like a spring.

Then they jumped up in the blink of an eye. A formidable jumping power that allowed them to reach 100 times their body length!

Kwaching!

The arachne sat on top of the fighters and teased it with their sharp, front legs. The lives of the pilots were instantly claimed the moment the window was gone.

*

London, United Kingdom.

It was late evening and people were sleeping.

No one noticed when the monster wave began.

Rattle. Rattle.

The advanced 3Lv creatures called 'Shadow Sinners' moved with the chains on the leg sweeping the ground.

Kuoooooh.

Hundreds of creatures were moving in the moonlight.

*

Bern, Switzerland.

Hundreds of beasts were gathered in the centre of the city.

Pant pant pant pant...

With a wolf's legs and the body of a lion, the intermediate 3Lv creature Chimera!

Over 300 chimeras were located in the burning city.

The chimeras seemed to be having dinner by eating the corpses.

*

Greece, Athens, Copenhagen, Denmark, Peru, Lima, Abu Dhabi, United Arab Emirates, Turkey, Ankara...

Monster waves started all over the world and it was called a disaster.

The creatures brutally trampled on the humans and their dignity.

The strength and damage of the monster wave varied from country to country.

The powerful army and firepower were helpless but the Awakened were on the rise.

Facing this disaster, the people prayed for Heroes. The Awakened started to move in accordance with that hope.

*

The 2nd monster wave in South Korea had been evaluated as the most powerful.

As a result, people often brought up the name Devil Hunters. In particular, there was a lot of interest in the mysterious leader.

This story wasn't just confined to South Korea. All the world leaders were watching South Korea. The Dungeon Master's appearance and unprecedented events afterwards meant it made the history books.

After multiple monster waves broke out, their interest changed to desperation as they asked Devil Hunters for support.

No, to be exact they asked for help from the leader of Devil Hunters.

He took down an advanced golem almost by himself...the army couldn't take care of advanced creatures so it was natural to ask him to handle it.

In addition, the Awakened were sensitive about who was strong and they all said 'the leader of Devil Hunters is a powerhouse.'

But...the guild master Kim Yong-woo who received the requests for support was forced to worry.

They would pay for the support of Devil Hunters so that wasn't Kim Yong-woo's problem.

The problem was the main character.

‘There is no time to delay. The pressure coming from the government isn’t a joke.’

These days, Kim Yong-woo’s phone was disconnected.

If he didn’t then his phone would receive millions of calls! There was no way he could answer all the calls.

But Kim Yong-woo was under intense stress because he couldn’t accept the proposal of the important figures. He already had a few premature grey hairs.

His lips were bloody and his nails were chewed down.

‘This decision is too big to make alone. What do we do if there is a number of advanced creatures?’

The problem was the advanced creatures.

The army could only respond to general and intermediate creatures. Of course, it was difficult when there were a high number of them but the attacks of the advanced creatures were greater in quality.

They were impossible to fight against without nuclear weapons. However, many dungeons were in the country’s capital so it was

ridiculous to drop a nuclear weapon on it.

But the Awakened also weren't prepared. Especially if they needed to face 200 advanced creatures.

There was a limit to the power of Heaven's Will. There was only a 50% chance of winning.

Naturally Kim Yong-woo had a deeply furrowed forehead.

Just as he was about to get on his feet.

Snap! The door opened and his dream appeared.

Kim Yong-woo felt like passing out as he saw the face.

He hesitated before lifting both hands.

“Oh...Master!”

I raised an eyebrow at Kim Yong-woo's reaction.

It felt like bugs were crawling over my body.

“Tell me where the support requests are coming from.”

Kim Yong-woo's eyes started shining at my words.

His mind was going back and forth but he quickly understood me.

Anyway, he had no complaints since he had past experience with me. I wasn't someone who would waste time on words.

Kim Yong-woo instantly stood up.

"Hmm hmm. The United States, United Kingdom and Switzerland, requests have just come from these three places."

"The United States, United Kingdom and Switzerland..."

"Accepting the United States' request will give us the most benefits."

"I shall choose."

My tone was firm.

Kim Yong-woo closed his mouth.

'All three places have dukes stationed there.'

The United States, United Kingdom and Switzerland were places

that contained the dungeons of dukes. It meant they were determined to produce monster waves.

2 years was enough to gain information about the human's firepower and build up sufficient creatures to win.

‘Now isn't a situation where I can comfortably beat Ariel.’

The Duke that created the monster wave in the United States followed Grand Duke Ariel.

In my previous life, Ariel had sticky ties with the other demons. In addition, the demons that followed Ariel were extremely tenacious.

If I touched that monster wave then they might search until they discovered my identity.

If the dukes noticed then Grand Duke Ariel would definitely know. I needed to act in restraint. If I didn't then the past might repeat.

It wouldn't be good.

I decided to leave Grand Duke Ariel and her associated demons alone.

‘Duke Suguph is stationed in the United Kingdom. Duke Suguph.

A demon belonging to Grand Duke Upa's faction.'

Grand Duke Upa.

In many ways, I had a twisted fate with that demon.

I was puzzled for a moment.

'Weren't Upa and his demons forbidden from attending the Demon World Auction? Then there is no need to cause a monster wave at this time.'

I worried about it for a moment before an answer popped up.

'He must have put everything on Pakan Griolli. Upa made a promise.'

I could understand the series of events after Pakan Griolli left the Demon World Auction. Duke Pakan wouldn't have confronted me of his own accord. Pakan Griolli blocked me according to a command.

But Upa didn't have any compassion for his followers.

I opened my mouth after clearing up my thoughts.

"Devil Hunters will go to the United Kingdom. So prepare it right

now.”

Grand Duke Upa and the followers in his faction like Pakan Griolli. I would tear out Upa’s wings.

I would cut away his remaining wings.

If I made a mess of the flagship dungeons then it would take a considerable time for them to recover. And those with damage was bound to lag behind for a while.

At the same time, I was intensely curious.

Could Upa fly around with only one wing?

*

The Devil Hunters rode on a private plane.

After accepting the United Kingdom’s request, a plane was immediately prepared for us.

It was urgent so they prepared the plane in advance despite not knowing if we would accept the request.

It took exactly 8 hours and 30 minutes to reach London’s Heathrow Airport. We arrived 4 hours quicker than the usual

flying time.

The dungeon was about 20 km away.

After arriving at Heathrow Airport, Devil Hunters emerged from the plane wearing black skull masks.

“Welcome. South Korea’s Heroes.”

The British ambassador greeted them after they left the plane.

I got to the point instead of shaking hands.

“Where are the creatures that we need to handle?”

*

The cries of pain and despair spread throughout the city.

People had gone insane from the shades and held knives, causing the terrible tragedy of them killing each other.

“Kuahaha!”

“Die! Drop dead!”

The adults and children were going crazy.

One child stabbed an old man in the leg while an adult male bashed a child's head in with a pipe. A woman was breaking a man's neck.

A massacre.

Was this hell?

The shades were parasitic shadow creatures that gnawed away at the human spirit. It was an intermediate creature and could be called the natural enemy of humans.

“W-why? Why is everybody suddenly acting like this?”

But not everyone was controlled by the shades. The Awakened with a strong mentality or a certain level of intelligence could oppose it.

Then the shadow sinners ventured out.

The sound of iron could be heard in the distance. The shadow sinners were evolved forms of the shades.

But the shadow sinners could deal a strong physical blow to the ones who shook off the mind control.

The iron sphere they swung would destroy everything they touched. A greatly confused man was looking around the streets.

The shadow sinners could aim accurately despite being hundreds of metres away.

The iron spheres connected to iron chains were thrown...and kung! The man was crushed into an unrecognizable shape.

Kwang! Kwa kwang!

This seemed to be the starting point as dozens of jet fighters appeared in the sky with missiles. However, the shadow sinners technically only had half a body. Attacks without magic power wouldn't work.

Hwiririk!

The shadow sinners had another big feature. They could see what would happen in the next 1 second with a very high probability.

They abused this move to swing their iron spheres at the jet fighters. The advanced shadow sinners weren't threatened at all by the fighter jets. Their perception was far from common.

"These monsters!"

It was the last flurry of the fighter pilots.

The fight looked violent at first glance.

The shadow sinners could see for 1 second with high probability but there was no guarantee the iron spheres would hit. And the distance of the iron chains was only 500 metres. The shadow sinners couldn't respond easily to attacks outside that range.

A few fighter pilots determined the distance. But it was difficult to escape outside the range.

The shadow sinners and shades were the best combination to deal with the firepower of humans.

The shades would affect the pilots trying to escape the range of the shadow sinners. After their madness mind control was used, the infected pilots started to attack their allies.

It quickly turned into an air battle.

The flow couldn't be reversed once it changed.

The chaotic pilots flying in the sky were smashed by the iron spheres.

Their numbers declined sharply over time. In the end, the fighter pilots just became food. The ground troops were committed but were caught by the shades.

“Ah...god willing!”

Those who had their spirit broken fell to their knees and prayed for God.

They closed their eyes and hoped it was a dream.

However, it didn't take them long to realize that the creatures were the reality. 'Intense pain' was used to bring the humans back to reality.

Everyone cried out as they were forced back to reality.

Then a group wearing black skull masks appeared.

A place blooming with madness, anger and despair.

I admired the sight.

Duke Suguph from Upa's faction knew the exact weaknesses of humans.

He had the idea to use the shades.

The shades were definitely efficient among normal humans. Intermediate creatures were expensive to breed but Suguph

considered it a luxury purchase.

‘Shadow sinners...’

The advanced creatures were even sent out to handle the Awakened.

Expensive advanced 3Lv creatures that cost 150,000 pt.

I could tell by this configuration that he used more than 500,000 points for the monster wave.

He purchased it while thinking of gaining points from the Awakened in the long term. This type of firepower against normal humans could also be a type of investment.

The shades and shadow sinners could be used to pull points from this place for a few more years.

But if Suguph’s plan collapsed in the beginning then the damage would be enormous. In that sense, Suguph had no luck.

“The shades are parasitic shadows. They will cause confusion to people with less than 30 intelligence. People with less than that should maintain a distance.”

“What about the ones throwing iron spheres?”

I shook my head.

“I will take care of them.”

“Will you be okay?”

The two types of creatures seemed powerful.

The higher ranked creatures would be unpredictable.

“Shouldn’t we trust in Captain-nim? Ahyu! This is why you are new hires.”

Yoo Eun-hye clicked her tongue.

After the current flowing in her body disappeared, Yoo Eun-hye displayed a more straightforward personality.

I looked at the area that was like hell.

“Stop them before there is more damage. Get moving!”

*

The 10 year old Edward was lying underneath a pile of ruins.

His parents started showing delirium symptoms out of the blue. He had grabbed his newborn baby brother and locked them in a room when the building had collapsed.

The dust settled. But he woke up with intense pain.

“Rooney? Rooney, where are you?”

He called out for his brother Rooney but couldn't even hear a whine. Edward's lips were cracked as he tried to move his body.

However, he couldn't move. His legs. They didn't hurt. He was still terrified. A crushing fear. Edward moved his head and tried to find the whereabouts of his brother Rooney.

“Please. Rooney...are you hiding because you are afraid of mother and father? They are originally good people. It is just difficult because they have to work hard. So please...”

Edward had raised Rooney.

His parents were always busy so Edward gave him formula, changed the diapers and comforted him when he cried.

In addition, there were times when Edward stayed home alone with Rooney. Someone else might feel annoyed at taking care of a child but Edward didn't. Rooney felt like a reward.

Then he discovered small hands among a pile of shattered buildings.

“Oh...Rooney!”

But he couldn't move his body. Edward didn't lose hope and opened his mouth.

“Wait a bit. People will be coming to rescue us.”

Edward hurriedly turned his head. He could see people fighting each other. Monsters wielding iron spheres. Buildings were crumbling and there were corpses everywhere.

Edward was young so he still didn't have a firm concept of death. He thought they were just ill and lying down.

‘Everybody isn't sane.’

But he could tell that people were in an abnormal state.

A uniformed soldier entered the vicinity. Edward waved and started shouting.

“Hey! Help us!”

But the soldier's eyes were out of focus. He looked at Edward and

aimed his gun.

“Kuhuhu...”

“W-what are you doing? Help us. Please get Rooney first. Please. He is still young so he can’t escape.”

The soldier laughed and didn’t remove his gun from Edward. But while he tried to pull the trigger.

Kuong!

Something flew towards the soldier’s body from a distance. There was a tight compression and blood scattered everywhere.

Edward’s eyes widened.

The monsters wielding iron spheres. A monster had come flying from the sky.

Just as the monster was trying to get up from the ground.

“Tough bastard.”

A black skull masked man suddenly appeared like he had teleported. The man held a strange looking sword.

Chwaruk!

Then the monster and iron sphere split in half. The monster screamed loudly as it was split apart.

After 10 seconds, the monster disappeared without a trace.

Edward stared blankly at the scene before shouting.

“Ah! Ajusshi, please help me. No, please help my brother. His name is Rooney. He is young and can’t escape.”

The man stared at Edward and said.

“Don’t you feel the pain?”

“Huh? Ahh. A doctor told me that I don’t feel any pain. But that isn’t important right now. My brother Rooney...”

“Your brother is dead.”

“Huh?”

Edward knew the meaning of the word death. However, he didn’t have a distinct impression of death.

The man understood and brutally explained it to him.

“It means he won’t be able to move. Forever.”

I had handled 2 shadow sinners in approximately 30 minutes.

Of course, if I used my power then 10 minutes would be enough. My total stats added up to 410. The shadow sinners only had 340 stats and wouldn’t even be able to catch my ankle. However, I was pretending to be an Awakened so there were some constraints.

I handled two shadow sinners and saw the young boy.

His lower half was completely crushed by the building. At first, I thought he was numb but the child’s face showed no signs of pain. I was curious and opened Mind’s Eye.

Name: Edward Windsor
Occupation: Warrior (Hero) Title: None

Stats

Strength: 14

Intelligence: 34

Agility: 15

Stamina: 17

Magic Power: 32

Potential: (112/441)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: No Pain (Ex R)

Great potential.

It was about 20 points higher than Yoo Eun-hye and was one of the highest I had seen among the humans.

But I was more surprised by the child's name.

‘Edward Windsor? One of the 10 Heroes, Edward Windsor?’

Edward Windsor. Duke Slayer!

He was the direct cause of brutally killing 10 of Grand Duke Pandemonium's dukes. Even though his raid groups were wiped

out, he managed to survive and obtain 10 Dungeon Cores.

But I never heard that he was a paraplegic.

Maybe he overcame it with a skill...right now he still had the face of a naive boy.

Meeting in this way. Coincidence or destiny?

Edward asked me.

“S-such a thing? Rooney was just born...”

I was worried for a brief moment.

It looked like he prized his brother very much.

I could use Chrisley’s undead resurrection and a doppelganger skill to deceive him. This would allow me to fully use one of the mighty 10 Heroes.

However, the aftermath would be terrible if he discovered the truth.

Edward Windsor. A talent that couldn’t be missed.

I decided to tweak the direction a little bit.

“Death can come to anyone regardless of age. However, your brother is dead because of the creatures. Those guys making people go crazy are the ones who killed your brother.”

“Ah...”

Tears gathered in Edward’s eyes.

“So now Rooney won’t move?”

“Yes.”

“Forever?”

Forever.”

“Ah...!”

Edward screamed as tears fell down his cheeks.

Just then, rain fell from the sky like a fairy tale. The dark clouds seemed to represent Edward’s feelings.

He was crying alone. And as Edward’s cries died down, I opened my mouth.

“Do you want revenge? Fight against the monsters that killed your brother and parents. If so, nod your head. I will give you power.”

“Power...”

“A power that can kill the monsters. Power for revenge! Do you want it?”

“M-monsters...I want to kill.”

Edward nodded.

Then he slumped down. He was stunned.

I looked at him and laughed.

“Welcome to the Devil Hunters. Edward Windsor.”

There really was a chain of fate.

Edward didn't know.

The monsters that killed his brother and family.

I stood in the midst of those monsters.

And I was the exceptional one!

*

Edward's lower half was completely crushed. It wasn't at a level that modern medicine could control. A common potion also wouldn't work.

My team was puzzled as I brought Edward.

"A new member."

I said curtly. They knew not to question me. I ignored them and brought Edward to the plane. The British ambassador expressed his thanks again but I ignored it.

In the end, we blocked the monster wave in the United Kingdom. Now was the next turn. My plan was to interfere with the demons getting points as much as possible.

Edward didn't wake up.

He was a young child suffering from a strong shock.

Thanks to his 34 intelligence, he was immune from the shade's mind control.

Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye felt pity and started nursing Edward. They wiped his sweat when Edward was screaming from a nightmare and changed his underwear when he peed.

Edward was unconscious for 3 days before waking up.

“W-where? Where is my brother Rooney?”

Edward immediately asked for his brother after waking up.

The members were all wearing magic tools for translation. The items that emerged the most from the dungeon were those enchanted with translations.

Yoo Eun-hye could understand Edward's words through her left earring. Yoo Eun-hye's words were automatically translated as they reached Edward's ears.

“Hi, Edward? Your name is Edward right? Nice to meet you. I am Yoo Eun-hye.”

“Where are my parents? Who are you...?”

Edward looked around.

It was an unfamiliar place. He also felt a bit dizzy.

Yoo Eun-hye and Edward weren't the only ones in this place. Other people he wasn't familiar with could be seen as he turned his head.

Yoo Eun-hye gave a benign smile.

“We are the Devil Hunters raid group. Our leader rescued you. Don't you remember?”

Edward trembled.

At the same time, he grabbed his head like he had a headache.

“Ah...! T-then it wasn't a dream?”

“Yes. I would also like to think it is a dream. You have gone through a lot. Still, it is over.”

“I didn't think so. This is reality...”

Edward tried to turn his body.

But he made a puzzled expression as he realized his lower body wasn't moving.

“First, it is urgent to treat you with a potion. I wanted to send

you to a big hospital with modern medicine but Captain-nim had the opposite opinion...ah, don't worry. Everything depends on the will of the individual. You can become better if you work for it! There will be a doctor with us and just tell me if there are any difficulties. HUU!"

Yoo Eun-hye sighed with pity.

She had gone through something similar so she could sympathize.

Edward woke up after 3 days and during that time, Devil Hunters had taken care of the monster wave in Sweden.

Necessary items and a personal physician were available for him. The doctor shook his head while watching Edward's state. There was a lack of facilities but he took care of anything urgent with the first aid kit.

Bump!

The door opened and a new figure appeared.

Edward's eyes widened.

It was the man who grabbed his hand as Edward was falling down a cliff and asked 'do you want to live?' It was like the devil was offering him power.

Now it really couldn't be called a dream.

That man wouldn't be in Edward's dream.

This was reality. The ghastly reality!

Yoo Eun-hye got up.

“Captain-nim! Don't leave a patient on the plane. He is a 10 year old child. The urgent crisis was passed over with the potion but... Psychological help...”

“You woke up.”

The man said.

Edward looked at the man.

An overwhelming presence. It was a first. A strangely unreal atmosphere was around the man. Questions about why he was here swirled in his head.

He inwardly panicked. No pain. Edward couldn't feel anything so his mind was in overdrive. Edward's instincts could determine what type of man this was.

But he never felt like this before.

The other day he was in a very confused state.

Edward's face spasmed as he tried to talk.

“Who is ajusshi?”

“The one who will give you strength.”

The man said without hesitation. He spoke like it was the obvious truth.

Edward remembered that day.

“Monsters...the strength to kill them?”

“If you don't want it then tell me. Commit suicide right now.”

“Captain-nim!”

Yoo Eun-hye was aghast.

Edward was baffled. He was 10 years old. But even peer pressure had a limit. It was too soon to work through everything.

And the man spoke like he didn't care.

"I'll show you. The power you can have."

*

Athens, Greece.

A dungeon ruled by an earl. The population was only 10 million but the earl belonged to a Grand Duke's faction.

I wanted to cut off Upa's hands and feet. I didn't care about the earl.

I moved without hesitation once the request from Greece was received.

In Athens, a monster wave consisting of gargoyles, harpies and sleep moths was in full swing.

Due to their limitations, Greece didn't have superior military power. There was a large number of lower creatures so the situation could be difficult to handle.

"Taking care of the gargoyles is simple. Cut their throats. They won't recover and will instantly turn to stone. The harpies have a weak point at the joints connecting their shoulders. Keep this in mind and it will be helpful while fighting. The sleep moths aren't

aggressive and will hardly ever attack first.”

There was a briefing during the flight. But I explained it once again.

Edward was watching me from a wheelchair. Lee Ji-hye pushed the wheelchair.

Yoo Eun-hye needed to raise her stats and gain some experience.

I looked at the faces of the team members and said.

“Sweep them all up.”

“Go!”

The crew cried out simultaneously.

They started to move in predetermined teams of two.

I worked alone. Even if someone followed me, I still had the habit of working alone.

Rather, Krasla had such a role. Krasla was fulfilling that role for Yoo Eun-hye. Krasla could properly support Yoo Eun-hye while she was growing.

I took out Wrath.

Then I walked slowly towards the approaching creatures.

Edward was watching from behind with confusion.

The man's movements.

As the battle went on, the bodies of the creatures were scattered around him.

Sometimes a wonderful image could be seen.

The man swept up hundreds of creatures in 10 minutes.

Edward only stared at the man.

‘Can I get that strength?’

Edward couldn't believe that a man could move like that. It was happening right in front of his eyes but he couldn't believe it.

The Awakened.

People who had recently emerged.

Their numbers grew steadily and news was always heard about them. Due to the influence of his parents, Edward used to watch the news every evening.

People gained power all of a sudden so wouldn't that cause plenty of violent crimes?

Dozens of actions against the police or robbing a bank...in the United States, there was the impression that the Awakened weren't helpful.

Plenty of Awakened were shot or arrested.

Humans were social animals and it was no different for the Awakened. Those with power were forced to live with ordinary humans so there were bound to be 'limitations.'

In fact, Edward had seen some Awakened. They were quite strong. Bending steel or running 100 metres in a few seconds.

But they were nothing in front of this man's overwhelming strength. He was unmatched among those gathered here. An existence that could stand alone. The man didn't seem to have any limitations.

'No. My legs are broken. I can't move like that.'

Edward felt his chest become tight. He was still unsure about the man's question.

Certainly, the man's movements were amazing. However, he was skeptical about whether he could obtain that power. Edward was surprisingly cool-headed in this regard.

This was reality. Edward had seen unrealistic elements like the creatures but he failed to realize he could break his limits.

“Ah...”

The man silently headed to Edward.

Edward didn't say a word.

He headed to 5 more countries with Edward. He always watched that man fighting while in a wheelchair. It was like eyes were painted in the back of the head.

The enemies who killed his brother. The ones who caused the changes to his parents.

He had a fierce hatred for the creatures. He felt miserable as he could only watch.

The man didn't say anything to Edward.

He just demonstrated.

But Edward's walls were gradually collapsing.

The man was an immovable force. It might be unrealistic but it felt like he could make the impossible happen. He wanted to get power like that.

After Europe, the Middle East and Saudi Arabia, Edward finally said.

“Captain-nim. Give me strength. The strength to defeat the monsters.”

Rather than the man imposing his choice on him, Edward decided to move himself.

Finally, the walls had cracked.

The war stopped after 15 days,

*

The method to become stronger was simple.

They had to want to become stronger.

But this required a strong impetus.

The driving force behind Edward was anger. The problem was the courage to break the wall itself. He had to be willing to move his limits.

Now he had nodded his head. A good spirit filled with enthusiasm.

I left Edward. He craved strength and would work hard. Even if he was a child, Edward Windsor was still one of the future 10 Heroes. I was sure he wouldn't disappoint me.

Edward Windsor was longing for power.

At the same time, I felt a strange feeling.

Unfortunately, Yoo Eun-hye wasn't one of the 10 Heroes. She had a similar strength but that was all. In contrast, Edward Windsor was a name that everyone acknowledged.

Such an Awakened had entered a demon's hands.

This feeling was close to bliss.

The feeling of getting my hand on an expensive toy. I would assemble the toy to fit my taste buds.

The legs wouldn't be a problem. An elixir was enough to fix it.

One of the 10 Heroes in the future...

Would he be finished under my hands?

I was really looking forward to it.

-After 30 minutes, you will be transferred to the Demon World Auction.

You can be accompanied by one creature.

And the Demon World Auction as well.

It was just like my expectations.

I smirked as I looked at the message floating in the air of the dungeon's top floor.

Chapter 64-69: Demon World Auction

The Demon World auction was an opportunity.

If someone had a discerning eye and luck then they could obtain something great for fewer points. It was possible to stay a step ahead of other demons. It would be an important key in winning the war later on.

And showing off.

The Spirit World prohibited fighting. But ‘showing off’ was possible. The creature that accompanied the demon was a measure of their power.

This was a measure that could never be ignored. The demons and their capabilities. These were important elements that would indirectly influence the demons. This could be used as a psychological warfare card against the opponent.

Fighting wasn't the only fierce battlefield.

I wanted to make the opponents move. To deceive them. If I had to use an analogy, it was like countries fighting over territory.

For me, I had two high class creatures.

The griffin and Gigantes!

I decided that Gigantes would accompany me. The griffin had already debuted in the world but Gigantes hadn't been released yet. Bringing Gigantes would be more intimidating than bringing the griffin. I could properly appeal to the demons.

'I select that guy.'

I could also hide it. But there was no point in hiding.

I owned approximately 7 million points. No one would have a larger amount of points. They would be used in the Demon World Auction.

Then wouldn't the demons wonder about why I brought a normal creature? The psychology of the demons was simple. The strong monopolized everything. The weak would be plundered.

Naturally they would think of me as prey. I was a neutral demon and only an earl. I needed to show off a great form after appearing. The Grand Dukes would work to try and find me.

So I was speaking to them by bringing Gigantes.

'Come at me? I'll easily take care of you.'

The idea of letting them find out!

In addition...the purpose was to stir the awareness of the demons.

A neutral demon who was a powerful sword.

If I had abundant wealth and a high class creature then the 4 factions would fall into chaos. I could heavily tilt the balance of the scales in my favour.

‘It is in the mind.’

I shrugged.

Etc. I was laying the foundation of a complex, psychological warfare. I was feeling a little smug.

It wasn't shown properly in the 1st Demon World Auction. I couldn't drive the existence of 'Randolph Brigsiel' into the Grand Dukes.

But this year it would happen...

‘A fun time.’

The room shook.

Soon I disappeared from the dungeon with Gigantes.

I opened my eyes.

A spacious room.

The dark spirit in the form of a gnome was standing in front of me.

“Kihihi! Randalph Brigsiel-nim. It has been a while.”

“Nice to see you.”

A reunion that happened after exactly 1 year.

The dark spirit turned its head and looked at the presence behind me.

“By the way...that creature behind you? I feel a great presence. Almost like an advanced or higher...”

There were many types of creatures. The dark spirits couldn't identify all of them.

A 4 metres tall giant wearing black armour. But his magic power was extraordinary for a simple giant.

I replied lightly.

“Your thoughts are correct.”

The eyes of the dark spirit started to shine.

“H-high class creature! It is really amazing. Even if you are a Dungeon Master, we have been looking for high class creatures for 5 years but...”

I interrupted its words.

“Aren’t there high class creatures in the auction?”

Dubolong passed me the list of auction items but there were creatures on there that I didn’t know. I had some expectations of the dark spirits.

“A high class creature can easily be sold for the finest price. Obtaining it would require tremendous personal sacrifices...the amount of points the demons currently hold can’t match up to those sacrifices. The average points require at least 100 demons to buy it.”

It meant they had caught some but wouldn’t sell them now.

It made a lot of sense. It had only been 2 years. A lot of the demons didn’t have many points.

“What is the average points of the demons participating in the auction?”

The dark spirits could figure out the average amount of points that the demons had. They just didn't know the individual amount of points.

“440,000 points. Kihhi. It is better than last year.”

I touched my jaw.

440,000.

Less than expected.

The demons had raised the average by 100,000 from 350,000 points. It was more than last year but that was it. It felt short compared to my reserves.

‘There are many uses for points. Observation skills take a significant amount of points to learn.’

I was at a level that they couldn't understand.

If I hadn't completed all the achievements then my points would be dramatically lower. It was 2~3 times more than last year's amount so it wasn't a significant difference. However, gaining the achievements caused my points to soar by 4.5 times.

“Randalph-nim. If you don’t mind, how did you catch the high class creatures? Of course, we will pay an appropriate price. If you impart your knowledge then I can talk with the Dark Spirit King and arrange an appropriate deal.”

The dark spirits told me anxiously.

They coveted the knowledge of how to catch high class creatures. But the method of obtaining the griffin and Gigantes was a secret.

They wouldn’t believe my words even if I told them.

There was also a low chance of meeting the Dark Spirit King directly. I couldn’t even say it to Yihi.

“Please excuse my bad manners.”

“...Kihihhi. I understand. Follow me. I will be happy to guide you.”

It gave up quickly. It was somewhat disappointed but it was natural considering my relationship with the dark spirits. We needed to be nice to each other.

The dark spirits turned around and started to guide me.

Gigantes silently followed behind me.

The many dark spirits that I passed looked at Gigantes with surprise. The spirits were very sensitive to magic power and could sense something ‘strong’ from Gigantes’ scent.

At the same time, the dark spirits confirmed the demon that was with the high class creature. They looked at me with admiration. The demon who used the most points in the 1st year. To the spirits, I was a ‘big spender.’

“Kihihi. You are popular, Guest-nim.”

“There are quite a lot of dark spirits.”

“Last year was the first auction. They have become used to it so more of them are coming to visit. Kihihi, do you like the appearance of the spirits? The low grade ones are used as workers but those who are paid a small amount of points will bring you pleasure.”

The dark spirits could change their appearance to any corrupted species. Therefore the spirits in the vicinity had a wide variety of face and body types.

And spirits weren’t the only ones in the Spirit World. Fairies and other species. This place could bring someone to the peak of pleasure.

“There is no need.”

But I had no time to waste on my libido.

While walking along a corridor of a castle, familiar voices could be heard.

“A dark spirit dares to imitate a succubus? How impudent. Aren’t these breasts fake?”

“Ahh!”

I frowned.

Groggy’s voice could be heard along with a woman’s. He was a demon who filled his dungeon with succubi.

The dark spirit guiding me laughed slyly.

“Kihhi. You really don’t need it? It only requires a small amount of points.”

I ignored it and walked forward. Soon I discovered Groggy across the hall. Groggy was holding a dark spirit in the form of a succubus.

But that act didn’t last long. Groggy realized there was someone behind him and turned around. Groggy’s smile was erased in an instant as he saw me.

‘Dark warrior.’

Standing next to Groggy was a dark warrior. Advanced 2Lv creature. They cost 110,000 pt to buy and were decent creatures.

But this was the Demon World Auction. Only one creature could accompany the demons. He wasn’t worth worrying about if the dark warrior was the best thing he could bring.

‘The fact that Groggy obtained a dark warrior is amazing in itself. There are rumours that he only filled his dungeon with succubi.’

I didn’t have much interest in Groggy in my previous life. The only thing I remembered were rumours that he was crazy about succubi.

Groggy growled.

“Randolph Brigsiel...”

“Weren’t the demons in Grand Duke Upa’s faction banned from participating in the auction?”

I spoke like it wasn’t a big deal.

“That is none of your fucking business.”

“It seems like Pakan Griolli is missing.”

Groggy’s face became flushed.

“Nonsense!”

My prediction seemed to be correct.

Grand Duke Upa. He was someone I couldn’t lower my guard against. If necessary, he needed to be handled before the other Grand Dukes. He was the most annoying among the 4 Grand Dukes. This was the reason I wanted to handle him first.

“I will know if it is nonsense or not at the auction.”

“You are the failure that doesn’t have a faction.”

Groggy was still resentful about last year.

It was understandable. The demon species didn’t like being weak.

I smiled and asked the dark spirit.

“Do I have to listen calmly to his insults?”

“Kihihi. After last year, we have added some rules. Fighting between the creatures that accompany you is allowed...of course, both parties should agree to it.”

Indeed.

This was the right rule when considering the characteristics of the demons.

Demons were aggressive and wouldn't just sit still.

However, they could tolerate it if it was a fight between creatures.

Establishing this rule was quite fast considering it was only the 2nd year.

“That's what he said.”

I shrugged.

Then Groggy looked behind me to Gigantes.

“Grrr! Fight. Shall win!”

Gigantes was quite intimidating. He had a primitive look in his eyes that made Groggy appalled. Even I wasn't comfortable in a

confrontation with Gigantes. Groggy definitely couldn't deal with him.

But I opened Mind's Eye to make an objective judgement.

Name: Groggy Inpir

Occupation: Demon Marquis (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Succubus Stallion (Ex R, Magic Power +5)

Stats

Strength: 64

Intelligence: 64

Agility: 67

Stamina: 75

Magic Power: 74 (+5)

Potential: (344+5/500)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Fire Shake (U), Enhanced Stamina (R), Observation (R)

[Relative Comparison]

Groggy Inpir

Strength 64 Intelligence 63 Agility 67 Stamina 75 Magic 79
Potential (344+5/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 89 Intelligence 74 Agility 77 Stamina 82 Magic 93
Potential (392+23/500)

I wandered around the world for 15 days and increased by strength and agility by 1.

Pure abilities ebbed and flowed. My stats steadily climbed.

This was in contrast to Groggy.

Frankly, the difference between the two of them wasn't even worth mentioning.

Groggy was accompanied by a dark warrior. It wasn't at a level to face Gigantes.

Kwaduk!

"I can deal with you at any time..."

"I am willing to spill your blood on the ground at any time, Groggy."

I interrupted Groggy's words. I then walked up to him, leaving no room.

Groggy shivered with humiliation. But he didn't dare open his mouth. The result of the showdown between the two creatures was already determined from the start. The dark warrior was no match. It was better to make a decision calmly.

“Continue barking. Right now you are too weak.”

What greater insult was there for a demon?

Groggy's trembling intensified.

I laughed and said.

“Let's get going.”

“Kihhi. I will take care of it. Guest-nim.”

*

The items could be previewed before the auction.

There was a counter.

And unlike the 1st year, numerous demons were gathered.

The reason was simple. Purchasing the goods required a strategy. Preparation on how to use the points to their maximum efficiency was required.

It was also a place to check the balance of the other factions.

So the large counter was very quiet. There was a lot of pressure. A heavy air that felt like it would explode the moment someone opened their mouth.

This was due to the capabilities of some of the opponents. Another part of the plan was figuring out what goods the opponent was seeking. Thus it was important for the demons to have ‘decoys.’

Kung!

Gigantes’ heavy footsteps echoed in the space. The scent of a high class creature’s magic power spread in an instant. The demons instinctively turned their eyes towards me.

‘An enthusiastic welcome.’

I looked at the atmosphere of each faction.

Grand Duke Ariel and her faction weren’t that hostile towards me. They were just interested?

In contrast, Grand Duke Upa was an enemy that couldn't live under the same sky as me. His eyes showed an enormous desire to kill me.

Grand Duke Okullos wasn't interested. The only demon with a world tree in my previous life. He had an unusual nature that wouldn't pay attention to anything unless it interested him.

Pandemonium...skeptical. In the first place, he had a pessimistic nature. It was a natural reaction. Other demons showed a similar attitude.

“Kihihi. I'll wait outside. I can't step into this.”

The dark spirit retreated.

Spirits were sensitive to magic power. It was difficult to stabilize their minds in a silent battlefield like this.

‘Upa...’

I clicked my tongue after the dark spirit left.

Grand Duke Upa and his demons were at the counter.

After sacrificing Pakan Griolli, they received permission to enter the Demon World Auction again.

Really unfortunate.

Upa was also looking at me. The intense anger in his eyes...if this wasn't the Spirit World then it would be an unavoidable fight.

The question 'you?' could be seen in his glowing eyes.

I soon noticed something.

'Adol Luph is missing.'

I was the culprit behind it.

However, Upa only knew that one of his demons had died. With the exception of Duke Pakan, all of his faction should have been teleported. But there was no Adol Luph. This had only one meaning.

Adol Luph had died.

Someone attacked his faction...he could only think like that. Of course, he couldn't confirm the culprit. Upa was suspicious of all the demons gathered here. Perhaps all of the demons had received that question in his eyes.

I suppressed my laugh. Even the subtle movements of my muscles were restrained. It would be good if that suspicion lasted longer. The dissonance between the factions had begun and that

would be a big advantage for me.

‘Why shouldn’t I benefit from something like this?’

Anyway, I should look at the status windows of the demons before checking the products. I immediately looked with Mind’s Eye.

Name: Upa Bullenon
Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master) Title: * Destroyer (Epic, Intelligence +4, Magic Power +7) * Master of Gravity (Ex U, Magic Power +7)

Stats

Strength: 82

Intelligence: 79 (+4)

Agility: 75

Stamina: 74

Magic Power: 81 (+14)

Potential: (391+18/500)

Uniqueness: One of the four Grand Dukes. Owner of the great castle Bullenon.

Skill: Black Hole (Epic), Gravity Field(Epic), Observation (R)

[Relative Comparison]

Upa Bullenon

Strength 82 Intelligence 83 Agility 75 Stamina 74 Magic 95
Potential (391+18/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 89 Intelligence 74 Agility 77 Stamina 82 Magic 93
Potential (392+23/500)

I squeezed my fist. The stats and skills were quite significant. Of course, I was still slightly ahead. A smile naturally formed and Upa frowned as he saw it.

‘I didn’t walk the wrong path.’

I examined the other Grand Dukes. Their status windows weren’t much different from Upa. The stats converged between 400~415 and they had two epic grade skills.

If we ended up fighting. I might be marginally ahead. In addition, the Grand Dukes didn’t have two high class creatures.

An electrifying thrill filled my body.

In overall terms, I was ahead of the Grand Dukes. And I would surely widen the gap in this Demon World Auction.

I headed to the counter and leisurely examined the goods.

*

The hall where the auction was being held had a traditional atmosphere.

It was a spacious hall with seating on 4 sides and on the ground floor. Like before, I was the only one who sat on the grandstand on the ground floor.

The other 4 factions climbed up to the side seating. There was no apparent conscious attitude towards me.

‘They don’t know my point reserves.’

Approximately 7 million. This was equal or higher than the total points of one faction. In other words, I alone was equal to a faction.

But the other demons and even the dark spirits didn’t know how many points I have. If they knew this then their attitudes would be different.

There was no profit in me announcing it. Anyway, they would naturally find out as the auction proceeded.

Soon a man in clown makeup appeared from backstage.

“Thank you for waiting! Just like last year, I Dubolong will be responsible for the auction today. Please take a look.”

Dubolong's face was different from last year. A high class spirit who secretly made a deal with me. He sent me the list and I could build a neat plan.

He scanned the auction hall and smiled.

“There are two empty seats. One of you was banned for 3 years for breaking the rules...and after sending the message a few times, the other one has crossed the river to never return. Our deepest sympathies.”

It was said with a bit of mockery.

After a moment of silence, he raised his head and laughed brightly.

Upa was upset but the other Grand Dukes didn't mind.

Originally Upa's faction couldn't participate in the auction for 3 years. But he made some concessions and blamed it on Pakan Griolli. Thanks to that, Grand Duke Upa's opinion of the spirits wasn't very good.

“Now now! This year we have prepared more passionately than last year. The spirits went through a lot of effort during this year to develop a list that will cause the guests to cry. But that is a story that I can talk about for 24 hours. I don't want to pour cold water on this hot atmosphere.”

Dubolong shrugged and continued.

“100 auction items. We have carefully selected the first item to be shown. Last year, it was Krasla who had the blood of the true demonic dragon Aojin. Ah, so I have to ask a question. Buyer Randolph Brigsiel-nim. Are you satisfied with your purchase of Krasla?”

Dubolong bowed towards me.

Chrisley was the real treasure but Krasla wasn't bad. He had the potential to move up the a high class rank.

“Brilliant.”

It was impossible not to be satisfied.

Dubolong's smile widened.

“Thank you for the compliment. Randolph Brigsiel-nim seems to be accompanied by a high class creature that is even better than Krasla.”

He looked at me slyly.

Diverting the attention towards me. Making sure to show 'positive' attention.

The demons flinched. They hadn't expected such a direct comparison.

The demons had questions. A number of them looked at me with concerns.

As expected of Dubolong. He had the temperament of a scammer. A superior trader wouldn't make their scamming nature obvious.

"Let's forget the long story. I will now introduce you to the first auction item. The spirits stumbled upon it in some ancient ruins... perhaps many of you might be unfamiliar with it. The Astral Code!"

Another spirit brought out a square, black box.

The long black box was filled with a black substance. Over 20 centimeters in length. It looked like an ordinary rod.

Many demons fixed their gaze to it.

Everyone seemed to have mastered the Observation (R) skill but Mind's Eye was better.

The Observation skill could figure out the name and key options of the item. It couldn't figure out the detailed description, hidden options or sealed options.

‘Astral Code. A strengthening item?’

I had seen it a few times. I couldn’t remember it well. I blamed it on never having experience purchasing it. I opened up Mind’s Eye.

-Name-Astral Code (U)

Description: Add one option to an item.

* Stats +1~2, a specific characteristic will be randomly selected to enhance the item.

** The failure probability will depend on the user’s magic power.

Now I remembered the description.

But the ** part marked below was unfamiliar. An option only visible with Mind’s Eye. A simple observation skill wouldn’t show that part.

‘I have to buy it.’

Dubolong sent me the list but I couldn’t know the detailed options. I had to check the item directly before deciding to purchase it. It was a given that there would be some unexpected

spending.

The ‘strengthening unique characteristics’ would be very useful. For example, it can make a sword sharper. It was random so there was some risk.

Still, the extra stats was enough to make it worth purchasing.

Dubolong exclaimed dramatically.

“The auction will start at 100,000 points! It can strengthen your weapon so I assure you that it is the best item that you won’t regret! And please note that the boys and girls on the ceiling will weep and feel scorn if you don’t spend more points than last year.”

The rates had increased from last year.

But when compared to last year, the demons also had more points. It was a natural phenomenon.

“100,000.”

“Ohu...Grand Duke Ariel-nim!” An excellent eye. You can see the value of this item. 100,000 points have come out!”

“120,000.”

“Grand Duke Okullos-nim! I am thankful for your careful selection.”

“150,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim! You have come out! The first auction only has Grand Dukes participating.”

“200,000.”

“Ahh, even Grand Duke Pandemonium-nim! Now all the Grand Dukes are involved.”

An item that could strengthen another one was a great attraction. An epic grade armour getting another property would be worth a million points.

The other demons didn't even think of putting up their hands.

But...

“300,000.”

I spoke a single line.

I came forward.

Dubolong clapped exaggeratedly.

“Earl Randolph Brigsiel-nim! Amazing. He has raised it by 100,000 points to make it 300,000. Is there any more?”

The hot atmosphere seemed to have cold water poured on it. All the demons knew that I spent more points than anyone else at the 1st Demon World Auction.

But that was when they didn't know the existence of the Demon World Auction. So it was regarded as due to luck. Collecting from the beginning without spending any points.

The demons thought I would receive a lot of damage from the auction when it came to breeding species. Thus the demons laughed at me.

Yet I was showing the same behaviour even in the 2nd Demon World Auction?

They were definitely worried.

Of course, I may have just collected the points throughout the year. The problem was they didn't have an explanation for the high class creature.

Using 300,000 points at the start...

They hadn't thought I would come forward so generously. This was merely the first auction item.

The heads of the demons started to become busy.

And they all came to one conclusion.

‘Showing off!’

Increasing the points by 100,000.

It was in order to make a rival consume 300,000 in the beginning. The Astral Code was great but it wasn't at a level where they would risk it.

“Congratulations! Astral Code has been sold to Randolph-nim. It will be sent to your dungeon shortly after the auction ends.”

Dubolong ended it.

The spirits moved the box filled with the Astral Code.

I leisurely looked at the stage.

Dubolong laughed and introduced the following item.

“This is not the end. The second auction item will also catch the

attention of the guests. Do you know of the ‘Darhan Sword?’ A sword dyed with the blood of a predator that terrified the Demon World years ago! A sword that eats blood. The spirits went through a lot of difficulty to obtain this sword.”

Tak!

It was at that moment.

A spacious hall. After a long moment, Dubolong slapped his thighs. It was once again an act in order to attract attention.

I casually folded my arms.

Soon the dark spirits brought out a huge sword that was a little over 2 metres long.

The sword emitted a red light. I remembered this item from the list. There might still be a hidden item so I opened Mind’s Eye.

-Name – Darhan’s Sword (U)

Description: A sword made of the blood of a darhan. The user will naturally crave blood.

*Depending on the amount of blood absorbed, strength will increase by 1~5.

****A user with low intelligence is likely to have their souls sucked into the sword.**

I nodded at the hidden options in the contents.

In my previous life, the demon who bought the sword became a ghost. The user instinctively brandished it to exterminate all living things on the battlefield.

I didn't know it but that demon had one of the lowest intelligence among the demons. His intelligence and magic power was low so it was natural he would become a ghost.

Dubolong showed a triumphant attitude as he cried out.

“Starting at 150,000 points! You will be sorry if you miss this opportunity. Darhan's Sword is worth it.”

“150,000.”

I spoke first this time.

“Earl Randolph-nim! Randolph-nim has decided to participate after just obtaining an item!”

“170,000.”

“Marquis Dellat-nim! 170,000 points have come out.”

“180,000.”

“Earl Randalph-nim!”

“200,000.”

Marquis Groggy-nim! A great opener!”

“250,000.”

“Ohh! Even more! Earl Randalph-nim has increased it to 250,000 points.”

My legs trembled. It was a slight tremor but the other demons noticed it.

“270,000.”

“Marquis Groggy-nim! How fierce. Dubolong wonders who the winner of this fight will be!”

I took a peek at Grand Duke Upa’s camp and saw Groggy giving me a poisonous smile.

A provocative action. His face seemed to be asking if I had any more points.

He seemed to think that I wanted Darhan's Sword.

I had showed an impatient movement the moment the sword came out. So he didn't even think about it.

'Properly hooked.'

It was like I intended.

Unfortunately for him, I already had the epic set item 'Wrath.' There was no penalty for using it, the sword gave 7 strength and there was also a skill so it was a precious sword.

There was no reason for me to obtain another sword.

Groggy was hooked by my bait.

I stopped here.

A number of seconds passed before Dubolong shouted.

"Darhan's Sword has been sold to Marquis Groggy-nim for 270,000 points. Congratulations."

Groggy was elated. He thought he won and I barely managed to suppress a laugh from coming out.

Groggy didn't know about the hidden options and was likely to become a ghost after using the sword. Groggy had 64 intelligence. It was pretty low.

He just put himself on the path of self-destruction...!

He was completely fooled.

The other demons wouldn't have a large reserve of points. At best, they would consider the standard to be around 500,000. I had spent 300,000 points on the Astral Code so he was convinced I was bluffing.

“Introducing the third item. The spirits squeezed out our best efforts and managed to catch the previously extinct creature ‘Cursed Yeti.’ The cursed yeti are the descendants of the creature Conte who was once hailed as King of the Yeti. We are only showing a cub but it could grow into a high class creature.”

After a while, the cursed yeti cub trapped behind bars was brought out.

It was only 1 metre or so. Similar to the form of an orangutan but with a little more muscle. Usually yeti had white fur but the cursed yeti was black.

A species that wouldn't be sold in the store.

An almost extinct species that couldn't be found in the Demon World.

I was curious and used Mind's Eye.

Name: Cursed Yeti

Stats

Strength: 33

Intelligence: 17

Agility: 29

Stamina: 41

Magic Power: 26

Potential: (146/329)

Uniqueness: A cub of the cursed yeti.

Skill: None

Looking at the potential, an adult would match an advanced 2Lv creature. Dubolong was exaggerating when he said it would become a high class creature.

But the other demons didn't know this fact. The cursed yeti was almost extinct so the demons hadn't seen it for a long time.

However, not many demons would be overwhelmingly convinced. The demons didn't want to be ripped off. If they bid and it wasn't a high class creature...

I had expected it from the beginning.

“Starting at 200,000 points! Don’t think that it is expensive. High class creatures would be sold for millions of points.”

200,000 points!

A rip off.

Dubolong’s tirade was beginning.

I waited for someone to raise their hand first.

The demon factions exchanged glances saying ‘it isn’t sure’ and shook their heads. Mind’s Eye could see the status windows and potential of my opponent. They couldn’t be confident without learning more details about the situation.

“200,000.”

At the moment, someone made a bid.

“Marquis Groggy-nim! A wise choice.”

Groggy.

He had bought Darhan’s Sword for 270,000 so it was surprising that he still had points left. Maybe he had spent the last year collecting points. The demons in Upa’s faction...

Grand Duke Upa's faction seemed not to know about the cursed yeti.

"210,000."

"Earl Randolph-nim! You are feeling greedy despite already possessing a high class creature!"

It was inevitable that I would participate.

Groggy glared at me after Dubolong's words.

"220,000!"

He couldn't stand being humiliated and raised the number.

I raised the white flag at this point.

"Marquis Groggy-nim! 220,000 points have come out! Any more? If no one bids then the cursed yeti will go to Marquis Groggy-nim!"

10 seconds passed.

No one else bid.

“The cursed yeti has been sold to Marquis Groggy-nim!”

Dubolong clapped loudly.

I was applauding inside my heart.

200,000 points with one sentence.

‘A large amount of points is gone.’

Darhan’s Sword and the cursed yeti. Both of them combined to more than 500,000 points. The demons had an average of 330,000~340,000 points so it was a significant figure.

One demon had spent 500,000 points. He was one of Grand Duke Upa’s men so that simplified things even more.

After that, 7 more auction items passed quickly.

I didn’t purchase any of the items. Only the Astral Code. There was no need to be greedy.

But I pretended to bid in order to steadily increase it.

Everyone gathered here were my enemies. I couldn’t even easily believe Dubolong. Deceiving the enemy to make them waste resources was a basic strategy in war.

But at the same time, there was a strange feeling. Every time I made a move. Someone always bid higher on the items I raised my hand on. Grand Duke Upa and his demons.

‘Coming at my throat.’

Revenge for last year? It wasn’t a big move but I didn’t feel great.

After all, the one who had a strategy would do well. So far, I had won. But I couldn’t be too greedy. The future couldn’t be guaranteed.

I thought back one year. At that time, I was in a very favourable position. But the demons also realized the existence of the Demon World Auction. I could see that from them all learning the Observation skill.

The difference between knowing and not knowing was large. There was no room for cockiness.

“I assure you that the 11th auction item will make all your eyes widen. One of the ‘Five Statues’ that you should know about. We found it very deep underground. One of the Five Statues, the Statue of Abundance!”

Statue of Abundance!

An item that was required for any dungeon. I had also been waiting for it.

I inwardly trembled as I used Mind’s Eye.

-Name – Statue of Abundance (Epic)

Description: The maker is unknown. An unknown power dwells in one of the Five Statues. The Statue of Abundance can conceive many lives.

* The statue will give ‘Blessing of the Goddess’ to one species around it. The species that receives the blessing will have a significantly higher reproductive rate and increase the manifestation of unique body parts.

An item that was compatible with the world tree. The world tree’s effectiveness on ‘natural species’ would be influenced by the Statue of Abundance.

It was an epic grade item and Mind’s Eye unfortunately couldn’t see any deeper hidden options.

I had the same level of knowledge about the Statue of Abundance as the other demons. But I had an overwhelming 6 million points.

In addition, it was a good opportunity to determine the points

limitations of the other demons.

They could check the Statue of Abundance with the Observation skill.

Apart from the rating, the 'Blessing of the Goddess' would bring great benefits to the dungeon. Anyone would feel greedy over the item.

There was no need to think. Everyone would hold up their hand to bid.

'However, the winner will be me.'

I smiled.

It was the start of a full-fledged battle.

Dubolong's face was glowing with confidence. The Statue of Abundance was enough to surprise everyone. This was something to feel proud of as the auction progressed. There was no need to exaggerate with the Statue of Abundance.

There weren't any problems like 'limited to one species.' A blessing that could breed strong species so the expected value was beyond imagination.

The default base of the creatures...for example, let's assume that

the 1Lv 'Ogre' was blessed.

The ogre cost 40,000 points and was an expensive species to breed. The ogres had an extremely short breeding season, breeding once a year and only produced one offspring at most.

In order to breed 30 ogres, a minimum of 1 million points was required.

But the blessing didn't just increase the reproduction rate.

It also promoted the breeding seasons. The extremely short breeding season didn't make it easy so solving this problem would be helpful.

A lucky mutation like a twin headed ogre or something similar might appear and that could save hundreds of thousands of points.

There was no demons that didn't know this fact.

The eyes of the demons burned as they looked at the Statue of Abundance.

This was the 2nd year.

If I could get my hands on it then it really would be a jackpot. I would take a few steps ahead of the other demons. A required item that I needed to defend.

The four factions. And one neutral.

The 70 demon were currently having a silent competition.

Dubolong spread his arms wide.

“I’m not going to speak any longer. We will start at 400,000 points. Please choose wisely.”

The dark spirits said that the demons held an average of 440,000 points. Most demons would choose to participate.

However...the demons couldn’t easily raise their hand.

There was no choice.

It was 100,000 points above the reserve.

They didn’t want to spend their points on one item.

The 400,000 starting bid was higher than expected so the atmosphere became rigid.

Dubolong was also slightly confused.

‘It is common sense that it is impossible to gather 7 million points in 2 years.’

I gained this due to my previous experience and the ‘achievement quest.’ As a result, I saw the benefit of millions of points. Dubolong, the Dark Spirit King and even the devil wouldn’t have expected such a thing when designing this.

Who would break first?

I watched with interest.

“400,000.”

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim!”

About 30 seconds of static. However, it felt like dozens of minutes had passed to Dubolong.

Dubolong relaxed now that someone had bid on it. Relief could be heard when he called out Ariel’s name.

“450,000.”

It was easy after the first bid.

“Grand Duke Okullos-nim! He increased the gap by 50,000.”

“500,000.”

“Marquis Anastasia-nim! A large amount of points had been kept hidden!”

“530,000!”

“Duke Dipella-nim! 530,000 points have come out. It is coming quickly. But this is low compared to the value of the Goddess of Fertility!”

The rain came all at once.

530,000.

In my previous life, Duke Dipella was the owner of ‘Mind’s Eye’ and those words poured cold water on the atmosphere.

It was rare for a demon to have that many points. It could be called a trump card. An item like the Statue of Abundance really brought out the hidden cards of each faction.

And there was no guarantee they could obtain the Statue of Abundance. Only someone like me who had an overwhelming number of points didn’t care...

“Is there any more? If there isn’t then the Statue of Abundance

will be sold to Duke Dipella-nim for 530,000 points!”

Dubolong said urgently.

An epic grade item. The efficiency was endless.

Dubolong’s job was to raise it to the best price possible.

It couldn’t stop at 530,000. The dark spirits had suffered obtaining the item.

The abyss was a place in the Demon World that was prohibited. Numerous dark spirits entered and were destroyed while obtaining the Statue of Abundance.

The spirits obtained the auction items through this manner. A place nobody could find. A place people couldn’t enter. A place that shouldn’t be entered...

They opened the doors to places sleeping for thousands or tens of thousands of years and brought out items. There were bound to be some sacrifices. A reasonable compensation should be given for the sacrifices.

“Statue of Abundance! An epic grade item that has infinite possibilities for your dungeon, especially with the blessing. 530,000 points. If there are no more bids in the next minute then it will be transferred to Duke Dipella-nim!”

He was in a rush.

Dubolong let out a barrage of words.

“550,000.”

I finally came out.

The 1st barrier.

I had already purchased the Astral Code for 300,000 points so Dubolong and the other demons were surprised. The boy and girl statues on the ceiling didn't laugh after I bid 550,000 points.

The total spent was 850,000 points...that was already the highest reserves.

“Earl Randolph-nim! Earl Randolph-nim has made the top bid!”

Dubolong shouted breathlessly.

The battle had restarted.

“600,000.”

“I am feeling breathless, Grand Duke Ariel-nim! She has joined in again!”

There were few goods that Grand Duke Ariel was obsessed with. It was rare for her to spend points unless it was a particularly good weapon.

Her greed would then break out.

The side hall where Grand Duke Ariel’s faction was located where I didn’t need to turn my head. Ariel was centrally located and staring at me.

She had tested me at the 1st Demon World Auction. And I had gained the advantage in that encounter.

Then what about now?

600,000 points. She must really want to buy the Statue of Abundance. So she was telling me to stop at this point.

Little by little, my existence was being embedded in her eyes.

Of course, I couldn’t stop here.

“610,000.”

Ariel Diablo.

She had two horns similar to a goat. The horns on the forehead that proved she was the descendant of a devil turned red.

“Earl Randolph-nim! He is like a sea. You can never tell where he ends!”

“620,000.”

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim.....!”

“630,000.”

“Earl Randolph-nim! A close match!”

Kwajik!

Ariel caused a crack in the hall.

She had an aggressive and straightforward personality. She wasn't greedy but she wanted to get her hands on everything she desired, like a child. She didn't use dirty methods like Upa but directly took action.

She seemed to really want the Statue of Abundance.

However, I had no intention of yielding.

Ariel Diablo moved her eyes towards her demons.

She wanted to check if there were any demons with more than 630,000 points. In other words, her limit was 620,000 points.

But the expressions of the demons under her wasn't good. Ariel glared at me before looking away. She turned her head.

“Is there any more? The bid isn't finalized yet!”

No more demons wanted to bid.

Dubolong seemed to sense this and sighed before clapping. The result was less than expected but I had successfully defended it.

“Congratulations! The winning bid for the Statue of Abundance is Earl Randolph-nim with 630,000 points!”

Astral Code and the Statue of Abundance.

So far I had bought those two things at the auction.

The other demons judged that I used all my points and would develop new strategies. They relaxed now that they didn't think I could dominate the auction items.

Thanks to the Statue of Abundance, they also found out that Grand Duke Ariel's faction had 620,000 points. Their minds were relieved.

But they didn't know. They couldn't know.

I still had close to 6 million points remaining!

I gave a small smile.

'Be careless. Forget about my existence. And be surprised.'

I would soon destroy their common sense. No, I was aiming for it. Wreak havoc and make them panic.

Soon they would be forced to wave a white flag.

This was just the beginning. Now I was starting for real.

With the next goods that showed up, I made bids of less than 200,000 points.

The demons paid no attention to me. They thought I was trying to obtain more items with the low amount of points I had left.

And the 15th item.

The Sage's Leap.

It raised a unique or lower grade skill up one rating. I had instantly bought it before last year's auction to upgrade Mind's Eye.

The price started at 150,000 and reached 300,000 in an instant.

Everyone was watching the top bid.

“320,000.”

I finally opened up.

In the end, I successfully bought Sage's Leap for 320,000 and the demons scowled at me. Their eyes were asking if I had any more points. I had already used 1.25 million points and my attitude seemed to confirm that I was still holding points. But they were still acting in accordance with 'common sense.'

However, that common sense wouldn't last long.

“The 18th auction item...don't be surprised. The body of an earth dragon! The hard scales and bones of the earth dragon clearly doesn't have any damage and it looks like it can move at any moment!”

The auction proceeded quickly. It reached the 18th auction and the demons' ear pricked up at Dubolong's words.

Earth dragon!

The earth dragon was a creature that reached high class 4Lv. But they weren't easy to obtain. The earth dragon was born from a huge forest.

In special cases where very old forests met certain conditions, the forest would transform into an earth dragon. But aside from that, not much was known about the mysterious species.

The body of a earth dragon?

The demons who liked research would naturally feel greedy.

The body of an earth dragon was well worth it. A dwarf would be able to make many unique grade equipment with it. Materials that had many uses.

After a while, the dark spirits pulled out the giant body of an earth dragon.

A huge 20 metres in size.

The body was covered with glossy, green scales. There were two empty, hollow eyes. The unquestionable quality of the magic

power in the bones could be felt. Densely concentrated magic power filled the bones of the earth dragon.

The condition was very good.

It seemed like the dragon would come back to life and roar at any moment.

‘Good.’

I nodded my head.

Great material. An item I desired.

‘It won’t be bad with Undead Manufacturing.’

Chrisley would be able to grant new life to the body of the earth dragon. The skill level of Undead Manufacturing was still too low to use on such a great material but...I was willing to wait for that time. Magic would preserve the corpse until Chrisley’s Undead Manufacturing skill reached the required level.

If I was lucky, a 2Lv high class ‘Bone Dragon’ that was the pinnacle of the undead could be produced. It was wishful thinking but not impossible. Furthermore, the state of the body was good so I had high expectations.

‘The bodies of the creatures in Adol’s dungeon are crushed so

there is no possibility of selling them.'

They had been completely crushed by the golems. I felt regret after remembering it.

Anyway, I wasn't the only one thinking this.

There were quite a few demons who mastered undead related skills. Their eyes started to shine.

"Starting at 300,000! This is the body of an earth dragon. The benefits are endless. And this opportunity is likely to never come again!"

That's right.

It was extremely hard to save the body of an earth dragon.

Usually an earth dragon would turn back to a forest again when it died. A well preserved body of an earth dragon was really unique.

"300,000."

"Grand Duke Pandemonium-nim! You will never regret paying that price!"

"350,000."

“Ohh, Duke Dipella-nim!”

“400,000.”

“You must get it. Marquis Anastasia-nim!”

It was a situation where the demons would use almost all their points. There was nothing to fear anymore. That’s why it quickly rose by 50,000.

Every demon was an enemy.

“430,000.”

“Duke Dipella-nim! Do you have a good use for the body? But it has only gone over 400,000. It is still only at 430,000!”

Tsk!

Marquis Anastasia clicked her tongue.

She couldn’t bid any more.

“450,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim! You are participating after a long time. 450,000 points have come out. Is there any more?”

Except for the Astral Code, Upa hadn't made any more bids. He even sat still for the Statue of Abundance.

It meant Upa participated because the body of the earth dragon was important to him.

‘Then...’

I crossed my legs.

I relaxed in my seat with folded arms and spoke in a calm voice.

“500,000.”

Astral Code 300,000, Statue of Abundance 630,000, Sage's Leap 320,000...and now 500,000 for the earth dragon.

So far I called out a grand total of 1.75 million points.

Even Dubolong looked at me with shock. The demons had the same reaction as well.

A demon holding that many points after just 2 years!

Most of them hadn't even reached the limit of 1 million. In general, they got points from handling the Awakened that entered their dungeon. But having that many points through the dungeon was beyond imagination. It was impossible to gather 1 million with just that. Then 1.75 million?

“No way!”

A demon from Upa's faction shouted.

Groggy.

The expression of elation he had after winning Darhan's Sword was gone. Groggy's face contorted as he glared at me before moving his eyes to the ceiling.

He was certain that the boys and girls on the ceiling would be laughing with ridicule. But...Groggy's hope didn't last.

The statues hanging from the ceiling weren't laughing.

A moment passed and Groggy looked at me again.

Complex subtleties. But I could clearly see 'outrage' in his eyes.

He realized that he had been a fish caught on a hook. He finally noticed that Darhan's Sword was bait. I was the fisherman and Groggy was the fish. A fish stupid enough to be caught!

Oduduk!

Groggy's body started shaking. The sound of grinding teeth could be heard.

The subsequent humiliation. But this was the Demon World Auction. His error might affect his faction. All Groggy could do was tremble.

“500,000! 500,000 points have come out. Earl Randolph-nim has made a bid!”

Dubolong cried out and broke the silence.

Dubolong had also been surprised. I had called out 500,000 with no hesitation so he had been at a loss. Spending 1.75 million. He closed his eyes and imagined that many points.

This was because Dubolong was a spirit. If he thought about it a little bit more then he could determine that I had more points.

On the other hand, the demons were different.

The demons only saw what they wanted to see. They had paranoid tendencies. Every time I called to raise the points, they would think ‘that is the end.’ They couldn’t imagine that an enemy had so many points.

But I was slowly breaking their prejudices. I would personally show them that their thinking was shallow.

Dubolong clapped loudly.

“Amazing! The body of the earth dragon! This makes 4 items that have been sold to Earl Randolph-nim!”

30 seconds passed and no demons tried to make a higher bid.

It was natural. I took it for granted that I would win the points showdown. There was no way they could beat me.

Dubolong coughed and opened his mouth.

“Now, there are still many items remaining! The following item is...”

Dubolong’s expression suddenly changed.

His playful expression had disappeared. It was an attitude that he had never shown in the auction.

It was like someone invisible was talking to him.

‘I can feel the interference of magic power.’

I noticed that a third party magic power was interfering with Dubolong. Dubolong was communicating with someone similar to the manner I talked to Yihi.

But Dubolong was a high class spirit... He can easily deal with any mental attacks. Those that could connect to him were very limited. Especially since his expression looked like he was making a report.

‘King of the Dark Spirits.’

Dark Spirit King.

Yes, it could only be the Dark Spirit King. Especially since Dubolong looked nervous.

Dozens of seconds passed before Dubolong spoke with a weak expression.

“I’m sorry. We will have a break for a while. If you need anything then speak to the workers nearby. We will give you the best treatment.”

Dubolong bowed his head and disappeared behind the stage. Low grade dark spirits started walking in the vicinity of the demons.

‘The call of the Dark Spirit King...’

A spirit approached me with a seductive smile and started kneading my shoulders, but my nerves were solely focused on Dubolong.

In the past, the Dark Spirit King had rarely interfered with the auction. He would only convey a story through Dubolong when there was a very serious matter.

What had happened?

I worried about it while waiting for Dubolong to appear again.

After 30 minutes, Dubolong climbed back on the stage.

He briefly bowed and then opened his mouth.

“Sorry to keep you waiting. The auction will proceed normally so there is no need to worry. And I would like to say congratulations once again to Earl Randolph-nim for winning the 18th auction item, the Earth Dragon’s Body.”

Dubolong looked at me with a strange smile.

I frowned as I saw it.

Why did he bother repeating the congratulations? Furthermore, that smile from Dubolong gave me a completely different feeling.

I couldn't think of the reason.

That...Dubolong.

The action made him seem like he was going to act as a scammer. There were many questionable things about that smile.

“Now, this isn't the end. There are still many items that haven't been made public. The 19th item is now coming up on stage and I am sure you will be very satisfied. An item that will satisfy all my guests, Tear of the Moon!”

The spirit workers brought out a beautifully decorated box.

Dubolong opened the box that he was handed and a floating water droplet was revealed.

I saw it and inwardly panicked.

‘Different.’

Dubolong had sent me the auction list in advance.

There was no ‘Tear of the Moon’ on it. I had memorized it several times.

There was nothing to suggest this item would come out.

My mind thought about it.

It was obvious that the list had been renewed after receiving the call of the Dark Spirit King.

Why? That was the first question that popped into my head.

There was no significant benefit to changing the goods.

After all, the demons had limited points. They would just be exhausting the items on the list.

Then I remembered Dubolong's strange smile.

‘Huk...is the Dark Spirit King sending a message to me?’

I could confirm it.

I needed to keep watch while the auction was in progress.

“The Tear of the Moon contains an intensive amount of magic power. The magic power has been refined for millions of years and can greatly increase your stats! Look at this glistening light. Isn't it wonderful?”

Dubolong was babbling on.

The water droplet that flashed in the light. It seemed like the light of the moon was gushing out of it.

I regained my composure and opened up Mind's Eye.

-Name – Tear of the Moon

Description: The magic of the moon is naturally refined to give intense magic power. If someone with less than 80 magic power consumes it then magic power will increase by 3. If the person has more than 85 magic power then it will increase by 2. If magic power is more than 90 then it will increase by 1.

** There is a very low probability of receiving the 'Curse of the Moon.'

There was a hidden option. But it was a very low probability so there was no need to greatly worry. The question was whether I should purchase the item.

Of course, the item depended on my stats. My pure magic power was 85. If I consumed it then I could raise magic power by 2.

It was an obvious thing to purchase but I needed to think of Dubolong and the Dark Spirit King's intentions.

‘First...’

I stared at Dubolong.

I didn’t know what their intentions were but the Tear of the Moon was necessary for me. I simple couldn’t resist it.

‘I will play.’

So I would buy it. I would slowly figure out their intentions in the auction.

“We will start at 250,000 points. If any guests are low on magic power then hurry and buy it. Don’t miss this opportunity!”

“250,000.”

“...Earl Randolph-nim!”

The demons hesitated.

They gazed at me furtively.

However, I was still only looking at Dubolong.

“270,000.”

“It’s been a while. Marquis Dellat-nim! 270,000 points have come out. You will never regret this choice! Hurry and bid!”

“280,000.”

“Well, nice to meet you. Duke Suguph!”

“300,000.”

“A great strength. Earl Randolph-nim has bid 300,000 points.”

The demons that wanted to bid hesitated.

The demons with more than 300,000 were the top ranked demons and had high stats to prove it.

Having magic power increase by 2 was tempting but there were many items yet to be announced. Something that exceeded the efficiency of 2 magic power might come out.

Even Darhan’s Sword could increase strength by 5 depending on the amount of blood absorbed.

“Congratulations. The Tear of the Moon has been sold!”

300,000 points was an appropriate price.

My mind couldn't feel at ease after winning the Tear of the Moon. This wasn't the end. I was the only demon who knew that the list had changed. I could roughly guess what would happen with the next auction.

“Then I will introduce the 20th item straight away. A contrast with the previous item! ‘Smile of the Sun!’”

Indeed...

That wasn't on the list of items.

Tear of the Moon and Smile of the Sun.

Like a matching rhyme.

It felt like the two items were split apart.

I immediately used Mind's Eye.

-Name – Smile of the Sun

Description: The magic of the sun is naturally crystallized to give intense magic power. If someone with less than 80 intelligence consumes it then intelligence will increase by 3. If the person has more than 85 intelligence then it will increase by

2. If intelligence is more than 90 then it will increase by 1.

** There is a very low probability of receiving the 'Curse of the Sun.'

The moon and sun, these items increased magic power and intelligence.

Would there be any added options from consuming both at the same time?

Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun. Both had appeared in my previous life. And at that time, the different demons had bought and consumed it. I couldn't be sure what effect would appear.

'Why?'

I touched my jaw.

I knew for certain that the Dark Spirit King was sending a message to me.

Enemy or ally.

Gain or loss...

In this world, there were no eternal allies.

Despite having a secret agreement, this could be broken at any time. I needed to be more careful.

“This will start at 250,000 points! Unlike the Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun increases intelligence! Don’t miss out on this opportunity.”

After a moment, one person opened up.

“250,000.”

“Marquis Anastasia-nim! 250,000 points have come out. Is there any more?”

Dubolong looked around.

However, intelligence was a somewhat neglected ability. Unlike other stats, it had a less direct effect that could be felt. No one put up a higher bid.

I was also troubled. But I should see it through to the end.

I came to that conclusion and opened my mouth.

“260,000.”

This made it 2.31 million.

The total amount of points I used during the auction.

The boy and girl statues were still not laughing. It meant I had the required amount of points. At this point, the demons couldn't help being curious.

How the hell did I obtain so many points?

The trend of Awakened entering the dungeon was declining every day. The points revenue in the first year was better. However, I had even more points than the 1st year.

They wondered what my secret was.

Greed and interest flashed in the eyes of some demons.

Even Grand Duke Okullos who didn't have a lot of interest in anything was looking at me.

However...I couldn't afford to care about them.

“Smile of the Sun has been won for 260,000 points. Congratulations Earl Randolph-nim!”

Dubolong took a deep breath.

Then he went straight to the next item.

“The long-awaited 21st item. And you should remember the sealed items that appeared in the last auction. If you are lucky then you might even obtain an epic level item. It came again this year. A sealed cloak!”

The dark spirits emerged at Dubolong’s words.

A dark crimson cloak. There was soot everywhere and it looked dilapidated.

This was the first time a sealed item appeared in this auction.

Anyway, I was different from the other demons and could see the options.

I opened Mind’s Eye and a message window flashed in the air.

-Name – Sloth (Epic, Set Item)

Description: The last work made by the mythical blacksmith Oswen that even the gods opposed. Characterized by the 7 deadly sins, the evil contained in it was so powerful that Oswen reportedly went crazy.

“The only virtue of a king is laziness!”

* Agility +7, the Epic grade skill ‘Sloth’ can be used once every 7 days.

-A ‘Seven Sins’ set item has been found.

Collecting the same type of set items will increase the effect.

-A penalty will be given for the very high seal.

Strength -10 for 72 hours.

I stared into the air.

Last year, I had obtained a piece of the Seven Sins set and another one had surfaced this year.

But I couldn’t just sit back and enjoy it.

Tear of the Moon and Smile of the Sun. Sloth had also come out.

This process wasn’t normal.

‘Testing me.’

I clicked my tongue.

I finally realized the Dark Spirit King’s intentions.

Although it was sealed, the spirits were probably aware of Sloth’s existence. They maybe realized that I also took Wrath.

‘The owner of a high level observation skill to see through the seal. The holder of a vast amount of points...’

This was the test. I didn’t know why but the Dark Spirit King was watching me. He was throwing good stuff to see if I had the power to ‘purchase’ it.

The ability to see the items and possessing an enormous amount of points.

And I did as he intended when I bought the Tear of the Moon and Smile of the Sun. They were good items because they increased intelligence and magic power.

So.

‘Sloth.’

Sloth was one of the Seven Sins.

It was a dilemma. A must-have item for me. I already had Wrath. If I got my hands on Sloth then my combat power would rise. But it was a problem if I confirmed the Dark Spirit King's thoughts the moment I bought it.

It would also be an obstacle if the spirits had the rest of the Seven Sins. Would I be able to get the remaining five items if I didn't move a little bit? I made some pragmatic calculations and leaned towards the side of 'buying.'

I knew myself well.

'It is inevitable that I will bite the bait.'

My forehead creased.

I was caught by the Dark Spirit King's plan the moment I used Mind's Eye on Sloth. Although I didn't mind revealing the vast amount of points I had...

Tsk. I clicked my tongue.

I realized that I was forced to buy Sloth.

"Look at this sealed cloak in detail. It isn't simply an old and torn cloak. Have you heard of 'Oswen?' A blacksmith of the Demon

World. Even the gods couldn't help being amazed by his creations! This cloak was obtained by chance in the cave where he died. It certainly isn't an ordinary item."

Dubolong said.

Sealed equipment.

There was no way for the spirits to verify it.

However, they could make deductions according to the appearance and the place where they found the item.

At the same time, the demons started to stir.

The demons knew Oswen.

He left many rare equipment. They had the power to separate the ground and sky. Those who accidentally obtained Oswen's weapons would have their power incomparably changed.

There was an tremendous upheaval in the Demon World every time a weapon appeared. War would break out several times over it.

Grand Duke Ariel.

In particular, her eyes flashed.

When she was in the Demon World, her favourite weapon was made by Oswen. If Ariel's patent skill 'Abyss Sword' was used with Oswen's sword then it would turn many demons into powder.

But shortly after that, the 72 demons were forced to leave the Demon World to compete in this world. All weapons were taken away and as a weapons master, she felt greatly disappointed.

Although it would be worth it if she could buy the cloak.

Hearing the name Oswen was enough.

'She is aiming at it.'

I touched my wrinkled forehead. I wasn't informed about Sloth. But if I bought it then a conflict would break out. Maybe the Tear of the Moon and Smile of the Sun was to figure out if I had the power to purchase Sloth. It was so obvious that a laugh couldn't help coming out.

Dubolong gave a wily smile and opened his mouth.

"The starting points of a sealed item is exceptionally high. 300,000. 300,000 points!"

"300,000."

“Grand Duke Ariel-nim! This isn’t necessarily a winning bid!”

The first one to move was Grand Duke Ariel.

She had a combative stance.

Ariel’s purchase limit was 620,000 points. This limitation was revealed thanks to the Statue of Abundance.

“350,000.”

“Duke Dipella-nim!”

“600,000.”

“...! Grand Duke Ariel-nim! A troublesome contention! A move with the intention of winning!”

It became silent. This was the first time it had jumped 250,000 points. It meant she was greedy to get Sloth.

There was Oswen’s name but Ariel also had a discerning eye. I discovered that when she tried to bid for Wrath last time.

Of course, none of the demons bid after that. From the beginning, not many demons had more than 600,000 points.

“630,000.”

“No, Earl Randolph-nim! A great strength. And somehow it is a familiar figure.”

Was it enough?

Dubolong shook his head. He already knew that Ariel’s limit was 630,000 points.

In fact, it could be seen just from Ariel’s expression.

Deeply furrowed eyebrows. Firmly closed mouth. An expression that made people feel discomfort.

But that wasn’t the end.

The usually sharp two horns grew even further. Blood seemed to flow into her red eyes. She moved from her seat and stood in front of me.

I shrugged and remained sitting down. In an auction, the basic strategy was to determine the limits of the enemy and try to bid higher.

“Are you trying to push ahead without having enough points?”

“Rude bastard. Who do you think I am? I’m not someone you can face.”

She was Grand Duke Ariel.

Despite her character, she had the nobility and elegance of a Grand Duke. I had to admit it. Upa was sneaky, Pandemonium liked criticizing and I never knew what Okullos was thinking.

It wasn’t a normal personality. But I was immune to her anger.

“That...the auction is now in progress. Please refrain from any actions detrimental to the auction.”

Dubolong who was watching said.

The Demon World Auction wasn’t a place to make trouble. Demons competed with each other through points.

Of course, it was possible to restrict their entry if there was any confusion.

Ariel knew this. It had been 2 years. There would be numerous opportunities in the future. She wasn’t stupid so she realized this.

“I admit that your ability is extraordinary.”

I disregarded her angry expression and complimented her.

Ariel slowly said.

“So Randolph Brigsiel. Come to my faction.”

A sudden suggestion. In front of all the demons watching.

I was at a loss for a moment due to her boldness.

After a few moments.

I shook my head.

I had already rejected her once. Of course, her proposal was following a test but I rejected her anyway. Even so, she once again made the same offer.

The location was also a problem. An auction was currently taking place. All the Grand Dukes and demons were watching us now.

I opened my eyes and gazed at Ariel.

‘Strange.’

Ariel.

Ariel was resourceful. A demon who thought first before acting. But she chose this timing to make the offer. If I nodded then she wouldn't receive any damages and if I refused, she would have some justifications.

Instinctive behaviour or a calculated ruse? Was she aiming for it or...

I just couldn't tell.

"I reject. My temperament isn't suited to being under someone else. Wouldn't I rather reign?"

Anyway, I still gave an answer. And I spoke my true purpose.

From the beginning, I was the enemy of all the demons gathered here. It was a subject that I didn't mind publicizing.

Grand Duke Ariel's expression changed.

"You reject me and even mentioned ruling...right in front of me, Ariel."

'Indeed, this rude guy,' she seemed to be saying as she stroked her smaller horn. Then her horns shortened to their original appearance.

“No one other than the Grand Dukes has ever reigned over the Demon World. I am also one of them. This hasn’t changed for a very long time. Do you know what you are saying?”

“There is only one rule in the Demon World. The strong will eat the weak!”

I openly denied Ariel. I laughed.

This had nothing to do with rank.

The strong monopolized everything. The strongest would rule the Demon World. That was the absolute law.

When I was in the Demon World, I was an upstart who challenged the Grand Dukes. They treated me like a brat and laughed while beating me up. A guy they had erased from their memories.

But I was no longer a brat.

The guy who didn’t know his limits had disappeared.

Now I was strong.

Ariel’s face became intrigued.

At the same time, she shook her head.

“...Can you take responsibility for that?”

She was asking if I qualified for the most basic but absolute law.

I rose.

I was staring straight into Ariel’s red eyes.

“I’m not the one who should be saying that. Ariel Diablo.”

I wasn’t weak. A confidence that I could eat all these demons alone!

Ariel could slightly glimpse this.

“This isn’t an easy choice.”

Ariel turned and looked at the other three sitting.

And she made a charged declaration.

“Listen! Randolph Brigsiel didn’t accept my offer and I, Grand Duke Ariel will never allow him to take the throne. This is my

declaration of war! I will break him with my full power!”

An official declaration. Ariel was literally acting against me.

She approached me with the intention of blocking me. Ariel’s voice carried slight traces of her Power of Words skill. However, she should be concerned about what would happen if she couldn’t fully block me.

I didn’t bother adding my own remarks.

Ariel said some final words.

“I hope you meet a miserable death alone. Randolph Brigsiel.”

She finished and walked towards the door without any hesitation.

Dubolong who was watching exclaimed.

“Ariel-nim! The auction hasn’t ended yet!”

“My excitement was broken.”

Kung!

The massive doors closed.

Ariel left the auction hall.

But Ariel's expression was rotten as she left the auction hall. Her face was like a little child that didn't get her hands on a toy.

The auction continued.

They were at a loss after Grand Duke Ariel disappeared but soon the demons took part normally in the auction. In the end, Grand Duke Ariel was the only one who left the auction.

But as a result, the atmosphere changed.

First, the attitude of the demons towards me changed. Grand Duke Ariel's remarks made me emerge as a stronger presence.

It was still lacking but...it was just a matter of time.

Powerful creatures, two dungeons and the humans slowly growing. The demons didn't know all my hidden cards. If I was given a little bit more time then I would show them the power of an individual with no faction.

Now I had to be satisfied with a little awareness.

However, I would soon be standing side by side with the Grand Dukes for the throne. Furthermore, my true purpose was a

complete victory over my competition.

My goal was to make them fear me and become impatient.

I had come close to that goal in 2 years.

From that point of view, Ariel's behaviour was the bigger income.

Now that their gazes had started to set on me...

I had fully become the protagonist.

After gaining a few more items, I very satisfactorily finished the 2nd auction.

Chapter 70-71: Creature Showdown

The auction ended when my remaining points reached 2 million. I had close to 7 million points in reserve so I had used 5 million in this auction.

Thanks to that, I had shoveled up a substantial amount of goods.

Astral Code, Statue of Abundance, Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun, Sage's Leap, Earth Dragon's Body, Sloth and five other items.

The demons showed different responses after I successfully bid for 12 items. Shock. Intense curiosity. Hostility. Irritation. Of course, none of the demons felt good.

The auction was a competition. But they couldn't compete successfully due to my presence.

I appeared out of nowhere and caused havoc. I had an overwhelming number of points that no one could resist. Their hope to obtain a number of coveted items and creatures ended the moment I showed an intention to bid. It wasn't a situation where they could beat me in points.

Randolph Brigsiel became a prominent figure in their minds. The demons that missed out on the items felt resentment and cursed my name.

‘Fortunately I gained a large amount of points.’

I smiled.

I couldn't be dismissed.

In reality, most of the demons would think like that.

I had a high class creature like Gigantes and provoked Ariel. I had successfully engraved my image, unlike the 1st year.

I showed my power and influence to the other demons in my 2nd year. In the 3rd year, 4th year...as the auctions gradually progressed, my influence would spread.

The demons couldn't easily feel a sense of crisis and would wait to act.

But little by little, their mistakes would start to stack up. Things would go wrong. Mistakes would be made. Before long, the action that I started in the 1st auction would snowball out of control.

In short, I was at the point where the snowball had started rolling. It depended on how far my capabilities could grow. The difference between eating them all at once or spreading it out. So far I was quite successful.

Anyway...the auction featuring 100 different items was over.

But still, the Demon World Auction wasn't over.

There were many goods that didn't receive bids in the auction. There were also previous items insufficient for the auction.

Those things were gathered like rubbish at the market. The quantity amounted to hundreds of items.

The display on the outskirts of the castle caught the eyes of the demons. This was a public place where they could purchase 'free' things.

"Buinorong's Fork! A famous fork that was stabbed into a dragon's eye!"

"Selling a bouquet of Sellener flowers that emit a strong poison."

"Selling 50 orcs from the hard stone environment!"

The salespeople were obviously the dark spirits. But they weren't on the same level as Dubolong.

It was all workers gathered here.

It was unlikely that I would be able to find items that matched the auction. At best, they were the rare grade. There were also some very good intermediate creatures.

At first, the demons were interested but that waned. Unlike the auction hall, there were no checks to hold back the invisible tension between factions.

The rules prohibited direct battle.

So they had to rely on the creatures that accompanied them.

Except for some demons, most of the were accompanied by unusual advanced creatures.

Some were creatures that could be obtained in stores and were bred like Adol Luph while others were received as rewards for particular achievements.

They carefully selected the creatures in their dungeon. Therefore they had extreme confidence.

“Suguph. Why are you only accompanied by an ogre?”

But Upa was an exception.

Pakan Griolli couldn't participate in the auction and there were problems with some of Upa's participants.

Suguph Vahalla's expression changed at Upa's question.

He had used the shades and shadow sinners in the United Kingdom to try to gain points.

If it proceeded as he planned then he would have racked up a lot of points and impressed Upa.

But now a demon with the rank of duke was only followed by an ogre. It wasn't even a twin head ogre but a general one! There was such a gap between them that they couldn't be compared.

So Suguph felt it was really unfair.

“I'm really sorry.”

Of course, he didn't express that unfairness.

How could he say that the human Awakened killed them?

They had thrown his calculations into confusion. Thanks to that, he wasted 500,000 points. It was the reason why he needed to take a passive attitude in the auction.

Was he too dismissive of the Awakened?

Just thinking about it made his head throb.

“There is no one decent.”

Grand Duke Upa clicked his tongue.

Suguph and Groggy were in his faction but he didn't favour them.

He didn't know why but the quality of their creatures was poorer compared to the other factions. There was even someone stupid enough to bring an intermediate level creature. The 4 factions were making assessments to determine the weakest one.

The weak would die. Never show weakness. The nature of the demons was 'strength.' This could be judged through the creatures that accompanied them. But he was pushed from the start. It was inevitable that Grand Duke Upa's expression didn't look good.

The monster waves of the demons in Grand Duke Upa's faction failed but they didn't know that this was engineered by Randolph Briggsiel and the Devil Hunters. Even if Upa knew the situation, he wouldn't feel any sympathy towards the demons.

"Upa-nim. Don't worry. Aren't I here?"

A demon said confidently.

The worried look in Upa's eyes was dissolved.

"Visach. Yes, you are here."

Visach Mentam. Out of Grand Duke Upa's 3 dukes, he was the one with the fastest mental calculations. He was accompanied by the advanced 5Lv creature, the 'King Wyvern.'

A large creature 5 metres in size that covered the sky. A hidden card that would change the atmosphere. There were less than 5 demons that were accompanied by a King Wyvern.

"Those people who looked down on our faction, I, Visach Mentam, will directly execute them."

"I will believe in you."

Upa said with a determined expression.

At the same time, Visach glanced at the other demons in the faction.

He was elated about proving his authority. Out of the 3 dukes, he had succeeded in gaining Upa's trust. Of course, the face of Duke Suguph Valhalla looked like he were swallowing shit.

"Upa-nim. Are you really going to leave him alone?"

Groggy interrupted.

His face was still flushed from being fooled into buying Darhan's

Sword and the cursed yeti. His body was shaking because he couldn't suppress his anger.

He didn't know what was causing this.

The one that Grand Duke Upa and the other demons were gazing at.

The only neutral demon. The name...Randolph Briggsiel? That guy was buying goods at the market. He really had a lot of points in reserve.

The vein in Groggy's neck throbbed.

"He is defying us. It is like a dog suddenly trying to climb up. Anyway, we will teach him not to look down on our faction."

Upa was also angry.

He had been pushed by that guy's overwhelming number of points. They had suffered losses.

The other factions could never know. The quick witted demons would notice that Upa's plan had failed.

Grand Duke Upa touched his chin.

“The Dark Spirit King couldn’t be trifled with. He doesn’t want demons fighting in this place so I will honour it to some extent.”

The Dark Sprit King ruled the Spirit World. Just like the grand dukes in the Demon World.

They couldn’t ignore the request of such a powerful existence.

Groggy shook his head.

“Do not worry. I clearly heard the dark spirit say it. Starting this year, they will allow a confrontation between creatures.”

After that ‘guy’ was summoned to the Demon World Auction. The dark spirit guiding that ‘guy’ at the time clearly said that confrontation between creatures was allowed.

“So why wasn’t there a notice?”

“They probably thought it wasn’t necessary to cause trouble. The real trouble would happen once people are told.”

Upa briefly worried about it.

But Upa knew the creature behind that guy.

“Groggy. You can’t beat the Gigantes with the dark warrior. I am

quite familiar with the Gigantes due to the past.”

The gigantes was an endangered high class species. Not many demons knew about the gigantes. However, Upa had an encounter with a gigantes in the past.

They were completely different from the dark warriors.

Groggy’s body trembled.

“However...”

“I know what you are worried about. You deserve praise for giving me good information. And I can’t just leave those guys alone.”

Upa came to a conclusion.

“Visach. Gigantes is vulnerable to aerial attacks. The king wyvern should be able to win against it.”

A high class creature definitely had a weakness. Victory was possible if they took advantage of that weakness.

Visach bowed deeply.

“Let’s fix that dog’s head.”

*

Outdoor market.

I was busy trying to find anything good among the various bits and pieces.

I was originally planning to go home straight away but then Dubolong came to talk to me.

I recalled the conversation with Dubolong.

‘Right now the market is open. Find a good place.’

‘Is this also a test from the Dark Spirit King?’

‘You noticed. However, this isn’t a test. The spirits are pleased and have left you a gift there.’

‘Ridiculous.’

‘The spirits desire a good relationship with Randolph Briggsiel-nim. Randolph-nim is a unique balance destroyer. A test is necessary in order to determine if you are qualified. Please push away your anger.’

He admitted that the change in the list was a test. His words meant that I would be the balance destroyer between the 4 factions.

The Dark Spirit King seemed to want the balance between factions to be broken. If not, there was no need to use the words 'balance destroyer.'

That's why they wanted to pull me into their influence. There had to be a reason for why the Dark Spirit King was acting.

Furthermore, the Dark Spirit King didn't interfere with the 4 grand dukes. They already accomplished everything and didn't need the help of the Dark Spirit King. His help would be less effective.

But it seemed to be different when it came to me.

'Controlling me as food?'

Laughter emerged from my mouth.

Perhaps they really had such thoughts.

It was foolish not to be conscious of the demons.

Unlike the 4 factions, I was alone. Did the Dark Spirit King judge that I couldn't win without his help? Was he confident that I

would crave his help?

How funny. I was comfortable with the help of the Dark Spirit King as long as it wasn't a big hindrance.

The Dark Spirit King was overlooking me.

'I don't need to accept it.'

I shrugged and focused on finding the 'gift.'

I would receive it. I just didn't know what it was.

Therefore I searched every inch of the market for Mind's Eye.

The items had low prices. If I saw something that looked moderately good then I didn't hesitate to buy it. Anyway, I still had a lot of points remaining. I had expected to spend more in the auction and could afford to buy some more things.

I had almost searched through the entire market when someone stood in front of me.

"Randalph Brigsiel. I want to apply for a duel."

Visach Mentam!

One of the dukes in Upa's faction was looking at me with an arrogant face while accompanied by a King Wyvern.

‘Duel?’

I wondered what this nonsense was about. It's not like I didn't know the dictionary meaning of a duel. In addition, I was familiar with the demon called Visach Mentam. A powerhouse with the rank of duke in Grand Duke Upa's faction. Selfish and opportunistic. A bat like fellow.

Pakan Griolli and Visach Mentam played an important role in Grand Duke Upa's fight against Ariel. They betrayed him and was the cause of Ariel slicing through Upa's neck.

After that, they were caught in Pandemonium's faction and suffered. Right now, he was an authoritative and smug demon... why was he challenging me to a duel? This was nonsense. The direction wasn't very good.

“A duel. Do you want to play?”

I gently mocked. In fact, a duel between demons was unbecoming.

“Your act of deception has already exceeded the limits. Obediently accept the duel. If you turn tail and run then I will say that you were scared!”

Visach Mentam deliberately raised his voice. Some demons turned their attention this way. I couldn't avoid their eyes. If I accepted the fight then I would definitely win. If I avoided it then the impression I left could fall apart.

The strong took it all while the weak were despised.

Such accidents occurred when demons were gathered.

‘It is later than expected.’

Visach wouldn't have challenged me if he thought he would be defeated. He judged there would be some benefits...

But that wouldn't happen.

I had been waiting for this situation to come. Unlike last year, I had annoyed the demons. I once again scratched Grand Duke Upa's faction. It was something that couldn't be dismissed!

I leisurely opened Mind's Eye.

Name: Visach Mentam
Occupation: Demon Duke (Dungeon Master) Title: * Massacre Puncher (Ex U, Agility +7)

Stats

Strength: 78

Intelligence: 73

Agility: 83 (+7)

Stamina: 76

Magic Power: 66

Potential: (376+7/500)

Uniqueness: None

Skill: Danger Detection (U), Strength of the Punch (U),
Wyvern Pilot (Ex U)

[Relative Comparison]

Visach Mentam

Strength 78 Intelligence 73 Agility 90 Stamina 76 Magic 66
Potential (376+7/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 89 Intelligence 74 Agility 77 Stamina 82 Magic 93
Potential (392+23/500)

In my previous life, the duke had bought a skill in order to control a demonic dragon. Perhaps that changed to Wyvern Pilot. The only stat that was higher than mine was agility.

The stats were similar to that of the other dukes. An average of 383. I had a total of 415 so it wasn't much of a burden. The skills also weren't worth noting.

Right now, the word 'overpowering' popped into my mind.

There were no elements where I was lacking.

"I accept the duel."

I shrugged.

This was the Spirit World but I wasn't the one applying for a duel. Plus, the Dark Spirit King was intending something so I was likely to get away with the duel.

Visach laughed.

“You are misunderstanding something. I don’t intend to fight with a dog. We will compete with our creatures, Randolph Brigsiel.”

“I see.”

I couldn’t understand his positive attitude.

I would let him know who had the role of a dog one day.

I looked at the King Wyvern behind Visach.

A giant size of approximately 5 metres. An advanced 5Lv flying creature...it was advantageous against non-agile creatures like a gigantes.

But those predictions were confined to a general gigantes. My gigantes had belonged to a god. There was bound to be a difference. There was a slightly different configuration of the skills.

For example, a common gigantes had the skill Arms of the Earth (Ex U). This gave the gigantes a physical body beyond that of other high class creatures. But my gigantes had the epic skill Gigantic Slash.

It had the ability to destroy everything around it.

It could even threaten the King Wyvern flying in the sky.

‘A typical gigantes wouldn’t win against a King Wyvern but...’

Creatures with the name king or queen were generally a bit stronger. The King Wyvern was no different. It was a very good creature to take out a gigantes.

However, my Gigantes wasn’t normal.

I said with a smile.

“Gigantes. Kill that bird.”

“Grrr! Kill!”

Kung!

Gigantes took a frenzied step forward. Gigantes liked fighting and that could be a weakness. He wouldn’t feel good about not being able to take action against the King Wyvern.

The dark spirits selling items and demons in the area urgently evacuated. No one appeared to stop it so it was implied that a confrontation between creatures was allowed.

Soon only Gigantes, the King Wyvern, Visach and I remained in

the area.

I was looked at the fight with folded arms.

Kieeek!

The King Wyvern spread its huge wings and flew as Gigantes approached. It quickly flew out of range of the club. The giant had a heavy build.

But an even more surprising scene occurred afterwards.

It folded its wings and started to dive down. The movements weren't ordinary. It was obvious that Visach's Wyvern Pilot (Ex U) had a significant impact.

'Is he controlling it?'

It wasn't simply piloting. The skill meant he could move the wyvern's body like it was his own.

This wasn't a 1:1 fight but was 2:1. Gigantes had two opponents.

Puhung! Gigantes swung his club towards the king wyvern diving to the ground. The king wyvern momentarily spread its wings and slowed down. At the same time, its entire body turned silver like steel.

This was the King Wyvern's Iron Armour (Ex U) skill.

Kwakwang!

The King Wyvern literally flew into the ground. A giant hole was created in the ground. Gigantes narrowly avoided it but received some damage. The right shoulder joint was badly injured.

An unnatural air attack was hard to anticipate.

“Kill! Win!”

Gigantes' face was flushed.

Kururung!

He quickly activated Arms of the Earth. The surrounding land started to form a wall. The wall wouldn't let even a fly in.

But the King Wyvern was persistent. It flew into the sky just before Arms of the Earth was activated. Gigantes' gesture indicated that the skill was going to be used. Agility wasn't one of his characteristics.

Gigantes cancelled the skill and moved his feet. It had been one-sided so far, causing him to feel anger.

Then a sneaky look appeared on Visach's face who was controlling the King Wyvern.

"I will accept if you are willing to surrender. It would be a pity for a high class creature to die."

I didn't bother answering. One attack could turn the situation around. Gigantes still hadn't shown his competence. He had just panicked for a moment due to the irregular attacks.

"Kill! Win!"

Gigantes swung his club towards the sky. Anyone else watching the struggle would be laughing. However, I recognized that movement as Gigantic Slash.

An absolute destructive skill that destroyed everything in front of it.

Magic power solidified and pushed forward.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The momentum cut into the sky. The entire space started shaking. A formidable amount of magic power was condensed and struck the King Wyvern.

Fortunately for the King Wyvern, its heart was avoided but it was

still damaged.

“What is that skill?”

“...”

The demons murmured as they saw Gigantic Slash split apart a huge cloud in the sky. They didn't recognize Gigantes' attack. In particular, Grand Duke Upa's expression hardened.

In the past, he had used his hunting skills against an adult gigantes. He confirmed that the gigantes species had the Arms of the Earth skill but didn't see an attack skill.

This was a big variable. If he knew the gigantes' skill then he could develop a victory strategy. A specific strategy could be developed. He wouldn't have been caught by a trap. Visach's Wyvern Pilot fully covered the gigantes.

But that attack skill meant it was possible to snipe from a distance. The advantage of the flying ability was severely diminished. Of course, this skill couldn't be used indefinitely. In the end, the strategy was 'avoidance' until the gigantes was caught.

However, Upa's expectations were significantly off the mark.

Gigantes never stopped shooting out the Gigantic Slash. The clouds floating in the sky had already been torn apart.

Was it an infinitely activated skill?

The king wyvern became increasingly more passive.

The demons in Upa's faction watching the two fight could only swallow their saliva. The fight where victory seemed obvious was flowing in a weird direction. Visach's actions caused a big sneer from the other 3 factions. Upa couldn't tolerate it.

Kieeek!

But, it was impossible to avoid an unlimited skill. It wasn't a situation where the King Wyvern could avoid the attacks. The likelihood of winning decreased and finally Gigantic Slash hit its right wing.

The King Wyvern lost its balance in the air.

Gigantes didn't miss this chance.

He swung his club once again and...

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The King Wyvern was split in half.

Cheolbudok!

The body of the King Wyvern fell to the ground. Blood was gushing out. The area was filled with silence.

Visach and Upa trembled with anger.

I casually said.

“You are the dog.”

The role assignment ended.

In the end, I was the winner.

Upa's faction quickly left this place. The situation ended miserably and they ran away. I looked at their backs with scorn.

I won the fight they started. It was also in the middle of all the factions watching. I couldn't imagine how angry they were.

Anyway, Upa couldn't overcome the loss from last year and his image took a turn for the worse. Maybe some people didn't care about 'strength' but they were demons.

I once again started to look for the gift from the Dark Spirit King without paying attention to the demons. After 30 minutes of

searching through all the items, I managed to find one result.

I confirmed the details of the item with Mind’s Eye.

-Name-Spirit King’s Recipe

Description: An paper written by the Spirit King.

++ A unique rated observation skill is required to read more.

‘It must be this.’

There was only one item that mentioned the Spirit King.

‘Recipe.’

This was the gift?

I dubiously looked at the paper.

It was at that moment.

-Incredible achievement!

You have passed the test of the Dark Spirit King. This achievement is part of the Dark Spirit King's 'set' and will add to the achievement score. If more of the Dark Spirit King's 'set' is obtained then further compensation will be received

1,000,000pt will be paid.

- 'Seed of the World Tree' has been obtained.

- The Demon World Auction has ended.

Be prepared for the forced transfer. 30, 29, 28...

Chapter 72-76: World Tree

After the forced transfer back to my dungeon ended, I opened my eyes to see Yihi. Her wings were flapping as she flew round and round.

“You came back, Master!”

“Calm yourself.”

Yihi flew down and lightly settled on top of the Dungeon Core. Yihi had a spirit body but could make contact with the Dungeon Core.

“Master, Master. Listen to Yihi’s words. Isn’t the scenery on the 15th floor pretty after I planted the Flower of Eternity?”

Yihi chattered without any concerns.

The Flower of Eternity was a gift I gave to Yihi after the 1st auction. A rare flower that bloomed forever. I replied lightly.

“Right.”

“The bees are also moving. Yihhi. Yihi is really looking forward to the delicious honey that will be created.”

“Right.”

“But Master. Do you have a gift for Yihi this time?”

Yihi was anxious as she waited for the answer. It was the reason she suddenly brought up the Flower of Eternity out of nowhere.

The fairy of the Dungeon Core wanted something from the Dungeon Master. I inwardly shook my head when thinking of this behaviour.

“It will come soon.”

He got something for Yihi from the outdoor market. Despite the irregularities created by the bees, she had excellent dungeon management skills.

Yihi’s clear, jewel like eyes blinked. Her wings flapped like a motor was attached to it.

“Wah! Yihi isn’t mistaken? Then I will guess what it is. Um, acacia flower! Night flower! Rapeseed flower! Yihih. Master, honey harvested from these flowers will be sweet. Also...”

All types of flowers. It was evidence that she really loved flowers. Yihi gave a list that was tailored to her own tastes as she chattered.

A crack soon occurred in the surrounding space. I was receiving the items I had successfully bid for. They started to appear. There

are a few usable goods purchased from the outdoor market as well.

Once everything purchased from the Demon World Auction appeared through the crack in space, Yihi's mouth opened with admiration. Her attention was focused in one place.

“Eh...”

King Bee!

A large bee 1 metre in size.

It was a low grade creature. It wasn't sold in stores but I discovered it at the outdoor market. I remembered Yihi talking about the King Bee one time when she was harvesting honey.

Yihi instinctively recognized that it was a gift for her.

But its appearance was overwhelming.

Unlike ordinary bees, its antennae were sharp and pointed. It had a big mouth and wide eyes. If dozens of them were gathered then it would be a terrifying sight. It was sometimes referred to as the bee penalty.

“Cute!”

However, this was like a feast for Yihi.

Yihi gave a big laugh and disappeared with the King Bee. I shrugged as she twisted her body around and waved her fingers. It was a gift that matched her heart. She had noisily called out ‘Master, the best!’

After that, I looked through the items purchased at the auction and grasped the Astral Code.

‘First I have to use this.’

I opened Mind’s Eye to once again check Astral Code’s options.

-Name-Astral Code (U)

Description: Add one option to an item.

* Stats +1~2, a specific characteristic will be randomly selected to enhance the item.

** The failure probability will depend on the user’s magic power.

In the end, it was a strengthening item. It increased a random stat by 1~2 and gave an unique attribute to the item selected.

What should I enhance?

I thought for a moment before pulling out Wrath. It was one of the best things I used. There was also Sloth but it was a cloak. It wasn't as important as the sword that was directly wielded.

‘I will strengthen Wrath.’

The information about how to use the item was simple.

“Astral Code.”

I called the name.

Soon the black object emitted a colourful light.

-Astral Code is working. Please select an item to strengthen.
Wrath (Epic) 2. Sloth (Epic) 3. Paranormal (U).

Those were my three current equipment.

I chose Wrath.

-Item 'Wrath' will be overwritten by Astral Code. Please wait for a moment.

The high magic power (93) has significantly increased the chance of success.

Progress 1%, 2%, 3%...100%.

-The enhanced attribute has been selected.

The requirements for the skill 'Wrath (Epic)' has become lower. If you have more than 76 intelligence then you won't be taken over by the abnormal state.

I gripped my fists tightly. My breath was a little rough.

Randomly increasing stats by 2 would be a big winner. But the enhanced attribute. It lowered the intelligence requirements for the 'Wrath' skill. Right now my intelligence was 74. This meant I was almost unaffected.

Previously, I wouldn't have dared use the skill unless I had over 80. Astral Code had fixed a persistent problem.

'It is a good start.'

It was just the beginning. I immediately looked at the Spirit King's Recipe.

‘A recipe gives instructions on how to make something.’

Dark Spirit King. What was he intending when he handed me this bundle of paper as a gift?

It was in the form of a few expensive pieces of parchment paper tied up. I untied the paper and read the words written on it.

But the letters were blurry. It was impossible to confirm with the naked eye.

‘Hidden options...’

A ‘unique grade observation skill’ was required to read the words. I immediately took a look at the letters with Mind's Eye.

-The ‘Spirit King's Recipe’ has been confirmed.

The rating of Mind's Eye is higher than the rating of the seal. No penalty will be given.

The message windows that subsequently rose up. I ignored it and read the words written on the recipe.

-A unique combination skill is required to make the items listed in the recipe.

Tear of the Moon + Smile of the Sun = Magic Crystal (Curse)

Magic Crystal (Curse) + Elixir + Unicorn Horn = Magic Crystal (Pure)

Magic Crystal (Pure) + Seed of the World Tree = Germinated World Tree Seed

Only three lines.

However, the three lines were very meaningful.

‘Germinated World Tree Seed...this?’

I was at a loss for words after reading the recipe. World Tree. The best structure for extending a dungeon. A tree of life that was worth more than 10 million points alone.

In my previous life, no one could obtain it except for Okullos. But I could never figure out how Okullos obtained the world tree.

I took a moment to be impressed.

‘I have to do a combination.’

It wasn't simple to make the Seed of the World Tree germinate. Combining things was a must to make it germinate. But no one would use combination on a Seed of the World Tree.

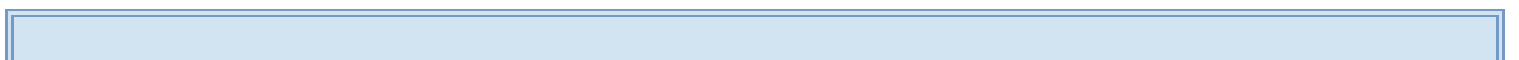
The seed itself was expensive and not easy to obtain. In my previous life, it had only shown itself a few times at the Demon World Auction. At most three, four times? There was a higher chance that a wrong mix of items would be combined. Then it would become a completely worthless item.

A gamble. However, it was a different story with the recipe. Of course, the Dark Spirit King gave it as a gift and it was unlikely he was deceiving me.

The Dark Spirit King was hoping that the balance would crumble. He selected me after the tests...one of the fastest way to expand a person's power was the 'World Tree.' The reproduction rate of the creatures would increase and earth spirits would automatically be generated. The roots could be used to create high grade items.

‘The problem is Skill Combination.’

Skill Combination (R) wasn't able to combine any items. I contemplated for a moment as I looked at Sage's Leap that I purchased.



-Name: Sage's Leap

Description-Alchemy Can increase the rating of all skills Unique (U) and below. If used on a Unique (U) skill, it will increase half a step towards Exceptional Unique (Ex U). There will be no effect on higher ratings.

A rare skill rating would increase to unique. Unique was literally unique. Changing something from rare to unique would have a high value.

‘Raising the rating of Skill Combination might lead to a skill related combination skill. Normally the behaviour would change but Sage's Leap is random.’

I worried over whether to use it or not.

But the store didn't sell any unique combination skills. No, Skill Combination (R) was the only choice.’

The only other ways to find it was through the Demon World Auction or rewards for special events. That was currently impossible.

‘It can't be helped.’

The roads I could go on were very limited.

Waiting a year for the next Demon World Action would take too long. I also couldn't be certain it would have it. It was more likely all that time would be wasted.

I would have to pray that a skill that could combine items would emerge. Besides, the Dark Spirit King would have pre-calculated something like this. The Dark Spirit King knew all the items that weren't shown in the auction.

If he judged that I didn't have the appropriate combination skill then he would have offered it. It meant I could resolve it myself.

I held Sage's Leap to my tongue and drank it.

-The Sage's Leap has been consumed. Please select a skill to raise the rating.

Skill Combination (R).

He was only capable of raising one skill. The rest was epic skills so Sage's Leap would have no effect on them.

Anyway, it had already started. No regrets. The skill selected has raised its rating.

-Skill Combination (R) has been changed to Combine Everything (U).

An unfamiliar name. I never heard of it in my previous life. I carefully looked at the description of the skill floating in the air.

-Combine Everything (U) – Everything in the world can be combined. But there is a limit, unlike the tremendous name. It is possible for the user to combine the majority of things.

I nodded. Fortunately, this was a skill with a very wide versatility.

‘Good.’

I smiled with satisfaction as the result was even better than expected.

Now I just had to follow the steps as it was written in the recipe.

Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun, Elixir, Unicorn Horn and...
Seed of the World Tree.

I didn't think a world tree would appear in my dungeon already so my hands were sweating. Okullos had received a huge benefit from the world tree. He had good quality creatures that other demons didn't dare go against.

He still had a favourable position but I was the one who would obtain a world tree first.

South Korea's dungeon would be worth 5 different dungeons. Considering that it had only been 2 years, I had widened the distance.

Besides, I had one more Seed of the World Tree. If I found a way then I could have two world trees.

Unprecedented. A surprise that I didn't think would happen. So my excitement was visible.

I shifted my attention to the recipe again. And I opened the store to buy the remaining goods needed.

*

-Magic Crystal (Pure) and Seed of the World Tree has been successfully combined.

The result is a very successful combination. 'Germinated World Tree Seed' has been completed!

Elixir and Unicorn Horn. Fortunately both of them could be purchased from the store. Once all the materials were combined, the only thing left was a germinated seed.

It was only the size of a thumb but the potential was endless. If it was buried in sunny ground then it could grow hundreds of metres into a giant tree.

In my previous life, I had seen Okullos' world tree two times. A truly dignified form. A magic power that would make someone overwhelmed and at a loss for words. Creating an electrifying presence...

I could confidently say that it was one of the most beautiful things to exist in the world.

‘This is why the elves will wage war over the world trees.’

Of course, the world tree itself brought great benefits. But the elves had a lot of ego and pride about the world trees. The giant tree was the root of the elves' vitality.

It was why only the strong elves could live near the world trees.

‘There isn't much information written...but it is enough.’

The recipe was real.

I could know for certain that the Dark Spirit King was favourable to me.

Usually I would find receiving gifts a burden but this time I

didn't care. I had used a colossal amount of points at the Demon World Auction and would continue to do so. It was a role designed for a lot of entertainment.

This was enough to deserve it.

There might be a problem but such things hadn't happened yet. Even if I refused their favour, there was no way for them to hurt me.

VIP. I used more points than the factions.

I would receive the greatest gains in the Demon World Auction and the Dark Spirit King wouldn't receive any damages. They might feel resentful but that was all.

I carefully held the seed and moved to the 15th floor.

Before long, I reached the vicinity of the dark elf's village and Julliom rushed forward.

"It is great to see Dungeon Master."

"Where is the place that the Seed of the World Tree is planted?"

I spoke bluntly.

The seed I obtained from Adol Loph's dungeon hadn't germinated.

It was buried in the place with the strongest soil.

Julliom blinked and asked.

“Not far from here. You came...if you don't mind, can I ask the reason?”

“I intend to plant the Seed of the World Tree.”

“Haven't you already planted it?”

“It did not germinate. This is a Seed of the World Tree that has germinated. Look.”

I spread out my right hand and showed the Germinated World Tree Seed.

The seed contained such a massive amount of magic power that even Julliom could recognize it. It looked exactly like the other Seed of the World Tree...but there was one thing. The germinated seed had one difference.

“...!”

Julliom's breath stopped as he realized the difference. His body trembled badly as his eyes widened.

It was surprising enough that there were two Seeds of the World Tree but now one had germinated. Julliom realized my intention and hurriedly bowed.

“I-I will bring you there immediately.”

Julliom swallowed his saliva and turned around.

In the middle of the 15th floor.

The Seed of the World Tree was buried.

Fertile ground. The status and strength of the soil was excellent. Anything planted there would grow rapidly.

Dozens of dark elves were gathered around singing. Chrisley's face had a blood red tattoo on it and she was sitting closest to the seed.

A powerful surge of magic power. Grass was noticeably growing. This was the hymn of life that all elves instinctively knew.

But it didn't seemed to be effective in germinating the seed. It seemed like the seed needed certain conditions to germinate so the usual way wouldn't work.

“Please focus here. Stop the ceremony!”

Julliom clapped his hands. The concentration on the ceremony scattered. The dark elves turned their attention this way with puzzled expressions.

Then they hurriedly got up and bowed to me.

“Dungeon Master has come.”

“It is great to see Dungeon Master.”

I continued looking at Chrisley in the centre. Her face was tired from the ceremony but it still had its usual charm. But I asked a question rather than dwell on her beauty.

“It has been a while. The progress?”

“...No.”

Chrisley replied weakly.

She already had the seed for a few months. It started confidently but soon came to a standstill.

“Tell me what you used.”

“First the fertility of the soil. Bugs were used to stimulate growth and I asked the fairy to change the soil. There was also advice from the earth spirits but they seem unsure about the world tree. We also planted other trees but they just died. Finally, we’ve been performing the hymn of life for a month but...it seems like there isn’t much effect, My Dungeon Master.”

Chrisley answered honestly without holding anything back. Every other method failed so the ceremony was their last resort.

‘I am certain that nothing will work except combination.’

I expected it. There were no exceptions.

I passed the seed in my hand over to Chrisley.

Chrisley opened her mouth and spoke with confusion.

“This is?”

“A new Seed of the World Tree that will be planted.”

Chrisley noticed quickly. She perceived that it was real. But there was still one questionable thing.

“My Dungeon Master. If I’m not mistaken, that is in an already germinated state.”

I spoke like it wasn't a big deal.

“You saw it properly.”

“Ah...!”

That one word was enough. It contained all of Chrisley's admiration. All the efforts of the dark elves were in vain but she felt great joy at the germinated seed.

“Are you thinking of planting it?”

“It is worrying. Do you know if two world trees have every appeared in one place?”

Chrisley struggled for a while before her shoulders slumped.

“I'm sorry. I've never heard anything about it.”

“Any others?”

I asked the rest of the dark elves. However, none of them nodded.

I touched my chin while thinking. Julliom and Chrisley were familiar with the history of the Demon World. If they both didn't know then it was unlikely to have happened.

‘I can plant it in Japan’s dungeon or plant both.’

I worried about where to place the germinated seed. But it increasingly tilted in the direction of planting both together. This was because of an item purchased at the auction.

Statue of Abundance!

An epic grade item that increased the reproduction rate of all ‘species’ near it. The Seed of the World Tree went in this category as well. It also had an impact on growth. If I moved a seed to Japan’s dungeon then it wouldn’t receive the effect.

I made a decision and said.

“Plant both together.”

“Will it be okay? We don’t know a lot about the world trees. There is no knowing if the other one will grow properly even with the germinated seed.”

“It does not matter.”

Chrisley’s face was full of worry. And she wasn’t wrong. There were many unsure variables.

If one was planted in Japan’s dungeon then the risk would reduce

significantly. But there would be more results if both were planted together.

They would receive the blessing from the Statue of Abundance. Besides...what effect would the blessing have on the germinated seed? It might have a good effect on raising the world trees.

I selected the side that I wouldn't regret. Anyway, I was rarely 100% satisfied.

I didn't allow any further objections so she nodded. At the same time, conviction appeared in the eyes of the dark elves including Chrisley.

Two world trees.

They couldn't help feeling greedy. Chrisley was just thinking of me when she was worrying about the results.

If they succeeded...this was a tremendous blessing. No, they would be able to enjoy unprecedented benefits.

"This is definitely the place with the most fertile soil?"

"Certainly."

Chrisley replied confidently.

I took out the Statue of Abundance from the magic bag. It was a 1.5 m stone statue of a plump woman smiling. The dark elves stared curiously but I didn't pay any attention and invoked the blessing.

“Statue of Abundance.”

A window popped up in the air.

-Only one species can receive the 'Blessing of Abundance.

The range of the blessing is a 50 km radius around the statue and the effect will disappear outside this range.

This is a list of the species that exist in the vicinity. Please select a species to give a blessing.

Dark Elf

Thousand Year Old Tree

King Bee

...

A list of species that existed in the vicinity came up. I found 'World Tree' at position number 12. The Germinated World Tree Seed seemed to fall under it.

After 'World Tree' was selected, a bright light poured from the Statue of Abundance. The light spread through the 15th floor of the dungeon and gathered at the Seeds of the World Tree.

-The Blessing of Abundance has been given to the world tree.

Its growth rate will increase significantly and it will grow up more healthy.

A blue light shone around Chrisley's hand and the seed. The blessing was given properly. I didn't know how much help it would give but...it would have some effect.

"Plant it."

"Yes."

Chrisley replied with a tense expression.

She chose a place a little off from where the Seed of the World Tree was already planted. She moved her hand through the dirt and carefully buried the seed.

Then she covered it with dirt again.

Puhung!

The ground started vibrating. The fertile soil started being affected.

But that wasn't the end.

A small bud shot up from the dirt. The size was only a few centimetres but it gave off an intense vitality.

“Ah...!”

“World tree...world tree...!”

The dark elves were at a loss for words. They stared at the bud of the world tree with thrill. They were so ecstatic that tears started falling from their eyes. The dark elves sank to their knees and ‘welcomed’ the world tree.

They had never showed that reaction to me who was the Dungeon Master. Chrisley and Julliom were thrilled but they had self-control.

Soon a few messages appeared in the air.

-An incredible achievement! A 'World Tree' has successfully sprouted for the first time!

The world tree is the mother of the forest. Thanks to the special blessing, a large fortress can be constructed that will stop enemy attacks.

-The dungeon rating has gone up. You can verify this through Domestic Mode.

The title 'World Tree Master' has been given.

I frowned while looking over the windows.

'Dungeon rating?'

I had somewhat anticipated a title. A title had been given for growing a world tree. But I was ignorant about the dungeon rating.

'Was there a dungeon rating before?'

I couldn't know. I had neglected almost everything related to my dungeon in my previous life. My information related to dungeons was very limited.

I should verify it. But I checked my status window first.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

- * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)
- * World Tree Master (Ex U, All stats +2)
- * First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

Stats

Strength: 80 (+11)

Intelligence: 72 (+4)

Agility: 75 (+11)

Stamina: 80 (+4)

Magic Power: 85 (+10)

Potential: (392+40/500)

Remaining Stat Points: 3

Electric Power: 16GW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has woken up.

Skill: Combine Everything (U), Mind’s Eye (Ex U), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Wrath (Epic), Sloth (Epic)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 89 Intelligence 74 Agility 77 Stamina 82 Magic 93
Potential (392+23/500)

Strength 91 Intelligence 76 Agility 86 Stamina 84 Magic 95
Potential (392+40/500)

“Uhh...”

I gave a smile. The +2 to all stats from the title meant strength went over 90. Agility rose significantly thanks to Sloth and my magic power was at 95. I have a total of 432 stats. I had gone way beyond my original capabilities in my previous life.

This was all thanks to the compensation stats.

The effects of the titles and items increased my stats by 40. This was a feat that most demons couldn't compete with. My pure stats had risen but it wasn't enough to cover everything.

I also had three skills with the epic rating. In the present time, only the Grand Dukes could barely match me.

I was looking forward to displaying Wrath that was strengthened by the Astral Code.

Either way...I was satisfied with the status window.

‘Unfortunately, the other one didn’t react.’

I was referring to the other Seed of the World Tree. The seed already buried in the ground didn't react as well.

It was still too early. I would be able to obtain accurate data over time. If there wasn't a reaction after a long then then I would find a different solution.

“Continue the ceremony.”

The chanting of the hymn of life.

I would try anything that would help the growth of the world tree.

“As you command, My Dungeon Master.”

Chrisley who was watching the bud of the world tree blankly hastily bowed her head. On the other hand, Julliom and the other dark elves were still affected.

They were close to the world tree that was their desire. Dream. Hope. Such a thing.

The dark elves lived in the Demon World where the strong ruled. They lived in remote areas and were strengthened every day. As a result, they were forced to make a deal with the dark spirits. Of course, their wish was to save Chrisley's life but...now under the protection of the world tree, the dark elves could enjoy some prosperity.

‘Today they don't have to worry.’

I wasn't an unreasonable boss. I smiled and turned away.

Domestic Mode.

One of the privileges of the Dungeon Master was to learn the details related to the dungeon.

I ran Domestic Mode next to the Dungeon Core.

After a moment, a holographic cross section of the dungeon emerged. The placement and situation of the creatures was confirmed but not much changed from before.

But there was one place. A change on the 15th floor.

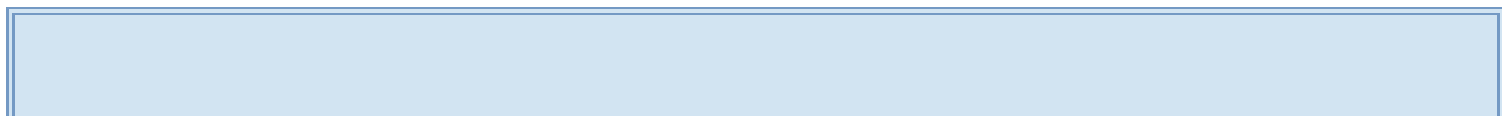
There was a towering tree like figure with the description ‘World Tree (Budding)’. It was the first time I had seen something added to the hologram.

Apart from that, I found new words on the bottom left.

‘A rare rated dungeon.’

There were some yellow letters. I touched my hand to the words that stated it was a rare grade dungeon.

The holographic screen changed and a new window was shown.



-The dungeon rating can vary according to special structures.

A rare grade dungeon will have additional features compared to a general grade dungeon.

Do you want to verify the additional structures?

Of course I wanted to confirm it. This was the first time I realized a dungeon had ratings. I clicked on the button without hesitation and lengthy writing showed up.

Stronger control over the creatures. No matter how low the intelligence of the creatures, they will now listen to the Dungeon Master's commands.

It is possible for one of the creatures to be appointed to 'Master Guardian.' A Master Guardian will protect the Dungeon Core and is the Dungeon Master's ultimate sword. The Master Guardian will have all stats +5. They can perform a 'space jump' beyond the law of physics only once.

New sculptures are added.

-Artificial sun, clouds and moon.

The seasonal setting is enabled.

-Spring, summer, autumn, winter.

Those were the 4 main points added. I looked at the list step by step.

Number 1. A leader was required for low intelligence creatures during monster waves but that wasn't necessary anymore.

Point 2 about the 'Master Guardian' was quite interesting. One creature could have all stats increased by 5. Space jump was a bit vague but that was inconsequential.

Points 3 and 4 were additional features that changed the terrain. Depending on how I used it, various effects could be obtained. It would be good for those creatures strengthened by the sun or the moon.

'It means there are even more ratings.'

If I had raised the dungeon rating to rare from general then I must be able to raise it even further to unique, epic and legend ratings.

These were the rare grade additional features so I couldn't imagine what else would be added.

It seemed like a good idea to make multiple investments in the dungeon. There would be a number of benefits if I focused on raising the rating. There were some disadvantages but it seemed

like the benefits were greater.

‘There wasn’t any related achievements?’

I thought I would obtain a dungeon achievement for raising the rating. But that didn’t seem to be the case. It seemed like the additional features were the reward.

I shook my head and looked at Sloth. I was wearing the red cloak. But I still hadn’t experimented with the skill.

‘I have to try out Sloth.’

Thanks to Astral Code, the intelligence restrictions of Wrath was lowered. However, Sloth was different. It was likely that I would once again be taken over by an unknown state.

But I couldn’t just ignore it.

I needed to be aware of the skill and what situations I could use it in. However, I didn’t use it randomly like before. Basic defenses were necessary.

I made some plans to experiment with Sloth.

3 days later.

I stepped foot on the 20th floor of the dungeon.

“Wait around here. If I act unusually violent then try to block me for as long as possible.”

“I will keep that in mind.”

“Block! I can do it!”

Kkiruk!

Krasla, Gigantes and the griffin answered.

I called these three here for a reason. In case something occurred while I experimented with Sloth.

Two high class creatures. Krasla who was a slight level below.

I judged that the three of them together could block me.

20th floor. There was nothing in this place for me to damage but...I couldn't be sure. I didn't know what this product did.

I made some preparations just in case.

Then Krasla asked.

“I’ve roughly heard the story. But what if Master doesn’t return to normal?”

Before coming here, I had given a slight explanation that I was experimenting with a skill. Now that Krasla mentioned it, I realized that there was a blind spot.

I touched my chin and thought for a minute before replying.

“Then consult with Yihi and Chrisley. Those two should be able to identify my condition and prepare for it.”

Yihi had a soul connection with me. She should be able to figure out my state. Chrisley had the ability to improvise. They should be able to handle the situation somehow.

“I understand.”

Krasla seemed convinced and bowed his head.

I released my chin and said.

“However, there is no need to be too unreasonable. All you have to do is limit my movements. That will be enough.”

Right now my total stats was 432. It was much higher than the figures of Gigantes and the griffin. I would be pushed if both of

them were my opponents. Killing one or both of them in a confrontation. It was clear that the results wouldn't be very good. There was a chance they might die. So I didn't forget to warn them in advance.

“Now step aside.”

Krasla took the lead as the three of them moved away.

They would be in the vicinity when I activated the skill. They would observe my state from a distance. It would be best if none of them were killed when I examined the skill.

‘I should raise the remaining stats.’

Tsk. I clicked my tongue.

My intelligence was the issue. I only had 66 intelligence when I used Wrath. It had grown by 10 to reach 76 but that figure was still vague. It was high but also low. That's why a few safety measures were needed.

I had 3 residual stats that I could invest in intelligence. However, I would rather save the stats for when my life was at risk. One day I could also break through the limit because of the residual stats.

I stood still and looked around.

My hands couldn't touch anything on the 20th floor. The middle of nowhere. It is natural that there was nothing. I stood in the centre of a floor without anything else present.

I wore the cloak properly and took a deep breath.

Wrath caused a significant decline in intelligence but raised strength, agility and stamina. I had been taken over by an abnormal state and destroyed everything. Yihi the optimist had even trembled in fear because of me.

What about Sloth?

I prepared my mind and slowly opened my mouth.

“Sloth.”

-High magic power (95) has caused strength, stamina and intelligence to only fall by 6.

Agility has risen by 20.

Intelligence has blocked 49% of the abnormal state. The defense has failed. You have been taken over by the 'Sloth' state.

The moment the message surfaced.

My whole body felt drowsy. It was like my body was submerged in water.

I closed my eyes and sat down. Soon even breathing was an annoyance.

This was Sloth? Everything was slowing down. It wasn't as something as simple as deceleration. Agility had momentarily jumped over 100 to 106. It meant I jumped over the 'Transcendental Wall.'

The skill 'Sloth' was the ability to accelerate the world. The synergy effect of the superior quickness changed time and space. The scope was crazy. I could catch the slight movements of the grass outside the dungeon. That wasn't all. Water droplets forming and then falling could be seen.

I just needed to stand still and all the information would come to me. So there was no need to move. I could distinguish everything. This was true laziness.

Cognitive changes. The flow of time had changed.

1 second became very long. 1 minute was even longer. When an hour and then a day passed, it felt like I was trapped in a large prison of time.

Nevertheless, I was lazy. I didn't take any actions. I just stood still and went with the flow.

Then one moment.

My body began to be dismantled. I inwardly screamed. It felt like the walls of time was pushing against my body. My physical ability couldn't withstand the acceleration.

It was natural. Compared to the 106 agility, stamina and strength was too low. As Sloth continued, the result would cause an imbalance that would appear gradually. This caused my body to feel like it was being crushed.

‘Will it be okay?’

I thought with distant pain.

I could no longer be lazy.

I took one step forward with annoyance.

‘I'm back. Don't deny the flow. It is like someone is mocking me. I can't succumb to this state when using the skill.’

It was a little questionable.

Like a wave forming when a stone was thrown at a lake. The wavelength would become bigger due to the impact.

‘Get up, Randolph Brigsiel. You can’t let Sloth get to you.’

There was the notification window that ‘Sloth’ was over and I opened my eyes.

“Huuk!”

I released my blocked breath.

I immediately checked my body.

Fortunately, nothing was broken or injured. But I could see bruises all over like I had slowly been crushed by the walls of time.

‘This is Sloth?’

Once again.

An intense state. It was like being a god. I could sense even the slight movements of the air.

Furthermore, the world became extremely slow. It was impossible to compare to a simple ‘acceleration’ skill. A common acceleration skill simply strengthened the body. It put a strain on

the brain so it was a double edged sword for the user.

But Sloth involved time. It was in the realm of the senses. There was no need to strengthen physical force. If an accident happened then I could move. It was possible to feel and react to everything in advance.

Sloth was similar to an acceleration skill but it was more developed.

A type of side effect was that my motivation to move was completely gone. I needed to overcome that part.

“It isn’t easy.”

I laughed bitterly.

The problem was obvious.

It was activated but my body couldn’t control it. My body was strengthened but it was also weakened. My 106 agility made my stamina and strength seem low.

How much intelligence...

‘I can’t use Wrath and Sloth at the same time.’

I thought about trying it once intelligence reached 90.

It was still too early to use them both simultaneously.

Wrath enhanced my overall physical abilities while Sloth activated my senses. I could use it flexibly depending on the situation.

And among the remaining 5 Seven Sins, there might be something to raise intelligence. I could expect something.

‘I now know what type of skill Sloth is.’

The difference between knowing and not knowing was large.

My purpose was achieved. It was enough to know the limitations of Sloth.

I left this place.

*

3 days after my experiment with Sloth ended.

Chrisley who had been watching the growth of the world tree came to see me.

“This is rare.”

These words came out naturally.

Chrisley rarely ever came to me first. I was away a lot of the time but she was also very busy. I ordered her to raise the skill proficiency and her body was exhausted from looking after the world tree.

“It is great to see Dungeon Master.”

Chrisley kneeled down and spoke. I waved my hand and asked.

“Don’t worry about the formal greeting. Tell me the reason you came.”

Chrisley raised her head and said.

“I came because of the world tree.”

“Tell me.”

I gave Chrisley more freedom than others. She started talking without hesitation.

“When the bud of the world tree emerged, I could feel intense yin and yang magic power. This wasn’t originally in the seed.

Impurities. But refined into something pure...in the meantime, I organized my thoughts and wanted to ask Master about it.”

I had no choice but to feel surprised.

“How do you know that?”

“Don’t you know the type of magic power in my body?”

The true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf Shilla. The contrasting power mixed together inside Chrisley. It meant she was very sensitive in that direction.

But noticing impurities was a completely different area. Let alone knowing about refining magic power.

‘This is the impact of 100 intelligence.’

That was just my guess.

I took a moment to admire it.

Information about the world tree. This information about the world tree couldn’t leak out to the other demons.

But the other person was Chrisley.

A dark elf who became devoted to me through the ceremony and would never betray me. Furthermore, Chrisley was the owner of 100 intelligence. I didn't know the answer but there was no possibility of going back.

Since then, she had worked hard.

“Combination.”

I spoke after coming to that conclusion.

“Combination...is it?”

Chrisley was confused by the ambiguous reply.

I took out the recipe from my magic bag and handed it to Chrisley.

“This is a combination that can germinate the Seed of the World Tree.”

“Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun? This is the first time I've heard those names.”

“You can read it?”

I was inwardly surprised. The Dark Spirit King had directly

sealed the recipe. It couldn't be read without an observation skill. But Chrisley could read it.

This was the overall effects of high intelligence. I once again realized my intelligence was too low.

Chrisley watched my reaction and asked.

“Is it strange?”

“No. Anyway, it is written in the recipe.”

“Crystallized magic power...I've heard of it. If pure magic power is gathered then sometimes a crystal will form.”

Chrisley noticed the presence of Tear of the Moon and Smile of the Sun.

“For now, there is no way to obtain it.”

So I could only look forward to the Statue of Abundance. I was hoping that the blessing would germinate the remaining seed. It had only happened a few days ago but there were still no signs.

Chrisley closed her eyes. She seemed to be thinking of something. Dozens of seconds passed. Then Chrisley opened her eyes again and a strange light flashed in it.

“Tear of the Moon, Smile of the Sun. Looking at the name, they probably consist of yin and yang magic power. If so...won't my 'blood' play a similar role? The magic power in my blood might be able to form a crystal.”

“...”

I gazed at Chrisley with a bemused expression.

It felt like I had been struck. Why didn't I think of something so simple?

An unparalleled amount of magic power certainly flowed in her blood. The true demonic dragon Aojin had the nature of the sun while the dark elf queen Shilla was of the moon.

But getting such an effect would require removing a significant amount of blood.

“You could die.”

“I'm not going to die.”

A baseless confidence.

A laugh couldn't help escaping.

“The combination isn’t meaningful. There is guarantee a magic crystal would be completed.”

“Taking the first step is important. If it isn’t even started then nothing can be achieved.”

It was quite reasonable.

That was also my attitude after coming back to the past.

But there was still something that bothered me.

“Your blood is not enough.”

“You will cover the rest of the magic power, My Dungeon Master. If you allow me to learn a skill related to extracting magic power. I can extract the magic power and combine it with my blood in order to form a crystal.”

Extracted magic power couldn’t unconditionally be combined. The ratio of magic power extracted needed to be established and purified. This was a highly complex task. But Chrisley could pull it off.

In addition, her motivation was great. Chrisley normally didn’t strongly express her opinions. This was the first time she had an active attitude.

‘In my previous life, I would have just rejected it.’

I would never hand out a skill power or be willing to bleed to extract magic power. But now I thought differently from my previous life.

Trusting a creature below me...it wasn't a bad idea to give her a chance. It might be a failure but I couldn't just reject it.

The 2nd year. I was walking properly along my path. I could afford to do this. This was an opportunity that I could afford to give a few times.

“Okay. You can try it.”

I nodded and said.

Extracting magic power was a rare grade skill. And an item with a high concentration of magic power. I could prepare both of them.

One of the items I bought at the Demon World Auction contained a high concentration of magic power.

The body of the earth dragon. The earth dragon was born after a forest lived for thousands of years so the accumulated amounts in its bones couldn't be ignored.

I originally planned to create an undead creature called ‘bone

dragon' from it but...plans were always changing.

I would gladly use the body of the dragon if it would give positive results. Of course, some practice was required before using the body of the earth dragon.

“Chrisley. I will appoint you as the Master Guardian.”

Before handing over the skill and corpse of the earth dragon.

I spoke to Chrisley.

I chose to appoint Chrisley as my Master Guardian. She had very high loyalty to me and she had the brightest future. In addition, all stats would increase by 5 so she would become more resilient.

I had experienced the power of raising agility to 106. I couldn't imagine the effect that would appear if her intelligence reached 105.

More stamina would also be helpful. It was inevitable that Chrisley would be selected as the Master Guardian.

“I will follow you.”

This was another good point about Chrisley. Unlike Julliom, she didn't bother asking me for a reason. She tried to understand it for herself. If she still didn't know then she wouldn't hesitate to ask.

I smiled and immediately went into Domestic Mode to make the appointment. And the rest of the procedure was done.

At the same time, a colourful light emerged from the Dungeon Core.

Light started to wrap around Chrisley like a cocoon.

A few message windows flashed in the air.

-‘Chrisley’ has been selected as the Master Guardian.

The Master Guardian is different from the other creatures. They are the last shield. Only one can exist and will defend everything.

‘Chrisley’ will have all stats increase by 5.

-Warning!

The true demonic dragon Aojin and dark elf Shilla’s blood has started reacting. Chrisley’s ‘blood’ has started awakening!

Blood was awakening?

Unfamiliar words.

It meant there was originally a 'reaction.'

Plus, the warning message meant there might be an issue.

There was no doubt it was a problem due to being selected as the Master Guardian.

I gazed at Chrisley.

The colourful light that wrapped around Chrisley...it was repeatedly expanding and contracting. Certainly an unusual phenomenon.

I monitored the anomalies. It would be a headache if there was a problem. I stayed quiet and waited for the results.

Hwiing!

A heavy wind blew. There seemed to be a three sided struggle inside the cocoon. There was no way of knowing the situation but I was certain that three powers in her blood were fighting.

After a long time, the magic power gradually settled. The brilliant light was absorbed by Chrisley's body.

-‘Chrisley’ has been completely changed to the Master Guardian.

-The blood awakening has created the skill ‘Queen of the Sun and Moon.’

Flop!

Chrisley collapsed.

The fierce fight had caused her stamina to drop.

I drew closer to Chrisley and used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Chrisley

Occupation: Master Guardian (All stats + 5)

Title: * Person with the Blood of a True Demonic Dragon (Epic, Intelligence +6, Magic +6)

* Blessed by the Moon (Ex U, Magic Power +8)

Stats

Strength: 37 (+5)

Intelligence: 94 (+11)

Agility: 41 (+5)

Stamina: 39 (+5)

Magic Power: 66 (+23)

Potential: (277+49/484)

Uniqueness: A person with the true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf Shilla’s blood, the end of her growth can’t be seen.

Skill: Large Body Control (U), Undead Manufacturing (Ex U), Queen of the Sun and Moon (Epic)

Items Worn: Death Wand (Ex U, Set, Magic Power +4)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 26 Intelligence 100 Agility 28 Stamina 32 Magic 73
Potential (235+24/478)

Strength 42 Intelligence 105 Agility 46 Stamina 44 Magic 89
Potential (277+49/484)

“...Crazy.”

A sound emerged.

It was natural. The effect of Master Guardian had overwhelmingly calibrated Chrisley's stats. 49. I smiled. Her growth rate meant she would catch up to Krasla sooner or later.

In addition, her potential threshold had increased. 478 to 484! A small but definite breakthrough. Until now, I had never heard of a creature breaking through the limit.

Body Control (R) had also climbed to a unique rated skill. It had upgraded to Large Body Control (U) and she could control a lot more corpses. Undead Manufacturing had increased a half step but the more amazing part was the newly created skill.

Epic grade skill.

A measure of a high class creature.

It wasn't a requirement but the best high class creatures had epic grade skills.

‘The change in only one year is unbelievable.’

This wasn't the end. She had become stronger in a year. Among my creatures, Chrisley had the potential to be the best. It was

impossible for humans to even be compared.

I was proud to have an excellent creature. But it forced me to think again.

‘Even creating a skill...was I too impatient when selecting her as the Master Guardian?’

Chrisley had come to me through the Demon World Auction. There was no doubt about her loyalty after the ceremony. However...that was confined to the present. Chrisley had tremendous potential that could even surpass me.

It wasn't simply the potential shown in the status window. It was deeper, wider and more difficult to define.

Obtaining an epic grade skill was completely unexpected. Her growth was ridiculously fast. She was soaring through the sky.

But I couldn't help getting a strong feeling.

She was a strong variable.

Power could change everything. She was once weak so I was unsure of how she would react once she became more powerful.

The odds were high that her heart...I had seen such scenes in my previous life.

Usually creatures couldn't deny the Dungeon Master. But Chrisley had unprecedented intelligence. There wasn't much known about the intelligence stat. Maybe in the near future, I could break through the loophole in the system but that wasn't doable at the moment.

Single-minded? Humble service? It was certainly good words but I had doubts if she could keep following me. The use of such words were usually weak. There were those who became crazy and forgot the past after gaining strength.

This subjective judgement was based on experience but...I needed to consider if Chrisley would escape from this category.

Thoughts kept on springing up. They didn't settle.

Then after a moment.

I realized something.

'Was I scared?'

Ha! I lightly breathed out.

A variable had popped up. Was this why I felt so anxious?

Soon I found the answer.

‘I don’t know. Chrisley.’

It wasn’t much different from the variable of the Demon World Auction list being changed. In my previous life, I had experience with the dark spirits. They only took action for a specific reason.

This fact wouldn’t harm me so much.

But Chrisley wasn’t present in my previous life.

This was why I couldn’t define her.

I couldn’t have any assurances.

Until now, I had thought of the creatures as being below me. She was special. And my hand would be moving her from above like a marionette. That’s why I was surprised and angry by this variable.

I said to the unconscious Chrisley.

“I will watch...you.”

The water had already been spilled

I could only walk down this road.

The experiences from my past life wasn't always the truth. There was a chance I might not suffer. I needed to take control of this variable.

‘A strong variable. It is enough if I neutralize the strong presence.’

I nodded.

A simple and clear answer.

Chrisley had the potential to surpass me but I needed to be realistic. If I was alarmed every time I saw her then it might accelerate the possibilities of that happening.

‘I have to break my prejudices.’

Everyone gained strength. They changed.

Chrisley? She had an irregular strength. Wouldn't she stay loyal if I remained stronger than her?

Duk. I tapped Chrisley on the cheek to wake her up and started to move.

‘Queen of the Sun and Moon’ was a dark, aggressive skill.

The power of the sun could shoot out beams over a distance while the moon could freeze the ground.

It was on par with the griffin's Fire and Lightning skill.

Shortly after the change, Chrisley learned to extract magic power. She reduced her sleeping time and threw herself into studying the skill. Her high intelligence meant she quickly learned the skill.

It didn't take long after handing her the body of the earth dragon.

Her blood was purified every day. And the pure magic power was extracted from the earth dragon. The two different magic powers were combined in a ratio to form a Magic Crystal.

The experiment lasted for a while. Chrisley tried several combinations and failed many times. If the ratio wasn't correct then the magic power would explode.

Even so, Chrisley was determined. The combination ratio improved every day. After the 37th challenge, a 'Magic Crystal of High Concentration' was formed.

"There is no curse."

I held the crystal that was the size of a thumbnail and studied it. The size and colour made it more beautiful than the previous

combination. It didn't have a curse attached to it so I was satisfied with the result.

“...Was it combined correctly?”

Chrisley asked me with an anxious expression.

A pale complexion. It was due to a lot of blood being pulled from her skin.

The power from the earth dragon was also extracted but there was a lot extra. It was inevitable that Chrisley's condition would be like this.

“The combination itself is unquestionable. Now we just need to verify whether it will germinate the seed.”

“I will bring the seed.”

I shook my head.

“No. Let's go together.”

I wanted to leave the seed where it would be affected by the Statue of Abundance's blessing. But the Magic Crystal was completed so I wanted to see the results as soon as possible.

I headed to the 15th floor with Chrisley. The forest terrain had changed as the bud from the world tree already grew as tall as an adult.

The dark elves were still around it doing the ceremony.

The ceremony was interrupted by my appearance and Chrisley carefully dug out the seed before handing it to me.

“...Here it is.”

Concern was on Chrisley’s face as she handed it over. She was tense now that it was actually happening.

I said with a smile.

“Don’t worry. It isn’t your fault even if it fails.”

“Oh.”

“I gave you the order. I also let you decide the combination for the crystal. If it goes wrong then it will be because of my mismanagement. Besides, it hasn’t been confirmed to be a failure yet.”

I spoke in a firm tone.

It was in order to convince Chrisley. I was still uneasy but I felt significantly better now. Her anxiety was due to her desire to please me.

‘Then...’

There was no need to waste time.

I immediately triggered Combine Everything while holding the crystal and seed.

A message window flashed.

-Would you like to combine Magic Crystal of High Concentration to the Seed of the World Tree?

There was yes or no written underneath it.

Needless to say, I pressed the yes button.

And the two ingredients started to merge.

It was repeatedly disassembled and combined.

I had already seen this sight dozens of times.

But it was more tense this time. I only had one Seed of the World Tree. I didn't know when I could challenge it again.

Chrisley and the dark elves were tense as they watched the spectacle.

After dozens of seconds.

-The Magic Crystal of High Concentration and Seed of the World Tree has been combined.

The result is a very successful combination. 'Germinated World Tree Seed' has been completed!

Seed of the World Tree.

There was also the blessing on the surface...and a bud. It was filled with vitality. The bud quivered like it was alive and protesting.

I smirked.

"Look. My judgement wasn't wrong.

"Ahh. I truly believed, my Dungeon Master..."

Flop!

Chrisley collapsed once again.

Her tension was released and the sleepless nights caught up with her tired body.

The sleep deprivation and extraction of blood made her unconscious.

Yet a small smile still remained on her weary face.

Chapter 77-80: Dwarf, Quest, Success

Buuuuong!

There was a profound echo that spread through the dungeon due to the world tree. It was a roar that informed all life of their presence. The dark elves simultaneously fell to their knees.

30 metres away from them, there were the buds of two world trees. It was unprecedented. History, myth, legend or fairy tale... this story was nowhere. But now that story was brought to life. It was occurring right in front of them in real time.

It was amazing. It was admirable!

A truly memorable achievement. No one could know the effect of two world trees. A record that would be left behind. The dark elves clenched their fists. Now this dungeon would become their real home. They would risk their lives with a smile for the two world trees. If they could keep it...the prosperity of their future generations would be guaranteed.

The dark elves had received much suffering in the Demon World and it was a time of grief for them. They hoped a miracle would be born through the meeting of the dark elf's leader, Shilla and the true demonic dragon Aojin but it didn't work out. I couldn't imagine how they felt when making a contract with the dark spirits.

Now there was a leap forward.

Their sadness was overcome. Two world trees...

And in order to keep this, I needed to prevail in the competition to become the devil. The survival of the dungeon depending on the outcome.

‘Is it due to the Magic Crystal of High Concentration? This start is good.’

Unlike the already planted world tree, this seed’s growth was abnormal. The bud was already grown to half my body size. I looked forward to its future growth.

I took a step forward and looked at Chrisley. She was essential for this work but I would wait until she was fully recovered.

I spoke to the dark elves.

“Listen. Chrisley will be the one in charge of looking after the two world trees. Consult with Chrisley first if you want to do anything to the world trees. The buds need to be carefully managed.”

“My Dungeon Master. This type of work is more suited to Elder Julliom.”

Chrisley said with a humble attitude. Julliom was the elder. He

had excellent knowledge in many areas but I shook my head.

World Tree. Common knowledge couldn't be used to measure this cradle of life. Julliom would be inadequate in many ways if he was given responsibility. There were many variables. He couldn't understand the nature of the world tree.

“You will be responsible for it, Chrisley.”

“As you command.”

I already confirmed it. Chrisley wouldn't go against me.

She kneeled down.

Thus the primary cleanup was finished. It would take some time for it to grow and affect the whole dungeon.

I turned my body with a satisfied look.

Huuuuong!

A large pop came from a short distance.

Huuuuuuong!

But it didn't end with just one. The ringing in my ears was so

intense that it hurt. At the same time, the two world trees started moving.

I moved my eyes towards it.

At the same time, I was at a loss for words. An amazing sight was occurring right in front of me.

‘It is merging?’

The buds of the world tree had started growing again. It grew rapidly and the branches stretched to the world tree next to it. And the world tree on the other side was tilting its body. They were wriggling like they were trying to merge.

This was the first time two world trees were growing at the same time but I hadn’t anticipated such a thing. The result of different combinations...there was no way of knowing the two world trees would combine.

“My Dungeon Master. The surge of magic power is not ordinary.”

“Do you have any ideas?”

I couldn’t not ask.

Chrisley’s blood was the reason why the world trees started moving. The wavelength of the magic power was very similar to

Chrisley. In addition, she was more sensitive to magic power than me.

Chrisley replied through cracked lips.

“The magic power from the body of the earth dragon is being extracted. It appears to be violently eating all of it up...”

I pondered the meaning of it.

“The earth dragon has the life of a huge forest and that is being eaten. The vitality of the forest is comparable to a few dogs to the world tree.”

Chrisley’s eyes widened.

“Then isn’t it a big deal?”

“I can’t be sure. However, the forest of the earth dragon seems to be devoured. It is impossible for the dragon to get another life but the world tree can eat the rest of it.”

This was only a guess. However, this hypothesis was the most plausible when considering the magic power of the earth dragon.

Gulp!

The dark elves' expressions were filled with tension. They had been moved to tears just moments ago but the situation had changed in an instant.

I also had cold sweat on my hands. Anyway, the two world trees were joining together.

‘I can stop it or leave it be.’

I stood at the crossroads of choice.

If I separated them onto separate floors then this wouldn't happen.

But I thought about the process of them gaining life from the earth dragon...

‘I wonder.’

I was very curious about the result.

The forest life of the earth dragon was being devoured. The forest couldn't compare to the world trees. A giant cradle that was the source of life. I couldn't imagine the outcome. The earth dragon might elevate the existence of the world tree.

In the end, I made the decision to leave it alone.

Both world trees were engaging with each other.

They were invading each other's areas, with one side attacking and one defending.

I stood still for a while and watched it. There was other work to do but my feet didn't move...

One day passed and then two. But none of those gathered here moved. Even Yihi and the King Bee joined the ranks.

Finally, a change took place on the 3rd day. The world tree defending slowed its movement. In contrast, the other world tree attacked more fiercely.

It was defeated in the next attack. The world tree wrapped around its opponent. Huuuuung! The sound of magic power being sucked up. The merging of the two world trees had succeeded.

-Impossible achievement! The 'Tree of Origin' has put down roots for the first time!

The 'Tree of Origin' was an object creature when trees were first conceived. Not much information is known about it.

-The title 'World Tree Master' will change to 'Origin Master.'
3,000,000pt will be paid.

Those message windows flashed when the two world trees joined together.

The title changed and the achievement even gave me 3 million points!

“Ha...”

But I was surprised at one of the message windows.

There was a faded blue light around the Tree of Origin. A mysterious feeling that overwhelmed all beings. It hadn't grown in size but I couldn't help admiring it.

I expected some changes but it was closer to an evolution.

I opened my status window and saw that 'World Tree Master (Ex U, All stats +2)' had changed to 'Origin Master (Epic, All stats +3).'

My first title with an epic rating. In my previous life, my limit was 'Ex U.' Titles were different from skills and items and were difficult to obtain. It was passed down from relatives or gained by achieving something almost impossible.

'Something new.'

My stats had already long transcended my previous life. But I was in an entirely different mood after obtaining the title. I was completely satisfied.

Then Chrisley asked me with a pale face.

“My Dungeon Master. Is that truly a world tree?”

“The Tree of Origin.”

“...Tree of Origin! M-my Dungeon Master. Did I make a mistake?”

“You did it properly.”

It had a number of names. Origin, genesis, beginning, etc. The tree could be called all those things. Chrisley and the dark elves staggered for a moment.

“I’ve only heard it in the myths. I never thought it would exist...”

“So your responsibilities will become more heavy.”

“I will do my best.”

Chrisley’s face became determined. Her willingness was clearly expressed. If the Tree of Origin was really a world tree then there

wasn't a problem.

I rubbed my forehead for a moment. I suddenly felt fatigue. I was the most tense among all those gathered here.

Depending on the outcome, all my choices could have been in vain. The world trees might have received heavy damages. Starting from making a combination to germinate the Seed of the World Tree, every action had been a series of gambles. My fatigue would last a while.

“I’m going to leave now.”

I flatly said and turned around.

Chrisley and the dark elves kneeled down as I quietly walked out.

*

And...at that time.

A group of people was climbing the dungeon.

“Two lava spiders are coming closer!”

“Don’t let the ranks get messed up!”

“Edward! The fire lizards are breathing out flames!”

The group of people were Devil Hunters from Heaven’s Will. There was a total of 12 of them and they had reached the 6th floor.

The 6th floor was filled with lava. If they took one wrong step then their flesh would be melted by the lava. There were also the creatures present.

Yoo Eun-hye brandished a sword covered with lightning behind Edward. Originally his lower half had been crushed but Edward was cured with the help of the elixir. His spirit of revenge caused him to run wild.

He had an incredibly steep growth and was already one of the top 3 in Devil Hunters. Only 11 years old. He was 12 years old in South Korean age but he was already 160 centimetres with muscles. He had grown more than 10 centimetres in just a few months.

A fire lizard breathed out a huge flame. Then Edward Windsor hastily lowered his body and avoided the flames.

“Noona worries too much. A mindless lizard like this is no match for me.”

Puok!

Edward’s sword pierced the lizard’s chest. And he brutally stabbed the fire lizard many times.

Yoo Eun-hye's forehead wrinkled and she cried out.

“You...huh! This raid group is a team. I won't forgive you if you go ahead alone.”

“I understand. Then I will go catch the lava spiders. The other members need help.”

Edward said and then rushed towards the lava spiders. Yoo Eun-hye shook her head.

“Ahyu! Why do these things happen to me?”

It was like Yoo Eun-hye was looking after a son. Her fate was childcare. She couldn't help sighing as she thought of the captain.

‘Captain-nim. Watch out. I will give you a beating!’

Yoo Eun-hye had a long face as she followed behind Edward.

*

Over the past few months, South Korea had gone through a change. It was due to the aftermath caused by the monster wave. Thousands of soldiers died, the property damage was in the trillions and they could only watch humiliated as the creatures marched through their country.

There was a hold in national security so the public couldn't help feeling uneasy.

Somebody needed to take responsibility for the situation.

The administration, including the president and head of the counterterrorism department, was replaced.

The status of the Awakened climbed. The Awakened had already gained the people's trust. The Awakened came forward during the monster wave and reduced the damage.

Full support. There was a push at the national level. Thanks to that, the guilds rapidly expanded their power.

The monster waves were already at a global threat. Each country naturally wanted to take in the strong Awakened.

There was a movement to stop the Awakened from leaving their country. Thus, the Awakened rapidly gained a foothold.

The 'Golden Age of the Awakened' was about to open.

*

"Ah, let's see. I thought it was a safe zone?"

Late in the evening.

Kim Chun-won was drinking beer in a pub and let out an outpouring of complaints. He got into Devil Hunters through the audition and was the holder of the title 'Foul Mouthed Person.' He had the unique specialty of a bard but the eyes of the people around Kim Chun-won was cold.

“Why is everybody looking at me like that? Didn't everyone think it was a safe zone at first? There was no way of knowing that creatures could enter.

“Ajusshi. That isn't the problem. Can't you recognize it?”

Yoo Eun-hye who was drinking soda said.

The dungeon's 6th floor. They had found a small house in the lava field. Usually a safe zone...was known as a home in the form of a 'poo.' However, Kim Chun-won insisted that the house was a safe zone as soon as he saw it.

But unlike his claims, the worst case situation occurred as the creatures rushed the house. There was massive damage but fortunately they all survived.

Kim Chun-won frowned.

“Why are you calling me ajusshi? Don’t you know I’m still in my mid-twenties? And having a house in a place like that was strange in the first place. Would creatures bother to make a home?”

“Why not? Some creatures are bipedal and also have intelligence.”

Kim Chun-won glared at Yoo Eun-hye.

“You just need to meddle in everything.”

“Omo, scary. Don’t drag me off somewhere else!”

Yoo Eun-hye hid behind Edward. Edward ate a chicken leg and stared at Kim Chun-won.

The child was staring at Kim Chun-won with unusually deep eyes. Aside from a few people, Edward always had that expression in his eyes.

‘The brat’s fucking eyes...!’

Kim Chun-won felt uneasy and poured the beer down his throat.

Lee Ji-hye clapped her hands and said.

“Stop it. Today we are gathered to figure out measures against

the ‘pyrocks.’ They are strong creatures that we need to beat.”

They had emerged during the monster wave. Numerous soldiers were slaughtered by the pyrocks! The small creatures with the wings of a bat attacked the group on the 6th floor. The group couldn’t face them. All they could do was run away.

“Unni. Looking at the numbers, there aren’t many of them. Do we really need to worry about the damage?”

Yoo Eun-hye who had returned to her seat spoke.

Lee Ji-hye shook her head.

“The problem is that we can’t be sure. It is likely that much stronger creatures will exist on the 7th floor. Have you forgotten how much we suffered penetrating through the 5th floor?”

The bodies of the members trembled as they recalled the nightmare of the mud golems, puppets and harpies on the 5th floor. They made significant efforts to raise their stats and skills and succeeded. However, there were many times when they were almost wiped out.

“Unni. Then there is no way? It might be better to reorganize from the ground floor up.”

“The pressure from the guild isn’t a joke. The expectations on Devil Hunters is too big. We need to reach at least the 7th floor to

succeed. There isn't much time.”

Yoo Eun-hye weakly slapped her forehead.

“Aigoo. This is all thanks to Captain-nim!”

“Captain-nim is away and that is the end of it.”

In fact, the value of Devil Hunters had risen due to their leader Randolph Briggsiel. He had the title of ‘South Korea’s strongest Awakened’ and it was expected that his raid group, Devil Hunters, would be the strongest. But Yoo Eun-hye and Edward had only recently emerged. They still had a long way to go.

The leader also took Krasla with him...so the absence of their key power was painful.

The members were sweating to maintain the value of their name but there was a limit.

As the mood was going down, Yoo Eun-hye raised her hand.

“Can't we get support from other famous raid groups?”

“Would other famous raid groups treat us fairly?”

Yoo Eun-hye frowned.

“Indeed. We’ve received a lot of jealousy so they would just try to stifle us. Anyway, it is a problem. They might just try to devour us.”

Top 5 guilds.

Among that was the Heaven’s Will Guild that Devil Hunters belonged to. They achieved an overwhelming fear of repelling the monster waves around the world but ‘Randolph Brigsiel’ was the only name heard afterwards.

The other 4 guilds didn’t like this. Everyone recognized the leader of the raid group but the atmosphere itself wasn’t very good. The requests for help that asked for Randolph...the raid group had to lightly discard it.

“But we aren’t just any raid group. There will be raid groups plotting against us from behind. They might even spread strange rumours.”

Lee Ji-hye sighed.

Anyway, Devil Hunters needed to resolve this.

“Unni. We should turn this misfortune to our advantage. Wouldn’t our reputation improve if we reach the 7th floor without the raid leader?”

“I hope so.”

But everyone knew how great the raid captain was. Everyone gathered here wouldn't even be able to touch one hair on his head.

Yoo Eun-hye shrugged and drank her soft drink.

“Ah, scull it. Drink it all at once. Just think about drinking!”

“Annoying. How can you say that when you are holding a soft drink?”

A fork was stuck in the table in front of Kim Chun-won.

He was startled and looked for the culprit behind the fork. Judging by the angle of the fork, Edward was the one who threw it.

“...”

Kim Chun-won's gaze moved.

He was outwardly calm but his insides were boiling.

No matter how bad his mouth, he couldn't swear at someone so young. In addition, Edward went crazy whenever it involved Yoo Eun-hye.

‘Ah, fuck. A mother’s boy?’

Kim Chun-won used that excuse to rationalize his loss against a young boy.

*

The dungeon’s top floor.

I watched the hologram floating above the Dungeon Core.

I went into Domestic Mode to confirm the changes.

This was due to the Tree of Origin.

The blessing from the Statue of Abundance meant there was a steep growth but not much information was known. I purchased related books in the store but there was little relevant information about the Tree of Origin.

‘The first life conceived. I’ve read many books and this was the one fact I found.’

In the end, I could only verify it directly.

But no prominent features had appeared yet. The real time breeding rate in the dungeon increased by 0.5% but I couldn’t spot

anything else. But I couldn't determine if this was due to the influence of the Tree of Origin.

I had to keep watch over time. It was still too early.

However, I couldn't help having high expectations towards the world trees. A tree connected to the creation of the world...it wouldn't be a small thing. It was one of the reasons why I was watching the hologram.

“Master. Yihi found something interesting!”

Yihi came back without the King Bee. She was always smiling but today she was even happier.

“Right.”

I replied without looking at her. Yihi flew in front of me with her wings flapping.

“Yihi saw something very interesting!”

“Get out of the way. I can't see.”

“Hing...”

Yihi's shoulders slumped with a sad atmosphere around her. So

she started talking to herself.

“Humans are coming up. I heard they just received a dwarf quest. Yihi really saw it. So I decided to report it to Master. Yihi might like jokes but Master’s reaction is too much. Yihi’s heart is broken ~ I won’t tell you anything in the future.”

“Humans have appeared on the 7th floor?”

My interest abruptly shifted to Yihi.

“Yes Master. Yihi watched them carefully.”

She flapped her wings again and her smile had come back. Fairies were simpleminded, especially Yihi. What fairy didn’t like attention?

“No friction happened.”

Sooner or later, humans would reach the 7th floor. It was in a ready state but many humans would just attack the dwarves without bothering to speak to them. Fortunately, such a thing didn’t happen.

“Humans are stupid. They are easily deceived. The small dwarves only made small repairs to their weapons and their guard was gone? Yihi laughed when I saw it.”

“Yihi. Did you check that the quest was officially registered?”

I wondered about the humans who had received a quest from creatures. The quests were a strategy to raise the Awakened.

“The humans were surprised when the small dwarf asked them for a favour. A quest window opened in front of the Awakened.”

Yihi’s words confirmed it.

‘I can give quests...’

It was a fairly important and useful piece of information.

I immediately pulled out the modified crystal ball and viewed the dwarf village on the 7th floor.

After a while, the surface of the sphere showed a blurry scene of the village.

The completed village was worth watching.

First, there were dozens of 2 storey buildings neatly placed. A clock tower was erected in a square overflowing with statues. In particular, there were some buildings made to fit humans and I could see a few familiar human faces.

‘Yoo Eun-hye, Lee Ji-hye and Edward Windsor.’

They didn’t know.

They were the humans that I drew into the raid group directly.

‘Devil Hunters is the first raid group to reach the 7th floor.’

It was a strange feeling.

I had forgotten about their existence for a while but now they appeared.

I didn’t feel any pride. Devil Hunters was the first raid group on the 7th floor. This meant they had grown steadily.

‘Wait and see.’

I continued watching them through the crystal ball.

*

Shortly after the failed raid on the 6th floor.

Devil Hunters prepared themselves and once again challenged the dungeon.

It went without saying that they prepared expensive potions and scrolls. Even if it only moved them an extra 10 metres, these preparations could save their lives.

Up to the 5th floor, it was easy to move thanks to the safe zones. Usually the creatures moved along a set path. No significant damage occurred if they avoided those paths. Naturally, Devil Hunters had identified several safe routes.

These routes were information that could be sold for money.

The information was a big help for regular raid groups.

In a day, they reached the 6th floor without a hitch. Sweat was flowing even when they were standing still due to the lava.

They immediately identified the creatures on the 6th floor.

Fire lizards, lava spiders, fire lava, fire slimes...and pyrocks!

They were significantly stronger compared to the creatures on the 5th floor. It was possible due to Yoo Eun-hye and Edward. They fought together a few times and developed their own strategies. Except for the pyrocks, the other creatures couldn't go against them.

“...Unni. A little anticlimactic. Isn't it?”

Yoo Eun-hye sighed as she looked at the surrounding buildings.

7th floor. This was the dwarf village.

They had moved nervously from the 6th floor but hadn't encountered anything like the pyrocks. The only thing they saw when stepping on the 7th floor were the 1 metre 'dwarves.'

Despite being on guard, the dwarves were friendly. The grizzled faces welcomed the raid group with smiles. It wasn't possible to do a pre-emptive strike after seeing those smiles.

It was the first time the group became stunned in the dungeon. The dwarves offered the raid group shelter and weapon repair.

"We still don't know. Don't relax."

Lee Ji-hye said with a pale face.

Their goodwill didn't convince her. It might lead to a trap. Therefore she left some members by the entrance.

"I don't see any apparent enemies? Unni, look at the weapons worn by the dwarves. It is no joke. The lowest ones are rare grade weapons. Their numbers are greater than us...why would they need to lure us into a trap?"

Yoo Eun-hye said.

Her eyes were stunned as she gazed at the dwarves. Their weapons and armour were all much better.

Just having one of them would make her a lot of money. She had a lot of money after belonging to Devil Hunters but...at any rate, there were almost 100 of them so there was no need for a trap.

Their small size wasn't a problem. Big gaping shoulders. Looking at the muscles, it was obvious they wouldn't be easy opponents.

“Haha. Heroes, don't worry. We dwarves are different from the other creatures. Rather, we have been waiting for brave heroes.

The dwarf guiding the raid group laughed. No enemies. The other dwarves passing the party were just looking at them curiously.

Lee Ji-hye's eyes were wide.

“What is your intent? If you aren't our enemies then why are you armed?”

“This is a dungeon. A place where every creature has to struggle for survival. The situation means that we are always armed. And... don't be too hasty. Elder-nim will tell you the rest of the story.”

The dwarf's explanation seemed reasonable at first glance. But that alone couldn't be explained.

Why was a creature saying something so nicely?

Maybe this was close to the 'truth' of the world that they didn't know.

Lee Ji-hye was uncomfortable as she kept on walking.

"This is the place. Ahchacha. Heroes, in this area can you put away your weapons?"

The dwarf mentioned it like he had forgotten. Lee Ji-hye shook her head.

"I can't be disarmed.

"Then warriors must go with you. Is it okay if you wait a little longer for the story?"

What to do?

The attention of the group members were focused on Lee Ji-hye.

They decided to follow her words.

“I accept.”

“I understand.”

The dwarf glanced around and two more followed them.

The raid group had left three members at the entrance to the 7th floor. There were nine people who arrived in this place.

That number was significant. It was enough to take seriously. But this place was a dungeon. Caution was needed.

Lee Ji-hye thought of several situations that could occur as she led the way inside the building. The rest of the crew members followed behind.

Soon a dwarf could be seen sitting in front of a huge wooden table.

Duk!

The dwarf shook some ashes into a bowl and opened his mouth.

“It is a pleasure to meet you, Heroes. My name is Stein. I am responsible for this small village.”

All the group members sat at the table. After they sat down, Stein

finally told the story.

“You must have many questions. I am happy to answer most of them. It is better if both sides trust each other.”

“I saw some dwarves in the 1st monster wave. Is this place related to those dwarves?”

Lee Ji-hye asked sharply.

Stein shrugged and replied shamelessly.

“Monster wave? What is that?”

“It is when creatures collectively escape the dungeon to attack humans.”

“Is there such a thing? We don’t know about it. We’ve never gone out of the dungeon.”

In fact, the dwarves had left the dungeon. They led the creatures to attack the city in accordance with Dungeon Master’s orders. They lied about the dwarves seen in the 1st monster wave.

But they directed it behind the scenes. The dwarves needed to convince the humans. They played ignorant.

Lee Ji-hye was still suspicious.

“You have never left the dungeon yet you are aware of the existence of Heroes.”

“Shouldn’t I know at least that much? We are aware that there are other places in this dungeon. We didn’t come from this dungeon in the first place. We came to ‘Earth’ from a completely different world.”

“An entirely different world?”

Lee Ji-hye’s eyes were filled with curiosity.

“A continent called ‘Hebnaim.’ Well, we didn’t know it but...one day we were forcibly transferred to this dungeon. And were forced to live here. If the ‘Dungeon Master’ on the top floor is killed then we might be able to return to our original world. And...”

Stein took a deep breath and clenched his fists.

“How do we know the existence of Heroes? It is simple. We received a small revelation from our god. This is the only way we can be free of the dungeon!”

A prepared script.

Half lies and half truth.

Stein really had quality acting.

Even Lee Ji-hye became uncertain after his passionate gesture.

“Receiving a revelation from God, that isn’t easy to believe.”

“I think that meeting you now is a miracle in itself. It has to be.”

The modern world was a series of miracles. The emergence of dungeons and then the Awakened. Nothing was normal. It wasn’t strange for a god to appear.

“Okay. Even if I accept it. But what about the other creatures?”

“We are different from the other creatures with low intelligence. The dungeon was wide. There are many creatures. A variety of types. Why do we have to be like them?”

“So...we can assume that the dwarves in this place aren’t our enemies?”

“That’s right. We are willing to help you. Of course, it won’t be blind help...in short, if we cooperate then mutual benefits can be obtained. I’d love to help for nothing but that isn’t possible with our circumstances.”

Lee Ji-hye moved her eyes over his equipment. They were all

remarkable things. Even getting a few of them would be challenging.

She came to the conclusion that it really wasn't bad to form a mutual relationship.

“Win-win. Good words. What do you want? They are very good comments but I want to know what you want first.”

“We hope to get help from you. It isn't easy for the dwarves to leave the village empty. It is troublesome to handle external problems.”

“Help...I wonder what you need help with.”

“It is simple. Remove 10 snail like creatures called ‘Heukwa’ from the 7th floor. Their mucus is enough to make the ground soft so it is a serious problem. Thanks to them, the ground has become pitted and quite a few dwarves have suffered. If you bring back their shells then I will give additional compensation. The shells from the Heukwa can be used to create a scabbard.”

The moment that Stein's words finished.

-‘Stein's Favour’ quest has occurred.

Purpose – Remove 10 ‘Heukwa’ 0/10

“Eh?”

“Quest!”

All members of the group were surprised. They never imagined that a quest would occur.

All Awakened would be excited about a ‘sudden quest.’ There was compensation and their stats would rise a bit faster.

Stats were absolute. It was unconditionally good to have high stats. Furthermore, completing the quest was likely to give them ‘achievements.’ Depending on the achievements, they could get skills or a title...the team’s eyes lit up.

“Let’s try it.”

Lee Ji-hye nodded.

*

The Heukwa were low grade creatures. Their size wasn’t very large but the shell was insanely hard. The mucus had a strong acid but they weren’t aggressive so it wasn’t difficult to hunt them.

Instead, they had to be careful of the many holes that surrounded the Heukwa. There wouldn't be any difficulties once that part was avoided.

“The 7th floor is easier.”

Yoo Eun-hye muttered after hunting 10 heukwa.

The other members agreed. The 7th floor was easier than the 5th and 6th floors.

“Huhu. Doesn't this feel like a stage?”

Kim Chun-won said with a laugh. His role as a bard was to attract the aggro but he didn't need to do that with the Heukwa. He could just comfortably watch.

The battle ended and Lee Ji-hye said.

“Move them on the wagon. We will return to the village.”

Before leaving the village, Stein had let them borrow a large wagon. Thanks to that, moving the shells were easy.

Two of the members were moving the shells of the Heukwa when Yoo Eun-hye said.

“Unni. What will the dwarves give as a reward? Something like a legendary sword?”

“A legendary sword for these 10 shells? They will probably just throw us some tools.”

“Then ~ ask first. A unique grade sword.”

“That is just a dream, dongsaeng (younger sibling).”

The members joked around as they pulled the wagon. There were 10 heukwa shells piled in the wagon like a mountain.

Yoo Eun-hye stretched out while moving.

“Ah, won’t there be quite a few people who will become sick after hearing we are the 1st raid group to successfully reach the 7th floor?”

“I guess so. There is also the news about the dwarf village.”

“Finally taking off the disgrace of our raid group...”

Their bad name. Lee Ji-hye couldn’t bring herself to say those words. Yoo Eun-hye was already like a sibling to her. Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye had pleasant smiles on their faces.

Wiing-

“Stop! 70 metres in front. Something is approaching. There are quite a few of them.”

One of the members who had the profession of ‘scout’ said from the front. His senses were a great help.

He could clearly hear anything approaching.

Capturing even small sounds.

The scout swallowed his saliva.

“Even in the rear. Damn...it can’t be avoided?”

They were trapped. The distance wasn’t far away. Lee Ji-hye made a decision.

“Prepare to fight. Guards forward.”

“Guards forward.”

“Get the aggro of the creatures in front.”

“I will do it.”

One of the guarders willingly raised his hand.

A guarder's role was to attract the aggro to ensure the members in the rear could move comfortably.

Soon, a huge swarm of bees appeared in the front and rear.

There were approximately 100 of them!

A monster that was only 1 metre in size. The crew members flinched with repulsion at the sight.

“...Damn, is this a bonus stage?”

Kim Chun-won spat out with disgust.

Bee monsters. They were led by the King Bee.

There was only the simple attack using the stingers but the numbers meant the team was screwed. No matter how strong, the Awakened wouldn't be able to withstand it. The stingers also contained a poison that would send them to the afterlife.

“Cough!”

The team members tried to resist but one or two eventually fell

victim to the King Bee. Those stung rapidly received symptoms and collapsed. In many ways, it was a state of emergency but their bodies were trembling with fear.

‘What should I do?’

Thoughts filled Lee Ji-hye’s head. But she had no way of comprehending it. Her colleagues were going to die. Even if she fought to the end, it was unlikely they would win.

“Ack...!”

“Eun-hye!”

Lee Ji-hye could hear Yoo Eun-hye’s scream. She tried to rush over but was blocked by the King Bee. Edward was also struggling to get to her.

He didn’t care about the others but he couldn’t abandon Yoo Eun-hye. Lee Ji-hye raised her hand and formed a sphere of water. But it wasn’t an effective attack against the King Bee.

But the King Bee changed directions and aimed at Lee Ji-hye. Lee Ji-hye closed her eyes as the King Bee came closer.

“You guys. Yihi said to do it properly! You guys are really alive because of Yihi. Honey all day, ah ~ that is why you should listen to Yihi. Huh?”

Suddenly a voice was heard.

Lee Ji-hye opened her eyes.

At the same time, she became greatly surprised.

There was a little fairy with turquoise hair right in front of her.

‘How?’

Was she hallucinating? Lee Ji-hye rubbed her eyes.

But no matter how much she rubbed, the translucent fairy didn’t disappear.

The King Bee had stopped moving due to the fairy’s tantrum. Then the fairy flapped her wings quickly. A small fairy was controlling a giant bee monster.

Lee Ji-hye looked around. There were only three members remaining. The remaining nine were laying on the ground. They weren’t dead but it was an emergency situation. Even so, she couldn’t easily move.

The fairy Yihi crossed her arms arrogantly and said.

“Am I wrong? Yihi said it, but don’t believe it. Yihi will show you through actions instead of words. I told you to give many wounds to the men in the dungeon. Yihi is a good fairy and has always been the victim of men like that.”

She didn’t talk about women. Yihi seemed to be glancing at the men while pretending to wipe her tears. Tears didn’t fall down...

Then the King Bee started to move. Lee Ji-hye’s eyes widened.

“Stop!”

The two team members back away. Three people. The King Bee couldn’t block all of them.

Gulp!

Their legs were shaking but they slowly stepped back.

Yihi frowned.

“What, this ugly girl? Look at that large bum.”

“Uh, bum? No, what is the reason behind attacking us?”

Lee Ji-hye said with panic. She had to somehow find a gap to escape. Her eyes faced in front of her while her hands signaled to

the other two members.

It was something they developed for emergencies where they couldn't speak.

An opportunity. Run away. Help. The team members bit their lips after seeing those words.

Yihi covered her mouth with a mock surprised expression.

“Omomo. Your bum is the size of a hippogriff's head! Is your brain made of feces? Eew, stinky.”

She blocked her nose and waved her hand.

“...”

Lee Ji-hye's image of a fairy cracked at that moment.

She never heard of such vicious fairies in the stories.

The fairies in stories basically had a clean and good image. But this fairy Yihi was the complete opposite.

She had never heard of a fairy like that.

“And don't you pick up the trash from the path when walking?”

“Trash...?”

“Yihihi. Yihi sees you as trash so I should put you away like a good fairy.”

Yihi puffed up.

She put herself in the category of a ‘nice fairy.’

It was at that moment. The two men behind Lee Ji-hye immediately ran. The King Bee moved before Yihi could even say anything.

“Ah! Don’t miss...!”

“You want to chase? Water Sphere!”

Lee Ji-hye threw the water sphere she had prepared at Yihi. She was thinking that the King Bee would stop if its master, the fairy, was in trouble.

But the fairy had a spirit body. Yihi was the fairy of this Dungeon Core. It was difficult to harm Yihi.

However, Yihi’s mood worsened because of it.

“This ugly bitch! How dare you attack Yihi?”

“Che!”

Lee Ji-hye clicked her tongue and grasped her staff with unease. It would end here.

She wanted to escape with Yoo Eun-hye but that didn't seem possible. She expected this to happen whenever entering the dungeon but...now she felt bleak.

“No matter how good like an angel Yihi is, it can't be helped. I can't let you go.”

Yihi pointed a finger at Lee Ji-hye.

Wiing-!

The bees started to move.

An overwhelming number. Lee Ji-hye's skills could do nothing against them.

Puk!

In the end, Lee Ji-hye couldn't resist and the saliva of the King Bee invaded her body. One long needle was sunk into her side.

‘Ah...’

Her eyes naturally closed.

Was this the end? It was unfair that she would die like this. But she couldn't turn back the clock. She wanted it to be dream but it was brutal reality.

Lee Ji-hye's eyes completely closed.

At that moment, Yihi muttered to herself.

“I feel like Yihi is forgetting something important. What is it?”

She thought about it but couldn't come up with anything.

“Eh ~ it isn't a big deal.”

Lululu!

Humming. Yihi thought on the positive side. Yihi left without any worries. She was followed by the King Bee.

*

Lee Ji-hye opened her eyes.

A white ceiling. That was the first sight she saw.

‘Bed?’

She looked around with surprise at the cosy sensation.

Yoo Eun-hye was smiling next to her.

“Unni, you woke up?”

“Eun-hye...”

“Why are you so surprised? You don’t have to worry. This is heaven.”

Heaven? Lee Ji-hye mouth dropped open. Her limbs were stiff and her breath became harsh as she recalled what happened. It didn’t make sense that she would survive that situation.

“Really dead.”

“How does it feel?”

“I don’t know. Just numb.”

“You will get used to it. I was also confused when I first opened my eyes.”

“Sob.”

But it didn't console her. Tears started falling from Lee Ji-hye's eyes. And Yoo Eun-hye was rather confused.

“Uh, unni?”

“I'm sorry. Eun-hye. Unni didn't protect you.”

“I-I'm joking, joking! I'm not dead. I am fine! This isn't heaven.”

“What...?”

Lee Ji-hye was still crying as she blinked. Yoo Eun-hye felt like she committed a great sin and quickly explained.

“This is the dwarf village. The dwarves saved us. Sorry unni. I just wanted to play a small joke. Please forgive me.”

“We are alive?”

“Yes!”

Yoo Eun-hye gave a big nod. She vowed not to make fun of her unni in the future.

Swipe swipe. Lee Ji-hye wiped away her tears. At the same time, she pinched her cheeks! She turned towards Yoo Eun-hye.

“You...dead!”

“Haha! I-I’m sorry, unni.”

Her fingers started tickling Yoo Eun-hye’s sides.

*

The dwarf chief Stein gave a bitter laugh.

“I’m sorry. I never thought you would meet the vicious fairy. It was lucky that some dwarves were passing nearby and found you.”

This was the house of the elder.

The team members were staying here while recovering.

Lee Ji-hye asked fiercely.

“What the hell is that fairy?”

“Well, that... A vicious fairy with many vices. Occasionally she will appear and cause a lot of trouble. There is no method to stop her every time she comes.”

Stein talked badly about Yihi without any hesitation.

“If there is such a risk then shouldn’t we have some assurance in advance?”

“Hu...that’s right. I didn’t think it would turn out like this. I should add more compensation to what I planned for killing 10 Heukwa.”

Lee Ji-hye frowned.

She didn’t think it would be acknowledged. Just the fact that her team members almost died caused her to be annoyed.

But the chief also said it was an unexpected situation. Being angry wouldn’t allow them to take a step forward. At this point, it might even cause the situation to take a step back.

“I need to make some calculations. Okay. I don’t want our relationship to collapse.”

“Thank you.”

Stein gave a tight smile.

-‘Stein’s Favour’ quest has been completed.

The difficulty of the quest is being measured. The difficulty level is ‘low.’

-You have completed the first quest given by creatures.

The title ‘Equal Party (N, Strength +2) has been added to your status window.

“Title!”

“Oh my god, I got a title...”

The team members all reacted. The title only had a normal rating but they knew how difficult it was to obtain a title.

This was an unexpected quest progress and the Awakened had received it from a creature. Lee Ji-hye was convinced by the first achievement and said towards Stein.

“Well, it has already happened. Now you should get up gently. I will guide you to our treasury.”

Devil Hunters obtained a desired item and descended the dungeon. They came down by the safe routes so it wasn't difficult. Everybody was exhausted and could only think about going home.

They finally left the dungeon and Lee Ji-hye said.

“Don't forget to drop by the hospital for a checkup.”

“Our manager has plenty of worries ~”

“Eun-hye. It's not a joke.”

“Yep!”

Yoo Eun-hye had committed a sin and immediately wagged her tail.

There was a private bus waiting outside the dungeon. The size of the bus was enough to only fit the Devil Hunters raid group and was a bulletproof vehicle that could withstand considerable impact. It was printed with the trademark half skull of Devil Hunters.

Yoo Eun-hye sat on a seat and stretched out.

“Ah, finally going home.”

“Make sure your seat belt is tight.”

“I want unni to be honest with me. Mother? Are you my mother disguised?”

Lee Ji-hye started laughing. At the same time, fatigue sunk in. Some members started snoozing as soon as they sat down.

The private bus driver waiting at the wheel turned and said.

“You must have suffered a lot. Everybody is tired.”

Lee Ji-hye raised her hand and replied painfully.

“Driver-nim. Please slow down.”

“Yes. I will keep that in mind.”

Lee Ji-hye checked her phone as the bus started moving. She pressed and held the power button, entered her pin and saw ‘26 messages’ written.

24 of the 26 messages were sent by Kim Yong-woo, the guild master of Heaven’s Will. The remaining two were reminders of loans.

-Why didn’t you wait for Randolph-nim instead of forcing it?

-The dungeon capture is in progress? Hu! I'm going crazy. Get in contact soon.

-I am just inquiring about your progress. Get in contact soon.

This was the contents of the messages.

Typing out a reply was troublesome.

Lee Ji-hye wrote the smallest amount of words possible and pressed the send button.

-Dwarf, quest, successful. And sleepiness.

Lee Ji-hye threw the phone to the seat beside her and closed her eyes.

*

Yihi leaned back against the Dungeon Core and lifted both hands.

“Master. Yihi was wrong. Yihi became ignorant after you gave me the King Bee.”

A voluntary report. Maybe she confessed in order to receive punishment. I looked at Yihi.

“But Master. The ugly girl tried to attack Yihi. If Yihi’s body was real then I would be in a lot of pain.”

“Your body doesn’t have substance. It means you don’t have to be excited about such attacks.”

“Yes but...”

Yihi bowed with a grouchy expression.

She had only wanted to scare the team members on the 7th floor. No creatures existed on the 8th to 11th floor while there was the 3Lv intermediate ‘Naga’ on the 12th floor. The raid group were barely the opponents for the pyrocks, let alone the nagas.

She only intended to scare them to stop them from climbing up. However, Yihi made the group end up at death’s door. If it was even a little later then Yoo Eun-hye and Edward would be lost. It would be impossible for them to survive if the King Bee’s venom wasn’t removed within 20 minutes.

‘I need to be a little stern.’

I had been watching the progress so fortunately an accident hadn’t happened. But I couldn’t leave Yihi to her own devices anymore.

Was I too free with her?

“I will withdraw your authority for a while.”

“M-Master...Yihi was wrong. I won’t do it again.”

Yihi tearfully said. But I didn’t budge. I would take this opportunity to curb some habits.

“I will close the garden you made. I had previously turned a blind eye because I trusted that you would perform your duties. If you make a mistake like this every time then there is no reason to turn a blind eye.”

“N-no! Master. Then the bees are going to die. Yihi has to take care of them on a daily basis.”

Yihi’s expression was desperate.

But I already made my decision. I couldn’t allow this mistake to be repeated.

I turned and headed to the 15th floor. I wanted to look at the Tree of Origin.

“Master! Please. Yihi will work hard in the future. Yes?”

Her voice was unheard. In the end, Yihi was left alone on the top floor.

“Master...hiiing...ack! Hiiing...”

Yihi cried sadly into her hands.

*

- Opening of the dimensional gate...13%.

- The gate code has forced a change. There will be forced movement from the Demon World to Earth.

- The authorized personnel includes 2,000 angels...

- An event message will be given to all players...

Chapter 81-83: Angels

After checking the Tree of Origin, I also made sure that the Japanese dungeon's internal affairs were continuing smoothly.

In particular, I recently imported treasure to Japan's dungeon so the points there had increased. The average of 40,000 a month had increased to 55,000 so the effects were already visible. There were many people getting rich in Japan.

Guyo the fairy in Japan's dungeon was alone so he worked hard. The points were used to make a 'maze.' The walls and multiple paths made it much simpler to hide the treasure. This was obviously different from Yihi.

'The goblins are still dominant.'

It was possible to identify the current state of the creatures in the dungeon with one glance. The number of goblins was in the six digits and there was a 0.03% possibility of a variant occurring. It meant only 3 variants had been born. Champion goblin, arc goblins etc...this statistic was quite useful.

Once the Tree of Origin started working properly, I was looking forward to seeing the 'uniqueness' work on the saber tigers.

'It is unfortunate that the saber tigers don't have the dominant position yet.'

Tsk! I clicked my tongue.

The number of goblins was significantly more than the saber tigers. It was because the costs and breeding rate itself was different. The lowest grade goblin could be purchased for 25pt while the saber tigers cost 5,200pt. The goblins could give birth to over ten at a time while the saber tigers were limited to half a dozen.

In many ways, it was forced to take more time.

“Invest 500,000 more points. I will give you permission to use it.”

“Really? I’m glad!”

Guyo jumped with excitement. Guyo had been anxious after I transferred to the dungeon. But I ended up giving him permission to use half a million points so various thoughts of how to proceed passed through his head.

I said in passing.

“In the future, you will be granted further opportunities. Yihi, Guyo and any fairies I get in the future.”

“I can do well.”

Guyo quickly nodded.

I was slightly disappointed with Yihi so Guyo was more reliable right now. Of course, I would watch for a long time rather than make an instant judgement. Yihi and Guyo were so different from each other that there were advantages and disadvantages.

My eyes shone.

‘I should further grow my power.’

I was stronger than one demon. However, I lacked power compared to a faction. The situation was like that now. I burst out in the lead and needed to build that as much as possible without losing power.

For now, it was going smoothly. But I wouldn't be able to completely disregard the factions in a few more years.

I needed my own army! Just imagining it made me invigorated.

There was a little bit on my mind.

The past 2 years. There was little to threaten me at the moment.

But my perception changed after ‘they’ came through a hole in the sky.

-A special event has been triggered. Event, 'Angel Hunt' has begun.

Seven dimensional gates have been created to earth. Angels will appear through the gate and instinctively strike the dungeons. An angel's attack has the opposite property of a dungeon barrier and can neutralize the dungeon. If the barrier is broken then the existence of the dungeon itself will be at stake. So please be careful.

The event rewards are as followed:

1 Dominions Angel Hashmal – 5,000,000pt

3 Virtues Angels – 1,000,000pt

10 Powers Angels – 300,000pt

50 Principalities Angels – 100,000pt

1,850 Angels – 5,000pt

Hunt more angels. Protect the dungeon and Dungeon Core from the angels. If an angel reaches the Dungeon Core then they will declare it as a 'Holy Land.' Holy Land will reduce the strength of all demons while the capabilities of the angels will

rise.

Then, I wish all players good luck.

A long message window emerged suddenly. At the same time, cracks started to form in the sky.

I was deeply flustered.

‘Angels?’

My expression wrinkled. My fists clenched tightly and my lips became dry.

The cracks were forming in the sky above Korea. It was one of the seven places on earth selected.

But, strange.

I was disconcerted that the angels would appear already. In addition, it didn’t make sense that one of the gates would appear in Korea.

‘It was supposed to start after 20 years.....’

The angels had also appeared in my previous life. It happened

when the war was in full swing. More than half of the earth was ravaged and there were approximately twenty demons remaining. The most powerful who had been filtered. They even had many creatures under them. Once the dimensional gate appeared, the angels were very easily defeated.

It was literally a ‘bonus event.’

In the 30th year, the archangels and seraphim’s and destroyed two dukes but it took quite a while. Above all, the dimensional gate never opened in Korea.

‘Things have changed.’

What was this? The future. Why?

‘I...because of me?’

My stiff expression couldn’t relax.

It had only been 2 years. Several small actions could have an impact on the future but I might have influenced it. There was no way to comprehend why the future had changed.

I climbed to the top of the dungeon and looked up at the sky. After a while, the gate ornamented with jewels to make it look like the ‘Celestial Door’ opened and angels came pouring out.

The Celestial Door opened and angels appeared. The number alone was enough to impact the spirit. The pure white wings and shining ‘ring of light’ above the head symbolized an angel’s presence.

The angels in the sky looked around. They were a little confused and couldn’t easily move. It seemed like they hadn’t expected it as they carefully started searching all over the place. The Celestial Door behind the angels disappeared without a trace.

“What?”

“Angels?”

The people on their way to work or driving cars were all staring at the angels in the sky. They gave off intense light when appearing so it was natural for attention to be focused on them.

Some angels raised their hands. Their hands produced a silver light then formed giant parabolas.

It looked just like a radar. And it actually was a radar.

The angels seemed to detect something and moved en masse. The angels were facing Bukhan Mountain. The place where South Korea’s ‘dungeon’ existed.

I started frowning.

‘What to do?’

An intense holy power could be felt from the angels. Even if they fell to the streets, I would fail to capture all of them.

I stayed at the dungeon’s outer walls and gazed in the direction of the incoming angels.

‘Dominions Angel Hashmal.’

I remembered the phrase that floated in the message window.

Hashmal. An angel who spread God’s wishes. An angel who couldn’t be easily defeated. Numerous creatures and demons suffered with the arrival of Hashmal in my previous life. She emitted a light so dazzling that the eyes couldn’t withstand it and flipped the battle around several times with her ‘recovery.’

By the way...it was obvious that the angel with huge holy power was the Dominions Angel Hashmal. She happened to fall through one of the seven gates into Korea.

‘Fight?’

I couldn’t just watch as they attacked my dungeon. But ‘how much I should show’ was the problem.

It was obvious that the owners of the dungeon in neighbouring countries would detect the intense holy magic. It was truly a crisis.

The demons didn't know I was in South Korea. I couldn't let them know. Grand Duke Upa would lead his faction to come and pressure me. Nobody could know my location for my absolute safety.

It would be a large restriction on the time I needed to grow. The circumstances meant I might need to prepare for an all-out war.

At the very least, I wouldn't be able to use Gigantes. This was because I already revealed that power in the Demon World Auction. It wouldn't be safe for Krasla and Chrisley. The same was true for the griffin. If a high class creature emerged then they were likely to think of me first.

‘First.....’

3 kilometres. The distance between the angels and the dungeon.

‘No time.’

It was already happening. I couldn't avoid this and wait for other people to take care of it.

Anyway, I wasn't sure of the situation but it wasn't a small matter.

A reversal. I could ride this event to rise properly. Conversely, I could twist my ankle and drop all the way to hell.

So...I couldn't proceed alone.

I got up from my spot.

I took out two square, iron plates from my magic bag. They had a distinct silver colour. I bit my finger and dripped the blood onto the two plates.

Yiing.

At the same time, the silver plates absorbed the blood and started to shine.

-The auto-golems 'M1' and 'M2' have been activated.

'M1' and 'M2' were the strongest golems produced tens of thousands of years ago. Somehow the blood, heart and breath of the devil was 'stolen' and transplanted into it.

The iron plates soon started to take the shape of armour. Two knights in full silver armour soon appeared. The size was 1m 80cm and was similar to my strongest golems. It was common in appearance with the golems and faithfully followed its master's words.

It was one of the five items I bought in addition to Sloth, the Statue of Abundance, the Body of the Earth Dragon, Astral Code, Sage’s Leap, Smile of the Sun and Tear of the Moon.

I opened Mind’s Eye to confirm the detailed specifications.

Name: M1, M2

Stats

Strength: 87

Intelligence: 0

Agility: 86

Stamina: 84

Magic Power: 57

Potential: (314/314)

Uniqueness: Completed from the beginning. There is no more need for growth and there is no sense of self since its intelligence is 0. But the golem gives its best performance under a powerful master.

Skill: Stampede (U)

A warrior specialized for fighting. The physical abilities were on par with a high class creature. The low magic power meant damage from skills would be great but there was no worries if it could avoid the skills. Stampede (U) was also a hidden card that could be used against enemies. Stampede would devastate the enemies the moment the golem activated it.

It didn't end here.

I pulled out one more vial from my bag. 'Wind Powder' was another one of the five items bought at auction. Depending on the amount given to the target, it could give a subject the 'Fly (R)' skill.

Just like the name, it could the ability to fly.

I threw the Wind Power at the golems without any hesitation. M1 and M2 would use it according to my commands. It would be enough to allow them to face the angels.

-The angel attack has begun. The dungeon barrier has received cumulative damage. The rare rating of the dungeon has increased the durability of the barrier. But it will eventually be destroyed if it receives attacks for too long.

-Barrier Durability 4,999,341/5,000,000
-Barrier Durability 4,998,871/5,000,000
...
-Barrier Durability 4,998,094/5,000,000

The messages continuously popped up. I placed my hand on the Dungeon Core and activated my magic power.

“Gather all the intermediate creatures on the 1st floor.”

The words were used to move them. I conveyed my will. The dungeon rating added to my power.

‘Hide my power. I don’t know if the rest of my strength will

suffice.....’

It wouldn’t be a problem if it was just the angels. The problem was the demons heading to South Korea. I wasn’t ready yet. Time was needed. I couldn’t use my main power.

-Barrier Durability 4,996,099/5,000,000

The durability of the barrier was reducing rapidly. It would last two days at the most. The barrier would be worn out in a couple of days.

‘I’ll give it a try.’

I clenched my fists and moved my feet.

The people were bewildered. A huge door appeared in the sky, angels poured out and began to immediately attack the dungeon. They weren’t showing hostility towards humans so they must not be enemies.

Humans should help. Or leave it to the angels. Opinions were divided between these two options.

If it was really ‘angels’ then it was natural for them to strike the evil dungeon. But South Korea was already battered by the monster wave so they couldn’t easily move. If there was an error in judgement once again then things would get out of control. An

obviously bleak future would unfold. South Korea that was slowly become a stable society fell into the abyss of confusion again with the appearance of the angels.

“Let’s help the angels. They are God’s messengers.”

“We shouldn’t go against the Dungeon Master. What if they fail? Then it really is the end. Won’t innocent bystanders be hurt?”

“If we help then they can win. It is better than being slaves!”

“No. How can we even help?”

It was tense.

The gap between the two were narrowing.

There were those who worshipped the noble Dungeon Master after the monster wave. The Dungeon Master was an existence that couldn’t be touched. The pressure given off by the Dungeon Master was huge.

Then the angels mysteriously appeared and showed them tangible hope. However, they couldn’t easily move. There were those who firmly believed the angels were God’s messengers. But the things they could do were very limited. They could only cheer with words.

But then they heard the following news.

“China, Philippines, Myanmar, India, Pakistan, Indonesia...a large number of creatures are approaching from those directions. Citizens are asked to immediately evacuate to a safe place.”

Wiiing!

The air-raid warning sirens rang. All the TV channels organized to discuss the ‘risk.’ In particular, the emergence of the large number of creatures that were heading to South Korea. Using a satellite gave them an estimate of roughly tens of thousands of creatures heading to the country. The countries they moved through wouldn’t be able to stop them.

In addition, it was determined that many of the creatures were really strong. It was concluded that they were all heading to South Korea.

“The end...it is the end.”

Congested roads. A man who heard the news from the car radio muttered. He jumped out of the car and looked up at the sky.

There were hundreds of wyverns flying in the sky.

*

Incense of Valour.

Water Droplets of Victory.

Beads of Passion.

The remaining three of five items purchased at the Demon World Auction. The items were purchased with a large scale attack in mind and the synergy of the three was good.

Incense of Valour increased the strength of his allies by 1 for one day. Droplets of Victory raised agility when diluted with water while Beads of Passion increased stamina so they were all buff-type items. Regardless of capabilities, they were general purpose items that were effective to use.

The incense and water droplets were consumable items and these items were more valuable in the second half. In a later time, I wouldn't be able to purchase it even if I had points. It seemed like I had to use these products immediately.

‘I didn't expect to use it so quickly.....’

Dungeon's 1st floor.

The intermediate ranked creatures were sorted by type. According to estimates, they roughly reached 1,500. This was a major power.

70 nagas.

83 werewolves.

92 lizardmen.

47 dark elves, minotaurs and mammoths and 40 dark bears.

563 saber tigers.

The rest were accounted for with the trolls, lich, pyrocks, 4 advanced golems, dwarves and a few variants.

Still, that power was only specific for the ground. The sky was an almost impossible situation. However, the angels weren't just hitting the outer walls. Soon angel troops would descend to the ground to enter the dungeon.

I was prepared for that. The intermediate creatures were no match for the angels. The 1,500 creatures gathered here were to block the angels and creatures.

'I also left Krasla, Gigantes and the griffin on the top floor. I unconditionally have to protect the Dungeon Core. There aren't just angels.'

Demons and their creatures were gathering from the

neighbouring countries. They were also dangerous.

Their armies were coming so it was apparent that this was a big event.

‘If it wasn’t for Hashmal then I would take advantage of their empty dungeons.....’

My forehead wrinkled.

It was certain that demons would appear with their main power. If only the dimensional gate and the Dominions Angel Hashmal hadn’t appeared in South Korea then I could use the opportunity of the empty dungeons.

It really was tough.

I needed to think of all variables in order to cross the stone bridge. I couldn’t just go on adventures. I needed to focus on keeping South Korea’s dungeon no matter what. If I lost South Korea’s dungeon then my dream of becoming the devil would end up very far away.

“Chrisley. This will be your heavy responsibility.”

“My Dungeon Master, don’t worry. I have made some creatures from what remains of the body of the earth dragon.

Chrisley knelt on one knee and told me.

Her Undead Manufacturing (Ex U) skill. It was applied to the body of the earth dragon. There were seven advanced 1Lv creatures behind her. They were strong and reassuring supporters in this situation.

“You have to command the creatures to repel the invaders. Keep this in mind.”

“I will keep it in mind.”

The demons weren't likely to become suspicious even if they saw Chrisley. Her appearance had vastly changed from the time she was trapped in the cage. Like a firefly under the full moon. Moreover, the quality of her magic power was much higher. It was impossible to think she was the same person.

“But...My Dungeon Master. How are you doing to prepare for the attacks on the outer walls?”

Chrisley glanced at me and asked.

I looked at the entrance of the dungeon and said.

“I will use everything available.”

Kwaang!

Kwaang!

An explosion of light. The dungeon barrier was in danger. Light gathered in Hashmal's hands and struck down from the sky like lightning. The light coming from the thunder strike meant it was difficult to open my eyes properly.

Hashmal then stretched out her six wings.

The beautiful figure was enough to cause bliss. Hashmal's presence could be felt even from far away.

The holy power extended from the wings and wrapped around the angels. It was to increase the recovery of the angels.

Hashmal looked around and stopped the attacks.

There were the Virtues Angels and Powers Angels as well. The Principalities Angels were holding bows of light and there were more than 400 angels. An absurd amount of power to attack a dungeon.

But Hashmal seemed to be frowning at something. Hashmal made a beautiful and cold expression and raised her hand. Then 200 angels and 4 Principalities Angels descended to the entrance of

the dungeon. Their aim was to hit the exterior and interior of the dungeon simultaneously.

Sha-!

Kieeek!

Not long after entering the dungeon, the screams of the creatures could be heard. The angels were cruel. The light weapons brutally killed the creatures. The troops entering the interior seemed to be sufficient.

Hashmal waited a moment before resuming the attack on the outer walls.

Puk!

A black needle entered Hashmal's body. A strong poison seemed to spread through the body but Hashmal purified the poison in an instant by spreading her wings. Once the needle was removed, she turned her head to look at who launched it.

“Damn demon! I told you to aim for the neck!”

There were several hundred wyverns. There were demons laughing among them.

Hashmal quietly muttered something. Then a bright light poured

into the air and hundreds of spears were created. The intensity of each spear was enough to cause a critical hit!

The demons' expressions wrinkled like they were chewing poo.

“Damn. Spread out!”

The demons on the wyverns were leading thousands of creatures like transparent insects, dark warriors, banshees, death knights, etc. The number of demons reached thirteen.

Thirteen...a ludicrous number for South Korea's narrow land mass. The good news was that they were only aiming at Hashmal and the angels. But no one could know what would happen after Hashmal and the angels were hunted.

“Dellat! I never thought someone so attached to Okullos's hip would come here!”

“Shut up, Anastasia. I can still smell the awful scent of Pandemonium's sperm from you.”

“What? You bastard!”

In addition, the demons gathered were from various factions. They wanted to show off their faction's power.

In the centre were Hashmal and the angels.

Chwang! Chwang!

Hashmal continued making spears of light. The demons were filled with admiration at the strong force.

“As expected from the Current Carrier of Light.”

“I am wasting time arguing with you.”

But greed flowed from their eyes.

There were only a small number of strong angels. This was a chance to get a large amount of points. They couldn't miss it.

The demons and their creatures started to attack. There were more than 100 attacks aimed at Hashmal but they barely did anything.

And the angels received strikes from the creatures. Their faces were smashed and limbs cut off but they quickly recovered thanks to Hashmal's power. It was like the angels were immortal so the demons were astounded.

Besides...demons were demons. They forgot about fighting with each other and focused on the main concern. They couldn't die half-heartedly after coming all this way.

Kwang!

“Observe the angels!”

“Help God’s messengers!”

While they were diverted by the angels, the creatures suddenly received a shower of unexpected attacks. The demons turned their heads to confirm the opponent.

“The lowly humans have lost their fear.”

Hundreds of Awakened wearing skull masks had appeared. The proof of Devil Hunters. The Awakened were all wearing different colours.

However, the demons just laughed.

Bugs. Nothing more and nothing less. It was an army of bugs that was showing resistance but that was all. The demons just needed to step on them. They wouldn’t be able to resist until the end. Rather, this meeting just gave them more points.

Ridicule could be seen in the demons’ eyes.

*

A few hours ago.....

I realized that I was in deep trouble on the top floor of the dungeon.

The functions of the Dungeon Core has been restricted thanks to the advent of the dimensional gate. The Store of All Things can't be opened.

This message window greeted me.

‘An unfriendly system.’

Time was lost. The system would have been friendly if it notified me of the event some time before it occurred.

In my previous life, angels had appeared long after I lost my dungeon. Therefore I didn't know that the store couldn't be used.

It didn't matter how much points I had. I was convinced this was why so many demons suffered against the angels. They weren't prepared in advance. It made matters worse. But I couldn't panic.

After calling the creatures to gather, I quickly left the dungeon.

I made a short stop at Heaven's Will. It was my first appearance

after a long time so I ignored the attention I received.

I opened the door to the Devil Hunters room on the 2nd floor. The scene that became visible...the team members were all watching the large TV in the centre.

“Eh? Captain-nim!”

Yoo Eun-hye was the first one to notice. Edward was right behind her. The other members quickly rose and bowed.

“Where did you go...no, I won’t wonder too much.”

Lee Ji-hye sighed. She led the raid group whenever I wasn’t present. The dark shadows under her eyes told of her suffering.

“How much stock of the masks do we have?”

“Skull masks? There are 500 piled up in a warehouse right now.”

“Watch them. I’m sure the number of masks will be lacking later.”

Yoo Eun-hye frowned.

There were 500. I shook my head and said.

“Take all the masks.”

Lee Ji-hye thought it was strange.

“What do you want to do?”

“Help the angels. Attract all guild members under the name Devil Hunters. You may use my name. Those people coming to help will wear the mask.”

“There Awakened who aren’t in our guild might oppose.”

The black skull mask was the symbol of Devil Hunters. It was uncertain if other guilds would wear it.

“Make a prior announcement. There is no time.”

“The emergence of a large number of creatures...will it be okay?”

“If we aren’t okay then no one else will be okay.”

A short answer. But it was enough.

Devil Hunters was Korea’s strongest raid group but they were also at a global level. The members were united by that pride. People knew it as a 1 person raid group but they shook off that stigma.

“I understand. I will move quickly to threaten the guild masters.”

Lee Ji-hye nervously licked her lips.

She seemed to have made a decision as her expression became determined. It wasn't difficult to use the name of Devil Hunter's leader if she had Kim Yong-woo's help.

“I will come back in 3 hours.”

I turned and walked away while Lee Ji-hye shouted urgently.

“Yes...? W-wait a minute! Captain-nim, you will really come back in 3 hours?”

*

Uljin, Gyeongsang Province.

It was the next place I headed to after leaving Gangnam.

I could fly there in just 30 minutes using the Wind Powder. It was thanks to my high magic power and agility.

‘I've come to the right place.’

I slowly came down from the sky.

I was accompanied by the mist type creature 'shade.' It looked like rain clouds were covering my entire body. I absolutely couldn't let my appearance be recognized.

There were round shaped buildings scattered around. Humans called it a nuclear power plant. A collection of vast amounts of energy. A place that held enormous power. A human technology that I had to give recognition to.

I laid my hands on the thick cement walls and felt something boiling up. It was artificial but it felt quite good. It was a source of power that made my mouth water. Lightning God felt it and started to actively move.

'I planned to touch it after a few years but it can't be helped.'

South Korean leaned heavily on the nuclear power plants. If too many power plants died out then humans would disappear. Of course, I didn't care how many humans would die but it would slow down the growth of the Awakened.

I had planned to eat it in the future. Over the next three years, humans would create 'new energy' from the core of the creatures. They would use it as the driving force to live without nuclear power plants.

A valuable replacement energy. The cores obtained from

creatures was due to the flow of magic power in the dungeon. If the creatures were killed outside the dungeon then cores would still drop. But the cores of such creatures were rubbish. The demons once spend a large amount of points to research it.

In any event...I had to move forward my original plan involving the nuclear power plants.

It was due to the event.

“Lightning God. Eat away.”

Lightning God popped out as soon as I said this. Its body instantly flew inside the power plant. It was only interested in the ‘source’ of the power.

Lightning God opened its mouth widely and ate the source.

A message window flashed.

-‘Lightning God’ has consumed a tremendous amount of power.

‘1GW’ will be added.

I frowned slightly.

‘The efficiency isn’t good.’

1 gigawatts. It meant that Lightning God could only be active for 1 more minute. Maybe because it was externally assimilated but the efficiency was the worst. But it was better than nothing.

Besides, there were still a few nuclear power plants remaining. There were a few more nuclear power plants in the Gyeongsang Province where I could obtain energy.

I wanted that taste again and moved.

After going to seven power plants in 2 hours, I managed to raise my original ‘16GW’ to ‘21GW.’ The efficiency was lowered every time the energy was devoured but I still managed to raise it. And I received the following achievements after eating the last power plant.

-A tolerable achievement!

A number of the country’s facilities have been destroyed. South Korea will now suffer from serious power shortages.

300,000pt will be given.

I nodded.

I had expected an achievement from the moment Lightning God started. It was nice to get points but they were useless right now...I needed power that would help me gain the lead in this crisis.

‘21 minutes.’

That was how long I could use Lightning God.

I would only call it when necessary but the duration had still increased. It would be difficult to get a steep rise in power even if I went to more power plants.

At this point, I needed to return. The dungeon barrier’s durability was steadily being carved away.

‘It is a bit hard if I only use Lightning God.’

I was confident in fighting without Lightning God. I needed to make sure it wasn’t detected the moment I used it. But I needed it.

This was the best I could do for now.

I murmured to myself and flew into the air again.

*

I looked up at Hashmal.

Pure white wings. Appearance full of majesty and dignity...an outwardly beautiful and flawless sight. But she was a Dominions Angel and ‘evangelist’ who carried the light.

Hashmal was tricky in my previous life. An angel who tormented the demons for 1 year and 6 months. The most formidable thing was her stunning recovery. In the end, Grand Duke Ariel needed to use her patented skill ‘Abyss Sword’ in order to defeat her.

‘I was laying low.’

At that time, I did not go into the battlefield. I just watched the demons fighting from a distance. I would use my own discretion about when to interfere...looking back, those were all excuses.

But at this moment, I was looking at Hashmal for a different reason.

Goose bumps. A holy power that made my skin crawl.

I immediately opened up Mind’s Eye.

Name: Hashmal
Occupation: Dominions Angel
Title: * Current Carrier of Light (Epic, Intelligence and Magic

Stats

Strength: 89

Intelligence: 87 (+6)

Agility: 87

Stamina: 83

Magic Power: 92 (+6)

Potential: (438+12/471)

Uniqueness: An angel that will spread light to the world.

Skill: Propagation of Light (Epic), Barrage of Light Spears (Epic), Thunder of Light (Epic)

[Relative Comparison]

Hashmal

Strength 89 Intelligence 93 Agility 87 Stamina 83 Magic 98
Potential (438+12/471)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 93 Intelligence 77 Agility 88 Stamina 86 Magic 96
Potential (392+48/500)

Incense of Valour, Water Droplets of Victory and Beads of passion gave me +3 stats but I was still slightly behind Hashmal.

Total stats were 450. Even if there was a limit when alone, that strength...an existence that could collapse the balance. She even had three epic grade skills. It was something that required at least 5 million points.

‘I won’t be a pitiful demon again like the first time.’

The number of creatures gathered here was almost ten thousand. Hashmal could defeat most of them but would become exhausted. It still wouldn’t be easy for the demons to win. There was a large number of angels assisting Hashmal.

I needed to make a decision that would do more damage. If Hashmal was weakened then she would be easier to handle.

“Observe the angels!”

“Help God’s messengers!”

The 500 Awakened charged forward. Their capabilities itself wasn't great but...it was a situation where numbers could give empowerment. A trickster suddenly appeared on the tightrope between Hashmal and the demons.

“Captain-nim. It won't turn out well if we don't scatter soon!”

Yoo Eun-hye said.

The momentum of 500 masked people appearing was good but that wouldn't last long.

“Don't leave my side. Just handle the incoming creatures.”

I had no thoughts of moving significantly.

I only had one intent.

My original purpose was to conceal myself among the Awakened. Abstain from using as much magic power as possible. No one should notice me. Seal everything else while using only one power.

“Turn them all to charcoal, Lightning God.”

Chiiiiik!

The emerged Lightning God asked.

Who?

I pointed my finger.

Kyaaaaaoh!

Lightning God cried out and started heading towards the demons and creatures.

Chapter 84-86: Scene Of Carnage

Transparent insect. An intermediate 1Lv creature that automatically turned transparent when it received the sunlight. It was the size of a child and wasn't very strong, but it was a different story if there were thousands of them. Vibrating its wings would confuse the enemy. And they pounced like a group of piranhas... the vibrations caused by thousands of wings was enough to cause a brain concussion and pain.

Now over one thousand insects were approaching the Awakened.

“Electricity!”

Kung!

Yoo Eun-hye took a stance like she was firing a gun and electricity shot out. She was showing a rare grade lightning skill. Many of the approaching transparent insects were swept away by the shock. Despite the fact that the insects were transparent, they couldn't fool the keen senses of the Awakened.

“Water Barrier!”

Lee Ji-hye erected a barrier that was 5m in width and 2m in height. It was a new skill she learnt after the humiliation with the king bee. It acted to block the vibrations emanating from the wings of the transparent insects.

All of the Awakened gathered here were at a decent level. The transparent insects were the weakest among intermediate creatures so the Awakened could deal with them.

“Captain-nim. Do we have to stay in this spot?”

Yoo Eun-hye wiped the sweat from her forehead after dealing with the nearby transparent insects. Edward was nearby smiling.

‘Good.’

I nodded as I watched them.

The combination of Yoo Eun-hye and Edward was good. The two of them had already handled 10 transparent insects alone. They would become some of the strongest Heroes in the future. It was quite interesting watching their growth.

“Captain-nim?”

Yoo Eun-hye blinked.

I replied with a flippant attitude.

“This fight is likely to be a long battle. We have to do it little by little.”

“Hu! To be honest, I’ll just be glad if I don’t die. By the way, the six winged angel is really terrific. It is the first time I’m seeing creatures look so pitiful.”

The demons and angels fighting.

It was an overwhelming sight. Hashmal was particularly overwhelming. She killed hundreds of creatures and was like an elephant stepping on ants.

The demons initially tried to handle Hashmal but changed routes and aimed at the large group of angels. Even with recovery, severing the limbs or completely destroying the heart and brains would make recovery impossible. Hashmal couldn’t take care of all the angels.

And...I used Lightning God on the demons. In fact, Lightning God devoured the random creatures that it encountered.

If this situation continued, the angels would be defeated. But I didn’t want such an obvious situation.

My plan. I sincerely wished for them to destroy each other.

The demons were perplexed as Lightning God appeared out of nowhere. They soon realized that Lightning God was a skill but couldn’t find the demon or angel using it. The Awakened didn’t even cross their minds. It was unthinkable that humans would be able to use such skills. Of course, I wasn’t a human.

‘Come back, Lightning God.’

This much was enough. Lightning God had only been active for 5 minutes but it gave a crack for the angels to counterattack. There was only a small amount of electric power so I would only take out Lightning God when needed. Lightning God that was in the shape of a huge dragon disappeared like it was a lie. And it curled up in my body waiting for the next occurrence.

‘M1, M2. Start.’

At that moment.

Yiing.....

Red lights turned on in the eyes of the auto-golems M1 and M2 who were waiting.

M1 and M2’s role was simple. I ordered them to automatically repel any attack on the dungeon barrier.

The two silver golems roamed the sky and showed considerable destructive power. The physical abilities alone were comparable to a high class creature. They couldn’t handle Hashmal but the two golems could easily deal with normal angels.

Swiik!

The angels were persistent. They systematically attacked M1 and M2. There were heavy winds every time an angel pulled their bow. The wings of the angels contained holy power and were very threatening to the golems.

But it was no use. The golems had a simple way of fighting. They would approach and grab the angel's wings with their hands. And then they would carefully rip the wings off.

“Aaack!”

An angel's wings was a collection of holy power. It would take a very long time to recover. Hashmal's recovery also wasn't effective on it. The angels who lost their wings would fall to the ground and become the prey of creatures.

“.....”

Hashmal drew a cross with one hand and a circle with the other. Then the angels attacking the outer wall stopped. They rushed away from M1 and M2.

A calm and excellent judgment. She correctly saw how M1 and M2 moved while dealing with multiple enemies. She had amazing concentration.

M1 and M2 performed exactly like the command they received. They paused after the barrier stopped being attacked.

Hashmal made a move at M1 and M2 after they stopped.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Soon the Thunder of Light was everywhere.

“Stupid fool. You should look at the demons first to be your opponents.”

Saman laughed.

Earl Saman. One of Grand Duke Upa's faction who was participating in the angel hunt.

“Demons attacking when the sun is up won't get any benefits... tsk tsk tsk.”

The sun raised the capabilities of the angels. This was common sense for demons. Nevertheless, this was an event and they were confident. The demons felt a lot of pressure to take action.

But Saman wasn't in a hurry. He was looking at the movements of the sun.

He turned his head and looked at his creatures. Unlike the other demons, Saman wasn't accompanied by a lot of demons.

Bugbear, vampire, werewolf king! Only three. But they were more reassuring than the thousands of intermediate creatures. They were creatures that exerted a stronger force in the moonlight and were the angels' natural enemies.

“Now it is evening. You have come to my world. Huhuhu!”

Saman scanned Hashmal.

The sun sank.

The world was locked in darkness. No, the whole of South Korea was dark. It became a deep night in minutes.

The glorious wings of the angels illuminated the surroundings. But their numbers were too small. Except for the 200 inside there dungeon, there were approximately 130 remaining.

It was the opposite of the creatures. There were still many around. Seven thousand. Three thousand had disappeared in half a day but the momentum was with them.

Hashmal had a slightly weary countenance. There was no change in expression but she didn't randomly make spears of light anymore like she did when the sun was up. It was a natural result after eliminating thousands of creatures alone.

Earl Saman and his three creatures started moving.

The bugbear was a type of black chimera. It was an accidentally born from a synthesis of an insect and dark bear. It was famous for being very brutal under the moonlight.

Vampire, werewolf king...no words were needed. Both were advanced 4Lv creatures. They were especially stronger at night. They were capable of causing devastation among general angels.

“Kuahaha! Stop the angels!”

Saman cracked the whip. He smiled as they rushed towards the angels.

The vampire changed into a bat and bit one of the angels. Blood flowed from the angel's neck. The angel that lost its blood trembled. The vampire's curse was the opposite of holy power. One bite meant the holy power's recovery wasn't effective.

Werewolf King.

He was a creature with the name of king and the fighting style was also exciting. He quickly jumped at the angels. The wings were ripped off and the angels could no longer live.

“.....”

Hashmal gazed at them and made hundreds of light spears. The hundreds of light spears headed to the vampire and werewolf king. However, the sun was gone and stamina depleted so it didn't have the same majesty as before. The speed and accuracy had fallen badly.

Many intermediate creatures died but the vampire and werewolf king weren't touched at all.

“You are just like a whore! My creatures will never die from attacks like that!”

Saman gave a huge laugh.

Hashmal just produced hundreds of light spears again. But this time they didn't move. Instead, the spears joined together.

Hashmal finished a 3m long trident. It was the first time she used a weapon in this fight. This meant the situation wasn't going well.

The eyes of the demons shone.

“Break Hashmal's neck.”

“This is our chance.”

The demons released their advanced creatures. It was expected that the intermediate grade ones wouldn't be able to do anything.

Saman frowned.

“These fools! But your creatures are no match!”

Saman wielded his whip and the bugbear moved more enthusiastically. He added a few more advanced creatures like the vampires and werewolf king. They particularly had a ‘natural enemy’ relationship with the angels.

The demons started a full scale offensive against Hashmal and the last Virtues Angel.

Hashmal frowned.

Paak!

She took care of dozens of wyverns but there was no end to the number of advanced creatures coming. Hashmal was gradually being pushed to the edge of a cliff. She was even vulnerable to the werewolf king.

“Kuahaha! I got it...!”

Hashmal was within easy reach of Saman.

Kyaoooooh!

Lightning God suddenly bit Saman. Saman and the bugbear disappeared in an instant.

I gave a small smile.

‘This is worth entering.’

I was standing with the Awakened in the middle of the battlefield.

Hashmal was approaching the limit but there were still hundreds of casualties, making it easy to catch a demon off-guard.

Thanks to Saman, Lightning God was able to eat.

-The demon hunt was successful. The effect of the title ‘Dungeon Hunter’ has created 1 residual stat point.

500,000pt will be given.

A reward for killing an earl. I was satisfied with getting an extra stat point.

There were other demons who were good targets but Lightning God ended up eating Saman.

At that time, Hashmal's gaze moved towards me. She stared at me.

‘She noticed.’

The owner of Lightning God was noticed. The question was whether the demons had noticed. I was helping Hashmal and the angels so it would be annoying for the future if the demons noticed.

I suppressed my maximum magic power but there was no way of knowing. I stared straight into Hashmal's eyes.

After a few seconds, Hashmal turned her head away again.

‘Go on?’

I didn't know the reason. But her eyes weren't hostile.

“Captain-nim. We should step back. It will be dangerous if we stay any later!”

Lee Ji-hye cried out from nearby.

The strong creatures were rushing towards Hashmal. But there were many creatures remaining. The intermediate creatures were tough opponents for the Awakened.

The bodies of the Awakened were exhausted. They were drinking potions to sustain themselves. The trolls and banshees were flooding the area. It was a situation where a single crack would mean losing their lives to a monster!

But...I shook my head.

“Endure.”

“We might die. Captain-nim, this absolutely isn’t a good plan. Once the angels are pushed back, the humans will be their next target!”

Lee Ji-hye stated. Hashmal and the angels were being pushed back little by little. They were clearly struggling in power.

But my answer didn’t change.

“Endure.”

“This...! Do you want them to self-destruct?”

“No.”

Lee Ji-hye wielded her staff with tight lips as she heard it.

I expressed my intention to participate.

I looked at the entrance of the dungeon.

And Lee Ji-hye, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward stayed behind me while I waited for the ‘moment.’

*

Chrisley clutched the Death Wand and said.

“We have to stop them. Our opponents are the angels and we will beat them with the power given to us.”

1,500 creatures were assembled on the 1st floor. Among them were a large number of advanced creatures.

And even if they were lacking power, they needed to desperately defend the dungeon. This was their last home. They pledged their lives to defend the Tree of Origin. Chrisley and all the dark elves were prepared.

However, Julliom was an exception. He opened his mouth with a very worried expression.

“Queen-nim. Please step back. The angels aren’t easy existences.”

After going through the treatment with the Dungeon Master, Chrisley had been appointed as ‘Queen’ of the dark elves. Julliom

and even Krasla would listen to her. But Chrisley just laughed awkwardly.

“Elder-nim. What do I have to fear when the lich and seven spartoi in the vicinity?” (Spartoi= grown from the body parts of a dragon)

“Queen-nim doesn’t know. How brutal and scary the angels are...!”

Julliom trembled.

Demon World. Julliom spent a long time there and had seen angels step out of dimensional gates a few times. They were existences that tried to destroy all life in the Demon World. Julliom had to make an appeal for his life every time.

Of course, the invasion from the heavens wasn’t frequent. It occurred once every several decades. But the Demon World received a huge blow every time.

In a nutshell, the weak people would only die. Julliom wanted to live near the world tree for this reason. He didn’t want to always live with the fear of dying.

On the other hand, Chrisley was young. She never felt fear towards the angels. So Julliom wanted to maintain that.

“Don’t worry. This degree isn’t enough to make my body cold.”

Chrisley tried to dispel his worries and laughed brightly. She had become increasingly more beautiful and now there were no dark elves who could match her beauty. Julliom's spirit briefly recovered.

Julliom who recovered his mental state said.

“...This old man will die to protect your life.”

“Huhu. That is reassuring.”

Kung!

Kwaang!

At that moment.

The dungeon shook. The angels had launched their attacks. Soon a large number of them would be coming through the entrance.

Chrisley gripped the Death Wand tightly.

“Get ready. The enemy is coming.”

Two hundred angels.

Four Principalities Angels.

One Powers Angel...

That was the number of angels entering the dungeon. The angels didn't seem affected by the darkness and marched into the dungeon without any hesitation. They were faced with the saber tigers.

Grrr!

There were dozens of saber tigers in the vicinity of the angels. The angels held weapons made of light and moved to the saber tigers that hastily retreated. They seemed encourage and followed.

But it wasn't easy. The angels kept their ranks. The angels were simple but not ignorant. They realized this was a trap.

Chrisley immediately introduced the lizardmen. The lizardmen were intermediate 2Lv creatures A frontal confrontation with the lizards.

Surup! Sururup!

Round wooden shields and scimitars. The angels wearing armour crashed into 50 lizardmen. It was very provocative behaviour.

It wasn't expected that the lizardmen could win compared to the

two hundred angels. It was for the commander to investigate the enemy's firepower.

The 50 lizardmen took 8 minutes to die. The lizardmen were handled by two angels! The efficiency was enough that the Principalities Angels and Powers Angel didn't have to come out. It seemed to be an objective indicator.

“It is more than I expected. The angels...”

The dungeon's crystal ball. Chrisley could see the circumstances in the dungeon thanks to that item. The force of the angels witnessed through the crystal ball was intense.

“But it is fortunate. There doesn't seem to be many high ranking angels.”

Julliom sighed with relief.

Chrisley asked with confusion.

“I heard that the hierarchy of the angels is diverse and complex. Is the difference that big?”

“Yes. The archangels have a special existence but otherwise there is a strict hierarchy. The Powers Angels are intermediate ranked like the dark elves. Virtues Angels and Dominions Angels can confront high class creatures alone. Climbing up the hierarchy...I have never seen the Thrones, Cherubs and Seraphims so I'm not

sure how strong they are.”

“Then there must be a Heavenly King.”

“That’s right. The Heavenly King is the master of heaven. Just like the Devil is the master of the Demon World. And it is possible for us to match the power of the Principalities and Powers Angels here.”

Tension was finally released from Julliom.

Chrisley continued looking through the crystal ball before saying.

“I will throw more food at them. It is the turn of the werewolves. All...prepare the ceremony.”

The lizardmen, werewolves and nagas greeted the angels and died. A complete extermination. Their blood was scattered all over the place and on the angels’ bodies.

The sun in the sky would naturally remove the blood from them. But the dungeon was dark so they didn’t have that luxury. In the end, the angels could only move while covered in blood. They were facing the dark bears and trolls when the ‘ceremony’ began.

The ceremonies of the dark elves were unique. At first, it was just words and actions. But after a while, it started to exert a real strength. The ceremonies were different for each tribe. A skill that

was difficult to describe. It was close to a transcendent will.

And Julliom knew a ceremony to ‘curse’ the opponents. It was ancient magic that used blood to weaken the opponents. The angels were already covered by the blood of the creatures so they couldn’t avoid it.

The dark elves gathered the resentment inside the corpses of the creatures. The dark elves’ bodies trembled from this sentiment.

A moment later, a saber tiger appeared with a dead angel in its mouth.

“Stick to the wings. The souls of the dead creatures will curse the angels.”

Julliom passed over a dagger. However, the dagger was so old the colour was dull. Her hand didn’t want to touch it but Chrisley received the cursed dagger. She took a deep breath and stabbed the wings of the angel on the floor.

Hiaaaah-

A strange moaning sound. The sound was heard from the mouth of the dead angel.

A wave of intense magic power that contained a curse was generated and rushed madly towards the demons.

The angels felt it and looked confused. Julliom who was watching through the crystal ball nodded.

“A success. The curse of pain.”

“...Then prepare to attack. We will drive out the enemies.”

So far the angels had received minimal damage.

Once it was confirmed that they were affected by the curse, the chances of victory became convincing. There was only a small number inside. There were many more outside. As many creatures as possible needed to be preserved.

At that moment, Chrisley staggered. Her legs seemed to have become tangled up.

“The souls are clamouring. Lean on me.”

This was the impact of the curse. More powerful opponents would cause a strong recoil. If Chrisley’s intelligence wasn’t over 100 then she would have fainted for a few days.

Julliom was startled and stretched out a hand.

“It is okay. There are those suffering outside this room...this is nothing.”

Chrisley solidly placed both feet on the ground and started to move.

*

‘Daytime.’

The evening passed. The moon gradually sunk and the reddish sunset appeared. Even so, Hashmal still hadn’t fallen. The creatures relentlessly poured out attacks but her gestures and facial expression showed she wasn’t disturbed.

‘Hashmal...it isn’t an empty name.’

Awesome. Honest admiration. In fact, Hashmal was more suitable for secondary roles than combat. She was different from the angel in my previous life who gained tremendous achievements in 1 year and 6 months.

So I tended to slightly ignore her. I thought she would reach the edge of the cliff and reveal her limits.

But now the situation was enough to make me praise her. Other than Hashmal, there were still 80 angels left. In the end, it wasn’t much different from Hashmal facing the demons alone.

Current Carrier of Light. She could use that light.

If I was in that spot. I imagined what would happen if that was me.

‘Half a day. At most a day.’

I knew myself well. I would need to show reckless bravery. In addition, I was weak in confrontations with many opponents. Given that limitation, it was an objective judgement.

But Hashmal’s momentum still wasn’t killed. The sun rose and her holy magic was being restored. It was like a sick person recovering.

Thanks to that, the situation transitioned to a lull phase.

The demons were gathering their advanced creatures for another offensive. It seemed like their stamina had also been depleted.

“This is hell right here.”

Yoo Eun-hye angrily said as she came to my side. Her once clean face was covered in blood and dirt. Too many things were happening to even think of cleaning it up.

But the problem didn’t end there.

Currently, the members of his raid group and the surviving

Awakened were in the centre of the battlefield.

They were glad that the lull meant the frequency of attacks lowered. They were able to rest among the dead bodies of the creatures...

“Don’t relax.’

“Hu! I’m not planning to relax. My head is still pounding from the transparent insects.

Yoo Eun-hye rubbed her forehead.

I turned away and scanned the remaining Awakened.

From my point of view, the Awakened were no different from newborn children. They were still learning about the battlefield. But they would certainly ‘grow’ the longer they were on the battlefield.

Initially they were scared by all the blood running but now they were numb to it. They were sad about their colleagues dying but didn’t linger over it. It made them realize their survival instinct.

A moment to rest. The faces of the Awakened were all exhausted. Even so, their eyes were alive. They were still wary of their surroundings.

Of course, some wanted to flee. There were already 40 people who deserted. But most of them had crossed the river of no return. As soon as they broke away from the ranks, more than half of them was slain.

But this was a blessing. Seeing the situation of those who fled would inspire them more. There was no way to get away from here except for victory.

“Captain-nim. Do you hear that sound?”

Yoo Eun-hye who was applying a potion to her injuries suddenly heard a strange sound.

The sound was coming from the direction of the dungeon.

“There are more angels? But why are they coming out from the dungeon? No, rather...why are they in that state?”

Yoo Eun-hye discovered the source of the sound.

Dozens of angels were coming out from the dungeon entrance.

All the Awakened, angels and even the demons had wide eyes.

They were the angels who attacked the inside of the dungeon. But they were in a bad state. Some had their wings ripped to shreds and couldn't fly while others had their organs showing.

‘They are coming.’

The corners of my mouth went up slightly.

Their appearance made it obvious that Chrisley was successful. And following behind the angels were a number of creatures.

Kung!

Kuuong!

The first was an advanced golem. And there were the imposing figures of the lich and saber tigers.

The demons made an expression like they realized something. There hadn’t been any news about the creatures and owner of this dungeon. If it was just the creatures then they could safely ignore it. However, the numbers were considerable. A single force with an absolutely outstanding level.

But the Dungeon Master didn’t seem to be visible. A competitor, an enemy? The two had similar meaning but the situation might change depending on which word it was.

However, they hadn’t showed themselves in the past day.

The lull was over as angels, demons and humans tensed up.

In particular, the Awakened had really tense shoulders. They cursed the fact that more creatures emerged from the dungeon.

Yoo Eun-hye had the courage to confess something after the atmosphere changed.

“Captain-nim. If I live through this then I will boldly kiss you.”

“There is no need.”

*

A shocking appearance.

A number of creatures was blocking the entrance to the dungeon.

All the demons and angels intently watched the dungeon. It was a silent battlefield as the attacks stopped. An extension of the war. There were all types of speculation running through their heads so there was silence.

In particular, the demons were really interested. The person who owned so many creatures of high quality. A Duke or Grand Duke? If might account for why they didn't move from the start.

However...the Dungeon Master's identity was shrouded in a veil. Only the creatures were revealed. The demons couldn't move

easily without knowing what faction the Dungeon Master belonged to. If they made one wrong move then they could be involved in a hornet's nest.

There was a possibility this was the dungeon a high ranking demon. So they watched each other while asking 'you?' with their eyes.

Of course, they couldn't come to a conclusion. Everything was just a guess. They could guess the intentions if the creatures acted but...

For now, everything was just still.

The creatures stayed at the entrance of the dungeon and didn't move even one step. It was like they wouldn't move as long the dungeon wasn't touched.

In fact, the silver golems M1 and M2 only acted to repel the angels attacking the barrier. They stopped moving after the barrier wasn't attacked anymore.

What to do?

The demons had attacked Hashmal without hesitation. Their interests aligned with 'angel hunting' so they easily moved.

But...they couldn't read the intent of the Dungeon Master. Maybe they appeared at the last minute to watch the show. But then the

daylight fully arrived. They had no time to waste.

They couldn't just stand there. In this situation, the demons had to come out. If they didn't move...Hashmal would recover her divine power. A long day of attacking the angels would repeat again. There was also a chance that the dungeon's creatures would move. It would be a problem if they decided the demons were competitors for hunting the angels.

The demons would have to watch their backs. Half a day ago, the demon 'Saman' had been fried by electricity.

"I don't know which faction you belong to but come out! If you don't come out then I will tear down your dungeon!"

Marquis Anastasia yelled. A demon who was supported by Pandemonium. A demon who was impossible to push back even if three demons joined their strengths. He would be the first one out to cut the enemy. She knew that Pandemonium wasn't the owner of this dungeon.

"Stop playing. Did you think you would get away with such an obvious move?"

Marquis Dellat said in a scathing tone.

The demons gathered here didn't trust each other. Especially between two factions...that's just the way it was.

“It isn’t a trick! I will tear down the foundation.”

“Really? Haha! Okay. Then try attacking the dungeon. I will believe the sincerity of your words then.”

Taking responsibility for her words. But Anastasia had a red face. She said she would crush it but it was just a threat. It was to put pressure on the demon who was the owner of the dungeon.

Dellat raised his right hand with a smile.

“Waste your time. And continue to struggle. I will take Hashmal’s head.”

The hand was raised to order a march. The creatures ran towards Hashmal once again.

It was a wise choice. Dellat had calmly analyzed the battlefield. The demons had hesitated.

However, the numbers were small. Hashmal was strong and would pressure them. Her recovery needed to be thwarted. There was an important change in the demons’ movements. They ignored the dungeon and started attacking.

On the other hand...there were those who still had doubts.

Chwack!

Orc shamans chanted spells at death knights. A knight on horseback attacked Dellat.

Chiing!

“What are you doing?”

Dellat scowled as he fended off the attacks. The owner of the death knight was Anastasia.

“...It is suspicious. This dungeon, does it belong to your faction? Are you trying to monopolize the points?”

“You bitch! You finally went crazy!”

Angry words popped out of Dellat’s mouth.

It was strange that they were attacking each other. In this situation, they shouldn’t be at each other’s throats. The common enemy, ‘Hashmal’ and the angels were in front of them. It was natural for the demons to be angry. The situation had become more complicated.....

Madness entered Dellat’s eyes.

“I will kill you. I will tear this bitch apart!”

That was the starting point.

Small doubts had brought about a division. The main power against the angels was pulled out. Some demons were fighting among themselves. The creatures on the battlefield became deeply entwined.

At that moment.

“Help the angels!”

“Wipe out the creatures!”

Now the Awakened starting moving.

I smirked.

It was a plan I hastily thought of.

Taking advantage of the bad blood among the factions. They had barely united in the fact of the common enemy that was the angels. This superficial connection was easily broken with a little bit of confusion.

The main part of this plan was the number of creatures Chrisley had left. Fortunately, she had achieved a huge victory judging by the appearance of the angels. Many creatures. It was likely that

they would lose some power in this event. An itch behind them. In other words, a needle.

It was natural that doubts would spring up among the demons.

Thirteen. No, there were only twelve demons left. Anastasia was a fish that had been caught.

Even the Awakened...this was a true scene of carnage.

‘Wonderful.’

I praised Chrisley who wasn’t here. Frankly, even half being left would be a success. I never thought only one third would be lost. Chrisley’s role was substantial. Confusion was created thanks to her.

Now there were only a few hundred Awakened so they wouldn’t be a big help against the creatures. It was at least enough to give Hashmal and the angels time to recover.

“We have only one thing to do. Endure. There is no need for anything else!”

My cry entered the ears of the Awakened.

Fighting and enduring were completely different things. They were capable of doing it.

And Hashmal was looking down at me with strange eyes.

The sun was shining. My original group of 500 had decreased by more than half. Sink or swim. It felt like throwing eggs at a rock.

I was wearing a rare sword instead of Wrath. I raised my sword to the sky and shouted.

“We are the last hopes of our country. If the angels die then our hometowns, parents, relatives and friends will be trampled on! Defend it!”

It was funny that I was discussing South Korea’s future. But it was necessary. Small flames were ignited in the Awakened.

The Awakened needed to hold on for as long as possible. In addition, it was risky for Lee Ji-hye, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward. I couldn’t lose them in a place like this. My objective was to make them grow in this battle, not die.

Of course, I was there to ensure their safety. However, then it was highly likely that my identity would be discovered. That was the worst case scenario.

“Dammit. I’ll do it. Even if I can’t keep it!”

“Aaaah!”

The Awakened were filled with energy at my words. Hope. It was indeed a good word.

The injured Awakened with legs barely attached due to potions or deep face wounds also moved. They dedicated themselves to fighting the wicked creatures.

Their spirits were already lost. Most of their fighting spirit was exhausted after a day and a half. They moved around the clock and had surpassed their limits. It was a situation where they could barely eat or drink. Just standing deserved praise.

On the surface, I also appeared like I was struggling.

Swiiing!

Kwang!

A huge spear of holy power could be seen from the ground.

‘That’s great.’

I lightly nodded.

Hashmal. A cold light in those gold eyes that wanted to destroy the enemies.

She finally finished charging.

The second round had no earnestly started.

It was too late by the time the demons realized something was strange. There were less than five thousand creatures remaining and many were advanced grade.

The disputes between the twelve demons stopped.

Hashmal who finished charging was powerful. A much stronger feeling than when I first saw her. There was a tacit agreement among the demons for a truce.

But it was too late.

Until now, they just viewed it as a way to make points. Hunting angels was the best way to gain a large number.

If they were too weak? Crash.

The demons here already knew it to some extent. They panicked and trembled as the attack headed towards them.

Marquis Dellat and Anastasia were also aware of this. They both had a similar number of creatures and were cursing each other. They had been diverted from realizing that Hashmal was the most

important thing.

“Bastard!”

“Bitch!”

The two were in a miserable condition as they cursed. Their entire bodies were covered with wounds. Cold, insane eyes. Loose hair that was reminiscent of a ‘madman.’

Anyway, the division among them had stopped.

All the demons had one common thought.

“This won’t drag out much longer.”

“The game will end while the sun is still up.”

A short term battle!

It wasn’t good to drag time out longer.

A clash of power.

As the sun rose higher, the decisive time in the battle was approaching.

Chapter 87-89: Hashmal

“Master is stupid. Master is a jerk! Hiing...”

The dungeon’s 15th floor.

Yihi was sitting down and crying.

After being deprived of all rights, Yihi was only allowed to stay in one place. Her power was used to take care of the Tree of Origin. Yihi was sulking in this spot. She wanted to go to the original garden she created with the bees. But the circumstances meant she was afraid to move her feet.

“Bees...can’t die. Yihi has taken good care of them all this time. Give them snacks. It won’t be a lot of bother.”

Yihi was kneeling and praying with hands joined together.

Help the bees live! She asked deep in her heart but she had gained the displeasure of the Dungeon Master. She hated that more than the death of the bees. Therefore Yihi didn’t move during her ‘punishment.’

In the end, all Yihi could do was pray.

“Tree-nim. Tree of Origin. Please take good care of Yihi’s bees.”

She opened her eyes and glanced at the Tree of Origin. Big. The bud had already grown to 5 metres.

This was the first time Yihi had seen something as rare as the Tree of Origin. However, the vitality in it was more than she could imagine.

‘This tree can easily achieve Yihi’s wish.’

In fact, she knew she was just clutching at straws.

“By the way, what did Tree-nim eat to become so tall?”

Yihi blinked and asked.

Yihi had seen the Tree of Origin double its size in just one day. She praised the frightening growth. Naturally there wasn’t an answer.

Yihi grumpily puffed up her cheeks. And she closed her eyes again to pray.

Cheolbudok!

At that moment, a sound of something falling was heard. Yihi was deprived of all rights to the Dungeon Core so she couldn’t know if someone had broken in. Yihi turned her head and looked at the source of the sound.

“Eh...what? Angel?”

An angel with one wing cut off was face down on the ground. The body was such a wreck that even Yihi frowned.

“An angel shouldn’t be here...”

But the terrible appearance caused Yihi to press gently against the both sides of the temple.

Yihi was temporarily deprived of all rights so she didn’t even know the attack of the angels had started. The information of an ‘enemy attack’ never came to her. She didn’t have any freedom to act. Yihi could only move between here and the top floor. Thus she was ignorant about the situation.

An angel had suddenly appeared on the 15th floor so it was natural for her to panic. The definition of a good or evil fairy was ambiguous. There was a thin line between good and bad. Angel, demon, or human was all the same to a fairy. Of course, they were aware that they were subordinates to a demon. So it was difficult.

‘Why did an angel appear here?’

Usually intelligence would make them realize that the angel was an ‘enemy.’ But Yihi had completely different thoughts.

“Ah! Tree-nim sent it to me!”

Yihi looked back at the Tree of Origin. Yihi was convinced this was the answer to her pray to take care of the bees.

“But Tree of Origin-nim. Yihi doesn’t think it is good when looking at the state of the angel. Can it really take care of the bees?”

The angel was in a serious state. Just before death. He didn’t seem like he could take care of anything.

Yihi laid her hands on both sides of the temple and hummed ‘Umm~.’

“Right now Yihi can’t even buy a potion. Master has deprived Yihi of all rights. I can’t do anything to treat the angel~.”

She sighed with pity.

Yihi looked around to see if there were any other angels wandering nearby. At the same time, the angel’s eyes flashed open.

“Origin...summoned...heok!”

“Aish, you surprised me.”

Yihi hastily retreated a step from the surprise.

“What? If you are alive then you should say so. Did you want to surprise Yihi?”

The angel was badly injured but Yihi still spoke sarcastically. Whether she believed it or not, the dying angel continued talking until the end.

“Huge...warp...heok! Causality and destruction...decision...dispatched to Demon World...someone intervened...code changed...the source of the summoning was this...please...!”

“What is he saying?”

Yihi blinked.

She had no way of knowing what the angel was talking about. The source of the summoning.

Fairies were simple. They weren't deliberately insolent. But the angel passed away after saying such cryptic words.

Yihi stared at the Tree of Origin and gave her honest feedback.

“Tree-nim. Tree of Origin. I think you sent me a crazy angel.”

*

It was evening.

The boring war of attrition ended and the full scale combat started. The smell of burning corpses filled the mountain. The destruction of the surrounding terrain was already absurd. It occurred over a few kilometres.

And...today the demons were slowly killing off the angels. There were a great number of advanced creatures.

“We will move back. Be careful not to get involved.”

I knew that today would be a short term battle. Lee Ji-hye asked me.

“It is evening so shouldn’t we help?”

She had realized yesterday that the angels were weakened in the evening. This was the moment when the angels most needed help.

But my decision was firm.

“We are not in a state to help them right now.”

Despite giving them hope and strength, the Awakened were at

their limits. The Awakened had been tense for two days. They had been forced to fight for two days so the hidden fatigue would explode.

Lee Ji-hye also knew this fact. Lee Ji-hye bit her dry lips before stepping back.

There were just over 100 people remaining. And they started to escape from the centre of the battlefield. The demons and creatures showed no interest in the Awakened. They were busy focusing on Hashmal.

I backed away from the centre and waited.

The demons were starting to weaken. Hashmal was declining! They had been fighting for a few hours. There were shrieks as they desperately struggled...meanwhile, I mentally connected to M1 and M2 and gave them a command.

‘M1, M2. Stampede.’

A skill that dramatically increase physical abilities while decreasing the life span. Stampede (U)!

A red light burned in the eyes of the paused M1 and M2.

I knew Hashmal's weakness. She was defined by her highly stubborn nature. Good was on one side of the line and evil on the other.

This nature was revealed in my previous life. That nature meant Hashmal would continue to fight the demons, even if it led to her death. If she wasn't like this then the war against the demons would last for two more years. This meant...she forgot everything outside of the 'enemy.'

I had planted the idea that M1 and M2 would only stay at the outer walls of the dungeon. After Hashmal and the angels stopped their attacks, M1 and M2 hadn't moved. Would Hashmal be able to cope if such a presence moved unexpectedly?

"Falling! Get her!"

"The angel is tired and tonight I will obtain her head."

Hashmal fell a little bit. The light of the holy power in her wings were dwindling. She couldn't easily fly in the sky. She resisted but it was only a matter of time.

The demons had excited smiles on their faces. 5,000,000pt. It would make them stand superior to others. If they caught an angel then the demon would be reborn as a powerhouse in their faction.

Still, it wasn't easy. Hashmal was a Dominions Angel and her standard of 'exhaustion' was different from common angels. She flew very low and put up a last ditch effort against the demons and creatures.

“Annoying bitch...!”

The demons clicked their tongues at her persistence. She still hadn't completely fallen. Hashmal knew it would be more dangerous if she fell to the ground. There were all types of creatures waiting on the ground for her.

But, there was only one place. A cramped space away from the creatures. The place of the Awakened.

Hashmal's eyes were conflicted as she tried to make a decision.

The cause of that was me.

‘Master of Lightning God. Maybe I was a demon.’

She might have noticed. There was no reason for her not to help the human Awakened. She could give them blessings or recovery. She didn't do such a thing so there was only one corner left.

‘Come, greet me before you face death.’

Now Hashmal stood at the crossroads of choice.

Six wings. They contained a large amount of holy power and allowed her to fly. If Hashmal conserved the power by fighting on the ground then she could bring down more enemies. But she couldn't come down to the ground if I was a demon.

It was confusing. A demon who used lightning attacks taking on the appearance of a human to help them. It was beyond expectations.

Hashmal couldn't determine what I was. Hashmal had been in the air when she first noticed me.

But she hadn't yet noticed...

Hashmal moved towards me and I quietly smiled.

"Captain-nim. The angel is coming here?"

Yoo Eun-hye trembled and made a fuss. Edward who was stuck like a gum behind her was also surprised. No, it was all of the Awakened who survived.

"Ah!"

Hashmal was almost on the ground when she was hit by a huge fireball. Yoo Eun-hye sighed with pity.

A sudden attack. Hashmal staggered and dropped.

I jumped into the air. And caught the falling Hashmal.

1 second was a very short amount of time. Hashmal's gold eyes turned towards me. Her eyes were asking 'are you a friend or enemy?' but I just responded with a shallow smile. And Hashmal's hard eyes relaxed a little bit.

“Captain-nim!” Please be careful!”

It was at that moment. Yoo Eun-hye shouted.

Chwack!

Chwaruruk!

M1 and M2 were stampeding through the creatures and were quickly approaching. When I purchased them at the Demon World Auction, they were just two square iron plates. The demons didn't know of the existence of these two creatures. The physical abilities were comparable to a high class creature. None of the creatures here were their opponents after they used 'Stampede.'

Hashmal was also at a loss. M1 and M2 had stayed at the dungeon's outer walls so it was unexpected that they would appear here. That confusion occurred in the worst moment.

The two golems wearing silver armour raised their bastard swords.

‘Stab.’

Puok!

“Ah...!”

Hashmal's death throes. I was also stabbed. My abdomen was stained with blood but I didn't mind at all.

‘Cut.’

Followed by...M1 and M2 slicing of Hashmal's wings. An angel's wings were their source of strength. And defense. Hashmal was a Dominions Angel and her strength was very different. Her wings were capable of withstanding all types of attacks.

But there was a flood of attacks from the stampeding M1 and M2. Six wings. A total of three pairs of wings were cut off at once.

“Aaack!”

Hashmal lost consciousness in my arms from the shock.

Kkulleok!

Blood poured down.

It was a play I executed to hide but I wasn't feeling so good.

“Captain-nim!”

Yoo Eun-hye, Lee Ji-hye and the other group members headed towards me. I raised my hand and restrained them.

“Leave the battlefield. The angels will soon be wiped out...I don’t know what direction the creatures will go. Retreat and prepare for attacks.”

There wasn’t a lot of creatures remaining. Around 3,000. M1, M2 and the creatures from my dungeon were a threat but there was no guarantee the demons would leave.

It was easy to see what would happen after the rest of the angels were hunted. The hungry demons would order their creatures to ravage the surrounding area. Preparations were needed.

South Korea was already in a miserable condition. They would be lost against an influx of foreign creatures. There would be a large number of deaths even if I sent Krasla. It would be an uphill battle to block them.

Flop!

Hashmal was knocked to the ground. Many demons and creatures desperately aimed for the fallen Hashmal but M1 and M2 easily blocked them. And the lich approached and placed Hashmal and I on his shoulder.

“Where are you taking Captain-nim?”

Fire burned in Yoo Eun-hye’s eyes as she ran forward with her lightning sword. However, the lich was very high among the advanced creatures. No matter how strong Yoo Eun-hye was, she wasn’t a match right now.

Peok!

The lich hit Yoo Eun-hye lightly in the stomach with her staff and she collapsed. Edward hastily moved and grabbed Yoo Eun-hye.

“Edward! Let go of me! We can’t let them leave with Captain-nim!”

Yoo Eun-hye twisted her body like a wild colt. But Lee Ji-hye and the other crew members forced her back. This was the last chance for them to escape. If they didn’t leave now, all of them would be annihilated. It was very unfortunate but...it was necessary to make levelheaded judgements.

The female angel leader had her wings torn off. The defeat of the angels was confirmed. Now the only thing left was to prepare for the aftermath quickly. Yoo Eun-hye wasn’t weak but there was nothing she could do alone. In the end, the Awakened quickly retreated.

The lich moved in the direction of the dungeon.

“Rotting lich! Give Hashmal to me!”

“You slippery bastard! Don’t snatch up our prey at the last minute!”

The demons weren’t just quietly watching.

The advanced golems supported the lich. In the meantime, the lich said.

“Remainder...angels...take care of them. Our Dungeon Master only wants Hashmal.”

At first, it seemed like the voice was hoarse due to screaming. The torn voice of the lich entered the ears of the demons. The lich became more powerful in a place filled with corpses.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

He waved his staff and used the ‘Corpse Explosion’ skill. The ground shook.

“Hunt all the angels...then get lost! Our Dungeon Master...you are not welcome in front of the dungeon.”

Dellat came charging out.

“I don’t know who the Dungeon Master here is but they just made a big mistake! Grand Duke Pandemonium will never tolerate this!”

“Kuhuhu...if you wage an all-out war...’we’ will not stand still. But...I don’t recommend it...”

An powerful and unknown mystery. The demons couldn’t move until they had investigated the Dungeon Master of South Korea.

If would be no good if they started a war between factions. It would just benefit the other two Grand Dukes. It hadn’t even been 3 years. The Grand Dukes couldn’t easily move unless it would give them an obvious advantage.

“This guy...!”

Marquis Dellat’s body trembled.

He had succeeded in hunting a Virtues Angel and earned 1 million points. However, he didn’t want to miss the big fish that was right in front of him.

He wanted to kill Hashmal as quickly as possible only for his prey to be yanked away. Hashmal’s stamina and holy power was reduced but the most important moment was the ‘last hit.’ An error in calculation.

The lich began to move. The golem escorted him and they succeeded in entering the dungeon.

I poured a potion on my wound immediately after entering the dungeon. Air bubbles rapidly occurred around the wound. I was dizzy for a moment from blood loss before the Heart of the Hell Monarch refilled it.

‘Troublesome.’

Tsk. I clicked my tongue.

This had been the best method to enter the dungeon without any suspicions. The dungeon would be monitored by the demons for a while. I needed a natural method to enter here.

“Congratulations on a successful return.”

Chrisley was waiting on one knee. I smiled at her and said.

“Chrisley. Your contribution was big.”

While I was outside, Chrisley had blocked the angels inside the dungeon. She was very successful. Of the 1,500 creatures, 600~700 were still remaining. That was enough to have an influence on the demons. If it wasn’t for that, there might have been a few more conflicts.

“No...My Dungeon Master. I missed one angel. I confirmed that he died in front of the Tree of Origin on the 15th floor but it is still my fault.”

Chrisley was honest. This honesty was an advantage. I had to give credit to Chrisley for telling me the truth without trying to hide it. Due to the ceremony, Chrisley regarded me as a companion of the soul. She willingly told me her sins first.

I shook my head.

“You missed one person but it is meaningless if they die before reaching the top floor. Rather...I want to give you a reward. So what is your wish?”

Chrisley’s expression suddenly became serious. She carefully opened her mouth.

“My Dungeon Master. Could you increase the number of dark elves?”

I would have liked Chrisley to ask for something for herself, but it was difficult due to her nature.

‘The number of dark elves.’

I touched my jaw.

Their numbers had certainly been reduced due to several battles. Now there were only 30 dark elves remaining. I needed to increase that number to take care of the Tree of Origin.

“I will buy 150 healthy dark elves.”

“I-I don’t need so much.”

Chrisley panicked. She hurriedly denied it. She thought that adding 150 dark elves just for her was too much. But I needed to compensate Chrisley’s efforts.

“Just think of this as a reward for everything so far. Apart from the contributions, you have made some good recommendations. I will fully compensate you.”

I would never have said such things in my previous life. But things were different now. I realized that there was a limit to acting alone and I should give generous rewards.

“Then...”

Chrisley contemplated for a moment before recommending several creatures. She judged objectively and told details about their contribution. They would be rewarded as well. Thanks to that, the compensation didn’t take that long.

“Thoroughly defend the entrance and watch the movements of the demons. Report to me if there is any unusual behaviour.”

I turned my body and walked away.

The lich with Hashmal on his shoulders followed me.

*

“Child. Light is everywhere. And you will guide the light. Never be corrupted by darkness. Your role is to cleanse the darkness and conceive the light.”

Angels were born from eggs. After Hashmal broke the egg, the Heavenly King said that to her.

Intermediate hierarchy. Like most of those in the higher positions, a Dominions Angel had a great responsibility from birth. They tirelessly trained in their skills. Holy power was shared but the way they used it was up to them.

Sometimes the other angels would tell extremely sweet stories of the Middle World. She wanted to see it for herself one day but reality wasn't easy.

Hashmal was given tough missions. General angels were capable and most of the missions were related to the Demon World. A place where it was impossible to feel dreams, hopes and other sweet feelings...

She traveled through the dimensional gate to the Demon World several times. And every time she came back, it felt like something important had been worn down in her. The demons were sworn enemies and the Demon World a place that she needed to subjugate.

Hashmal had great performances as a Dominions Angel.

“The multi-dimensional causality was destroyed. But the massive destruction is from the Demon World. You will lead the angels to investigate.”

After receiving orders from the Heavenly King, Hashmal headed to the dimensional gate with troops. But...something happened and the code was changed to an unknown place. It wasn't the Demon World. It didn't look like the Middle World.

‘A different dimension altogether. But what is this huge source of magic power that I can feel nearby?’

She was at a loss for the first time in her life. The place felt both comforting and impure. She needed to be closer to confirm it.

‘A demon's work.’

She started to destroy the dungeon. But the barrier around the exterior wall was hard. It wasn't easy to break despite the holy power of a Dominions Angel and several hundred angels. She

became even more curious about the identity of this place.

However, she couldn't destroy the dungeon. A number of demons and creatures had showed up. The demons were doing something here. She couldn't learn anything more.

She intuitively felt that it wouldn't be easy but Hashmal moved. She killed and killed.

Over two days, she slayed thousands of creatures. And she had fallen into someone's arms after her divine power was exhausted... her wings lost.

“Ah!”

She jumped up. Sweat flowed down.

Nightmare?

She touched her back.

‘Nothing.’

The wings...none.

It wasn't a dream. The awful reality.

Her wings were the source of holy power so the loss meant it might take decades to recover. The sword stab wound was neat and someone had taken care of it.

She couldn't easily organize her thoughts. It was obvious she had lost consciousness from the shock of losing her wings. It didn't make sense that she survived the demons and creatures. Once her flesh was dead, her soul would enter the cycle of reincarnation.

This place?

She wiped her sweat and looked around.

A fluffy bed. A cool breeze. A strange place like an underground tunnel.

A man sitting in a wooden chair and reading a book...

The man closed the book and laughed coolly.

“Should we call each other acquaintances now? Anyway, it is delightful to see you again.”

Hashmal's expression was disconcerted. He currently wasn't wearing a mask but she could identify him from the distinctive scent of magic power.

“.....”

But she couldn't easily open her mouth. I guessed the reason and shrugged.

“Can you not use the communication of the angels if you don't have your wings?”

The angels' wings weren't just for holy power. The angels could use it to guess their will and didn't need to speak important dialog. A type of telepathy...Hashmal lost her wings and couldn't use it.

“Your identity.”

Hashmal realized her mistake and said in a small voice. There were no signs of panic. A Dominions Angel wouldn't panic at something like this.

A sweet tone. The voice of an angel was beautiful enough to be compared to a 'siren.' A creature that used singing to lure sailors. But it was worth comparing to a siren. In particular, Hashmal's clear and cold voice caused the ears to naturally focus on it.

There were rumours that some high ranking demons would cut off the wings of angels and keep them in cages in the Demon World. After eliminating their pride, they would make the angels sing all day. They had an extremely shortened lifespan and only lasted 1 year.

I thought it was just a hobby for nobles but finally understood

after hearing Hashmal's voice.

“What about it?”

“It is a very unpleasant magic power. This is probably a big dungeon...are you a demon?”

A strong enmity. She had been dubious when I was with the Awakened but the dungeon convinced her I was a demon.

“You could say that.”

Hashmal's frown deepened.

“It doesn't matter. What do you want to do? Deception and cutting off all my wings...I don't know the reason for such a play.”

A little surprised. I had mixed in among the Awakened. Attacking the demons and pretending to help the angels. M1 and M2 quickly moved at the right moment.

‘An operation that turned out well.’

I have several anxieties. I wasn't sure Hashmal would be convinced I was a human and head of the Awakened or if the demons would let Hashmal enter the dungeon. My answer was immediately discarded after I thought it. My nature was like this in the first place.

“Hashmal. It is simple. I am not a normal demon who appeared on this planet.”

It wasn't a difficult question so I gave a light answer. Hashmal's questions only increased.

“You are not a normal demon?”

“You have questions? But it is unfair if I am the only one answering. How about we alternate between asking questions?”

“I don't compromise with demons.”

I clicked my tongue. Indeed, a stubborn angel. It was the way she was raised. It was the same for most demons. I was born weak on the battlefield. But there was some hostility to our natural enemies.

‘I guess persuasion is useless.’

I looked down at the book in my hand. The book contained valuable information about how to convince the opponent. It was a weak area for me. The problem was that Hashmal wasn't an easy opponent to persuade. She would deny everything I tried.

“Hashmal. From here onwards, you won't have a place. Isn't that right?”

“.....”

Hashmal didn't confirm or deny it.

She traveled through the dimensional gate and appeared in a place different from the Demon World. She was initially puzzled but sensed impure magic power from the dungeon and attacked. And now Hashmal was in the midst of that impurity.

“The reason why the demons are here...do you know?”

I could guess based on past experience. But it was closer to a certainty than a guess. The devil had made the earth an 'arena' for a large scale invasion. This was a golden chance for the angels to take care of 4 Grand Dukes simultaneously. But they didn't. Only a scouting party was sent. The schedule was moved up but Hashmal was still a scout. She was likely unaware of all this information.

Hashmal couldn't reply to my mocking words.

“That's right. You don't know anything. You exist solely to be sacrificed by the higher ups. And you couldn't even do that properly. It is truly laughable.”

“Sophistry.”

“It isn't sophistry but the truth. You would have seen it when

you first appeared through the dimensional gate. High and solid structures that even the dwarves can't imitate! This isn't the Middle World, Demon World or Heaven. This place...an entirely different dimension. And you would have seen something else. The numerous demons and creatures gathered in another dimension."

"Interfering in other dimensions is a taboo. The heavens will punish the bad ones gathered together."

"Group of bad people...then Hashmal. I'll tell you one truth. The demons want to destroy the humans and this planet. Ariel, Upa, Pandemonium and Okullos. All the Grand Dukes of the Demon World and their factions have traveled here. And I am the only one hoping the humans don't perish. Rather, I am helping the humans deal with the demons."

The possibility of Hashmal returning to heaven was close to 0. It was easy for me to tell her this.

"So you are not a normal demon? Different from other demons? Truly funny. A demon is a demon."

"What is the definition of a demon?"

"Unpleasant magic power. A dark existence. Such existences are called demons."

"Haha! Demons are certainly accustomed to the darkness. But Hashmal. If you report on the features then right now, you are not

an angel. At least I've never heard of an angel who lost their wings."

"It isn't lost. You removed them."

"Then do you think you are equal to others? Having no wings means you don't have access to holy magic and you are only a little stronger than humans. No, you are just like a human."

"You are glossing over the truth. Don't you just want to show off that you have me? I know what demons consider a hobby. Kill!"

I felt a firm commitment.

My brows furrowed. Once again, this method didn't suit me. It did not fit me at all.

I spoke bluntly.

"Join me."

"I have already said it. I don't compromise with demons...!"

"Hu! You will soon realize the benefits of leaving the heavens."

I said after sighing.

“All the Grand Dukes of the Demon World are gathered here. And I’m trying to prove my existence in an entirely different way from them. This means going against them. Should you really be hostile to me if you want to benefit the heavens?”

“Are you saying that complying with a demon is a good thing?”

“All Grand Dukes and their aides are gathered in this dimension. You will make a significant contribution if you sweep up all these demons.”

Hashmal’s eyes turned towards me.

She pondered on the reason why the Grand Dukes were gathered here. It was true that her mission was to get rid of the demons on this planet.

“In the first place...why are the Grand Dukes gathered here? What is the reason why they want to slaughter the demons in this dimension?”

“The seat of the Devil has been vacant for a long time. It is time to fill that seat. The conditions are very simple. Destroy the most humans and territory.”

“The seat of the Devil...”

‘God’ had told a story about Death Bringer. But she didn’t believe it.

“You might think this is a prank or that I am desperate. In the Demon World, there has been a war over the seat of the Devil for far too long. You need to come to a conclusion.”

I stared into Hashmal's eyes.

Golden eyes. There were some waves occurring in the calm lake.

I slowly opened my mouth.

“Hashmal. I am walking alone. I am not affiliated with any of the factions of the Grand Dukes. I never even thought of entering them. Because...”

My gaze strengthened. I gripped my fists tightly.

“I have to kill the demons. I am a hunter that will kill all the demons on this planet. So I will climb to the position of Devil.”

I smirked and said.

“This is an opportunity given to you. After all the demons are killed, you have the unique chance to stop me from becoming the devil. I will give you some time to make a decision. I will give you some time to watch the situation and determine the truthfulness of my words. I hope you think carefully.”

I turned and left the room.

Hashmal didn't have any constraints and could act freely in the dungeon. Anyway, she had lost all her wings. I had the power of advanced creatures so she wasn't a great threat. Even a naga could eliminate Hashmal and then I would get 5 million points. But I expected to get some achievements if I could manage to corrupt her.

‘No other demons can do it.’

No one had ever managed to corrupt an angel. The same was true in my previous life. It was a myth. My heart jumped quickly. I wanted to try corrupting an angel. But it failed. If successful, there would be benefits for a long time. And I used my own methods.

Hashmal needed time to be convinced.

‘I can hear more stories.’

This invasion was ahead of schedule. I might be able to hear a little bit of what was happening. I could use her if there was another invasion from the heavens in the future. I would be able to prepare or know the power of the heavens. At the very least, she was a Dominions Angel and familiar with other angels.

There would be many benefits if I managed to corrupt her.

I touched my jaw.

‘After an angel passed through the dimensional gate, they can’t return to the heavens before killing all the demons.’

I identified this from my previous life. The angels who occupied dungeons could create a ‘Sacred Zone’ that allowed them to resist the demons. But there were no angels that returned to heaven. This information was procured through a lot of effort.

‘In my previous life, I was stubborn even in the face of death.’

There was also a chance that Hashmal would choose to die. But that would just be a useless death. She wouldn’t accomplish anything. If she didn’t cling to her stubbornness then she would follow me. In the meantime, Hashmal would explore my dungeon and become curious about the ‘Tree of Origin.’

Of course, she didn’t immediately respond. Instead, she asked about the exit to the dungeon. She wanted to find out what was happening outside and see the truth of my words.

It wasn’t an easy proposal. The demons were still keeping an eye on the dungeon. It wouldn’t be easy to deceive and pass by them.

But that problem was surprisingly solved easily.

‘I can go out through Japan’s dungeon.’

That's right. We could move to Japan's dungeon. I used a few magic disguise items and had her accompanied by Krasla.

A trip around the world begun. I couldn't give a lot of time so they were to return within a week.

And Hashmal returned exactly one week later.

Hashmal had a very confused expression on her face. Her face hadn't changed much but her eyes were shaken. It was small but there was an impact.

She checked other dungeons and witnessed the strong presence of the demons directing it. In addition, she saw the world unraveling.

It wasn't too late. Leaving it alone would be a dereliction of her duties. She couldn't accept her death. She was stubborn but still an angel. Her mission was to bring back light to a world immersed in darkness.

Hashmal looked at me for a long time before opening her mouth.

"I will never follow a demon. I will destroy all demons. Don't forget that you are also included in that."

Pisik!

I started laughing.

Chapter 90-93: Achievements Store

Hashmal was worried. She was in the midst of confusion, anguish and speculation so her decision was postponed. A strange demon told her to destroy the other demons with him. All the demons, including the Grand Dukes had traveled here from the Demon World.

She thought it was a lie. She was a Dominions Angel. Any information about the Demon World would be quickly obtained by her. She needed to do her best to wipe out the Grand Dukes. But despite not understanding the details, she needed to figure out why the dungeons appeared.

‘First...I need to figure out this place. These dungeons are in a different dimension. I need to learn as much relevant information as possible.’

Hashmal was aware of the seriousness of the situation. If the strange demon’s words were true then this wasn’t a simple task. It was unpleasant to be captured by an demon but she wasn’t treated like a hostage.

A strange demon. He was called Randolph Brigsiel. He gave her freedom. At the very least, she could roam freely inside the dungeon. She didn’t know if he was stupid, arrogant or had other intentions.

Hashmal actively explored inside the dungeon.

‘The dungeon looks like it has an ecosystem.’

She worked up from the bottom of the dungeon.

The low grade creatures...an ecosystem was created for them. It was amazing.

The creatures with a predator relationship was figured out. The numbers were maintained at a constant level and the life cycle was very fast. There were even creatures that formed villages. She found a settlement near a lake where orcs could be seen moving back and forth.

The orc shamans served their gods and knew how to use advanced tools. Due to the nature of the dungeon, the various species knew how to use objects. They gathered things on their own to make improvements. Adults hunted while children learned their skills. The mothers remaining in the village to take care of their offspring while the priests made important decisions.

It wasn't just the orcs. Even the mindless species showed differences in their actions.

‘An amazing scene. But this is a dungeon. The centre of darkness.’

Of course, seeing civilization being created in a place like this was remarkable.

The dungeon was still a place filled with the powerful forces of darkness. The creatures were brought here by various black magic and would be lost to instinct. It is impossible to think of something constructive. But this dungeon was different.

There was a similar unpleasant magic power but it didn't have a significant impact on the creatures. Rather, it seemed to be having a good impact on the development of the creatures.

Appropriate environment, rich food, balanced food chain between the creatures...a harmony was established.

She wondered if this could really be defined as a dungeon. It was more like an ecosystem.

Hashmal was confused.

'A community of dwarves. Fierce creatures guarding intermediate areas. Even if what I'm seeing is a lie, they will become stronger over time.'

This was the first time she had seen such an active dungeon. Usually many dungeons were lacking. They didn't consider the conditions for making life in the first place. The beasts would fight hard to maintain their lives.

That wasn't the case here. A driving force existed behind their growth. This would pile up over time into a power that couldn't be ignored.

‘The demon Randolph really formed an ecosystem like this? A decent effort is required for harmony...it is hard for an existence like a demon.’

It was strange no matter how she thought about it. She didn’t know if it was designed this way from the beginning but it hasn’t be a long time since the dungeon was formed. There were signs of a steady management.

Tremendous interest. It took all types of effort.

However, the demons weren’t a species famous for being attentive. Just like his words, he truly wasn’t a normal demon.

‘A strong aura can be felt as I near the top. One if the Dungeon Core and one...’

Hashmal moved. She didn’t miss anything around her as she climbed up the dungeon. Finally, she reached the 15th floor and witnessed an amazing sight.

“Tree of Origin...!”

She was astonished.

There was a Tree of Origin in heaven. It was called the ‘First and Last Tree’ and no one could manage it except for the Heavenly

King. This one was smaller and weaker but the energy made it apparent that this was the Tree of Origin.

A grave was in the vicinity of the tree. There was the appearance of dug up soil and a wooden signpost saying 'Angel-nim.'

Someone suddenly blocked her path.

"Stop. My Dungeon Master has given my jurisdiction over the Tree of Origin. I will not allow access to the Tree of Origin."

A female dark elf, Chrisley.

Hashmal asked with trembling hands.

"Who...who buried the angel over there?"

"The fairy of the Dungeon Core buried him."

"Ahh! Can I see the fairy?"

"Right now she isn't here. I will pass on a message."

Chrisley was puzzled. And Hashmal was strangely excited.

"All angels hope to be buried under the Tree of Origin. There might be a hostile relationship but...I would like to convey my

gratitude.”

It was like that?

Chrisley was convinced by her words. The grave would be a source of nutrients for the Tree of Origin. Chrisley had been worried about what to do with the bodies of the angels but Hashmal gave her the solution.

“I will tell her. And I will bury the rest of the angels here.”

“I-Is it okay?”

“It isn’t something difficult.”

Chrisley’s stiff expression loosened and she smiled. Chrisley knew what the Dungeon Master wanted from Hashmal. She could score some nutrients and points with Hashmal so it was killing two birds with one stone.

“Thank you.”

Hashmal gave a large sigh of relief. Hashmal wasn’t casual about all the angels under her being killed.

“That gratitude should be directed to My Dungeon Master.”

“That...let me think about it.”

Her perception about demons wasn't easily broken. But just saying she would think about it was coming a long way. She stared at the Tree of Origin for a long time.

‘I don't see the spirit of the origin.’

Was it still not mature?

She only knew about the Tree of Origin from the Heavenly King. After snapping out of it, Hashmal explored the rest of the dungeon.

There were empty floors but she once again stared with surprise at the high class griffin and Gigantes. Unfortunately, she wasn't allowed near the Dungeon Core.

‘This is not the only dungeon.’

Hashmal wished to leave the dungeon. She wanted to look at everything from a wider perspective. She didn't expect anything but the demon Randolph surprisingly allowed her out of the dungeon. Krasla was the catch but she didn't mind.

And...a week passed on earth. She rode the pyrocks and was covered by a stealth item so their speed was quite fast. Rather, it was a lot of time.

She recklessly entered the other dungeons. She might have lost her holy power but the other dungeons were in a terrible state. None of them had a proper ecosystem like Randolph's dungeon. The demons didn't care about the species and it was impossible for breeding to work properly in the poor environment. Only the deformed and strong creatures survived. She was also able to witness demons and creatures attacking humans. A very strong presence. It was estimated that she discovered one of the Grand Dukes.

‘This planet will be destroyed.’

Her mouth was dry. Randolph's words weren't false. This was indeed an arena for a competition. The will to destroy could be felt.

‘I am alone. I lost my wings. Without being taken care of in heaven, my holy power won't be restored.’

Her fists squeezed together. Did she just have to wait and watch the destruction?

She couldn't communicate with heaven and there was no telling when the dimensional gate would open again. Perhaps...there was a possibility that the dimensional gate would never appear again. Someone had intervened and changed the code of the dimensional gate.

-Never be corrupted by darkness. Your role is to cleanse the darkness and conceive the light.

Hashmal recalled the words she heard when she broke out of her egg. Heavenly King. She could never forget that warm voice and the information.

‘Please forgive my sins.’

But her mission was to purify the darkness and bring ‘light’ to this dimension. The only way to regain strength was to contaminate the ‘outside.’ If she could delay the destruction of the world until support from heaven arrived then it would be a success.

‘I am walking alone. A hunter that will catch all the demons...’

Hashmal made a decision after one week.

She would use him.

*

Corrupting an angel was simple.

The angels had to deny themselves and immerse themselves in the darkness. For example, breaking certain angel rules.

‘It is as I thought.’

I looked firmly at Hashmal in front of me. Hashmal was slowly moving in front of me.

I seriously considered what was happening in front of me. She recognized I was 'different' from other demons. It was obvious she planned to keep the demons in check.

“In the future, my name will be Tashmal.”

“You will discard the name you were given as an angel?”

“That’s right.”

Hashmal had already made up her mind. She was changing so her attitude needed to be different or else she would suffer.

Anyway, one problem was solved. An angel that denied themselves would become lethargic.

‘Discipline is the easiest way to break this situation. And the strongest sin.’

Mixing with demons. They would experience heavy punishment.

Personally, I had a lot of hope. Soon Hashmal would entirely ‘belong’ to me. Under the dungeon system, she would be ruled by me. Hashmal didn’t know it but she wouldn’t be able to harm me.

She would be forced to follow any orders I gave.

‘Hashmal. You have picked the best and worst hand.’

I said with a thin smile.

“Take it off.”

*

-Impossible achievement!

The first angel has been corrupted.

2,500,000pt will be paid.

-Impossible achievement!

The Dominions Angel ‘Hashmal’ will come under the jurisdiction of the demon ‘Randolph Brigsiel.’

3,000,000pt will be paid.

-Your achievement score has surpassed 10,000 points.

2nd grade Easter Egg has opened!

The ‘Achievements Store’ has opened. From now on, you can buy all types of precious things not available in the Store of All Things with achievement points. In addition, accomplishing certain achievements will add related species or goods to the store.

Message windows continuously rose.

My eyes rested on Hashmal...no, Tashmal.

Tashmal was collapsed on a bed. Sweat was flowing down her white skin. She was covered with marks from our joining but my attention was grabbed by the black wings on her back. Tashmal had fainted from the process. It was the first time she felt such an intense shock. But the black wings were gradually increasing in size even when she was asleep. Instead of holy power, it was filled with yin magic power.

It was the first time I had seen a fallen angel being created. No one had ever seen it. There were some questions.

I quietly opened Mind’s Eye.

Name: Tashmal

Occupation: Fallen Angel

Title: * Angel of Light Steeped in Darkness (Epic, Intelligence and Magic Power +6)

Stats

Strength: 68

Intelligence: 87 (+6)

Agility: 78

Stamina: 69

Magic Power: 84 (+6)

Potential: (386+12/471)

Uniqueness: An angel that spread light into the world has now become a fallen angel. The stats have been lowered in the aftermath of losing her wings but they will quickly recover.

Skill: Propagation of Darkness (Epic), Barrage of Dark Spears (Epic), Dark Thunder (Epic)

Indeed...the title and skill names had changed. I was glad the ratings were intact. The stats seemed somewhat low but it wasn't a big problem.

Right now she was comparable to the griffin and Gigantes. She still had three epic grade skills that could be utilized. In the past, she was at a higher level but that would quickly recover. I was reassured after seeing the specifications.

‘Good.’

I nodded.

5.5 million points and even a fallen angel. That alone would be called a sufficient gain. Combined with the points earned from hunting angels, I had gained more than 6 million points from this event.

Thanks to that, my points already went over 10 million. Considering that it hadn't even been half a year...I had high expectations for the next Demon World Auction.

‘But...Achievements Store?’

After checking Hashmal's status, I turned my eyes back to the message windows in the air.

Class 2 Easter Egg. My eyes stared at the words Achievements Store.

‘It relies on achievement points.’

Something that I obtained every time I got an achievement. It could also be used in this way. In order to do so, I needed to know if 10,000 was high or low. I never experienced this in my previous life.

Just after I returned back in time, I obtained the Class 3 Easter Egg, ‘Heart of the Hell Monarch.’ This time it was a Class 2 egg. I naturally smiled imagining it. There was a list of things that could

be purchased from the Store of All Things. All types of precious things could be noted.

The Store of All Things sold many items but the efficiency wasn't very good. For example, there were low grade creatures or skill books with bad options. A unique class skill book would require more than 1 million points so many couldn't afford to purchase it. They would rather save the points for the Demon World Auction.

Now there was the Achievements Store. If the efficiency wasn't good then I would be disappointed. I wouldn't purchase any items that were only useful for mopping up the floor.

‘It will take her some time to wake up.’

I glanced at Tashmal collapsed on the bed. There were no signs that she would move soon. I grabbed my clothes strewn on the ground and headed for the top floor of the dungeon.

Yihi was next to the Dungeon Core. She was sighing.

“Ahyu! The angel was no help. All he did was make Yihi bury him.”

An angel appeared so she thought her wish had been granted. Instead, he only muttered strange words and died. Her heart ached.

“Ohh...I am having withdrawal symptoms from not seeing my

bees. Yihi's delight is gone. I will fall ill from these withdrawal symptoms."

Yihi leaned back and rubbed her cheeks against the Dungeon Core. In fact, Yihi thought of the bees as a favourite toy. She always took great care of them. Yihi's limit was revealed. It had been 10 days and her hands were shaking like an addict.

"Yihihi...I yearn for the bees. Yihi will draw them..."

Yihi jumped up from her position. Her usual jewel like eyes had been replaced with those like a murderer's. Yihi lowered her body and started to draw bees on the ground.

"Now the honey. Yihihi..."

But the picture. It wasn't drawn very well! They didn't move.

"Why aren't you moving? Listen to Yihi's words! I drew you so why aren't you moving, why...yihing..."

"Stop playing around."

Sasasak!

Yihi quickly deleted the picture of the bees and laughed awkwardly.

“You came, Master?”

She transformed into a poised state.

I cleared up my expression and said.

“That was quite funny. Any more?”

“Ah, it’s nothing. Master. Yihi is faithfully obeying Master’s punishment. Yihi doesn’t know anything about bees. What is that?”

Yihi shook her head like a dog. She sucked her fingers innocently.

“I heard you made a grave near the Tree of Origin.”

“That’s... Yihi thought the Tree of Origin-nim sent me the angel in response to my wish. But then he was defective so Yihi buried him.”

Wish? Sent her? I was puzzled by her words but accepted them. I had experience with trying to understand Yihi’s words. I decided to compromise since it would benefit both of us.

“Very good.”

“Huh?”

“I solved something easily thanks to that.”

The angel buried at the Tree of Origin. Hashmal’s heart was swayed due to that. She even said ‘thank you.’ Besides...an angel’s body was also beneficial to the Tree of Origin. Yihi didn’t know about the angels and buried one near the Tree of Origin. Help from a completely unexpected place. She had been deprived of rights and exiled but...she deserved some compensation for her ‘contribution.’

“Yihihi. If Master is good then Yihi is good.”

Yihi didn’t know what she was saying and laughed. Her wings restlessly flapped and rubbed her cheeks with both hands.

I looked at her and spoke.

“Your permissions are restored. I will also turn a blind eye to your garden.”

Yihi instantly stopped all her actions.

“Yihi’s ears must have gone bad.”

“No, you heard it properly.”

Yihi's eyes widened to a frightening extent after she heard my words.

“T-then Master. Now Yihi can annoy the bees?”

“You can freely act as you like.”

“I can even walk with the king bees?”

“As long as it doesn't affect the ecosystem.”

“Can Yihi design buildings?”

“That's not possible.”

“...Yihihi!”

Yihi lay on the floor and stretched out her hands and feet. She slapped her cheeks until they were red.

‘That is enough.’

Indifference. I had deprived her of all rights and even refused her hobby. That was like rat poison to a fairy. In particular, Yihi's nature meant she wouldn't hold out much longer.

But I hoped she realized something. If the same mistakes were

repeated over and over again then Yihi would have no choice but to rule harshly. Rather than Yihi, I would drop a stronger punishment on the bees. The worker bees would be heavily punished.

I decided to wait for the excited Yihi to calm down.

...I didn't expect she would be rolling around for 3 hours.

3 hours later.

I ignored Yihi behind me and used the Dungeon Core to open the Achievements Store.

-Welcome to the Achievements Store.

Current achievement points – 11,451

Achievement points can be used to purchase goods from the store.

Item names marked with a + can only be purchased once.

The window that popped up didn't differ significantly from the Store of All Things. Only the names had changed. But the content was completely different.

My eyes moved down the lists.

[Equipment list]

Wild Bow (U) – 1,000.

Shadow Award (U) – 1,000.

Quick Shoes (Ex U) – 2,000

+ Death Robe (Ex U, Set) – 2,000

Prominent Armour (Ex U) – 2,000

+ Atasha’s Sword (Epic) – 3,000

+ Contegonom’s Helmet (Epic, Set) – 3,000

.....

[Creatures List]

Pyrock – 300

Superior Goblin – 1,000

Pure Blood Naga – 2,000

Homunculus – 4,500

+ Cruel Commander Corps – 6,000

+ Great Orc ‘Ram’ – 10,000

+ Vampire from the Jin Clan ‘Subira’ – 15,000

+ Lich King ‘Gospel’ – 20,000

+ True Demonic Dragon ‘Aojin’ – 50,000

.....

[Skills List]

- + Earthquake (U) – 1,500
- + Sacred Dust (U) – 2,000
- + Divine Sword Unity (Ex U, Passive) – 2,000
- + Dark Sword (Ex U) – 2,500
- + Forest shield (Ex U) – 3,000
- + Dark Meteor (Epic) – 10,000
- + Thousand Territory (Epic) – 15,000

.....

[Additional Achievement Related Items]

- +Angel Egg – 500

I could judge the list with one glance. It wasn't a list of general items. The items that came up was enough to scare me.

The first equipment list. The default was unique items and it went up the way up to epic.

Besides, the 'Death Robe' was a set item with the 'Death Wand' that Chrisley had. Contegonom was King of the Yetis. Even his

helmet was legendary. Atasha's Sword was something I saw when the Class 3 Easter Egg opened...it had appeared again on this list.

‘Ha...’

But the thing that really surprised me was the creatures list.

Creatures that couldn't be bought in the Store of All Things. The pyrocks were very difficult to grow. There were also several things that could never be seen at the Demon World Auction. But I focused on the bottom where the creatures had 'names.'

Great Orc Ram. Vampire from the Jin Clan Subira. Lich King Gospel...True Demonic Dragon Aojin.

‘Legendary, mythical creatures.’

Names renowned a long time ago. No one could oppose them in those times. They had already died but they were included in the list.

This had to mean something.

‘It is really ridiculous.’

That's right.

Bringing back the dead. If some part of their bodies were salvaged then they could be revived.

The Mado Era.

A time when the dragon species was in full bloom. In that time, the demons couldn't carelessly enter the Middle World. Many things happened and there were numerous geniuses killed in this time. Their records were left behind in the Demon World.

Great Orc Ram. A golden orc who managed to conquer half of the continent. His reigning period was short but he faced thousands of knights alone. A strong creature that would enter the top ranks of the high class creatures.

Subira from the Jin Vampire Clan...a creature active in the Middle World that created a kingdom of infected people. It required the Golden Knights who were guardians of the Virgin to stop him. There was a great battle in the Demon World that everyone knew about. The Demon World didn't care about the presence of the Middle World.

'I only heard the stories.'

I didn't fight all day long on the battlefield. Whenever there was a lull, I would linger near demons telling stories. Most of them spoke about fanciful things but they frequently mentioned Subira.

'Lich King Gospel and True Demonic Dragon Aojin were also

active in the Demon World.'

Both were treated as existences equal to the devil.

Among them, Aojin was regarded as an 'insurmountable wall.' A dragon was a high class 4Lv creature, a balrog a high class 5Lv creature and a true demonic dragon was the only 6Lv high class creature.

There was no stopping Aojin if he appeared on earth. The Grand Dukes who hadn't recovered their power yet would have no chance. My victory would be confirmed but I needed 50,000 achievement points. That required quite a lot of achievements. I had dozens more achievements than I did in my previous life. Yet I only gathered a little over 10,000 points. 50,000 still far away.

'I need to collect more achievement points.'

But, I didn't think it was impossible.

Now it was the 3rd year. 3 years had passed. I had already gathered 10,000. It was likely I would find many more achievements. One day, I might be able to collect more than 50,000 achievement points. Right now it was just like a pie in the sky.

Next, I looked at the skills list.

'There are a few here.'

Just like the equipment, the minimum rating was unique. Furthermore, there were epic rated skills that the Store of All Things didn't sell. Dark Meteor, Thousand Territory etc., were all names I had heard of before.

But Dark Sword and Forest Shield were new.

'Grand Duke Ariel used Abyss Sword. Is this an earlier skill compatible with it?'

I carefully read the description of the skill.

-Name – Dark Sword (Ex U)
<p>Description: A technology that can be used to seen into the depths of the real abyss. The sword will use the 'abyss' to cause a cut in space. In addition, Dark Sword will absorb all light.</p> <p>* Wounds caused by Dark Sword are impossible to heal. There will be a strong backlash if it faces holy power.</p>

I nodded.

Ariel's Abyss Sword was a skill that caused 'chaos.' The information was also similar. Dark Sword had an epic rating so I

wondered about the rating of Abyss Sword.

‘Lightning God alone is insufficient.’

I touched my jaw.

Dark Sword might be one step lower than Abyss Sword but it was more appropriate for me to use. I only had Lightning God...and ‘Wrath’ wasn’t a skill that I could one hundred percent take advantage of. It would be enormous if I could use the synergy between Dark Sword and Wrath.

‘Divine Sword Unity.’

My eyes turned to that skill.

I slowly read the description.

-Name – Divine Sword Unity (Ex U, Passive)

Description: The sword and body will breathe and act together. It is possible to master all things involving the sword, including the killing sword or the living sword.

* Strength and agility will rise by 3 when using the sword.

** You can surrender to a sword with a strong ego.

I had a thought after reading the description.

‘Greed.’

I wanted Dark Sword and Divine Sword Unity. The remaining skills were too expensive or didn’t fit my taste.

Next I saw the [Additional Achievement Related Items] list.

‘Angel egg...!’

I had gained some impossible angel related achievements as well as an angel after corrupting an angel. The item was probably due to this. However, the name wasn’t unusual.

Angels were born from eggs. After laying the eggs, they were covered with angel wings for a certain period of time before the eggs break. The problem was that there were no angels to do that.

‘I don’t know if the wings of a fallen angel will be effective.’

I needed to speak with Tashmal. It was unknown if normal angels could be born after being covered by a fallen angel’s wings. Instead of holy power, Tashmal’s wings were filled with yin magic power...there was the possibility of premature births of the fetus

dying.

‘I have to try an experiment.’

However, expectations were overflowing from my eyes.

I was satisfied with Tashmal but it was a completely different story if I could train a large number of angels. A demon with angels in my dungeon. Plus, the Tree of Origin could use the corpses of angels as nutrients. There was probably a connection between the two. I also might be able to achieve multiple achievements if I trained the angels. I was filled with anticipation.

Perhaps achievement points were even more urgently needed than general points.

‘I need to put off the purchase.’

I had 11,451 achievement points. I had to use it as carefully as possible.

I bought one egg and waited for Tashmal.

Tashmal slept for half a day before waking up. She changed into a white dress that contrasted with the black wings.

The wings were the mark of a fallen angel and was already fully grown. Plus, the number of wings were identical to what she

originally had. Six. That number represented a Dominions Angel but now it just showed the dignity of a fallen angel.

“This egg...!”

She immediately noticed the angel egg.

“Can you bear it?”

“Where the hell did you get this? It is forbidden to bring an angel’s egg out of heaven. Only advanced rank angels are given permission to enter...”

Her voice trembled. She was very upset. She didn’t know how I had obtained an angel egg but she had failed to properly understand the dungeon system.

“Some angels give birth to eggs. After they are born, the emotions of the child will be evaluated to determine the hierarchy...but, a fallen angel is not allowed to exist in heaven. Where did you take this from?”

A little animosity. But it didn’t lead to anything more than that.

I gazed at her and said.

“Don’t worry, I didn’t steal it. And I really hate to say something twice. Tashmal, can you bear it?”

“I-I can’t bear it. A fallen angel can’t give birth to a divine one.”

I clicked my tongue.

“It is unfortunate. Dying before even being born.”

“Without being born...?”

“There is no choice. If you neglect it then it won’t get any power. There is no choice but for it to die.”

The angel egg required warmth. Without it, there would be no fetal movement. Neglecting the egg a few days would cause it to die. There would be a difference between an angel or creature taking care of it.

Tashmal’s expression became subtly determined.

I gave a small laugh.

“Don’t worry. It isn’t your fault that you fell. It is just bad luck. Hmm, let’s give it a try. If you are lucky then a child might be born.”

“I won’t allow a holy angel egg be carried by a creature!”

Tashmal exclaimed and took the angel egg from my hand.

“I will bear it. I’ll take over for this child.”

“Is it okay?”

“Even if I was corrupted...I was once an angel of light. It is okay if I try.”

“This is a full time work.”

I shrugged.

“Maybe I will add a few more angel eggs. Then please do so.”

“You! Don’t tell me you have angels locked up...”

“Then Tashmal, can I really entrust the eggs to you?”

Eggs wouldn’t be born even if angels were forced to copulate together. I heard that some were forced to do such things. Many demons tried to do that with the angels they caught. Tashmal’s worries were groundless.

I quietly opened my magic power and offered advice.

“Tashmal. You are no longer an angel. Keep this in mind.”

“.....”

A complex expression formed on Tashmal's face before she closed her mouth.

The dungeon's nature had a profound impact on the growth of the creatures. I got it in an already overgrown state but the angel egg hatched exactly one week after I gave it to Tashmal. To my surprise...the angel was born safely. Two adorable wings made its appearance into the world.

At the same time, an expected achievement emerged.

-A remarkable achievement!

The first angel egg to be hatched in a dungeon.

500,000pt will be given.

1,000 achievement points will be added.

Now it seemed like the achievement points will come up with the general points.

Anyway, it was an ordinary angel but very compliant. The potential could be compared to an intermediate 5Lv creature.

I increased the number once I was sure they could hatched properly. I bought an additional 10 angel eggs. Once they grew, it would be possible to breed them together and multiple the numbers for another achievement.

I used the rest of the points on Dark Sword and Divine Sword Unity. The remaining achievement points was 2,451.

I confirmed my status window after learning the skills.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel
Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master) Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons) * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2) * Origin Master (Epic, All stats +3) * First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

Stats

Strength: 80 (+15)

Intelligence: 72 (+5)

Agility: 75 (+15)

Stamina: 80 (+5)

Magic Power: 85 (+11)

Potential: (392+51/500)

Remaining Stat Points: 4

Electric Power: 21GW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has woken up.

Skill: Combine Everything (U), Mind's Eye (Ex U), Dark Sword (Ex U), Divine Sword Unity(Ex U, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Wrath (Epic), Sloth (Epic)

I had an extra stat point from hunting Saman. Combined with the +3 strength and agility from Divine Sword Unity...and there was also the electric power from the nuclear power plant. There were only a few changes but I was pleased with the status window.

‘Death Robe isn’t bad.’

I was pursuing the Seven Sins but they weren’t on the list. It wasn’t bad to buy ‘Death Robe’ for a set effect with ‘Death Wand’ since it would strengthen Chrisley’s power.

‘Death Want has the Undead Manufacturing skill. The set would help with creating things like the spartoi.’

My achievement points were almost empty after purchasing the Death Robe.

‘Now...’

I used my achievement points but I still had many general points left. A huge 12 million points!

There was still a lot of time until the next Demon World Auction. It would be foolish to leave it unused.

‘I should accomplish all the expected achievements.’

I nodded.

Meanwhile...

Krasla was riding on the griffin in the sky with multiple shades.

‘Master gave me a command. I must follow through.’

Krasla originally grew up as Chrisley’s guardian. He received a thorough training to help Chrisley. He acted as an older brother

but she was more important than his own life. But Chrisley got a disease. She weakened every day and all types of precious medicine couldn't save her. They decided to devote their souls if it would cure Chrisley and then the dark spirits came.

There was the slightest hope that an elixir could be obtained. They were sent to the auction...then purchased by an unusual demon called Randolph Brigsiel.

‘Master is different from ordinary demons.’

Krasla was nervous at first. Demons were a selfish and exclusive species. It was unlikely they would offer an elixir. In particular, he was convinced it was the end once Chrisley's identity was discovered. After Chrisley's identity was discovered, he hoped to show off his skills and get an elixir as a reward.

Incredibly, the demon examined them just once and figured it out. The fact that they were hiding something. He felt despair when he failed and the punishment was supposed to be death. But his estimate was off the mark. The dark elves were made to act like dogs...there was no reason for it. He was skeptical but the demon had promised to heal Chrisley. But at that moment, Krasla just thought it was a relief that he was alive.

Yet the demon really fulfilled his promise to give an elixir. He also participated in a ceremony with Chrisley. A ceremony between a dark elf and demon. It was such an unprecedented situation that even Elder Julliom was dumbfounded.

Of course, there was a chance Chrisley would reject. However, she wisely accepted the ceremony. Thanks to that, Chrisley's illness was healed and she took the spot of highest ranking dark elf. Confidence in the Dungeon Master grew and the dwarves also weren't mistreated.

Furthermore, the Dungeon Master didn't hesitate to give rewards for contribution. There were a few guaranteed basic freedoms. The names 'Roy' and 'Rose' were even given to newly born twins, showing off an intimacy. They weren't seen as 'slaves' and Krasla inwardly swore to follow the Dungeon Master for the rest of his life...now there was also the Tree of Origin.

'Although our species are different, he is someone that I, Krasla can believe in.'

By default, Krasla had a knight's temperament. He had defended Chrisley and ensured her safety. He also instinctively knew that he needed to protect the dungeon. If other demons invaded, he would die first before allowing the other dark elves to be touched.

"Everyone scatter. Saman's dungeon is definitely somewhere in China. Find it as quickly as possible!"

Krasla stretched out his hand while riding the griffin and the shades spread out.

*

‘It looks good.’

I thought while busy with changing the terrain of the dungeon in Domestic Mode.

Krasla, the griffin and a number of shades were scouting China. They were looking for the location of Saman’s dungeon.

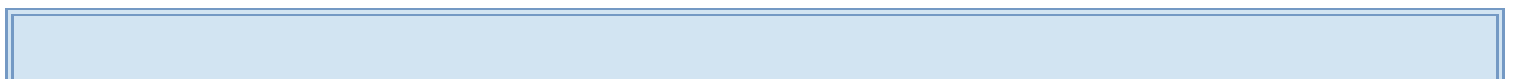
‘Somewhere in China...’

I knew where the Dukes and Grand Dukes were located. However, the earls such as Saman hadn’t interested me. I just knew he was somewhere in China. When looking at the memories of my previous life, Saman had always appeared from the direction of China. Once the event triggered, Saman arrived quickly and I could infer that he came from a place close by.

Krasla needed to find Saman’s dungeon before the other demons learned of his death.

‘Terrain changes. The 26th floor should be a combined zone.’

The 20th floor a sea terrain, 21st zone a thunder zone, 22nd floor a hurricane zone, 23rd floor a blizzard zone, 24th floor a death zone and the 25th floor was a sacred zone. Finally, the 26th floor combined thunder, hurricanes and blizzards, causing a message window to pop up.



-Huge accomplishment!

The terrain of more than 10 floors in a dungeon has been changed for the first time.

800,000pt will be given.

1,545 achievement points will be given.

I had spent approximately 2 million points doing this.

‘I was able to specify a separate death zone and sacred zone.’

Quite a lot of terrain had been changed. It was unexpected that I could add zones where undead and holy angels could grow normally. It wasn't just the terrain but the magic power itself that changed.

In addition, the ‘holy power’ didn't displace the magic power. A small amount of it was applied on the 25th floor. No, maybe magic power and holy power gained their energy from the same source. It was likely why 4 altars could be created.

Either way...the angels could use the holy power to grow bigger.

‘1,545 points.’

It wasn't a bad result.

Originally achievements were important. It was the only way to obtain a large amount of points or a title. But now the Achievements Store highlights its importance even more.

‘I need to add a few breeding species to the terrain.’

It would be a waste to only change the terrain. Filling it with species affected by the terrain would give a lot of benefits. Increasing the reproductive rate of the creatures at an early stage would give an advantage. It was better to do it when I had so much points.

‘I don’t know when the invasion from heaven will resume...’

It was impossible to tell when the dimensional gate would open. If I lacked creatures then I could lose my dungeon this time as well. They would be the key at critical moments.

‘The 20th floor has a sea terrain so there should be sirens. I’d love to add the krakens but too many point would be poured into multiplying their numbers.

Sirens were intermediate 3Lv creatures. One cost 5,800pt so buying 30 for breeding purposes was possible. On the other hand, the kraken was an advanced 4Lv creature that cost 400,000pt. At least 12 million points would be required if I wanted a properly breeding cycle.

‘Thunder bats on the 21st floor.’

Thunders bats were an intermediate 4Lv creature and one step higher than the sirens. An unusual bat that ate lightning and could use the powerful ‘Lightning Breath.’

22nd floor’s wind zone. Wind riders would be enough. A small, intermediate 4Lv creature. Only the skulls were the size of adults. But they were close to invincible in storms.

The 23rd floor. It was a blizzard zone so this was a place for the yetis. Their speed was comparable to a saber tiger in the snow.

And the 24th floor...the ‘death mother’ was added to the death zone. 2 metres in size with a plump build. A strong poison was emitted from the body. In addition, death mother was an ant queen. She constantly generated virulent larvae over 50cm.

There was no need to add anything to the 25th floor. This place was for Tashmal and the angels.

The combined 26th floor was left alone. I couldn’t think of an appropriate creature just yet.

After adding creatures to the floor below, an achievement window popped up.

-Incredible achievement!

‘10 appropriate breeding species’ have been added to ‘transformed zones’ for the first time.

1,000,000pt will be paid.

1,833 achievements will be given.

Thanks to the achievements from the additional terrain and species, I actually ended up using slightly over 2 million points.

There still remained 10 million points.

‘This is just South Korea’s dungeon.’

My gaze turned.

It was time to go to Japan’s dungeon.

*

-Significant achievement!

100 unique goblins have emerged for the first time.

200,000pt will be paid.

400 achievement points will be given.

I received an achievement as soon as I visited Japan's dungeon.

'I need to personally visit the other dungeons to receive the achievements.'

I nodded.

That's why I had no news about what was happening in Japan's dungeon. The waiting message windows finally appeared after I moved there.

There was a significantly high frequency of unique goblins appearing. So I only received a small amount of points. It was still better than nothing...

"I'm glad to see Master!"

Guyo flapped his wings and welcomed me.

"The progress has been good?"

I handed over permissions for Guyo to directly use the points. However, the points were hardly reduced.

Guyo's expression darkened.

“There is too much to do and I couldn't choose.

“What about making most of the floors into a maze?”

“It is okay but the costs in points is very expensive.”

Guyo had created the maze on the 1st floor himself. It was easier to hide treasures and traps.

It was okay to push the maze concept. The Awakened in Japan would be able to feel excitement from such things. Recently the points from Japan had increased so it wouldn't be bad to expand the maze.

‘There is no additional maze terrain. I will create my own. It isn't even related to achievements.’

These calculations were also included.

“Don't mind it. How many floors have been pierced through?”

“3rd floor.”

“That is fairly low.

Just like in Korea, each floor was significantly different. It was circumstantial evidence that South Korea had the fastest growing Awakened.

“Create a maze up to the 5th floor. I will leave it to you.”

“Guyo can act freely?”

“Yes.”

“Wah...!”

A round of applause. Unlike Yihi’s hobby with bees, Guyo seemed to like being productive. I was just glad he didn’t give me honey water.

‘A number of different terrains and creatures should be added as well.’

The development of the dungeon for achievements had started.

*

-Welcome to the Achievements Store.

Current achievement points – 6,440

Achievement points can be used to purchase goods from the store.

Item names marked with a + are the only ones available for purchase.

The result meant points had poured in like crazy. I collected 6,000 achievement points in two weeks.

I didn't mind that my points were halved.

'The rich get richer. That really fits.'

I realized that it was easy to use points to gain achievement points. In particular, achievements were applied separately for Japan's dungeon. Achievements without the title of 'first' gave less points but this was great information.

This meant I could gain more achievement points if I had more dungeons. Although there was still a long way to go, 50,000 achievement points really wasn't a dream.

But for now, I had no thoughts of saving the achievement points. I looked through the list and selected an item.

At the same time, a message window rose.

-Are you sure you want to buy the 'Cruel Commander's Corps?

Chapter 94-97: Cruel Commander's Corps

An expensive creature that could only be bought once with 6,000 achievement points. He heard the name on the day he got the Heart of the Hell Monarch.

‘Corps...’

Great Orc Ram. The Jin Vampire Subira was also different from a ‘corps.’ There was a numerical difference. But he didn’t know what it meant by ‘Cruel Commander.’

Even so, I was interested because it was a corps. In the Store of All Things, there were no cases where a large number of creatures were sold at once. There also weren’t any corps sold at the Demon World Auction.

I had quite a few creatures but it wasn’t to the extent that it could be called a corps. Of course, the lowest class creatures might be if they combined but there wasn’t anyone that could efficiently lead them. They wouldn’t show the appearance of an army.

‘If I have a strong corps with multiple creatures than my situation will become better.’

To be honest...there weren’t many people who could properly command the number of creatures now. It was the same for me as well. So far, I had pushed for quantity over quality.

But Chrisley had bloomed thanks to this ‘event.’ Over time, she would become the best as she gained experience.

But in this situation, I was in need of a skilled commander. I wasn’t the only one aiming for Earl Saman’s dungeon. There were 12 other demons who saw the scene. By now, the news would have been transmitted to Upa’s faction.

The confused demons were waiting in front of my dungeon so I needed to hit first.

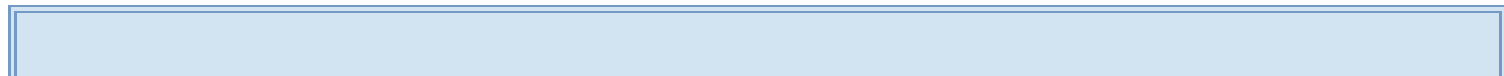
‘The Dungeon Master is gone so the fairy will be anxious.’

The Dungeon Master and Dungeon Core were closely linked to the fairy. Guyo formed a new contract shortly after I killed Adol but a fairy waiting a long time would feel extreme anxiety. In my previous life, the fairies would feel confusion and move the creatures outside. Usually they prevented anyone from entering but...it was hard to predict their move.

“I will buy it.”

I said heavily. 6,000 achievement points. I used all sorts of methods and 6 million points to save this amount. I had collected it recklessly. I could still gain more points from my dungeons.

Soon a large number of message windows appeared in the air.



-You have bought the 'Cruel Commander's Corps'. 6,000 achievement points will be deducted.

During the Mado Era, the Shadow Emperor was a very greedy person. He buried all the treasures of the world in a deep place and chose a Cruel Commander and his corps to protect it. It was impossible to take out any of the treasures. The flesh decayed and bones became rotten but they still only had one loyalty. Despite their dead bodies, the souls will continue obeying the commands of the Shadow Emperor.

-The 'Cruel Commander's Corps' is made up of a massive army of 50,000 troops.

The creatures are powerful enough to tear down a thick tree with their hands.

-The 'Cruel Commander's Corps' is moving through the dimensional gate.

Generating a random area has been completed.

-An event message is sent to all demons and Awakened.

-Be careful.

The Cruel Commander considers all living creatures as

‘thieves.’ Even the buyer is no different. They will kill all thieves for 90 days before returning to their original place.

Points obtained from killing humans, creatures or demons will be transferred to the buyer. ‘Destruction’ contribution will also rise.

Tak.

I frowned.

“Crazy.”

This was unexpected.

*

At that moment.

All Awakened and demons on earth received a message.

-The ‘Cruel Commander’s Corps’ has arrived in a random place.

They will devour everything around them.

Stop them!

Just three lines.

The Awakened were confused by the message window that suddenly emerged.

“Cruel Commander’s Corps?”

“What is that?”

They should be. Right now the world was in a state of extreme confusion due to the angels and creatures. The angels had almost all been exterminated. The emergence of another event wasn’t welcomed at all.

There were two problems. The Cruel Commander’s Corps didn’t make sense at all.

But this worry was solved surprisingly quickly.

-This is the central district in the northeast Jilin Province of China. Right now tens of thousands of skeleton soldiers are marching here. Quickly crossing to the south...d-damage! Ack!

Chiiiiik!

The brief news only lasted 10 seconds. There were subtitles but

the viewers were more focused on the video.

A huge fireball had hit the helicopter.

The scene that transitioned to an announcer.

-The video above was sent from China. China has taken some measures and their military will be taking action in the next two days. But the reactions of the neighbouring countries are skeptical. The situation between the angels and creatures couldn't even be resolved properly.

The announcer then said with a determined expression.

-The situation is no different from Korea. There are still a large number of creatures hanging near the dungeon. The damage was lessened due to the swift response from guilds such as Heaven's Will and Mithril but citizens are still cautioned to be careful. In particular, all citizens around Seoul should evacuate to the designated shelter. Then...God bless all the people of South Korea.

*

“For the Emperor!”

The Cruel Commander.

A tall man wearing a faded golden helmet and armour was

shouting while riding a skeletal horse. He arrogantly lifted a high hand towards the skeleton soldiers.

Kung! Kung! Kung!

They beat the shields held at their chests. The sound was repeated in accordance with a certain rhythm and caused a strong pressure. Tens of thousands of creatures repeating the sound was sure to cause fear.

But that wasn't all. A wave that naturally spread death!

They caused devastation everywhere they walked. Grass and flowers died as the land became barren. They were as good as unbeatable as everything on the ground died.

Those looking at the Cruel Commander's Corps were tense and nervous. There were a number of soldiers and Awakened near them. But the numbers were small. In addition, all of them were frightened.

Yiing!

Hundreds of 'skeletons holding sticks' wielded a large barrier that covered the place. The barrier was to prevent people from escaping the death zone as well as block powerful attacks from the outside.

However, it had no effect on the attacks of the corps. The

‘skeleton archers’ could fire arrows at the humans outside the barrier. It was covered with intense magic power and could pierce through special alloys.

The humans inside the barrier were like cornered rats. The expressions of the humans were all the same. Tension. Fear...their hearts were jumping like crazy.

The ‘living’ Cruel Commander raised a sword ornamented with gold.

“For the Emperor!”

Wooruru!

The commander ventured forward on horseback. Tens of thousands of skeletons could a thunderous sound as they followed.

*

My brows furrowed.

‘I didn’t think it would appear this way.’

Unexpected. I had no choice. I didn’t know it would be revealed in an event format after purchasing it from the store. A friendly system would have given a brief explanation before purchase.

Of course, I got some information. But it was a strange contract as there was a limit of 90 days where they were sweep the earth.

I wondered if it would be the same I summoned the orc or Aojin. I didn't know if it was good or bad news but the list had changed after purchasing the 'Cruel Commander's Corps.'

[+ Predatory Hamad's Corps – 8,500]

One more had appeared. Maybe another corps would appear on the list if I hired the Predatory Hamad' Corps.

The reason behind the corps. It was simple. For the invasion of the earth. A means of rapidly destroying the earth for other demons. If I knew then I would have bought it more carefully...

'It is lucky that they appeared in China.'

The Cruel Commander's Corps were summoned to China. The stir in China would cause the demons to let down their guard. They wouldn't carelessly mess with the troops. That alone would be a great help when occupying Earl Saman's dungeon.

So far, the demons and creatures in front of my dungeon had yet to withdraw. The problem was...

-Your contribution to the destruction of the earth has risen steeply.

The battle has ended. 2, 831 pt has been acquired.

...

-The battle has ended. 981 pt has been acquired.

-The battle has ended. 4,376 pt has been acquired.

The constantly rising notifications. It was cleared from my sight but I couldn't help focusing on one phrase.

‘Contributing to the destruction of the earth.’

There were riots as soon as the Cruel Commander appeared. Everything around him perished. Including humans and Awakened. From his perspective, everyone was a ‘thief.’

But at the same time, my contribution soared. I didn't care how many humans died. I also didn't care about the Awakened in foreign countries. I also killed numerous humans. But I wanted to avoid the ‘destruction of the earth.’

This was what the gods wanted in exchange for sending me back in time. They wouldn't block my road as long as humanity wasn't destroyed. So that I wouldn't ignore that promise...they left behind some gifts.

I would get a high class creature with every dungeon I obtained. It was a big power. But they were essentially on the side of the

gods. There were other creatures as well. I already obtain the griffin and Gigantes so I didn't dare disobey my promise with the gods.

‘I can't throw away my chances at a high class creature.

In retrospect, this gift was a type of bribe.

Avoid the destruction of the earth. It would be meaningless if my contribution to the destruction soared. There was no reason for a bribe if the person didn't comply. I had certain constraints around me.

‘Right now I need to worry about Saman's dungeon. And how to take advantage of the corps.’

I had a headache at the thought of the coming days.

I pulled out the crystal ball that had a connection with Krasla.

I had to hurry.

*

The Cruel Commander's body was decorated in gold.

His eyes were hollow. Unlike other skeleton soldiers, he had a

muscular body but the blue colour was reminiscent of the dead.

He suddenly came into this world but his task was clear.

Destroy all thieves!

To the Cruel Commander, this place was a den of thieves. He believed people brought him here to rob the treasure. So he needed to chop them up and return quickly.

Already dozens of times. He killed the thieves. Directly cutting their necks.

Things like iron carriages and flying through the sky...he just saw them as magic items. There were many treasures in the world so there must be thieves. The items were stolen from somewhere.

The skeletons unfolded their barrier while the corps cleaved into the enemies. The thieves were scattered all over but he determined the method to quickly take care of them. The soldiers were split and performed their task of handling the thieves.

This organization didn't take a long time.

“H-help me...!”

Chwahak!

The sword went through the head of a living person. They also chased the fleeing remnants. At some point, the eyes of the Cruel Commander looked at the horizon.

‘This?’

A huge and sinister structure. A dungeon that reached up into the sky!

The Cruel Commander was looking at a certain spot.

Soon he was able to realize the identity.

‘A dark seed.’

This sinister magic power. His army had the attribute of darkness but their loyalty was towards the Emperor. They didn’t care about the seed of darkness. He heard they tried to encroach on the territory of the Emperor. He also heard they had a powerful force.

‘Demon...kill.’

The eyes of the Cruel Commander flashed.

*

Marquis Anastasia.

A member of Grand Duke Pandemonium's faction that was still hanging around Korea's dungeon. There were a number of creatures remaining as this was a chance to figure out the Dungeon Master.

"This dungeon has to be ruled by at least a duke or grand duke. I needed to figure out the owner of this dungeon for Pandemonium-nim."

Knowing the location of a Dungeon Master gave considerable power. They could put pressure on using this event and it could also be used strategically. It would be a useful key. And other demons had a similar idea to Anastasia. But Anastasia had a thought while monitoring the dungeon.

'Huhu, is it possible the Dungeon Master can't come out?'

A number of intermediate golems. A number of spartoi. Lich and other intermediate creatures...a remarkable power. Who could it be? The person who gathered such creatures.

There was a personal curiosity. Earning points from hunting Awakened was limited. Breeding species and increasing the number of advanced creatures. The number of advanced creatures that could be bought with points was too low for breeding.

In the beginning, she moved without any worries but now she

knew how important it was to control the balance between the two.

The problem was still the points. These creatures were worth a considerable amount of points. Let alone the golems and lich. She estimated that close to 3 million points were consumed and if the intermediate creatures were added, that would require 6 million.

Collecting those types of points in a little over 2 years? There was only one person. That guy.

‘Randolph Brigsiel.’

The one who brought a high class creature to the auction and freely spent his points. She didn’t know what magic he used but he used millions of points. He didn’t hesitate despite having no faction. Whether he was fearless or something else...

The grand dukes were interested in him. To be honest, all 4 of them were different. They had different interests. But that guy was the exception.

‘Using those type of points, there is no way he can build up the creatures at his dungeon.’

It would be a scam if he could gather creatures. They thought it was an impossible task. He was just lucky to gain some achievements that gave him millions of points but there was a limit. So perhaps this was a different demon. At the very least, it

wasn't a demon that belonged to her faction. So she was interested.

“Anastasia-nim. What time should we move?”

An advanced 4Lv creature with the head and tongue of a snake and the lower body of a human. The medusa said.

“Are there any signs of those guys?”

The demons were frustrated with this event and began to attack Korea's dungeon. But she already lost a lot of creatures and didn't move.

She laughed. They were stupid.

Heroes. And humans. The technology they used was quite remarkable. She would sit back and let the advanced creatures 'slaughter' the humans. She lost some advanced creatures to the dungeon so she couldn't afford more damage.

Thus she thought of this game. Humans had their own strength.

‘But, that has been limited to the last two years.’

The demons would gradually recover their power from the Demon World. Right now it was hard for them to achieve mass destruction. But at the moment, she was convinced that the

humans wouldn't dare resist. She gave them a grace recovery period first. The demons from the other factions wouldn't move easily.

The destruction of humanity was coming closer.

Although it wasn't now. Most demons didn't know it. They had a contempt for humans and moved carelessly. Their taunts!

"No. Marquis Dellat and his creatures haven't been visible since yesterday."

The medusa shook her head.

Anastasia frowned at this.

Come to think of it...Dellat had been quiet since yesterday.

"Where to?"

"Perhaps he returned to his dungeon? The other demons with him aren't visible at all."

"Running away?"

She couldn't help smiling at the thought.

Dellat belonged to Grand Duke Okullos' faction and lost quite a lot of creatures in the struggle. In addition, she confirmed that Korea's dungeon didn't belong to Okullos' faction. That's why they were here watching.

But...leaving. It had to mean something.

'Did something urgent happen? Enough to make them leave?'

The series of events that happened recently meant her nerves...

-The Cruel Commander's Corps has begun to attack your dungeon.

The creatures in your dungeon will be rapidly swept away.

Be careful. If the Cruel Commander and his men compromises the Dungeon Core then the dungeon will lose its functionality. In addition, the authority of the Dungeon Master will disappear.

"This...damn."

That's right. This was it. An unexpected quest. There was no compensation and she only received a prompt saying someone was invading her dungeon.

‘Dellat ran off because his dungeon was hit!’

Then her mind was in a rush.

There wasn’t many troops remaining at the dungeon. She couldn’t lose the dungeon. It was something that couldn’t be moved.

Anastasia hastily turned her body.

“Go back to the dungeon! As quickly as possible!”

*

I confirmed that most of the demons in front of my dungeon had disappeared.

‘They have been stirred.’

90 days.

The contracted mercenaries didn’t follow my orders but they still did the basic things.

Sweeping up the humans and dungeons.

The demons noticed it as well and quickly returned to their

dungeon.

But I wasn't glad to see it.

Now it had been 10 days. My contribution to the destruction already reached 0.01%. This meant that hundreds of thousands of humans had been killed. I couldn't let it rise by another 0.1%.

'I'd rather they sweep up the dungeons than the humans.'

Weakening the demons instead of humans would have more benefits for me. But I couldn't direct the Cruel Commander's movements.

It was a major headache. Anyway, catching all the demons would be helpful to my goal.

The optimal situation would be if the demons died fighting.

"My Dungeon Master. I've been contacted by the reconnaissance team."

Chrisley walked forward and said.

I had purchased 200 shades to look for Saman's dungeon. And now they had got in contact.

“The creatures in the dungeon are moving?”

“Yes. They found a number of creatures moving around the dungeon. They were blocking anyone from entering the dungeon. And the majority of the creatures were in an extremely agitated state.”

I nodded.

The fairy was anxious about losing the Dungeon Master and unleashed the creatures. It was to stop any invaders from the outside.

“This place?”

“Please wait a moment.”

Chrisley cautiously took out a crystal ball.

“This is the place.”

The appearance of a dungeon appeared inside the crystal ball.

Orcs could be seen around the dungeon.

‘Here.’

I reviewed the creatures that I could see. There was a very high probability that it was Saman's dungeon.

I turned and headed to the 1st floor.

“Prepare the creatures with quick mobility. We will go immediately.”

*

200 saber tigers.

Spartoi and lich.

And the griffin!

The preparations were complete. It was sufficient to take over a dungeon. Especially if I joined forces with the others.

In addition, I needed to occupy the dungeon the Cruel Commander was facing.

‘I have to try it.’

Tsk tsk. I clicked my tongue after solidifying my impression of him.

The Cruel Commander. I bought it for 6,000 achievement points but my expectations were betrayed. It had been a long time since I felt like this. I wouldn't be able to get all those points back. Twiddling my thumbs wasn't in my nature.

I needed to calculate a way to use that guy. I didn't know if there was any way to control their migration but I needed to try.

‘Before that...’

I needed to take care of Saman's dungeon first.

The quick-witted demons nearby would try to occupy it. However, there would be a period of confusion where they wouldn't move. I needed to take advantage of this period. There was a need to clearly obtain that spot.

“Fight.”

I shook my head and moved to Japan's dungeon. Afterwards, I used Turtle Island to head to China.

Nanjin, Jiangsu Province, China.

The place where Earl Saman's dungeon was located. It was closer than I thought and all the lamps were dark. It was in a remote location that could be reached by train.

“It is great to see Master.”

Krasla descended on the griffin and went down on one knee. There were hundreds of shades around him. Their bodies were dusty like they hadn't washed. The griffin occasionally hit the ground. Kung! The ground would shake. All of them had moved for a long time. It was enough for praise.

“You did well.”

“I'm sorry that I didn't find it faster.”

“No.”

I looked over the dungeon.

I was approximately 500m away but could clearly see the dungeon. There were skeletons and zombies walking around. There were also occasion orcs and slime.

‘An inferior quality.’

The fairy of the dungeon could only move the creatures outside. But the level of the creatures was very low. The highest among them were still low grade...there were a few expensive creatures but the overall level was low.

The problem was choice and quantity so it made sense he had

belonged to Upa's faction. He was already dead but I wanted to praise his ignorance.

"Is that all?"

I asked just in case. Krasla briefly thought for a moment before saying.

"The entrance is completely blocked so it is impossible to scout."

"The shades as well?"

The shades had a half spiritual body. They could avoid the low quality creatures and enter the dungeon. Their speed was also quite fast.

Krasla shook his head.

"The shadow sinners are located at the entrance to the dungeon. I didn't want to carelessly cause a war so I decided to wait for Master."

Shadow sinners...an advanced 3Lv evolved form of the shades. The shadow sinners made it impossible for the shades to pierce through.

"Well done."

I gave a small nod. There was no telling what the fairy would do. I needed to sweep them all at once.

Krasla tensed up and said.

“If you give the order then I will thoroughly cleanse the dungeon.”

“No. I will take on this task.”

“Will it be okay? Dungeon Master is too high ranking to do something like this.”

It sounded like flattery but he meant it.

I wasn't required to deal with low grade creatures. But in this case, I needed to stand at the forefront.

‘I must clearly show that I am occupying the dungeon.’

It was because the dungeon's fairy was watching. The anxious fairy had blocked the entrance after the death of the demon. It would observe anyone that tried to come in. It would watch closely the moment the offensive started and I would show my overwhelming power.

Then things would become simpler.

I wore the red cloth 'Sloth' and held 'Wrath.' I even triggered a secondary item. It was to show a more authentic appearance.

"Paranormal."

-One of the five blessings of Paranormal, 'Strong Attraction' has been applied.

Those who come near. Or see your laugh. From then on, they will be your slave. But, I'm sorry. The immutable laws can't be helped. Smiling at orcs or elves? The perfection of the 'face.' It would still be more significant than the default setting.

I started frowning.

'The odds are really strange.'

Increasing all stats by 2 for an hour or increasing magic power by 5 for 30 minutes, I had never seen those two blessings.

Quite strange. I got 'unlimited energy' two times. It was like this when I needed to go into a fight.

'In the future, I should only use it when absolutely necessary.'

I couldn't show such a clumsy appearance in a fight for my life. It wasn't very good news.

I clicked my tongue.

Krasla, the griffin, the lich, the spartoi and the 200 saber tigers were behind me.

Chaeeng!

I raised Wrath high into the sky. And the sword stretched forward.

“Follow me. Annihilate the enemy.”

In fact, I was sorry for the enemy.

Right now, even the saber tigers could handle the orcs. They had hunted orcs many times so they were straightforward opponents. The spartoi were made from the bones of a dragon and their whole bodies were excellent weapons. Not to mention the lich, griffin and Krasla.

But...I was the one leading them. I breached through thousands of low grade creatures until I reached the entrance of the dungeon.

It was where I found the shadow sinners. They were creatures that I fought in the United Kingdom. My abilities now couldn't be compared to then.

Suuuk.

The chains attached to their feet. The connected iron sphere quickly moved through the air.

Teook!

However, I didn't avoid it. I reached out and caught the flying iron sphere.

The effect of 95 strength! Strength had almost transcended that wall so the iron spheres thrown by the shadow sinners were like child's play.

“Get out of the way. I am going to see your master.”

Advanced creatures had high intelligence. They could understand my words. There was also the fairy watching. Even so, there were no signs so it meant negotiations didn't succeed.

‘It is still lacking.’

Iron spheres.

‘Dark Sword.’

Buuuuong!

A dark aura surrounded Wrath.

Unlike Wrath or Sloth, Dark Sword was a skill applied directly to the item. I could use it to separate the air.

The shadow sinners watched Dark Sword with confusion. They took one step back and were extremely vigilant.

‘The basic darkness?’

Darkness could recognize darkness. The shadow sinners were born from fear and could understand Dark Sword.

However...they realized too late.

I hated saying something twice so I didn't repeat my previous words. I kicked off the ground. And the startled shadow sinners threw their iron spheres at me.

Chwaruk!

The iron spheres stretched across the area. At the same time, the shadow sinners twisted the chains.

Kung!

The chains brushed past me. The ground was deep and they were trying to pressure me to stop moving around so freely.

I just snapped the chains with my sword. I also cut the shadow sinner that I appeared in front of. But, it didn't restore itself.

Suuu...

The shadow sinners were very confused. They didn't use their chains and retreated even further.

‘Indeed.’

I gave a pleased smile.

Wounds caused by Dark Sword couldn't be healed. It wasn't just confined to biological wounds. Substances made of magic power were also valid. It was a lot more useful than I thought.

Achievements Store. I had been hit in the back of the head by the Cruel Commander's Corps but Dark Sword was a proper skill.

Suak!

I only admired it for a moment.

I turned and sliced off the head of the shadow sinner.

The griffin dealt with a number of slimes using the Fire and Lightning skill.

The lich played with the zombies. The zombies were dead so they couldn't avoid the lich's 'Corpse Explosion' skill. Those with high intelligence wouldn't suffer from it but the low grade creatures didn't have those type of defenses.

'Everything is almost cleaned up.'

They had handled thousands of creatures in only 20 minutes. The difference in quality with the creatures I brought was too great. And I was the director of the damage!

"I will give support."

Krasla approached me with his red spear.

I said quietly.

"Come along. Increase the speed."

The result of the fight was determined.

There was no need to waste time.

I reached the top floor in a flash and looked at the Dungeon Core.

There was little change in the configuration of the creatures behind me. Only five saber tigers had died.

“Will you smash Sik Sik’s core?”

“Sik Sik? That is your name?”

Above the Dungeon Core, there was a fairy with both hands on her waist.

“Yes, that’s right. My name is Sik Sik. And smash me. Sik Sik will go back to nature. Sik Sik doesn’t know who you are but Sik Sik won’t join another master after Saman!”

The nature of the fairy. Sik Sik would say ‘Sik Sik’ when she was upset. In any case...demons were all the same when it came to abusing the fairies. Saman was like that with Sik Sik. So her reaction was like that.

I said lightly.

“Join me.”

“Aren’t those words like tea and honey?”

“Tea and honey?”

“Those two have the worst chemistry. It is bad to eat together.”

It was a clear answer.

“Sik Sik. I do not persecute fairies. You will notice that I have the blessing of a fairy.”

“You have the blessing of the fairy? Where...”

Kung kung!

Sik Sik’s eyes flashed as she sniffed like a dog.

“This smells like Yihi?”

“You know Yihi?”

“I know. A wicked bitch. She acts like she is better than other fairies and then pouts when she needs to play alone! She even stepped on a gift of flowers that Sik Sik gave her!”

Sik Sik took a deep breath after her yell.

I never thought there would be such a relationship between the two. I could feel a headache coming on.

“That is regrettable.”

“The light from the very rare flower faded! Sik Sik struggled for years because of it.”

“...You can tell her yourself if you join.”

If I didn't speak then it might not ever end.

“You will really become the devil?”

“I won't allow any other person to sit on that seat.”

“But I don't want the Fairy King to be Yihi.”

“I will give an equal chance to all fairies. And the Fairy King will be decided by the performance of the fairies. Wouldn't you like to have a chance to become the Fairy King someday?”

“That's right.”

Sik Sik was deep in thoughts.

She sneaked a peek at me and then the creatures behind me.

Overwhelming actions. Advanced creatures. She started to compare it to Earl Saman.

Abandon the existing contract and sign a new one. Then she could avoid the penalty of ‘destruction.’ Of course she would have some concerns.

Approximately 10 minutes passed before Sik Sik opened her mouth.

“Okay. I won’t return to nature. Saman didn’t have any chance to make Sik Sik the king. But isn’t it different now? Then I will call you Dungeon Master!”

Finally I achieved it.

I put Wrath away and said.

“Don’t worry.”

*

-You have taken over the dungeon.

1 extra stat point has been obtained.

1,000 achievement points will be added.

The message window came up now that the contract was complete.

At the same time, an intense light emerged from Japan's dungeon. The magic circle for movement between the three dungeons in South Korea, Japan and China was completed.

‘Now I will go see him.’

My eyes narrowed.

The Cruel Commander!

I obtained Saman's dungeon so now it was time to punish the wayward mutt.

I wanted to look for the creature at the altar but it would take time to do that. The Cruel Commander was busy running around. He caused blood to flow wherever his feet touched. If they wiped out the humans then it would contribute to the destruction.

Craziness.

I could only think of those words.

Thanks to that...not only in China but demons in other areas noticed the abnormalities.

‘Troublesome.’

It had been some time since the angels attacked.

The power of a duke or grand duke was enough to be threatening. I didn’t know the limits of the Cruel Commander and his troops.

In order to prepare the Cruel Commander, I needed to inject some awareness into him. I would also try to balance their slaughter of humans with those of demons.

Anyway, they were mercenaries that would disappear after 90 days. It would be a benefit if any demons died. Even if it was a bit discouraging, the 6,000 achievement points was worth it if other demons were killed. Of course, this also included Saman’s dungeon. I was able to occupy it quickly due to the Cruel Commander.

I looked down at the ground from aboard the griffin. Hundreds of humans were holding weapons and trying to block me. It was a situation where they were trying to confront me.

“Griffin. Sweep them all up!”

Kkiii!

‘Mere Lightning’ emerged from the griffin’s mouth. The griffin’s unique skill that swept everything up.

Kwa ru ru rung!

Fire and lightning hit the ground and melted everything. The humans were only armed with crude weapons and received serious injuries.

The handful of surviving humans ran away terrified.

The destruction contribution would slowly climb by killing thousands of humans. I didn’t pay attention to hundreds. Instead, the best way to not raise contribution anymore was to stop the Cruel Commander.

The saber tigers snatched the fleeing humans. Finally, I turned my head to the structure that I could see.

*

“For the Emperor!”

Just like his name, the Cruel Commander had no mercy. His 50,000 troops had already slaughtered thousands of humans but his thirst for blood didn’t stop. The 50,000 troops got rid of all living things.

The golden sword gleamed with every thrust. He was busy commanding the main army to hit the demon's dungeon. He had already gone through thousands of low grade creatures up to the 20th floor.

For now, it was going smoothly.

His corps were all experienced warriors. His army would only start dying in front of stronger creatures.

‘The yin magic power is climbing up!’

The Cruel Commander clenched his teeth. He couldn't forgive the demons for trying to rob the treasure. They invaded the Middle World and threatened the Emperor. The Emperor would have united the whole continent if it wasn't for those guys.

‘Due to God's curse, it is His Majesty's fate to stop the demons.’

And he hated the one called ‘God’ more than the demons. A transcendent person too strong for the Emperor's army. The God cursed the Emperor in order to restore the balance. Stop the demons invading the Middle World...the fate of a guardian.

The Emperor gambled his life in order to throw off the confines of fate. He firmly walked down a path of stigma. This was the reason why the Cruel Commander and his army guarded the warehouses so desperately.

If the Emperor died, he just laughed and continued to kill.

The fate of the guardians and what that meant!

“These damn scum! How dare you make me use my points? Don’t even think about leaving alive!”

At that moment, there was a large number of creatures. The quality of the creatures was completely different from before. And there was a demon in the centre.

‘It won’t be easy.’

The Cruel Commander thought.

The army had split into 10 groups so he had come here with 5,000 troops. It was reduced to 4,000 while attacking the dungeon.

The demon didn’t look very good. The awful appearance was because he had used too many ‘points.’ The Cruel Commander didn’t know what it meant so he just pulled out a giant axe.

“I will take on the Cruel Commander! I will beat you to a pulp...”

“Fall back!”

No matter how cruel, he was still a commander.

There was no need to fight in the middle of enemy territory.

“What? Fall back? These fools! I will let you know that!”

The demon led the creatures and started the chase.

It was a tense chase.

But the experienced Cruel Commander gave excellent commands so the skeletons didn't receive any damage while moving.

And just like he knew the situation, the powerful 'skeleton knights' were placed at the entrance.

The Cruel Commander quickly joined the soldiers outside the dungeon.

The demon and creatures followed. The soldiers not attacking other dungeons joined and increased the numbers to 13,000.

But he didn't show the number to the demon. He sent them to different places and ordered them to wait. And then they revealed themselves when the demon and creatures entered the narrow terrain.

“For the Emperor!”

Kung! Kung!

An orderly manner. The loud sound of the simultaneous footsteps were enough to give an intimidating presence.

“This...! These undead bastards! Don’t be so cocky!”

Marquis Dellat. He had returned straight to his dungeon after receiving the siege message.

He sent the news to Grand Duke Okullos at the same time but the Cruel Commander and his corps were surprisingly powerful. He already lost a significant number of creatures while attacking the angels.

He had to use his points with trembling hands. He had wanted to save it for the Demon World Auction so it was natural to feel furious.

However...the resistance decreased as he fell into a trap.

Kwaduduk!

There was no escape anywhere. It was well-planned out. They slowly but surely tightened around the creatures.

“Kill!”

Dellat cried out with anger.

The fight was heating up. Dellat wasn't someone to be trifled with. He used almost all the 1.5 million points gained from the angel hunt. It made sense that such power could match the skeleton soldiers.

‘Drag out the time.’

However, Dellat started to feel the threat to his life. The number of creatures were gradually reducing. If it stayed this way then he would die.

But he had a chance of winning if he bought more time.

Grand Duke Okullos wouldn't stay still if a demon in his faction was at a risk of dying. He had requested assistance from Okullos who was moving here. The undead would find it impossible to deal with him.

He immediately changed from offense to defense. It was to buy some time.

And...

Shyaaaaaah!

A huge green stem shot out from the ground.

The circumference was 5 metres but it gave off a formidable presence that could easily reach tens of metres.

Kwang! Kwang!

The stem towered over the skeleton soldiers.

A familiar skill.

Dellat smiled.

“My Master, Okullos-nim!”

Okullos and 3 dukes.

The situation was reversed again.

*

When I arrived in the footsteps of the Cruel Commander, corpses were strewn all over.

It seemed like the battle wasn't over. The Cruel Commander was leading his army against tens of thousands of creatures.

‘Was I one step too late?’

I frowned.

Five demons caught my eye.

The Cruel Commander gave an order to push them but they were enduring. The Cruel Commander and his troops were facing a small number of demons.

‘Okullos. And the dukes.’

This was an impediment. A rather large one. The final boss had appeared at the dungeon.

‘They were drawn out.’

Right now, I wanted to focus on Grand Duke Upa. Okullos being here wasn’t a good thing.

Okullos was famous but I never knew what he was thinking.

Ariel, Upa and Pandemonium had characteristics that I could use to make plans. However, Okullos was different.

In my previous life, he didn’t seem to be greedy for the position

of devil despite having many advantages. In addition, he had many eccentricities that I couldn't understand. But he wasn't stupid. He gained advantages faster than anyone else. Okullos had a number of achievements and benefits from special events.

Someone who wasn't easily measurable. The most difficult opponent among the grand dukes.

In addition, he brought a small number of creatures. The Cruel Commander was there but I made a wise decision not to face him directly. They were in the middle of a fight so I wouldn't be noticed. Now was the perfect time to remove myself.

At that moment, one of the creatures fell.

“Ah...!”

The Cruel Commander's eyes turned towards me. He was quite a distance away but looked exactly at me.

Chaeeng!

A short silence. It seemed like he couldn't believe what he was seeing as his sword dropped.

“This magic power! This overwhelming presence!”

And his body trembled.

“Your Majesty!”

He directed his horse and starting moving towards me.

I panicked for a moment.

“Your Majesty?”

What did that mean?

Numerous soldiers were coming along with the Cruel Commander.

It was chaos. The orderly appearance they had shown so far couldn't be seen. They paid no attention to the creatures around them.

Falling, throwing shields...pandemonium. Even the bodies of allies were stepped on.

Okullos' expression was asking 'what are they doing?'

The Cruel Commander ran. Soldiers? He showed no signs of caring about them. Thanks to that, he was the first to reach me.

Cheek!

He dismounted from the horse and took off his helmet. And knelt down.

“I seek an audience with the New Emperor.”

“.....”

A scar covered face. It gave a manly appearance but that made no difference to me.

Something like this wasn't expected. Coming up to me and kneeling out of nowhere.

The Cruel Commander had a tearful expression. Tears couldn't come out because of his dead body but he would be shedding tears right now.

“Finally...you've finally taken off your constraints. Huhaha! Now you can preside over the continent and mock God. Huhahaha!”

“I don't know what you mean.”

“Ahh! You still don't remember completely? Certainly, it seems like not all the magic power in the heart is opened. Don't worry. I know that you will wake up. We will help Your Majesty defeat God!”

The soldiers lined up behind him. There were only bones remaining so their bodies clattered.

Excitement, growing excitement...

“Heart?

I clearly heard the word ‘heart.’

‘Heart of the Hell Monarch.’

The Heart of the Hell Monarch I accidentally obtained from the Easter Egg.

It was associated with the Cruel Commander?

Chapter 98-99: Grand Duke Okullos

‘Rather...’

I started to get a headache. Several situations had twisted together. It seemed like I wouldn’t be able to easily solve this. I glanced towards Okullos and the dukes.

A quandary. The Cruel Commander really made everything become tangled up. The Cruel Commander and his corps who called me ‘Master!’ I somehow gained the qualifications to cut off the Cruel Commander’s head here. I didn’t know why he referred to me as the Emperor. But.

‘Waking up.’

I caught those words. This guy obviously knew about the Heart of the Hell Monarch. The Heart of the Hell Monarch played an important role in raising my intelligence. Even so, he said that it had yet to fully awaken.

If awakened properly then my problem could be solved. The problem of how to get out of this crisis...

I immediately looked with Mind’s Eye.

Name: Cruel Commander Maxium

Occupation: Emperor's Knight

Title: * No Decay (U, Strength +6)

* Steadfast (U, Stamina +6)

* Undead Commander (Ex U, Agility and Intelligence +4)

Stats

Strength: 85 (+6)

Intelligence: 82 (+4)

Agility: 81 (+4)

Stamina: 88 (+6)

Magic Power: 74

Potential: (410+20/410)

Uniqueness: A faithful knight defending the treasure trove for tens of thousands of years.

Skill: Lustrous Golden Sword (Epic), Cruel Leadership (Epic)

[Relative Comparison]

Randolph Brigsiel

Strength 95 Intelligence 77 Agility 90 Stamina 85 Magic 96
Potential (392+51/500)

Cruel Commander Maxium

Strength 91 Intelligence 86 Agility 85 Stamina 94 Magic 74
Potential (410+20/410)

It was considerable. He reached all his potential and even got 430 points. He had as much as 3 titles. And there were two epic grade skills.

‘There is no growth potential so he is in an almost finished form.’

This was enough for a high class creature. A little stronger than the griffin or Gigantes.

The skeleton soldiers around were also usable. The regular soldiers were intermediate level while the knights reached advanced. Greed emerged.

Nevertheless, it was too early to have Okullos as an enemy. I was wearing a mask but...that wouldn't be able to fool a grand duke's keen eyes.

Then Cruel Commander Maxium said to me.

“Your Majesty. The new Maxium will help you by sweeping away the dirty demons and creatures. After a long time, I finally have the privilege of fighting on the battlefield with you.”

His eyes shone. It was filled with expectations.

But my eyes were still looking at Okullos. He was slowly moving towards me with the dukes.

‘I don’t know what to do.’

Overall I was weak.

Maxium’s army was decreased. His numbers were similar to the creatures. In qualitative aspects, I was slightly lacking. I had a chance of winning if I faced the grand duke and dukes. But one direct hit might reveal my identity.

However, my concerns were surprisingly useless.

“Randolph Brigsiel.”

Okullos said to me.

I really couldn’t deceive a grand duke? I was able to outsmart the marquis and earls gathered in front of South Korea’s dungeon. Even Tashmal was unsure but Grand Duke Okullos was certain as soon as he saw me.

To make matters worse.

‘It is bittersweet.’

I inwardly sighed. It was already exposed. I took off the mask. And I pulled out Wrath.

‘First, reveal my strength. I need to do a lot of damage.’

Tilt the balance of power fully onto my side. If there was an all-out war with Okullos then the damage would be very serious. So it was best if I took action before Okullos.

I organized my thoughts and opened my mouth.

“Maxium. Follow me.”

“New Maxium, I will show my constant loyalty to Your Majesty.”

He knelt down as his body trembled. It was the same for the other skeleton soldiers. Their appearance seemed like they were having an epileptic seizure.

Despite having the chance of freedom, they never seized it.

Loyalty. Despite the fact that my ‘memories were incomplete,’ Maxium didn’t care. First he would deal with this situation before worrying about the awakening. In the future. It would naturally open.

The skeleton soldiers quickly drew back.

“Dark Sword.”

Buuuuong!

Wrath was surrounded by darkness.

“Paranormal.”

-One of the five blessings of Paranormal, ‘all stats +2’ for an hour has been applied.

‘Finally!’

It was the first time I received a useful blessing. Did it depend on the chances of victory?

Anyway, it was good news.

The griffin flew in the sky while the spartoi, lich and saber tigers followed closely.

Maxium?

He was standing right next to me.

“Your Majesty. Do you need a mount? I will dedicate myself.”

“There is no need.”

I would show my worth with my own two feet. I had no need for a mount.

I quietly watched the front. Okullos and the other demons were advancing.

‘They won’t let me pass.’

I needed to hit them without fail.

Tsk, things had been so twisted.

I lifted Wrath and said.

“Follow me. Annihilate the enemy.”

Kung!

A large step forward. All the troops moved forward at the signal.

Twin head ogres. An advanced 4Lv creature that was a variant of the normal ogres. 3 twin head ogres hacked away at the skeletons.

Peng! Pepeng!

Genome Flies...

The advanced 5Lv creatures that could use self-destruct. They were only 1 metre in size but tens of thousands of them self-destructing would cause huge damage.

Creatures that weren't sold in the Store of All Things. It also didn't appear at the Demon World Auction. A creature obtained through special events. They were creatures that needed to be disposed of but I had to handle something else first.

Kwaang!

Okullos' skill 'Nature's Punishment' had emerged from the ground. A huge, green stalk popped out in front of me. Next, the other three dukes hindered my movements.

'It isn't easy to face the four of them.'

In my previous life, I would not have been able to handle a duke properly. But now I was strong. Stronger. I would be able to confront the four of them. This situation was a problem but I should be able to beat at least one opponent.

“This guy! Let’s see you avoid being damaged by this!”

Pasak!

I hurriedly twisted my body to avoid an attack.

Duke Karqui. One of Okullos’ three thugs and a demon famous for his ‘Light Spray.’ But thanks to Paranormal, my agility had reached 92. My senses were always active. I moved as I detected the attack.

But my goal wasn’t Karqui.

Okullos. He was the only one I was running towards.

There was persistent interference but I almost reached him. I looked at Okullos and opened Mind’s Eye.

Name: Okullos

Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title: * One Who Deals With Nature (Epic, Intelligence +4, Magic Power +7)

* Master of the Largest Forest Olmot (Epic, All stats + 3)

Stats

Strength: 73 (+3)

Intelligence: 85 (+7)

Agility: 83 (+3)

Stamina: 73 (+3)

Magic Power: 87 (+11)

Potential: (401+26/500)

Uniqueness: The heartbeat of the forest can be heard. The only demon to deal with nature.

Skill: Nature’s Punishment (Epic), Naturalization (Epic), Pending Question (U)

[Relative Comparison]

Randolph Brigsiel

Strength 97 Intelligence 79 Agility 92 Stamina 87 Magic 98
Potential (392+61/500)

(All stats +2 due to Paranormal)

Okullos

Strength 76 Intelligence 92 Agility 86 Stamina 76 Magic 98
Potential (401+26/500)

He wasn't a grand duke for nothing. High stats.

The dukes also had stats close to 400. This was their pure abilities without the help of items like me. If I stayed stagnant then they would have caught up with me in a year or two. This would be tight. I had no intention of going easy on them since they knew my identity. Right now, I was in a position where I was their 'enemy.'

Chwahahak!

Nature's Punishment. I sliced the giant, green stalk. The magic power was similar so the attack worked well. But that also applied to me. There was a need to be as careful as possible. I maintained a distance of 200m from Okullos. It was a distance I could cross in one jump.

It had taken me 40 minutes to reach this location.

At that moment, Okullos' cool eyes fell on my body.

-Pending Question (U) has been triggered.

It is looking for Randolph Brigsiel's weakness.

Mind's Eye (Ex U) has successfully detected it. Defended against 70%.

-Intelligence calibration!

But the opponent's magic power is too high. Defended against 81%.

Defense against Pending Question (U) has succeeded.

I started frowning. Grand Duke Ariel also had a mental skill. Okullos' Pending Question seemed to be something similar. The difference was that it was looking for a weak point instead of dominating the opponent.

'It would have affected me if it wasn't for Mind's Eye.'

I wasn't sure what my weaknesses were but Pending Question would have found it. Anyway, the presence of Mind's Eye was quite helpful.

Okullos' face twitched slightly. A surprised expression.

I leapt forward with Wrath.

Saack!

I cut something. But it wasn't Okullos. Countless branches had emerged from Okullos' body. They were blocking Wrath.

Okullos gave a slight smile.

"...Randolph Brigsiel."

I pointed Wrath at him.

"You managed to recognize me."

"Yes, you are quite interesting."

The words reached the Cruel Commander and his army. I just laughed.

"I'm glad that you find me interesting."

"Huhu. Interesting, interesting. I have been keeping an eye on you since the beginning. Ever since you challenged us in the Demon World. I think you have grown into a really interesting person."

"....."

I was at a loss for words.

Certainly, I had once challenged the grand dukes

Ariel broke me and I was never Upa's opponent. Pandemonium? He thoroughly enjoyed torturing me. Okullos had looked at me with an unknown expression and cut off my arm. But I didn't think any of them had remembered me. Ariel and Pandemonium treated me like it was the first time we met. It was natural for Upa not to know me since we never met in the Demon World.

But...

He remembered?

I closed my mouth. I clenched my fists with rage. I never thought anyone would remember me but this guy had just brought up my past.

Mysterious. A really weird feeling that was hard to describe in words. Joy, bliss? There were no such things. I didn't know how to explain this anger and annoyance.

“Unlucky.”

That's right. It was really unlucky. Okullos' expression subtly changed. But underneath was a mixture of 'interesting.'

“I remember the first time you walked into the centre of my forest.”

Ah...that made sense.

The enormous Olmot Forest. Okullos was the master.

It had taken me 1 year to find and challenge him. Now I would never do that again. That 1 year hadn't been for nothing. I still had bad luck. I frowned as I recalled that time.

“I found you interesting so I didn't cut your throat.”

Then he sent me a chilly gaze. The three dukes were ready to jump at me at any time. Dark Sword was pointed at Okullos so it wasn't easy for them to recklessly jump in.

“Certainly you seem to have grown...somehow you seem to have some knowledge. I am curious about the secret behind your strength and the high class creatures.”

Okullos didn't lose his leisurely air. First, there were three dukes surrounding them. He also had faith in his skills. He had the upper hand in the situation. There was no need for him to be impatient. In addition, he was 'confident' that he could catch me at any time.

Okullos turned and looked at Maxium.

“I will punish the undead that attacked the dungeon of my demons. You can leave if the Cruel Commander is left behind.”

“That isn’t possible.”

Leaving him behind wasn’t a big thing. But the Cruel Commander knew something about the heart’s awakening. Additionally, I didn’t like leaving any of my property behind.

An opponent acting free and confident towards me was unacceptable. My primary goal was to create tension among the grand dukes and win the throne. I couldn’t show weakness in our first encounter. I lightly chanted.

“Wrath.”

-High magic power (98) has caused strength, agility and stamina to rise by 9.

Intelligence has dropped by 20 to 76. Due to the unique characteristics caused by Astral Code, you won’t be taken over by the ‘Wrath’ state.

Strength 106, Agility 101, Stamina 96. Including the effect from Paranormal, two stats had risen beyond 100.

Of course, Paranormal’s blessing only had 10 minutes remaining but I didn’t care.

The blood vessels in my body reduced and my heart beat faster. I wasn't taken over by an abnormal state. However, intelligence was greatly lowered due to the Wrath skill.

'I can use it in conjunction with Sloth but...'

I recalled the terrible time when I tested both Wrath and Sloth. There was no need to risk attacking my allies. Wrath was enough.

I had my reason but I was still in a state of excitement. I automatically clenched my teeth. My sword trembled. The darkness in the surrounding area increased.

I lifted my gaze and faced Okullos.

Okullos detected danger and his brows furrowed. A number of blue lights immediately emerged from his body. Roots entered the ground and he became a strong tree that wouldn't move. An instinctive movement. This change wasn't unusual to me.

Epic grade skill 'Naturalization.' The downside was that Okullos couldn't move but this skill gave him absolute defense and offense.

Suaack!

Thousands of long grass started sprouting and grabbed hold of me. The grass stretching from the ground meant I had a limited

space to move. I couldn't simply demonstrate strong attacks. But... I clearly saw small gaps where my sword could enter. This was due to agility. Once it went beyond 100, I could see things I normally couldn't.

I made decisions with cold reason. My eyes didn't leave Okullos.

‘Okullos. I will make you aware of it.’

I was still immature when I was running around the Demon World.

I was an ‘enemy’ that could truly threaten him!

Slowly but surely, I started to move through the gaps.

*

Cruel Commander Maxium.

He kept an eye on his master while causing devastation on the battlefield. The magic power that could be felt even from a distance was obviously the heart of the Emperor. The reason why it entered the body of a demon didn't matter. Maxium was excited by the overwhelming appearance of the demon.

Electrifying. The power to beat everything. The sword moved quickly and the afterimage struck countless enemies. He would

unleash a stronger power as he fell into a deeper crisis.

“For the Great Emperor!”

Maxium wielded his golden sword. The sword now emitted a brilliant light.

The Great Emperor. His master was struggling alone in enemy territory!

Dalgurak! Dalgurak!

The skeleton soldiers moved. He directed them to certain positions. They cut the necks of the enemies and advanced forward. The limbs were cut off as they moved. Their bodies continued advancing even without arms or legs.

A switch in momentum. The battle became taut.

At the same time, the griffin and other creatures couldn't be ignored. They weren't under Maxium's command so he disliked them. But they were the Emperor's creatures.

“Huhaha! Look! The demons are being overcome by His Majesty's overwhelming power!”

Maxium laughed while wielding his sword.

From Maxium's point of view, the four demons didn't have a strong partnership. In particular, one person felt completely different from the rest.

But those demons. They weren't all his opponents. Even if he couldn't recover all his power, Maxium had no doubts about the Emperor's victory. It was a breathtaking moment as he felt his master's power rise by leaps and bounds in front of certain demons. The air started vibrating from an abnormal change.

And the struggle started.

“Great! Your Majesty! Take care!”

Kung! Kung! Kung!

All the skeletons knocked on their shield with their sword. The sound resonated and spread all over the place.

A cheer. Roars. Praying for his victory. He should not be defeated. Winning was the only way to prove himself.

Maxium kept an eye on the Emperor's fight against the demons.

“Huhaha...!”

He wasn't amused.

The Emperor was forced to fight in a confined space and were surrounded by demons.

He frowned every time the tree like demon Okullos was cut. He couldn't feel relieved. The branches cut by Dark Sword couldn't recover. Thousands of branches had to be sliced by the sword before eventually revealing the underside.

The remaining three dukes...two of them didn't even enter the fight. They couldn't find any gaps.

Maxium couldn't help even if he wanted to. He couldn't barge into the fight.

He shook his head. The fight was violent and sharp.

His hands unconsciously started trembling but he soothed them.

This was the battlefield given to him. He could stop some worry by taking care of this fight.

Chwahak!

At that moment, the Emperor's sword fiercely sliced the body of a demon. It wasn't a fatal blow but it was adequate. His face changed. It wasn't complete but there was a small smile. His master couldn't help smiling.

It was then that Maxium realized.

...He would win!

“Our God has returned!”

His heart had already stopped but it was burning hot.

*

10 minutes passed. Paranormal's blessing finished.

At the same time, I succeeded in leaving a long stab in Okullos' side.

“Next is the neck.”

Ssik!

I smiled, revealing my teeth.

Okullos had a confused expression.

“You...are you really Randolph Brigsiel?”

“Then who are you looking at?”

“Who, who are you?”

The attitude wasn't easily recognized.

It was natural. I was completely different compared to the Demon World. Decades had passed for me before I came back in time. He thought I only became moderately stronger but I brutally broke his defenses. He no longer mentioned 'interesting.' All that confidence had disappeared.

“Okullos-nim!”

The dukes approached them. But Okullos stretched out his hand and stopped them.

“I can see with Naturalization. I know the essence of all life. You are not Randolph Brigsiel.”

“Don't make me laugh. Aren't you just trying to escape?”

“I...”

Okullos opened his mouth. He seemed to be suspicious of something but Okullos couldn't express it. Okullos hesitated for 10 seconds before shaking his head.

“There is not beneficial for both sides to be fighting each other.

That skill of yours is gone and I won't be able to stay in this state much longer. How about we withdraw for now?"

It was accurate. I didn't know how much longer Wrath would last. Prolonging this fight would do more harm than good.

"What? Haha!"

But I just let out a big laugh.

One of the 4 grand dukes, Okullos had requested a truce.

"You certainly have an abnormal growth. If you are lucky then you might be able to kill me here. But you also can't avoid death."

That was also right. Okullos' words were likely to be true. I knew that this battlefield was fierce. It wouldn't be easy to get away from the three dukes when I was in a weakened state.

"Is it really like that?"

But I couldn't just accept it.

"Do you want to go to the end?"

Okullos asked like I was stupid.

“Give up one arm. Then I will think about it.”

I suggested.

I couldn't let go so easily.

And in fact...Okullos was better alive than dead.

If Okullos disappeared then the balance of power would be completely destroyed. The entire situation might get back to the other grand dukes. If Okullos died then the rest of the demons would scale up rapidly. In addition, variables would appear.

If I wanted to get rid of the variables, I would need to get rid of the rest of the demons in Okullos' faction. Grand Duke Upa was also my enemy right now. It was still too premature.

“One arm...cheaper than I thought.”

Okullos knew that it would never recover if I cut off his arm with Dark Sword. Even so, he gracefully accepted. Obviously something had happened to make him change his mind.

“Okullos-nim!”

The dukes were filled with resentment. However, Okullos' expression didn't change.

“You don’t have to worry. I got my hands on some very large information today. The value of my arm can’t even be compared.”

At that moment, the dukes became quiet. They only said a few words of complaints.

‘A bluff?’

Okullos was quite unknown. So it wasn’t easy for me to determine what was true or false. Personally, I thought he was just bluffing. There had to be a reason why the dukes were looking like that.

“Cut it.”

Okullos released Naturalization and held out his right arm. Okullos directly stretched out his arm towards me. It wasn’t easy to remember that he was a grand duke.

I grasped Wrath.

And...

Suuk!

Duk!

The war was over. Okullos and his demons started to back off.

I stepped back after cutting off Okullos' right arm.

I looked at the situation around me. In less than an hour, the troops had been reduced by more than half. I could tell how long and violently they had been fighting.

“Your Majesty!”

The Cruel Commander Maxium came running over.

I blocked him from kneeling down. I caught Maxium's shoulder and looked straight into his eyes.

“The way to awaken the heart. What is it?”

Chapter 100: Dubolong's Request (1)

The skill effect of Wrath ended shortly afterwards.

It was fast. I judged the battle was over, so there was no need to hold onto the effects.

Additionally...the fight with Okullos ended smoothly but this wasn't over. We had already fought, so one of my weapons against Okullos had disappeared. I could also determine some things. I could make some preparations. I also confirmed that the grand dukes would never form an alliance with each other.

Okullos had no contact with them at all. Okullos seemed to occupy a halfway position like watered down alcohol. However, at the end he mentioned that he obtained some large information. It was possible this was a bluff, but he was an opponent whose actions couldn't be predicted.

‘The heart needs to be awakened properly.’

I asked the Cruel Commander despite the risk. I could be stabbed in the neck if I wasn't prepared for the awakening.

Maxium was also nervous. He held out his sword in its scabbard.

“The Emperor gave me this sword.”

I grasped the scabbard.

At the same time, I checked it with Mind's Eye.

-Name – The Emperor's Sword (Epic, Ego)

Description: A sword favoured by the Shadow Emperor. It was created with wrought iron, martanium and intense magic spells to form an ego.

* Unable to be destroyed. Dignity will rise significantly. It is possible to use 'Emperor's Army' once every 10 years.

*** The spirit of the sword is unavailable.

The description didn't say anything about awakening. The ego part of the sword stood out and I was curious about Emperor's Army, but that wasn't the priority right now.

“What is this sword?”

I asked with a frown and Maxium explained.

“The sword that has a spirit dwelling inside it. The sword can think for itself. It doesn't recognize my hands but might open for Your Majesty.”

“The sword spirit...”

“The Emperor entrusted me with this sword before going to his eternal rest. He asked me to return it when he came back. The sword is incomplete so it might be able to complete you.”

So there were some groundworks laid for the awakening.

I pulled out the sword instantly. A brilliantly shining gold sword was revealed.

Yiing!

The sword started vibrating. It tried to make me drop it as it rejected me.

But at that moment...

-Divine Sword Unity (Ex U, Passive) has been triggered. The ego dwelling inside ‘The Emperor’s Sword’ has succumbed to the user.

The ego had become gentle due to Divine Sword Unity. The sword stopped vibrating and acted properly in my hand.

After the approval, it felt familiar, like I had used it before. But

that was it. The ego didn't talk to me.

‘Was it originally like this?’

Ego sword. The number present in the Demon World was very low; I had never touched one. And the ego in the sword didn't show any visible response. I tapped it with my fingers. There was no response.

“Ah, as expected...! You have received the recognition of the sword! I had faith!”

However, Maxium cried out with admiration next to me. He seemed impressed as he formed a tight fist. I scowled and asked.

“Now what?”

“I don't know the details. Just to return this sword...actually, I only received permission to touch it.”

“That is no help.”

“I-I'm really sorry.”

Maxium bowed his head.

Tsk. I clicked my tongue.

It was a clue but I didn't know how to make it work. Anyway, I was satisfied that I obtained a sword with an epic rating. The problem was that there were many ambiguous points.

Anyway, the Shadow Emperor had left the sword behind so there was obviously something.

‘Emperor’s Army.’

I checked the skill of the sword. It could only be used once every 10 years so I read the detailed explanation.

-Name – The Emperor’s Army (???)
Description: Over 100,000 ‘ghost cavalry’ that exist in an underground warehouse can be summoned. The ghost calvary have no flesh and will wipe out the user’s enemies. They will return to their original location after 90 days.

Not all the soldiers were summoned here with Maxium and the skeletons. I realized the quality of the Shadow Emperor’s army and why he was so feared.

At that time, Maxium fell on both knees and begged.

“Your Majesty. It is time to build a new empire once you return to the continent. Maxium will help you regain your position.”

“That isn’t possible.”

I had no way of getting to the Shadow Emperor’s continent.

Then Maxium glanced towards me.

“How can I leave you behind? This is a world of thieves. It seems to be different but similar to the Demon World.”

“I have something to achieve here. Until I achieve it, I have no intention of leaving.”

“What is it? Can’t I help you?”

“You can’t stay here for a long time, right?”

“...That’s right. The magic power is a little scattered. After some time, we will be returned to the warehouse.”

Maxium showed signs of dissatisfaction as he spoke.

It was expected. The system didn’t like me.

“But! I can still help Your Majesty even if it is only a short period.

Maxium and the soldiers will be happy to help.”

Maxium cried out.

There was still a bit of time left.

It was inevitable that the skeleton soldiers would be put to work. They showed a willingness to help without any complaints.

‘Increasing my dungeons right now isn’t very wise.’

Grand Duke Upa’s faction had already lost a dungeon so he would notice if he lost two or three. The dungeons in China were probably prepared for an attack.

At the very least, I needed to take a look at the dungeons in China.

‘But it is fine to cause some damage.’

I nodded lightly.

“I will designate you some dungeons. Causing them to lose some creatures will be of help to me.”

I said flatly.

Anyway, the troops would go back eventually. It didn't matter how many skeleton soldiers died.

“We will follow your words.”

Maxium replied without any doubts.

*

Maxium and his army appeared for exactly 90 days.

Maxium stopped hunting humans and focused on the dungeons I specified. Both dungeons belonged to Upa's faction. He was greatly passionate about helping the Emperor. Eventually, there weren't many soldiers remaining.

I earned a little more than 4 million points. The damage to the demons was at least 2 million points, I gained one dungeon and got my hands on an epic grade sword.

Furthermore, I got some confirmation about 'awakening.' My pure intelligence rose by 2. This had to mean something. I didn't know if it was awakening but the Emperor's Sword was clearly the right key. Just holding it in my hands stimulated the heart to increase my stats. They were connected to each other.

Anyway, time passed quickly and the day finally arrived.

Maxium and the few thousand soldiers left after hitting the dungeons belonging to Upa's faction in China looked upset.

"Your Majesty..."

"Good work."

"Can't we go together?"

"I have already said it. I have things to accomplish here."

Maxium regarded me as his Emperor. He treated me as sacred. I was considered to be the sun and moon, so Maxium worried endlessly about me. And he ultimately believed in me. Plus, he wanted to please me.

Maxium's expression turned sad. His appearance didn't fit the title of Cruel Commander at all. He fell to his knees.

"Maxium will look forward to the day Your Majesty returns."

The bodies of the remaining soldiers and Maxium blurred. Their magic power was scattered and transferred through the dimensional gate.

After a while, they completely disappeared.

“.....”

The spacious wilderness.

I remained there alone.

Chapter 101: Dubolong's Request (2)

Okullos' arm.

I tossed it in front of my dungeon in China. Buds sprouted from the arm and unknown flowers were now blooming.

‘Okullos, I don’t know what he got from me but I won’t be able to identify it now. On the other hand, I know him a little bit better.’

I noticed something when he used the Naturalization skill. Roots came out from Okullos' body. I looked at the arm in front of my dungeon.

This was China, at the dungeon that originally belonged to Saman. Unless information was exchanged among his faction, Upa wouldn't notice that this was my dungeon.

As long as Okullos didn't take dungeons from other demons, he wouldn't know that movement between dungeons was possible. I would be able to respond sufficiently if Okullos made any movements.

I moved to the top floor of the dungeon where Sik Sik was red-faced.

“Sik Sik! This bitch! How could you do that?”

“Bah! What did Yihi do? And why is Sik Sik calling me such a tasteless name?”

There was a familiar face.

Yihi was yelling at Sik Sik with crossed arms.

‘I guess the fairies can also move between dungeons.’

Movement. I thought I could only move my body but it was possible for the fairies to move as well. Guyo didn’t see the need but Yihi seemed to have past ties with Sik Sik.

“I worked so hard to find that flower. You just stepped on it.”

“Omo, Yihi did that? Well, that can’t be. There is no way Yihi would step on such a flower.”

Sik Sik’s shoulder was hit.

“But...Sik Sik said I was going to bring a flower to you...”

“That bothered Yihi too. I didn’t want you to bring me anything! Yihi got goose bumps because of it!”

“Sik Sik. I can’t forgive you. Just wait until I become the Fairy King!”

“Yihihi! That can’t be. Master is crazy about Yihi. Third parties should stay out! Do you think that you can steal Yihi’s place?”

“No, Master gave Sik Sik a chance!”

“No, Master is crazy about Yihi!”

“No!”

“No!”

I interrupted before the two started to fight each other.

“I will give fair chances.”

“Master!”

“M-Master...”

Sik Sik cheered while Yihi pouted.

“The ties between both of you are deeper than I thought.”

“It is a bad relationship.”

“Yihi’s stalker. Please scold her.”

Yihi sat on my shoulder and rubbed her cheek against mine to show off her closeness. Sik Sik’s face reddened.

“Did anything happen while I was away?”

“No, Master.”

“Yihi has something. Master hasn’t been back to the dungeon lately. So Yihi wanted to deliver this to you directly. Otherwise I wouldn’t have come here to see this ugly kid.”

Sik Sik immediately protested.

“What?”

“Bah!”

They were like cats and dogs.

Yihi ignored Sik Sik and held out a small piece of paper.

There were short sentences written...I didn’t take my eyes off the paper.

[The Dark Spirit King wants to meet you. I assure you that it will

be beneficial. How about I set up a time? Dubolong.]

There wasn't anything else stated on the paper, but the contents were unusual. Dark Spirit King. The director of the auction who was capable of standing shoulder to shoulder with the grand dukes. Had I ever seen him in my previous life?

‘An issue might have occurred.’

I spent a large amount of points and he handed over a Seed of the World Tree to me. The Dark Spirit King hoped to contain the grand dukes. Or he wanted me to grow to a similar level.

The meeting was to give me more assistance. Or something unexpected happened. There was no need to think for a long time.

But I didn't laugh, I couldn't relax and needed to be prepared. I wasn't naive about the Dark Spirit King. The Spirit World was full of ambitious schemers, great achievements were required to become the ruler of the Spirit World. He might plan to trick me somehow.

I needed to always calculate from a distance.

I turned the piece of paper and saw the time stated.

[10 days later. We will create a crack in space and time.]

In this regard, I was quite surprised.

An action like this was normal only when it came to the Demon World Auction.

Forcefully creating a crack to move just me to the Spirit World was a heavy burden. Originally it was impossible but the system seemed to allow it. Although a penalty would obviously be received: many spirits would be destroyed in the process.

‘It seems urgent.’

My expression hardened.

He seemed to be in a hurry to meet me. It definitely wasn’t ordinary.

I crumpled up the piece of paper.

10 days was enough time to do some clean-up.

I turned and gazed at the spirited Sik Sik.

“Sik Sik. Where is ‘he’ located?”

Sik Sik replied with a pout.

“On the floor directly below.”

“I understand.”

I moved to the floor below.

‘He’ was something I gained from the altar in China. There was a problem but...I was going to look at him once again.

The entrance to the floor was blocked by a huge pit. There was a brown, disgusting, strange creature emerging from it! He moved slowly like a snail and devoured everything around him.

“Master. Yihi thinks he is really ugly.”

Yihi who was sitting on my shoulder frowned. Even Yihi who had a strange sense of aesthetics was reluctant to look at him. There was also a foul smell.

Chwack!

At that moment, small tentacles emerged and headed towards me. I cut off the tentacles with Wrath.

“He still doesn’t recognize his master.”

“How dare he attack Master! A very bad creature. Should Yihi

kick his ass?”

I laughed as Yihi rolled up her sleeves.

“That’s okay. I heard that creature can even eat spiritual beings.”

“Hmph! Hum hum! Yihi will show mercy just this once.”

Yihi stealthily withdrew.

‘I don’t know what to do with something like this.’

A creature from one of the gods. He didn’t know why this uncontrollable, huge flesh that swallowed up everything was put on this earth. He even tried to eat me.

I opened Mind’s Eye to confirm his status.

Name: Infinite Flesh

Stats

Strength: 90

Intelligence: 0

Agility: 43

Stamina: 130

Magic Power: 35

Potential: (298/320)

Uniqueness: While delivering the dead, Anubis accidentally placed them in the ‘River of Chaos.’ A monster of chaos consisting of 20 million souls was born, and grows by consuming everything in its surroundings. He resembles ‘Gluttony’ of the seven sins.

Skill: Growth (Epic)

Stats that were extremely imbalanced. A creature that had transcendental stamina. But he was just a major headache. He couldn’t even recognize his master and was too busy eating!

Anyway, it was obvious that he would cause problems in my dungeon.

“Troublesome.”

I pressed a hand against my forehead. Then Yihi clapped her

hands.

“Master, Master. Throw him away. Yihi has been thinking. He is just an ungrateful bastard eating the magic power in the dungeon. He might even eat up the altars or Dungeon Core! Yihi is horrified just imagining it.”

“That’s right. I should throw him away.”

I inwardly sighed.

‘Throw him away?’

After all, he didn’t fit. It would have been okay if he had a little bit of intelligence. Keeping him in the dungeon would just cause a headache. It didn’t matter that he was a gift from the gods.

“But how will you get rid of him?”

Yihi placed her hands on her hips and asked.

Infinite Flesh had a habit of eating anything in close reach.

I contemplated for a moment before saying.

“I have to use a scroll.”

It was possible to move him using a scroll. It would waste some points but I needed to get rid of the creature before he caused problems.

“Yihihi! That is wise! But where will he go?”

Fairie were curious by nature. I thought of places where I could discard him.

‘I will place him near a dungeon belonging to Grand Duke Upa’s faction.’

Of course, there was no guarantee that Infinite Flesh would head to the dungeon. He was a senseless creature that wouldn’t listen to anyone’s commands but...I would also get points from any Awakened that tried to block him.

I decided to place him near Duke Pakan Griolli’s dungeon. It would require hundreds of thousands of points to move Infinite Flesh to Saudi Arabia but it was worth it if I could deal a blow to a duke.

Anyway, I had over 10 million points so it was an initiative I could take.

After handling the troublesome one, I moved to my dungeon in South Korea.

The 25th floor. I felt odd as I stepped into a sacred area. This was

the influence of holy power on demons. I walked forward and found Tashmal.

‘All the eggs are hatched.’

In the heart of the sacred zone, countless black fur formed a nest and baby angels with small wings were crawling. Tashmal was busy taking care of the baby angels and didn’t notice I had arrived.

“You seem busy.”

“Ah...! Did you come? That’s right. I am lacking hands.”

In contrast to her words, her expression was quite soft. I had never seen such ‘kindness’ on her face.

I said with a smile.

“You seem to be doing well.”

“I don’t know whether I am doing well. The angels are always raised by archangels. I just hope that...ah, this child! Come down!”

A baby angel was flying with its small wings. Tashmal panicked and grabbed the baby angel.

“Do you require anything?”

“Huu! Can you bring me a few leaves from the Tree of Origin?”

Tashmal said while forcing the baby angel to come down.

“Why do you need the leaves?”

“The leaves from the Tree of Origin will make their wings grow significantly larger. I only tried it a few times but the effect was excellent.”

Tashmal was a Dominions Angel and knew the important effect of the leaves. Certainly, there were a few leaves on the stem. I also had great interest in the growth of the angels.

“I will send it through Chrisley.”

“Thank you.”

I nodded.

Over time, I would start breaking down Tashmal’s ‘wall.’ She accepted the reality of raising the angels, but her final mission was to kill all the demons. She wouldn’t take action towards me until the end.

So it wasn’t easy for her to say thank you to me.

“If you need anything then speak to Chrisley.”

“Unders...ah! This troublemaker! You aren't ready to fly yet! Your wings are still weak and might break!”

Tashmal was busy.

I shrugged and turned away.

The angels had grown. Tashmal was a fallen angel so I was glad it didn't cause any problems.

Angels in a demon's dungeon...

I was looking forward to seeing the effects.

I also made sure to check the situation of the creatures in China's dungeon. There was only one thing remaining.

The Devil Hunters raid group?

They thought that I was dead. There was a possibility that the raid group itself would collapse.

I exited the dungeon. I easily bypassed the soldiers guarding the dungeon since there was no need to inform them of my survival.

‘This...’

I hesitated as I entered the city. There were banners saying ‘Tribute to Randolph-nim’ or ‘We will not forget his devotion’ hanging all over the place. My photos and personal information were handled as secretly as possible so there was only writing on the banners.

“The hero has already been dead for 100 days. As a result, how many people were saved? Let us remember. Think about it forever. His sacrifice. His glory!”

In particular, there was a long memorial procession in Gangnam.

There were familiar faces in the middle of the procession.

Yoo Eun-hye, Lee Ji-hye, Kim Yong-woo and Edward Windsor. Yoo Eun-hye in particular had tears streaming down her face and was dressed in the colour of deepest mourning. Her face was slender like she hadn’t eaten.

“.....”

It was bigger than I expected. This had escalated more than I liked. Intense feelings that I couldn’t easily dismiss.

‘I should think of some ideas in the Spirit World.’

I never thought my influence would be this great. Well, I was the strongest Awakened with a level that no one could ignore. I had forgotten that humans were sentimental towards the dead. It was a scene that I never saw in my previous life.

I should handle it carefully. I needed to think of some ways to address this problem.

I headed back to my dungeon. The promised date with Dubolong was approaching.

Chapter 102: Dubolong's Request (3)

Yiing!

The dungeon's top floor.

A crack occurred near the core. It was unstable like it wouldn't last long.

But I had already made my decision. There was no hesitation. I stepped into the crack.

The only thing I could see was darkness. But there was a light. It was shining from far away and seemed to be the exit. I walked out of the light into a wide room.

I looked at the one standing in front of me.

“Welcome, Randolph Brigsiel-nim. I believed you would come.”

Dubolong, who was still dressed as a clown, bowed respectfully.

Dubolong. Cool-headed and resourceful. A poisonous scammer. The best henchman for the Dark Spirit King. He was the spirit that greeted me directly, it was natural since he invited me in the first place.

I nodded.

“I am looking forward to meeting the Dark Spirit King.”

“You won’t regret it.”

“But this isn’t the castle I previously appeared in.”

The room was similar to the previous times I had been summoned, but the magic power was subtly different. Dubolong laughed and said.

“You noticed. Yes. This isn’t the castle.”

“Is there a reason?”

I gave a slight frown and placed my hand on Wrath. I didn’t like that he summoned me to another place without prior notice. If I wasn’t convinced by his excuses then I would mercilessly use Wrath on Dubolong.

Dubolong started sweating as he spoke. A high class spirit wouldn’t be easy to take down. I wouldn’t kill him if I didn’t have to.

“The spies of other spirit kings have broken into the castle. They forcefully opened a crack and attacked the Dark Spirit King. Please be understanding...”

The Dark Spirit King was ambitious. He ate up contracts and opened the Demon World Auction. He could do that by sacrificing numerous spirits. The other spirit kings had noticed.

But the timing was too fast; it took 10 years for this to occur in my previous life. The Dark Spirit King started a war shortly after gathering a large number of points.

‘My movements are affecting the Spirit World.’

My movements were the only thing different from my previous life. I had exposed myself in the Demon World Auction. Perhaps the points I used influenced this event? It was like small wings causing a big typhoon that caused a seismic shift...

“Strange. Would it really be that easy to defeat the Dark Spirit King?”

Dubolong’s forehead furrowed.

“Huu! Do you know the mythical creature from the Middle World called the Shadow Emperor?”

A familiar name. I nodded.

“I know.”

“We could never touch the treasure trove he left behind, no...to

be honest, it was absolutely impossible, but recently there were signs of a dimensional move. The other spirits dispatched a military force and used it for navigation.”

Ah, that was the cause. Now the fog had cleared. The spirits were interested in many things on the Middle World. Something happening in the Middle World would naturally catch their interest. I was directly related to the matter.

“It wasn’t due to the Demon World Auction.”

“That’s right. The dark spirits are repelled by light spirits. The fire and wind spirits are also troublesome to deal with together. So it can’t hurt to be careful.”

“You also want to grasp my growth. Isn’t that right?”

Reading such weak magic power would be a moderate estimate of my growth. They deliberately made the room like this. Their intentions were so obvious that I couldn’t help laughing. It was annoying but the dark spirits were originally like this.

“Would I do that? I have a life-long relationship with Randolph-nim!”

Dubolong waved his hand. I released my hand from Wrath.

“There is no second chance.”

“Haha, of course. I shouldn’t be doing this now so let’s move.”

Dubolong shamelessly guided me.

*

The Wailing Forest. A haven for dark spirits.

There were moans and screams coming from everywhere. The magic power of the forest itself was to blame.

Dubolong said with a playful expression.

“Be careful. You might be invaded by spirits.”

It wasn’t a joke. I spoke to Dubolong as I looked around.

“This is certainly a place for the Dark Spirit King.”

“...Please don’t say that in front of the Dark Spirit King.”

Dubolong’s voice trembled slightly. He had really high loyalty to the Dark Spirit King. It was great that he didn’t show his hostility.

“I won’t.”

Courtesy was necessary everywhere. Dubolong switched to another topic.

“Do you have a lot of points? I heard that there was a recent surge in the average points of demons.”

“A moderate amount. By the way, how much is the average number of points?”

I didn't mention any direct numbers. My points being over 10 million was a hidden weapon. Even if I had a partnership with him, it was ideal to hide it.

Dubolong replied like it was inconsequential.

“At this time, roughly 850,000. Alas, we are indeed fortunate. The average points is close to one million so I wonder if I should bring out a high class creature.”

The spirits were able to figure out the average points of the demons. And close to one million would allow them to bring out high class creatures.

Three years.

The emergence of high class creatures was really fast.

I asked a question after hearing those words.

“You don’t already have one prepared?”

“It happened so suddenly. There are a few candidates. Recently an older titan was obtained. There was also a whale-shaped creature found in a cave. They are candidates but...”

Dubolong shook his head and said.

“My offer from the past is still valid. Would you like to make a deal if you have any high class creatures? We will pay for it.”

“I will think about it.”

We had a relationship so there was no need to outright reject him. It was important to properly look after the relationship. Of course, I had no intention of handing over the high class creatures I obtained from the gods.

“I hope it moves in a positive direction.”

Dubolong shrugged.

Soon they arrived at a cleared area. There was a big thatched building in the centre of the cleared area.

“It is simple.”

“The Dark Spirit King doesn’t like luxury.”

It was nonsense. There was no end in sight to the size of the Demon World Auction. I didn’t know it personally but the nature of the Dark Spirit King didn’t fit with those words.

At that moment, Dubolong turned towards me. He said with a stiff expression.

“...His request, please don’t refuse it.”

Chapter 103: Dubolong's Request (4)

Dubolong walked up to the entrance.

The door opened and a tall man wearing a black cloak was sitting in a chair. He wore rings on all 10 fingers, and accessories covered his body. There was something everywhere I looked. Splendorous was a description that matched him.

“It is nice to meet you.”

I spoke first. The Dark Spirit King burst out laughing.

“Nice to meet me? Puah! Come in!”

From a distance, he looked like someone who would make a big fuss but this was only a facade. I sat down across from the Dark Spirit King. I immediately looked at him with Mind's Eye.

-‘Mind's Eye (Ex U) has penetrated ‘Shadow Eyes (Ex U)’.
Attack rate 60%.

High magic power correction (96)!

But the opponent's intelligence is higher. The attack rate is 54%. Specific information about the opponent will be private.

Name: Adonis

Occupation: Dark Spirit King

Title: * The Dark Spirit King (Epic, Strength and Magic Power +6)

* Ruler Who Causes Trembling (Epic, Magic Power +10)

* Behind Shadows (Ex U, Strength +8)

* Those Who Despise (Ex U, Stamina +8)

Stats

Strength: 100 (+14)

Intelligence: 100

Agility: 100

Stamina: 100 (+8)

Magic Power: 100 (+16)

Potential: (500+38/???)

Uniqueness: ???

Skill: Tremor (???), Shadow Eyes (Ex U), ???, ???

Adonis frowned.

“What are you looking at?”

“I like your accessories.”

I crossed my legs. But inwardly I was completely different from my composed exterior.

‘How great.’

A total of 538 stat points. He was already a transcendental person. Yet he still failed to break through his ‘limits.’ Maybe it

was frozen at this point because he couldn't break through. He would become even stronger if he went over his limit. There were also question marks. His ability was on a similar level to the grand dukes in the Demon World, so I couldn't help feeling admiration.

“Hrmm. You really are an unknown person.”

“I am anxious to hear why you called me here.”

I had no intention of having comfortable small talk. Adonis cupped his chin.

“Before that, I would like to ask you something. What do you see yourself as?”

“Devil.”

I wouldn't let anyone else become the devil. It was a resolution that I made every day.

Adonis was at a loss for a moment after my reply showed no hesitation.

“...A great aspiration. Randolph Brigsiel, you resemble me in that sense.”

“Are you aiming to rule over all the spirits in the Spirit World?”

“That’s right. Not just a Spirit King, I am determined to truly become a god. In order to do this, a lot of help is needed.

I knew the problem. It was like trying to walk among the stars. I just sat there as Adonis laughed.

“I wouldn’t normally ask but I am very curious about you, Randolph Briggsiel. Your attitude didn’t change, it’s like you were aware of this from the beginning.”

“Your curiosity shouldn’t touch someone like me.”

“A cool personality. Hmmm...good. I think we should start talking specifics. I feel more at ease after talking to you. So I ask you: Randolph Briggsiel, will you form a contract with me?”

A contract with a spirit.

That was the main point. The request that Dubolong told me not to reject.

It was taboo for the dark spirits to make contracts at the Demon World Auction organized by them. There could be issues of fairness the moment someone received favouritism. But the dark spirits had many tricks. This contract would be formed away from the eyes of the system.

The problem...this was the Dark Spirit King.

“Why? Do you really need to go to such lengths?”

“Things are changing very quickly. Randolph Briggsiel, you must feel it as well. There are many enemies, but our number is too small. However, it is a different story if we can help each other.”

Accepting it would allow me to leap forward. It didn't seem unusual at first glance, but the agreement seemed to only be beneficial to me.

The Dark Spirit King wouldn't get a lot of benefits from helping me. Such a contract with the Dark Spirit King...he was aiming for something.

Adonis was a greedy bastard. That was the one thing I knew for certain.

‘A contract with a spirit, sharing our capabilities with each other. Even if it is just helping me keep the demons in check. What does he have to gain from the contract?’

I thought for a moment.

Getting a contract from me. I wouldn't be bound by a contract unless I figured it out.

‘I have to determine it. There needs to be some significant reason

before I accept.'

If not, there was no need to form the contract. He didn't know about my overwhelming points, my growth rate or the situation in my dungeon...it would become harder if anyone figured out even one piece of that information.

Adonis would need to go beyond simply helping to direct intervention.

"I reject."

There was more harm than good. Adonis' expression changed at my reply.

"Why? This is a chance to preempt the goods from the Demon World Auction. I will also give you necessary information about some dungeons. And if you help me grow, we can both be the best in the future!"

Losing his temper.

But my position was the opposite. There was a need to immediately straighten it out.

Taak!

I got up from my seat and slammed my hand against the desk.

“Ha! Do I look stupid? Or are you so overconfident that you think I would be reeled in with a good story?”

Adonis didn't want me.

In the last two years, I had a ridiculous number of points compared to the other demons. I was their best VIP customer. I couldn't be excluded from the Demon World Auction no matter what. Adonis was hoping to conquer the Spirit World. Gathering more points was essential to that. Conversely, I didn't really need the help of the Dark Spirit King.

Dubolong told me all about the brutal acts he used to gain the throne. Our positions were different.

Adonis' hard expression relaxed. He had finally realized the subtle difference.

‘What is going to come out?’

I was quite curious.

There were different actions that he could take. Would Adonis apologize for his mistake? Or maybe he would let his anger spiral out of control. A little bit of time passed before Adonis opened his mouth.

“Hrmm, I apologize. I got ahead of myself.”

Adonis regained his composure and took a comfortable position in his seat. His arrogant air was gone...amazing.

I had to admit it. Usually those in such high positions didn't like to admit their mistakes. At least, that was what I experienced.

The grand dukes. In particular, Upa had such tendencies.

And wasn't Adonis the Dark Spirit King? I felt sorry comparing him to Upa who wasn't on his level.

I sat down again. I wouldn't maintain my hard attitude in front of Adonis' apology.

“Spirit King. Even though you helped me, aren't we just meeting today? If the basic courtesies are lost then we are just like the other demons.”

“...That's right. Courtesy might not seem like a big deal but it is very important. Randolph Brigsiel, you are unlike the other demons. That is why I singled you out.”

Adonis glanced at me and nodded with satisfaction. He seemed to have realized that his attitude was wrong.

He subsequently said.

“Then let’s go back to the beginning...my name is Adonis. I am the Dark Spirit King who rules over the dark spirits.”

I grabbed his outstretched hand and replied.

“Randolph Brigsiel. I am grateful for the Seed of the World Tree.”

“I’ve lived for a long time and never imagined an exchange like this with a demon.”

Adonis said with a large smile. I released my hand and also smiled.

“There is a saying that one good turn deserves another. Adonis, you did a favour for me so I won’t be hostile towards you.”

“That’s right. Your words are correct. It seems like I fit very well with you. It was my mistake to immediately talk about the contract.”

There was a warm atmosphere in the room. However, it could change if the incorrect button was pushed again.

Adonis’ smile remained unchanged as he said.

“But Randolph Brigsiel, telling you about the contract also isn’t a bad thing. The contract even exerts its power over the spirit kings.

In addition, any resistance you face in the Spirit World will disappear. No one would dare oppose my authority as king.”

“I’m not a person who leans on the authority of someone else.”

“I see that. But the difference is huge. Is it really leaning on authority? The spirits have access to other worlds. It isn’t impossible for the spirits to find and monopolize treasures from other worlds.”

The access of the spirits to other worlds.

A clear variable.

If they didn’t need to force open a crack then they could go back and forth from the Spirit World. Of course, the personality of a demon made it hard for them to form a contract with the spirits, but they had a ‘road’ that I could take.

However...

“Do we really need to make a contract with each other? It would be favourable if we listen to each other.”

“Randolph Brigsiel. I hope that your growth is like the sea. And entering a contractual relationship will allow us to become equal to each other. You will be the devil and I will be king of the Spirit World, an invincible combination. No one shall touch us!”

Adonis snorted roughly.

In the end, his intentions were exposed. He talked about a rosy future but I wasn't swayed.

I was aware of things he didn't say.

In addition, the contract didn't mean that both sides would be equal to each other. Either way, I would have no choice but to be pulled...that was more likely. I might move from the position of 'customer' to an 'equal', but Adonis would hold the advantage.

I would regret this the first time Adonis needed something.

His original jurisdiction was selling goods at the Demon World Auction. I was someone who bought the goods. There was no telling what could happen. He could pass over insignificant information or be condescending.

On the other hand, I was at an advantage because I was the 'customer' leading in points. If that advantageous position was to disappear due to the contract...

This would only be the semblance of equality.

He couldn't ignore the situation, but it wasn't possible to form a contract unless I was completely satisfied with it.

“It isn’t easy to make a decision about this issue.”

Luck. At this point, it was a big advantage but even bigger disadvantage. At the very least, the contract meant Adonis would get his hands on my points. I needed to have something over Adonis.

“Then I will hear your answer at the next Demon World Auction. How about it?”

Adonis said.

There were still six months remaining. I needed to make a decision within that time.

‘Insufficient.’

Six months wasn’t enough.

“Adonis. What is making you so hasty?”

“I told you. The surroundings are changing too quickly. There is a need to prepare.”

“Due to the movement of the other spirit kings?”

“Yes. And Heaven...the demons aren’t safe. So before that, the both of us need to build a united force.”

Adonis closed his mouth after saying that.

The movements of the other spirit kings.

Adonis was concerned and wanted to use ‘illegal’ methods to gain the position. It had only been three years so they was lacking preparation. It would be impossible for the spirit kings to catch Adonis if they had to keep fending off his attacks.

My mind understood why he wanted to secure his position.

He intended to use me to grow. Maybe he intended to use me as a shield.

My judgements might be too complex, but it was better to discover the variables. In particular, the latter would be the worst case situation.

When thinking about it, there weren’t many subjects where I could be neutral.

“Adonis. That is why we need to be more cautious about each other. Frankly, dealing with the grand dukes alone is an arduous task. It would certainly be reassuring if I had your aid. But more time is needed for trust to build. If the day comes where we need to fight back to back...I hope you won’t be someone who betrays me.”

I stared into Adonis' eyes.

I wanted to become the devil, but common sense dictated it was impossible to deal with the grand dukes alone. He didn't know about the hidden cards I received from coming back.

Adonis. He would have to reach out to help me.

“Ha...Randolph Brigsiel. You truly don't think like a demon. I don't know where your confidence comes from. If you are going to stand at my back, I also want to be aware of your level.”

“10 million.”

“10 million?”

“That is the number of points I have right now”

“...It hasn't been that long since the last Demon World Auction finished. Is that really true?”

I had used millions of points in the second Demon World Auction.

Judging by Adonis' reaction, he hadn't fully identified my scope. A superficial knowledge. Yet he still coveted me. He would drool even more if I revealed more of myself.

I just laughed.

“If it is false then won’t you find out at the next Demon World Auction? That would be foolish.”

“Does that mean you will use more than 10 million points in the next Demon World Auction?”

“Of course, if you have some good things prepared.”

Adonis frowned slightly.

There were signs of struggle on his face. But he soon made a decision.

“Okay. That kind of strength. I guess you don’t need my help right away. We will establish a relationship over time and talk about the contract again later. At that time, we can meet face to face with each other.”

Adonis retreated a step.

“Thank you for your patience.”

“No. It was a reasonable opinion. Either way...this talk shouldn’t end here. I want to show you the alcohol and beauty of this place.”

“I am just accepting a friend’s request.”

“Friend! Puah! Yes, it is polite to accept a friend’s request.”

Friends!

Adonis said that word for the first time. It showed he intended to make this favourable relationship last long.

Kung!

Adonis knocked on the table and shouted loudly.

“Dubolong! Prepare alcohol and women!”

A small banquet was held. Alcohol, fruits and dozens of beauties were prepared.

“Take this. Rather than gold and silver, I will give you a box of this precious, rare alcohol!”

Adonis was a wreck. He became drunk and took off all his clothes while surrounded by women. But...his eyes never lost their sharp look.

He moved quickly after confirming my existence. The alcohol

and women were to receive my admiration.

“A great drink.”

“Puah! I told you! Today is a special occasion so let’s drink to our glory!”

“I don’t enjoy drinking alcohol but I can drink this one every day.”

“Where else can you enjoy such alcohol? Why are you rejecting the lithe hands next to you? If you don’t like them then I will bring out men!”

“It is more delicious to eat at the end.”

I embraced one of the succubus near me. Alcohol and women. It wasn’t very good but I didn’t hate it. I would receive the present.

And it was necessary to give in a little bit here.

I tilted the glass and slowly poured the drink on her cleavage.

And the succubus slowly bit my ear.

*

The banquet ended and I exited after enjoying the succubus.

Dubolong was nearby waiting for me.

“Was the banquet fun?”

“There is no need to say anything.”

“I’m glad. I hope there weren’t any problems with the request.”

“In the first place, our relationship was helping each other. I couldn’t refuse.”

I said in a moderately serious tone.

Dubolong smiled while guiding me.

We arrived at the location where I was first summoned. The crack was still there.

Dubolong bowed as I entered the crack and said.

“Then, Randolph Brigsiel-nim. I will see you at the next Demon World Auction.”

Chapter 104: Abnormal Proliferation (1)

The dungeon's 18th floor. The mountain zone that made up the habitat of the saber tigers.

There were more than 600 saber tigers around. The configuration of the group was different. Around 50 had formed a group in order to take over other areas.

And one of the saber tigers received the best evaluation and was called the boss. He led 100 saber tigers and succeeded in mating.

After sowing several seeds that didn't give birth successfully, he finally mated with an attractive female and received offspring. His offspring was born after three months of pregnancy. It was very healthy.

The problem was...the cub was a different colour. Ordinary saber tigers had brown fur, but this one was white. His entire body stood out as unusual.

Saber tigers were agile and skilled at snatching the enemy from the shadows. So the white colour was a sign of a leader.

The boss decided. It was a difficult birth and he was confident the group would follow his lead. He would use this opportunity to make other males yield. He put in strict measures and hunted the group of orcs.

The cub grew well. And after a few months passed, the boss found out that he was deluded.

This cub was unlike the usual saber tigers. It was true that a king of the saber tigers was born. But the king was a little too prominent. The degree of rebellion was enough that he even wanted to challenge the Dungeon Master.

The white saber tiger. Known as White. He reached an adult size in only a few months. And he already had dozens of saber tigers following him. Among there were newcomers who had just been born.

After White was born, the reproduction rate greatly increased. Their numbers reached 300. Of course, they had to become fully grown in order to fight. White showed the most extraordinary performances in the fierce battles.

But...White didn't feel any exhilaration. This much was natural considering his position. He had separate complaints.

First, he had high intelligence. It was enough to feel a difference with the others. He was also much stronger and agile. There were only five adults that were possible rivals for him. This difference became larger over time.

He didn't just want to dominate this floor. White thought this floor was too narrow for the saber tigers.

Yes, it was cramped. He wanted to leave this floor.

But the adults stopped him. They said absolutely not. The Dungeon Master couldn't be disobeyed. If he stood before the Dungeon Master then he would instinctively follow.

Nonsense. He was a king. A symbol of freedom. No one could oppress him.

Grwaaang!

White howled.

He gathered those that belonged to his group. This was his first priority. The true king of the saber tigers would leave this floor. He would widen his forces and even become the master of this dungeon.

White of the saber tigers proclaimed himself as the true king of this place. The numbers in his group gradually increased. White showed an overwhelming strength that made others submit to him. He managed to get his paws on half of the saber tigers when something happened.

A bump. An existence similar to himself.

That black bastard! An unusual black saber tiger was born around this time.

Before he knew it, Black increased his forces to a similar level. That guy was also strong. He admitted it.

But there couldn't be two kings. It was inevitable that they would bump into each other.

A fight between bosses involving their sharp teeth. They fought until they were both bloody but the result was that White won.

The black saber tiger declared defeat. White rose to the position of king.

But it didn't end here. White vowed he would become king of the dungeon and left the floor with a large group of saber tigers.

They climbed up one floor and the dark bears appeared. Their numbers weren't much and defeating them was easy. However, the 20th floor was a sea. White was distressed since he couldn't find a way to bypass it.

He determined the method to cross the sea would be obtained downstairs. He subdued the enemies while going down and arrived on the 15th floor.

This was the unusual place where the dark elves resided. White was happy. They would be able to tell him how to cross the sea. But White didn't compromise. All those not part of his group were enemies. He would use force to make them spit it out.

He soon encountered the dark elves.

“Actually, the fairy has collapsed and Dungeon Master is quite busy right now...”

The dark elf in the lead.

A female. She was different from the other dark elves and it was the first time White felt pressure.

Grrr!

Surrender.

“I don’t know how you left the 18th floor, but this is due to the influence from the abnormal proliferation. It can’t be helped. I need to punish these naughty beasts.”

“Queen-nim. We will handle this.”

“No, Elder-nim. This white one is strong and completely different from the general saber tigers. It is fortunate that he is not yet an adult. In this place...I’m sorry but I must do it.”

Charuk. Charuruk.

Chrisley walked forward with her wand and the spartoi.

“How can I let them bother My Dungeon Master?”

“Then can I say something to them?”

Gruang!

Daring to relax in front of him?

White howled wildly but he just said with a smile on his face.

“Know your position. That is what I want to say.”

*

The top floor.

I folded my arms in front of the Dungeon Core and watched Yihi.

Yihi was slumped. Her body was collapsed like all the power had gone out and she was barely breathing. The spiritual body of a fairy didn't need to breathe but they would return to the source soon after they stopped breathing.

The ego that made Yihi be Yihi. There was the possibility of losing it.

“Oooh...”

Yihi’s body trembled.

I gently reached out and covered Yihi’s forehead. The trembling subsided a little bit.

‘The abnormal proliferation. Ever since the dungeon’s ecosystem was damaged, Yihi and the Dungeon Core started to break down.

It happened a few days after I went to the Spirit World. The sudden propagation rate interfered with the flow of magic power. It was a temporary phenomenon that was a mistake.

I quickly responded when Yihi complained of pain.

I recalled the memories from that time.

‘Master. I think Yihi is a little sick.’

‘.....’

‘Dizzy. My body is shaking. Is it because you are close? Ah! Or maybe this is love?’

‘.....’

‘Hiing. Really sick. Even flying is annoying Yihi. I would like to lie down on Master’s shoulders.’

The signs were clear. This wasn’t a joke so I needed to investigate.

But the current situation wasn’t that simple.

The reproduction rate. It had increased by 500% compared to the previous rate. The Dungeon Core was receiving interference from the creatures’ excess magic power.

It wouldn’t matter if that number had slowly increased. There would be no need to worry once the dungeon adjusted to the magic power. In the end, I needed to make adjustments so that the dungeon could adapt to the creatures.

‘I can guess the cause. The Tree of Origin.’

That’s right. The Tree of Origin had a significant effect on the reproductive rate. But it felt like he got caught up in a stampede.

‘I released the blessing but there were no changes in the proliferation rate.’

The blessing from the Statue of Abundance continued. He stopped the blessing and waited for some time, but there was no

change. The breeding rate continued to increase.

“Master...”

Yihi drooled and muttered.

Oduk!

I gritted my teeth. Yihi was very important to me. In my previous life, she had devoted herself to me but I threw her away.

Now something was happening to Yihi in front of me and I couldn't stop it.

“My Dungeon Master.”

“Chrisley.”

I turned as Chrisley came close to me.

“I have something for you to see. Is it okay?”

“It is okay. What is going on?”

“The white saber tiger and his followers have left their floor and invaded the 15th floor.”

“Ah, those guys. Did they descend to the 15th floor in an attempt to escape?”

I knew about the births of White and Black. Their growth was excellent and they reached advanced 5Lv and 4Lv respectively. In particular, White was a special creature not available at the Store of All Things.

But descending to the 15th floor in an attempt to escape? It wasn't good as the Dungeon Core currently wasn't working properly. In addition, I expressly stated that exiting their floors was forbidden.

I was confused as Chrisley replied.

“This also seems to be the impact of the unusual proliferation. I've subdued them but they still aren't hiding their teeth.”

“I guess I will go.”

“My Dungeon Master. It isn't very urgent.”

Chrisley seemed to be worried about Yihi as her eyes turned to the Dungeon Core.

However, I shook my head.

“No. I will come to see.”

The impact of the Dungeon Core on the creatures. I was honestly curious. They even thought about leaving their floor to attack. They certainly weren't ordinary creatures.

The 15th floor. White and Black were tied up next to the Tree of Origin. The rest of the saber tigers were expelled back to the 18th floor, but the two culprits needed to be handled.

Grrrrr!

Graaang!

“White and Black.”

I stared at both of them.

White and Black revealed their sharp teeth and howled wildly. However, I saw fear within them.

Due to their escape from the influence of the Dungeon Core, they couldn't obtain a complete impression of me.

“It seems like you have great hostility towards me...”

The creatures dared to rebel in my own dungeon. It was

outrageous but also funny.

At that time, White tried to bite me.

Grwaang!

“Now I understand. Yes, there can never be two kings on the mountain.”

I started laughing. I could understand his attitude.

Rather than the insufficient 18th floor, he wanted to rule the dungeon itself.

I couldn't allow that. The owner of this dungeon was me. Naturally, I was also White's owner.

“My Dungeon Master. Shall I kill those ungrateful creatures? I can't forgive them for that attitude.”

Chrisley approached me with an angry expression. But I raised my hand and stopped Chrisley.

“I know how hard it is to be the king and I need to tell them myself.”

I took out Wrath and said.

“Know your position.”

White didn't bend easily. Despite using his teeth and sharp claws, he still lost. He was originally a king. But the opponent was too strong.

His body was in pain. Once he was completely drained and collapsed, a dark elf female healed him. He would fight again once he could move his body.

But the next few fights were the same. Struggling against the Dungeon Master's sword, collapsing, treatment, getting back up again and so on.

Once that process repeated a few times, White lowered his tail in surrender.

Grrr...

That cruel bastard!

White cried out. It was the first time he experienced such suffering. He was born into the saber tigers as the king so he couldn't imagine something like this. The opponent was far too cruel.

“Chrisley. Heal White.”

The Dungeon Master said while pointing down at White. Then the dark elf female, Chrisley carefully expressed her opinion.

“My Dungeon Master. The potions have limitations. Interfere with life...”

“Look at his eyes. It is still insufficient.”

Grrung!

It was enough!

He cried out sorrowfully. Lowering the tail showed he wasn't an enemy anymore.

“Look. That position shows he is prepared to jump. He is still able to do more.”

“...Still not giving up?”

At this rate, White really would die if he didn't abandon his pride.

He turned around on his back, exposing his belly.

“Are you trying to take me off guard? That won't work.”

Finding faults. But White didn't like being weak. White couldn't easily accept weakness. In the end, it took five more bloody battles before he surrendered. White absolutely realized something.

The sky above the sky. The true king! He wasn't a king. He was a beast that followed a king.

The real king placed his sword back into the scabbard.

Kiiing!

Now their positions were determined.

The Dungeon Master said to him.

"I need to use them as hounds."

I made a plan using White and the saber tigers.

There was abnormal proliferation so I needed to keep the numbers as small as possible. They would be hunters. And a leader was needed for the hunters.

The saber tigers were just one of the species proliferating. It would be a brutal task. However, maintaining the dungeon was necessary. It was indispensable for the ecosystem.

‘Insufficient.’

But the rate of their progress couldn't keep up with the reproduction rate.

He received an achievement in the middle but...

-An excellent achievement!

A Dungeon Master without any sense! 2,000 creatures have been slaughtered.

200,000pt will be paid.

800 achievement points will be added.

Such minor achievements weren't important right now. I stood at a crossroad where the dungeon would either be maintained or lost.

The saber tigers were referred to as the best hunters, but their actions weren't enough.

‘I need to use the Dungeon Core to create a monster wave.’

If I couldn't fix it inside then I needed to export them outside.

I needed to act quickly.

The number of creatures had already reached 7,000.

The creatures randomly marched out of the dungeon. They had one command given to them. They could prey on everything around them. In addition, the creatures from the demons still monitoring the dungeon would be handled. My creatures were on an entirely different level. There were many creatures ranging from low grade to intermediate.

However, the humans didn't take it lying down. Yoo Eun-hye and Edward Windsor were in the vanguard.

"I will kill all of you!"

"Noona, leave it to me."

Both of them had improved by leaps and bounds. Especially Yoo Eun-hye who had transformed in battle. She went on a crazy rampage among the creatures. Edward was also filled with negative feelings towards the creatures and easily dealt with the intermediate ones.

Plus... The Awakened in the guilds were rapidly growing.

Humanity's enemy. Anger towards a common enemy! They adapted due to that drive.

At the next meeting of Heaven's Will, Kim Yong-woo had a large sword by his side.

“We can win! We will win! They won't defeat us!”

‘That’ was the starting point.

The Hero who died. He blocked the creatures for them.

The full-fledged threat changed them. The people of South Korea, the Awakened no longer stood still or ran away.

Chapter 105: Abnormal Proliferation (2)

Despite releasing a number of creatures, I knew that it was only a temporary measure.

I could gain some room but it wouldn't lead to permanent peace. The same problem would continue unless I removed the root cause.

The propagation rate was steadily growing. The quality was never diminishing.

Time passed. My anxiety reached peak levels.

Yihi didn't wake up and the light from the Dungeon Core was waning every day.

'Tree of Origin.'

I knew the cause. I knew but was unable to move my hand.

"However..."

I pulled out Wrath.

Then I headed towards the Tree of Origin on the 15th floor.

“Dungeon Master. Please calm yourself. There are other ways to solve it.”

Julliom realized my intentions and knelt down before me. The tree was the representation of their desires.

But it was no use. My patience was already dried up.

“Julliom. I need to remove the cause of the side effects. This decision was long overdue. In fact, I should have moved quicker.”

Suok!

Pasak!

I brandished my sword. A corner of the Tree of Origin was cut down. Julliom’s body trembled and he grabbed my pants.

“Ahh...! No! Please, please not the Tree of Origin!”

“If the dungeon collapses then there will be no tree. Don’t block me. I will cut you both down if you continue acting like this.”

Kuuuuoh!

It was right at that moment. The Tree of Origin made a sound like it was screaming. It tried to defend itself.

However, that was just wishful thinking.

Pasasak!

Hundreds of branches were cut down. I was using the skill Dark Sword so the severed objects didn't grow back.

Kuuuuoh!

“Shut up. I've endured it for as long as possible. This wouldn't have been necessary if you hadn't disturbed me.”

I had an indifferent expression.

As I used my sword, Julliom and the dark elves in the vicinity blocked their eyes and ears. They couldn't help shedding tears.

The Tree of Origin was the source of their dreams and hope. The only sanctuary in this dungeon. Now it was being cut down indiscriminately. They couldn't block it. A sense of helplessness filled their bodies.

I stopped to take a breath in the middle.

“...My Dungeon Master. I found something. A person who can communicate with nature.”

Chrisley, who previously left the dungeon, had hastily returned.

There was a small human girl with her.

A human girl. She was approximately nine years old?

An existence that didn't fit in the dungeon. She didn't pay attention to any of the surrounding dark elves. The girl looked at the Tree of Origin and started weeping.

“Ah...”

The girl sat down close to the Tree of Origin and started embracing it.

I realized straight away that the girl was an Awakened. Dull eyes. I also recognized that she wasn't normal.

“Autistic?”

“Yes. But she can communicate with nature.”

Chrisley showed her resolve in addressing this problem by leaving the dungeon. That was two weeks ago. Then this was her answer.

I opened Mind's Eye.

Name: Lee Sarang

Occupation: Hero (Nature Person)

Title: * Comforted by Nature (Ex U, Magic Power +8)

Stats

Strength: 21

Intelligence: 3

Agility: 15

Stamina: 18

Magic Power: 55 (+8)

Potential: (114+8/425)

Uniqueness: Intelligence is very low. Due to this, it is possible to communicate more closely with nature.

Skill: Comfort (Ex U), Natural Fairy Tale (R), Nature Communication (U)

A familiar name. A familiar skill. Very high potential.

‘Queen of Benevolence.’

Just like Yoo Eun-hye had the name ‘Lightning Queen,’ Lee Sarang was famous for her kindness.

In the second half of the war. As the earth was driven to destruction and food became very low, humans started eating humans. The Awakened couldn’t easily believe in each other when Lee Sarang appeared.

She used the powerful Natural Fairy Tale skill and revived the land. Plants took root and started bearing fruit. As the food shortage was resolved, the Awakened could use their power properly to strike back at the demons.

That's why Lee Sarang was called 'Queen of Benevolence.' Without hesitation, she equally spread love among humans.

I knew she was a South Korean, but I didn't expect to encounter her in a place like this.

'Communicating with nature...'

Lee Sarang was definitely remarkable. She wasn't affected by the dungeon and only cared about the Tree of Origin. In addition, Lee Sarang had stopped the Tree of Origin from screaming.

"But won't it be difficult to converse if she has autism? It doesn't seem to solve our problem."

She could communicate with nature but there would be no way to tell me what it was saying.

Chrisley expressed her opposition.

"She is unmistakably the key to solving this. My Dungeon Master. If given a bit more time..."

“Ah! Ah!”

Chrisley’s words were interrupted.

Lee Sarang had placed one hand on the tree while the other one slapped her chest. It was like something was weighing down on her.

“...I will give you a week. Analyze that child’s behaviour and figure out how to stop the tree.”

“Thank you, My Dungeon Master. You will not be disappointed.”

Chrisley and Julliom next to her sighed with relief.

Suruk!

I put away my sword and headed back up to the top floor.

Exactly one week passed.

I stood in front of the Tree of Origin while holding Yihi in one hand.

Chrisley stood to my left and politely said to me.

“The Tree of Origin is a necessary existence. Right now it can’t

control itself.”

“Then Yihi?”

“She is an origin spirit. Tashmal will testify.”

Tashmal started speaking.

“That’s right. I thought it was strange at first. The Tree of Origin and origin spirit should pair with each other. I believe it is because she is still too young.”

I looked between Yihi and the Tree of Origin.

“Yihi is a fairy. Similar to a spirit but clearly different. Perhaps there can be a substitute system?”

Spirits were born in the Spirit World. By nature, a fairy took a long time to mature.

Chrisley answered the obvious question.

“My Dungeon Master. The fairy is very special. She is linked to the Dungeon Core. That leads to a massive amount of magic power. It should be enough power to control the Tree of Origin.”

“Okay. The method?”

“The human girl’s ‘Fairy Tale’ skill. If you make the girl an intermediary role...”

“Ah! Ah!”

Lee Sarang looked up at Yihi.

She stretched out her hand like she was asking something.

“Do it well if you want to get out of here alive.”

I threatened while handing Yihi over.

Yihi might be young but she was still linked to the Dungeon Core. It was a privilege to be able to touch her spiritual body.

Lee Sarang took Yihi and ran up to the Tree of Origin.

She closed her eyes and instinctively used the ‘Natural Fairy Tale’ and ‘Nature Communication skill.’

Kuoooh-

The Tree of Origin gave a small cry. The resonance had begun.

Chapter 106: Dungeon Destruction (1)

Everyone in the area held their breaths. It was the same for me as well. I silently but intensely stared at Lee Sarang and Yihi.

Lee Sarang was known as the Queen of Benevolence in my previous life.

Chrisley had brought her. I didn't expect much but she came up with a way to solve the problem with the Tree of Origin.

Destiny? A bond? I didn't believe in such abstract things.

Chrisley's contribution was large.

But if the problem wasn't resolved or even grew...Lee Sarang wouldn't be able to escape responsibility, even if she had 425 potential. I wouldn't kill her, but a lot of pain would follow. I would make her lose her mind and turn her into a doll.

However...she had to do it well.

"My Dungeon Master. This seems like it will take some time. You should relax while I protect this place." A day had passed. I shook my head at Chrisley's words.

"No. The process itself is very interesting. I can't miss this scene."

It was also important. I had great interest in this matter so I couldn't rest. A crisis might occur. For example, there might be a situation where the Dungeon Master's permission was required and I would need to handle it in real time.

I could use the remaining capacities of the Dungeon Core from here.

Two days passed. Then three days.

Lee Sarang's body started to sway. She was 10 years old at the most. She managed to hold out without eating and drinking for three days. She had autism but she was also the intermediary in the resonance between the Tree of Origin and Yihi.

I couldn't break her concentration by bringing her something to eat.

And after one more day.

Kuoooooh-!

The Tree of Origin trembled. The branches extended and embraced Yihi and Lee Sarang.

It was the first time there was movement in the last four days. Everyone was focused. All the dark elves were holding their

breaths as they watched the situation. I was no different.

Soon the Tree of Origin completely embraced Lee Sarang and Yihi.

-The Tree of Origin has acknowledged the fairy of the Dungeon Core as 'Soul Companions.'

The Tree of Origin has become more complete.

The fairy of the Dungeon Core has been promoted to 'Origin Fairy!'

-A fairy has been successfully promoted for the first time.

The 'Origin Fairy' is present together with the Tree of Origin. The fairy will return to her original state if the Tree of Origin disappears.

-A decision. The compensation for the achievement is currently being calculated.

5,400,000pt will be paid.

5,000 achievement points will be added.

'Excellent.'

It was the first time I had seen such high compensation.

Yihi was also changing little by little. Her wings grew longer and her limbs became slightly more elongated. Her hair also grew. She was still chubby like a one year old but it seemed like she was feeling better.

Yihi slowly opened her eyes in the heart of the Tree of Origin.

“.....?”

She didn't seem to know how to express herself.

Her eyes were glazed as she looked around.

Then Yihi saw me and gave her silly smile.

“Yihi~”

*

The abnormal growth stopped. As expected, it was a side effect from the Tree of Origin going out of control.

Yihi was promoted and became more versatile. She could properly utilize the Tree of Origin to exert a strong physical force. For example, she could strengthen the roots or take advantage of it

as materials for equipment.

“Ohh! Materials like this actually exist in the world!”

The dwarves were excited.

They could create things from mysterious materials. At the very least, the equipment would be rare grade. Some unique rated items might even emerge.

“A lot of the leaves...it will be helpful in raising the angels.”

And that wasn't all. The original Tree of Origin only had a small number of leaves. But the leaves doubled in an instant after communicating with Yihi. I gave them to Tashmal and they could also be used as potion ingredients.

The leaves from the tree had a strong healing effect. Taking them in the long term would also cause stats to rise. Thanks to repetitively taking them, I managed to increase intelligence by 2.

“Master! Yihi will give you a gift. Yihihhi.”

“It is a strange looking bead.”

Yihi approached while I was checking the status of the dungeon. The bead was the size of a thumbnail but gave off an abnormal amount of magic power.

“It isn’t strange. Yihi asked. This is the Essence of Origin. It can be created once every year. It is very good to eat.”

There was something like this?

It was something that the Tree of Origin could only create once a year.

I opened Mind’s Eye.

-Name – Essence of Origin

Description: An essence created by the Tree of Origin that is filled with one year’s worth of magic power. It is almost impossible for the gods to obtain so even they consider it a special occasion.

* After taking it, the maximum potential limit will increase by 1.

‘Break through the limit...!’

I looked at the essence closely.

I knew what it meant by increasing the maximum potential.

The potential threshold of a demon was 500. All stats could reach exactly 100 points. After reaching 100, a huge difference would be felt even if it only rose by one.

‘In my previous life, the grand dukes broke through the limit. But I didn’t know the method.’

Of course, they couldn’t have made the breakthrough using the Essence of Origin. Other methods were used.

‘The Essence of Origin is one of the solutions to breaking through the limit.’

I nodded.

This was important information. I didn’t need this right now but...Adonis? He unfortunately reached his maximum potential and would find it hard to raise his stats even further. I could trade this with Adonis.

‘It is an important key.’

The corners of my mouth rose.

“Good job.”

“Yihihi. Then please stroke Yihi’s head.”

Yihi stuck out her head.

I hesitated for a moment before petting Yihi's head. Yihi was more pampered after she became the Origin Fairy. I wasn't as restrained anymore and stopped hiding my feelings.

“Yihihihi. I like this. Yihi will now go walk the bees.”

Yihi laughed and flew off with red cheeks.

I looked down at my hand.

“Hrmm...”

Origin Fairy.

Despite this status, Yihi was still Yihi.

*

The flesh was hungry. He occupied himself eating soil and grass. After passing through insects and mice, he realized they tasted better. Since then, he went to find living things.

Over time, he became bigger until he realized that ‘humans’ were the most delicious meal. He gobbled up a whole village of humans. He ate. Delicious.

Then all the humans around him were eaten. He returned to the original place. A big castle. It wasn't easy to enter the dungeon. Due to his size, the entrance was blocked.

It was necessary to increase the size of the entrance. He ate the walls. By the way, there was a hint of sweetness.

The dungeon barrier. It wrapped around the outside of the dungeon and was tasty. The flesh started absorbing the dungeon barrier.

“This damn flesh should get lost!”

Pakan Griolli stomped his feet.

A strange flesh was attached to the dungeon barrier and he received a warning message. The durability was going down by the minute.

But it was hard to launch attacks against the flesh. He just recovered and actually increased in size. This was due to his 130 points in stamina.

It would be nice if he could use a scroll to move the flesh to another location.

Pakan Griolli crossed his arms and frowned.

-Barrier Durability 410,233/1,000,000

“Dammit! Kill! Kill it!”

He mobilized all his creatures. But the flesh finally fell. The flesh couldn't absorb all the attacks from the creatures.

“Hahaha! This tenacious brat! He finally died!”

After days of struggling, Infinite Flesh was finally killed. Pagan Griolli laughed out loud.

The damage was considerable and the barrier eventually destroyed, but he thought killing the flesh was more important.

But Pagan Griolli had no idea of one thing.

When the barrier had shattered, a message window flashed in front of all Awakened!

Chapter 107: Dungeon Destruction (2)

The message window came out of nowhere.

The Awakened who saw it were puzzled.

-The dungeon barrier located in Saudi Arabia has been broken.

The barrier will take 30 days to recover.

“What is this?”

“Barrier?”

“Isn’t there a dungeon in Saudi Arabia?”

The Awakened were able to figure out the meaning of the message. There were all types of comments from the Awakened community, including some credible views.

-There is no need to enter the dungeon to take care of the creatures.

-Previously all physical attacks didn’t work in the dungeon. That barrier blocking it is now gone?

The government dispatched troops to the dungeon in Saudi Arabia and received news that firepower worked.

-The dungeon is collapsing!

-No way! You mean it is true? It wasn't CG?

-Oh my god. The creatures have come pouring out! It is like they are terrified!

-Baby! Are we going to just watch? Now is the time for the Heroes to take action!

The Awakened felt hope as they saw the dungeon crumbling. All their suffering had finally paid off.

The crowd of Awakened started moving. Some were gunning for the benefits within the dungeon, but the emphasis was placed on 'destruction.'

*

I heard the news a little late.

24 hours a day was insufficient to manage the dungeon's internal affairs and work out the mess with the Tree of Origin.

Lee Sarang solved the issue, but there were still many things to worry about.

I only knew about the situation after Krasla went outside.

“The barrier is broken? It must be Paka Griolli’s dungeon.”

“That’s right.”

Krasla raised his chin and confirmed it.

‘It can’t be a coincidence. Did Infinite Flesh eat the barrier?’

I moved him outside. If not, the barrier in my dungeon probably would have been the one that was destroyed.

In the first place...wasn’t it difficult for the angels to slash at the barrier? I hadn’t expected that Infinite Flesh would destroy it so quickly.

“The South Korean guilds are also moving. In particular, the Devil Hunters raid group that had some success in the dungeon forays.”

“The barrier is gone so the dungeon is vulnerable. But...it is reckless.”

The exterior of the dungeon and its contents were different, but they were linked to each other. The barrier had disappeared, so the dungeon floors would be compressed. For example, the original 30 floors would be reduced to three. This difference was really huge. In addition, there was a difference in the movements of the creatures.

After the barrier was restored, the dungeon would take three months to recover.

However, the level of each Awakened wasn't that high. It would be easy in 4~5 years, but right now, they would be exterminated.

Pakan Griolli. He was still a duke.

I thought of a number of variables before opening my mouth.

“I'm going to move. Be prepared.”

“The people will follow Master.”

Krasla hurriedly kneeled down.

*

Pakan Griolli.

One of the dukes belonging to Grand Duke Upa's faction.

His personality was aggressive and easily excited. After being deserted by Grand Duke Upa after the auction incident, he had been thinking of how stupid he was.

Of course, he could increase his investments in the dungeon due to being denied entry to the Demon World Auction. He got quite a few accomplishments due to that. The quality of his creatures wasn't bad. Rather, it seemed like he belonged to one of the leading groups.

There was just one problem.

Infinite Flesh.

He was simple and moved in slow patterns but had superior stamina. Pakan Griolli sacrificed thousands of creatures in order to get rid of it. It was reminiscent of a slime but the stamina and size couldn't be compared.

As a result, it took two months to kill him. 24 hours. He didn't rest for even one second. Pakan never imagined that it would be so hard to attack.

But the damage was too severe. In addition, he used all the points he collected. He even failed to keep the barrier.

Pakan Griolli felt like the situation was urgent. He wouldn't be

able to stop other demons from invading. But this? The humans unexpectedly started attacking.

“These damn humans!”

Pakan Griolli ground his teeth together.

-The exterior wall of the dungeon has been destroyed!

The 37 floor dungeon has been reduced to four floors. 671 creatures have died from the overlapping spaces. The creatures are confused and have started to escape from the dungeon.

Kung! Kukukung!

The dungeon shook relentlessly.

Kiik! Kieeek!

Due to the barrier disappearing, the authority of the Dungeon Core had weakened. The creatures with low intelligence were forced out of the dungeon.

Pakan Griolli clenched his fists with rage.

“These mere humans...!”

The weak. They would already be gone if it wasn't for his mercy!

He used his creatures to completely destroy the powerful weapons that the humans used. He lost a lot of creatures but he was still a duke. The number of creatures was sufficient for ordinary human opponents.

But that wasn't the end.

He destroyed the firepower but a large number of Awakened started moving. They were constantly striking. The Awakened gathered from various parts of the world starting moving towards his dungeon.

It would be okay if it was just the Awakened. They were just ordinary humans carrying weapons. The soldiers from South Korea were different.

If the barrier was functioning normally then products of modern civilization would be useless in the dungeon...the barrier was now gone so the magic power wasn't working properly. The weak creatures died before the various weapons. The strong creatures were unable to cope with the vast majority of attacks.

Swept away!

The humans reached the 2nd floor in a few days. There was still the 3rd floor and he was waiting on the 4th floor.

“I will kill all of you!”

Pakan Griolli growled out fiercely.

*

“Slowly move forward. Protect the soldiers.”

The Awakened from all over the world. Among them was Heaven’s Will from South Korea. They wore magic jewellery to communicate with each other.

The United States and China followed behind them. There were some complaints but it was unavoidable since Devil Hunters was the most famous raid group.

This was a dungeon. They had to stick together. And a leader was needed. A tacit agreement occurred.

Of course, there were many Awakened who refused to obey commands from Heaven’s Will. Now those Awakened were screaming from all over the place.

“The captain of Devil Hunters...I heard that he died? Now it is just a mere raid group. Shouldn’t those from China be leading?”

“That’s right. Only the semblance of the raid group is leading us?

How funny!”

And there were people complaining who ignored the screams. In particular, the ones from China were really noisy. They wanted to use this opportunity to take down a dungeon. The black society didn't want to lose to South Korea.

The black society wanted to take the lead.

“What...? Only a semblance?”

Yoo Eun-hye couldn't tolerate it anymore and complained to the guild master of Heaven's Will, Kim Yong-woo.

“Quiet! It isn't good to argue inside a dungeon. We need to be united in this place. Please don't cause an argument.”

The division continued. It was a long-awaited opportunity to surpass Heaven's Will.

Kim Yong-woo had a lot of worries after the death of the captain of Devil Hunters. He was able to maintain his presence as guild master due to that existence. But the people twisted around him like hyenas once the captain of Devil Hunters died. He had to run every day. There was also strong pressure from outside.

‘I am lacking.’

He inwardly laughed bitterly.

Kim Yong-woo wasn't strong. There were stronger people overflowing in the guild. They were obviously greedy for the position of guild master.

In this society, preferences were given to the strong. The weak were left behind...Kim Yong-woo was barely hanging on.

'I have to use this opportunity to resurrect myself. I need to survive in Heaven's Will.'

He could redeem himself right now.

Destroying the dungeon! He needed to be the leader of this task. Then he would gain greater power for himself. He needed to control all movements.

Failure? He didn't want to imagine it. There were those trying to pull him down.

Devil Hunters discovering the dwarf village on the 7th floor was a great accomplishment, but he was likely to lose all that influence if this was a failure.

However, the black society was still noisy.

"Bah! The guild master is a scarecrow."

“...Be careful with your mouth. Now isn't the time to find faults with each other.”

“What? Are you accusing me of something? If you're not scared then open your mouth!”

Hahaha!

They were obviously full of derision. Kim Yong-woo felt desperate. He pushed down his anger. He couldn't dance to their tune.

“This isn't the place. Or have you gone crazy from losing so many lives? At any rate, these guys...”

But the other South Korean guilds didn't tolerate it. In particular, the Mithril Guild consisted of many young people without any patience.

Japan and the United States were quiet but secretly jumped on the bandwagon. They stared at the Chinese.

All members of the black society laughed.

“Watch your mouths. Do you want to fight?”

“Hey, you don't have anything to say so you want to settle it with

violence?”

The guilds confronted each other.

“Stop!”

Kim Yong-woo squeezed in between them while sighing inwardly.

They needed to help each other instead of fighting...the future was dark.

This was only the 2nd floor but more creatures would appear.

Kururung!

Kung! Kung!

And his prediction was correct.

Twin head ogres. Cerberus.

Dozens of ice trolls...and hundreds of other creatures.

“You dare invade my dungeon! Humans! Don’t even think about leaving here alive!”

Pakan Griolli was in the centre.

Chapter 108: Dungeon Destruction (3)

The battle was intense. The situation wasn't good.

The Awakened could handle the general creatures, but the number of soldiers dying wasn't a joke. Hundreds of thousands of soldiers were dying while the Awakened were struggling.

Screams. Screams. And more screams.

But the number of creatures was also rapidly reducing. In particular, the South Korean Awakened were dazzling.

The South Korean Awakened as a whole were on a much higher level and could handle the advanced creatures. Even the quality of the items they were using was different. Each Awakened was wearing some unique rated armour. They could deal blows to the advanced creatures to some extent.

“Damn! Is he the Dungeon Master?”

Kim Yong-woo's body trembled.

Yes, they could deal with the number of creatures gathered here.

However, there was one person. He had a strong presence and commanded the creatures.

Long, sharp nails. Teeth that were reminiscent of a wolf! He was terrifying in battle as he grabbed an Awakened and ‘destroyed’ them.

An entirely different class; they weren’t his opponent. The twin head ogres were difficult, but he was on a completely different level.

It made sense if he was the Dungeon Master. But still, it was beyond common sense.

“Cough!”

“Line up! Don’t give...ack!”

He couldn’t be seen. An afterimage. He came close to them in the blink of an eye.

“Kill him! Just kill him!”

The quick-witted Awakened soon noticed that he was the ‘king’ of the dungeon.

In the end, they were no match. Some attacks were successful but they were stopped at the level of the clothes. In contrast, the Awakened were torn apart by his nails.

‘What should we do? What to do?’

Kim Yong-woo fell into a state of panic. Too strong. Despite being prepared, in reality they couldn't do anything against him.

How many people needed to be sacrificed to catch him? A thousand? Ten thousand?

His spirit became dull at the thought. One thing was for certain, everyone in the dungeon might be wiped out. They would become victims of the creatures!

“Ack!”

“Noona...!”

Yoo Eun-hye's side was grazed. She quickly used electric current to buy some time.

Edward was aware of the situation and aimed his sword. But he could only swing it a few times. Edward had his chest pierced and collapsed to the ground.

“Cough!”

The two most prominent people in Heaven's Will. It was fortunate that they weren't instantly killed. Of course, it was only a matter of time at this rate.

“No!”

Kim Yong-woo pulled out his sword. They were the main backbone of Devil Hunters. His power was lower than theirs, and they would be the centre of Heaven’s Will in the future. He couldn’t lose them here to the creatures.

The Dungeon Master gave a cold laugh. He stretched out his nails and tried to take the lives of the two people lying on the ground. And...just before he killed them.

Kwa ru ru rung!

In the dungeon, a thunder dragon poured down.

*

Tens of thousands of people had entered the dungeon. They had divided into groups with their own goals, and only a few thousands remained alive at best.

Survival?

It was a ridiculous thought.

The creatures were persistent. It was impossible to deal with them even if the groups combined. After some large scale battles, some guilds and the black society left the battlefield. Some felt

there was no hope and retreated from the dungeon.

“Dog scum!”

The remaining Awakened felt nauseous.

In the end, they used the people following them as shields.

The black society deliberately left the battlefield to climb up the dungeon. They intended to monopolize all the benefits before disposing of the remaining creatures.

A tacit agreement. However, those were just words. In reality, the Awakened couldn't help feeling resentment.

They had varying nationalities and just met, so they couldn't trust each other. It was a mere formal procedure. The Awakened from different countries were like cats and dogs.

The soldiers also moved according to their own benefit...this division made them vulnerable.

At first glance, it seemed like the battlefield was tilting towards one side. The largest contributor to this was naturally the Dungeon Master.

Overwhelming strength. He seemed like a god.

The Awakened tried to step back but were too late. The creatures surrounded them from every direction. They should have escaped from the beginning, just like some guilds and the black society!

There was no more hope. Each of the Awakened could feel it. The situation was urgent and they would soon be wiped out. Only screams could be heard as they lost hope.

“Help me...”

The sharp nails tore apart bodies. His eyes were dark and relaxed hands clutched the weapon. Little by little, things were tipping to the Dungeon Master’s side. There was no way to reverse this.

Chwahahak!

All of the Awakened felt despair.

At that moment, someone rushed through the creatures from the direction of the dungeon entrance. A red spear tore through the creatures.

Krasla!

He quickly squeezed through dozens of creatures.

What was going on? That question was in everyone’s eyes. But the doubts didn’t last long. This was a critical situation.

“There is a breach!”

The problem remained about whether to fight or retreat.

“Retreat! Fall back!”

The soldiers were the first to leave. They verified that the strength of the opponent was too much. The soldiers were more concerned about getting away from Saudi Arabia. The guilds from other countries also started stampeding away.

The person wielding the spear was strong, but that was it. It wasn't enough to revive the dying hope. They were lacking something in their chests.

But there was no escape.

The Koreans in the front. The wounded. A few guilds. They were abandoned.

The light had completely disappeared, and in its place was death.

However...

Ddubeok.

Ddubeok.

A man holding a sword. Wearing a black, half skull mask.

He made his way to the centre.

The area around him seemed to be blurred by a strange haze and he drew the attention of everyone around him. As every eye turned towards him, the man raised his hand.

Chiiiik.

Kwa ru ru rung!

At the same time, lightning swallowed up the Dungeon Master.

*

Yoo Eun-hye's mouth gaped open. The current situation was beyond her understanding.

A familiar appearance. He was wielding the sword but it was still unbelievable.

‘Captain-nim...!’

She couldn't say it properly because of the deep cuts. But Yoo

Eun-hye saw it. She clearly saw it.

She wasn't mistaken.

His whole body might be blurred, but she couldn't forget that proud stance.

A man that appeared whenever there was despair. In the past, he was the rising star of Heaven's Will and Yoo Eun-hye's guide.

After his death at the hands of the creatures, Heaven's Will had held a crisis meeting of how to handle it. As well as...Yoo Eun-hye had some serious problems regarding it.

Randolph Brigsiel.

He died. Everyone thought he was dead. He was seriously injured and dragged into the dungeon with the angel. Yoo Eun-hye believed in him, but he didn't come out alive.

She cried while holding the memorial service. More than a year had passed since Randolph Brigsiel became her leader. The only person she would follow. Since then, she was always expanding the horizon of her limitations. A man who always disappeared then suddenly reappeared.

Deep in her heart, she always thought he would return. But she had dismissed it as a delusion every time the thought entered her head.

Then...

He returned.

He came here alive.

Once again when everyone was in trouble. When their lives were at risk! He once again showed up with a blasé face.

Yoo Eun-hye couldn't see half his face but she could imagine it; he would be coldly smiling. He would address all problems like it was exciting.

“Take this. It is a very precious potion but Master commanded me to pass it to you. Treat the child next to you.”

Krasla, holding the red spear, was suddenly next to her. She only saw him a few times as he always followed the captain. He passed her a potion that had small leaves floating in it.

The finest potion made using the leaves from the Tree of Origin. It was slightly weaker than an elixir but it had excellent recovery abilities. It could heal a person even if only half the body was alive.

Yoo Eun-hye accepted the potion. She treated Edward first. Edward's status was a lot worse than hers.

She poured the potion and the wounds healed in the blink of an eye. An instant effect. She turned her head with surprise.

“...Is there a way to win?”

“That isn’t worth answering.”

Krasla turned his body.

He joined the battlefield. It was cruel but that cruelty was already like an answer.

‘That’s right. Isn’t it obvious that there is a way to win?’

There was a smile on Yoo Eun-hye’s face. She didn’t feel any more pain after pouring the potion on her wound.

Frankly, she had been having a hard time. No matter how hard Lee Ji-hye tried, it was impossible to fill his shoes. Confidence... came flooding in.

‘Thank you for being alive.’

*

“...You!”

Pakan Griolli's eyes widened. It seemed like he recognized Krasla and I.

There was no significant correlation. In this situation, I had taken measures to prevent my identity from leaking. I arranged my powerful creatures around the dungeon. By now, they had probably reached the top floor of the dungeon.

The guardian protecting the Dungeon Core would be simple to handle.

The humans were an issue, but this would be a one-time experience.

Pakan Griolli's power was no match for me. After processing Pakan Griolli, I would also need to deal with Kim Yong-woo.

The humans had withdrawn like it was low tide, there were only a few remaining here. Half of them were South Koreans...although I couldn't completely block their mouths, it was possible to conceal the situation.

Of course, not all of them would be able to survive.

"It has been a while."

I laughed coldly.

I wore a rare grade ring called ‘Strange Echoes’ that distorted the sound in the environment. In other words, not many of the people here would be able to guess who I was. So I didn’t need to worry about the conversation being heard.

Chwack!

I brandished Wrath.

Pakan Griolli narrowly missed getting injured and said.

“Why are you here? No...why are you helping the humans?”

“I don’t know what you are talking about. My purpose for coming here is only you. Pakan Griolli.”

Their hands didn’t stop moving. Nails scraped against a sword in a situation that seemed equal.

But there was a difference in their expressions. Pakan Griolli frowned and said.

“You are aiming for me? Ha!”

“How funny. You are still drunk on the glory of the past and aren’t aware of your position. Right now, you are my food.”

I opened Mind’s Eye. The status window soon surfaced in front of me.

Name: Pakan Griolli
Occupation: Demon Duke (Dungeon Master) Title: * King of Wolves (Ex U, Agility and Strength +4) * Slaughterer (Ex U, Agility and Strength +4)

Stats

Strength: 87 (+8)

Intelligence: 75

Agility: 79 (+8)

Stamina: 72

Magic Power: 78

Potential: (390+16/500)

Uniqueness: The master of Griolli, the barren land of wolves.

Skill: The Last Wolf (Epic), Revival (Ex U), Viciousness (U)

[Relative Comparison]

Pakan Griolli

Strength 95 Intelligence 75 Agility 87 Stamina 72 Magic 78
Potential (390+16/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 95 Intelligence 81 Agility 90 Stamina 85 Magic 96
Potential (396+51/500)

Pakan Griolli had quite a steep growth compared to before. His titles and skills also increased.

But I still had superior total strength. Thanks to the Emperor's Sword stimulating the Heart of the Hell Monarch, I gained two points in intelligence and a further two points from drinking the potions made by the leaves of the Tree of Origin for a month. Therefore, I wasn't lacking in intelligence.

"That is just casual talk! Come, I will show you the proper Pakan Griolli."

His body started to change.

The Last Wolf (Epic) skill was activated.

Grrrrr!

Soon Pakan Griolli had turned into a three metre blue wolf.

A dignified presence that filled the area.

I pulled out one more sword.

It was the radiantly shining 'Emperor's Sword.'

Although I wasn't familiar with dual swords, the ego sword was steady in my hand. It felt like the sword was waking up in my hands.

The option attached meant it could never be destroyed.

It would keep stimulating the Heart of the Hell Monarch the more I used it.

So now I used it in conjunction with Wrath.

"You are a good opponent to practice against."

I violently collided with the wolf Pagan Griolli.

Two swords in my hands. I had no constraints.

The fight was over. Krasla was helping the Awakened against the incoming creatures.

Some people felt hope and started to become more active. Thanks to that, I was able to relax and enjoy the fight against Pagan Griolli.

A grand duke was needed. A mere duke wouldn't be able to beat me.

A message window flashed.

-Great achievement! Duke 'Pakan Griolli's' dungeon has been destroyed!

One residual point has been awarded.

1,500,000pt will be paid.

1,100 achievement points will be added.

My creatures had succeeded in destroying the Dungeon Core.

The barrier was already destroyed so the dungeon was useless. It would take too long to recover. It was only a matter of time before it was the target of other demons or humans. Investing in it would just damage me.

Grrr...!

Pakan Griolli panicked. He placed his most powerful creatures near the Dungeon Core, so he never imagined it would fall so easily.

Kwang! Kwakwang!

The dungeon started to crumble.

Rocks fell from the ceiling and threatened everyone.

But I was still pushing against Pakan Griolli.

Grwaang!

I didn't try to escape.

In fact, this situation was rather nice. I would be driven to extreme limits while fighting Pakan Griolli, so it was an invaluable experience.

“Pakan Griolli. This will be your grave.”

It was time to end this.

Kuuong!

Pakan Griolli collapsed.

He lost his leg and his heart was stabbed. The wolf features started disappearing, but his body was already dead.

-Great achievement! The hunt of Duke 'Pakan Griolli' has succeeded!

One residual point has been awarded.

1,500,000pt will be paid.

1,100 achievement points will be added.

He received the same achievements for destroying the Dungeon Core.

Then Krasla cut off Pakan Griolli's head with his spear. It was a contingency measure against advanced healing. The severed head rolled across the ground.

"Hrmm..."

My condition wasn't okay. Krasla's body was also a wreck. My stamina was a little low and there were multiple wounds in several areas.

I pushed myself to the limits while fighting Pakan Griolli. I wanted to practice dual swordsmanship so I had pushed myself. My technique would rise in more dangerous situations. This was my own belief learned from the battlefields in my past.

“Captain-nim!”

Members of Heaven’s Will including Yoo Eun-hye and Kim Yong-woo came up to me.

The people from other guilds were also slowly moving to their feet.

However, I held out a hand and stopped them.

“Ah...”

White, Black, the other saber tigers and the spartoi appeared at that moment.

The remaining humans were forced to freeze.

I was injured. All the Awakened also had serious injuries. They judged that it would be impossible to fight in this state.

I moved while holding my dual swords. And I stood in a position to save my guild members.

The standoff lasted a few moments.

Soon after, the creatures’ claws and fangs took the lives of some

Awakened.

“We have to help them!”

“Stay back. There will be greater damage if we move in.”

I blocked Yoo Eun-hye before she could run out.

She bit her lips but stopped moving. She needed to think objectively or it was highly likely she would lose her life. In the end, Yoo Eun-hye could only stand back with tight fists.

After a while, the creatures left the dungeon.

‘Great.’

I nodded.

This was also part of my plan.

It was better to have fewer witnesses.

I had killed a duke. Of course, this story leaking still wouldn’t cause significant problems. I was already a symbol and now I had ‘resurrected’ during the dungeon destruction event. It was evident from Kin Yong-woo’s face. Thanks to this, my name would spread a little further.

“Quickly. Time is running out to leave the dungeon.”

Kururung!

The dungeon was slowly collapsing.

The rest of the guild followed behind me.

Chapter 109: Party (1)

Heaven's Will.

Located in the heart of Gangnam, it was truly the best guild in South Korea.

No one could disagree with this.

Kim Yong-woo's eyes were teary. He had all sorts of worries while attacking the dungeon in Saudi Arabia, but they were now gone.

He had returned. These words were enough.

“Captain-nim...!”

Warak!

Yoo Eun-hye hugged me as soon as the plane descended. She had been quiet for the last few days, but that stopped the moment she stepped foot on South Korean soil.

I stayed still and looked around.

Everybody was looking at me with a curious expression. There were a number of reporters requesting an interview but I ignored them.

The atmosphere was quiet as they waited for me to speak.

“Guild Master, I will return for a talk.”

I could see the reporters preparing to write in advance. Therefore I only spoke quietly to Kim Yong-woo.

“I look forward to it.”

Kim Yong-woo gave a huge smile. He originally had to defend his position with a dignified attitude, but now life was good.

I didn't mind.

Edward Windsor, who was quietly standing behind Yoo Eun-hye, said.

“This is the last time. I won't forgive you if you make Noona cry one more time.”

“You've developed a lot of affection in the meantime.”

“Noona is my benefactor. I will give my life to her.”

I was the one who saved him, but didn't Yoo Eun-hye nurse him back to health?

I started laughing.

“Am I not welcome?”

“It is better than nothing. As long as Eun-hye noona laughs...”

Edward gazed at Yoo Eun-hye admiringly. Edward’s beginning and end seemed to be Yoo Eun-hye.

‘He won’t be able to escape.’

In a nutshell, Edward was forced to follow me as long as Yoo Eun-hye did. Over time, his obsession with her would just deepen. One of the 10 mighty Heroes in the future had fallen. I didn’t need to worry about him becoming an unexpected obstacle. As long as the growth rate wasn’t bad, he would be able to face a higher level of creatures in the next three years.

“Please be prepared. There is a lot of work in the world these days. This is only the first dungeon destroyed.”

Kim Yong-woo said playfully.

Lee Ji-hye sighed.

“It will be hard to rest in the next few months.”

“We should take today as an opportunity for a break. I deliberately told the reporters to leave so that we could rest.”

The other raid members stretched out and exclaimed.

“Wahh! Home! Bed!”

“I want to eat my mother’s stew.”

A private bus to carry the people arrived.

Yoo Eun-hye was still stuck to me like gum as I boarded the bus. The jealousy in Edward’s eyes became much stronger...I didn’t bother stopping it. But I had to remove her by force after arriving at Gangnam.

“...Ah, I want to keep hugging you!”

Yoo Eun-hye tearfully protested.

“Tomorrow.”

“Bah, we’ll see. You aren’t going to disappear tomorrow?”

I had left them too frequently.

The bus stopped and Kim Yong-woo was waiting for me. Yoo Eun-hye wasn't concerned despite everyone staring at her.

“That won't happen for a while.”

“Are you sure?”

“Trust me.”

“Huheung, I don't believe you. Promise with your finger.”

“Tomorrow.”

I walked out while ignoring her finger. Kim Yong-woo laughed as Yoo Eun-hye shouted louder.

“You really have to come tomorrow! Don't disappear again without telling us! Or else I will burn your badge!”

The next day, there was a wall of humans outside the guild house.

Numerous reporters. It was to celebrate the return of a hero. And there was a crowd of Awakened who knew about my 'resurrection.'

But I didn't show my face to them. There were some personal

details that I kept secret. I always wore a half skull mask outside, so Kim Yong-woo also paid a lot of attention to security.

However, I couldn't just ignore them. There was an intense curiosity about how I managed to come back from the dungeon alive.

I had a private interview with a reporter that was revealed to the public.

The interview was taped and broadcasted by the stations, embroiling South Korea in a huge storm once again.

-Hello. Please introduce yourself.

“I am the captain of the raid group Devil Hunters that belongs to Heaven's Will, Randolph Brigsiel.”

-It is a pleasure to meet Captain Randolph-nim. Then I'll get straight to the point. Several months ago, the angels emerged and creatures gathered in South Korea. I heard that Randolph-nim received a large injury from the creatures and was dragged into the dungeon. Is that true?

“That's right. I was dragged into the dungeon along with the angel.”

-It is amazing. Can you tell me what happened afterwards?

“I met the Dungeon Master.”

–Yes...?

“I met the Dungeon Master.”

–Are you talking about the woman with long ears that appeared with the monster wave?

“That’s right. The Dungeon Master was very curious and healed me.”

–She directly healed you?

“It is true. She is strong but was bored waiting on the top floor. Therefore, she hoped that I would relieve some of that. I would have died if left untreated.”

–I remember. The words of the Dungeon Master spread throughout the country. At that time, Randolph-nim’s attack was a huge issue. Then the angel that came with you...?

“The Dungeon Master isn’t good. She came up with a devilish way to corrupt the angel. My body trembled as I saw the scene.”

–A fallen angel...hah. It is unbelievable. Did anything special happen?

“I was able to explore the dungeon.”

-Is that really possible? The Dungeon Master gave you permission?

“That’s right. But it was up to the 15th floor. The creatures became stronger and the terrain changed as I climbed higher. In some cases, I found ridiculously powerful treasures compared to those downstairs. The top floor is the 31st floor. The Dungeon Master seems to be very interested in the affairs of humans.”

-Wait a minute. Isn’t the Dungeon Master controlling the creatures?

“It is impossible to control them all. And they might be helpful to the further growth of the Awakened. Perhaps...a monster wave will occur in the near future.”

-Things are becoming more bleak. Did she mention what she wants from us humans?

“Increase our strength, and handle the other dungeons. The Dungeon Master hopes for the level of the Awakened to rise. Beyond that, I don’t know. But the Dungeon Master is very strict, she gave me one last warning. A chance like this won’t happen again.”

-I don’t know how far you can grow. Even now, the average

citizens see the Awakened as Superman.

“Climb the dungeon. That road is faster than anything else. And...the Dungeon Core is a powerful weapon. Think of this as a chance.”

–Ah, I heard that Saudi Arabia’s dungeon also collapsed. Heaven’s Will and Randolph-nim contributed a lot to it. I’ve never heard of a Dungeon Core.

“It contains the magic power that maintains the dungeon. We searched for it the day after killing the owner, but there were no signs of the Dungeon Core.”

–Wait! So the Dungeon Master in Saudi Arabia was killed?

“That’s right. Of course, I wasn’t alone. It wouldn’t have been possible without the help of others. That’s why some of the Awakened died.”

–Yes, that is regrettable. In particular, none of the Awakened from China seem to have survived. They were surprised in the middle.

“It can’t be helped. Everyone gathered there was different.”

–Our deepest sympathies. But if it was possible to destroy Saudi Arabia’s dungeon then, here in South Korea...

“That is impossible. South Korea’s Dungeon Master is different. I don’t even dare think of wielding a sword against her. Every Dungeon Master has different traits.”

–It is still monumental. One of the 72 dungeons has been destroyed, so humanity finally has hope.

“If every Awakened grows quickly then it will be possible to protect the peace on earth. These are trials. Trials to make humans grow.”

–Thank you for the good words. And thank you for your time today.

This was the end of the interview.

It lasted approximately five minutes. But the duration didn’t matter. It contained a lot of information.

The captain of Devil Hunters was now the symbol of ‘resurrection.’ The dungeon floors, fallen angels, monster wave and existence of the Dungeon Core.

All of this was amazing.

The interview flowed all over the world. At the same time, the world’s giants started to move. Their eyes were headed towards

South Korea.

*

A half Dungeon Core.

It was broken due to White, but the light showed that there was still some concentration of magic power. The fairy had gone back to its original nature.

I left the half Dungeon Core with the best blacksmiths. The dwarf blacksmith guild, 'Blacksmith' frequently made goods for humans.

'This belonged to a duke, so only Unique or even Exceptional Unique grade items can be made from the Dungeon Core. Rather, it is better to use this politically.'

This was the result of several calculations.

In particular, the weapons would be used to strengthen Kim Yong-woo and Heaven's Will. There was no one using Exceptional Unique (Ex U) weapons among the humans. It was likely that an astronomical sum would be spent for them. I turned my eyes to the outside.

"Ohh, I can't go out. This is really frustrating."

Yoo Eun-hye slumped down.

The reporters in the last few days were to blame. Therefore she was stuck in the guild house. Any member that went out there would be engulfed by the curious humans.

“Go away. It is too hot.”

“Ah, Captain-nim is good. I wouldn’t be able to walk through so many brutes. I will be honest.”

Yoo Eun-hye was strongly attached to my side. She was more aggressive after I returned back alive.

The person who would be called Lightning Queen in the future. There was also the bonus of making the indifferent Edward Windsor annoyed.

“That’s right, isn’t there a party today? Are you wearing a suit?”

There was a huge guild party scheduled to take place this evening. It had occurred a few times, but this was the first time I was participating. It was expected that the guild masters and other important figures would attend.

Yoo Eun-hye continued to babble like a sparrow.

“I’ve made a lot of money in the meantime. I’ll give some to you.

How about it?”

“There is no need.”

“Aye ~ Don’t be like that. You’re coming, yes? You are the only one who can make the reporters move. I wouldn’t even be able to move 200m without you!”

I didn’t bother with a lot of words.

Kim Yong-woo had already grabbed the back of my neck.

‘A suit.’

I didn’t have a lot of time to find one due to the dungeon.

I lightly nodded and stood up.

Chapter 110: Party (2)

At that time.

The creatures that left on the expedition returned.

White entered the dungeon with a weary countenance. But he was still asked about the spoils by Yihi.

An unusual creature. Vast amounts of magic power that couldn't be seen anywhere else. A very good master!

Even White was completely subservient.

“Eh eh? Why is this flesh so small?”

Yihi asked White with a frown.

He was only the size of a fist but he was clearly Infinite Flesh. The reduced Infinite Flesh was wriggling around. He looked like a slime.

Pant pant!

White was playing with the flesh. Then Yihi shouted.

“Jiji! White. Don't bite him.”

White placed the flesh back on the ground.

Yihi was worried.

She didn't know what to do with this one.

He was smaller so didn't look as dangerous as he did in the past. His power was weakened so he didn't seem able to put up much resistance.

“This isn't a problem that Yihi can determine the answer to. I will ask Master when he comes back.”

Yihi's became more thoughtful after changing into an Origin Fairy. But her nature still hadn't changed.

“I will play with him until then. Yihihi!”

Yihi gave an even smile and started poking the flesh.

*

Yoo Eun-hye dragged me to a store selling formal wear and started using me as a mannequin.

“Ah, this looks cool. Shall we try one more change?”

“It is already the fifth one.”

At first I had suffered through it, but now I couldn't see any end. Yoo Eun-hye was looking at me like I was an appetizing piece of meat.

However, it wasn't tiring for the store employees.

“Guest-nim. I think that Guest-nim's ratio fits well with this striped suit~”

“Omo! That is totally my taste! Captain-nim, Captain-nim, change quickly! Come on!”

“Or what about this navy suit?”

“Don't you have good sense? I love everything you bring.”

“If you just wear this once...”

I was tired. Especially of the female employees.

I gave a small sigh as I tried on the clothes.

It was rare for demons to socialize with humans, but it suited my purpose to fit in with them. In addition, I had never been to a

party. I was ignorant about human parties. In this situation, it would be wiser to follow someone else.

Yoo Eun-hye showed similar behaviour every time I wore a suit.

“Good job.”

She gave a thumbs up.

The staff also looked at me with admiration. I was considered handsome to both demons and humans, so I was familiar with such gazes. It was inconsequential to me.

I was only freed after trying on 20 suits.

“Ah...all of them are my favourites. What do you think?”

Yoo Eun-hye gazed at all the suits. But she only worried about it for a short time.

Yoo Eun-hye gave up and said.

“Ah, I don’t know. Let’s just get all of them.”

“Isn’t that excessive spending?”

I asked Yoo Eun-hye.

“Captain-nim, I have a lot of money. There is enough for three generations, so I can spend this much. Don’t worry.”

“Right.”

This was what she earned by putting her life at risk. Yoo Eun-hye was one of the strongest members of Heaven’s Will. It was natural that she would rake in money.

She took care of creatures around the world. Due to that, the good treatment that she received soared.

I was convinced as the laughing Yoo Eun-hye headed for the cash register.

“How should I calculate it?”

“A lump sum!”

“What about shipping?”

“Can you deliver it by six tonight? Gangnam.”

“Of course. I’ll express send it.”

“Then the shipping...please send it here.”

She didn't give the address to the Heaven's Will guild house. I was confused and asked.

"Isn't that the café I rented the other time?"

"I bought the building a month ago."

Yoo Eun-hye casually replied.

The café was a place where the raid group members could gather. It was easier to purchase it.

I was a little concerned about her spending. When I first met Yoo Eun-hye, she lived a simple life. The fact that she bought an entire building was a remarkable change.

"Any man who marries me will be truly blessed. I am young, pretty and have some abilities."

Yoo Eun-hye playfully said.

I ignored her and said.

"Let's go now."

Yoo Eun-hye just laughed like she expected the answer and

noded after glancing at the clock on the wall.

“Come to think of it, there is no time. We need to buy shoes.”

“.....”

“Don’t they need to match the suit?”

The shopping trip wasn’t over yet.

*

We hurriedly returned to the guild after a four hour shopping trip.

An amazing sight at first glance! A mansion with a big yard. A few raid members were watching with gaping mouths.

This was where the party was taking place. There were dozens of guards at the entrance to strictly monitor admittance. But I already received an invitation from the leader and could easily pass through the entrance.

“Wah, it is so big. How much money do you need to live in a house like this?”

“You will never know.”

“I am still developing, no one knows how far I might develop. Just watch.”

Lee Ji-hye and Yoo Eun-hye were slightly overwhelmed by the sight.

Spacious grounds that were at least one thousand pyeong. There was only one house, but it was the size of a mansion. People were walking past manicured lawns. Gardeners had also trimmed unfamiliar trees.

“Please be careful not to leave the path.”

A female receptionist who was guiding us said.

We couldn't step off the path onto the grass. Kim Yong-woo, Yoo Eun-hye and Lee Ji-hye following behind her flinched and tried to make themselves smaller. Despite being the guild master of Heaven's Will, he still wasn't familiar with situations like this.

The only ones who weren't affected were me and Kim Tae-hwan.

Kim Tae-hwan. He was a strong member of the guild and had a friendly relationship with Kim Yong-woo. I didn't have a bad impression of him after the 'advice' he gave me.

‘Simple.’

The scale of this party was extraordinary.

The chairman of the huge 'Ilsung Group' was holding it.

The chairman had trembled in front of me. Of course, I didn't remember him. Yoo Eun-hye and Kim Yong-woo had given me the information.

But it was small for the richest man in the country. This mansion couldn't even compare to one of the castles that the dukes and grand dukes owned in the Demon World.

"Why don't you take off that mask? It looks tight."

Kim Tae-hwan said to me. He was wearing a casual suit that didn't fit in with the surroundings and looked extremely unhappy to be here.

"Don't pay attention to it."

"Damn, this guy is called the strongest Awakened. Are you trying to give off a mysterious air?"

"That mysteriousness will disappear if you beat me."

Kim Tae-hwan shook his head.

“I know myself well. And you are certainly strong. Like you came from an entirely different world...”

“I am flattered that you would say that to my face.”

“But that is only right now. Don’t think that you will stay in that spot forever.”

I just laughed.

The gap was indisputable. He knew that he currently wasn’t my opponent. However, he still didn’t give up. Laying down a challenge.

Soon we arrived near the building where the party was being held. Singing and laughing could be heard.

“Captain-nim. How about it? Am I okay?”

Yoo Eun-hye was fussing with her clothes. She wore a red dress with cleavage, and she looked beautiful.

“Not bad.”

“My makeup? It isn’t smeared?”

“I don’t know.”

“Good.”

I didn’t know anything about makeup.

Then Yoo Eun-hye plastered a lofty expression on her face. She had transformed into an untouchable persona after making a fuss.

“Have a great time.”

Kiiiik!

The party ushers opened the door. At the same time, hundreds of eyes turned towards us.

Chapter 111: Party (3)

There were some familiar faces.

The guild masters of the Five Guilds. Among them was a face that I knew.

Alin. The woman who led the Dambi Guild. In my previous life, she had suffered serious burns from the creatures in my dungeon and kept chasing after me to her death. Two years ago, she also failed to scout me.

Aline was wearing a white dress and came up to me first.

“Nice to see you. It has been a while.”

Kim Yong-woo quickly shook her hand and said.

“Haha. How are you?”

“I shouldn’t lie. This year is a little...there was a lot of work.”

The emergence of the angels. The gathering of creatures. The monster wave. Every day was hectic. Countless Awakened died and the guilds suffered a considerable blow.

“But the Dambi Guild seemed to have fared well.”

“I was lucky. By the way, shouldn’t you introduce the people behind you?”

She peeked at me slyly.

Alin’s gaze was complicated. Was it regret for missing the fish? A mixture of annoyance and self-deprecation. In many ways, she was filled with both love and hatred.

“This! I was too short-sighted.”

Kim Yong-woo turned to introduce me.

“Ahem...can you give me some time?”

A bald man wearing sunglasses approached. He caught my eyes and laughed.

“I won’t fall again today.”

The bald man spoke in a friendly manner. I frowned slightly.

“Who?”

“Oh, you don’t seem to remember. I thought I gave a strong impression...it was two years ago but I didn’t forget. I went to

scout you two years ago. I am Park Min-woo, leader of the Arirang Guild.”

Arirang Guild. It was also one of the Five Guilds. No matter how I looked, I couldn't remember him.

Then another person jumped in.

“Omo, why are you talking among yourselves?”

Wavy, long hair and glamorous lips. Park Min-woo sighed as the woman in her mid-30s approached.

“Miss Kim. I came here first. Don't you know the order?”

“There is an order to greet someone?”

“Why shouldn't there be an order when doing greetings?”

“I don't care!”

The woman pushed aside Park Min-woo and smiled at me.

“Hoho. You are the leader of the raid group Devil Hunters? I am the master of the 'Sorigo Guild,' Kim Suk-soo. I sent you a letter two years ago...do you remember?”

Sorigo was also one of the Five Guilds.

“I don’t remember.”

But I still had no clue.

I searched through my memories but there wasn’t anything.

“Pink envelope, lipstick mark, love. Nothing comes to mind?”

“If there was such a thing then it is gone.”

“Ah...was I too intense?”

Kim Suk-soo moaned and slipped into the background as Kim Yong-woo exclaimed.

“No, what are you guys doing?”

Park Min-woo spoke like it was deplorable.

“I’m sorry but please be a little understanding. Devil Hunters is the number one raid group in South Korea and everyone wants to meet the strongest Awakened. Don’t you know how rarely he is seen?”

“Don’t you have any dignity? The guild masters of the Five

Guilds should maintain an order.”

“Miss Kim, did you hear? The guild master of Heaven’s Will is telling us that there is an order.”

Kim Yong-woo’s face was flushed. Somehow his expression seemed like he was used to this.

Jaengurang!

Then the sound of a dish breaking could be heard in the middle of the party.

“Che! Today’s food tastes bad.”

Naturally all eyes were directed towards a young man who was complaining furiously. Other young people were gathered around him. However, everyone looked nervous.

“He broke it. Ahyu~”

Yoo Eun-hye clicked her tongue. She wasn’t interested in the youth, but the mood was now tense.

“What is going on?”

“Listen for a while.”

Yoo Eun-hye slightly lowered her posture and talked stealthily.

“...That young man brimming with ambition is the only child of Chairman-nim. Half a year ago, he became an Awakened and used his money as a seed to start a guild.”

“Seed?”

“Well, it was for his own self-interest. He wanted to cause an uproar like the Five Guilds, but failed. Even today, he didn’t receive an invitation. He is just trying to get attention, don’t give it to him. He will just give you a headache. Okay? You absolutely can’t.”

Yoo Eun-hye emphasized. But I didn’t understand things like this.

The cool atmosphere quickly disappeared. The guests held hands with each other, danced or had conversations while sipping glasses of wine. However, my face was still stiff.

‘Human parties are quite different from what I know.’

That’s right. I felt goose bumps. I now knew the definition of ‘party.’ I had no idea it would have such a friendly atmosphere.

Basically, I had never participated in a party as a human. I didn’t

know, so I had let Yoo Eun-hye lead me. I intended to follow the basic 'rules.' But...the party only involved dancing and chatting, so I was disappointed.

I was born on the battlefield in the Demon World. Despite being a dreary place, even the low level demons lived well. In particular, the party held once a year was enough to be called the salvation of their lives.

“Captain-nim? Where are you going?”

Yoo Eun-hye's eyes widened. She had wondered about my mood while the guild masters were trying to talk to me. But now I was walking forward towards the young man.

South Korea's leading corporation, Ilsung group. The Chairman Sung Hwi-jang was arrogant and only did as he pleased. His behaviour seemed like there was nothing to fear in this world. The only ones in his eyes were the guild masters of the Five Guilds.

He just enjoyed everything in the vicinity. I hated people like this. The original Earl Briggsiel that I killed in the Demon World had a similar nature. He was someone who believed in 'good blood.' I couldn't stand people like that. He would ridicule his enemies whenever there was a fight.

“Yesterday I hunted the orcs alone. They were noisy and kept saying chwik chwik. I cut their throats and everything became quiet.”

“Gyu-taek. Did you really hunt orcs alone? They look scary...it would be difficult to catch them.”

“Wah~”

Sung Gyu-taek. That seemed to be the young man’s name. He was busy telling stories to the women surrounding him.

“Those guys aren’t my opponent. I managed to reach the 5th floor. Understood? The 5th floor.”

“Yes. I’ve heard that harpies and mud golems are found there. The Devil Hunters raid group also struggled. Gyu-taek, be reasonable.”

“What? You don’t think I can catch creatures like that? Are you ignoring me now? If Devil Hunters succeeded then I can as well. They are just lucky to become famous, but the Awakened in my guild are much stronger.”

His inferiority complex exploded. In his words, Devil Hunters were ‘lucky’ to become famous. The woman, who was sweating, opened her mouth but couldn’t say anything. The attention on Sung Gyu-taek didn’t last long.

All eyes were on me. Both men and women.

“Ah...”

And all the women around Sung Gyu-taek showed an expression of ‘oops.’ All of them were well aware of the members of Devil Hunters. Even so, Sung Gyu-taek’s back was to me as he kept on talking. There was no reason for me to tolerate it.

Sung Gyu-taek turned his gaze towards me now that I came closer. He didn’t seem to like me and spoke with a frown.

“What...cough!”

Bam!

But I didn’t give him a chance. There was a short and concise sound as all eyes around me widened.

The chairman’s pampered son was lying on the floor with a bleeding nose!

This party was in the house of Chairman Sung, so the aftermath wouldn’t be small. ‘Why?’ filled their heads but they couldn’t readily ask the question.

“Y-you dog bastard!”

Sung Gyu-taek wiped his nose with the back of his hand and stood up. His face turned red and his right hand quickly clutched a sword.

“How funny.”

A mocking smile was on my face.

As far as I knew, a party...

It was a place to compete with each other in skills.

One day every year. It was a day when everyone was equal in battle. I could request duels with superiors in an attempt to kill them. If a duel was refused then they would be attacked by all the demons around them.

There were bad humans so I expected a similar scene here, only to end up disappointed.

There was a small break, but now it was time to have a bit of fun.

“What? Is this funny?”

Sung Gyu-taek stood up with anger in his eyes. He couldn't accept such treatment. He aimed his sword at me. However, it didn't connect with anything.

Ppak!

“Eh eh?”

The blink of an eye. Sung Gyu-taek lost his centre and collapsed. But he couldn't understand why he collapsed. He only realized I hit him in the back after feeling the intense pain.

‘How?’ Sung Gyu-taek questioned how I got behind him before falling unconscious.

Chaeeng!

People hovered around Sung Gyu-taek. Sung Gyu-taek's guild members quickly pulled out their swords from the scabbard.

“We won't excuse any more acts of violence.”

“Acts of violence...if you can't forgive it then try and stop me.”

I smiled, revealing my teeth. They weren't even worth considering. There were very few strong Awakened among them. It was the same for Sung Gyu-taek.

Tension started spreading. Many people were aiming their swords at me.

“Even the captain of Devil Hunters can't deal with so many people...!”

“No?”

I pushed against the ground. My sword sliced through all the Awakened rabble. There were dozens of them. Using only a little bit of power was sufficient.

I would create a fun party atmosphere.

After a while, those remaining at the party couldn't help freaking out at the scene.

Dozens of Awakened were kneeling.

In less than five minutes. In addition, I still didn't look tired.

Those who saw me moving for the first time had their mouths gaping open.

“Stop!”

A large number of bodyguards appeared at the entrance in order to stop the situation. And there was a bald man with a big belly in front of them.

His body trembled as he saw his son and the Awakened collapsed on the ground. He urgently sent a bodyguard to check his son was still alive as anger filled his face.

“Who dares cause a riot like this?”

But he didn't take action immediately. A wise decision.

“Randalph. I am the captain of the raid group Devil Hunters.”

Tak!

Kim Yong-woo slapped his forehead in the distance.

The chairman formed tight fists.

“Your name is comparable to a celebrity these days. However, you can't act freely just because of your name. If you don't explain things properly then you might not leave here alive.”

The bodyguards drew their guns from the holsters. Guns were originally illegal, but this was a different world. Now it was common for people to be in possession of a firearm. Much less Chairman Sung who always had bodyguards with him.

However, none of them would be able to hurt me.

“I don't like this party.”

“...What?”

“I’m not laughing.”

Cheok. I took one step closer. The atmosphere became even more tense.

“South Korea and the world is entering the path of destruction. A large disaster that can’t be compared to simple orcs will be coming soon. Yet all of you are in a luxurious mansion and only care about singing, dancing and drinking. No one even pointed out this issue. It is a deplorable charade.”

I clicked my tongue.

My interview with the reporter had spread across the country. I also said that a monster wave would soon happen. Chairman Sung and the people here must have heard it.

But...people were playing around in this place. They should be busy planning operations and keeping an eye on the dungeon. This meeting was just a shell. It was absolutely useless.

“You don’t know? Or are you pretending not to know? South Korea’s power has reached a cliff. Angels appeared, creatures gathered and there will be a monster wave in a few months. The number of Awakened lost in Saudi Arabia also can’t be ignored. Things will worsen over the next few months. How many safe days do you think you will have once a monster wave happens?”

It was apparent that many humans would die. This was a time for

the officials to be tightening their belts and conserving their power.

Everyone was silent. Those familiar with the situation had a gloomy expression on their faces. It was the same for the guild masters.

I took one more step.

“There is already an insufficient amount of preparation time. There is no time to waste celebrating in a place like this. I saw signs that a monster wave is going to happen with my own eyes. The only way to stop it is to jump into the fire. I wanted people to be resolute and willing to participate but...it is disappointing.”

Kyaaaaaoh!

Lightning God cried out.

Everyone was overwhelmed by its shape. Many of them were surprised. Lightning dragon. The dragon had appeared when the angels were fighting the creatures. They never imagined that it would emerge here.

One last step and I stood in front of Chairman Sung.

“Get out of the way. I have no intention of being complacent.”

*

At that time.

Yihi poked the flesh.

“Hehe. Are you hiding something from Yihi?”

Thanks to becoming an Origin Fairy, Yihi could now reliably see through things. And she realized that the flesh had something hidden.

“Tell me. Yihi won’t hurt you ~”

Kkuok! Kkuok!

The flesh continued to flinch back as he was poked. But he didn’t bring out the hidden item.

“Bah, I’ll say this. Do you really want to continue keeping it from Yihi?”

Yihi pledged to tear the flesh apart as she went back to the Tree of Origin. She intended to seek the opinion of the Dungeon Master but he was long gone.

Therefore she got a sharp root from the Tree of Origin.

“I’ll say this right now. Yihihi. This will hurt a little bit!”

Kkumdul!

The flesh instinctively perceived the threat to his life and moved quickly. But it wasn’t enough.

“Flesh. You should have brought it out. This isn’t Yihi’s fault.”

Yihi was grasping a sharp root. She intended to split apart the flesh to find the hidden item.

Puok!

Yihi gave a cruel smile and pierced the heart of the flesh with the root. But...she couldn’t separate the flesh.

A bright light poured out from the area where the root pierced the flesh.

Hwaaack!

Chapter 112: Infinity Armour (1)

“What is this?”

The light immediately disappeared.

Yihi was scared but hurriedly regained her stability.

She grumpily kicked the nasty flesh, only to hurt her toes. She frowned as she rolled and examined the flesh from every direction...it only took a little bit to realize that his form had changed.

“Uhh, he absorbed the root.”

The sharp and solid root. The light was from the flesh absorbing it and now the changes were obvious. The flesh had used it as a source of magic power.

“Flesh. Are you angry with Yihi?”

Yihi’s conscience was pricked and she released the flesh. Before there was wonderful elasticity as she poked it, but now it was extremely hard. The rigid body was like he was angry.

“It didn’t work. This ~ it isn’t fun.”

Duk!

Yihi kicked the rigid flesh.

“Ya!”

Obviously she got a sore foot.

Yihi rolled around on the ground. Despite doing the same thing just seconds before, Yihi hadn't learned.

“Hiing, I'm not playing with you!”

Yihi cried out and flew off to harass the bees.

*

Stein.

The elder of the dwarves assigned to the 7th floor of the dungeon. He was now heading towards the 15th floor with some sturdy dwarves.

“Elder Stein-nim. Will we get some good roots this time?”

“Get rid of the anxiety in your voice. We aren't going to beg.”

“But...we aren’t dark elves. Frankly, I feel a little uncomfortable facing them.”

“Bah, we just have to ignore them since Dungeon Master commanded us to get the roots. And the Tree of Origin didn’t grow here due to chance. It is all thanks to the greatness of Dungeon Master!”

Stein had an upright character.

The dwarves and elves were enemies. Their mood darkened every time they met.

However, the roots from the Tree of Origin were a very good material. The dwarves could quickly improve their skills making decent armour and they could boost their reliability with the Dungeon Master. It was important to obtain the Roots of Origin.

But they always needed to negotiate with the dark elves for the roots. It was ludicrous and absurd. They wouldn’t even be able to see them if it wasn’t for Dungeon Master.

Stein laughed and then snorted.

“We are productive dwarves. On the other hand, they just grow a few plants. We can do at least that much.”

“In many ways, we can be considered proxies of the Dungeon Master.”

“They’ll see soon. Right now the woman called Chrisley is handling the roots, but that will soon change. Once the ‘dwarf king’ is born, we will be in the top position in the dungeon.”

“That’s right. I will be waiting eagerly for that day.”

A sturdy young dwarf replied. The thought of having the authority of a Dungeon Master caused them to be thrilled.

After walking through the forest for a while, Stein frowned.

“By the way, no one came to greet us...ey, such lazy bastards.”

“Isn’t that their original nature?”

“Tsk tsk. This is why the dark elves...eh?”

Stein was spitting when he suddenly cocked his head.

There was something sparking in the bushes. The dwarf poked it with a foot and revealed what it was.

“This...”

A metal sheet.

Stein touched it, patted it, brought the metal plate to his ear and other actions.

“Elder-nim. What is it?”

“A material I’ve never seen before. I can’t feel any magic power from it. I’ll have to hammer at it.”

The eyes of the young dwarf shone.

“Will Elder-nim work on the metal?”

“Of course. Rather, there is a lot I don’t know about it.”

Stein didn’t have the inherent knowledge of all metals that the ‘dwarf king’ was born with.

He had no choice but to study. But it was so interesting.

‘It is unusual. Like something that has just been born into this world.’

In his hand was the newly born, unidentified metal.

Just imaging the results caused his heart to be excited.

Kaaang! Kaaang!

Stein sat in front of a hearth and hammered it.

It had already been 40 hours, during which he repeated the same action without any food or drinks.

‘A great metal. I never thought there would be a metal like this in the world!’

Stein had accidentally picked up a metal he had never seen before. An unexplained metal that seemed to come from myth or legends.

‘Every time it is broken, it just returns to its original position. Its ability to maintain its original properties is very strong.’

The second thing was its solid nature. So changing the form itself was very difficult.

‘I will make an armour. An armour that the world has never seen.’

He didn’t know why he wanted to make armour. It just seemed like he had to make armour. He felt like that.

Kaaang!

Stein poured all his skills into it.

He never looked away and spend dozens of hours without sleep. A hammer was constantly beating down on an anvil in the hottest world.

He did not stop. His muscular body slowly shrank. It was like his life was literally being carved away.

A superhuman mentality and obsession. But little by little, the metal was being shaped. He eyes were kept open by excitement.

Three days, four days...a week.

The dwarves were worried, but Stein banned them from entering his workshop.

Once this was completed, it would be his masterpiece. He didn't want to be disturbed.

After approximately 10 days, the form of the armour started to gradually take shape. Stein's body and spirit gradually eroded as the work progressed.

Saliva dripped. His eyes were full of blood. His white hair and beard were growing. His hands didn't stop moving.

Stein willingly became a slave to the metal. He kept working the metal.

The long march finally ended after a month.

‘This thing...is mine. It can’t be given to anyone else.’

Greed filled his eyes as he grabbed the armour.

*

The party ended due to the storm I caused.

Kim Yong-woo’s hands and mouth were always busy moving.

Time passed quickly and my daily business didn’t change much. Of course, there wasn’t anything specific. I primarily trained Yoo Eun-hye and Edward. Krasla mainly trained Edward, while I made sure Yoo Eun-hye could handle the property of lightning.

“The way you use it with the sword is still a little stiff.”

“Right? I’m not used to it even when I repeat the movements over and over.”

“I’ll teach you a way.”

“Do I need to take off my clothes?”

“There is no need.”

“Really?”

“.....”

Yoo Eun-hye smiled like a cat.

Unlike in the past, there was no need for direct skin contact to induce growth. I placed my hand on Yoo Eun-hye’s abdomen and sent a strong electric current.

“Uhh...”

Yoo Eun-hye’s body twisted but she endured it.

The current flowing was strongly stimulating her erogenous zones. Other people would be turned inside out, but Yoo Eun-hye had received the blessing of the lightning spirit.

The electric current naturally moved inside Yoo Eun-hye. I then slowly moved her hand holding the sword. Moving the energy of others was very delicate work. Intense concentration was needed.

-Master! Something big has happened. A dwarf has gone crazy!

“Ack!”

My concentration broke. The wild current made Yoo Eun-hye leap. Fortunately, nothing dangerous happened.

“W-why did you do that?”

“Wait a minute.”

I stood up.

At the same time, I contacted Yihi.

‘Yihi. What is going on?’

-Yihi isn’t sure. The dwarf elder is wearing Flesh. He isn’t listening to Yihi, he is just trying to absorb the Tree of Origin. The griffin collapsed and Gigantes is blocking him, but he can’t hold out forever...

‘Stein. Wearing Flesh?’

-He turned Flesh into an armour. What should I do? Yihi is afraid, Master.

Flesh could only refer to Infinite Flesh. But didn’t Infinite Flesh

die at Pakan Griolli's dungeon? He had somehow returned alive and was now disguised as armour.

Yihi's voice was extremely pitiful. It was to the extent that I could almost see Yihi trembling.

‘The griffin collapsed...’

I pressed a hand against my forehead. The griffin was a high class creature. Despite it being in the lowest tier, it still took a lot for it to collapse. In addition, even Gigantes was struggling. The griffin and Gigantes were the strongest creatures I had. Krasla, Chrisley and White were strong, but they couldn't compare.

‘Hold on. I am coming now.’

I realized the seriousness of the situation and immediately moved.

Chapter 113: Infinity Armour (2)

Stein...no, 'Greed' was hungry. He was thirsty.

His greed had been awakened.

Absorbing that thing seemed to make his hunger decrease a little bit. Greed moved forward like a thirsty person seeking a well.

However, it wasn't that easy. There were too many blocking him.

"You! You can't pass!"

A large bird and a giant.

Greed didn't like them. He didn't understand why they were blocking him, but he had to get past them.

The battle with the giant was fierce. The big bird was tricky because it had a strong offense. The armour suffered many blows that broke it. However, it was able to quickly regain its original shape.

It was an infinite power. This was the true reality of Greed.

Gigantes was powerful, but that was all. Greed couldn't be beaten with simple power.

Kwarurung!

There was a violent collision. Gigantes was surprisingly pushed back.

“Cough!”

Blood flowed from Gigantes’ mouth. The eyes of everyone watching the battle were shocked.

The dark elves and dwarves gathered and were prepared to attack. They couldn’t allow him to pierce through.

Chrisley, who was in the centre, raised her wand. There was the lich, spartoi and White, but they wouldn’t be able to win against such a tireless existence.

They were filled with tension with every step Greed took. Soon Greed was only a short distance away.

“How funny. This is very interesting.”

The true master of the dungeon revealed himself.

*

It had been alarming. Something unintended had occurred inside my dungeon. It was very unpleasant and I needed to resolve it promptly.

I moved to the 15th floor using the magic circle, and there were fallen creatures everywhere. It was like a typhoon had blown past. Someone had exerted an overwhelming force in the surrounding environment.

And...I curiously examined the griffin that was lying on the ground. Fortunately, it was still alive but I could determined the combat capabilities of the opponent through the injuries.

‘It is good that the griffin has high health.’

It was a high class creature. It was shallow but the griffin was definitely still breathing.

I urgently poured a potion on the griffin’s injuries. It should be able to hold on for half a day.

I needed to resolve this situation first.

‘Infinite Flesh. Stein. What happened?’

Questions were still running through my head.

It was surprising that Infinite Flesh was still alive and was raising

trouble while attached to Stein.

I didn't know the reason. The only way was to verify it directly.

Soon the dungeon started shaking! I heard a crashing sound at the same time. A battle was happening right in front of me.

I walked quickly and was able to witness the scene of Gigantes collapsing while vomiting blood.

‘Ha...’

Gigantes who was confident in a 1:1 fight was completely defeated!

I swallowed my saliva.

At that moment, the dwarf Stein walked forward wearing a black armour. The armour was very unusual. It was carved with the image of a snake with a wide open mouth like it was roaring. Dark magic power was emanating from it and completely eating Stein's mind.

I immediately knew the cause after using Mind's Eye.

-Name – Infinity Armour (Running Wild)

Description: An armour filled with endless greed. The source is a branch from the Tree of Origin, but the blacksmith was lacking skills and couldn't properly purify it. In order to prevent it from running wild, 'dismantling' is necessary.

* Shape recovery. Attacks can be absorbed and converted to magic power. The impact of certain blows are invalidated.

*** It is associated with the Seven Sins' 'Greed' and can replace it in the set.

I couldn't help smiling. I didn't know how it was made but the options were really great. It ignored some strikes and could absorb attacks to convert them into magic power. It meant that key skills could be used infinitely.

It would be one of the best items in a long war. Moreover, it could replace one of the Seven Sins. Infinity Armour combined with Wrath and Sloth would give him three pieces in the set.

"How funny. This is very interesting."

The human party couldn't even compare. This was something that truly amused me. The damage caused wasn't within my plans but it might be a big benefit. Only walking on a fixed path would cause a lack of stimulation. Things were likely to become stagnant or too easy. I didn't want that.

Stein turned around and looked at me. His eyes were stained red.

Chrisley and Yihi were nervously watching from the rear with the creatures.

My smile wasn't erased as I said.

"There seems to be a stir in my dungeon. The time has come for punishment."

"Don't...stop me!"

Paak!

Stein pushed off against the ground in order to move faster. A movement that would never be seen from a dwarf. I didn't panic and just pulled out Wrath.

Chwang!

The opponent was using a thick sword to carry out random attacks. Finesse was missing, he just swung. But it was powerful. A wrong hit wouldn't be good for me.

Despite that, I was still smiling. The armour managed to pull such power out of Stein. I couldn't help getting excited. How could I not have fun?

‘Let’s see if it can recover the shape again after Dark Sword.’

Injuries made with Dark Sword couldn’t be healed, so I was curious to see if the armour could repair itself. Wrath was surrounded by darkness.

Ttang! The armour was hard. My sword bounced off it. I laughed and took a step back while maintaining my stance. Stein entered the empty space in front of me.

He was just blindly attacking. It might have worked on Gigantes but that wasn’t enough for me. I had sharpened my skills in the Demon World and my previous life.

Suack!

Stein’s left arm was cut. And black smoke wrapped around the wound in the armour. The left arm started to gradually heal. No, it wasn’t. I quickly modified my thoughts.

“It isn’t healing...haha! Creation!”

I realized it.

He wasn’t recovering. The arm was being reconstructed. It wasn’t healing, so the effect of Dark Sword wouldn’t work.

I felt a lot of emotions.

Recovery and creation were completely different areas. Even if this was explained in the Achievements Store, I honestly wouldn't have believed it. The fact that the armour could recreate itself was a surprising blow.

'However, a huge amount of magic power will be needed for creation. I am curious about how long it can last.'

I had a curious nature. I wondered about what it could stop, how much it could absorb and the recovery...

"Paranormal."

-One of the five blessings of Paranormal, 'Magic Power +5 for 30 minutes' has been applied.

Perhaps it was my higher intelligence? Unlike before, I received good blessings more often.

"Wrath."

-High magic power (101) has caused strength, agility and stamina to rise by 10.

Intelligence has fallen by 20 but your original pure intelligence is more than 76. Due to the unique characteristics

caused by Astral Code, you won't be taken over by the 'Wrath' state.

My strength jumped over 100. 105 was a transcendent number. My intelligence reached 91 so it finally seemed possible to use Sloth. But there was no need to use it now. Wrath was enough.

I was trying to 'dismantle' the armour.

I smiled towards Stein's restored left arm and said.

"Do not disappoint me."

Kwang! Kwang! Kwarurung!

Wrath slashed the armour, cracks were caused in it with every hit. Stein's expression changed. His body was gradually moving away from me.

Greed started to feel fear and was trying to run away.

"You are an excellent blacksmith. I won't kill you. First..."

In fact, Stein was an influential person among the dwarves. It would be a shame to kill him. Hopefully he would be able to produce more things like Infinity Armour, without the problems.

First, I needed to remove the armour from him. Then I would fix his improper manners.

“Too slow.”

Thanks to the Wrath skill, agility had also reached over 100. No matter how fast he was, Stein wouldn't be able to escape from me.

“Kuaaah!”

Stein eventually gave up on running and aimed his sword at me again. Once again, moves with no finesse wouldn't work against me.

I raised Wrath with a laugh. I gathered all my strength.

Would it be able to absorb this attack?

I hit the armour as hard as I could.

Kwaang!

*

Stein collapsed.

The armour was partly destroyed. I forced the armour off.

‘It will recover little by little.’

However, the running wild status had disappeared. I once again checked the armour with Mind’s Eye.

-Name – Infinity Armour (Growth)

Description: An armour filled with endless greed. The source is a branch from the Tree of Origin, but the blacksmith was lacking skills and couldn’t properly purify it. It has been dismantled but the magic power of the user allows the Infinity Armour to ‘grow.’

* Shape recovery. Attacks can be absorbed and converted to magic power. The impact of certain blows are invalidated.

* Special options will develop depending on the degree of growth.

*** It is associated with the Seven Sins’ ‘Greed’ and can replace it in the set.

Growth?

This was the first time I had seen that.

‘It is due to Infinite Flesh’s skills.’

I was convinced.

Infinity Armour had been made using the flesh. I had high expectations for the skills that would be revealed as it grew.

“Treat Stein and clean him up. In addition, tend to the griffin as soon as possible.”

“I understand, My Dungeon Master.”

Chrisley replied respectfully.

I held the armour and headed to the top floor.

‘Great.’

The shape of the armor completely recovered in two days.

‘A third set item.’

Collecting more set items would have better effects. Obtaining two set items didn’t have much of an effect. But this was the third one.

I wore the Infinity Armour and a message window instantly popped up.

-’Wrath’, ‘Sloth’ and ‘Greed’, three of the Seven Sins have been collected.

The relevant skills have disappeared and the new skill ‘Corruption (Ex Epic)’ has been created.

Corruption...!

I repeated it a few times and looked closely at the message window.

An exceptional epic rated skill?

My heart jumped quickly. I swallowed my saliva and opened the status window.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

* Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

* Origin Master (Epic, all stats + 3)

Stats

Strength: 80 (+15)

Intelligence: 86 (+5)

Agility: 75 (+15)

Stamina: 80 (+5)

Magic Power: 85 (+11)

Potential: (406+51/500)

Remaining Stat Points: 7

Electric Power: 21GW

Uniqueness: Heart of the Hell Monarch has woken up.

Skill: Combine Everything (U), Mind’s Eye (Ex U), Dark Sword (Ex U), Divine Sword Unity (Ex U, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Corruption (Ex Epic)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 91 Intelligence 76 Agility 86 Stamina 84 Magic 95
Potential (392+40/500)

Strength 95 Intelligence 91 Agility 90 Stamina 85 Magic 96
Potential (406+51/500)

The last time I checked my status window had been after the

angel eggs. My stats had increased by a lot. Among them, intelligence rose significantly due to the Emperor’s Sword and the Tree of Origin. However...

My eyes naturally went to the skills. ‘Wrath’ and ‘Sloth’ were gone and ‘Corruption’ took their place.

I gazed at the description of Corruption.

-Name – Corruption (Ex Epic)
Description: You don’t know what true corruption is. *** Be cautious.

A short explanation that wasn’t satisfactory at all.

However, it gave off a striking feeling.

In the end, the best way to determine the effects of Corruption was to use the skill directly.

‘...It isn’t possible right now.’

When I was taken over by Wrath, I was caught in a completely

destructive state.

This skill was half a grade higher so it was likely that I wouldn't have any self-control.

It was only half a step but it was like the difference between the sky and earth. It wasn't easy to use it when the effect was unknown.

Mind's Eye couldn't see the secret options. There was just a warning telling me to 'be careful.'

I liked adventures and challenges but there was a clear limit.

'I can't use it at the moment.'

I nodded.

I shifted my attention from the armour to Yihi.

Over the last two days, I had been too busy watching the Infinity Armour to question her.

Yihi trembled as my gaze fell on her.

Chapter 114: Demon World Auction (1)

“Y-Yihihi. Why are you looking at me all of a sudden? Aw ~ I feel hot.”

Yihi waved her hand and feigned ignorance. But her rigid facial expression was different from her gestures.

"Tell me calmly."

"That...Yihi...was wrong...hiing..."

Yihi flew and fell on both knees before me.

I would see through any excuses that she made.

Yihi, who was silent, finally spoke.

"That white guy. He brought the flesh. So wasn't Yihi in charge? But he suddenly made me furious. Yihi didn't mean to do it."

That white guy was White.

I heard the story in silence.

Yihi constantly moved her hand around as she explained. She had grabbed a piece of the Tree of Origin and stabbed it into the

flesh. And Stein seemed to have picked the hardened flesh up afterwards. In other words, Stein accidentally picked up Infinite Flesh and turned him into the Infinity Armour.

"Yihi was really wrong. Yihi should have been careful until the end. Please forgive me Master...hiing."

She was much more sincere about apologizing than before.

I just continued looking at Yihi.

I often found it amazing how different her perspective was.

She had a careless nature. As well as being rough and playful, she was obsessive and faithful. So Yihi was very different from me. Creative. The power to produce something new.

I instinctively recognized her capabilities. No one else would have tried to stab the flesh with a branch of the Tree of Origin. Those who knew the true nature of the flesh would be afraid to even approach. Or maybe they would consider a normal procedure.

She also buried the angels near the Tree of Origin. I would have thrown the corpses away or fed them to the creatures. But thanks to Yihi burying them properly, a lot of Tashmal's wariness had faded away. In addition, there were a few trivial things in her head.

‘She has been helpful without knowing it.’

It could be a coincidence. However, it happened too many times to be dismissed as a coincidence.

Obviously, Yihi had sinned, but I didn’t know if scolding her was the right thing to do. If constraints were placed then her creative behaviour was likely to disappear.

Of course, Yihi wasn’t worried about this.

"Tell me your sins yourself."

First I would give her an option.

Yihi thought for a while before saying.

"I didn’t wait for Master."

"No. That isn’t a sin, I gave you that type of permission."

"Yihi left the flesh alone!"

“It is a dangerous existence that can’t be left alone. That is one sin but the greater sin still remains.”

A great sin.

What was it?

Yihi's expression was busy thinking. Then Yihi seemed to realize something and said.

"Hiing...I contacted Master late."

I nodded.

"That's right. You should have contacted me as soon as it happened. It is dangerous when I am far away."

"Now I see. Yihi was really bad."

Yihi sullenly said with tears in her eyes.

"If this case, your error was not contacting me quickly enough. You failed to do that so I will punish you. However, you will set the level of punishment."

"Yihi will?"

"Yes."

Punishment and education at the same time. This was to find Yihi's creativity. She would also acknowledge the mistake and not

do it again.

I waited as Yihi contemplated for a while.

After 10 minutes, Yihi finally came to a decision and opened her eyes.

"I will be a bee for a month. A daughter of honey. I will have fun with the bees. Yihi will now go to the bees."

...Was this a joke?

'No, it isn't.'

It wasn't a joke.

A red face. Trembling bodies. Her presence itself seemed to harass the bees.

I thought about handling her similar to the method with the dark elves in the past. Her idea was creative but it wasn't really what I was thinking.

"One month is too long. The dungeon can't be left alone during that time."

"Yihi's punishment can't be shorter."

"How about you spend the rest of the time helping Tashmal with the baby angels?"

The leaves of the Tree of Origin were a great help in growing the wings of the angels. I wondered what the effect would be if an Origin Fairy looked after the baby angels.

"I understand, Master. Leave it to Yihi."

"Then go imitate the bees."

"Ah, that's right. Yihi is now a bee. Wiiiing ~"

Yihi flapped her wings very hard, trying her best to imitate the way a bee flew. She soon headed to the location of the bees.

"....."

I was at a loss for words.

I would check on her in a week.

*

There were too many things happening. Taking over the dungeon in China, the attack of the angels and the emergence of

the Cruel Commander.

After three months, a note was sent through a dimensional crack.

The caller...was Dubolong.

‘It is the list of items for the Demon World Auction.’

It had finally arrived.

I smiled as I read the list.

‘This year will be the turning point.’

The contents of the note were great. I checked it a few times and knew what many of the items were.

The time would soon come to obtain the goods. I thought of the treasures that I would later obtain...

I would use this auction to get even further ahead, so it was turning point. Once left behind here, the other demons wouldn't be able to catch up for the next five years.

In contrast...I would gain a myriad of benefits in the next five years.

Dubolong gave me the list due to our alliance.

“Haha!”

I laughed as I checked the number of points I had.

The Demon World Auction.

The points I had last year couldn't even compare. This was important. It was to the extent that I wouldn't run out of points no matter how many things I bought. The winner would be me.

At the same time, I would be painting a loser sign on the heads of the other demons. I couldn't stop laughing as I imagined the look on Upa's face.

Wouldn't it be an emergency situation for him?

‘He won't be able to stop me.’

Anyway, it was a fact that I would be the winner. Even if he tried something...

‘I will greet him with a smile.’

He would be used as a stimulus on the path ahead of me.

*

The crack was opened. The familiar gnome-shaped dark spirit welcomed me.

"It has been a while."

"Kihihi. How are you?"

"It has been a decent year. What about the Spirit World?"

"It has been very busy. We've been trying to filter out the spies..."

I knew about this problem. But I didn't know about what occurred afterwards. I didn't want people to know about my relationship with Dubolong, so I acted like I had just heard the story. I asked with mock curiosity.

"There are spies here?"

"Kihihi. It is ridiculous. The other elemental spirits disguised themselves as dark spirits to hassle us. Thanks to that, this auction will be very quiet. By the way...how many points have you gathered?"

"Aren't you prohibited from directly asking?"

The dark spirit just laughed.

“Aigoo, I’m sorry. Please turn a deaf ear to it. It's just that the average number of points in the third year is very high...isn't Randolph-nim our best customer? You will be a great help in increasing the average...”

"How much?"

“Don't be alarmed. 1.3 million!"

1.3 million.

I nodded lightly.

The demons were catching up.

There were 69 demons for a total of 89.7 million points. And...I had a 22 million share of that total.

In other words, it meant that the actual average was 1 million. I alone had raised the average by 300,000.

In my previous life, that would be enough to buy two high class 2Lv creatures.

Of course, there would be a severe competition over the auction

goods. In some cases, it would be used as the starting point for a war. So it was important to obtain high class creatures. High class creatures showed off the power of the dungeon.

They were hidden cards that could absolutely reverse the situation. The factions of the grand dukes were eager to buy top quality creatures. There would be creatures such as a hydra, dragon, etc.

'High class 2Lv creatures.'

And...there would be those at the same level or higher than the griffin and gigantes in this auction.

I had clearly seen it with my own eyes. It was like Dubolong said last time. High class 2Lv creatures were now being bought in the third year. It was enough to shake the balance.

'I must buy them.'

I needed to buy the treasures, no matter how many points I had to spend.

The dark spirit examined my expression and said.

"You don't seem greatly surprised."

"I am surprised."

"Kihi, your ability to manage your expression is very great."

"Don't talk nonsense. We should start moving."

"I will guide you. Follow me!"

Chapter 115: Demon World Auction (2)

This was the location where the auction items could be previewed.

There was only Ariel in the first year, then quite a few demons in the second year, but now all the demons were examining the goods inside.

There were some familiar faces.

Grand Duke Okullos and his demons. Grand Duke Upa...there were quite a few empty positions next to him.

There were exactly 68 demons if I counted. Including me, there were 69. The number of demons remained unchanged except for the ones I killed. There were no big surprises so far.

But they weren't interested in me. The sound of footsteps was heard but they didn't turn their heads once. The huge cage in the middle of the room was drawing all the attention of the demons.

"Hoh."

"I think this creature was exterminated so I don't know where they found it."

"On the subject of this creature...something is strange."

I also felt a similar sentiment.

It was 'admiration.' I moved my gaze and looked at the creature inside the cage.

'She is from the Celestial Maiden clan. Or Mago.'

A species that mixed with the wind and manipulated storms. That was Mago. At first glance, she had the form of a woman, but wasn't as beautiful as they were known to be. She was 5m in height and had hair that was dozens of centimetres long. She only had one eye and her breasts were flabby. But her speed and power were enough to startle the heavens and earth.

And Mago had insightful eyes. In my previous life, Okullos has called her his gem of destruction. Their population was very low so it wasn't easy to obtain them. But...one of them could leave senseless devastation and thousands of corpses in their wake.

'It is good to see her.'

It was sincerely great.

I smiled as I gazed into Mago's one eye. After a while, Mago suddenly started to rampage.

Hwiing...!

Kwang! Kwang!

A huge storm moved around Mago.

However, the cage was made of a special device and didn't move an inch.

“Ha!”

"Great magic power!"

“Kiaaack!”

Mago screamed. Then she shed red tears and collapsed.

'This state shows that the contract isn't complete.'

This was only the third year.

The spirits weren't used to dealing with high class creatures.

It was inevitable. Mago was like a rat caught in a trap.

‘You are mine.’

All the demons here were thinking that.

They swallowed their saliva as they imagined owning Mago. She was a high class 2Lv creature, so they would be able to gain an advantage over the other demons. The demons had been using the time to save their strength. They couldn't let humans disrupt the balance by killing some demons.

‘Upa...he looks impatient.’

I turned to look at Grand Duke Upa.

The positions next to him that should have been full were quite empty. Pakan Griolli was banned but there should have been two more demons. However, they couldn't be seen. It was because I killed them.

He didn't know the facts. Thanks to that, Grand Duke Upa's expression could easily be read. An expression that showed he couldn't relax. He showed hostility as he observed the surroundings. There was intense greed in his eyes as he stared at Mago.

“Upa. Don't you look a little shabby?”

A person with giant goat horns. Perfection didn't exist in this world, but she was a demon with the blood of the devil!

Grand Duke Ariel openly laughed. The difference between her

faction and Upa's was too large.

Upa's expression distorted even further.

"Shut up, Ariel. You should hide your indignities."

"Hide my indignities? Upa. I don't like people planning things in secret."

"Indeed? It is more classy than challenging a guy."

Ariel's expression changed.

"The challenge couldn't be avoided. So tell me that you want to fight. Although you are completely delusional and childish, isn't this the perfect moment to break our relationship?"

"Don't be complacent. Ariel Diablo..."

The two of them growled at each other, revealing their teeth. They had no confidence in fighting each other so it was just a back and forth.

However, what if one of them obtained Mago? It was evident that at least Ariel and Upa would try to obtain Mago.

Compared to them, Okullos and Pandemonium's desire was

lacking. In particular, I couldn't understand what Okullos was thinking.

Ssik!

Okullos made eye contact with me and smiled. He seemed to be saying 'I know.'

Okullos was relaxed. He was like this despite tasting a little bit of my power...

'I need to prepare.'

At that time, he had said. He had obtained big information in exchange for his arm.

I would have to be prepared depending on the direction he went in.

"Okullos. Where did you sell one of your arms?"

"....."

Okullos' smile faded to an expressionless look as he turned around.

"Tsk tsk, you really lack any friendliness."

The grand dukes were badmouthing each other. He was Pandemonium. He was critical as he didn't receive an answer to his question.

However, Pandemonium didn't stop there.

"Don't you think so? Randolph Brigsiel?"

"I don't know."

I tried to suppress my heart from beating wildly. I had little contact with Pandemonium in my previous life. It was the first time he spoke to me, so it meant he 'accepted' me to a certain degree.

I had only heard stories about Pandemonium. The demons of the other factions called him very annoying and strange.

'He is someone who would stab a dagger quietly.'

I was impressed by Pandemonium and opened Mind's Eye.

Name: Pandemonium
Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Spell Breaker (Epic, Magic Power +10)

* Doomsday Prophet (Epic, Intelligence +10)

* Serpent's Tongue (Ex U, Magic Power +8)

Stats

Strength: 80

Intelligence: 82 (+10)

Agility: 91

Stamina: 78

Magic Power: 85 (+18)

Potential: (416+28/500)

Uniqueness: A shaman who feeds on the dead. In the end, he developed an aura of death.

Skill: Order Destruction (Epic), Unique Ward (Epic), Power of Death (Epic), Amazing Observation (U)

[Relative Comparison]

Pandemonium

Strength 80 Intelligence 92 Agility 91 Stamina 78 Magic 103
Potential (416+28/500)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 96 Intelligence 93 Agility 91 Stamina 85 Magic 98
Potential (412+51/500)

My total stats were still higher.

After gaining the Infinity Armour, my stats had slowly but steadily grown. Strength increased by one, agility by one, intelligence by two and magic power by two.

But...what was a grand duke? His pure abilities were very high.

At that time, Pandemonium narrowed his eyes.

"This wily bastard. You saw something."

I calmly replied.

"Are you deluded?"

"My eyes aren't wrong. It is because I am a person well-versed in spells."

"Then I suppose you saw correctly."

There was no need to quarrel.

Especially if the opponent was Pandemonium. I would just become more tired from a lengthy altercation. It didn't matter if he knew that much.

"A mysterious guy. Tell me honestly, are you the one who touched Upa's faction?"

It seemed he had wanted to ask me this.

At the same time, the magic power in the area changed. His Unique Ward (Epic) skill stretched out. It seemed to purposely block any part of this conversation from leaking.

'He doesn't want the other demons to hear.'

Information was power. Pandemonium was well aware of this. I didn't know the results, but it seemed like he had really incredible powers of observation.

However, I wasn't kind enough to give him the answer he was seeking.

"Pandemonium. I thought that was your work."

I wasn't being sincere. I wasn't sure that I should poke him. But Pandemonium replied firmly.

"Upa is lazy by nature, but now he will be working in earnest. Isn't it obvious that he is very annoyed?"

Indeed...

I was quite familiar with Upa. Upa was aware of the seriousness of three demons in his faction being killed. Apart from Pakan Griolli, the other demons were mediocre so there was no need to be concerned.

But now it was different. Pakan Griolli was a duke so it was natural for Upa to feel concerned. He wanted to ferret out the culprit.

I answered with a smile.

"Why is it important to you?"

"Huhu. Indeed, you are right. But that still doesn't answer my question. The other grand dukes might be ignoring you, but apart from Ariel, I think that you are the only one who would touch Upa."

"They will self-destruct by fighting each other so why should I move? What can I do alone?"

"The reason is not important. And...aren't you twisting this

conversation little by little? I have examined your behaviour in the Demon World Auction over the last two years. Your aim to gain our attention was successful. Thanks...this has been fun, but I have to go now.”

Unique Ward was removed.

Nobody seemed to pay any attention as Pandemonium moved away.

'Is he looking down on me?'

Pandemonium seemed inwardly convinced that I was the culprit.

Of course, he wouldn't pass that information onto Grand Duke Upa. It would be good news for him if Upa continued being damaged. So he seemed to be inciting me.

I made a mistake.

Perhaps I became too proud because of my memories of my previous life. I thought of them as moving puppets.

Out of nowhere, something like this had happened.

'It won't be easy.'

The Demon World Auction.

I was still confident that it would be the beginning of my rise.

Chapter 116: Demon World Auction (3)

“Nice to see you! The time has come once again for the Demon World Auction! I, Dubolong happily greet you.”

The spacious hall.

The curtains opened and Dubolong appeared in clown makeup. Dubolong bowed his head as his expression seemed to give off ‘innocence.’

"Alas, the numbers have reduced from last year. As a host, my heart is pained whenever a guest disappears. However, we can't stop the auction. Furthermore, this auction has goods that have never been seen before. It isn't an exaggeration to call them delicacies or treasures.”

“Stop chatting.”

“...I'm sorry, Grand Duke Upa-nim. Then shall I proceed straight away?”

Upa was in a hurry. Someone was clearly aiming for him. The gap in power with the other factions was already started to show. He definitely had to restore the balance somehow.

He also wanted to see the progress of other demons through the auction. The quality of the goods in this year's auction was incomparable to last year's. He didn't have sufficient words to

express how important it was. He needed to obtain the ‘necessary’ items.

"We've had a number of concerns due to your average points rising so rapidly. It couldn't be the same as last year. In particular, we took a lot of time preparing the first item...now, I will introduce it! An epic grade item. Just wearing it will drastically increase your force! Haien Moon's Necklace!"

A dark spirit brought out a piece of jewellery as Dubolong proudly introduced it.

A necklace with a small miniature of the moon that gave off a fantasy-like atmosphere. Very pure magic power could be clearly felt from it.

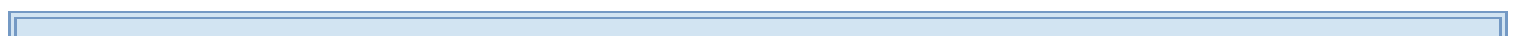
'It came out.'

I nodded lightly.

I was familiar with this item. I definitely needed to buy the necklace.

It was originally worn by Ariel Diablo. But...would that happen again?

I opened Mind's Eye.



-Name – Haien Moon's Necklace (Epic)

Description: A necklace that belonged to the prophet and sword master Haien Moon. It is said that his magic power reflects the moon itself and that he also died under the moon.

* Magic power will increase by 3 when the moon is out. The secret swords techniques of the collection 'Moonlight Falling (Epic, Passive) can be used.

*** If magic power is more than 90, the speed of collecting moonlight will accelerate.

The Haien Moon's Necklace itself was very beneficial.

The option of having magic power grow by three under the moonlight wasn't difficult to find. It was possible in the unique grade of items. However, I needed to learn the secret sword technique 'Moonlight Falling.'

The 'secret technique' name attached to it meant that it could exert more power than its rating. Moonlight Falling could be used with dual swords. I obtained the Emperor's Sword so I desperately needed a dual swordsmanship skill.

Each demon observed the item with their own skills. Afterwards, they looked at the Haien Moon's Necklace with shiny eyes.

Dubolong gave a dark smile and opened his mouth.

“The auction will start at...one million points.”

One million! It was high from the very start. It was close to the average number of points.

However, the name Haien Moon made it worth it. Haien Moon was a sword master. There was almost no information remaining about him but it was known that he was unparalleled with the sword.

“One million.”

“Ohh! I don’t have to worry now. Ariel Diablo has called one million points.”

Ariel Diablo's eyes shone. She knew how to handle all weapons. A weapons master. Naturally she had her eyes on items that could teach her swordsmanship.

She had a strong greed and obsession towards learning other techniques. All the demons were aware of it and the ‘challenge’ she threw out.

Challenge, yes a challenge. She had an easier time wielding weapons. But this was a unique sword technique. If a true weapons master obtained their hands on it then it would show great destructive power. That’s why she tried to acquire numerous

skills. It was self-explanatory that her skills would advance one step further if she obtained Haien Moon's Moonlight Falling. I was certain since I had seen it directly in my previous life.

Ariel was excited after learning the value of this item. She opened up her magic power and her goat horns grew longer.

“1.1 million.”

I opened my mouth.

At that moment, the atmosphere in the venue became cold. Ariel sent me a frosty glare. However, I didn't care about her. The auction was a place where everyone could equally bid. Backing down from a challenge didn't suit me.

If I wanted to obtain the item then I would. My points last year and the year before couldn't compare to what I had now. I didn't know how many points Ariel Diablo had but...there was clearly a limit.

Dubolong gave a big nod and said.

"1.1 million points! Randolph Brigsiel-nim, you really are a strong man."

“1.2 million.”

"Ah, Ariel-nim! As expected, there is a fierce competition."

Haien Moon's Necklace was quite valuable. I relaxed and looked around at the dynamics of the demons. The starting price of one million. It was still possible for the dukes to participate. They would have obtained a large number of points from the angel invasion.

Only Upa's faction was quiet. They needed immediate power. This meant a strong creature. A secret sword technique wasn't in their sights.

Upa and his faction seemed to be restraining themselves at the moment. Okullos and Pandemonium were seeking different things.

'I need a moderate push.'

A bid that Ariel couldn't touch.

It would also be impossible for the other demons.

Let's see.

"1.5 million."

"...Is the same thing as last year going to happen again? Randolph-nim has bid 1.5 million points!"

Last year, I had gobbled up most of the good auction items. And I intended to do that this year as well.

Ariel looked even more determined. It was inevitable. There was an average of 1.3 million points. I alone had raised it by 300,000. The real average was closer to 1 million. 1.5 million would be burdensome even to a grand duke.

"1.5 million. Is there really nobody else?"

Dubolong carefully searched the venue.

And.

"Congratulations! Haien Moon's Necklace has been sold to Randolph-nim. You won't regret it. The winning item will be sent...don't you already know?"

Shortly after the auction ended, it would be sent to my dungeon through a crack.

Dubolong sent me a playful wink.

I folded my arms.

The following auction item was enough to grab my attention.

"Let me introduce you to an unusual lich. Usually a lich is reminiscent of 'death.' Oddly enough, this lich cares about 'life.' The lich 'Gaparam.'

There was no need for a cage. The lich wearing a white robe proudly walked in. Despite the freshly rotten skin, his actions weren't awkward at all.

But that wasn't the surprising part.

"I want a demon who will allow me to continue my research. The cost of my research is three million points a year. I inevitably went bankrupt and had to form a contract with the dark spirits. I am seeking the help of someone here to continue my research."

"...Do you have to speak?"

Dubolong shot back.

This was a little unusual. No, it surpassed unusual.

An auction item trying to appeal on his own?

'I've heard the name somewhere before.'

Actually, this had been a mystery since I received Dubolong's note. I had apparently heard the name somewhere but I couldn't remember it.

"Life research? That is vague. Tell me properly."

Upa said. Then Gaparam pulled out a vial that contained the form of a fetus.

"This is a directly manufactured homunculus. Although it was a failure, there was some degree of performance. My goal is to go beyond magic and biotechnology to create a homunculus more perfect than 'Dellaisis.'

Homunculus.

A flawless life.

It was unknown if Dellaisis was a demon, human or fallen angel but it was still created. It took one month to become an adult. It took three months to learn everything around it. The problem was that it had an extremely short lifespan and died within three years.

A complete homunculus meant that the maximum lifespan would increase. However, no one had been able to solve that problem yet.

"Impractical."

Grand Duke Pandemonium said.

He was one of the demons who had worked closely with this project. Therefore, he was skeptical about the completion of a perfect homunculus.

Gaparam frowned as he asked.

“Why do you think it is impractical? Magic has no bounds. There is no reason I can’t step through the door to create a homunculus.”

"How many years have you poured into this?"

Pandemonium asked Gaparam, who replied with a rotten smile.

"This will be my 360th year."

“740 years. More than double that number. That is the number of years I studied the homunculus.”

That reminded me, Pandemonium was the oldest among the grand dukes. I had the impression that he existed since the time when there was no devil, so I couldn’t easily predict his age.

"Are you saying that it is impossible for me? Don’t make me laugh!"

"It is just impossible. Do you want me to explain it simply? One plus one equals two. Trying to make it equal three is out of the question. It is the same for this: nothing else will appear. Creating

a homunculus isn't impossible. However, the life expectancy is extremely low."

Cynical and critical.

But I looked at Gaparam with a slightly different perspective.

'Homunculus...Gaparam. A special event.'

It would surface. I finally remembered the name Gaparam.

It was from my previous life. A special event that suddenly emerged before the last war. Gaparam had appeared accompanied by a finished homunculus and a chimera corpse. He smashed the dungeon of a duke.

The demons' power surpassed unimaginable levels as the last war approached, yet he managed to capture the dungeon of a duke. Gaparam died after being attacked by countless other demons in the faction. However, he just laughed and said 'the research was completed' before he died.

At the time, I confirmed the greatness of a homunculus. Due to the quick learning ability of a homunculus, they easily became stronger and faster. So there was no choice but to have a shorter lifespan. Gaparam had somehow managed to surpass those limits. A homunculus that rivaled a high class 4Lv creature!

'The research was completed.'

Gaparam's exhibition.

I stared at him. I was mindful of the demons around me and kept my reaction cold.

This was a product that didn't appear in the original Demon World Auction. It seemed to be due to the sharp increase in points.

"It will succeed. Everything has been set. As long as I can continue my research!"

He shouted but the atmosphere was cold.

"Homunculus..."

"It is the height of inefficiency."

"I can't throw away three million points. There is no one who has that many points."

That's right. 'Three million points for one year of research' was unrealistic.

"That was only required in the early days. As long as I have a proper workshop, one million a year will be enough for me!"

Gaparam was desperate. His voice was trembling. But that was still too much. one million points. That was still a distant number. Many demons saved and could barely gather a million points in one year.

As the silent atmosphere continued, I spoke up.

“Dubolong.”

"Yes, yes? Randalph-nim. What's wrong?"

"So, is it going to start?"

"Ah, it is starting at 0 points. His ability itself is like an ordinary lich...and nothing else is prepared."

"Damn demons! You don't know how great my research is! It is a crime! A sin!"

“...I guess it isn't popular.”

Dubolong sighed.

Then he said.

“Shut up Gaparam. We will leave it up to fate. What they do with you will be purely up to the winning bidder.”

“Damn!”

Gaparam stamped his foot and cursed bitterly. Anyway, he signed a contract so there was nothing he could do. He could only hope that he was lucky enough to meet a demon who would allow his research.

"There was an uproar for a while. I'm sorry. Then let's proceed with the auction. The introduction is already over and like I said, it is starting at 0 points! No. Call out something that suits your taste."

It was only a lich. They could buy one for 28,000 points at the store.

“1,000.”

"Then I will bid 5,000 points."

“50,000!”

“100,000. There isn't anything special. Anyway, he may cause problems.”

But the price soared to 100,000.

The Demon World Auction was an opportunity to get the good

items for a cheap price. Anyone could buy one from the store, so this was an expensive price for a lich. It was due to the story of the homunculus. The demons couldn't afford such research but they could use the lich for other matters.

Gaparam's face gradually became more stiff. His body was shaking as he formed fists. He didn't want his research to be treated like this.

"100,000 points has come out. Is there any more?"

Dubolong had no expectations.

Gaparam gave one last outburst.

"My research will be finished! The perfect homunculus will be born! Why don't you do it?"

"He is mad. Dubolong. Is it possible to cancel a bid?"

"I'm sorry but that is impossible."

The mockery and contempt.

Gaparam's research didn't receive any recognition at all.

Dubolong frowned as he attempted to quickly conclude the

auction.

"Then 100,000..."

"500,000."

"...Randalph-nim. Did I hear wrong?"

"500,000 points. Dubolong."

He blinked. But Dubolong soon regained his stability. From his position, the lich was being sold at an expensive price.

Dubolong looked at Gaparam and nodded. He was saying that I had the points to cover the research. Gaparam's expression loosened a little bit.

"It is clearly a loss."

"Two years ago and last year...it is that bastard."

Of course, the demons had a totally different reaction.

"The lich 'Gaparam' has been sold for 500,000 points! Randalph-nim, congratulations."

Gaparam bowed deeply to me. After raising his head, he looked at

the other demons and declared.

"You ignorant bastards! You will be sorry! My research will be completed! Then it will be too late for you!"

"Just go!"

Dubolong growled. Then the dark spirits dragged Gaparam out. Gaparam's expression wasn't bad.

A moment of silence.

He was a creature who made a large impact. However, it was in a bad way.

Chapter 117: Demon World Auction (4)

“...Hum hum, then I will directly introduce the next auction item. Have you heard of the ‘Valley of Souls?’ There are legends about it. We decided to check it out just once. A ‘Soul Butterfly’ was found there.”

The auction continued.

Valley of Souls.

It was one of several forbidden places in the Demon World. Many spirits didn’t come back after entering it. Rather, spirit bodies received larger damage the closer they got to it. A huge sacrifice was made for the successful expedition.

A lot of effort had been poured into this auction.

‘Adonis. He is in a hurry.’

The Dark Spirit King. His mind was clearly in a hurry after the other spirit kings sent spies. He wanted to ‘grow’ as much as possible. The Spirit World might seem calm, but he was thinking about how to achieve such things.

‘Soul Butterfly.’

It wasn’t a small change.

There was a black shape that looked like a butterfly flying. A butterfly that could move around the Valley of Souls without being affected.

“Do you see it? This beautiful shape! Soul Butterfly can detect and defend against external harmful magic power. So it can freely move in the Valley of Souls. Just giving it to someone is enough to change their magic power. If your intelligence is low then it is essential that you buy this.”

It could be the difference between receiving uncontrollable damage in an abnormal state or not. It would be worth a lot of points if the defense was perfect. However, I could confirm the effects using Mind’s Eye.

-Name – Soul Butterfly
<p>Description: A rare butterfly found in the Valley of Souls. Born in the air.</p> <p>* An abnormal state will be reduced by 10%.</p> <p>*** Can be combined with a weapon.</p>

The hidden option drew my eyes.

‘It can show an effect when combined with something.’

It wasn't bad. It wasn't bad but it was a little bit shabby when compared to the claims.

Dubolong's smile widened.

“This is not the end. Do you know what was sleeping in the Valley of Souls that we obtained thanks to the butterfly? Surprisingly, a 30 year old death knight without an owner was discovered in the valley.”

Advanced 3Lv creature. Just buying it in the store required 150,000 points!

The 30 year death knight soullessly walked in. Its magic power reached out around it. Due to the nature of the death knight, it became stronger as more days passed. The 30 year one was very different.

They could expect an immediate rise in power after purchasing it.

'It is vague.'

I touched my jaw.

The problem was the Soul Butterfly. The death knight had a

definite price but I couldn't measure the Soul Butterfly. The death knight would be worth between 1~1.5 million points. However, the price was likely to rise due to the Soul Butterfly.

In other words, it would become more expensive.

"The auction will start at 500,000 points. Don't worry, the 30 year death knight is worth it. Perhaps some of the guests here have experience with death knights in the Demon World. How reassuring would it be? You will be able to make your enemies afraid!"

"500,000."

"A bid from Duke Visach. 500,000!"

"700,000."

"Duke Drikal-nim!"

"800,000."

"Oh, Grand Duke Upa-nim has entered the competition!"

The competition was heating up. A death knight was a symbol of resistance among the nobility. It would be foolish to drive such a powerful knight to an enemy demon.

There was no way. The destructive power of the death knight was sure to appeal to many.

I worried about it for a short moment.

‘I want to purchase it for below 1.5 million.’

I would abandon it if it became more than that. It wasn't worth spending more points on the Soul Butterfly. I was likely to receive damages if I was too greedy. It was unlikely that things would be turned upside down.

Yet there were still many auction items remaining. And I didn't have an infinite number of points.

“One million.”

“Oh my god, Randolph-nim! You are participating three times in a row. Dubolong is expecting a lot from you!”

The atmosphere became chilly once again. First year, second year...now it was the third year. It was basically my solo show. At the same time, they realized that there was something ‘strange’ about me.

Pandemonium and Okullos knew to some extent but Ariel and Upa's factions had to guess.

“Is there anyone else? This product is too good to pass up.”

The time they spent thinking about it increased. They also couldn't run wild.

They all saw it.

A high class creature, Mago. The death knight was incomparable to Mago. They didn't know when she was coming out so there needed to be points in reserve.

“1.1 million.”

“Hyu ~ Grand Duke Okullos-nim! Nice to see you. I hope you become the owner of the mighty death knight.”

Dubolong made somewhat exaggerated gestures as he sighed with relief.

I frowned as I heard Okullos' voice.

'Doesn't Okullos hate death knights?'

I was sure because I had never seen Okullos use a death knight. He was a nature demon so he tended to avoid death knights who carried death around with them.

'Is he trying to make up for the minions he lost against the Cruel Commander?'

I didn't think it was due to the Soul Butterfly. His skill 'Pending Question' wasn't higher than Mind's Eye.

I was curious. If he was only trying to fill the troops then he wouldn't bid too much.

"1.2 million."

"Randalph-nim...you aren't finished yet!"

"1.3 million."

"Okullos-nim!"

"1.4 million."

"It has gone back to Randalph-nim!"

"1.5 million."

"The boys and girls on the ceiling aren't laughing. This means that he holds that many points! As expected for a grand duke!"

I turned my gaze towards him.

Okullos was staring at me. He wasn't trying to fill up his troops. That look in his eyes...it seemed like he was showing off.

‘Showing off?’

1.5 million points already exceeded the average. He seemed to want to show off how many points he had!

His attitude seemed to be provoking me. I also felt a funny feeling like something was stabbing my chest.

I quickly opened Mind's Eye. I needed to suddenly check. I was going to find out if a change occurred in Okullos.

-‘Mind's Eye (Ex U) has been read by ‘Eyes of the World (Epic).’ Defended against 20%!

-Intelligence calibration (93)! But the magic power of the opponent is too high. It is inadequate. Defended against 23%!

-The defense has failed.

Be careful! ‘Eyes of the World (Epic) has reflected back ‘Mind's Eye (Ex U). Randolph Brigsiel's details will be revealed to Okullos.

I felt dizzy. Countless numbers were rising in front of my eyes. Several numbers came out of my body.

The surrounding demons showed no reaction. The phenomenon seemed to be only visible to me.

But that didn't matter right now. I was deeply panicked.

...Was it revealed?

Okullos smiled, revealed his teeth. His expression seemed to say 'I know all about it.' At the same time, he made a 'hoh!' sound of admiration.

'He led me to this.'

This was the reason for the 1.5 million points.

He showed that attitude to me. It was so that I would use Mind's Eye on him.

I never imagined that this would happen. Many things had changed due to my actions, but this was entirely unexpected.

My eyes narrowed.

'Eyes of the World. It is probably an evolution of Pending Question. But...I didn't see that skill in my previous life. How did he manage to evolve it to epic grade in such a short time?'

I clenched my fists as sweat flowed. My saliva dried up.

Originally Okullos didn't have the skill Eyes of the World. It was the same in my previous life. This meant the big change was due to me.

But it was still unusual. Raising a skill from unique to epic in only a few months? That wasn't possible even for me.

My heart started running wild. He could see a lot if he saw my status window. He could also infer a lot more.

"The Soul Butterfly and Death Knight have been sold to Okullos! Congratulations! You won't regret it."

Dubolong's voice was heard.

I could only stare at Okullos.

'...It isn't over.'

Eyes of the World seem to read and reflect the opponent's skill. But the water had already been spilled. I had to admit it.

I couldn't stay quiet. I needed to deal with this.

My mind was complicated.

Chapter 118: Demon World Auction (5)

“The ‘Vow of Preparation’ has been won by Grand Duke Okullos!”

“The creature ‘Golonggol’ has been won by Grand Duke Okullos!”

"The 'Heart Shoes' have...!"

The ensuing auction items.

Okullos' dominance started. He won five more items and the sixth item he won was the 10th item to be auctioned. A huge five million points was spent.

I always focused on efficiency and didn't bid for another item after Gaparam. I decided to move only when Mago came out.

However...Okullos always bid even before Mago came out.

I needed to make a successful bid in order to break the situation.

‘Only Okullos is participating in this auction.’

It was another unusual point. All the demons in Okullos' faction didn't participate in the auction. Okullos was the only one who participated.

‘Strange.’

The points of other demons could be acquired and used.

However, Death Bringer’s system wasn’t that simple. Even the savvy dark spirits took enormous risks when opening a crack.

Trading points was only allowed for legitimate transactions.

‘A reasonable value for goods...’

Yes. It was theoretically possible.

A demon could sell everything in their dungeon. But they couldn’t do such a thing without unwavering faith. It only required one demon for betrayal. And it was ridiculous for demons in a faction to believe in each other. This was impossible.

‘Okullos. What magic is this?’

There was a change. I couldn’t read those changes.

12 people. If I combined the points of all the demons in Okullos’ faction, it should still be less than mine. However, I would have to take a loss.

“Now, the 11th auction item has finally emerged. I bet everyone paid attention to her before the auction. From the Celestial Maiden clan, the high class creature ‘Mago.’ A legendary creature that can travel on the wind and is worth millions of gold. I will be introducing her now.”

The eyes of the demons shone. The item everyone had been waiting for finally appeared.

I was also filled with tension.

In particular, I wanted to keep Okullos in check before he got bigger. He might have read my status window but he didn’t know my total points.

Kwang! Kwang!

Soon a huge cage was brought in by the dark spirits. Mago was inside it. Mago kept turning her body around and cried out.

Dubolong bowed his head gracefully and extended a hand.

“It will start at 1.3 million points.”

"Five million."

“...Okullos-nim?”

"That isn't enough?"

"Ah, no. O...kullos-nim has called five million points."

Dubolong was jolted from his surprise. Five million points!

The boy and girl statues on the ceiling were still not laughing. They moaned as the points were shouted out. In other words, they were thrilled.

There were no other demons that could participate.

In the case of Grand Duke Upa, his face turned red at the thought of losing Mago. However, no one cared about Upa. Okullos glanced at me with a smile.

He was only looking at me.

'Okullos...!'

He was hostile towards me? He thought he knew my power from checking my status window?

Then he picked the wrong opponent.

Kwaduduk!

I gritted my teeth.

He could obtain other items, but Mago was mine. The only high class 2Lv creature present. It wasn't likely to come out the next year or the year after. At the very least, it would increase my lead for a year.

I needed to obtain her. I had to firmly maintain my position. I didn't know what Okullos planned to do with my information. However, I wasn't going to hide myself away like a good prey.

“Six million.”

“Randalph-nim, it can't be! Unbelievable! I can't believe it. This is a really different race.”

“Seven million.”

"Crazy, it is really crazy! Mago's cries are acting like a celestial harmony. Where will this end?"

Thanks to this, it was announced that Okullos had at least 12 million points. I frowned as I thought about it. I thought I was the only one who had reached over 10 million.

“Eight million.”

"Ahh, it is a truly reasonable price for Mago but it has been a

while since I felt such a thrill. Randolph-nim has called eight million points!”

Silence flowed. All the demons were looking between Okullos and I. Their eyes were filled with complex emotions like doubt, jealousy and annoyance.

It was inevitable.

An average of 1.3 million. I drove up the average from one million by 300,000 points.

For many individuals in this auction, one million was the limit at which they could participate. It was common sense. They had seen the practical parts involved in managing a dungeon in the past two years. It was surprisingly difficult to collect points.

However, that common sense was completely broken. It was already half smashed.

How? The first emotion felt was doubt.

But there were no answers. I knew many things that would happen in the future. That’s how I was able to act solo for the past two years.

But...a new leader had showed up.

Okullos.

“Kuahahahaha!”

He laughed out loud. An uncontrollable and wild laugh.

It was strange when thinking of Okullos' personality. He was someone that almost never expressed his feelings. In particular, he acted like a stone in front of other demons.

However...there was no doubt. His body shook like he was greatly moved.

“Indeed! Randolph Brigsiel! You have crossed the ‘line.’ Your entire power wasn’t shown the other day! Kuhahahahaha!”

"Stop talking nonsense.”

I didn't know what he was talking about.

The line? It was the first time I heard about it.

I didn't like the feeling of someone defining and judging me. Especially when that person was a grand duke.

However, Okullos continued to bark.

"I will tell this to all of you! This 'game' is not possible! It is ridiculous to think that you guys will ever grow beyond a puppy. It is because you haven't crossed over the line!"

"Okullos. You are interrupting to talk alone to a wall. I can't listen anymore."

Dubolong said with a nod.

But Okullos showed no interest in Dubolong's words and didn't respond.

All the grand dukes, dukes and demons were concentrated on Okullos.

"I felt weak the moment I accepted Death Bringer's offer. I thought it was simply a restriction. But no...I realized after gradually regaining my strength and crossing over the line. The weakness is preparation for a jump. I will become stronger and eventually evolve. I will become an existence beyond the devil!"

A passionate rant. It wasn't limited to me, but a message conveyed to all the demons.

That wasn't the end.

"Aren't you curious? It is possible to be reborn as any existence! Why are you focusing on humans? Destroying the planet Earth is simple so why can't you figure this out?"

“Okullos...that guy, is he crazy?”

Ariel. She spoke coldly.

Becoming a devil. That was the goal the grand dukes were focused on. But it was dismissed as ‘simple.’

Okullos’ remarks had definitely gone too far.

“I didn’t originally plan to say this. It is never good to give benefits to the other side. But I feel too sad. It is impossible to become a species if I evolve alone. All of us have to transcend in order to become a species. So I will give a chance to you. Randolph Brigsiel has a head start, but you still have the opportunity. You might be weak right now, but become stronger. Strong pride, self-esteem...from my viewpoint, you are still beginners. Too young for such opportunities. If you are too weak...if the root itself is weak, evolution will be impossible even if you become stronger. However, the grand dukes that have ruled the Demon World for hundreds of years are a different story!”

Many phrases were conveyed, but the message was simple. Only the grand dukes and I weren’t lacking.

A true declaration of hostility. The frowns naturally increased.

“I can sense that you’ve assimilated with the souls of the demons under you. Okullos, have you really gone crazy?”

Pandemonium ventured out at this moment. He was old and well versed in creatures and spells. He frowned.

"The flow of your magic power has strangely changed. Ha! This isn't natural for demons and you are going down the path of your own destruction."

The 12 demons under Okullos. Their souls were assimilated. So he could even use the points of the demons under him.

But such actions would eventually bring him to ruin. It was very dangerous to assimilate souls and there had been no successful cases. Such acts were forbidden in the Demon World.

However, Okullos seemed to have other ideas.

"No! This is the beginning of my evolution. Everyone can't see it but I can feel it. The unstable souls are balanced by my Naturalization skill. Of course, this method isn't correct. It is just one of several ways to make me more comfortable. In short, I have a way to break common sense."

Pandemonium clicked his tongue. He realized that communication wouldn't work. The generosity and kindness of a grand duke was limited.

The reaction of the other grand dukes was the same. Connecting the souls. Assimilation. They knew too well the risks that it would

bring. Yet the crazy Okullos was only talking about evolution.

It was great that he had a vast amount of points, but that was all.

“Yes. I hate to admit it. But you will soon know. All those who step over the line will be qualified! Please...realize it before the hunter starts hunting. I will welcome anyone who wants to follow me in the end.”

The hunter was referring to me. It was obvious that he saw my title.

Okullos turned around. The 12 demons under him moved like they were one.

Kkiiik!

Kung!

The cold atmosphere disappeared as the door closed.

Okullos abstained from buying anything else at the auction.

I quietly looked in the direction that he disappeared in.

'Originally I was going to get rid of Upa first...'

My plans were constantly changing.

Upa was placed as the top priority merely because he was annoying. Once Upa started moving, he would fight dirty. I had aimed to cut off the stem. Someone like that would become more annoying the longer I left him alone.

If I knew the situation would turn out like this, then I would have poured in everything when I had the Cruel Commander. Although I likely wouldn't have been able to stay hidden after that, I would have flown higher.

I deeply reflected.

How could I have expected that Okullos would swallow up other demons to obtain power?

I could deal with Upa because he didn't know me.

However, Okullos knew me. I also didn't know the levels he had reached. There was no way he would only make a little bit of progress.

So...

'Okullos. You should have remained in the background.'

First of all, I had to eliminate him.

Chapter 119: Demon World Auction (6)

The auction continued.

As a result, Mago ended up in my hands.

I had roughly 11 million points remaining. Originally I had intended to buy only one more item, but I changed my mind.

It seemed necessary to reinforce my strength.

Okullos had assimilated the souls of 12 demons. He seemed to be aiming for my back so I needed to be able to handle him. Or else I might end up stabbed through the neck.

But a little more time was needed. My strength was still lacking against 13 demons, including Okullos.

'I need to handle this problem. There is also the possibility that he will self-destruct due to the assimilation.'

Okullos needed to be killed. I was positive that his body was currently burning up and suffering from the process. If I was lucky then Okullos and the remaining 12 demons would self-destruct.

I needed to do some preliminary preparation at this auction. My original plan was to select the appropriate items to build up my power but...

“Dwarf king! Often referred to as the final form of a dwarf. The dwarf king is born knowing how to handle all metals! It will start at 600,000!”

“600,000.”

“Marquis Anastasia-nim!”

“700,000.”

“Grand Duke Upa-nim!”

“800,000.”

“Ahh, once again Randolph-nim! Where is his limit?”

The atmosphere once again died. It was natural for them to feel weary and resentful.

The result was shown from Dubolong’s following words.

“The dwarf king has been sold for 800,000 points. Congratulations Earl Randolph-nim!”

The dwarf king was indispensable when it came to creating things from the Tree of Origin. Stein and the other dwarves only

had adequate skills. The dwarf king was needed for an overall qualitative improvement. The equipment and weapons used by the dark elves and creatures would be enhanced. That alone made it worth spending 800,000 points on the dwarf king.

After that, I gave up a few items. I relaxed and played the role of a decoy. My purpose of participating in this auction had changed, but I couldn't neglect my final goal of hampering the demons.

Soon the 19th auction item arrived.

"Now, let me introduce the following auction item. I introduced them in last year's auction: M1 and M2. They were only iron sheets so some didn't realize their true value. Only the buyer personally experienced the benefits. But this time, it is worthy of praise at first glance. M3!"

Cheek, cheek.

Slow footsteps.

Soon a knight wearing full length red body armour and holding a long lance could be seen.

'Different.'

There were few similarities to M1 and M2. From the feel of the magic power to the appearance, everything seemed quite different.

Plus...M3.

I couldn't remember him. There was no reason why I shouldn't be able to remember a golem like this. He gave off a strong presence with just one glance.

I opened Mind's Eye with interest.

Name: M3

Stats

Strength: 90

Intelligence: 0

Agility: 90

Stamina: 80

Magic Power: 80

Potential: (340/340)

Uniqueness: Completed from the beginning. There is no more need for growth and there is no sense of self since its intelligence is 0. But the golem gives its best performance under a powerful master. There are more improvements since M1 and M2.

Skill: Gale (Ex U), Joint Attack (Ex U)

My first thought after checking M3's status window was 'obedient.' He was good in all respects when compared to M1 and M2.

In particular, Gale and Joint Attack were perfect skills to use. He was strong enough to engage with high class creatures. Although he was slightly lacking compared to Mago, the other grand dukes were eyeing him.

"It will start at 600,000!"

It was the same opening bid as the dwarf king, but the atmosphere was more heated.

It was a law that in order to create something, materials were needed. I had the Tree of Origin to use as materials for the dwarf king, making me different from the other demons. Materials were more readily available for me.

“600,000.”

“Duke Visach-nim!”

“700,000.”

“Marquis Ganwisyu-nim!”

However, it was a different story when it came to pure strength.

I had M1 and M2 so my eyes naturally went to M3.

“800,000.”

“A hot atmosphere. Awesome! Earl Bahasos-nim!”

Mago, who received the hottest attention, was sold to me, so the demons weren't worried about their points anymore. All

hesitation about buying things had disappeared.

Of course, I was the decoy so I couldn't stay still. For example, Duke Visach Mentam who looked interested in the auction would continue to participate after I bid. Right now, it was fun to watch the bidding. They wouldn't be able to move unless instructed by Grand Duke Upa in advance.

'He is a demon who covets things. He is planning to gobble up the items in the second half. He has such intent.'

Due to the nature of the Demon World Auction, there might be good items in the beginning and bad items at the end. Sometimes more useful items would often appear in the second half. Perhaps...Upa was truly aiming for the second half. After losing Mago in the beginning, he didn't participate and decided to focus everything on the second half.

So he was trying to thin out the competition in advance. My expectations didn't seem wrong when considering how toxic Upa and his faction was.

'He clearly established a strategy.'

He must be feeling urgent. In fact, Upa wasn't in a good situation right now. He lost demons so it was necessary to reinforce his power. He looked impatient after the auction started, but now I knew his actions weren't the truth.

'A smokescreen.'

That's right. Smokescreen. He aimed to use this to trick the enemies and reverse the situation. Thanks to Okullos, most eyes moved away from Upa. In fact, Grand Duke Upa's faction had won the most goods from the auction so far. I only just realized this.

'Okullos acted as a decent smokescreen.'

Tak.

I slapped my knee.

Okullos left such a strong impression that it eclipsed Upa's faction. This could be a huge chance for Upa.

The other grand dukes, Ariel and Pandemonium.

Did they realize Upa's strategy?

"900,000."

"He is playing. Earl Randolph-nim! 900,000 points have come out."

"One million."

"Ah, this time it is Grand Duke Upa-nim!"

Upa was still faking an uncomfortable expression on his face.

Ha!

It was ridiculous. The grand duke was still acting as he came forward. Certainly, the situation was rapidly changing. Even now, Upa still looked anxious and irritated.

It seemed like he couldn't make the top bid anymore. At the same time, he knew. Someone else would surely make the top bid.

'Some demons are looking at the long term. One or two years would make a significant difference.'

I had purchased Mago while Okullos became stronger through a taboo method. He had to hurry. In order to eliminate his anxiety, he was obsessed with getting more creatures and good items.

"1.1 million."

"Grand Duke Pandemonium-nim! M3 is a very powerful golem. Pandemonium, who is familiar with magic, has realized the astronomical value of M3!"

The behaviour that Upa showed here was simple. The sound of his fingers tapping wouldn't stop. Grand Duke Upa and his faction showed a great performance.

It was silent after Pandemonium's words. It was a sign that it was settled at 1.1 million points.

At that moment, Dubolong opened his mouth to make the final declaration. I smiled and opened my mouth.

"1.2 million."

"Earl Randolph-nim has made the top bid once again!"

I just folded my arms and closed eyes. I was running quickly without worrying about problems. Looking at others would just make my mind more troubled.

"Is there any more? I will give you three seconds. If there aren't any more bidders then Randolph-nim will win M3! Three, two, one!"

However, Upa didn't make another bid. He appeared satisfied that he had raised the bid by 100,000 then 200,000.

"Congratulations! M3 now belongs to Randolph-nim!"

A few other minor items were omitted. Upa's ulterior motive became more obvious. After Okullos came out and talked about crossing the line, the fire when bidding had subsided a little bit.

They considered it highly likely that I also broke the taboo. Ariel was still looking down at me with a cold gaze. It seemed she was still furious about having Haien Moon's Necklace stolen away from her.

'I am going to destroy her anyway. Shall I give you some time to become my opponent?'

I only paid attention to the items and didn't worry about the greedy competition.

I was still worried about Okullos, but I was satisfied with this position. I did Upa a favour and leisurely purchased items. It would be better to benefit as much as possible while he was still under an illusion.

Thanks to that, I easily added 'Millennium Stigma' and 'Lightning Orb' to my collection. Both had vague options that I wasn't significantly greedy for but I needed to maintain my current position in the competition.

"The next item I am introducing is a little unusual. It is an item that I can't describe. Yes, the 'Unknown Box.' This is it."

The dark spirits brought out a big box. The appearance of the box was extremely ugly. It wasn't a normal item seen in the Demon World Auction. While everyone was puzzled, Dubolong let out a sign.

"Have you heard of someone called the 'Thief of the Century?' He is a legendary figure that existed 500 years ago."

500 years ago. It wasn't that long.

Pandemonium was from that era and his face froze after hearing it. It didn't seem like a good expression.

'He seems to have heard it before.'

A careful thief. Or an adventurer. He was active in the Demon World hundreds of years ago.

I remembered a story about a thief able to steal techniques. The locations of treasures were obscure places and quite a bit of adventuring was required to obtain them. Places like the Valley of Souls, the Underground Wilderness, Red Scorpion Mountains, the Lion's Lake, etc...he easily gained many great things from those places. I didn't know if this was true or not but I was interested in the name.

Dubolong then continued.

"This is the only treasure remaining. This was a ridiculously difficult item to obtain from the Underground Wilderness. However! There are fairly strong constraints on it. Once opened, it is non-transferable like a curse. Therefore we couldn't confirm the items in it. It is a troublesome position to be in when trying to sell it."

The dark spirits knew a great deal about seals. The same was true for curses.

Yet this was a seal that they couldn't solve.

'It isn't a normal box.'

The problem was that no one could know what was inside.

I calmly used Mind's Eye.

I might be able to find a hidden option that the other demons weren't aware of.

-Name: Unknown Box

Description – A box concealed by a famous thief. It is unknown what the box contains.

* It is non-transferable once opened. Everything in the box will be forced onto the person who opens it.

* Only one item will emerge and the rest of the items in the box will be destroyed.

The higher the person's intelligence, the higher the probability of a 'good' item coming out.

It reminded me of the mimic. It was a box type creature that hid exclusive items in its body.

But only one item would emerge while the rest would be destroyed.

'Higher intelligence...'

Nobody knew what would emerge. Instead, intelligence was largely involved.

Intelligence! I had Chrisley up my sleeve. She was someone who had an overwhelming 105 intelligence, a number that surpassed 100.

It was enough to make a gamble. The only remaining thing was the price.

"...It will start from one million points. I'm sorry. However, our losses were too big while obtaining it from the Underground Wilderness. Of course, this box was carefully hidden so I'm sure the contents aren't ordinary! Isn't there a high probability of it containing a sealed item?"

Even Dubolong didn't seem certain.

Yet he was still trying his best to sell it. It was in order to make up for their losses. It wasn't possible to transfer, so the dark spirits couldn't check it.

Even so, the price was too high for a sealed item. The demons couldn't see the hidden options so not many would think of buying it. The dark spirits wanted 'only one' person.

It was the reason why Dubolong looked around with embarrassment. Too many spirits had died while exploring the wilderness. It was a much more dangerous place than the Valley of Souls.

"Is there really nobody? The last box left behind by a legendary thief. We followed his footsteps but he didn't leave anything else behind in the world. Only this box remains. Aren't you curious?"

The only one.

I decided to buy it.

It was something carefully left behind. I also had Chrisley with her 105 intelligence. That alone made it worth giving it a try.

But I didn't act immediately after making the decision. I gave the impression to Dubolong and the other demons that it was a difficult choice.

Upa had intruded in vain, giving him a headache.

“The list of items that he stole is amazing. Just obtaining one of them would make it worth spending one million points for the box. No, if you are lucky enough to even obtain the ‘Sign of the Dead Mountains’ then it is easily worth more than 10 million points!”

He cried out loud but it just echoed through the venue.

Dubolong counted for a while before saying.

“I will count down from three. After this time, you will never see the box again. The Dark Spirit King is eyeing it. Three, two.”

“One million.”

“Ahh! Earl Randolph-nim! I guarantee that there is only one left of this in the world. I sincerely wish that you obtain a good item!”

There was no need to wait for any further bids. I instantly became the winner of the Unknown Box.

And...Dubolong was looking at me with gratitude in his eyes. He seemed to think I bought it after the mention of the Dark Spirit King. He thought that I didn’t want a ‘bad’ relationship with each other.

But I didn't have such intentions.

I had completely high expectations for the Unknown Box.

'I will allow him to maintain that delusion.'

There was no need to point it out so I just shrugged.

Chapter 120: Flesh And Bones (1)

The rest of the auction continued similarly.

The result was that Upa monopolized the later items, Pandemonium wasn't greedy and bought minor items while Ariel had a strategy of only buying skills.

And I...

I purchased anything I wanted to buy. Without looking at the long or short term, I showed a buying power that surpassed the first and second years. I focused on things that would benefit me.

So once again, I was able to be the winner of this auction. Everybody else was in a similar position while I had the advantage with 'Mago.'

First of all, the list of creatures that I purchased was as followed.

Warriors from the Kur Clan, a naga queen, five krakens and 100 infernos. If I added Mago, the dwarf king and the lich I already bought, it was expected that my power would rise.

I also picked up a number of items.

'Good.'

I smiled as I recalled the details of the items I purchased.

-Name: Dragon Armour (Ex U)

Description – Full body armour filled with the energy of a dragon. If someone with the blood of a dragon wears this then their natural strength will greatly rise.

* Strength +3, there will be a ‘fear’ effect when someone with the blood of a dragon wears it.

** Dragon related skills will be enhanced.

-Name: Firm Conviction (Ex U)

Description – A primitive helmet used by the best female warrior ‘Aldorin.’ A warrior who hid her face all her life with this helmet, her strong conviction was enough to set an example for all.

* Stamina +2, Magic Power +2, can only be worn by a woman.

* A strong conviction will be given when worn.

** A binding title ‘Firm Conviction’ (R, Stamina +3) is

attached.

-Name: Fairy Knight's Sword (Sealed)

Description – A sealed weapon. It can only be used by a fairy.

* The effects are unknown until the seal is released.

** When worn, the 'Fairy Blessing' will become more powerful.

-Name: Twin's Mental Rapport (Ex U)

Description – The diary of one twin. Since they were born, the twins were able to communicate with each other even when separated. They suffered mental problems as they communicated while growing up. They always learnt something twice as fast.

* A skill book that teaches the twins' communication. You can indirectly share each other's experiences.

** In an urgent situation, health can be shared.

These were assigned to separate owners.

But the Millennium Stigma and Lightning Orb were very helpful items for me.

Up to here, I used approximately 20 million points. Once I used exactly two million points, a message window appeared.

-Incredible achievement! You are the first to spend more than 20 million points in the Demon World Auction.

1,500,000pt will be paid.

1,000 achievement points will be added.

My two million reserve instantly increased to 3.5 million.

I had been a little bit worried.

This was the second half of the auction. Upa's monopoly was continuing.

There was no auction item that I immediately needed. But...it would be good if I could block Upa's restoration of power.

His strength had been cut by three demons. The target moved to Okullos, but Upa was the next opponent. This was a chance to stop his recovery to a certain extent.

I continued spending points to hamper Upa. Duke Visach who was sitting next to him had the veins in his neck bulge with anger.

“Randolph Brigsiel! What type of tricks are you using?”

Tricks. It wasn't nice to hear that.

I lightly clicked my tongue and said.

“Didn't Okullos say it? I have crossed the line.”

Yes, I crossed the line. Someone who hunted demons and penetrated the ranks of the humans. I was someone who held the title of a hunter.

I hated being treated like I was equal to Okullos, but that misconception would be lifted over time. The moment they realized the misunderstanding, it would be too late.

I smiled and folded my arms. I wouldn't give them any more answers.

None of them were completely satisfied but the auction couldn't

be interrupted again.

The auction ended. However, there was still work to be done.

I met up with Dubolong in the back of the hall.

"What brings you here?"

"I wanted to ask about any sightings of the Seven Sins."

In the past two auctions, I had obtained some items from the Seven Sins set. I was convinced that Adonis had all of them but they didn't make an appearance this time.

Dubolong nodded lightly.

"The Seven Sins set is something that the Dark Spirit King highly values. He determined that giving you another one would be reckless."

"I don't think it is because of that. Is he suggesting a contract?"

The other day when I saw Adonis, he had asked for a contract. I refused, so this was clearly the result.

Dubolong's expression changed at my frank words.

“You are jumping ahead. If you wait a little bit longer then it would be slowly revealed.”

“I have tasted the great power once so any patience has disappeared. It is my nature to want the things that belong to me.”

“It can’t be helped. Even if it is given in a ‘separate trade’...it would cost at least 20 million for only one item.”

Hah. I could see it now.

They were trying to tame me. Adonis would slowly give me a mild amount of food in order to turn me into a docile lamb. In the end, I would be bound by the contract.

In fact, I felt some anxiety at the Seven Sins being held hostage. I had become ecstatic after tasting the strength of the Seven Sins. That strength was like a drug and couldn’t be easily cut off.

“20 million points. It is unfortunate but I don’t have that.”

“Anything less will be difficult.”

“Then what about this? I have something that can raise the limit of the potential. Do you know what that means?”

But I wasn’t without my own weapons.

The Essence of Origin! It was an item that increased the potential threshold by one.

This was a temptation that Adonis wouldn't be able to refuse. Even surpassing the threshold by one would allow him to become stronger. The method to do this was through items, a title or a skill. It was why he inevitably needed points.

An item that surpassed the limits by one couldn't be ignored. Breaking the limits was very important to Adonis. Therefore, he had no choice but to try and increase the limit by at least one.

As expected, Dubolong's expression changed.

He bowed his head like he was thinking about it. In reality, he bowed because it felt like he had been punched in the abdomen.

"Are you making fun of me? Using the points or..."

"The essence can raise the potential threshold by one. Maybe Adonis will know the name. The Essence of Origin."

".....!"

His eyes flashed. The clown makeup turned colourless.

I leisurely smirked and said.

"Based on those signs, you have heard of it."

"I-isn't that an essence of the gods that isn't easily found? No, I know of only one Tree of Origin and that exists in heaven...!"

"As you know, the angels attacked us. I accidentally obtained one at that time."

I couldn't tell him that I had a Tree of Origin in my dungeon. I had to hide my secrets as much as possible.

Dubolong tried to suppress his excitement as he spoke.

"...What do you want? As a reminder, we don't have all of the Seven Sins set. In addition, we can't hand over all of it for just one essence."

They couldn't hand over the whole set?

I was a little bit disappointed. I wanted the complete set of items.

However, I wasn't in a significant rush. I had managed to replace one of the Seven Sins set with the Infinity Armour.

"I think in exchange for the Essence of Origin..."

The moment that I was trying to speak.

-Master! There is big trouble. Sik Sik has sent Yihi an urgent request for help! Creatures are attacking. It is hard to block them!

"What are you thinking?"

Dubolong couldn't endure it and asked.

I frowned and shook my head.

"We will have to delay this. Have any demons left the Demon World Auction yet?"

"Ah, Grand Duke Okullos and his faction are the only ones who have left. What is the problem?"

The demons stopped all activities on the day of the Demon World Auction. Of course, their creatures couldn't move without their orders. They could give commands ahead of time but it was unlikely they would entrust attacking a dungeon to someone else. Especially if the number of creatures moving was hard to stop.

China's dungeon had grown greatly but the basic structure was still the same. In other words, someone was attempting a full-scale invasion.

‘Okullos...!’

It could only be Okullos.

He used the gap when I was still participating in the Demon World Auction. I wouldn't have known if I hadn't been able to communicate with Yihi.

I also tried to solve this problem in my previous life and had installed a magic dimensional notification. The tacit non-aggression pact on the day of the Demon World Auction wouldn't always last. But this was only the third year so I hadn't installed it.

In this case...

'Did he prepare in advance to hit me?'

Oduduk!

I gritted my teeth.

Somehow, his honest speech seemed to be sniping at me. He acknowledged my presence. It was a type of 'declaration of war.'

As expected, it was really Okullos. I couldn't understand that fellow.

"I will be going first."

"Then should I contact you separately?"

"Yes, that would be appreciated."

I turned and quickly moved.

The crack was opened.

Once I returned, Yihi greeted me with wide eyes.

"There is big trouble! Big trouble! Sik Sik's dungeon is in danger of being torn down!"

"Don't panic. Rather...what is the situation?"

"There are over 2,000 intermediate creatures and 50 advanced creatures. Yihi has been doing the calculations. Sik Sik alone won't be able to stop them. I almost prayed for her."

It wasn't all his strength. Still, it was clearly a significant amount.

Everything would be in vain if my Dungeon Core broke. I had to stop it before that happened.

"Chrisley?"

"I called her earlier. Now she will arrive."

"Does she know the story?"

"To a certain extent. Yihi told her the main parts."

"Well done."

"Yihih...ah, this isn't the time to be laughing!"

Yihi tried to control her mouth as her eyes moved towards me.

Chrisley arrived with Krasla and several creatures. She understood the situation beforehand and came with the creatures with good mobility.

It would take time for the items purchased at the Demon World Auction to arrive. First I needed to stop the creatures with what I had now.

Krasla, Gigantes, White, Black and the saber tigers! The lich and advanced golems were also included.

"It is great to see Dungeon Master."

They kneeled in unison. However, there wasn't a lot of time.

“Rise. We will move immediately. Yihi! Open the space.”

"Please wait a moment!"

Yihi closed her eyes. The Dungeon Core started to resonate.

Wiing!

The Dungeon Core began to shake. An intense resonance was produced.

But I didn't order them to move immediately.

“Chrisley. Lead the group of saber tigers separately. Do you know the location of the dungeon in China?”

"I know it."

"Block the rear. Don't let even one of them escape. Our goal is to annihilate all those bastards!"

“I will follow your command, My Dungeon Master.”

I finished sorting the creatures and turned my head.

"The rest will come with me. From the moment we move there, soak your bodies in the blood of the enemies. Follow me!"

I formed a fist.

Okullos!

The enemy forced this confrontation.

However, I had no intention to obediently give in. If he wanted to end it now, then good.

I wouldn't avoid it.

If he wanted to take my flesh then I would give him my bones.

Chapter 121: Flesh And Bones (2)

Kuooong!

A giant worm stretched out. A huge hole appeared in front of the dungeon where thousands of creatures were pouring out of it.

"For the sake of our God."

There was an existence leading the monsters.

A demon in Okullos' faction, Azumun!

His soul had been assimilated with 12 demons. He viewed almost all the other demons as equals. Okullos was their 'God' and as a tribute to him, Azumun painted his face gold.

Not one bit of Azumun's soul would eventually remain. Over time, his mind would be crushed into dust. But right now, he still had some individual thoughts.

Gruk! Gruruk!

A large number of orcs were at the entrance to the dungeon. Sik Sik moved the creatures outside. However, this couldn't stop the aggression of the orcs.

"Blame your master."

Azumun pulled out a green bow. A strong wind pressure rose as the bowstring was pulled back. But there wasn't the sound of an explosion as the bowstring was released.

Grruk?

Instead, air bubbles formed on the shoulders of the orcs. Although they tried to hurriedly remove them with their hands, the air bubbles didn't disappear. The air bubbles just got bigger...

Peng!

They burst with a large sound. However, it didn't end with just popping.

Monsters made of green vines emerged from the bodies of the orcs, tearing them apart.

"Our God wants to rule this dungeon. Accept it quietly."

Kieeeeek!

The green monsters bit at random.

Soon thousands of creatures rushed inside.

The full scale invasion began.

The top floor of China's dungeon.

Sik Sik's face was red and she was fidgeting restlessly.

"Sik Sik! These bad people! It is foul to have so many invading!"

Azumun and his creatures were coming up towards the top floor.

There were many of them and their quality was also good.

China's dungeon was barely ready, but this treatment was too harsh. If they were only lower grade creatures like orcs or gargoyles then she would be able to stop them.

"That wicked girl Yihi. I asked her for help so why isn't there any reaction? Sik Sik! That bad girl!"

Sik Sik was afraid. She had completed a dual contract. If the Dungeon Core was broken then she would 'vanish.' She would disappear without leaving even a piece of her soul behind.

Therefore she had to give up her pride to ask for help, but Yihi didn't answer her.

The enemy was advancing too fast. Despite the defense, at this

rate the creatures would reach the top floor in less than an hour.

“Sik Sik...sniffle!”

Tears and a runny nose occurred thanks to her fear. In fact, Sik Sik was very timid. There was a ranking among the fairies. Sik Sik used anger as a way to hide her fear.

“Sniffle! Sniffle! I don’t want to disappear! No!”

Sik Sik wiped away the leaking tears with the back of her hand.

A fairy couldn’t die. Even if they received a severe blow, a fairy would just return to nature. The fairy would spend billions of years trying to restore themselves. There was no guarantee that their original ego would recover, but they wouldn’t die.

However, extinction was different. They would be deprived of all opportunities. There was no way to recover...

An instinctive fear prevailed. Her eyes turned to the hologram floating above the Dungeon Core.

The red dots had reached the 28th floor. China’s dungeon had 29 floors, so there was only one remaining.

“Yihi, that bad girl. I also hate Master!”

"Right."

".....?"

A voice was suddenly heard.

Sik Sik's eyes widened as she turned her head.

The magic circle to move between Dungeon Cores had been activated. Furthermore, Sik Sik saw a very welcome presence.

The person who ruled three dungeons. The Dungeon Master!

He showed up with strong creatures.

"The current status of the enemies?"

Sik Sik replied to the question.

"The 28th floor...they've reached it."

"I came just in time."

"M-Master. Are you going to stop them?"

"Naturally."

The Dungeon Master just laughed.

"They set foot in here without permission. I will obliterate them."

I had thrown Okullos' arm in front of the China dungeon. Okullos had certainly found the specific location of the dungeon through the arm. Otherwise, there was no reason to hit this place first.

Anyway, he tried to destroy this place while the owner wasn't home, and that would cost him. Coming to China...he mistakenly thought it was my headquarters.

His strategy was planned around a mistake.

A demon and two thousand creatures. This was enough to take over an empty house.

"Azumun. No, should I call you Okullos?"

"He is my God. I am Azumun. A faithful follower."

I faced Azumun and his creatures near the entrance to the 29th floor. The numbers on Azumun's side were overwhelming. However, my side was superior in terms of quality.

'It seems like the assimilation hasn't been completed.'

There wasn't a lot known about assimilation. But there was no focus in Azumun's eyes. He gave off the feeling that he was looking elsewhere.

Okullos and the other demons. All of them were looking at the current situation as well.

Azumun clicked his tongue and said.

"This would have been the perfect raid. How did you notice?"

"Isn't it an obvious plan to attack the dungeon while I am busy at the Demon World Auction?"

"If you knew then you would have been more prepared. Your current appearance...it seems like you were in a hurry. Then victory lies with me."

"You will know soon enough."

I started laughing.

Those who were weak commonly exaggerated in front of their enemies. For those with true power, having fewer numbers wouldn't be a problem.

More than anything, trying to catch me by surprise wasn't a success.

“Randolph Brigsiel. You can't join the ranks of evolution. Our God does not want you.”

"All of you can enjoy evolution on your own. It won't change the fact that I am a hunter!"

I pulled out Wrath.

Kuaaang!

At the same time, Lightning God let out a howl as it emerged.

Azumun's arms intersected with the bow. His Quick Fire skill aimed towards me.

'Is it because of assimilation? He seems a little bit stronger.'

The skill itself wasn't a big threat to me. Intelligence was related to anti-magic power and I had 93 points. I was immune to quite a few skills. But the speed was unusual. Due to the soul assimilation, his power seemed to be enhanced. If this also happened with Okullos then it would be very troublesome.

"You have crossed the line. However, there is a limit when you are alone!"

"Based on the tone, I guess those are Okullos' words. Is your identity becoming a little hazy?"

"Shut up!"

Pasak!

A magic arrow passed right next to me. It only scratched my cheek a little bit but air bubbles formed. I frowned as I touched an air bubble. It felt like something inside the air bubble was trying to take root. It wasn't big but it didn't seem wise to let it continue.

It would have been easier if I had the Wrath or Sloth skills but...they disappeared after receiving the third set item. I still didn't know what Corruption did. However, Azumun wasn't someone that I needed to use such a skill on.

'The defense on the right is lax.'

He was moving his right arm like it was unfamiliar. The right arm I cut off of Okullos was clearly having an effect. It was a weak point. I should take advantage of it in order to win faster.

"Dark Sword."

The sword was locked in darkness. Everything cut by the skill couldn't be healed.

Chwack!

It cut the flying magic arrows. I circled Azumun and persistently aimed for his right side.

“This guy...!”

Azumun obviously knew what I was doing. But it was impossible to stop even if he knew. Plus, I wasn't the only one aiming for Azumun.

Kuaang!

An attack that I prepared beforehand struck while Azumun was nervously concentrating on me.

Lightning God made contact with Azumun's left ankle.

“Kuaack!”

He tried to avoid it but the ankle immediately disappeared.

Azumun's body twisted and he collapsed.

I approached and looked down on him.

"Azumun, Okullos. You are my prey. Prey will never win over the hunter."

"It doesn't matter how strong you are. This is just the beginning!"

"We have the same idea. This...is just the beginning."

Puok!

Even the right ankle was cut off.

"Kuaaaak!"

"Now it is more balanced."

Once I completely blocked him from escaping, I looked around.

Indeed. The overwhelming difference in numbers was being overcome. The creatures couldn't pierce through and were coming to a standstill.

Of course, they could become dangerous if left alone.

I had to alter the mood before that happened. Demonstrating an existence with absolute power.

It was more than I imagined. I started to play with the two thousand creatures.

Azumun was collapsed and couldn't help. The creatures fought with determination but they very rarely fought desperately.

Kueong! Kueong!

The frightened ogres quickly left the battlefield. Hundreds of creatures followed them.

I had instantly taken away their power. The only ones left were the rabble.

"This is a waste of time. Go and clean them up."

"Please leave it to me, Dungeon Master. I will clean them up within 10 minutes."

Krasla brandished his red spear.

"I'll do it! Clean up!"

The energetic Gigantes wielded an enormous club to devastate the enemy. A wave of magic power swept over the creatures every time he moved his club.

The golems hadn't participated in this fight since their goal was to stop anyone from interfering. Thanks to that, I managed to handle Azumun quickly.

It took less than 10 minutes to clean up the remaining creatures.

Once the throat of the last troll was pierced, Krasla returned and went down on one knee. Blood covered his body but his attitude showed that he didn't care.

"All of the enemies have been wiped out."

"Lead the remaining troops and take care of the fleeing creatures. There are too many of them for Chrisley to handle alone."

Chrisley was leading all the saber tigers. It was a slightly hard task so the group also consisted of White and Black.

"We will move immediately."

Krasla, Gigantes, the lich, the golems and the remaining creatures headed downstairs.

Soon there was only corpses around me.

'There is one living.'

I made a correction. It wasn't only corpses.

Azumun who had his ankles cut off was still knocked out on the ground. He was severely bleeding. He had been left bleeding for 10 minutes.

I approached Azumun carefully and grabbed his head.

Bam!

I strongly slapped his cheeks. After repeating that action multiple times, Azumun's eyelids slowly opened.

"Kuooh..."

"Wake up, Azumun."

"D...ead."

He struggled to squeeze out a word. He thought he was dying, but unfortunately, I wasn't that generous.

I bent down to Azumun's ear and said.

"No, you're not dying. You won't die until you feel the pain of your soul being torn."

Wouldn't making Azumun tattered also deal a blow to Okullos?

I was very curious.

The souls might be assimilated but that didn't mean they were safe. I smiled as I imagined Okullos bending over from the pain of his bones being broken.

And...Azumun trembled as he saw my smile.

Chapter 122: Yihi's Bizarre Adventure (1)

I was born on the battlefield. I spent decades on the battlefield.

The survival rate on the battlefield was less than 1%. Even when all the people I could consider as allies died, I managed to survive.

Therefore...I was familiar with torture.

“Please...”

Azumun was in such a crushed state that it was difficult for him to speak. He had been stripped and his guts were hanging out. His ears and nose had been cut off. Both eyes? They had completely disappeared. The feet were tortured and Lightning God constantly burned the flesh.

There was a simple reason why he hadn't died yet. The high class potion made by grinding the leaves of the Tree of Origin. There was no way I would let him die so easily.

“Azumun. Your god has no power now.”

"Kill...me..."

It had already been 10 hours of torture. I had done everything I could do, and Azumun's mind had collapsed. Okullos' power would also be reduced.

‘This is enough.’

The pain I could inflict had reached its limit.

Paak!

I swung Wrath towards his head.

Instant death. Azumun’s body twitched once as he died. However, I had no intention of letting Azumun go comfortably.

I turned my head and spoke to the lich that followed me.

“Lich. Take the head filled with magic power. This will give you a good source of magic power.”

“[Un-derstood](#).”

(The lich has a habit of pausing when talking)

In other words, Azumun would be used to make a staff. His body would receive eternal suffering. I was curious about what Okullos’ expression would be if I showed it to him.

Kuoooh.

At that moment, a crack began to open. The items purchased

from the auction started showing up one by one.

'I guess it comes to the dungeon that I am near.'

Originally I received everything in the South Korean dungeon. But right now, I was in the dungeon in China. The dungeon that the goods were transferred to seemed to depend on my location.

"We are the Kur warrior clan. Where is our master?"

A loud voice rang out in the dungeon.

A bipedal species with the legs of a horse, torso of a bull and head of a human, the Kur warriors were the first ones to show up.

The leader saw me standing before Azumun's body and laughed.

"Torture! The Kur warriors are also very fond of torture!"

"Noisy."

My spirit was still a little sharp from the torture. The Kur leader frowned slightly before bowing his head.

"Master, I'm sorry! This is the normal voice for the Kur clan!"

I didn't know because they had been quiet at the auction. They

were compliant when purchased, so quite a few could have defects.

The Kur warrior clan consisted of 100 people. Each one was equivalent to an intermediate 5Lv creature. There were some advanced level warriors mixed in so I didn't hesitate to purchase them.

'Well, it is okay as long as they enjoy fighting.'

I would pay attention to them. As long as they followed commands well, I would let something small like this go.

Hihihing!

My attention turned away from the Kur clan.

100 infernos had shown up through the crack.

The fire horse inferno. They weren't herbivores. They ate monsters like goblins, orcs and even trolls. There were 100 of them. However, I didn't purchase them simply to increase my numbers.

"I heard that the Kur warriors can ride horses, so your combat capabilities should greatly rise."

"That's right! We can hunt twin head ogres when riding an inferno!"

I nodded. I heard that the Kur clan lived in remote areas. Everyone said about them, ‘a species that becomes much stronger when riding a good horse.’ There was a legend that a Kur warrior riding a pegasus managed to hunt a hydra alone. In other words, the Kur clan were a horseback riding species.

‘Excellent.’

There was no doubt that they would play a large role when hitting Okullos’ dungeon.

The next item to appear through the crack was the lich Gaparam.

"Uhh, I can feel a strong aura of death. It doesn’t feel very pleasant. Is this a dungeon?"

"As a lich, shouldn’t you be familiar with the aura of death?"

Gaparam gave a small smile and shook his head.

"Don’t compare me with other shallow lich. I became a lich for my research, but my foundation is as an alchemist. My work deals with life, not death."

"Shallow, lich?"

Unfortunately, there was another lich close by who heard it. The

lich couldn't accept such derogatory words.

Gaparam just continued.

"Ah, I take back the word shallow. I meant to say a rotten lich."

"Do, you, want to die?"

"Fighting is for savages."

"M-aster. Give me permission."

The lich looked at me. He didn't want to fight in my presence so he asked for my permission first.

"I don't allow it."

The lich gave a low bow.

I said to Gaparam.

"Gaparam. Don't cause problems in my dungeons. Do you understand?"

"I know. I will put up with it for the research."

It was a vague tone of voice that felt slightly disrespectful.

But I wasn't bothered by the tone.

"I am greatly looking forward to the results of your research."

"...Thank you. To be honest, paying 500,000 points for me shows that you recognize the worth of my research. I have become more motivated. You won't regret this, I assure you. I will create the strongest homunculus and help Master become the devil."

"That is reassuring."

"So I wanted to say this. As I said at the auction, I need a workshop..."

Gaparam trailed off. Did he need two million points? That number wasn't a burden for me.

"I will give you a place soon."

"As expected, Master recognizes my value!"

Gaparam whistled happily. At first glance, he didn't look like a lich. Leather and internal organs were attached to create a human face. It showed a great and versatile talent.

The crack opened once again.

The naga queen, dwarf king and five krakens subsequently emerged through the crack.

Swik - swik.

The naga queen's tail made a sound as she twisted around my body. It might seem like rude behaviour, but I knew she was trying to learn my body odour so I left her alone. The naga queen moved for approximately 20 seconds. Next, her tail and body lowered to the ground. A submissive posture.

The dwarf king bowed with a dour expression. He could be distinguished from the other dwarves by his blue beard. Apart from that, there wasn't much difference.

The five krakens didn't show any movements. Maybe it was because there was no water. But that alone was enough.

My first thought when seeing the krakens was 'big.' The smallest kraken I had seen was at least 60m large. I now had five of them. The top floor of the dungeon was high and wide but it seemed full.

'They are invincible in the sea.'

There were very few existences that could win against the kraken in the sea. Even a dragon wouldn't easily touch a kraken in the sea.

I could rest assured about the defense if I placed them in a sea terrain.

Swaaaaah!

The crack fluctuated even further.

‘Now...’

The last one.

My lips curled up at the thought.

‘Mago!’

A high level creature greater than the griffin and Gigantes.

Mago’s eyes watched me.

All the auction items were moved to the dungeon in China, so I would use it as a base to advance. All my preparations to attack Okullos was finished.

Chrisley had brought all the major creatures over. I was prepared to move straight away after receiving the auction items.

“M-Master. Yihi really doesn’t deserve this. The Fairy Knight's Sword. Yihi is still not qualified for it.”

Yihi was here as well. Yihi didn’t like Sik Sik but I needed to give her the Fairy Knight's Sword.

"In your case, it is sufficient.”

Yihi had been upgraded to an Origin Fairy. She was qualified for it.

"But...the Fairy King only grants this sword to one fairy. The last time the Fairy King gave it to someone was more than 20,000 years ago. Yihihi, but I am glad to see it.”

“Yihi.”

“Yes Master.”

"Take it.”

"Yes...”

Yihi hesitated before grasping the Fairy Knight's Sword with closed eyes. It was 30cm in length so it was more like a skewer than a sword. However, it was quite long when considering a fairy’s size.

The moment that Yihi firmly grasped the Fairy Knight's Sword.

“Eh eh?”

Light poured out from the sword and formed a small door.

The door then sucked Yihi in.

-The ‘Fairy Knight's Sword’ will test the fairy ‘Yihi.’
The fairy ‘Yihi’ will be moved to the examination room.

‘I never expected this.’

A forced move took place.

There seemed to be a separate place for the examination. I tried to use the fairy’s blessing to talk to Yihi, but there was only deafening silence.

“M-my Dungeon Master. Fairy-nim has disappeared.”

Chrisley said with wide eyes.

“...It isn’t a big deal.”

She had disappeared and the connection had gone dead for some reason.

There was nothing I could do. I just had to hope that she would return unharmed. It might be cruel, but there was a chance she could take a long time and I still had many things to do.

'I can't waste even a moment.'

I didn't know Okullos' true intentions. Okullos had sent a raid group but there was no telling what he was doing during this time.

Besides, Okullos had seen my status window. He would have surely spotted the title of Dungeon Hunter. He might have sensed that residual points could be obtained from dungeons.

In order to alleviate my anxiety, I needed to move quickly against Okullos.

"Krasla. Take it."

"Thank you."

Intense curiosity was in Krasla's eyes as I passed him the Dragon Armour.

Tashmal was given Firm Conviction and Chrisley the Twin's Mental Rapport. The Twin's Mental Rapport would be used with

the dark elves Roy and Rose.

‘Yihi. This is an opportunity to show your abilities.’

A creativity that no one could imagine!

If Yihi possessed the strength then she would pass the test.

Although I was still nervous...there was nothing I could do now.

Chapter 123: Yihi's Bizarre Adventure (2)

Yihi held the Fairy Knight's Sword and looked around.

A pink world.

A sunny valley flowing with sweet honey and all types of cookies. A huge rainbow was floating in the sky while the sun looked like a giant cookie. It was weird to see sunlight coming from a cookie.

A pink unicorn was playing in a unique field of pink mushrooms and pink sunflowers. There were pink dogs, pink cats and even all the cookies were pink.

This was...a pink garden.

A place she had never heard of. Even Yihi was forced to panic.

“Eobobo. W-where is this place?”

She swallowed her saliva. Her sword-holding hands trembled.

She remembered a door forming and then she was dragged to this ridiculous place. How could she not be surprised?

“Master? Where are you? Are you messing with Yihi...?”

She hid behind a pink bush and saw the dead body of a rat. Rather than Master, the only existences around her were the pink unicorn and other pink creatures.

Hihing~

The unicorn poked out its tongue and its ears were pricked up. The sight of it turning upside down to chew the grass was enough to make anyone think it was crazy.

"Yihi won't be safe if I'm caught by that crazy unicorn. I-I will hide here and watch the situation. Master said to me. Er...enter a cave to avoid getting eaten by tigers? Ah, no. That wasn't it. What was it?"

She fell into a state of panic. Several thoughts passed through her head as she tried to ignore the reality. But time passed and the pink unicorn was still there.

Even the sun was still cookie shaped.

"I will count to one million. The unicorn will surely be tired and go to a different place by then. One, two, three...five hundred and ninety nine...one, two, three..."

Once she repeated from one to ninety nine hundreds of times, the unicorn finally started to move.

Hihing~!

It was peeing. It furiously urinated all over the place. The urine spread out from the unicorn's body like a fountain.

"That unicorn really is crazy. By the way, Master is bigger. Master has two big weapons. Now it has increased to three. Overall, it is Master's victory. Yihihi."

Yihi clapped as she compared the protruding parts. Yihi showed strong interest in anything related to Master.

However, that fun only lasted a short time.

Yihi was in an unknown place with a scary unicorn so she quickly became exhausted.

She slowly closed her eyes from the fatigue.

"Hiing. Master, I want to see you. Yihi will work hard in the future. Don't throw Yihi away...yawn."

Yihi scratched her belly and drooled.

In her dreams, she was running through the flower garden while holding hands with Master.

Between the 'hahas' and 'hohohos', both of them looked happy.

“Master. I am Yihi. In fact. I like Master!”

She made a small, pretty bouquet and handed it to Master. Master smiled as he received the bouquet and patted Yihi on the head.

“Me too. Yihi, I felt feelings of love from the moment I first saw you.”

“Ah...! Master, Yihi has been yours since the beginning!”

“Even the gods can’t tear our love apart. I will become the devil and Yihi will sit next to me. You will be by my side forever. I will always be happy if my hands can pat your head and touch Yihi’s beautiful hair.”

“Yihi. Master stroking my head is the thing I love best in this world. Yihihhi. In the future, don’t scold Yihi!”

“Yes. Of course. I will expand your garden. You can annoy the bees to your heart’s content.”

“Yihihhi!”

“This as well? I will praise you every day.”

“Yihihihhi!”

“I will stroke your head at least a hundred times.”

“Yihihihhi!”

She was happy. She wished this time would go on forever.

However, there was one thing.

“By the way, Master. Why are you licking Yihi’s cheeks with your tongue?”

“.....”

“Master? W-why is your face suddenly pink...?”

"N-no!"

Yihi’s eyes widened as she woke up and shot upwards.

There was no lush flower garden or Master whispering words of love.

“Pant pant, a dream. It is lucky. Master’s face didn’t turn pink.”

She was so surprised that sweat was flowing down her face.

She wiped off the sweat with the back of her hand.

“What? Why is it so sticky?”

However, the liquid she wiped away wasn’t sweat.

She frowned as she thought about it.

Huong.

In the next moment, she felt something breathing next to her.

At the same time, something licked Yihi’s cheek.

“.....”

Yihi turned to take a look and froze.

Hihing~

The pink unicorn had poked out its tongue and was wildly waving its head.

“.....”

Hihing~

Head bang!

The unicorn's head moved from side to side, up and down without stopping.

It was disgusting. There was a runny nose and tears.

“Hiing...”

Hihing~!

Were her wings wet with saliva?

They couldn't be unfolded. She couldn't fly.

Yihi started to quickly run on her two little feet. And the pink unicorn calmly followed after her.

“Don't follow me! Yihi isn't tasty!”

Yihi was desperate. She recklessly ran through the pink forest. After tens of minutes. Yihi's expression became increasingly more exhausted.

“This can't continue. That perverted unicorn will eat me.”

The good news was that the unicorn wasn't in sight. It would catch up soon but she still had a chance.

Yihi quickly looked around the area.

"I will hide over there."

At the bottom of a hill, there was a small cave in a blind spot. At first glance, it seemed like an appropriate place to hide her body.

Yihi quickly ran into the cave.

"Huiyu~. That was hard. Yihi doesn't have the strength to walk anymore."

She leaned back against the cave wall and massaged her feet. She couldn't remember the last time she had run somewhere. No, this was actually the first time. She was always obstinate about flying.

After a short break, Yihi started to examine the cave.

"A strange looking cave. There are a lot of huge mushrooms."

Of course, the mushrooms were pink. Still, all of them looked different and it stimulated Yihi's curiosity.

"I need to go further inside. Yihi needs to find a safe place for Yihi to defend herself."

Kungcha!

Yihi slowly and painfully got to her feet.

As she went deeper inside, the mushrooms seemed to grow even larger.

After walking for approximately 30 minutes, a huge vacant lot appeared. In the heart of the vacant lot was a huge mushroom surrounded by various other mushrooms.

"Wah~. Unbelievably large. Great mushroom, yihihi."

She approached it and tapped the bottom.

Bouncy bouncy.

The texture was soft. Yihi thought it was fun and constantly poked the mushroom with her finger.

Kuwuong.

Soon, the cave began to shake.

The giant mushroom started to move.

"Egumonina!"

Yihi quickly moved back at the angry roar.

She was at a loss as she saw eyes and a mouth on the giant mushroom.

"How dare a stupid fairy invade the Mushroom Kingdom? I, the Mushroom King named Mushroom will not forgive you!"

"Mushroom."

"Intruder. Mushroom."

"Kill. Mushroom."

The mushrooms in the surrounding areas also rose.

Yihi, who was suddenly trapped, trembled.

"W-what did Yihi do?"

The Mushroom King said.

"Hmph, an intruder shouldn't talk! Die!"

"Mushroom."

"Kill. Mushroom."

Small mushrooms surrounded her.

Yihi earnestly implored with her hands.

"S-spare me."

"Mushroom!"

She would get eaten.

"Master..."

Yihi closed her eyes.

It wasn't necessary to stroll through the flower garden, but she at least wanted to see Master's face.

It was at that moment.

Hiihing~!

A prince charming on a white horse. No, just a horse.

The unicorn!

It slaughtered the mushrooms with its horns and quickly stood in front of Yihi.

Nothing happened so Yihi opened her eyes to find the unicorn.

"The perverted unicorn?"

Hihing~

"Don't tell me you came here to rescue Yihi?"

Hihing!

"Ah!"

Yihi was impressed.

The unicorn she called crazy and perverted had come to the cave to save her.

"Yihi was mistaken. Aren't you a really good unicorn?"

Hihing!

"Then will you take Yihi out of this cave?"

Hihing.

"You won't? You want Yihi to defeat these mushrooms?"

Hihing!

"Yihi is weak..."

Hihing~

"It is possible if it is Yihi? U-understood. I'll try it."

She raised the Fairy Knight's Sword.

After a deep breath, Yihi recalled Master's movements. He had a beautiful appearance as he used the sword to slaughter the enemy. She was ecstatic just thinking of the movements!

"Yap!"

Yihi gave a large cry as she waved the sword.

“I’m sorry.”

The mushrooms were weak.

Only the Mushroom King had a large size. Once a few mushrooms were pierced with the sword, he groaned with pain and apologized.

"You are the fairy of the legends. The one holding the Fairy Knight's Sword..."

"The fairy of the legends? What is that?"

Yihi was confused. Then Mushroom said.

“Yes. A legend has been passed down in the Mushroom Kingdom and Cookie Kingdom. A fairy holding the Fairy Knight's Sword will appear to save the world from the Pink Queen.”

"Save the world from the Pink Queen? Yihi can't do such a huge task."

"D-don't say that. Fairy-nim is our only hope! Just thinking of what happened when the Pink Queen caught ordinary mushrooms and cookies really brings me to tears."

"But...I can't do it. Instead, why don't you send Yihi back to her

original world? I will talk to Master and he will solve your problem.”

Mushroom blinked.

"Your original world? Ah, the legendary fairy must come from another world. The Pink Queen will know the answer to your problem.”

Yihi touched her jaw. She picked up this habit from Master. However, she wasn't able to find a solution like Master. She just had to try it.

"It is really possible for Yihi?”

"It is hard for now. But if you wear the legendary treasures from the Mushroom Kingdom and Cookie Kingdom, you will have a chance. Plus, you have the legendary unicorn! Victory is certain.”

Hihing~

The unicorn was still moving its head. Honestly, it was scary. It also splashed saliva everywhere. The fact that it had a good nature was a separate fact. Yihi didn't have any confidence as she looked at it.

Yihi ignored the unicorn and asked another question.

"Then what is the Cookie Kingdom?"

Mushroom sighed.

"Right now it is different, but we were brethren in the past. After the Pink Queen turned the Cookie King into the sun, they gave up on all attempts at diplomacy. Now they just stare up at the sun every day while working. Please, please save both of us."

"Mushroom."

"Please! Mushroom!"

Thousands of mushrooms said it all at once. They looked pathetic even to Yihi.

The Cookie King had become the sun. The cookies had to stare at him all day long.

Yihi felt like it was her story. It was similar to the way Yihi wanted to look at Master every day.

She also had a lot of confidence after using the sword against the mushrooms.

The word 'legend' gave her some momentum.

"I can return to my world after slaying the Pink Queen?
Understood. Leave this to Yihi!"

Yihi hit her chest and said confidently.

Chapter 124: Demon Predator (1)

Haïen Moon's Necklace.

The owner was a master swordsman and wearing the necklace taught a powerful sword technique. Ariel Diablo had obtained it in my previous life, using the advanced proficiency to conquer her enemies.

But now it was mine. I owned it, not anyone else.

I placed the moon shaped necklace around my neck.

At the same time.

-The Haïen Moon's Necklace has been worn.

The secret sword technique 'Moonlight Falling (Epic, Passive)' has been learnt.

A refreshing aura covered my body. The blue light around my body resembled that of the moon. Today was a full moon. This was the perfect day to experiment with the new sword technique.

'This is...Moonlight Falling.'

I accepted the energy. The information about the sword

technique slowly entered my head. And I could see Haien Moon.

He had a beast-like body. His hair looked like it hadn't been cleaned in a while and he had a beard. He wore worn clothes and walked forward with two swords in his hands.

The image of the sword technique demonstration was etched into my retinas. I admired the beautiful sword trajectory as it moved in the moonlight.

‘Beautiful.’

I had that thought while watching the swords move. It couldn't be compared to the dancers who moved holding swords. Every single movement was important. It was beautiful but the sword also pierced the heart and head of the enemy.

It was a new experience for me.

‘Swordsmanship on an entirely different level.’

Ha!’

In my previous life, the Moonlight Falling that Ariel used was intense. However, it wasn't beautiful. She had probably reassembled Moonlight Falling according to her own colour.

She knew tens of thousands of sword techniques. She absorbed

everything and turned it into 'Abyss Sword.' Haien Moon's sword technique was just one part of this.

'I will leave it as it is.'

My thoughts were different.

I didn't know any proper sword techniques. They were given to me during actual combat. A technique to split the flesh of the enemy. Simple ways to break the enemy's bones. That was it. I thought that was enough.

Swordsmanship? I hadn't felt the need for it.

This bias changed after seeing Haien Moon performing Moonlight Falling directly.

This...was complete by itself. There was no need to make any changes to it.

Of course, there would be differences based on the interpretation. I lagged behind significantly when it came to actually using Moonlight Falling. But if I kept learning Moonlight Falling, I was confident that I would break the 'wall' on my own.

In fact, my swordsmanship had been stagnant for more than 10 years. My abilities rose as I became stronger, but there was no change in the techniques themselves.

So I wanted to learn. I wanted to absorb it. Ariel reassembled it but I didn't want to destroy the 'purity' of the original owner, despite my lacking skills.

'Haïen, I will carry your method forward.'

I stretched out my hand. Haïen Moon's movements imprinted in my retinas were carried out through my hands. There was no notion of reality. My hands continued to draw Moonlight Falling. Moonlight fell on me from the full moon and it felt like a heavy weight was pressing down on me.

A prophet. A sword master.

He was strong and I respected his purity.

Haïen Moon loved the moon. His emotions were contained in Falling Moonlight.

The desire to learn and grow from Haïen Moon filled my head.

"I am fond of the full moon in the quiet sky."

I laughed.

I recalled the days spent on the battlefield.

A place of slaughter. A place where I couldn't even trust my allies.

Still, the moon was the only one on my side. It would never change or betray me. I understood a little bit of Haien Moon's heart.

I held Wrath in one hand and the Emperor's Sword in the other.

And I brandished them until dawn.

I couldn't move without a plan. I needed to draw up a plan, divide the troops and give them time to adjust to the items purchased from the Demon World Auction. Okullos was a grand duke so I needed to be well prepared before going against him.

"You absolutely can't get caught. It is important to monitor the dungeons of Okullos and important demons from an appropriate distance. Send me reports through the crystal ball once a day."

"I will follow your words, Dungeon Master."

Reconnaissance was a must before moving.

I used Krasla and a few dark elves for mobility.

Okullos knew my status window but he wasn't aware that I knew

the exact location of his dungeon.

'Your damn arrogance. It will make sure that you aren't prepared.'

My purpose was to catch him off guard. It wouldn't be long. Meanwhile, I would use this time to gain a little bit of strength.

"Stein. How is the work of the dwarf king progressing?"

"He is so amazing! Seven unique level weapons have already been completed. At this rate, the basic preparations will be ready in a fortnight. Once the huge weapon for Gigantes is finished, his power will instantly double."

Stein said in a proud tone. Indeed, good blacksmith skills and superior materials meant that decent weapons were created. Thanks to that, the dwarves were growing every day.

A fortnight. I couldn't waste that valuable time.

After completing some urgent tasks and learning Moonlight Falling, I pulled out the rest of the items.

Millennium Stigma, Lightning Orb and Haien Moon's Necklace were all items for my growth. To be precise, they worked to increase the impact of Lightning God.

‘Lightning Orb helps lightning related skills recover.'

I used Mind’s Eye once again to confirm it.

-Name - Lightning Orb (Ex U)

Description: An orb held in the mouth of a lightning dragon for 100 years.

* Strengthens the electrical properties of unique skills. The user’s electrical magic power can be restored once a day.

** Can grant electrical properties to spirits.

Lightning God had a higher rank so the strengthening effect would have no effect. I was aiming for the ‘recovery’ and ‘integration’ options.

‘Lightning God. Move.'

Lightning God started moving out towards the Lightning Orb.

It wasn’t a simple movement. Lightning God felt resistant, but it couldn’t go against my orders.

After a while, Lightning God finally reached the Lightning Orb. At that moment, a strong sense of effort could be felt, but I ignored it. This was work that required intense concentration.

-‘Lightning Elemental (Epic)’ has entered the ‘Lightning Orb (Ex U).’

The spirit rating is very high. The effect will be enhanced.

The name will be changed to Lightning Orb (Lightning God).

The efficiency of ‘Lightning Elemental (Epic)’ has increased. The consumption of materials for its use has been reduced by half.

Then I pulled out the Millennium Stigma. This was an item that formed a type of ‘contract.’ After connecting Lightning Orb and Lightning God, the duration that I could use it for had increased.

‘Do humans call something like this a trick?’

My eyebrows furrowed.

Some people might call it a trick.

‘No, it isn’t.’

It was finding a method and taking advantage of it.

I grabbed onto the chance.

Once I confirmed that Lightning God had completed the change, I placed the seal around my heart.

-Millennium Stigma has been activated. Lightning Orb (Lightning God) and the 'Heart of the Hell Monarch' have been linked.

'Lightning God' will always manifest in the future. When the skill is not in use, it is possible to use one tenth of the spirit's power.

Millennium Stigma has been destroyed after being used.

The stigma was a one-time item.

However, the effect was enough.

After a while, a small fist-sized dragon made of lightning appeared out of the Lightning Orb.

Lightning God. It was surprised by the sudden situation and quickly looked around.

‘The strength is reduced to one tenth, but it is active 24 hours a day. I can also recover the strength when the skill is used.’

Lightning God would automatically keep protecting me. Originally, Lightning God couldn’t voluntarily exit my body. But thanks to Lightning Orb and Millennium Stigma, it could now manifest for 24 hours a day.

The small Lightning God moved around my head. It was in a good mood after gaining its freedom.

It couldn’t be underestimated just because it was the size of a fist. It only had one tenth of the power, but an advanced creature would still be in danger from one hit.

“I look forward to it.”

Lightning God flew faster.

‘Now it is time for the box.’

It was the last item left from those he purchased at the Demon World Auction.

The Unknown Box was waiting for its turn.

The box was shaped like a coffin.

Chrisley stood in front of it and asked.

“My Dungeon Master. You want me to open this box?”

“That’s right. The item that comes out will belong to you.”

“...I will open it. Please step aside.”

Chrisley was worried since she didn’t know what would come out. However, I shook my head.

“It is okay. I will be safe here.”

“I understand. Then...”

Chrisley took a deep breath and moved. She carefully lifted the lid of the box.

Huuung.

A loud sound. It was like someone was roaring.

At the same time, a violet light poured from the box.

“My Dungeon Master. This...”

Chrisley said with perplexed eyes.

"Indeed. It turned out like this."

I slightly nodded as I checked the result.

Chapter 125: Demon Predator (2)

The preparations were over.

The only thing left was to move there.

“My Dungeon Master. Fairy-nim hasn’t appeared yet.”

“I know. But I can’t delay it any longer.”

I said to Chrisley before turning around.

All the creatures except those left behind to defend the dungeon were gathered behind me.

There were 4,000 intermediate and 100 advanced creatures. There were also three high class creatures. Tashmal was recovering her strength and easily reached the rank of a high class creature. If I included her then it would be four high class creatures.

It was at a scale that no demon could match. Sweeping away one dungeon would be a cinch. This was 80% of the power that I had gathered in three years.

In particular, I had considerable expectations for the Kur clan warriors. They were riding the infernos and carrying weapons created by the dwarf king. Plus, the clan warriors became stronger

when they were together.

“War! The Kur Warriors also like war!”

Their voices rang in my ears...war. I would use the momentum of their shouts.

“The enemy is Grand Duke Okullos. If we delay any longer then it will become disadvantageous. Lightning fast. Exit quickly after hitting him in the neck. If we miss this opportunity then it will become more difficult. We have to kill Okullos at all cost. In addition, if he crosses another line...I need to pull out his roots before he becomes more annoying.”

Krasla had sent me some amazing facts while he was scouting.

It was the reason why I was busy in many ways.

I wasn't the only target, and Okullos had attacked other dungeons simultaneously. Two demons from other factions had been dragged inside Okullos' dungeon.

Krasla placed himself at risk and entered the dungeon. And...he confirmed that Okullos was a demon 'predator.'

It was different from insanity. I was utterly disgusted by the actions described to me. A predator of his own kin...!

He broke another taboo.

Demon Predator. That was Okullos' new title.

'His soul seems to have gone out of balance because of the assimilation.'

The original Okullos maintained a moderate position. He didn't do anything extraordinary. Now he had transformed into a dramatic character thanks to the soul assimilation. It was impossible to assimilate other demons without the soul being harmed.

'It will be a hassle if he grows like me. And I don't know what he will become capable of over time.'

I could get extra stat points by controlling dungeons and hunting demons. However, Okullos was likely to gain something as well from eating other demons.

That was enough for me to move, but I also couldn't guess Okullos' behaviour. I needed to destroy him before he went beyond what I could face.

I organized my thoughts and took one step forward.

"Follow me. We will destroy the enemy."

A large group of creatures started to move from the dungeon in China.

Okullos' dungeon was located in Brazil, South America, so I needed to go by sea. The turtle islands I bought were ready to move. I had purchased an additional nine turtle islands. They were big enough to be called small islands and 10 of them could carry 5,000 creatures.

"Stop! Warning! Don't come any closer..."

The problem was that the humans had a reaction to the large number of creatures moving.

Several thousand humans with tanks blocked their path. There were also dozens of Awakened.

It had already been three years. It was impossible that the humans didn't know negotiating with creatures was impossible. It would have been better if they struck first instead of giving a warning. The creatures were only stimulated by the loud noise.

The faces of the humans were filled with tension. It seemed like they wouldn't get out of the way. It was apparent from their attitude and the fact that this place wasn't far from a city.

'Annoying military.'

I clicked my tongue.

Still, I needed to take care of them if I wanted to pass.

This was a Pandora's box that they shouldn't have opened.

I had brought thousands of creatures. Their fate was to be brutally trampled on. But if they were trying to buy time to evacuate the buildings...

I could waste some time here. I would use the Kur clan warriors to sweep them away.

"Master! We will show the strength of the Kur clan!"

"I'll leave it to you."

I coldly accepted.

If I used the griffin then I could quickly clean them up. However, it wasn't bad to look at the combat power of the Kur warriors.

With my permission, the Kur warriors were all riding infernos.

"Hi-rah!"

"Wipe them out!"

The 100 infernos that the Kur warriors were riding kicked off against the ground.

They were 3m tall. There was also the moderate size of the Kur warriors. An ordinary human would have to look up to barely see their heads.

Kung! Kwarung!

The tanks fired. The Kur clan had never encountered weapons like this before.

The Kur warriors were hit by them. One of the warriors was literally knocked to the ground. But he just got up from the dirt.

"That hurt me a little bit!"

The Kur warrior just laughed like it was a joke and got back on the inferno. Amazing actions followed.

The infernos swiftly moved among the humans. Their skins were tough and close to impervious, making the bullets unable to penetrate them. Even the flames emitted from an inferno were fatal for humans. The humans couldn't extinguish the hellfire.

"This weapon is very good!"

As expected from weapons made by the dwarf king. The weapons

he made from the roots of the Tree of Origin had a unique rating and were extremely sharp. The Kur warriors could even slice through a tank.

The humans were wiped out in 20 minutes. It was a long time but that was due to the brutality of the Kur clan.

Despite the person being dead, they would keep slicing the body again and again.

"Master! Slaughter is fun!"

"Yes, I can see."

I nodded. The Kur clan received no damage. There were some minor injuries but their power was preserved.

'This isn't all. The true strength of the Kur clan will only appear when dealing with strong enemies.'

They were a species specialized in fighting together. This was the Kur clan.

There was also a skill associated with them. Rendezvous (U). A skill that raised strength and stamina when many Kur warriors faced an enemy.

"The Kur clan warriors are strong!"

The Kur clan cried out loudly as they held up their large swords. An attitude like they were showing off. Most of the creatures gathered here took it as a taunt.

“.....”

Chrisley was tired of it but ignored them. On the other hand, Tashmal, who was wearing Firm Conviction, spat out harsh words.

"Hmm, I can't find any dignity."

Her tone was filled with thorns. She had been fidgety as soon as she left the dungeon because she was concerned about the baby angels.

Tashmal's three pairs of black wings spread out in an intimidating gesture. Her stats had recovered quite a bit and she could match high class creatures.

I was resting for a while and had a chance to check Tashmal's growth with Mind's Eye.

Name: Tashmal
Occupation: Fallen Angel
Title: * Angel of Light Steeped in Darkness (Epic, Intelligence

and Magic Power +6)

* Firm Conviction (R, Stamina +3)

Stats

Strength: 77

Intelligence: 88 (+6)

Agility: 83

Stamina: 79 (+5)

Magic Power: 86 (+8)

Potential: (413+19/471)

Uniqueness: An angel that spread light into the world has now become a fallen angel. The stats have been lowered in the aftermath of losing her wings, but they will quickly recover.

Skill: Propagation of Darkness (Epic), Barrage of Dark Spears (Epic), Dark Thunder (Epic)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 68 Intelligence 93 Agility 78 Stamina 69 Magic 90
Potential (386+12/471)

Strength 77 Intelligence 94 Agility 83 Stamina 84 Magic 94
Potential (413+19/471)

The Firm Conviction helmet. The helmet increased her stamina by five and her magic power by two. Her stats were more than 430 so she had already surpassed Gigantes and the griffin. This was

almost as strong as a 2Lv high class creature.

I wondered what the result would be if she fought the Kur warriors, but now wasn't the time for that.

“There is no time to delay. Move to the right.”

I walked out.

I needed to stab a dagger into Okullos before he noticed.

Moving with turtle island was simple.

It dived into the depths of the ocean with a shielding skill. Thanks to that, I was able to reach South America without any interference.

Of course, there was one more bridge to cross. I decided to go through Peru.

'Everything has been destroyed.'

It wasn't a country with strong military power so I thought I could easily pass through. But this was completely different from what I expected. There weren't even any ants or puppies, let alone a resistance.

All the cities were completely destroyed. The smell of burning flesh and rotting bodies permeated the air. Peru didn't have a dungeon so I could only guess that Okullos was behind it.

"My Dungeon Master. The smell is unbearable."

Chrisley pinched her nose. The burning and rotten stench was the worst. It was hard for her superior senses.

I opened my mouth and said.

"There are no humans visible.'

"Isn't it due to Okullos?"

"You think so as well?"

"The signs are all around us. Did he intend to gather some points?"

The tragedy had happened not long ago. At best, it was only one or two months. It was something he clearly did before entering the Demon World Auction.

However, was it really for points?

"No. It is not for the sake of points."

Chrisley was puzzled by my words.

"Then...?"

"Look at the bodies."

The area was littered with corpses. They were eaten by insects, rotted or burnt, but were still obviously corpses.

"Ah...! None of them have heads."

It wasn't difficult to understand after that. She hadn't been aware because the smell was so bad she turned away.

"Sacrifices."

Tashmal said with a serious expression.

I agreed with her.

"That's right, Tashmal. They are sacrifices to summon something."

I couldn't imagine how many sacrifices there were. It was at least hundreds of thousands.

Chrisley trembled as she was enlightened.

“Isn’t he a grand duke? An existence like that, making all these sacrifices for a summoning...”

I couldn’t act recklessly.

I forgot my pride and couldn’t easily move.

A grand duke was strong. They had high standards in other areas, not just strength. Yet he was forced to offer many ‘sacrifices.’

Especially since I didn’t know who he was summoning. It wasn’t possible for me to have an extensive knowledge of summoning.

“Right now, Okullos’ mental state isn’t normal. It isn’t strange that he would do something like this.”

“This is really...insane.”

Chrisley concluded with disgust.

Soul assimilation.

Kin predator.

A summoning ritual.

Judging by the scale of the ritual...

‘It won’t be easy.’

But I also couldn’t stay put.

A grand duke was a presence that I couldn’t leave alone.

I didn’t want to. I hoped to knock my opponent down from his position.

At the very least, Okullos was within a short reach.

A fight between a predator and a hunter.

I formed fists.

It would be hard but that didn’t mean it was impossible.

Wide plains. Hundreds of thousands of human skulls were skewered.

A cumulation of cruelty. Okullos grinned as he looked over it.

Soon a magic circle was invoked on the whole plains, and a huge

mountain-like shadow appeared.

“Who summoned ‘Nothingness’?”

Nothingness. Something that no one knew or could explain.

A shadow of Nothingness was summoned.

“It is good to meet you. I am the one who summoned you.”

Okullos said to the shadow.

Then he turned his attention to the Shadow of Nothingness.

"Are all those heads my food?"

“That’s right. Feel free to eat!”

"I am not satisfied but...I won’t refuse this big portion.”

Kuwuong!

It wasn’t a mere shadow. The shadow moved over the land. The shadow swallowed up the entire plains.

In the blink of an eye.

All the heads instantly disappeared.

“Huhuhuhu!”

Okullos' smile widened.

The ritual sacrifices had been completed.

The existence that no one knew about was now in his hands.

Okullos lost any fear.

Now victory was his.

Chapter 126: Shadow Of Nothingness, Contegonom (1)

After going through Peru, we safely made it to the dungeon in Brazil. It was just as horrible as Peru.

“Dungeon Master. I, Krasla have come to greet you.”

Krasla and several dark elves approached. They had covered themselves in dirt and straw to monitor Okullos’ dungeon.

“Are there any noticeable movements?”

Krasla briefly hesitated at the question before replying.

“That...it was only for a fraction of a second, but there was a huge surge of magic power inside the dungeon. It disappeared instantly so I thought I was mistaken. At the same time, the movements of the creatures reduced.”

It clearly had a negative impact on the creatures in the dungeon.

My eyebrows rose.

‘The summoning was successful.’

I had no clue at all about what was summoned. And without any

hints, I was bound to feel some fear. Despite the information from my previous life, I was now moving in complete ignorance.

"Good job."

However, I didn't hold back on my praise. Krasla and the dark elves had suffered without sleeping for the last fortnight.

"Thank you!"

I ignored their bows and took out Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

The dungeon was close enough for them to notice me. If Okullos felt danger then it was highly likely that the creatures and demons would start moving.

I was already committed to destroying the enemy. I had a clear goal and objectives. There was nothing else to say.

Chrisley, Krasla and Tashmal...all the preparations were finished.

Yes, words weren't necessary. The only thing left was speed!

"Let's go."

I ran towards the dungeon.

Giant ants emerged from the ground. They were the lowest grade 'war ants.' They weren't anything to worry about on their own, but hundreds of thousands gathered together were a lot stronger.

It was normal to be careful, even if they were lower grade creatures. But I needed to act quickly. Someone might have ordered them to buy some time. Rushing so recklessly...it was different from the creatures' normal behaviour.

"Griffin."

Kiiik!

Despite suffering a serious injury against Infinite Flesh, the griffin had completely recovered. Dust shot up as Fire and Lightning (Epic) hit the ground.

Kwa ru ru rung!

It was utterly amazing. A whole bunch of war ants immediately melted.

Despite their numbers, they were only lowest grade creatures. They were no match for the griffin.

The ants were destroyed without even a trace left behind. The

Kur clan hunted the few remaining war ants.

The time that it took? Less than five minutes. They completely finished it. The enemy was wiped out and we moved on straight away.

Krasla had figured out the path in advance so it was easy to move up. But I didn't see any more war ants until the 5th floor.

‘Ant cave.’

Okullos' dungeon was an ant cave.

All his creatures were ants.

The 6th floor.

It was the first time there was a change.

A storage for eggs. There were tens of thousands of ant eggs. Guardian ants were beside the entrance. Low grade 3Lv creatures. They were larger than normal war ants and had much sharper mandibles. Their speed and power couldn't be ignored.

"Burn it."

The guardian ants were low grade creatures.

Destroying the eggs storage wasn't a problem.

The dungeon was wider than it seemed, so even using the griffin's Fire and Lightning skill would take a long time.

However, I also had three fire golems. In this situation, there was no need to keep them back from burning the eggs storage.

The fire golems ignored the guardian ants, despite the assault from the sharp mandibles. It reached the climax.

Kung! Kuuong!

After receiving my command, the fire golems only moved for the goal. The ground shook every time their heavy bodies moved.

Hwaaak!

Flames shot out from the fire golems' hands. The eggs storage couldn't survive the firepower. The guardian ants rushed at the fire golems but were just melted down. It was impossible for them to attack.

It was easy. There was nothing hidden. At this rate, it wouldn't be too difficult to reach the top floor.

I was slowly climbing up the dungeon.

‘Isn’t it time that he noticed?’

More than 5,000 creatures entered. There was plenty of time for the owner of the dungeon to notice. But there were no movements.

Was he encouraging me to come? Or he was confident that I wouldn’t be able to rise.

Whatever the reason...I couldn’t relax.

I couldn’t know the truth about Okullos, but that wasn’t necessarily bad for me.

The 11th floor.

Intermediate level creatures emerged.

The gigantic ants were intermediate 3Lv creatures. Their whole body was covered with specific, hard materials that looked like armour, making the ants quite tricky. Furthermore, they spat out chemical ingredients from their mouth like human machine guns.

Kwang! Kwang!

There was a loud sound. Over 100 gigantic ants were heading towards the entrance. The advanced golems’ forward movement was stopped.

The chemicals emitted by the gigantic ants were damaging to them. There would be an explosion from the chemicals and it would penetrate towards the nervous system.

The 'flame resistant' griffin also moved forward. Its skill was used efficiently. The only problem was that the griffin couldn't discharge it that often.

"Naga queen."

Swiik!

With the tail of a snake and the upper body of a beautiful woman, she was a strong powerhouse among the advanced 5Lv creatures. The naga queen moved along the walls and floors quickly. Her sharp teeth and potent poison melted away the armour of the gigantic ants.

Haaah!

The naga queen breathed out purple smoke towards the gigantic ants in front of her.

The fog spread out. It was the skill 'Poison Spray (Ex U).'

The purple fog touched the gigantic ants and melted them down. Their solid armour and powerful weapons were useless in front of

the naga queen.

This battle also reached its climax.

‘Now I just need to hunt the queen.’

I had encountered war ants, guardian ants and gigantic ants. Their presence meant there would be a queen ant.

As I approached the end of the ant cave...Okullos’ preparations were like what I expected.

Ant queen! An ant the size of a golem screamed.

Kiii!

The strident sound echoed.

The queen ant was in a miserable state. All her legs were mutilated and her body was covered with mysterious wounds.

Grwaang!

White roared from his position on top of the queen ant’s torso. It was a roar of victory.

The end of combat was announced by White biting the neck of

the ant queen. Despite the dozens of saber tigers that died, this was a great success.

'The queen ant can be left to die. My points will be wasted if I don't move.'

There were no traces of Okullos' movements. I couldn't tell that a magic circle had been carved. Immediately after the magic circle was activated, there was a surge of magic power intense enough for ordinary humans to feel it. There were no signs that anything like that had happened.

Even if Okullos wasn't here, the fairy should have come out to reject me. It was like he just placed a number of creatures to resist.

'The damage is small. At most, there were 200 hundred intermediate creatures. The real bonus will be cutting that guy's head off.'

I turned and looked at Chrisley.

"Have you received contact from the other dark elves?"

"No, My Dungeon Master."

"That means the other demons aren't moving."

I wasn't only watching Okullos. Dark elves were sent to the

dungeons of other demons in his faction. I gave them crystal balls so they could report back.

There was no contact, so that meant the demons weren't moving.

Therefore, I only needed to pay attention to Okullos.

"Then..."

Movement. There was movement while I was speaking.

Hwiiik!

A rough wind blew.

Kiii!

The dying queen ant made frantic sounds. Then the body of the queen ant disappeared in the blink of an eye.

There were no signs of it. There was only the wind blowing.

"This power...!"

Tashmal's wings spread wide open and she activated the skill Barrage of Dark Spears (Epic). The spears rushed through the dungeon.

Kwang! Kwarurung! Kwakwang!

An explosion took place and I could finally see it.

‘Shadow.’

A shadow. A very large shadow could be seen on the outer wall of the dungeon.

Tashmal shouted loudly in dismay.

“Nothingness!”

Nothingness?

I didn’t know what it was but Tashmal seemed shocked. In addition, she was nervous about the shadow.

“Your presence shouldn’t be here! Return! This isn’t the place for you!”

-Return? I’m not much different from the original natives of this place.

It spoke in an annoyed, bass-like voice.

However, Tashmal had a tough attitude.

“Nothingness can’t be called a native! You’re not a god! You are just an ungrateful presence that tried to eat God!”

It was difficult to follow the story. In the first place, I had no idea what Nothingness was. This was the first time I had seen the overwhelming presence that was the shadow. It seemed to have existed for a long time.

It felt like the first time I had encountered a grand duke in the Demon World. The shadow wasn’t an easy opponent. A powerhouse.

-I’m not a God? I’ve heard that for 10 million years. I am the truest God that exists. A fallen angel shouldn’t speak on this topic.

"I still have all the memories from my past lives. You are a god? My god is real! I can’t stand any corrupted existences impersonating God!”

Hwiiiing!

The wind grew stronger.

Many dark spears floated around Tashmal.

-I...am Contegonom! I am the true god! The other one is just a

fake! You damn fallen angel!

Chapter 127: Shadow Of Nothingness, Contegonom (2)

Then Tashmal accused him.

"Bah, it looks like you can't remember anything but your name. Everything else has been lost into nothingness!"

Supak!

The shadow that called himself Contegonom moved.

Kwarung!

Tashmal responded. Countless dark spears shot towards him.

However, the shadow was fast. It wasn't easy to hit him. On the other hand, Tashmal was injured every time the shadow moved.

'Contegonom.'

I consider that name for a while. I had heard it somewhere before.

Soon I received a small surprise as I searched through my memories.

‘Contegonom was king of the yetis!’

The king that no yeti dared refer to by name. He was the ancestor of a cursed yeti sold at the Demon World Auction and his name was also on a helmet in the Achievements Store. I never thought I would hear that name here.

The form of the giant shadow looked similar to a yeti. He must have died and become this. He was in a shadow state.

‘It is certain.’

I needed to get rid of him in order to move forward.

“Mago.”

Huuung.

This time it was the 2Lv high class creature purchased at the Demon World Auction.

The one-eyed Mago came forward. Mago regarded the shadow slowly. She had wise eyes that seemed to allow her to see right through the shadow.

‘Fortunately, she is in a normal state.’

Due to the failed contract with the dark spirits, sometimes Mago would have seizures. They didn't know how to catch a high class creature, so I was dealing with the result. She would become tired approximately once a week and then calm down.

But today she was calmer than usual. Her one eye read everything about Contegonom.

Hwiing!

A gust of wind rose next to Mago, and she hid herself in the wind.

Mago's habit was to mix in with the wind. I was reminded of her skills and laughed with satisfaction when recalling her status window.

Name: Mago

Stats

Strength: 89

Intelligence: 93

Agility: 92

Stamina: 68

Magic Power: 93

Potential: (435/446)

Uniqueness: Unstable due to the contract.

Skill: Perfect Hurricane (Epic), Sage's Eye (Epic), Wind Tread (Epic)

It wasn't a surprising status window for a 2Lv high class creature. The disadvantage was her low stamina, but that didn't matter in the current situation.

Mago reappeared behind Contegonom. Her one blue eye was shining as she stabbed the centre of Contegonom's hand.

Puok!

-Kuaaah!

Contegonom, who had been pressuring Tashmal, screamed. It

was the first time an attack had succeeded. Mago used the skill 'Sage's Eye (Epic)' to examine Contegonom. That was how Mago seemed to know a weak point.

Mago's eye alone made it worth buying her.

Contegonom jerked back from the unexpected blow.

That wasn't the end.

Mago pulled strongly on Contegonom's shadow. And the figure hiding in the shadow was revealed.

-You...!

A terrible shape appeared from the shadow. A simple piece of flesh. The eyes, nose and mouth had melted together like he was failing to maintain his form.

He was a six to seven metre bipedal species but he really couldn't be called a normal existence.

'He lost all shape.'

Indeed. Aside from his memories, it seemed like he had even forgotten what he previously looked like. Something like pus was dripping from his skin, giving off a terrible stench. Bubbles occasionally popped on his body in different places. He was

nothing more than a crumbling mess right now.

Contegonom urgently covered himself in the shadow again. His ugly appearance was once again hidden in darkness. However, I had clearly seen his shape.

"Gigantes."

I used Gigantes to verify this.

"Enemy! Win!"

Kung! Kung!

Gigantes seemed unstoppable as he moved forward. He was holding the huge club that the dwarf king made for him. Gigantes was thrilled about using the weapon. He was roughly snorting with excitement at finally being able to play.

It was a unique grade weapon with the skill 'Instant Acceleration' attached, overcoming some of the disadvantages of its size. Gigantes also wanted to see how quickly he could move.

Kwakwang!

He swung down with the club and accelerated. Gigantes had incredible strength. Normally the floor shook when he just walked, but the result was terrible after acceleration was used.

However...the impact wasn't as large as I expected. The shadow-covered Contegonom didn't budge. The shadow was lacking to be called an armour.

-I will kill all of you!

Contegonom flicked out his shadow. The shadow was used to hide his body but it had a further effect. The shadow swallowed up Gigantes.

“Cough! Blocked! Out of breath! Let go!”

The shadow covered his entire body.

It slowly entered Gigantes. After making contact with the shadow, it seemed like Gigantes was dyed in darkness.

"Come out! Don't become stained with nothingness!"

Kururung!

Tashmal struck down with the dark thunder spears but it wasn't very effective. Like Tashmal, the shadow also had the attribute of darkness, so the effects were cut in half.

Mago was busy dealing with Contegonom's main body.

And I...

"Do you come here looking for a coffin? Randolph Brigsiel."

Okullos and his creatures slowly approached me.

There were the 30 year old death knight purchased at the auction, a bugbear, a dark warrior and 100 advanced creatures. There was an advanced 4Lv horned ant king and some gigantic ants.

Of course, the one I hated was at the front.

"Okullos. This guy, what did you summon?"

"A god who was trapped in nothingness. I called out to him."

The word 'nothingness' popped out to me. Where was it located? Okullos' smile just intensified.

"By the way, how did you discover the location of my dungeon?"

"You don't need to know."

"Indeed. I don't need an explanation. You will become trapped in nothingness and then you will follow my words."

His eyes turned towards Gigantes.

Gigantes had stopped moving after becoming tinged with darkness. The black shadow flowing around Gigantes...it changed his eyes.

The eyes were still hostile but he had changed his target. He was staring at me like he wanted to charge over.

“Is he being controlled?”

“Huhuhuhu. That’s right. Nothingness is not dependent on the shadow. Randolph Brigsiel, how long before all the high class creatures you are so proud of are controlled? I highly doubt that it will take more than an hour.”

"Then I guess I should kill you before then."

"Do you think it will be that easy? You might have earned the title of hunter, but I am a predator. A showdown between a hunter and a predator! I’m trembling just imagining it. It won’t be as easy as last time."

He proudly spoke about breaking the taboo.

I didn’t answer him. This was shameful conduct for a grand duke. I needed to kill him as soon as possible before the shadow showed any more bizarre effects.

I gripped Wrath and the Emperor's Sword. The moonlight was fully charged. I had practiced Moonlight Falling for almost a month. One month was nothing compared to Haien Moon's existence, but that was enough.

"My Dungeon Master. Give me a command."

Chrisley spoke on behalf of the creatures.

She was holding a red jewel in her hands.

Huuung.

Huuuuong!

A ringing sound was constantly emerging from the jewel. It was the item Chrisley received from the Unknown Box!

"Break the seal."

"I will follow your words."

Gulp!

Chrisley swallowed the red jewel without any hesitation.

Suuuk.

Suuuuok!

She raised the Death Wand and produced hundreds of shades. Skeleton soldiers emerged from the ground and a large crowd formed on the Death Wand.

'The King of Death. Ganak's essence.'

This was the item that emerged from the Unknown Box.

Chrisley owned the Death Wand, so the box seemed to release an item related to necromancy.

Garnak the King of Death. He was a necromancer who reached the pinnacle. Those who swallowed his essence could have his strength for a limited time.

“Chrisley. Help stop the enemy from controlling Gigantes.”

“Yes.”

“Krasla. You will lead the creatures.”

“Leave it to me.”

"I...have a neck to cut off."

The delegation of roles was over.

I turned and looked at Okullos.

Okullos had already used Naturalization and relaxation was on his face.

He had a completely different attitude from before.

Confidence. Arrogance. He was feeling those things.

"Let's end this, Okullos."

"Come. Randolph Brigsiel!"

Kururung.

The creatures clashed with each other.

I was in the vanguard as I swung my sword towards Okullos.

Moonlight Falling!

It was a sword skill that consumed moonlight to make a sword of

light. It increased the destructive power of the sword and also confused the enemy.

It was a skill that was compatible with Dark Sword.

"Become stronger! Huhahaha!"

"Noisy."

Okullos was still relaxed. By now, demons from his faction should be heading to this dungeon. Was he thinking of buying time? No...he really believed that he could win. Several branches sprouted from his right arm.

A myriad of branches popped out from the ground. They took a similar form to Okullos. It wasn't very different from a clone. So two clones were created. Their destructive power could be compared to Okullos.

"Look! The demons I preyed on have taken on my appearance! Randolph Brigsiel, you will also have the glory of joining their ranks!"

Three against one.

One was easy.

Two enemies was similar.

But three...that was a little arduous.

The two clones even used the same skills as Okullos. It was no different from an infinite revival.

The injuries inflicted by the Dark Sword didn't recover, but the naturalized Okullos could replace them with other parts. It wasn't the same for the clones.

In short, I needed to handle the clones in order to increase the chances of winning.

“Lightning God!”

Although he had clones, I also had a powerful army.

Grwaaang!

Lightning God manifested and attacked. The giant lightning dragon rushed towards Okullos.

Meanwhile, I dealt with the clones.

Chwang!

My sword struck a long stalk. It had been reinforced so the cut

wasn't very deep. However, the whole area couldn't be strengthened. The Emperor's Sword struck the side of a clone.

Jeeeong!

I had two swords but there were two clones. They both complemented each other and were pressuring me.

'If only I had the complete version of Haien Moon's sword techniques...'

It would be easy.

The practice time I had wasn't enough. More complex moves were required to kill the enemies. My job would be easier if Haien Moon's swordsmanship was completely learnt. Right now, I didn't have enough power.

'It isn't easy.'

The situation was neck and neck.

My creatures were a little bit ahead in that showdown.

However, Okullos and Contegonom were huge variables. Tashmal was covered in wounds and Mago was busy trying to hold on. At least Chrisley was properly dealing with the shadow-stained Gigantes.

If there was one more shadow controlled creature...the situation was likely to reverse.

‘Time.’

It was running out but I couldn’t finish this as fast as I wanted.

There was another problem. The demons in Okullos’ faction were fast approaching. If they joined then my odds would become close to zero.

‘It can't be helped.’

Huu!

I sighed and took a deep breath.

I didn’t want to use it but it seemed like I had no choice. It was the skill I obtained when three of the Seven Sins set was gathered.

It had absorbed the other skills but I didn’t know how to take advantage of it. The description was short and also had a ‘warning’ attached.

But this was the only way.

I opened my mouth.

"Corruption."

Chapter 128: Corruption (1)

-Are you sure you want to use Corruption (Ex Epic)?

This was the first time it had asked me again. However, my decision didn't change.

I would use it. I slowly opened my mouth.

-This is the final warning. Corruption...

"Corruption!"

Chaeeng!

Okullos' clone aimed for this gap. It became nervous at my shout.

-The demon 'Randolph Brigsiel' has used the skill Corruption (Ex Epic).

You have temporarily gone beyond the protective limits of the system. The lock has been released.

Until the effect of Corruption ends, you can't use all the features of the system.

Be careful. Demons outside the 'protection' won't be free of surveillance from heaven.

-Be careful.

Be care...

The message windows continuously rose. There were many warning messages. There was no way of knowing what going beyond the protection of the system meant.

However, I began to change as soon as Corruption was used. It felt like something was breaking through a blockage.

My body trembled. Two horns appeared on my forehead and enormous wings popped out from my back. I grew fur like an animal and my nails became longer. My fair skin was stained black. Strange tattoos were carved on my body. They looked like glowing wounds.

And...Infinity Armour was transformed. A dark magic power. It was absorbed and changed the look of the armour. The armour and helmet changed so that they didn't cover the wings and horns.

Usually a message window would appear now, but nothing rose.

‘I am out of the system.’

I also couldn’t check my status window. I realized that I was now out of the system.

I looked around slowly.

My presence alone overwhelmed everything around me. Okullos’ clone showed no more signs of attacking me. Even Contegonom and Mago were looking at me.

"I feel strange."

That’s right. It was really strange. I couldn’t explain this feeling.

The movement of the wings seemed natural. The changes didn’t feel awkward at all. It was like I had found my true self.

At the same time, I received a great enlightenment.

“...This is a true demon.”

Ahh!

It was electrifying.

Every demon had questioned it at least once. Why didn't demons have wings like angels?

The demons looked too similar to humans. Sometimes demons would have horns like Ariel Diablo, but those were rare cases of blood and magic power mixing.

So demons hated humans in particular. It was because their appearances were too similar. There were strict differences in power but not appearances. They didn't want to admit it. That's why the demons rejected everything to do with humans. They hated even looking at them.

Now...I think I knew the answer.

I was a true demon at the moment. The demons lost their horns and wings for some reason, becoming human-like in appearance. Due to Corruption, I managed to remove those constraints.

'This corruption isn't corruption.'

Unlimited magic power. It was confidence that I could dominate everything.

I was definitely not a fallen being.

"The original appearance of the demons? That is nonsense,

Randolph Briggsiel!”

Okullos gritted his teeth. His relaxation had disappeared. There was infinite hatred in the eyes that looked at me.

"Why are you so excited? I don't care if you dismiss it as nonsense."

I wasn't trying to convince him that this was 'real.'

Okullos couldn't accept it. He was staring at me with hate, but there was also envy mixed in.

He knew. Thanks to Naturalization, he instinctively knew that my current form was the origin of demons.

He felt like he had been deprived. No matter his mental state, he was still a grand duke. He hadn't lost his pride as a demon. It was natural for him to think it was unfair and to become angry.

"You...broke the taboo!"

"Okullos, you are the one who broke the taboo, not me."

"That appearance. Alternatively...you are using some type of trick. Evolution? You have crossed the line and truly accomplished evolution!"

Okullos.

He was hung up on evolution.

I knew about it. Just a moment ago, I sensed Okullos' true nature. This wasn't his real character. A need to change...shortly after, he came up with the possibility of 'evolution' and crossing the line.

I developed so rapidly that it wasn't strange he mistook it for evolution.

Soul assimilation, demon predator, maybe...little by little, he realized he had gone down the wrong path. Therefore he summoned the shadow for 'answers.' Things fell into place.

“How pathetic.”

My perception about Okullos changed.

He was just a maniac. It wasn't insanity. There was no luck and he told a mocking story at the Demon World Auction. But there was a misunderstanding. He struggled to find a 'source.'

It seemed to have transitioned into an ego trip. He started to crave evil and war.

I had felt sympathetic because I still thought of his past self. Even

though I didn't like the grand dukes, I still felt some respect towards them.

In my previous life, he hadn't left a distinct impression. He obtained the first world tree. He showed no motivation and even seemed to neglect becoming the devil.

I was the turning point in his attitude. Due to the potential I showed, Okullos took a completely different route from the one he took in my previous life. Okullos was correct to be suspicious about me.

In my previous life, I had never shown this power.

"What is with those eyes? Put them away. Or else I will take them by force. I will completely erase you from this world!"

"Your journey is over, Okullos."

It was a long journey.

Okullos was tiresome. This was his limit. His desire was getting out of hand. Before that happened, I would help him find peace.

Okullos' worries would be eased. I would settle this once and for all.

"Shut up!"

Okullos shouted and moved. He ignored Lightning God and his clones. It was indeed a desperate struggle. He was doing everything possible to kill me.

However, I had regained my true nature so he couldn't reach me.

Huoong.

I flapped my wings. I seemed to know what to do from now on.

The two horns on my forehead were a source of magic power. Different magic power attributes could be substituted.

Once the magic power swept out from the horns, it was changed to 'moonlight magic power.'

Haien Moon. Now it was possible to use 99% of the sword technique.

Chwaaak!

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword moved brilliantly. The movements weren't just to mislead the enemy. Moonlight Falling became stronger the more I used it.

"My eyes can pierce through the world! Why can't I read your movements?"

Okullos had the skill 'Eyes of the World (Epic).' It was a skill that managed to grasp and reflect back Mind's Eye.

But...this time?

Sukeong!

One clone was removed. He tried to partially strengthen the clone but it was no use. My wings touched a crumbling clone. The clone was melted by the magic power contained in my wings.

"I can't read it...!"

Okullos bit his lips.

"Okullos. It is unfortunate but you don't know everything about me."

This could sometimes cause failure. There were many cases.

Okullos also knew this, making him unhappy.

"Shut up!!"

Okullos recalled the one remaining clone. Soon, many large trees emerged from its body.

The momentum seemed like it would consume the entire floor of the dungeon, as the branches and roots moved like whips.

Kwang! Kwang! Kwakwang!

It couldn't be blocked.

I spread my wings wide.

I flew above the tens of thousands of branches. It would have been impossible in the past, but now I had wings.

I flapped my wings and floated in the air. My speed was faster than the whips and I soon reached Okullos' heart.

“Now...rest in peace.”

Puok!

I stabbed his heart with Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

Chapter 129: Corruption (2)

Bidul!

I was suddenly tired after handling Okullos.

It was hard to keep my balance. Chrisley, who was blocking Gigantes, quickly rushed towards me.

Tak!

I stopped Chrisley's hands.

Was this a side effect of Corruption?

I didn't trust anyone. I was even hostile towards Chrisley. It was an instinctive aversion. I felt like I was the only one who should exist.

"My Dungeon Master, are you okay?"

Chrisley asked in an anxious tone.

I turned my head towards Contegonom. It wasn't the end after handling Okullos. I needed to take care of that guy to be successful.

"How about the movements of the other demons?"

“...It seems like they are almost here. Okullos’ death didn’t stop them.”

The demons in Okullos’ faction.

I thought they would stop once he died. It seemed like they were performing his last command or there were other reasons.

This was dangerous. I didn’t know if I could be controlled, but a vast majority of the creatures here could be victims. They were the foundation of my strength. I had worked hard to build them up in the past three years.

No, I would rather kill them than have them controlled. Anyway, I alone was sufficient. Yes, alone...

‘Damn!’

I shook my head. My mental state wasn’t normal. At this rate, it was likely that my allies would be slaughtered by my own hands. It was becoming harder to resist.

“Get out.”

“Huh?”

“I will deal with Contegonom. Immediately leave the dungeon.”

"I can't do that."

"You will just become obstacles. The creatures will be confused from Okullos' death so now is the perfect time."

"My Dungeon Master!"

"Chrisley. Do you want me to risk myself saving you? You will just be in the way!"

Huoong!

I spread my wings.

Chrisley looked up at me.

She formed tight fists as she tried to be patient. Chrisley then breathed deeply, relaxed her hands and bowed.

"...I will protect this place until My Dungeon Master comes out."

"Chrisley...!"

"If Dungeon Master dies then don't you know that I will die as well? Please don't say such words."

A large crow flew away with Krasla and the others.

I had ordered them to escape. Krasla had hesitated but decided to retreat after seeing Chrisley's decisive attitude.

Fortunately, I was able to maintain my spirit until then.

However, I felt my mental state take a nosedive after they left.

“Grrrrr!”

My vision darkened. It felt like all my emotions had been worn away until there was only one remaining. A murderous intent!

I was like a wild beast looking for food. Saliva dripped from my mouth. My eyes turned red. I started to rip into the creatures nearest to me.

Kwaduk!

Kwajijik!

They were torn apart like pieces of paper. I grabbed both shoulders and ripped a creature apart. My body was splattered with blood. These actions were repeated so many times that my black skin was completely obscured by the red blood.

I dug out their eyes and bit their necks. In order to quench my thirst, fangs broke the skin and started to suck out blood.

“Grrrrr!”

Pandemonium!

This place was like hell. I was recreating a nightmare here.

"You...what are you?"

Contegonom.

The shadow of nothingness. In the past, he was the yeti king, and now he was just ugly. It was a nightmare but more importantly, I realized how strong he was.

My instincts were telling me to relieve my thirst with a stronger opponent.

He didn't have a hair out of place even when dealing with Mago. Rather, he was driving Mago to the edge of a cliff. If I left it alone then she would be defeated.

Contegonom was confident. They were just mortals after all. Once dead, their bodies would just become his subordinates. On the other hand, he was immortal and not bound by death. This was a screenplay he organized in the first place. Considering that...it

was understandable that he was confident.

Now...it was the first time there was surprise on Contegonom's face.

“You are directly opposing nothingness. You don't feel like a god, yet you are trampling on everything! I will have your flesh.”

In any case, this was the first time.

He had thought of my body as just a facade. His prejudice had been broken.

He felt astonished and greedy at the same time.

He stared at me. It was like discovering an artist with great artworks.

"I will take you. Once nothingness obtains that flesh, I will become a true god!"

Contegonom burst out with excitement. The creatures retreated as they felt his presence. A huge circle was created with Contegonom and I in the centre.

I opened my wings.

My body was my own and I had no intention of handing it over to anyone else. That was a vain desire. Okullos had also died with his dream unfulfilled.

Indeed. Both of them were a little similar. Those similar tendencies were probably why the shadow was summoned in the first place.

‘Delicious.’

Of course, I wasn’t thirsty for Contegonom. I looked at Contegonom and licked my lips. It wasn’t thirst but a desire to eat him up.

I was a hunter...he was the prey. A seasoned hunter would win over their prey.

"Give me your body!"

The shadow fluctuated. It spread out and pressured me from the front. The attribute of my magic power was once again altered.

Hwaaak!

Light shot out from the horns.

The replacement attribute was surprisingly ‘light.’ It was a little different but had properties similar to holy power.

The light revealed the shadow. The shadow rushing towards me flinched back from the light.

"Aren't you a demon? Why can you use that?"

Contegonom was once again shocked.

Chiiiik!

However, there was still the aftermath. It burned through my flesh. Rapid magic power conversion. The magic power was opposite to my attribute so it burned my body from the inside.

"Grrrrr!"

However, I didn't stop. Light kept pouring out. Contegonom urgently recalled the shadow.

"You...!"

Kuaaaah!

The recalled shadow gradually joined together to form one big sword. His ugly flesh was revealed but he was started to use his real capabilities.

The light attribute no longer worked on the shadow. I changed the magic power once again. This time, it was 'chaos.' The patented attribute of Ariel Diablo. Her Abyss Sword used the power of chaos. It filled my entire body.

Chiiiiik!

The smell of burning became even more intense. If this situation continued then I would destroy myself, but I didn't mind at all.

Right now, the important thing to me was eating. And I was definitely going to eat.

“Grrrrr!”

I rushed towards his neck. Contegonom welcomed me with the shadow sword...a wave of magic power swept out from the intense clash.

Kwaang!

Neither of us backed down. Explosive power built up from the clash of nails and sword.

"I am greedier!"

Contegonom gave an ugly laugh. His terrible appearance was hidden by the shadow, but he wanted a new body. He was pleased

at the thought of winning and obtaining new flesh.

He just needed to drag out the time. It seemed like I wouldn't be able to maintain this state for much longer. It felt like my health was dropping. My rationality was already completely gone, so Contegonom became more relaxed.

"Grwaang!"

Kwang! Kwang!

His hands randomly moved during the confrontation. Every time that happened, blasts of chaos magic power and shadows would explode. Due to that, hundreds of the surrounding creatures died.

The creatures in the circle watching the confrontation started to escape. It was even difficult for the advanced creatures to endure.

The confrontation between the two even burned away at the dungeon. The magic power couldn't sustain the floor any longer and it started to collapse.

Kwaang!

"My Dungeon Master...!"

Chrisley came out from a gap in some rocks but it was too late. The space was completely divided in two.

“Give up and hand me your body!”

A long time had passed since the start of the confrontation with Contegonom. It was almost the end.

My nails were broken but I fought even more ferociously with my teeth. Contegonom wasn't safe either. His neck had been half torn off and pus was leaking. He needed to quickly change bodies or it would become dangerous.

It was at that moment.

“Yihihi. The pretty and cute Yihi is back, Master!”

Bbeong!

Yihi appeared with a loud sound.

She wore a gold crown and carried a shield and shining sword that was like a toothpick.

Yihi shook her head and looked around.

“Huh? Who are you?”

Yihi didn't notice that my appearance had changed as she looked

at both of us.

"Who are you again? Where is Yihi's Master? Didn't Master come to this place? Strange."

Yihi tapped a finger against her lips as she blinked.

She soon seemed to realize something as she pointed towards Contegonom.

"I feel that you are rather strange. It makes sense that your face is ugly. Yihi is annoyed. As a fairy knight, Yihi can recognize a bad guy. So you are a bad person!"

Yihi raised her shield. Then a bright straight line stretched out from the jewels in the shield.

Contegonom was dumbfounded. It was neck and neck. No, he was slowly grabbing the upper hand. My movements had been getting dull. He was certain of his 'victory' after a few more hits.

In the meantime, a fairy he had never seen before had intruded. He wanted to ignore her but...light started pouring out from the jeweled shield.

And that feeling was correct.

"Cough!"

It wasn't a great blow. But it was enough to slow him down for a little bit.

A small gap. The opponent flew through the gap and used his teeth.

Kwajik!

Kwajijik!

"Kuaaaaak!"

The subsequent scene was terrible. Contegonom's body was devastated by teeth. The winner didn't even enjoy the feeling and just settled down to feast.

Eat. Eat and eat again. That was his only action.

Shake!

Yihi lost her spirit at the odd sight. She had goose bumps all over her body.

She turned away from Contegonom's body being devoured by a demon with grey wings. His eyes gazed at Yihi after he finished.

"Y-Yihi isn't tasty..."

Yihi grasped her sword and shield but there was an elusive feeling.

She felt like she had seen the face before, despite it looking quite different. She checked the blessing but there was no signs of a connection to Master.

What to do?

Meanwhile, the gray wings flapped as he headed towards Yihi.

Yihi closed her eyes tightly and cried out.

"Eeit!"

Wiiing!

The crown shone.

This was the first time Yihi was using it, but the ability of the crown was very unusual.

She had a clear idea about the effect.

Yihi was reminded of the moment she met the Pink Queen.

The Mushroom Kingdom. The Cookie Kingdom.

The gold crown and jeweled shield were treasures of the two kingdom.

She wore the treasures and went to meet the queen.

She fought and lost. The Pink Queen laughed while Yihi was crying with vexation.

"Oh, how fun!"

As it turned out, the Pink Queen was a fairy knight. She had been waiting 20,000 years for a successor to appear. Due to her boredom, she plotted this drama.

She also apologized to the mushrooms and cookies. Yihi wept with pouting lips. The really bad fairy knight opened her mouth and said.

"That will be enough. You are called Yihi? You have a very nice mentality. I will pass the succession rights to you. Although it has already happened."

The crown, shield and sword. Those three items were tokens of a fairy knight.

"The sword can pierce through evil, the shield can reveal it and the crown...it returns evil to its original place. In particular, the crown is dangerous and should only be used when needed. Use these three powers well."

"Then Yihi can go back?"

"Yes! Where do you want to go? Think of the place where you want to go. I will take you there."

"I want to go to Master's side!"

"Huh? You are already serving someone? Awesome, awesome. I understand. Think about him closely. His features are required for something like this."

"Master has two, no three big weapons and is unbelievably handsome. I was bad a little while ago, yihihi. He still took care of Yihi."

"Uh...well, I understand. Now, are you ready to go to your master?"

"Yes. Goodbye, Fairy Knight-nim!"

Kubeok!

The power of the crown returned evil to its original place.

Yihi calculated that it wouldn't work on Master. Master was sometimes nasty but Yihi never considered him as evil.

And the power of the crown sent the evil being away.

“Ah! He really wasn't Master.”

Yihi neatly cleared the threat of the existence with grey wings. Only the remnants of the shadow remained.

"By the way, where is this place? Fairy Knight-nim sent Yihi to a strange place."

She looked around. There was a large pile of stacked rocks.

It was at that moment.

Chrisley emerged from a small gap in the rocks.

“My Dungeon Master...!”

Her fingernails were all broken and she had dried blood on her. It was from digging her way out of the rocks.

“Chrisley?”

“Fairy-nim?”

"Why are you here?"

Chrisley looked around anxiously instead of replying.

“Dungeon Master...did you see him? He was just here.”

Yihi shook her head.

“No. Master isn’t here. There were only two ugly things.”

“T-that is impossible. Although his appearance had changed, he has grey wings.”

Yihi’s eyes widened at Chrisley’s words.

“...Eh?”

"What's wrong?"

"Yihi did something bad.”

"Then where...?"

The crown returned evil to its original place. The place where

Master was born and grew up in.

“...The Demon World?”

“Huh?”

“I-it is serious! Yihi did something wrong again!”

Yihi lamented with an upset face.

Chapter 130: The Underground World (1)

My body was heavy. My heart was so hot it felt like it was going to burst. Sweat flowed down my body and I could barely maintain consciousness.

“Alive.”

“Oh...he is still alive? Is his heart really beating?”

“Listen. Can’t you hear the sound?”

Something was moving around me. Cool skin made contact with me.

“Really! He is really alive! He is still living! Crazy!”

“What do we do? Shouldn’t we notify the village?”

“No. Don’t you know Elder-nim’s personality? He has a safety first policy. Only we should know for now.”

“But his condition might get worse. He is severely burning up.”

“Wait a minute. What good will that do? Remember what happened last time...Torium, do you remember?”

"It will be okay if a cloth with cold water is put on his forehead."

"Ah, that's right. Indeed. It was so long ago that I had forgotten. Wait a moment. I will go and get it."

"Jeff, there is no time. He might be alive but he is weak."

"I know!"

Torium and Jeff.

Among them, the one called Jeff departed.

'It is frustrating.'

However, I didn't have time to worry about such things. My chest felt tight. It felt like something was strongly pressing down on it. Perhaps...the origin of this pain was my heart. My heart was beating like crazy. It felt so horrible that I wanted it to stop.

"Ha, a living person. He showed up in the Underground World of the Dead..."

Kung! Kung! Kung!

The sound of my heart beating echoed loudly in my ears.

How much time had passed?

My mind drifted to far away places.

I was trying to move my body when sounds were heard.

“Torium. Should we take turns? We need to create a story.”

"We can come up with a story here as well. It's not like the lord will listen to my story anyway. He will probably only listen to pass the time."

“Perhaps. Torium, your stories are very interesting! I am envious that you have such a talent. Doesn't the lord in the castle find you interesting?”

"That would be nice but...he doesn't like looking at ugly things. He won't want to listen. In addition, a war is happening in the central area.”

"Phew, aren't you also tired of it? This war should be finished. How many have already died?”

"The commander won't let this end easily. I heard rumours that he suddenly showed up with a sword after disappearing for a while. Maybe he might be able to conquer Central this time.

"No. There is an eternal curse on that area. The legitimacy

doesn't matter. Everything will remain the same. They are only concerned about their self-interests...those with a lowly status like us are always suffering.”

"But even so...the momentum is with the commander. There might end up being a conscription in our village.”

"Eh~. Aren't we to the very south of Central?”

"Actually, there are rumours that the south will soon become a battlefield.”

“Why?”

“They are rallying forces. They think the south is easy prey and are intending to grab it. There is already talk that an active army is heading here.”

"I'm already tired of war and it is coming to the south...there is no safe place.”

"Will the matchless warrior move?”

"Shut up. We can't talk about this here. By the way, don't you think he has been sleeping for a while?”

"The fever is gone. He is resilient and has a strangely fast recovery. In this state, he will soon...eh?”

“Finger! His fingers are moving! I saw it!”

"Jeff, don't make a fuss. He is still moving."

"Is he trying to write something on the ground?"

"That...are they letters?"

“Torium, do you know what he is doing?”

"Ahh, letters. It is really bad handwriting. Anyway..."

“Anyway?”

"He is asking where this place is."

"This place is the Underground World. The world of the dead!"

“We are the undead. I am Torium. The noisy kid sitting next to me is Jeff.”

“That’s right, that’s right.”

"Who are you?"

"Write it!"

"Still got a bit of a look. Let's see, Randolph Briggsiel.'

"Randolph Briggsiel! Ask him. How did he manage to come here alive?"

"Did you hear? Please answer. We have been very curious about this."

"...Not moving?"

"Um, I guess he is unconscious again."

"How weak."

"His wounds were very large. It is great that he is already healed enough to move. Jeff, bring me some 'Jellim' from my room."

"Isn't that precious?"

"Hurry."

"Sheesh, don't yell at me. Wait a moment."

My body was gradually stabilizing. Even the wildly beating heart gradually slowed down.

My depleted magic power recovered and my colour returned.

Soon, I was able to open my eyes.

‘They really are the undead.’

I was inside a cave.

Four eyes were watching me.

They were missing their hair, had violet skin and fungus all over their bodies. The undead.

I remembered asking a few questions with my fingers. I remembered that this was the Underground World and the presence of the undead.

‘The problem is...I’m not sure where the Underground World is.’

The circulation of magic power was different. It was unfamiliar, but there was also familiar magic power hovering around me. At first, I felt a little bit panicked.

This wasn’t Earth, the Demon World or even the Spirit World. It was a place I wasn’t familiar with.

‘My physical condition is in the worst state.’

I frowned after checking the state of my body.

It couldn't be worst than this. In this state, I wouldn't even be able to handle a lower grade creature. My muscles were almost dead and my magic power was still mostly depleted. I couldn't even afford to call Lightning God.

"What are you looking at?"

I used the wall as support to stand up and spoke.

"He is speaking!"

"It really is amazing."

Was Jeff his name?

He seemed to be the one making a fuss.

Anyway...they had saved me but I was still skeptical. I couldn't trust anyone in this post-battle situation. I had occasionally heard their voices while drifting in and out of consciousness.

"Where did you come from?"

“You are Torium?”

"Correct."

“Torium. I’d like to ask something first. Is this place really the Underground World?”

"Yes."

"It isn’t the Demon World or Middle World?”

"Technically speaking, it is a place that exists in the middle."

"I can’t believe it."

I walked out while still leaning on the wall. Torium came to my other side in order to help.

Not long afterwards, I exited from the cave. I couldn’t help snorting. The cave was at the bottom of a cliff and I was able to see a pretty wide area.

‘It is worse than the Demon World.’

A place full of death.

No, it was a place for the dead!

Everything was different. It was a similar feeling to when I arrived on Earth from the Demon World or when I first entered the Spirit World.

‘What happened in the confrontation with Contegonom?’

I frowned.

I remembered up to my confrontation with Contegonom.

But afterwards, there was just a gap in my memory.

‘I can’t communicate with Yihi or check the status window.’

It seemed like the system was still broken. I clicked my tongue.

"I can’t exist here."

"Of course. This is a world that only contains the dead."

Torium said from next to me.

“Do you know how I can get back?”

"I don’t know. In fact, it is still unbelievable. From what I

understand, this is the first time something like this has happened in the Underground World.”

“It is possible that others might know.”

“Maybe...but shouldn’t you become more stable first? You still don’t look good.”

It made a lot of sense.

It was important to understand the situation, but first my body needed to heal. I wouldn’t be able to move around comfortably in this state.

‘Even one orc will be troublesome right now.’

I was in the worst state. The reason why my body was like this?

The skill Corruption gave me wings and horns. My status...I made a fist. Bare bones and blue veins were visible.

“Do you want anything to eat and drink?”

Torium was an undead so he didn’t worry about my emotional state.

“Very presumptuous.”

"I don't intend to get things for free. I will answer some of your questions."

It seemed like Torium and Jeff had a lot of questions for me. Then I would use it to accomplish what I wanted.

"It might be hard for you to eat."

"It doesn't matter."

I shook my head.

I could eat anything.

'Jellim' was a tree and the branches could be used to make a porridge. It was the only food they had but...it was still better than nothing.

"I'm a storyteller. Every week, I would make up a story to tell the lord and I would receive a branch of Jellim in return. Jellim is very important in the Underground World. It is good for increasing the 'shelf life' of a rotting body."

Torium spoke in a condescending tone.

Indeed, I had never heard the name Jellim.

"It is like a preservative."

"Preservative?"

"There is such a thing?"

"Hmm, it seems to be something in the other world. By the by, who are you? I know that your name is Randolph Briggsiel but how did you come to the Underground World?"

I already received food and water.

I needed to cooperate to continue obtaining them in the future. I also needed to find out about this place.

"I was operating a dungeon."

"Dungeon? A dungeon filled with creatures?"

"That's correct."

"I heard that warlocks or lich normally operate a dungeon..."

"That's it for today."

“Wait! It can’t end here!”

"I will tell you more tomorrow."

I sat down and shut my eyes.

First of all, it was necessary to examine the insides of my body. And I got an idea about how to recover my magic power.

“Hu! I understand. I will come back tomorrow.”

"Come with something to eat and drink."

"The Jellim is precious!"

"It doesn't matter to me."

“.....”

Torium abruptly left! He turned and exited the cave.

He was quickly followed by Jeff.

"Is this really okay?"

"Jeff, I am a storyteller. I can't stand wondering."

"Aren't you scared?"

"Those eyes...I'm not an opponent for him. He seems to have killed a lot."

"What?"

"Shit! Where did he fall from? What is a preservative? I really want to know!"

"I am also curious. You will be able to make a better story."

"So please lend me some Jellim. I don't have enough."

"Are you crazy?"

"It will be worth it. A person has shown up in this world. I think that it is very significant."

"Anyway Torium, I've known you for a long time but I still don't know you."

Jeff sighed.

Chapter 131: The Underground World (2)

I pulled the magic bag tied at my waist.

Fortunately, the bag was still safe. I was recognized as its owner so no one else could take anything out.

'Wrath and the Emperor's Sword are inside.'

It was lucky that the items I needed were all contained in the bag. I checked all the items and stood up.

I started stretching my arms. It only lasted for 30 seconds. My arms started trembling.

It was difficult for me to even walk. My stamina was a mess.

'I will have to start from the basics again.'

It was like when I first stepped foot on the battlefield of the Demon World.

I tried everything I could to survive. I desperately created and mastered techniques. It seemed like I had to repeat that once again.

'First I will start with my body.'

It was urgent that I rebuild my muscles.

I had already experienced this once. In addition, my body had a remarkable level of recovery that would allow it to reach its original state. It was something I personally experienced daily. Despite having trouble walking on the first day, my muscles had recovered a lot by the second day.

‘It isn’t a simple preservative.’

In particular, the effects of the ‘Jellim’ branches were excellent. It rejuvenated my body and made it more resilient. My weakened magic power was also returning. It was only a matter of time before I could use a skill.

‘Wrath. The Emperor's sword.’

Were they originally so heavy? I could feel the weight and had to hold one sword with both hands.

Huuk!

It was like I had never held a sword before. I laughed as I recalled the first time I used a sword.

‘This is the feeling.’

It happened when I was exactly 12 years old. I was forcibly mobilized for the war and received sword training. Approximately 30 demons of a similar age were gathered but only two could survive to become proper soldiers.

I tenaciously survived. I used every last bit of my strength to survive using the sword.

At that time, I remembered looking into the instructor's eyes. I had confidence that I wouldn't lose to soldiers.

‘Those eyes are filled with hate.’

After the victory in battle that day!

I challenged the drunk instructor to a duel and killed him. Otherwise, I instinctively knew that I would be killed. I was committed to my survival. War was occurring everywhere in the Demon World. Only those with true power could have freedom.

‘That was the period when I grew the fastest.’

It also happened with a demon. The evil Briggsiel was a demon whose last name I took after killing him. Despite being sloppy, he was still one of the 72 demons.

Following that, I put effort into becoming even stronger. My development slowed after meeting the grand dukes. But after receiving strength from Death Bringer's offer...was it really

‘power’ due to my efforts?

Of course, I couldn’t deny all my efforts when touring the battlefields in the Demon World. I was a little bit fiercer but I was still responsible for the constraints on myself.

‘I tried after going back. At the very least, I did better than my previous life. However, I still couldn’t erase the feeling of being insufficient.’

I became complacent due to the memories of my previous life. This had become clear now that I thought about it.

I needed to rely on true abilities rather than stats.

The battle against Grand Duke Okullos had been a result of that pride. If I had made a little more effort on my own then the story might be different.

It was one of numerous possibilities but...in order to do that, I needed to cross a wall.

‘I need to recreate my body, so I might as well raise my pure strength.’

I wanted to rise on my own, without relying on anyone else.

I gripped Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword again.

‘Haien Moon.’

It was impossible to perfectly imitate even when using Corruption. It was 99% similar, but a critical 1% was still missing.

I would make the sword technique entirely my own.

I glanced up at the sky.

“The moon is floating here as well.”

Late in the evening.

I wielded my swords under the moonlight.

My movements didn’t stop until I felt exhausted and was about to collapse.

This continued for six days.

I increasingly adapted to the weight of the swords.

‘This is the impact of Corruption or the influence of something else.’

I wielded my swords on top of a cliff and thought for a moment.

I was curious about the reason why I came to the Underground World.

It clearly affected my body. The magic power flowing around due to the Heart of the Hell Monarch still wasn't consistent. However, the muscles in my body had clearly degraded after I woke up. It must be due to using Corruption or dealing with Contegonom.

I couldn't use Corruption again. It was too dangerous. I pushed those questions aside and focused on the recovery of my body.

I turned my head and glanced at someone.

‘Jeff.’

The undead Jeff.

A short distance away, his sleek body was practicing with a sword.

"Assa! Urassha!"

He shouted out loud. He was learning quite well.

Jeff had been repeating these actions since two days ago.

After seeing me practice the sword and the talk of 'war,' he would always come here. He cried out and would sometimes look over at me. He was asking 'how are my skills?'

Certainly, his ability to handle a sword wasn't bad. It was clear in practice, but there was no knowing how he would fare in battle.

"Spar with me once."

I walked over with my sword.

My moderate stamina meant I could use the swords.

There was one thing left. I needed to gradually get my body accustomed to fighting again.

The corners of Jeff's mouth lifted.

"Is it okay? You have recovered quite a bit, but a sword fight..."

He had been watching me for a few days.

Haien Moon's sword technique was complicated. From a third party point of view, it was a hard sword dance. Moreover, I was going slowly through it step by step so misunderstandings couldn't arise. Jeff had noticed the deepness behind my sword technique.

“You can’t do it?”

“What? Me? Hah, no. I have killed hundreds on the battlefield. Jeff who killed 100 warriors! That’s me!”

He hit his chest.

There was confidence in his skills. And he also felt pride.

I said calmly.

"Then let’s make a bet. The winner will get whatever they want from the loser. How about it?”

"The winner gets anything they desire?”

“That’s right.”

Jeff looked at my swords.

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

They weren’t plain looking weapons. The magic power from them felt incredible. Anyone who inspected them would feel greedy.

The swords looked great even when they were still. He started drooling once he saw them in action. There was a feeling of tension because the swords could kill. However, slowing down the movements was effective in showing the swords off.

Now he was given a chance to obtain them.

Jeff licked his lips.

"Those swords. Give me both of them. Randolph, do you still want to face me?"

"Say that after you win."

"You should listen to me. Huhu."

At the same time, Jeff widened the distance.

He was holding a curved sword like a scimitar. He seemed completely confident.

'In my current state, I will be lightly pushed.'

I objectively analyzed. My body had adapted but it was still slightly lacking. But my growth was lacking a driving force.

Yes...winning a dull fight wasn't fun.

“Come.”

“Haha! Won’t you regret this?”

I shrugged and Jeff clicked his tongue.

Victory. The one who struck first in a fight was more likely to win.

I didn’t do that.

I was trying to save as much stamina as possible.

Fortunately, Jeff entered in range first.

"Huraah!"

Jeff's swordsmanship was excellent. He seemed familiar with fighting.

It wasn’t a lie that he had killed 100 people.

But...that was it. It was regrettable, but he was lacking in sophistication. He didn’t know how to distribute his power properly against the opponent.

I slowly wore Jeff down before ending with my sword at his neck.

'It was hard.'

It only took 10 minutes but I was exhausted.

In addition, there were wounds all over my body. It was because I only defended the important areas.

"No way! I was sure I would win..."

Jeff was astonished.

He consistently had the advantage when attacking. It only appeared like that on the surface.

I put down the sword and said briefly.

"Jeff, you will fight me every day for the next 30 days."

Jeff was a suitable opponent to check my physical condition.

Over time, the fights became more heated. My physical condition improved but Jeff became more desperate when fighting.

"You monster-like fellow!"

Taeeng!

On the 20th day, Jeff was lying on the ground with his sword in his hand.

20 days and 20 losses!

Now he couldn't even last one minute against me.

"Just kill me! Stop teasing me!"

"I can't do that."

"Ugh...strong. I will bite my tongue and kill myself."

Jeff sat down and sighed.

Jjak jjak jjak!

At that moment, Torium showed up.

"You have really great skills. It seems like they are improving every day."

"What are you doing here today?"

"Don't worry. Today is the last time I will come."

Torium's face had darkened.

At the same time, Jeff's head sunk down even more.

"Did something happen?"

"Commander Makdalli of the central area has decided to advance to the south. Jeff and I...we need to be prepared."

"Prepared?"

"Don't we have to protect our home? We have lived in the south for 50 years. We can't give it up now."

Torium's eyes shone with determination.

There was a strong will to protect.

"Have you found a way for me to return?"

Jeff and Torium had been searching for a way to return me, but now a war had started. Torium's expression changed at my question.

"I have looked for every possible method. The one thing that I found..."

"I want to hear it."

"In fact, I didn't want to say it. The truth about this world. I was too ashamed to say it but now I can't do anything else."

I folded my arms. It was a sit back and watch attitude.

Torium opened his mouth.

"This world is fake. A fake world made by the Hell Monarch."

"...Hell Monarch?"

I involuntarily said.

Hell Monarch. A familiar name!

Torium continued speaking with a solemn attitude.

"He is a very scary person also known as the Shadow Emperor. He is already dead but we were tricked into coming to this place. In fact, Jeff and I have never seen him...at any rate, the commanders are meant to protect his treasures. Their role is to protect them

until he returns to this world one day. However, they have become distorted over time.”

Torium sighed.

“They started competing against each other for the ‘legitimate rights’ to the treasure trove. But, all the commanders agree that the treasure trove of the Hell Monarch should be opened. This is the only way to leave this place. It is self-explanatory that opening the treasure trove will cause a change in this world.”

Torium shook his head before continuing.

"All the commanders agree, but they are killing each other for the sole right to open it. Some commanders have caused wars over it. It was the start of a long, long war that hasn't ended..."

“The Cruel Commander Maxium.”

I interrupted Torium.

Torium's eyes widened.

"How do you know that name?"

"Is he in this world?"

"Y-yes...! He was a neutral commander but now he has declared war!"

Ahh. The fog slowly lifted.

This was related to my heart. And the Cruel Commander Maxium was someone I bought from the Achievements Store.

Now I knew what I had to do.

I thought I had fallen into an unknown world, but there was a reason for it.

Torium asked with a pale face.

"I never said the name so how do you know that? That name is synonymous with terror for us. He doesn't often participate in the war, so few have seen his true abilities. However, his name is like a taboo among us. Even Jeff would never say his name..."

His eyes looked at me carefully.

I raised the Emperor's Sword.

This was Maxium's sword. He gave it to me. Its true identity was a weapon used by the Hell Monarch.

“Torium. This war, I will also be participating.”

I said it quietly.

However, there was a heavy weight to my words. If this was the only way to return...

I would have to make this world that stopped moving my own.

Chapter 132: Blowing Wind (1)

Torium was busy procuring materials to change my appearance.

"From now on, you require a little disguise. If you are noticed then things will become complicated..."

All the prepared materials were like a make-up kit.

Torium sat down with a branch and said.

"Isn't this also a talent?"

"I thought you only told stories. You can dress up clowns on the side."

He had his own versatility. Jeff only knew how to use a sword, so the difference between them was like comparing heaven and earth.

'A disguise.'

It wasn't bad.

I still hadn't regained my original power so there was no need to complicate things. It was difficult to distinguish between friend and foe.

I was outside the system and there was no guarantee that our relationship would be the same if I met Maxium again. Based on Torium and Jeff's reaction, just knowing Maxium was a risk. I couldn't even call out his name.

'I need some time to gauge the situation.'

I didn't know that much about this world.

It was a fake world made by the Hell Monarch. That was all I knew.

It was impossible to deduce from just listening to a few of Torium's stories. The smartest choice was to confirm things with my own eyes and develop a plan.

"Can you hide the sound of my heartbeat?"

The disguise couldn't hide sound. It would be strange if sounds only a living person would make came from me.

Then Torium shook his head.

"Don't worry. I can solve this problem."

"You seem confident."

Torium pulled out a small bottle from the pocket of his pants. The bottle was filled with red blood.

“This is the blood of a thunderbird. Applying the blood will conceal the sound.”

"It is like a soundproof wall."

"Soundproof wall...?"

"There is such a thing."

I knew about it. It was something that humans commonly used.

"Hmm hmm. Tell me later what a soundproof wall is. It is something I can't overlook as a storyteller. At any rate, sprinkling some of this blood will hide sound coming from your body."

"What about breathing?"

“That isn't a problem. We sometimes breathe. It is a habit from when we were still alive.”

Torium stared at my face before opening up his disguise tools.

"Then let's get started."

He held a brush and started painting my body.

'It is separate from swordsmanship.'

It felt like I was watching a sophisticated sword technique.

The work took quite a long time.

It was approximately an hour.

It was over when Torium reached my forehead.

“It is done. It will be hard to tell unless someone has really keen eyes. However, it will be a hassle to maintain and you need to refresh it once a week...”

I peeked in the mirror.

I stayed still and tracked my image in the mirror.

I looked like a violet undead and gave off a strong impression.

“Is this the end?”

"Jeff still has something left to do. He should be coming around now.”

He cleaned his tools and waited for someone.

Jeff.

He came running up with something in his hand.

"Darn mercenary scum! It isn't a big deal if I borrow it, but they wanted five Jellim branches? Crooks!"

Jeff spat out with disgust as he got closer. The frown on his face showed that he wasn't in a good mood.

"What is it?"

I asked as Jeff stuck out the cloth in his hand.

"Here ya go. This is a precious seal so don't lose it."

"The Mercenary Seal."

Torium's words were an insufficient explanation.

I still accepted the token and studied it.

It seemed to be carved out of stone. A pattern of nails was

embossed in the centre.

The reason why they gave this to me was simple.

"That is the sign of a mercenary."

"This world...it has been stopped for a long time. The lord knows the faces and names of everyone in the village. The only outsiders in the Underground World are mercenaries."

"I like it."

I grasped the token. It was a job that wasn't bound to a place so I was pretty interested. I had a similar role in the Demon World.

Why should I refuse?

Torium sighed with relief and said.

"...Attach the seal to your left chest."

The back of the seal seemed to have some type of sticky paste on it. I glanced at Torium after placing it on my left chest.

"It is quite enthusiastic."

"What is?"

"Your attitudes toward me."

Jeff and Torium. They showed no hostility towards me from the beginning. I was suspicious when I showed Wrath and the Emperor's Sword, but they didn't reveal their greed.

I had given them nothing in the last 20 days. All I did was talk and spar. Even so, they were coming up with ways to defend me. It was hard to think that it was just a simple favour.

"That..."

Gulp!

Torium swallowed his saliva before managing to speak.

"I just think that I will be able to tell the best story."

"This is your curiosity as a storyteller?"

"I want to see the real thing, not a fake. My stories have all been mere fiction. How can I miss looking at a narrative about this fake world with my own eyes?"

"So it is your treasure."

"There is no other way. And...I have already been on a long journey."

He looked exhausted.

He had been sensitive of time since this world was first created by the Hell Monarch.

He could only guess how long had passed.

"Aren't you afraid of dying on this trip?"

It was a simple question. If he helped me and died, it would be because of his curiosity.

Torium just laughed.

"I am already dead. Apart from my curiosity, I also want to rest. Including me, all the undead...we are just walking corpses...even so, we can't get any rest until we feel the 'wind.' In this world, those who have their desires fulfilled will feel the wind."

The wind...their dreams, hopes or something like that.

Torium had to keep walking.

One day, I had suddenly fallen here. He was filled with hope after

seeing someone alive.

I felt the heat from his dead eyes.

Therefore, I slowly opened my mouth.

"Then I will hope for your death while traveling."

"Haven't I already died? Well...I will keep wondering about strange things."

After hearing the story, I put away Wrath and the Emperor's Sword and turned.

"Let's go."

"Do you know where to go?"

"Guide me."

"....."

The broad wilderness.

Only earth and dust was visible.

A large village was built on it. Approximately 200 stone houses were gathered.

“It is quiet.”

I said while looking at the quiet scenery.

The village was almost deserted. Nobody was wandering the streets.

"By now, they should all be gathered at the lord's castle."

“Preparing for war?”

"Correct. There are no children so what reason is there to remain in the village?"

I nodded.

Like Torium said, they were all undead. They had been in this state for a long time and couldn't have any children. The differences in roles between men and women had disappeared.

Then Torium said carefully.

"I was wondering, can you change your tone?"

"Why are you asking?"

"Lord-nim and the generals won't appreciate it from a normal undead."

"I won't change my tone for anyone."

I kept this tone even in front of Death Bringer. Nobody could force me to change it.

My resolve was firm. Torium also discovered that.

"The...stay as quiet as possible. Jeff and I will speak."

Jeff nodded from next to him.

The lord here seemed quite demanding.

The lord's castle. It wasn't comparable to my dungeon but it was still quite large. The guards opened the gate after checking Jeff and Torium's faces.

Shortly after entering the castle, murmuring sounds could be heard.

"This, dammit! Did you forget the nickname of Commander Makdalli? Obstinate Makdalli! He is just obstinate! A vicious

bastard who will do everything to get what he wants! He is a commander who commands 100,000 troops!”

“Then should we run away? Haven’t we spent 50 years on this land? Dammit!”

“It is highly likely that they are coming to invade our land. The dullahan Somullem. He is different from normal zombies!”

“H-hasn’t Lord-nim been promoted to a ghoul? There are also a large number of skeleton soldiers...”

In the heart of the castle.

Thousands of undead were gathered in a wide area.

The lord was sitting in a huge chair and watching over the meeting.

The lord was a ghoul. He had gone one step further as a zombie. Two skeleton soldiers were situated next to him.

Torium explained.

“This is how our meetings normally work. 20 of the most influential people in the village will put something together and report it to the lord. Usually it takes half a day...”

“Jeff! You bastard, why did you come so late?”

The heated discussion at the table was broken up as we approached.

The one to speak was a thick zombie. Jeff scratched his head.

"Wait. First of all, I want to introduce someone..."

Another zombie saw the seal on my left chest and said.

“Introduce? Ah, the one next to you? It is definitely the first time I’ve seen him. A mercenary?”

"He has considerable skills. You will have a big shock once you see it."

"A mercenary...I don't have much faith. Isn't it likely that he will run away when the war heats up? He will probably enjoy this village until then."

"Just look at him. I brought a real mercenary!"

“Jeff, do you guarantee that?”

“Yes. I guarantee it. The Matchless Warrior Jeff guarantees it!”

"I was once duped by Jeff's assurances."

"This time it is true!"

He might seem frivolous but Jeff was recognized by the village.

"Aish. Just watch from the sidelines. Understood? Don't act needlessly overbearing...just stay in the back."

Jeff pulled my hand and moved.

A large map was laid on top of the table that had the positions of the enemy marked.

Jjak!

Jeff led me over to another young man who was talking.

"The opponent is the dullahan Somullem. He has approximately 1,000 troops. The general configuration is 900 zombies, 90 skeleton soldiers and 10 skeleton priests! The captain of the enemies is the dullahan Somullem! They will arrive in approximately three days. We have 500 troops and most of them are zombies. Any good opinions?"

"Ah, let's see. Isn't holing up the only answer? We don't need to eat or drink. Just endure it!"

"Don't you know what an ignorant bastard Somullem is? He will just break through the thin walls!"

"Dig a trap!"

The combined opinions weren't useful.

But I ignored their words and just stared at the map. It was an entire map of the Underground World but I could see a path.

'The rating of the creature is similar to my current power.'

Dullahan. An advanced 1Lv creature.

A difficult but not impossible opponent.

The status window wasn't working but a dullahan seemed like a decent opponent. The level of the soldiers wouldn't be that difficult.

Chwaruruk!

I pulled out Wrath.

Puk!

And I pointed it at the map.

“What...?”

At that moment, it became quiet.

All the undead around the table and even the lord was watching me.

I held Wrath tightly. And...

Chwaaack!

A large part of the map and table.

I pointed to the ripped portion and said.

"Right here. I will break through. Take care of the rest."

The silence didn't last long.

The undead around me started complaining.

"What is that guy doing?"

“Attack? A suicide operation?”

"Who brought him?"

The reaction wasn't good. This was the first time I attended a village meeting, yet I presented such a ridiculous opinion. There was no way it would be good.

Jeff's expression was completely frozen. Torium slapped his forehead and prepared to defend me.

"Stop!"

Chapter 133: Blowing Wind (2)

At that moment, the lord stood up.

He was twice as tall as a normal zombie. A ghoul.

"It has been a long time since I've seen an undead so filled with passion. Preemptive strike. Are your skills that great? Your appearance...aren't you still a normal zombie?"

A lazy face. He came down from his chair and slowly approached me.

I was in disguise. Despite giving a wild impression, the basis was still a zombie.

"The 'ordinary' changes are largely irrelevant."

My exterior might have changed but my insides couldn't. In the end, my nature was just strengthened. The outward change was very big.

I was changed to look like a zombie, but the ghoul was only a few centimetres larger than me. It was something that couldn't be changed. There were no obvious signs of power.

For example, the wings and horns I obtained after using Corruption were signs of 'real' transformations. The slight

increase in size couldn't even be compared.

"That means you could even beat me."

"If you truly want to keep this place then follow me. I will defend it."

I raised Wrath and said.

The skeleton soldiers saw my actions and surrounded me.

"Hahaha! I have to recognize your ambition. Then, shall we see the skills you are so smug about? If you don't then the skeleton soldiers will tear off your limbs. A mercenary I've seen for the first time."

There were seven skeleton soldiers.

It wasn't a big deal. They were merely low grade creatures...and I had restored my strength to an intermediate level.

I looked around quietly. It would be hard to wipe out the incoming enemies alone. I needed the help of those who were here. Even if they didn't want to help, the situation meant it was necessary. In order to do that, I needed to appeal myself to them.

It was necessary to do this.

"How funny."

In the last 20 days, I had become more familiar with Haien Moon's sword technique. My stats and magic power weren't as strong but it was actually much easier now. The power of Moonlight Falling depended on the technique itself, so the power couldn't be ignored.

However, it would be a waste to use Haien Moon's sword techniques on these creatures.

I raised Wrath.

And...

Kwajik!

I made a fist.

Kwaduduk!

The skeleton soldiers couldn't catch up to my speed.

My fist slammed into their faces. The skeleton soldiers fell down one by one. I cleaned up seven of them in only 20 seconds.

I shook off the fragments of bones left in my fist and looked at

Torium.

“I have a question. Is the lord selected through any special method?”

“...Originally, the southern commander would be the lord. But in this remote territory, the strongest person becomes the lord.”

Torium's face showed his surprise.

The skills I showed during the spars with Jeff were just the tip of the iceberg. My body's condition was to blame for not everything being revealed.

Of course, Jeff had enough strength to also deal with seven skeleton soldiers. But it was impossible for him to pull it off with his bare hands in 20 seconds.

I did it.

Therefore, they judged that I could compete against a dullahan.

Now they would move on their own.

"The lord is the strongest. I like it."

"Of course, he has been ruling this territory for 50 years. In order

to become our lord, you need to show that type of strength.”

Torium said.

In other words, I couldn't hold back. I quite liked it.

There was a thin smile on my face. I needed to become the lord if I wanted them to follow me.

“An incompetent person isn't eligible.”

“Can you deal with the lord and 20 of the best talents in the village? Fight without killing! Then we will gladly follow you!”

Torium noticed my thoughts and made that suggestion.

The undead would use this time to judge me.

Torium wanted to see an epic tale that would make the wind blow.

"It will surely be difficult! Don't flatter yourself just because you beat seven skeleton soldiers!”

The confused lord took out a huge sword.

20 of the most talented and influential undead gathered. Jeff was

included among them and unlike the others, he was smiling. His expression had changed since I came forward...

"I will take revenge for the 20 losses!"

Indeed. There was a reason.

The centre of the area quickly became empty. I looked at the opponents standing in a line.

21 vs 1.

They were also stronger than the skeleton soldiers. However, they weren't my opponents.

'It will be difficult to not kill them.'

I pulled out Wrath without any hesitation.

The challenge was to win without killing.

Naturally, I would win but...

I didn't know how good my control over my strength was.

Dullahan.

It was three metres in height and one of the top undead.

"I don't know Makdalli-nim's intentions in making me obtain a small territory like this."

Somullem was a dullahan who led 1,000 troops. He was someone who grumbled a lot when he didn't like anything.

Commander Makdalli decided to push the south with simple power. However, he only used repeated raids to minimize his losses. Makdalli traveled around the south hitting it.

The problem was that not all of the south was the same.

Somullem sighed as he approached the target location.

"It is on the very edge of the frontier. Huu..."

Everything looked like a wasteland. That scene didn't change ever after a few days. Now it would only be half a day until he arrived. Commander Makdalli had ordered him to obtain this territory in the south. Somullem had no right to refuse.

"Will we give an offer for surrender?"

A skeleton asked.

Somullem placed a hand on his face and said confidently.

"Offer? There is no need. I will sweep all my resentment away."

Wipe out the enemy!

He seemed to be releasing some of his feelings.

Somullem was placing his huge sword on his shoulders when he saw something.

"Captain Somullem-nim. Something is approaching."

"I saw."

Someone was quickly coming this way. He was fearlessly rushing alone towards 1,000 soldiers.

"Is he crazy?"

Somullem muttered to himself.

The opponent didn't stop and came closer.

The skeleton soldiers took out their bows. Arrows coated with

powerful poison were fired simultaneously from the bows.

But...the person didn't stop. Rather, he was getting faster.

“They are crazy.”

Somullem laughed.

One thing was for certain, he would never make it here safe.

Kwakwang!

At that moment, there was a loud sound and the soldiers were swept away.

A line was created.

I pierced through on my own..

‘Faster.’

It was a refreshing feeling.

I was using pure swordsmanship to overwhelm the enemies. There weren't any skills or reliance on my stats. I only used my physical abilities and swordsmanship.

I wanted to push myself beyond my current limits. My muscles screamed as I accelerated.

‘Stronger.’

Chwack!

All my strength was placed into my sword. I wouldn’t be able to fight for a long time but I didn’t care.

Pushing myself more was training. It was a risky fight where the result was unknown. Risking one’s life was the driving force to becoming stronger. I had only realized it again after being weakened.

‘I...’

The dullahan Somullem!

He moved his heavy body while holding a greatsword.

“This guy! Don’t even think about leaving here alive!”

I had slaughtered 200 enemies alone. The situation was reaching the turning point. But Somullem was now moving.

This wasn't a big deal. Rather, it came at the appropriate time.

My power had been used for a while and he was the strongest enemy. I would be able to feel a sense of growth if I won.

'Become much stronger.'

Chaeeng!

The sword and greatsword clashed.

At that moment.

“Wahhhhh!”

"Kill!"

"Help Lord-nim!"

My army arrived through the hole that I had pierced.

Somullem was one level stronger than a regular dullahan. He was around an advanced 2Lv creature.

But this much was expected.

Kwang!

In the confrontation of pure strength, I was somewhat pushed back. I was pushed to the ground and quickly rolled. Arrows from nearby skeleton soldiers pierced my thigh and chest.

'This is familiar.'

The wounds and pain were nothing. Such things couldn't stop me. I pulled out the arrows stuck in my thigh and chest. It was a little uncomfortable but I was still in the middle of the fight.

"For Makdalli-nim!"

Somullem cried out as he raised his sword. Calling out the name of Commander Makdalli just reaffirmed his loyalty.

I recalled a scene with Maxium. He had a similar attitude as he said 'Your Majesty.' He thought I was the Emperor due to having his heart.

That heart wouldn't stop so easily. It was similar to my nature. So there was no sense of difference. In moments of crisis, the heart also became stronger.

"Get rid of them!"

Victory was confirmed but Somullem's expression was still

rotten. He showed signs of fright as he looked down at me.

And he started showing more signs of distress. Over time, it changed to a downright horrified expression.

“You...!”

“Huuk!”

I took a deep breath and raised Wrath. Then I cut off Somullem’s head with it. In order to kill a dullahan, the heart and head had to be destroyed.

“Now I need to remove the torso.”

“I will kill you!”

Chwack!

Somullem’s head had been accurately cut in two.

After that, I assaulted the body with a smile on my face.

“Wahhhhh!”

“Victory! We won!”

"Hooray Lord-nim!"

"Hooray Randolph Briggsiel-nim!"

There were 400 people who followed me. Of those, approximately 200 had survived.

On the other hand, they only wiped out a few enemies.

Victory.

"He really pierced through alone..."

"Did you see the fight with Somullem? I got goosebumps!"

I put away Wrath while Torium came up and greeted me.

"Congratulations on your victory.

"Your tone has changed."

"Lord-nim should say something to the general undead."

I remembered. I had spoken to Torium in the village.

“Now I am the real lord?”

"Open a path to the centre of the enemy alone. We won't run away. We will fight. That is...we have accepted Randolph-nim as our lord."

400 people had been gathered here.

100 people were waiting at the castle. They were ready to flee in case the situation went bad.

I had allowed it. After all, the point of this attack was to display my skills while breaking through the enemy. If I couldn't pierce through then they would be eliminated.

"Send a messenger to the southern commander. Inform him that the lord has been replaced. Anyway, I know very well that Lord-nim has work separate from looking after our village."

"100 people are still following the old lord."

The 100 people remaining in the castle. They were followers of the ghoul. They hadn't approved of my plan.

Torium gave a bitter laugh.

"The tide has turned and they can't stop it. Rather...today is a festival. Everybody is excited."

All of the remaining undead were looking at me. The expression in their eyes wasn't bad.

"Ah, we have fended off Makdalli's first attack on our territory. Once the southern commander learns of this face, he might contact Lord-nim separately."

"Understood."

I roughly replied.

I was exhausted. Rest was my top priority.

I moved back towards the village.

Torium remained behind me and said.

"...The wind has started to blow. The wind that will bring rest to everyone."

Chapter 134: Seven Sins, Twilight

Blacksmith Oswen (1)

100 people were waiting at the castle.

Most of them had heard about my victory.

The former lord had listened with a stiff expression. He knew that there was no way out. The scent of victory was already coming from me. If he tried anything hostile then it was highly likely that he would lose.

That evening, there was a large party. An undead party was quite different. They ate Jellim, danced or sparred. It was more fun than the party on Earth.

I took a break for a few moments and thought about my swordsmanship. In a spacious room set aside for the lord, I visualized and recalled the details of the battle.

‘It is developing little by little.’

I was recovering my original strength. And invisible things were starting to show themselves.

‘Haïen Moon’s sword technique...I can complete it.’

Ironically, Haïen Moon’s sword technique was harder for good

swordsmen to learn. If it was just imitated then the essence of the sword technique wouldn't be learnt.

Even with Corruption, there was still 1% missing. I slowly realized the parts I was missing.

Mabe Ariel Diablo had also tried variations of it. She couldn't understand it so her stances were weak. She wasn't able to complete it her way.

But I thought differently. I intended to eat everything.

'The sword was his life.'

Understanding.

Yes, that was necessary.

There were few people that were that strong from the beginning. It was also true for Haien Moon. He only polished one sword technique for his entire life.

I trained every night that there was moonlight.

Suack!

I brandished my sword. When the moon wasn't visible, I

engraved Haien Moon's movements into my mind.

An enduring swordsman. No one could go against his sword. But that became harder as he got older.

‘He wanted to become stronger.’

I knew a little bit about his life. A war slave who climbed up from the bottom. He survived by using the bodies of his allies as shields and desperately tried to learn the enemy's techniques.

I didn't resemble him.

He learned his sword techniques from the battlefield like me, but I had chosen to settle.

Hwiing!

Wind blew into the room.

Wind came flowing out from the sword...the moonlight around the sword weakened.

Using the skill was smoother and more beautiful in the moonlight.

A clearing on the grounds of the castle.

Torium and dozens of skeleton soldiers were gathered in this place.

"What is this about?"

"The skin of the zombies is rotting quickly and the skeleton soldiers have stopped functioning. The bones are damaged but not unusable...we have managed to salvage 59 bones."

"Right."

I gave a small nod.

This was something I just learnt. Of course, it wasn't a typical case. This was the Underground World. In other places, zombies and skeleton soldiers couldn't die.

Torium spoke with a bittersweet expression.

"Didn't I talk about resting? They have failed to find their rest. Their souls will forever remain in the bones, suffering in this world."

"You can distinguish between those who have found rest and those who haven't?"

I was filled with curiosity. Torium slowly shook his head.

"We don't know. However, there are some cases when their bodies will disappear without leaving a trace. We just think that they have truly found rest."

There was no way to be sure. Maybe it was just a futile hope. Even so, it was something that allowed them to endure for a long time.

"Oh, and..."

Torium paused before pulling out a letter.

"A messenger arrived early this morning. He delivered a stamped letter from the southern commander. You have only been the lord for four days, so it is meaningful that he sent it so quickly."

It finally came.

I took the letter and said.

"You told me the news a little bit late."

"I immediately went to find you but you were concentrating on the sword...I'm sorry."

It had been a few days.

I had only focused on wielding the sword.

It was in order to gain enlightenment in Haien Moon's sword technique.

But my senses didn't notice someone watching me for a long time.

'I was too absorbed.'

I opened the letter to see small words.

My eyes were caught by the contents.

[Randolph Brigsiel. That is the name of the new lord of the Pabrum Territory. I know very well about your victory against the dullahan Somullem. Somullem is within the top 20 of Makdalli's subordinates. Indeed, it is a truly great thing. I formally invite you to the main fortress in the south. Southern hero! A hero who can stop Makdalli's ambitions! My heart is burning and I am looking forward to seeing you at the main fortress.]

It was filled with flowery words but basically, he was curious and wanted to see my face.

However, there was one point I couldn't understand.

“Torium. What is the name of the southern commander?”

The letter only mentioned ‘main fortress.’ Torium had only called him ‘the southern commander.’

Torium’s eyes widened like he just realized.

"Ahh, I haven’t mentioned. Oswen.”

"Oswen?”

I hesitated for a moment.

I had heard that name before. Wasn’t that the same name as the Twilight Blacksmith, Oswen who made the Seven Sins?

Torium saw my reaction and asked.

"Do you know it?

“No...it is nothing. By the way, the southern commander wants to see me.”

“Ahh! Very good. The commander will have many questions about your victory. It is because we’ve lost many battles to Makdalli.”

“Then I have to depart.”

"Right now? Before that...are you going to see him looking like that?"

“Is there a problem?”

It wasn't strange. Wrath, Sloth and Infinity Armour had returned to their original appearances. It was an assortment of equipment.

But Torium's thoughts seemed different.

“The first impression is the most important. You have drawn a considerable amount of attention and the commander has invited you directly. Lord-nim is a hero. Your style needs to have that type of elegance. Can you leave this to me?”

Torium said confidently.

It wasn't bad to be prepared.

"I will try it once.”

I would check the work and wear it if it was okay.

50 skeleton soldiers, Torium and Jeff.

I was in the lead.

The road to the southern fortress wasn't very complex. We were able to arrive at the fortress after three days and nights.

The fortress was huge. It was at the level of a city. There were many traces indicating that it had been created a long time ago.

Several ghouls blocked us from entering the gates.

Torium came forward and said.

"This is the new lord of Pabrum! Southern Commander-nim has sent a letter so let us in!"

After confirming the letter, the ghouls bowed deeply.

Rattle!

The huge gates opened and a different world stretched out before me.

There were beautiful buildings with two or three floors where people seemed to live. Jellim trees were also lined up cleanly to create a beautiful view.

"Isn't Jellim hard to obtain?"

"In a manner of speaking. This is a place where only undead are allowed. That's why there are so many Jellim trees. Instead, take a look around. Isn't everyone staring at Lord-nim?"

Torium said with a smile.

Just like he said, all the undead were staring at me.

Torium was versatile and even had talent as a blacksmith. He created a few good accessories made of bones and layered them on top of Infinity Armour.

It was something that showed off the grandeur of the skeleton soldiers.

Quite a few undead looked like they thought it was handsome.

"Ohhh. I don't know how to move in this. I am just wearing armour but..."

Jeff was also wearing armour like a knight. He appeared awkward and slightly uncomfortable when moving.

Torium stared towards the heart of the fortress and said.

"Now, let's move on. Today's hero is Lord-nim."

Chapter 135: Seven Sins, Twilight

Blacksmith Oswen (2)

The heart of the fortress was a great castle. I could barely see the top and it was easy to think the castle belonged to a duke in the Demon World.

'I can appreciate it.'

The castle looked like it was made in the olden times. It couldn't be called a small and insignificant castle.

In addition, there were quite a few high level undead.

The castle entrance was guarded by two dark warriors. After entering, there would probably be lich and death knights. The power gathered here was formidable.

I received information as I was escorted to the place where the southern commander was.

"I have never directly seen the southern commander. However, I heard rumours that he is someone who doesn't like dispensing with formalities. Be careful with your speech and actions."

Torium gave advice from his position next to me.

I was only listening with one ear.

Oswen...

It might just be a similar name. So it was better not to expect too much.

After climbing a spiral staircase, I reached the top floor of the castle. There was only one room that seemed to contain the southern commander.

“...The total attacks...”

“I’m tired of worrying and suffering...”

"Makdalli should have some limits..."

There were loud noises as I climbed to the top floor.

The dark warrior knocked on the door of the room and cried out.

"Commander-nim. The new lord of Pabrum has come."

"Enter."

A magnificent voice.

I immediately entered the room as the dark warrior opened the door.

Twelve undead were sitting at a round table. As expected, lich and death knights could be seen. It seemed like the strongest people in the south were gathered.

But the most eye catching person was the one sitting in the middle.

Doom knight!

It was the evolved form of a death knight and a high class 2Lv creature.

He had six hands. Bones protruded from the doom knight like wings.

He was the southern commander Oswen.

"Are you the lord of Pabrum? You look great."

Oswen turned his head towards me and said. It was evident that he was surprised by my appearance. Torium's plan had somehow succeeded.

However, I was keeping a close eye on the gloves he wore on his hands.

My skills weren't working but I had been using Mind's Eye for a while. At the very least, I could identify what it was.

‘Seven Sins...!’

I figured that the gloves Oswen was wearing were one of the Seven Sins.

Was he really the Twilight Blacksmith Oswen? According to the description of the items, he was crazy. In the end, he had thrown away the Seven Sins. There was no way to know why he was in the Underground World.

So...I needed to confirm it.

Chaeeng!

I pulled out a sword.

Wrath!

It was one of the Seven Sins so I wanted to see Oswen's reaction.

However, the response I desired wasn't there.

"What are you doing?"

He just frowned.

It couldn't just be a coincidence that his gloves were part of the Seven Sins and he had the same name. I needed a clearer confirmation so I said.

“Oswen, Commander of the south. I, Randolph Brigsiel, challenge you to a spar.”

There was another thing.

As soon as Maxium saw me, he had sensed the Heart of the Hell Monarch. However, Oswen showed no signs of knowing.

It seemed to be buried by the blood of the thunderbird.

There was a difference, even if they were both commanders.

He would naturally succumb if I pulled out the Emperor's Sword, but the situation was still uncertain.

In fact, a doom knight was a high class 2Lv creature so he wasn't an easy opponent even in my normal state. If he was seeking my life then he wouldn't be easy to deal with.

So I would let the situation ebb and flow.

"Many have come to this room, but it is the first time someone has challenged me to a spar in this main building."

This was important.

I slowly opened my mouth.

"I was originally a rogue mercenary. I've heard stories of the southern commander here and there. It was enough to make my blood run hot. The dullahan Somullem is just a small fry to you. How did he become one of Makdalli's top 20 subordinates? On the other hand...every single person gathered here looks great. If those men follow you then it is enough to deserve my sword."

These types of sugar-coated words weren't like me. But I only wanted to achieve my goal.

Oswen's expression changed. His frown was released and he shook his head.

"...Just ruling properly has allowed the strong to gather. You have seen it properly. I thought you were a simple, rude person, but that isn't the case."

In addition, I was able to guess Oswen's nature.

He was quite arrogant. He was confident about himself. He

wasn't unwilling to flatter himself. Rather, it was his favourite thing.

I knew a few people like this. I also knew how to treat them.

"I didn't hear an answer. Will you receive my sword?"

So...I changed directions.

The spar had the dual meaning of 'accepting my sword.' It was like listening to a knight dedicate themselves to a king.

I had disparaged Makdalli by defeating the dullahan Somullem. Makdalli could be directly contrasted against Oswen.

It was a direct comparison but Oswen didn't want to hear the words 'you are not qualified.'

An exhibition situation. It would show his merits to everyone so...Oswen gave a satisfied smile.

"The new lord of Pabrum, Randolph Brigsiel. I will accept your sword. I have thought of a way to boost the morale of the south. Therefore, I will receive your sword in a friendly format."

Oswen said my name for the first time.

My plan had somehow worked.

‘The first step.’

I would use the friendly spar to determine if he was Oswen.

I shook his hand while the frozen Torium and Jeff recovered.

"What is Lord-nim's identity? I almost lost seven lives."

Torium said after entering the deluxe room we were assigned.

Makdalli wasn't just running and fighting.

He had slowly carved away at the south's power. There hadn't been a single victory in a fortnight so the morale of the south was the worst.

Then I won. I reversed the situation against the dullahan Somullem. I even beat Somullem in a one on one battle.

A hero who reversed the situation. The light of salvation.

It was an event that boosted morale.

So there was a lot of goodwill towards the spar. All of the undead at the fortress gathered to watch the spar. It was estimated that

there were 200,000!

‘It is significant.’

It wasn't just the fortress, but undead scattered through the south gathered.

The spar was taking place in a building that looked like the colosseum. There was such a long procession outside that many failed to get in.

Oswen stood in the center of the arena, raised his six swords and shouted.

"We all know what happened at Pabrium! He might look like a zombie but he is a true warrior who fought and won against the dullahan Somullem! He defeated 1,000 troops with only 400 soldiers!"

“Wahhhhh!”

"Randolph! Randolph! Randolph!"

So many people cheered my name that my ears hurt.

By the way, only 10 days had passed since my battle with Somullem. However, everyone knew about it...

'It was announced intentionally.'

Oswen had clearly spread it after hearing the news. My name had started to gain prominence before the letter even reached me. This told me how urgent the situation in the south was.

"This remarkable warrior wasn't just satisfied with Somullem after showing up here. We have determined that he is a worthy warrior!"

Oswen raised his six hands higher.

"Even though this is just an exhibition, nothing can stop the hot heart of a warrior! Enjoy the festival! Today, let's all toast!"

"Wahhhhh!"

Kegs were procured. They weren't affected by the alcohol but the atmosphere was still heated. Everyone was looking forward to the spar.

Tak.

He put his hands down and it immediately became silent. The signal announcing the start of the spar was given.

But...I had something to check before starting.

“Southern Commander Oswen. Before that, I would like to ask you something. What do you think is the true virtue of a king?”

“...The virtue of a king?”

Oswen didn't immediately answer the question.

However, my commitment was firm.

"I want you to answer me."

It was an unexpected question.

He was a commander. The emperor called the Hell Monarch was already gone. He was an existence that everyone in the Underground World knew of.

But the Hell Monarch never showed up again. That's why Oswen started to walk his own path.

He had the title of commander but...the shadow of the emperor was too large.

Anyway, the commander who obtained the treasure would eventually wish to be reborn as the 'emperor.' He should have thought about it at least once.

I poked that point.

Oswen hesitated for a while before saying.

“The true virtue of a king is...sloth.”

Sloth!

The answer I wanted had appeared.

‘Sloth’ was a word that was written in Oswen’s description of one of the Seven Sins. The southern commander Oswen had said exactly the same words.

‘The virtue of a king is sloth. It is the same name as one of the Seven Sins. It can’t be a coincidence.’

I was sure of it.

In front of my eyes...was the Twilight Blacksmith Oswen.

I didn’t know why Oswen didn’t remember or why he was a doom knight, but I was certain of it.

Dubolong said that the Dark Spirit King didn’t have all of the Seven Sins. Now I had the method to find the remaining items close at hand!

I couldn't let him get away. It was thrilling. It felt like a puzzle had snapped into place.

"Thank you for the answer."

I pulled out Wrath.

Now winning or losing didn't matter.

Of course, I would compete to the best of my abilities. It was a chance to obtain some clues about Haien Moon's sword technique. He was a perfect opponent.

I had confirmed that Oswen was the Twilight Blacksmith.

After the spar and having my sword accepted, I swore a 'loyal vow.'

I was willing. Along with the title of lord, I was granted the position of a captain. I was authorized to lead 2,000 soldiers.

"...You didn't ask why I said such an unconventional thing. What does Southern Commander-nim want from me?"

"I want to make you the hero of the south."

I was currently at a training hall inside the castle.

I didn't rest for even one second. I needed to use every second to swing my sword.

Torium had watched from the sidelines as I trained in Haien Moon's sword technique.

"I heard about it. And...I am concerned. If you kick a rolling stone then the backlash might be even worse."

"It is needed to build achievements."

"Will you also try to catch Commander Makdalli?"

"That isn't bad."

Chwack!

Wrath quickly moved through the air.

I thought back to my fight with Oswen the other day.

Doom knight. A creature I had met in the Demon World. Even a grand duke couldn't easily deal with one. The swordsmanship that unfolded using six hands was dazzling.

‘There is something in the glove.’

Even in the midst of the spar, I didn’t neglect examining Oswen.

The gloves worn by Oswen. The magic power I felt from them made it highly likely it was one of the Seven Sins.

The magic power flowing from them was similar to when I was ‘corrupted.’

Moderation was impossible.

"As carefully as possible, find out about the gloves that Commander Oswen is wearing."

"Is it a command?"

"It is a command."

"Then I will follow you."

Torium bowed and left the training hall.

Swik! Swiik!

Meanwhile, I was constantly on the move.

Chapter 136: Seven Sins, Twilight

Blacksmith Oswen (3)

Two days later, Torium came to me while I was meditating.

"He never takes off the gloves. He values the gloves more than his weapons and even hates to have water touch them."

Those gloves were cherished. It wasn't simply because they were one of the Seven Sins. The weapons he used were also very good. There had to be a hidden reason why he didn't want water to touch them.

'I need to figure out the reason why.'

I needed to do it myself. I stood up.

"Good job."

"No. I just followed your command."

I laughed. A fire similar to Krasla's had risen inside Torium. It was an attitude that indicated they would do everything to complete off my commands.

'I need to resolve this quickly and go back.'

At the same time, I was curious about the situation of the dungeons.

I didn't know what would happen while I was stuck here.

Okullos had died but the sensation he created was still there. The balance of power would be disrupted in the aftermath. It was highly likely that the other grand dukes would move.

"Ah, I've heard rumours about Makdalli. He has begun a full scale offensive. Lord-nim should be contacted soon..."

"Tomorrow."

"Huh?"

"Tomorrow I will participate."

"T-that is abrupt."

"I was just informed. I am going to see the soldiers."

20 minutes before Torium arrived, a dark warrior had entered the training hall and announced it.

It was quite abrupt. I needed to be prepared to move in just one day.

I turned and exited the training hall.

‘If I am going anyway, I should prepare as much as possible.’

There were things only available here.

I couldn’t ignore them.

My growth rate here was remarkable. I was changing every day. Simply pushing myself wasn’t responsible for the abnormal growth.

This world itself seemed to be helping my growth.

As long as I was stepping on this ground. Once I returned to Earth, I would notice the difference as I engaged in a competition with the other grand dukes.

2,000 soldiers.

The majority of them were skeleton soldiers so the configuration was simple. They had low intelligence, meaning complicated commands couldn’t be given.

But it was still good. At least they could steadily follow my orders.

Approximately 30,000 soldiers left the fortress. It was a considerable number that was prepared overnight.

Oswen shouted from the front.

"This is a sudden move because we have received intelligence that Makdalli's 4th subordinate, Gudeos, is moving to 'Dry Land.' Catching him will be like cutting one limb off Makdalli. Southern heroes! Save the south and sweep out the invaders!"

"Protect it!"

"Protect it!!"

The shouts rang out.

The remaining people in the fortress waved as we left. If it went as planned, there would be a landslide victory.

At the same time, Oswen raised his six swords up high.

"To war!"

The suffering south had finally drawn their swords.

Thanks to the intelligence obtained and great mobility, they

successfully punished Gudeos.

Gudeos only had 10,000 troops prepared. The south only receive a mere 3,000 casualties.

A great victory! The spirit of the south rose in a flash.

And...I also obtained some great achievements.

"Did you hear? The new lord of Pabrum carved a path to Gudeos and cut off his head!"

"Is that all? He also showed the best leadership when commanding his troops. Where did he come from? I've heard rumours about his talent."

"The heavens are helping the south. Makdalli is no longer a match for us."

Stories about the war were spreading everywhere. I was always at the centre of the stories.

I had directly cut off Gudeos' head. There was a large-scale propaganda campaign. Oswen seemed determined to make me the 'Hero of the South.'

'Success can bring bad luck.'

I was authorized to lead 2,000 soldiers and that number increased by a further 3,000.

Oswen worried me. He seemed to instinctively be drawn to me. Maybe Wrath and Sloth were affecting him...

Anyway, there was no harm in my authority going up. If I became a close associate of Oswen, he might sense the Heart of the Hell Monarch or the Emperor's Sword.

He might try to stop me from climbing to the position of commander.

The Underground World was a place where I needed to be careful. Right now I was somewhat lacking and I needed to catch up to Oswen.

I would continue to become stronger as he made me into an hero, causing more southern troops to follow me.

In order to do this, I needed solid performances.

The south continued to achieve victories.

"Makdalli isn't a big deal. The south will take revenge...he will fall quickly."

It was already the fifth one.

Torium muttered from outside the fortress. The south had conducted four raids that succeeded. Makdalli lost his 4th subordinate Gudeos as well as the 5th, 6th and 7th subordinates.

"It is thanks to the spies giving us definite information."

The previous four raids had taken place suddenly. Oswen moved quickly after verifying the information.

Torium had a smile on his face.

"Well, those are just words. Lord-nim has become the hero of the south. Right now, the south is only talking about Lord-nim."

"Soon it will calm down."

"We'll see. The southern commander is rising rapidly thanks to you. This has spread through the entire Underground World. Then...will you stay in the south with the southern commander? The value of Lord-nim will become higher."

If things flowed smoothly then it was likely to end up like that.

However, that was only a possibility. I had no intention of being satisfied with my current position.

"When did the last commander die?"

I asked Torium who replied.

“150 years have passed.”

Indeed...

I nodded.

It had been stagnant for 150 years, with the wind of victory not blowing in this world.

The wind started blowing out of hand once I arrived.

‘Strange.’

Then I felt the surrounding atmosphere rapidly changing.

The number of soldiers assigned to this battle was 40,000. The moving troops quickly fell silent.

After crossing two mountains, something felt wrong as they stepped onto the wilderness.

"Originally this was a barren place..."

Torium said with confusion.

I looked around and said.

"There are no soldiers in this location. The intelligence was wrong."

"The scouts will look around."

There was no end in sight to the wilderness.

It was necessary to have people scout around the entrance.

Oswen raised a hand from the front. Just as people were about to scout around.

Sururuk.

One hand appeared through the mud and grabbed a skeleton soldier.

Suruk!

Sururuk!

Hundreds, thousands of hands rose simultaneously.

"Cursed souls! Why are they in this place...?"

Torium was shocked.

However, the danger hadn't begun yet.

Sound could be heard in the distance. Soon soldiers arrived from the other side. There were more soldiers than I could estimate. They swarmed towards the army here.

Makdalli.

This place...

"A trap."

I took out Wrath.

I sensed that it wouldn't be an easy fight.

A dilemma.

There was no place to escape.

The difference in numbers, the geographic advantage...wasn't it

too easy?

'The spies were caught or they planned to give false information from the beginning.'

Everything had a cause. The previous victories might have been paving stones for this trap. But it was too late for regrets. It was wise to move before the situation became worse.

"Jeff. Block the rear with the soldiers."

Jeff had been placed in the role of a non-commissioned officer. 5,000 troops couldn't operate alone.

"Lord-nim?"

That day. The day that Torium and others recognized me as a lord. Jeff's tone had changed. His tone became really awkward but I left it alone.

Anyway...I looked ahead.

'He is Makdalli.'

Kuwaaang!

Makdalli was a dragon. It was the first time I had seen a dragon

so I was amazed.

He flew in the sky and his breath dissolved troops. Oswen was currently engaged in a fierce battle with him.

But my role wasn't to help him out.

“The fleet-footed soldiers will follow me. We will eliminate the ones on horseback first.”

I chose the soldiers with great mobility. The quality of the troops was superior, but in a confusing situation like this, there was no control over the tactics.

I started moving with 500 of the fastest soldiers.

War wasn't a simple numbers game.

There were bound to be dynamic changes depending on the situation of the battlefield.

However, there were also irreversible decisions.

I moved and succeeded in defeating two death knights and a lich. A considerable number of skeletal horses and soldiers were removed, yet the situation was worsening.

‘It is tough.’

I decided quickly. The battle had started less than 30 seconds ago but the number of allies had dropped considerably.

Without Oswen, there were too many enemies to defeat when running around alone.

I quickly ran towards Oswen.

“Kuaaah! You! Makdalli!”

Oswen cut off Makdalli’s left wing. Oswen had lost two arms in the fierce battle.

"Did you think I wouldn't know about the spies? You shouldn't mess with me. Your fortress has already been decimated! Now return to the soil. Oswen!"

Kwarurung!

Another hit. The attack that could rival the magic power of a lich slammed into Oswen. His skin melted.

Kururung!

The breath was poured out once again.

It was apparent that Oswen would melt without leaving a trace behind if he was hit. However, I was a little bit faster than the breath attack.

‘I have to believe in Infinity Armour’s defense!’

It was impossible to avoid taking any damage. I quickly grabbed Oswen but my right chest was exposed to the breath.

“Huuk!”

I had dealt with many enemies so I was already at my limit. My eyes widened and my heart beat like crazy. The blood of a thunderbird couldn’t hide the loud noise.

Fortunately, the melted part of Infinity Armour quickly recovered. I bent to confirm it while running as hard as I could.

"Lord-nim...!"

Torium, Jeff and 2,000 soldiers approached me. That number increased to 5,000.

I said through gritted teeth.

"Jeff, Torium, I will take the southern commander and leave the battlefield.”

"Take my horse."

Torium agreed to my words. Jeff opened his mouth in support.

"Don't worry about the rear. The renowned warrior Jeff will block them."

It was impossible not to know his intentions.

"You won't live."

Jeff just laughed.

"I am dead anyway. Why is it a big deal if I die again?"

"That's right. And I have no intention of becoming a skeleton soldier. I will get out of here and see you again. Lord-nim's name will inevitably shake the Underground World. Go, there is no time."

The enemy had noticed and started to pursue Oswen. Makdalli had lost one wing and he needed to take care of enemies, but his mobility was still good.

"Find me. It won't be hard once I become the master of this world."

Torium chuckled at my words.

"You will become the master of the Underground World! I understand. We will surely find you! By all means!"

I formed tight fists. I wanted to meet them again someday.

I climbed on a horse. The collapsed Oswen was placed in front of me.

Taak!

As my horse ran, I remembered Makdalli's words to Oswen.

'The fortress has already been decimated.'

If that was true then I couldn't head to the fortress.

'I have to modify the plan.'

Originally I had planned to help the south to test Maxium's reaction. But now the south was captured, so I had to choose the next best thing.

'First I will save Oswen. He had ruled for a long time so he should have several hiding places in the south. And...the Seven Sins.'

I looked down at the gloves. I tried to take them off but they didn't budge. It was clear that only the owner could remove them.

Kurung!

Kururung!

It had been less than 30 minutes since I left the battlefield.

Noises were heard from behind me.

'Trackers.'

My keen eyes noticed the trackers.

Fortunately, there didn't seem to be a lot of them.

Tsk!

I clicked my tongue and got off the horse. Oswen didn't move.

Chapter 137: Phantom Cavalry (1)

Eight times. That was the number of times I had to shake off the trackers before finding a place to rest. It was a naturally occurring cave. The previous owner seemed to be away.

I checked all the sides and there was an easy path to escape.

I set Oswen down against a wall. It had been three days, but Oswen still hadn't regained consciousness.

'I will rest for a bit.'

I was reaching my limits. My body was in a difficult state thanks to the trackers.

A trap was placed at the entrance so that I would know if anyone came. Pebbles, vines and other materials that would make noises if moved were placed.

It was just a basic trap, but it was better than nothing. It could be the subtle difference between life and death. I had managed to survive a few times in my previous life thanks to it.

I closed my eyes.

I immediately fell asleep.

It was the fifth day.

We were no longer being pursued. But I stayed alert.

I scouted around and figured out a little bit of the geography. Once I finished patrolling and returned to the cave, Oswen was twisting his body.

"Kuooh...

Was he feeling pain?

By default, the undead were numb. It wasn't completely removed but their senses were very dull. It was the same in regards to pain.

"J-Jellim...Jellim..."

Oswen weakly opened his eyes. Then he stretched out a hand towards me.

His body trembled like he was experiencing withdrawal symptoms. In order to maintain their bodies in this world, the undead needed Jellim. But there was none around. It was impossible to obtain any Jellim.

"Southern Commander Oswen. Have you regained your spirit?"

"I...commander of the south...kuaack!"

"His mind is coming and going."

I watched with one hand on Wrath. Oswen had a seizure before losing consciousness again.

Since then, Oswen woke up several times only to faint again.

However, he wasn't in a normal state. He was delirious most of the time. Sometimes he was a child, other times the southern commander...he also became the twilight blacksmith.

"The Seven Sins shouldn't exist in this world. Get rid of them right now!"

"Hell Monarch! D-don't try to control me!"

In this way, Oswen unintentionally showed me a few possibilities.

'Schizophrenia. Or maybe multiple personalities.'

There were a variety of personalities inside Oswen. The ego of the southern commander was the most intense but multiple egos emerged.

The medium that caused it...

‘The gloves.’

Every time the personality changed, the magic power changed as well. It was clear that there was a close relationship.

I couldn't hold a conversation with them. He repeatedly woke up and then fainted. All the evidence returned to my heart.

There was no time to observe the developments.

The most important thing was to leave the Underground World and determine the situation regarding my dungeons. I was going to become the devil. The master of the Underground World? I had the Heart of the Hell Monarch so I was already the master.

"His arms...two should be enough."

Six arms.

Three of them were already cut off. It wouldn't be a problem if one more was gone.

I raised Wrath.

I wanted to see if any changes would happen after getting rid of a

gloved arm.

Chwahak!

There was no hesitation. I cut off one arm.

At the same time.

“Kuaaack!”

The stunned Oswen started screaming.

Oswen panicked and rose from his seat. He looked at his arm and breathed roughly for at least five minutes.

"The gloves...are mine!"

The gloves were his top priority. The reaction was far from normal.

Kwarung!

Crazy. He started attacking randomly.

It wasn't clear which ego was in control. It could be the southern commander or the twilight blacksmith.

There was also a chance it was a new personality.

‘What to do?’

I worried about it for a short moment.

I had no choice. I either had to kill him or knock him out.

My mind was inclined to the former.

Oswen’s gaze was fixed on the fallen arm that was still wearing the glove. It was reasonable to think that the gloves would fall off if the owner was killed.

‘It can't be helped.’

I hoped to get some things from the southern commander. It didn’t matter if his words were mixed. I had wanted to find information, but there would be no answers in this state.

I held both Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword.

And at that moment.

His crazy eyes vanished.

"That sword...?"

He noticed it immediately.

The personality in control knew the Emperor's Sword. The enemy was gone.

'It is like the time with Maxium.'

There was no other way.

The blood of the thunderbird wiped away traces of the heart. I asked.

"Who are you?"

"Hell Monarch! H-have you forgotten me? Didn't you contaminate Oswen's spirit by placing me directly inside him?"

"I don't remember."

"T-that is okay. Great Hell Monarch! You finally returned. The true god...!"

Flop!

Oswen fell to his knees.

"Now the Underground World will become stable. The Creator will lead us!"

Oswen's ego knew some of the work of the Hell Monarch. In addition, there seemed to be very juicy information.

"Where is the real spirit of Oswen?"

"I tore apart his spirit like Hell Monarch-nim commanded. The true Oswen is nothing now. Although this body is a mess, I will recover quickly to faithfully serve Hell Monarch-nim."

No. Oswen's spirit still remained. I had heard his cries.

'This ego doesn't know about it.'

In addition, his spirit seemed to be been split apart. After the body was weakened, they were able to slip through the crack to temporarily regain control. The ego had no idea this had happened.

There was no strict adherence to one personality.

"Is there any way for Oswen's original spirit to be restored?"

"Why...ah, you must have a reason. Yes. There is a way. The curse on the gloves are suppressing the other egos. Oswen's ego

will surface if that is gone.”

This person believed that I was the Hell Monarch. He revealed the truth to me so there was no need to clear up the misunderstanding.

"The method to get rid of the curse?"

“Are you thinking of removing the curse? The curse is so old that this is already as one with the body.”

He was saying that it wouldn't be easy.

I touched my jaw.

‘The curse is the primary cause so I need to remove it.’

I figured out the main point.

I stared straight into Oswen's eyes and said.

"How long will you be in that guise? It isn't suitable. Reveal your original appearance.”

"Ah...ahh! P-please wait. I won't show such a disgraceful appearance!”

Oswen subsequently lay on the floor. Then smoke emerged from Oswen's head.

The shape that the smoke took...was a shade. It was approximately three times larger than a normal shade.

“Is that your real state?”

"Yes, My Monarch!"

“Your name?”

“I am Oduto.”

"Oduto, good work.”

".....!"

Chwack!

Even though the shade had a spirit body, it was possible to deal a blow with concentrated magic power.

My magic power wasn't fully recovered but I could successfully use the magic power of the moonlight.

I struck with the Emperor's Sword.

“Why...?”

Oduto looked down at his chest and said in a shocked, little voice.

I had dealt a critical hit so he gradually faded away. Soon he would be completely destroyed.

I put the sword away and said.

“I am not the Hell Monarch. I am Randolph Briggsiel.”

It might be his heart but I was my own person. The demon called Randolph Briggsiel. I wouldn't be split apart like Oswen.

My cold eyes turned towards Oduto.

In the near future, Oduto would be completely destroyed.

Duk!

The gloves fell from the hands. It was evidence that the curse was gone.

'This is...Pride.'

I instinctively knew it after I put on the gloves.

One of the Seven Sins.

Pride.

I had gathered four of the sins.

Wrath, Sloth, Greed and Pride.

I immediately felt stronger after putting on the gloves.

“T-this place? Where is this place?”

At this time, Oswen opened his eyes.

“Randolph? The battle? Why am I in a place like this? Makdalli...yes, where is Makdalli?”

The fact that he recognized me meant that the ego of the southern commander was in control.

‘I need to suppress this ego.’

It was simple. If the southern commander was gravely injured then another ego would emerge.

Similarly, if that ego continued to be suppressed then Oswen's real self would eventually wake up.

Surung!

“Randolph? Southern hero. Why is your sword...kuaack!”

Chapter 138: Phantom Cavalry (2)

99 times. It was the number of times Oswen was repeatedly knocked out and then forcefully awakened. The blacksmith ego had woken up several times but had fainted from confusion.

Fortunately, it didn't go beyond 100 times. He finally started to show a little bit of stability.

"You...who are you?"

"I have already told you a few times. I am Randolph Briggsiel. I don't like repeating myself so please remember this in the future."

"My memories are a tangled mess. The memories of several people are mixed together. But I am the blacksmith Oswen."

The southern commander and everyone else were fake personalities. Oswen's true identity was the blacksmith.

"Were you originally a doom knight?"

"Ah...come to think of it, my body has changed as well. Oh my god...the Hell Monarch. That cruel person has played with me for thousands of years. He was angry because I threw the Seven Sins into the crack."

The crack. The dark spirits knew how to handle cracks in space.

They could pick up free goods from the crack. Then they sold the items.

Oswen turned his head.

"I remember that this is the world of the dead and Randolph is a hero in the south. But aren't you still alive?"

"That's right. I am alive."

"Amazing. Those swords are somehow familiar. Wrath and the Emperor's Sword! That cloak...Sloth. Apart from the Emperor's Sword, they are all items that wandered through the crack. Where did you find them?"

It was a problem. Was it okay to let him know?

The Twilight Blacksmith Oswen. I expected a lot from him. I wanted Oswen to follow me.

If I hid the Heart of the Hell Monarch from him and he learnt about it later on, things could turn bad. It would be better to inform him now.

I explained how I obtained the Heart of the Hell Monarch and the Emperor's Sword.

Oswen's expression changed as he listened to the story.

"Ahh, something like that..."

"Do you believe it?"

"I can't not believe it. Hah, then I guess the Hell Monarch has been destroyed. His heart belongs to Randolph...Maxium even mistook you as the Hell Monarch. Things are becoming interesting."

Oswen laughed.

He was still in a little bit of pain.

Oswen was happy since the Hell Monarch was his enemy.

"Oswen. This isn't the time to have hazy memories."

This was enough explanation.

I had spent too much time finding Oswen. Now we needed to move.

"I was also the southern commander. The battle might have been lost, but don't worry. The real power of the south isn't at the fortress."

“Then?”

"The southern commander hid 2,000 phantom cavalry in a place that no one else knows. The phantom cavalry only responds to the Hell Monarch, but you should be able to wake them up if you have his heart. You will launch that strength and gather the remaining power of the south. Makdalli has lost one wing so victory is possible."

Phantom Cavalry.

It was somehow familiar.

'The phantom cavalry are troops that belong to the emperor.'

I read the description.

I didn't know if 2,000 phantom cavalry could resolve this situation.

However, Oswen had a confident expression.

“Follow me. We will go to wake up the phantom cavalry.”

The weary Oswen rose from his spot.

It took three days and nights to arrive at the desired destination.

A huge mountain made of bones. It was a place where skeleton soldiers were buried.

"The southern commander created a secret place underground. The phantom cavalry are hidden there. Why?"

Oswen cocked his head with confusion. I was laughing.

"Is this your job?"

"You don't understand. I hate the Hell Monarch. On the other hand, I wanted to be the Hell Monarch when I was the southern commander. I've been protecting this place for a long time on behalf of the owner."

"There is a difference in your eyes."

"Yes. Most commanders won't be like me. This state has lasted so long...they won't admit that the real Hell Monarch has appeared."

Oswen's words weren't exaggerated. It was natural since he still had the memories of the southern commander.

'Was Maxium unusual?'

Maxium. He had noticed from a distance that my heart belonged to the Hell Monarch. He shook off everything on the battlefield

and ran over.

On the other hand, the commanders would probably have different reactions. Emperor's Knight. I came to the conclusion that Maxium was unusual because he was the closest to the emperor.

"Time is really unique. It can change everything. Even those with absolute loyalty will change over time. The false loyalty would be worn away. Even so, there is no change in this world. It is indeed a sad place."

Oswen had an increased appreciation for time.

He had finally found himself after so long. Everything changed and this was a far cry from his original appearance so...overall, there was a feeling of sadness.

"What do the commanders want? The Hell Monarch has stopped this world. As a blacksmith, I don't know why they are so obsessed with God."

"Maybe they want to escape the fate of guardians."

"Certainly, they guard the Middle World from the Demon World. The emperor is not the emperor. That is why he was called the Shadow Emperor. He became crazy in the later years and became known as the Hell Monarch. But his destiny..."

Oswen smiled sadly and continued talking.

"It is really funny. His cursed destiny became twisted with another person's. If the Seven Sins had entered his hands then the worlds would have ended."

"Weren't you the one who made the Seven Sins?"

"I created them. I used the 'God's Metal' that the Hell Monarch brought me. I was engrossed in the work. However, the finished goods were beyond my scope of understanding. I collected the Seven Sins and abandoned them in a crack, where the dark spirits ended up picking them up."

There was a bittersweet expression on his face.

He had gone through all that work, and the result wasn't what he expected.

"What will happen if I collect all of the Seven Sins?"

Gathering three had given him the skill 'Corruption.' I couldn't help wondering what the effect of putting together all Seven Sins would be.

"I don't know. That only thing I'm certain of is that the one who wears them can cause unprecedented destruction. Therefore...I will help you, but don't gather any more of the Seven Sins."

“I’ll think about it.”

The one who wore them would cause destruction. But the Seven Sins weren’t made accidentally. The Hell Monarch had intended to wear them.

‘I don’t intend to become the Hell Monarch.’

My goal was to go beyond that. The Hell Monarch was in a lower category.

From the beginning, it was impossible to be the Hell Monarch.

“Come this way. The phantom cavalry are inside.”

There seemed to be no end in sight to the tomb of bones. Oswen stopped and cleared the bones off one part of the floor.

After the dust was wiped away, stones with strange patterns on them were revealed.

Jeeeok!

Oswen drew the pattern on his ribs. It was a bizarre sight. I jokingly spoke while watching Oswen.

"I guess it doesn't hurt for an undead."

"My ribs are reacting to the magic power in the seal."

"You examined it once. Hmm...make sure you remember everything."

The glyphs on the ribs. They soon shone with light! The floor opened with a loud sound.

"Ah! This feels like a dream. This memory is real."

"Is now the time to be talking?"

"Hmm hmm, I'm sorry. Let's go."

Oswen stopped fussing over his memories and started guiding me.

A spacious underground. A gigantic temple could be seen at the end.

The inside of the temple.

The skulls of 2,000 cavalry were lined up there. An ambient light was coming from the bones. They were self-illuminating. They even had expressions.

"The key is the Emperor's Sword. Drip blood on the sword and order them."

It wasn't a difficult procedure.

I used the Emperor's Sword to cut my index finger. Once blood flowed onto the sword, I slowly opened my mouth.

"Wake up."

Kururung!

The ground convulsed.

Hwiiiik!

The wind made a moaning sound.

Light shone and the ghost cavalry started appearing.

Cheok! Cheok!

They lined up and bowed. I couldn't help but raise my head higher at the majestic sight.

"Brilliant."

There were 2,000 phantom cavalry.

All of them would follow me.

After all of the phantom cavalry showed up, Oswen approached me.

"I don't remember seeing them move but it really is a great army. They are the best power that the Hell Monarch hid."

He was full of admiration.

I looked ahead and said.

"The main fortress isn't the only stronghold in the south. Other forts exist. We will go there."

"A good plan. Makdalli should have eaten everything by now. I know the locations so moving there won't be difficult. If we capture other forts, our survival will be announced and the remaining power of the south will gather..."

"Where is the nearest fort?"

"Two days' running in the northwest direction."

“Then let’s go.”

We rode on horses.

Two thousand phantom cavalry followed behind me.

Makdalli’s 3rd subordinate, Charung. He was a lich who captured one of the southern forts and raised the morale of the soldiers.

He drank from a branch of Jellim while climbing the walls.

‘Makdalli-nim will become the supreme commander.’

A commander hadn’t returned to the earth in hundreds of years. But this time, the southern commander was removed. The wind was starting to blow and it was apparent that Makdalli would become the supreme commander.

‘Apart from the Cruel Commander Maxium, the other commanders are no match for Makdalli-nim.’

Charung also felt good about following him.

He was currently 3rd ranked and imagined getting a higher position.

Opening the emperor's treasure trove...he dreamed about receiving a significant portion of the treasure and becoming stronger.

"Huh?"

He noticed it while strolling the walls and receiving the greetings of the soldiers.

Numerous lights could be seen in the distance.

'Is there something there?'

He raised his eyesight. He focused and could figure out the identities of the lights.

“...Attack! Regroup!”

2,000 soldiers on horseback were storming towards the fort.

The charging power of the phantom cavalry was unimaginable. The particularly huge phantom cavalry aimed at the gates.

Kwa ru ru rung!

The gates at the entrance were split apart. The phantom cavalry entered.

The massacre began.

There was no need for words.

‘I like it.’

It was simple and ignorant, but I didn’t dislike this way of fighting.

I gazed around and found the lich on the walls. I quickly realized that he was the captain of this place.

"Who are you?"

The lich asked.

I took out Wrath.

"The Hero of the South."

Thousands of soldiers were wiped out by the phantom cavalry. I engaged in battle with the 3rd subordinate Charung and won. I received help from Pride, but my pure strength was also above his level.

Of course, there was some damage. 300 phantom cavalry

returned to the earth. Nevertheless, this was a clear victory.

After enjoying the afterglow of the victory, Oswen said.

“Spread the rumour. The southern commander and the hero of the south have arrived to reverse the situation.”

"There is no time. As soon as the forts are stabilized, we will run towards Makdalli.”

"I'm not sure if we should recklessly run towards Makdalli. I will send troops to check his place of power.”

"Proceed as quickly as possible.”

Oswen moved to the side.

I was aiming for Makdalli but this was a war. It was hard to see future aspects of a war. I didn't want to be stupid enough to move too late.

‘Jeff, Torium.’

I stood on the walls and looked at the distant horizon.

Spread rumours.

I am alive, so come here.

One month.

In the meantime, I gathered up warriors.

It was spread through the south and Oswen's followers came.

There were numerous occasions when I moved against Makdalli's forces. They were brutally defeated every time.

In addition...rumours about the phantom cavalry spread around the entire Underground World.

Therefore, I decided to reveal myself.

I stopped hiding the Heart of the Hell Monarch and the Emperor's Sword.

The return of the Hell Monarch. Such rumours spread so the morale of the enemy was at the worst point.

“You...are not the Hell Monarch!”

Makdalli didn't acknowledge it even in the end.

He had high self-esteem as a commander. In his heart, he was

already the Hell Monarch. He didn't trust my sudden appearance.

In contrast, Makdalli's eyes were full of fear.

There was no choice. I had the Emperor's Sword, the Heart of the Hell Monarch and the phantom cavalry. Makdalli ran a long way just to be punished.

No matter how frustrating, he couldn't deny it.

"That's right. I am not the Hell Monarch."

I had no intention of denying it.

I was Randolph Brigsiel. Not the Hell Monarch.

I raised Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

Makdalli returned to the earth with a scream and...the southern war finally came to an end.

Chapter 139: The Final War

Oswen reclaimed the main fortress.

Rumours about me were currently spreading through the Underground World.

I had the Heart of the Hell Monarch and the Emperor's Sword. The soldiers wondered if I was truly their monarch.

I wasn't going to announce it officially. It would be left as rumours.

‘Maxium. Why isn't he coming out?’

Unlike Makdalli, the other commanders didn't move easily. Maybe they didn't believe it.

However, one person should move after hearing the rumours.

The Cruel Commander Maxium.

He knew me. He gave me the Emperor's Sword and pledged himself to me. Now I was out of the system so I didn't know if Maxium still accepted me.

Would he cheer and react like he did before? Or...would he be hostile?

Of course, I wasn't just waiting for his reaction.

After stabilizing the fortress, I started to look into full-fledged actions.

The wind was blowing. I planned to see this through to the end.

'I will go to the centre.'

I needed to have the consent of every commander to enter the treasure trove.

If they didn't follow me then I would thoroughly crush them.

"Follow me!"

A small wind.

There was a sharp gust as I moved.

The troops moved en masse out of the south. I advanced towards the central area without hesitation.

There were a total of 12 commanders. Makdalli had returned to the earth and Oswen was on my side.

The future developments depended on whether they accepted me or not. But I would erect a guillotine in front of them before making a judgement.

I would make them choose.

Along with Makdalli's remaining troops that I absorbed, there was also the phantom cavalry. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that I had the best army.

"Eat the weak."

This world was survival of the fittest.

I made a decision to step on the weakest commander.

They were shocked and unprepared. After having their power inflated, they claimed a 'legitimacy' and lied to the world.

'They are dogs that aren't worth leaving alive.'

It was like a commander raising their troops outside a warehouse.

It was unfortunate that they presumed to become the emperor. It was similar to a dog wagging its tail at me due to extenuating circumstances.

It was understandable.

It wasn't easy to believe rumours that the Hell Monarch had suddenly appeared. Eliminating Makdalli didn't mean that I was the Hell Monarch.

‘Anguish and atonement. As time passes, the collar around their necks will tighten.’

However, those were just my ‘thoughts.’

I sharpened my swords. They were also covered with poison that would be deadly with one prick.

Additionally...I was surprisingly stronger on the battlefield.

Time was completely on my side.

I was triumphant.

The commanders in the central area fell to their knees without hesitation. Three commanders had already returned to the earth. There were eight commanders remaining. I needed to handle seven of them.

My army grew quickly. It was at a level where I could be a match for Maxium.

But shortly after the third commander fell, someone came to my fortress.

He... was Maxium.

"Your Majesty! Is it truly Your Majesty?"

"It has been a while."

Flop!

This place was my barrack. Maxium was the only one here.

Maxium immediately went down on one knee.

"Forgive me for coming so late. I thought someone had impersonated Your Majesty and didn't move. I thought it was someone's trap. Then I heard about Your Majesty's achievements..."

Indeed. That was the reason why.

I nodded.

"I don't care."

"After overwhelming the other commanders, Maxium is forced to

believe Your Majesty's return. I can't forgive those ungrateful fellows!"

Maxium clenched his fists. I gave a small smile and asked the question I was curious about.

"Maxium. I was told that you were neutral. Then what is the reason behind your sudden movements? Are you aiming for the treasures?"

Maxium shook his head. He made a fuss.

"How can that be? After seeing Your Majesty, I started to move to clean up the trash. Their loyalty to Your Majesty has been distorted and I felt greatly disappointed after seeing you come back..."

I was the reason why he started to move. Although he was guilty, I wasn't the Hell Monarch. There was no need to punish Maxium.

"Then Maxium. Will you follow me to punish the other commanders?"

"Of course. I have come to do so. Now Maxium's 300,000 soldiers will follow Your Majesty."

"Okay. I won't doubt you."

"Thank you!"

Maxium placed his forehead on the ground.

"You have come so...shouldn't you do all the work?"

I replied like it was no big deal so he glanced up and said.

"I will take care of everything."

"Guide me out of the Underground World."

He had a slightly disappointed expression. It was natural. He had been waiting a long time in the Underground World. I finally came so he was distressed at the thought that I would leave.

"Maxium. There is nothing definite. And there is only a short time to wait."

He was already convinced that I had amnesia. He was ready to follow me no matter what.

Furthermore, if there was a way to leave from the treasure trove then there would be a way to return to this world. Maybe it would be possible to link this place to my dungeon. There were some possibilities but I couldn't easily say them.

“New Maxium. I will help Your Majesty until I return to the earth.”

Maxium got rid of all his doubts and heartache.

Considering the constant fighting that would take place in the future, Maxium’s attitude was correct.

Thus, Maxium joined me. My power instantly doubled.

There was no need to be afraid anymore.

This was a golden opportunity to handle the commanders and open the treasure trove.

I rapidly gained a hold over the central area of the Underground World.

Rumours that I formed an alliance with Maxium spread quickly. The commanders felt the danger and started to join together.

It wasn’t bad for me. I had gathered enough forces and was satisfied with how my strength had grown.

"The commanders have begun to assemble. We should handle them before they finish gathering.”

Maxium advised. But my thoughts were different.

"Leave it alone. We will take care of them all at once."

It was an opportunity to sweep them all away.

It would take too long to go around and wipe them out one by one.

I had handled three commanders in 60 days. They were vigilant and ran away quickly. Even now, it wouldn't be strange if that happened.

'They will be prepared.'

They showed no signs of wanting to bow to me. They were waiting for me to show any weaknesses. It would be better to let them gather and wipe them all out at once.

"Maxium and Oswen. Train the soldiers and prepare for the final war. We will finish everything at once."

"New Maxium, I will follow Your Majesty."

"New Oswen, I will follow Your Majesty."

Both of them were part of my retinue.

Maxium and Oswen seemed to be enjoying this situation. The misunderstanding that I was the Hell Monarch needed to be maintained until the end.

‘I have to be ready.’

Haien Moon’s swordsmanship. It was almost complete. With a little more practice, I would be able to make it mine.

‘It took several long months. It will be complete.’

My mouth was tight as I entered the training room.

My hands that were holding Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword trembled with excitement.

Three months.

That was the time it took for all the enemies to gather. The remaining six commanders had formed a temporary alliance.

Maxium and I thought that the gathering was ridiculous. It might be because they were threatened by the rumours about the Hell Monarch, but it made things easier.

My army reached 500,000. I had two great commanders under me. It would be reckless to take command of the army without

them.

The enemy's army was approximately 600,000. They had slightly higher numbers.

However, the six commanders had barely just joined together. It was obvious that their teamwork wouldn't match, unlike my army.

"I'm sorry. Those incompetent people have turned their hearts away from you."

Maxium had an ashamed attitude until the end.

This was in front of the treasure trove. It was the perfect place for the final war, but I once again felt sorry as I saw the hostile commanders.

They were originally the ones that would lead the Underground World, so they blamed me.

"It isn't your sin. They have been unable to throw off the confines of time and became corrupt."

I raised the Emperor's Sword.

And aimed it towards the enemy.

“Maxium. If you feel that they are wrong, then lay their heads down in front of me. I gave them plenty of time and opportunities to accept me. Cut off the heads of those who refuse. Then I will forgive you.”

“I will follow your words. I’ll present the heads of those unsightly commanders to Your Majesty.”

Maxium perked up.

I looked forward.

There were over one million soldiers gathered in front of the place where the treasure trove was stored.

A wide plain. The two sides were facing each other.

Only the winner could open the door to the treasure trove. The loser would quietly return to the earth.

"Charge!"

I shouted while quickly rushing forward.

It was the beginning of the final war.

The smell of death was everywhere. It was familiar. It was

comforting like a home.

Numerous enemies were blown away by Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

Chwack! Chwaruruk!

I rotated my swords.

A trance!

The completed Haien Moon's swordsmanship was amazing. I immersed myself in the flow.

As I repeatedly wielded the swords and killed the enemies, I felt something changing in me. The change was so natural I took it for granted.

The magic power discharged from my heart fluctuated.

Kuaaaang!

Then the sleeping Lightning God woke up.

Lightning God burned all the enemies in front of me. It was a reunion after a long time, but I acted casually like it had only been minutes.

As time passed, I gradually got faster. The moonlight became more intense and it felt like my heart was bursting.

It seemed like time was accelerating.

‘Ah!’

At one point, things became static and I awakened.

A surge of power!

I felt like everything had returned.

In fact, I knew that I was much stronger than in the past. It was like the limit had increased.

‘I exceeded the limit.’

That’s right. A sensation I had never experienced before. But I was certain. I had exceeded the limit. My potential had risen sharply...!

There was a smile on my face.

I woke up from the accelerated time in a very good mood.

The reason why?

The grand dukes had hidden the secret to breaking through the limits.

'I am complete.'

The Underground World had been a great help to me.

If I hadn't grown, then in the end, I might have been defeated. But not in the future.

They might grow to be equal to me. I needed to resolve this before it happened.

'I must end this war.'

It was coming to an end.

Chapter 140: Return (1)

The war continued for three days. I was in a hurry to return so I pushed them day and night.

I was more powerful than before and was already the strongest in this place. Lightning God burned down the enemies around me as I aimed only at the commanders.

Oswen and Maxium recognized my intentions and attracted the attention of the troops.

As a result...on the evening of the fourth day, I was able to return all six enemy commanders to the earth.

They spoke right before my sword sliced their necks.

"I want to forget everything."

"This is just a dream!"

The stopped world. Only time flowed.

In the process, they became exhausted. Maybe they were waiting for someone to punish them. There was a look of peace on their faces before returning to the earth.

They couldn't withstand the long years without the Hell

Monarch.

Once the commanders disappeared, the enemy's morale quickly deteriorated. The enemy ran away and those remaining were quickly cleaned up.

Finally, my work in the Underground World was finished.

Shortly after the war ended.

I stood before a huge mountain. This was the place where the Hell Monarch's treasures were hidden.

‘There will be a way for me to return here.’

There had to be. My real goal was to become the devil. Ruling the Underground World wasn't bad but I didn't forget my goal.

I needed to quickly leave here and determine the situation. After Okullos died, Earth was likely to have fallen into confusion.

The key was how much time had passed. A little over six months was spent here, but the flow of time could be different depending on the world.

"Their souls were sucked in."

I said while looking at the front.

There was an enormous entrance in the mountain. The souls of the commanders who returned to the earth had been sucked in.

"Once a commander loses their body, their souls are meant to be sucked into the treasure trove. Your Majesty, Oswen and I will place my hands on the entrance. Once you place your sword in the middle, the warehouse will open."

Maxium explained. I nodded.

There was something like a keyhole in the bottom of the door. The sword was supposed to be placed there.

Soon after, Oswen and Maxium touched the large door guarding the treasure trove.

I picked up the Emperor's Sword. I slid it inside the hole and...the world started to shake.

-System recovery complete.

The protection system is working.

The details of the demon 'Randolph Brigsiel' have been updated.

-Impossible achievement! You are the first person to step foot on an unknown world.

The system has obtained information about the Underground World.

-A link has been created between the demon 'Randolph Briggsiel's dungeon' and the 'Underground World.'

The link is being created. 1%, 2%...

5,000,000pt will be paid.

3,000 achievement points will be added.

-The 'Treasures of the Hell Monarch' has been opened.

Unable to judge accomplishments. Searching for similar achievements.

4,000,000pt will be paid.

800 achievement points will be added.

A list of treasures has been added to the Achievements Store.

-Incredible achievement! Surpassing the limits has been achieved for the first time.

1,500,000pt will be paid.

1,000 achievement points will be added.

-A remarkable achievement! 50,000 creatures have been handled alone for the first time.

1,000,000pt will be paid.

Achievements score 500 points will be added.

-An amazing accomplishment! The first to obtain two high class undead as your subordinates.

-Title 'Undead (Ex U) has been obtained.

1,200,000pt...

-Great achievement!

.....

-You will be forcibly transferred to 'Earth.'

A crack.

I was sucked inside.

When I opened my eyes, everything around me was different.

'Earth.'

The surrounding air and magic power. It was familiar despite being gone half a year.

This was Earth. I had returned.

But it wasn't near my dungeon.

"A person has suddenly appeared!"

"Damn, what are you doing? Flee!"

Humans with extremely pale faces.

The Caucasian people looked at me.

I was on a street surrounded by tall buildings. Most of them were half destroyed and there were many humans killed.

‘Monster wave.’

Creatures were moving in my direction.

They drooled as they came closer.

I was just about to pull out the sword when two people emerged from the crack in rapid succession.

“This place...?”

"Ohh, Your Majesty!"

They were Oswen and Maxium. They had come together through the large crack.

Oswen was confused because it was his first on Earth, but Maxium was familiar with it. Maxium had already experienced falling to Earth once.

"Clean up the creatures nearby."

I gripped Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

It would be better to talk to the humans but they were distracted by the creatures.

After I wiped out those around here, I would be able to get a better understanding of the current situation.

10 minutes passed.

The Awakened arrived but the situation was already over.

The three of us had killed 500 creatures.

Everyone who watched was speechless with astonishment.

They marveled quietly at the surrounding devastation.

“Demons?”

The representative of the 50 Awakened that were maintaining a distance asked.

It might be different if I was alone, but Oswen and Maxium looked like creatures.

Yet...I was plainly asked if I was a demon. It seemed a little different from when I was last on Earth.

'Have the demons become more prominent?'

It certainly seemed like a long time had passed. I put my swords away and said.

"A summoner."

It was extremely rare but there were some summoners among the Awakened. It was perfect to throw off suspicion.

The representative nodded at my words.

“Ah! You are a summoner! Can I ask where you came from?”

“South Korea, Heaven’s Will. I am the leader of the raid group

Devil Hunters. Is that all you need?”

“South Korea...Heaven’s Will?”

The response was ambiguous. Distrust was in their eyes. I spoke with a frown.

“I would like to know the current date and the year.”

"July 13, 2021."

"2021? Are you sure?"

"It is certain."

Tsk! I clicked my tongue.

The flow of time was different. One year and eight months had passed.

If so, their attitude could be understood. The demons had started moving and revealed their presence. That’s why I was asked if I was a demon.

“By the way...are you really from South Korea? No one has come out of there for a while.”

The suspicions of the representative Awakened weren't removed.

His hands were placed on his sword. A sneaky action.

In the meantime, the level of the Awakened seemed to have risen.

'I'll open Mind's Eye.'

I almost forgot about it since the skill wasn't used in a while.

I used Mind's Eye to grasp the level of the Awakened.

Name	Edgar Sheen		
Occupation	Hero (Warrior)		
Title	Survivor (R, Strength +4)		
	1,000 Victories in Battle (U, Stamina +7)		
Stats			
Strength	65 (+4)	Intelligence	41
Agility	44	Stamina	48 (+7)
Magic Power	48	Potential	(246 (+11) / 311)
Uniqueness	none		

Skills	Deadly Blow (U)
	Mental Focus (R)

Most of the Awakened gathered here had similar figures.

It was surprising. I couldn't believe the changes in one year and eight months. Their abilities had grown while I wasn't around.

If I thought of them as the average, the elite would probably exceed a total of 300 stats.

It meant that things had changed dramatically over time.

"What does it mean that no one has come out?"

"Have you been living in the mountains?"

"I have been in a similar place for the last two years."

"Ah, then you might not know."

The representative of the Awakened removed his hand from the sword. His doubts were almost erased.

He subsequently said.

“South Korea is under attack from various demons. They closed in from all over the place. The aim of the demons seem to be the Korean dungeon and the Awakened.”

The attack of several demons?

Shouldn't I be glad that it wasn't occupied yet?

I breathed out. I needed to consider the possibilities before moving hastily.

I needed to hear the before and after of the situation.

“Since when?”

"Since a year ago. It is impossible to contact them because all electricity is disconnected and the sky is occupied. Well, South Korea isn't the only country in such a situation. Angels and demons are fighting...they aren't thinking of humans. Ahyu!”

All of the Awakened sighed.

The angels...

‘There is no time to waste.’

It was worst than I thought.

I needed to move before I lost everything.

"Well, thank you for the help. Summoners are very rare. My name is Edgar. The guild master of the American guild 'Golden Time'...heok!"

I turned around and ran as hard as I could.

I disappeared in a flash, causing the Awakened to make a fuss.

"Did he use a space scroll?"

Edgar was the guild master of the Golden Time guild. He blinked and withdrew the hand he had held out.

The basic things had been restored but my connection to Yihi still wasn't working. In the end, I had to go directly to the dungeon to check out the situation.

"Is this place called Earth? It is amazing."

Oswen had heard the circumstances about how I obtained the Heart of the Hell Monarch. He knew that the demons were fighting to become the devil.

"His Majesty has work to achieve here. Keep silent."

Maxium spoke in a serious manner.

The two of them moved together with me.

"Of course I will follow."

Oswen laughed lightly. Oswen seemed to be enjoying this situation. Maxium thought I was the Hell Monarch and was delighted to follow me.

However, I had no time to worry about their conversation.

'I need to reach South Korea soon.'

Streets filled with creatures could be seen.

It was already at an intermediate level...but I sped up even more.

Chapter 141: Return (2)

Yihi was armed with the jeweled crown, jeweled shield and the Fairy Knight's Sword.

"They have already made it to the 14th floor. If the Tree of Origin is lost then it is all over! We must defend it until Master comes back!"

The badly wounded Krasla spoke with a merciless expression.

"Fairy-nim. The enemies are well prepared. Not long ago, the griffin and Gigantes was severely wounded. Chrisley also isn't safe. Tashmal, Mago and I..."

"Can't you be quiet? We will defend it no matter what. Anything other than that won't be allowed! Yihi will surely defend it."

"I know. But it isn't necessary for Fairy-nim to be here. Hasn't Fairy-nim already become the Core? Fairy-nim's presence is essential for the Dungeon Core and the Tree of Origin."

The demons were well prepared.

The magic power of the dungeon was being twisted.

An enormous amount of magic power was consumed from the Tree of Origin and Dungeon Core. The dungeon was collapsing. It

was only continuing to be maintained thanks to Yihi.

However, it wouldn't be good if Yihi was damaged.

"Do you want Yihi to just suck my fingers and watch? This is all happening because of Yihi. Me!"

"Fairy-nim..."

Kurung!

Kururung!

It was at that moment.

Noises indicating a large scale movement could be heard from downstairs.

"The enemy is coming. Fairy-nim. Please don't overdo it."

Krasla was holding his red spear.

There had been over 100 attacks in the past year. So far, the attacks had been blocked but...

The enemy's offense was growing these days.

They were able to hold on thanks to Tashmal, Mago, Krasla and some magic items from the lich Gaparam.

Krasla's thoughts didn't last long.

'My body is burning up.'

He needed to defend it.

Despite his expectations, the Dungeon Master hadn't appeared for a long time.

The severely injured Krasla turned around.

"Yihi will defend it. I will be sure to keep it until Master comes back."

Yihi couldn't stay there quietly. The fully armed Yihi bit her lips and flapped her wings.

Duke Dipella, Marquis Anastasia, Earl Amurun and Marquis Jeneral...four demons from Pandemonium's faction had gathered. They looked ahead of them with different expressions.

Even if they were from the same faction, it was normally impossible for four demons to be gathered together. However, it was a different story if the problem was important.

A fierce battle was going on in front of them.

It might look even at first glance, but it was actually extremely tilted to one side.

A handful of dark elves and angels were being overwhelmed by the four demons' creatures.

Krasla, Mago, Tashmal...they were certainly strong, but they were wounded and exhausted. If a huge rock continued being hammered at, cracks would start showing up.

"Resistance is strong so there must be something huge on the 15th floor."

Marquis Anastasia cried out.

All the forces remaining in the dungeon had been gathered to block them. It was the first large scale resistance since the early days.

Duke Dipella laughed.

"A last ditch effort. The creatures are tired from blocking us for one year. Randolph Brigsiel...he had this much power hidden, so it would be difficult for Pandemonium-nim if he was still here."

Pandemonium was a grand duke with a lot of knowledge. He had a solid knowledge and familiarity with magic. He devised a simple way to shock the magic power in the dungeon.

Pandemonium was the one who figured out that the master of this dungeon was Randolph Brigsiel.

Thanks to that, it was easy. The creatures with low intelligence lost control and the fairy was unable to make strategic movements.

"Even so, one year..."

Anastasia muttered with dislike.

Last year, Randolph Brigsiel's death was confirmed at the auction. He never showed up. He was certainly involved in a battle with Okullos...in the process, Pandemonium identified Randolph Brigsiel's dungeon.

There was no problem so far. The dungeon didn't have its owner. They could just grab it and eat.

But the power left behind by Randolph Brigsiel was beyond imagination.

The quality and numbers couldn't be gathered by a mere demon in just three years. It wasn't an issue to be taken lightly. The four demons rushed in. It had already been one year since they entered.

They didn't want to imagine what would happen against the high class creatures if it hadn't been for Pandemonium.

'They persisted for one year.'

Baduk!

Anastasia gritted her teeth.

One year. They only managed to reach the 14th floor in that time.

Troops weren't able to be recruited without the owner of the dungeon. Yet they persisted desperately.

It was completely frustrating.

There were 15 floors remaining but all the troops had been mobilized. It was a chance for victory. Now...they just needed to end it.

Then Dipella said to Anastasia.

"I feel a presence from the 15th floor. It is similar to the world tree but more intense. We need to bring it back for Pandemonium to confirm. What could they be hiding? Huhu."

It was natural for the demons to wonder.

There was ‘something’ hidden on the 15th floor.

Randolph Brigsiel had shown strange behaviour from the moment he first appeared. He had an overwhelming number of points that the other demons couldn’t imitate...Okullos used a shortcut to imitate it but he still fell short.

The four demons thought the secret to Randolph Brigsiel’s points was on the 15th floor.

“Let’s end this.”

A giant followed after Dipella.

Titan!

A high class 2Lv creature. The entire body was covered with sharp armour. Gigantes was forced to kneel in front of the titan.

He was purchased at the last Demon World Auction and his power was beyond expectations. He was perfect for piercing through the enemies.

“They won’t last much longer.”

There were deep smiles on the faces of Dipella and the other demons.

A red spear flew through the air.

Thud!

The body lost its strength and fell to the ground.

“Kuooh...”

Krasla. He was an unyielding warrior who encountered countless enemies since the demons invaded the dungeon. He had never fallen, but was like a rock slowly being chipped away.

After Chrisley was trapped by the enemies and suffered a critical injury, he drove himself even further. However, it was only up to here.

‘I have to stand up.’

He placed his hands on the floor but couldn’t gather any power. His back and shoulders were disabled due to some mistakes.

As Krasla collapsed, a large number of creatures surrounded him. He was able to take down over 100 creatures alone but he was immobile.

‘I must defend it.’

Beyond where he collapsed was the path to the Tree of Origin. The Tree of Origin was the hope of the dark elves and a comfortable home. Chrisley, who was being treated there, would die.

No. They barely found this place. This was a place where everyone could settle down and start fresh so he promised to protect it.

However, Dungeon Master had died. He managed to survive one year without Master but...

Grrr!

A werewolf’s teeth approached him.

Krasla bit his lips. But his willpower couldn’t transcend the limits of reality.

“Hiyah!”

It was at that moment. Yihi flew forward with the Fairy Knight’s Sword.

Light shone from the Fairy Knight’s Sword and had the power to chase away evil.

The werewolf stepped back. The creatures couldn't approach easily.

“Fairy-nim...”

Don't say anything else!”

"Please protect Chrisley and this place...”

“You can't die. Yihi won't allow it. You can't!”

Yihi stubbornly shook her head while using the jeweled shield. Then she burst into tears. Yihi felt responsible for it. She blamed herself and felt regret every day.

"There will be no more losses. Don't die because of Yihi's mistake. Master will come back, hiing.”

The momentum was good but she couldn't help feeling fear. Her hands quivered as she used the sword to assault the creatures around her.

The saber tigers, Tashmal and Mago were fighting but...

The titan and demons irrevocably reversed the atmosphere.

"Tashmal? I had no idea that an angel had fallen. Randolph Briggsiel, he would be a nuisance if he was alive."

The leader of the four demons, Duke Dipella was playing with Tashmal.

Soon, Tashmal fell to the ground.

The massacre began.

The rest of the demons put pressure on Mago so the situation was the worst.

‘Master. Yihi was wrong.’

Yihi closed her eyes. Everything happening around her was horrible. This was a punishment. It was natural to receive a punishment after sinning.

‘Yihi was wrong.’

But...Yihi wanted to see Master at least once. Even if he hated her, at least once... She begged and begged.

She didn't know how much time passed.

At that moment, there was a change in the surroundings.

“You...?”

"Ack!"

"This, this is ridiculous!"

“Randolph Briggsiel!”

The demons were shocked. Finally, that ‘name’ fell from someone’s mouth.

Kwarurung!

Lightning struck.

Kwaang!

A huge explosion occurred.

Kieeeeek!

Kuaaah!

Demons were screaming.

That sound caused Yihi to open her eyes.

At the same time...

“Master.”

She couldn't believe it.

A dream?

Could it be an illusion created by her mind?

No, it was fine if it was an illusion. Even if it was false...that was still fine.

“Master! Hiing, Master!”

Yihi flew over and wept.

I raised Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

The demons and the creatures. They had invaded up to the 14th floor of my dungeon.

I felt dirty.

They didn't have permission to enter.

This was my dungeon and they were thieves. Thieves had entered the house, so the owner couldn't stay still.

"Your Majesty, what should we do?"

Maxium asked.

What should they do?

The answer was clear.

"The unauthorized beings, kill them all."

They coveted what was mine and it would cost them their lives.

"The other demons...?"

"They are my prey."

I said curtly. There was no yielding. The familiar demons. They were my food.

"New Maxium. I will follow Your Majesty."

"I will do my best."

Maxium and Oswen left.

I held Wrath and the Emperor's Sword, kicking off against the ground.

The demons managed to confirm my presence but it was too late.

I had grown stronger.

'Dark Sword.'

Huuung!

My swords were covered with darkness. Moonlight was laid down on top of that. It was a sophisticated and perfected technique. Due to my overwhelming growth, I was already standing on top of their heads.

It was a dicey situation but it wasn't too late.

If it wasn't too late then it would be simple to reverse the situation.

Kwa ru ru rung!

Lightning God popped out.

It immediately started to burn the enemies around me.

Duke Dipella. Marquis Anastasia. Earl Amurun. Marquis Jeneral.

I repeated those four names as I stood in front of them.

“Randolph Briggsiel!”

Dipella cried out incredulously as he saw me.

I hadn't shown up in one year and eight months, only to suddenly appear. They couldn't believe it. However, this was the reality.

I had come here to kill them.

"Did you come back from the dead? It is already too late. You alone can't change anything!"

Dipella closed his eyes and tried to relax.

Randolph Briggsiel was back after a while. Even if he was an unusual demon, it was too late to reverse the situation by himself. It was impossible.

"You shouldn't have touched what was mine."

However, my eyes blazed as I stared at Dipella and the other demons.

It would have been impossible before, but things had changed.

Unlike before, I was becoming complete. I had set foot in the realm of 'transcendence'.

There was no possibility that they could go near me.

I was completely confident.

"Your sins will be repaid with death."

They could freely act for one year and eight months.

But that would change in the future.

Return!

I was back.

What more did I need to say?

The only thing left for them...was ruin!

Chapter 142: A Worthy Death (1)

I didn't drag it out.

I got rid of all restrictions. I opened my magic power and it caused a huge surge in the air around me. 'Dominance' started to creep into the surroundings. The creatures in the area were instinctively frightened. This was the perception of my presence.

It was similar to an area declaration. The high class 2Lv titan. Even this formidable creature took a step back. He withdrew and took a defensive attitude towards me.

The expressions of Dipella and the other demons changed. They frowned and placed a hand on their weapons. I was already moving before they could prepare their defenses.

They were completely lacking compared to the grand dukes. The reality couldn't be ignored.

I had gained a few enlightenments in the Underground World. I had grown rapidly and...the rewards I got from there were at a terrifying level.

Besides, this was my Dungeon. As soon as I returned, the dungeon recognized me and started operating normally. In my dungeons, I was almost invincible.

Taak!

I pushed off against the ground while gripping Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

I used Moonlight Falling and instantly appeared in front of Dipella and the titan.

Even if it was only a short while, I couldn't tolerate their presence in my dungeon. I could get rid of them quickly but it was still unpleasant. It was only acceptable if they were corpses.

Kwaang!

The titan's lumbering body was hit by Wrath. The titan was thrown back with a loud sound. His body slumped against the dungeon wall for a while.

Keoh, keoooh.

The titan speck on the wall got up with a shake of his head. He couldn't balance and staggered as he took one step. His spirit couldn't wake up from the sudden attack. There was a clear hole in the part of the armour that had been hit.

"Pride."

I muttered. At that moment, black flames sprung up from my gloves and covered my entire body. The Wrath and Sloth skills

raised and lowered my stats, but 'Pride' was different.

Pride's flames. Once they hit the enemy, the flames wouldn't stop until the opponent died. Of course, intelligence needed to be high for the skill to have this effect...I already had one foot in the transcendent realm.

The flames at this level couldn't be avoided.

Hwaruruk!

I stretched out my hand and Pride's flames reached the titan.

Keooooook! Keooooook!

The titan was directly hit by the fire and groaned in pain. The flames penetrated the armour and spread all over the body.

"Seductive Kiss!"

Dipella took the time when I was distracted by the titan to attack me. Hundreds of mouths floated around me, unleashing a specific pheromone designed for bewitchment.

But...I was covered with Pride's flames. The skill was unable to touch me.

"Twilight Whip!"

Whips emerged from the mouths and started swinging. It was a bizarre sight and annoying for me.

Pasak!

Wrath itself was a strong weapon, but it was overpowered with the combination of Dark Sword and Moonlight Falling. It was possible to break everything that existed in this world. There was no reason not to use the skills against Dipella.

The whips were cut off and couldn't be used again.

Dipella watched this process and opened his mouth.

"The power of that sword...! What is your relationship with Ariel Diablo!"

"Don't compare me with her."

Ariel Diablo's Abyss Sword and my Dark Sword were similar. However, hearing the comparison didn't feel that good. It was something that I purchased from the Achievements Store.

All the whips around me were cut off and then I assaulted Dipella. The moonlight from Haien Moon's sword technique shone even in the dark dungeon. The magic of the moonlight eroded

away Dipella's magic power.

Dipella was baffled. Seductive Kiss and Twilight Whip didn't produce the results he desired. Originally it was normal to have hundreds of lips and whips. However, the ones that I cut didn't recover.

It was due to the magic power itself being severed.

“Randolph Brigsiel...!”

Huum!

Dipella gathered his remaining magic power into his lungs. I knew exactly what skill was being used. It was Duke Dipella's patented skill 'Breath of Darkness.'

Kwaaaaaaaang!

A dark cloud poured from Dipella's mouth. It flew towards me while corroding everything it touched.

I recalled Lightning God. Electricity and Pride's flames shot towards it. The two forces combined and collided with Breath of Darkness.

Huuuuuuong!

The dungeon shook. My flames smashing against Breath of Darkness caused a flare. It was only for a moment.

"This, this is ridiculous!"

How could he dream that his skill would be broken?

Breath of Darkness was eaten by my flames. It couldn't resist and eventually gave way. In the end, Dipella was in its path.

Kwajijijik!

The flames swallowed up Dipella. The flames and Lightning God wiped out Dipella without leaving a single piece behind. He evaporated like there was nothing there in the first place.

The other demons hesitated and took a step back.

"Such a thing...!"

"Isn't he just an earl? That power...I can't believe it."

The titan was blown apart and even Dipella wasn't a match. It wasn't easy for them to accept. The most powerful one among them, Dipella, had been defeated...

They realized that I was a lot different from the 'Randolph

Brigsiel' they knew. The power I showed at the Demon World Auction was only my points and high class creature. This was the first time I demonstrated my combat capabilities directly.

It was a pity but it was impossible for me to show generosity. It was the same for any demon.

Weak people weren't wanted. They deserved to die.

Hwaruruk!

Pride's flames burned even stronger.

Oswen and Maxium approached me while covered in blood.

“New Maxium. I have punished the enemies in the name of Your Majesty.”

“New Oswen. It was the same for me.”

Maxium desperately accepted my words but Oswen had strong principles. In the first place, he hated the Hell Monarch. As long as I walked a different path from the Hell Monarch, Oswen would follow me.

He let me know it. Despite having four arms cut off, I brought Oswen along because his knowledge would be a useful thing.

However, I wasn't paying attention to Oswen and Maxium. My eyes were fixed on one point.

“Dungeon...Master...”

Krasla.

He stared at me with one hand on his red spear. But there was no focus in his eyes. He lost his eyesight.

His injuries were serious. His health was in a state of great deterioration. In other words, his life force was being gnawed at.

It wasn't just one or two times, but dozens of times. It was amazing that he even survived this long.

‘I'm too late.’

In this state, he wouldn't be able to live, even with an elixir.

"Really...Dungeon Master? Strange. Um...it seems like I can't see.”

“That's right.”

“Ah...”

Krasla smiled.

He had to understand that he would die soon.

Even so, Krasla still laughed. It was a fact that I had returned.

I recalled the first time I met Krasla. He had been trapped in a cage and shortly after entering the dungeon, I had punished both him and the dark elves.

Krasla was the one who most passionately imitated a dog. His sister Chrisley became queen and his warrior's pride was revived.

He swore his loyalty to me after Chrisley survived due to the ceremony. He followed me and was never a disappointment.

"Pleas..."

Krasla painfully opened his mouth. His words couldn't come out correctly. Most of his energy had been lost. However, I knew what Krasla wanted to say.

"Krasla. You are weak. Weak and about to die."

My words were heartless. On the surface, I seemed to have a blasé attitude.

Krasla closed his eyes. His life would wane in a few seconds. I was sure that he would completely stop breathing in a minute.

So...I said what Krasla wanted to.

"I will make Chrisley stronger than anyone else. She will never die like you."

"Th...ank..."

Duk!

Krasla's hands flopped down without any strength.

His heart wasn't beating anymore. The flowing blood cooled quickly.

However, the smile on his face didn't change. He was reassured by my words.

I had been missing for one year and eight months, yet he still blindly believed me.

"Hiing...sniffle!"

Yihi's head was down as she wiped away the continuously flowing tears. Her expression showed her sincere sorrow and

regret for the dead.

I was still looking down at Krasla.

He died without strength, but his death wasn't worthless.

I had that thought and finally turned away.

"Bury his body next to the Tree of Origin. I will be checking the top floor."

The dead creatures were buried near the Tree of Origin.

The process didn't last long. It was natural for creatures to die.

It was better to plan for tomorrow instead of dwelling on grief.

In order to do so, I needed to figure out the overall situation of the dungeon.

'There is almost nothing left.'

Curse words automatically rose.

The creatures had dried up. It was comforting that most of the major ones were well. Although many of them were injured and couldn't move, they hadn't lost their source of health like Krasla

had.

Treatment was still possible.

‘The China and Japan dungeons...are safe.’

I confirmed it through the connection to South Korea’s dungeon. They didn’t seem to be attack like the South Korean dungeon. It seemed like Pandemonium hadn’t noticed them.

I examined the status of my dungeon.

‘In order to normalize the dungeon, I’ll need to repair what it broken.’

The most urgent problem was the breeding species. I had built them up over three years so an astronomical number of points was required for restoration.

‘I got a huge number of points after escaping the Underground World.’

I received numerous achievements.

I realized that I hadn’t checked everything.

I decided to use this opportunity to figure out what had changed.

Points - 38,799,344

Current achievement points - 29,158

The points and achievement points were satisfactory. I would be able to make a dungeon stronger than before. In addition, the treasures of the Underground World were added to the Achievements Store. I would use the achievement points so that such a thing wouldn't happen again.

‘Status window.’

Soon my status window emerged in the air.

Name	Randolph Brigsiel
Occupation	Demon Earl (Dungeon Master)
Title	Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)
	Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)
	First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)
	Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)
	Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)

	Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)		
Stats			
Strength	85 (+20)	Intelligence	90 (+15)
Agility	80 (+20)	Stamina	85 (+22)
Magic Power	94 (+16)	Potential	(434 (+93))/550)
Remaining Stat Points	13	Electric Power	21GW
Uniqueness	The master of the Underground World		
	The Heart of the Hell		
	Monarch has completely awakened		
Skill	Combine Everything (Ex U)		
	Mind's Eye (Epic)		
	Dark Sword (Epic)		
	Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive)		
	Lightning Elemental (Epic)		
	Pride (Epic)		
	Corruption (Ex Epic)		
	Wrath (Strength +7)		

Skill and Item Effects	Sloth (Agility +7)
	Pride (Stamina + 7)
	Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 96 Intelligence 93 Agility 86 Stamina 85 Magic 98
Potential (412+51/500)

Strength 105 Intelligence 105 Agility 100 Stamina 107 Magic
110 Potential (434+93/550)

It was an amazing growth. All my pure stats and calibrated stats had risen significantly. Above all, my potential limit had risen by 50. These were very tangible things.

By default, demons had a potential of 500 points. But normally, only the dukes and grand dukes managed to reach this limit. I had escaped that ‘base’ value. It meant that my limit was different from others and I had room to grow beyond 500 points.

Besides...if I added the calibrated stats then it already exceeded 500.

A total of 527 stat points!

I had used the basis of 500 points as the standard for transcendence and now I had dipped a foot in that realm. I wouldn't be lacking at all when going against the grand dukes.

My total stats were similar to the Dark Spirit King Adonis. However, I had surpassed the limits while he was still looking for a way. He was stagnant while I could continue to advance.

'A legend ranked title.'

My eyes looked at 'Ruler of the Underground World (Legend).' Something legend ranked couldn't be obtained just from being strong. I thought it would take at least five more years to even have a chance to obtain it.

My decisions in the Underground World were perfect. If I hadn't gone there and broken my limits then it was unlikely that I would win this war, even with my past knowledge.

'My skill ratings have also increased.'

It was due to a title.

It increased the rating of all skills under epic grade by 0.5.

The most gratifying thing was that Mind's Eye became epic grade. Now a similar incident to the one with Okullos wouldn't be

repeated.

Divine Sword Unity enhanced the completeness of my sword techniques while the cutting edge of Dark Sword was sharpened. If I combined Dark Sword and Moonlight Falling with Wrath, it seemed to be able to match Ariel Diablo's Abyss Sword.

In a true sense, I had become their opponent. No...I became a hunter.

A hunter that beasts crawling on the ground would have to fear.

Chapter 143: A Worthy Death (2)

“Achievements Store.”

As those words fell from my mouth, the Dungeon Core glowed more intensely.

-Welcome to the Achievements Store.

Current achievement points - 29,151

Achievement points can be used to purchase goods from the store.

Item names marked with a + are only available for purchase once.

-Items from the ‘Treasure Trove of the Hell Monarch’ have been added.

Intervention complete. Additional items can be found in the ‘Achievement Related Items’ column.

Hell Monarch.

He made the Underground World. The system wasn't recognized in that created world. And I obtained the treasure trove.

What was hidden in there?

The commanders had betrayed the Hell Monarch because of how great the items were.

I moved my gaze to the window that popped up.

[Additional Achievement Related Items]

Angel Egg - 500

Phantom Cavalry - 300

Ghost Archer - 400

Ghost Mage Soldier - 1,200

.....

+ Thousand Wings (Epic) - 5,000

+ Roaring Shield (Epic) - 6,800

+ Absolute Ice Crystal (Ex Epic) - 23,000

.....

+ Hell Puppet - 10,000

+ Mountain's Sign - 15,000

+ Doom Dragon - 60,000

.....

- + Advanced Training Room (5/5) - 8,000
- + Utopia (Legend) - 99,555
- + Orb of Destruction (Legend) - 99,555

The list was long. I couldn't confirm everything with one glance. Among them, there were 10 important things.

Originally 'Aojin' was the one with the most expensive price in the Achievements Store. Now more expensive things existed.

Doom Dragon, Utopia and Orb of Destruction!

They were names I never heard of but I couldn't simply ignore them.

Doom Dragon was the first species while the other two had a legend rating.

Legend grade items were very rare in my previous life. As far as I knew, there had been only three items. Just one could unleash incredible havoc and reverse the game. In particular, the human camp broke the defenses of a grand duke using the 'Celestial Wand.'

Of course, the user was one of the 10 strongest humans but that strength was amazing.

'All of this...it is enough to call someone a god.'

Hell Monarch. The more I thought about it, he really was an unknown person. He entered the transcendent realm and climbed to a position close to a god. He wasn't actually a god but he had enough strength to be one.

He lost the gamble and that power was now mine. Using it properly could allow me to gain the upper hand. I would be able to purchase a decent item with my current achievement points.

'It is enough to check it.'

I nodded.

I identified what was possible and what wasn't with my current points and achievements.

The budget was sufficient to restore my forces. It was overflowing. With a little more time, I would be able to make my dungeons strong.

My dungeon was safe despite being damaged. It was enough. The creatures were worthy of praise for holding out so long against the demons.

As long as I was back, I wouldn't tolerate another incident like this.

I shut down Domestic Mode.

After that, I left the top floor and found Chrisley.

Chrisley was in a serious condition.

She was lying alone in a treehouse with a pale face and closed eyes. I grabbed Chrisley's wrists and experienced some backlash as I poured my magic power into her.

This was the first time. It meant the body was instinctively protecting itself from external intervention.

At first glance, her source of life was quite compromised like Krasla's. There was a serious problem with her twisted up magic power.

"Yihi. Since when has Chrisley been in this state?"

I calmly spoke to Yihi who was quietly watching me from the door.

"Yes Master. Exactly 58 days. Yihi remembers it clearly. She was taken by a surprise attack while trying to save the dwarf king."

58 days...

‘It is dangerous.’

There was a big difference between hearing and seeing it directly. If it was just a bodily injury then it could be healed with an elixir. But at this level, I would have to apply some force.

Her insides were being overwhelmed with magic power. She was able to live due to her ‘good blood.’

The pure blood of the true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf was trying hard to restore Chrisley’s body to normal.

There were few treatments for magic power running wild. The established theory was that death was inevitable. It wasn’t quite twisted but the magic power was being squeezed by a force.

It was a type of incurable disease. There was no precedent for treatment but there were some methods. More than anything...it couldn’t be solved alone.

Outside help was needed. And the outsider helping was also risking their lives. In the meantime, she was likely to die. If she was lucky enough to live, she might be disabled for the rest of her life. Interfering with magic power wasn’t an easy feat.

This was the case.

‘Her magic power is warping. She has been in this state for 58 days. It is probably too late for me to interfere.’

Her magic power would keep twisting until she died.

It took an average of seven days.

Yet she managed to survive for 58 days? It was quite remarkable. A great thing. No one would ever mention a ‘cure.’

The most likely person was Pandemonium. He was familiar with magic and would have done research on magic power.

I had done similar actions a few times but I had never actually solved the problem of twisted magic power. For example, I had corrected the flow of electricity for Yoo Eun-hye.

I started frowning.

It was true that she had helped me a lot, but Chrisley was just one of many subordinates.

Usually I would have abandoned her. However...

"Krasla's death saved you. Thank his worthy death."

I placed my hands on her wrist.

And I ordered Yihi.

"Never, absolutely never let anyone enter until I come out. Yihi, this goes for you as well."

"I understand, Master. Yihi will stand guard here...yihihhi."

Yihi gave a small laugh and flew away. She closed the door and stood outside it like a dead mouse. All the wind and sound was cut off.

'Then...'

I took a deep breath.

I stripped off her clothes and firmly grabbed her breasts.

I found her heart with my palm and closed my eyes.

My magic power already exceeded Chrisley's. However, the blood of the true demonic dragon and dark elf had a strong magic power that was equal to mine. It was a difficult task to get in between the twisted strands to unwind them.

It was like defusing a bomb. I couldn't be safe as this had been happening inside Chrisley's body for 58 days.

‘Willpower is important.’

Dok dok.

I talked to Chrisley as I tapped on her magic power. At first I was ignored, but a reaction occurred as I constantly knocked. The weak reaction quickly disappeared. It was just for 0.1 second, but I walked the realm of transcendence and could react.

I detoured to the place where the magic power reacted. And I once again knocked on the door. This behaviour was repeated many times.

‘Wake up.’

The reaction was a little bit stronger.

Tok! Tok!

I knocked even harder.

‘Leave everything to me.’

The tangled magic power inside the body shook tremendously. I didn’t know if Chrisley’s spirit had woken up but I couldn’t help believing.

I found one loose strand of magic power. After that, I identified the overall context.

Then I grabbed one thread and unraveled it carefully.

Chrisley's magic power no longer tried interfering. I didn't know if the body was instinctively reacting to my actions or if it was Chrisley's will, but I was glad.

There was no more need to be reluctant. My work was spurred on.

‘This?’

At that moment, I discovered another type of magic power.

Ganak the King of Death.

His essence was still remaining inside her body?

While fighting Okullos, Chrisley had borrowed Ganak's strength through his essence. I thought it was a one-time thing, but his power remained inside and was interfering with the magic flow.

‘This was the cause.’

It wouldn't have been such a big deal without Ganak's Essence interfering.

I stood at the crossroads of choice.

I needed to either remove it or search for another direction.

But it was already too late. The threads were so badly entangled that it wouldn't be easy to find a way. It was irreversible so I needed to find another road.

'Getting rid of Ganak's Essence would be a waste.'

I made a third choice.

I would dissolve it. Ganak's Essence would be melted into Chrisley's magic power.

It would be more difficult than loosening the strands. Ganak's power wasn't Chrisley's power. However, I had absorbed power once so I knew it wasn't impossible.

Of course, the danger would double for both Chrisley and I.

It would double but...

'I will make you stronger.'

Krasla died due to a lack of power. So I asked for power. I said I would take care of Chrisley.

Krasla's death made her worth it. His defense of the dungeon moved me.

For his sake, I would venture to do this.

‘Endure.’

Kuuong!

There was an explosion of magic power inside Chrisley.

Chapter 144: Advanced Training Room

Sunlight came in through the window as Chrisley opened her eyes.

'I dreamed of my childhood.'

A very long dream. Her memories of the time she played on barren land under the protection of adults had passed through her head like a dream.

Then someone called her while she was immersed in the sweet dream. Wake up. Those words were constantly repeated. If it wasn't for that voice then she wouldn't have woken up.

After opening her eyes, the first thing she saw was the wooden ceiling. Her whole body was screaming as she stretched out. It seemed like she had been laid down for quite a while.

“Ah...”

Chrisley remembered collapsing. She was trapped by the enemy while trying to save the dwarf king and her magic power surged.

But where was this place?

It was familiar. A home in the dark elf village.

Chrisley immediately adapted to reality and accepted that she was alive.

“Get up...”

She got up with great difficulty.

She knew she would have died from her magic power running wild. However, she somehow got another chance.

The demons had entered the dungeon.

They were constantly attacking. Many creatures would have died while she was lying down. She needed to quickly return to the dungeon.

Chrisley barely managed to get up despite the pain. She changed her clothes and thought about Okullos.

‘That can’t be repeated.’

Chrisley had returned without Dungeon Master. She hid from the enemies for over three months while waiting for Dungeon Master to return. However, Pandemonium started attacking and she had no choice but to return.

‘I have to protect it even if my body is burned up.’

The dungeon couldn't be lost.

She had to defend it. She would surely protect it.

She formed fists as she thought this.

Kuoooh-

A dark smoke emerged from her fists. It spread and started to corrode everything.

The bed and everything else that was wooden! They crumbled and turned into black powder.

Kuwuong!

It took only 30 seconds for the small house to collapse.

But Chrisley was unharmed. Things like falling planks of wood were all broken before they reached Chrisley. They were also blocked by the black smoke coming from her body.

“What is this?”

Chrisley was baffled as she stood in the centre of the collapsed house.

Breeding species.

In order to configure my dungeon, it was necessary to spread out the breeding species. It was a method of obtaining enormous benefits with fewer points, and a large number of creatures was indispensable to winning this game.

There were many cases where the breeding species would produce multiple stronger offspring. I needed to mix them approximately in order to dominate the second half.

But this invasion had killed most of the breeding species. They needed to be restored and reinforced.

‘A floor master is needed.’

An intermediate boss should be responsible for each floor.

Originally I thought a floor master wasn't needed. The final evolution of the species...for example, a special existence such as an orc lord was possible. My thoughts had changed in the meantime.

If I was absent then there was a limit to how much Chrisley and Yihi could do alone. It was more efficient to use floor masters to direct the strategy for each floor.

If the floor master was associated with the representative breeding species then they would understand the characteristics of

the species, allowing them to unite more easily against an enemy's invasion.

‘It will take approximately 12 million points to restore the dungeon. Summoning a floor master for all floors...it would take a month for the dungeon to return to normal.’

This was possible due to the features of the Tree or Origin. After getting rid of the enemy, I restored the original functioning of the Dungeon Core and Tree of Origin.

During this month, Pandemonium was unlikely to show any movements. He wouldn't take action because he had lost four demons at once.

‘I have to make as much as possible during this month.’

I nodded.

But I was still provoked. This dungeon was still standing despite my absence. Pandemonium had some idea of my skills. Otherwise he wouldn't have mobilized four demons to raid this place.

10 days passed. Pandemonium would have started wondering after losing contact with his demons.

No matter how strong I was, I couldn't deal with all of Pandemonium's faction alone. So...I had to buy some time. Time for my dungeon to recover.

“M-Master!”

Yihi was hurriedly flying towards me.

She had been acting cautiously since I returned.

Questions such as ‘Would you like honey water?’ or ‘Would you like a shoulder rub?’ were asked in a mature tone different from before.

“What's going on?”

"Chrisley!"

“...?”

Pant pant!

Yihi took deep breaths before talking.

"It is breaking them. Everything is being broken. Yihi tried to stop it but she can't control it."

“...It seems like Ganak's Essence is causing trouble.”

Indeed.

I was convinced.

It was expected. I had successfully melted Ganak's Essence into Chrisley's magic power. It was sweaty work but the effect was amazing. The quality and quantity of her magic power had grown rapidly. Naturally it would be hard to control.

I nodded and turned.

"Guide me to where Chrisley is."

"Hmm hmm. Yes Master."

Yihi replied with a fairly polite posture.

Her hands were folded on her belly as she started to gently guide me.

She looked just like a maid so I couldn't help laughing.

Kwa ru ru rung!

The inner wall of the dungeon was falling. The ground was split and the wind was so wild that it was difficult to get near. There was an empty circle hundreds of metres around Chrisley.

“Queen-nim, please!”

Julliom, the representative of the dark elves came forward. He didn't know how to respond to what was happening in the centre of the village.

“I can't stop it!”

The smoke that rose from her body caused 'death.' It mercilessly corroded everything around it. She tried to reduce the damage by not moving. However, the energy was becoming stronger and it was completely out of Chrisley's control.

"Please just wait a moment. Fairy-nim has gone to call the Dungeon Master!"

Julliom shouted from hundreds of metres outside the collapsing village.

Then Chrisley's eyes widened.

“Huh...? What do you mean? Dungeon Master?”

"He came back. Dungeon Master cured Queen-nim!"

While she was lying down, he had come back.

It was unbelievable.

At the same time, it became difficult for her to control her emotions.

Kuoooooh!

Her aura became more intense and the range increased.

If this continued then the Tree of Origin would be affected.

"Hyah! Queen-nim!"

Julliom screamed with fright while Chrisley was upset.

She couldn't even feel the joy at the news.

"What should I do...?"

She bit her lips and asked Julliom. She couldn't cheer at the reality. She was afraid of what Dungeon Master would say when he saw her like this.

Kuwaaaaaaaah!

“Ah!”

But Julliom’s fears regarding Chrisley didn’t occur.

From a distance, flames started to eat away at the black smoke.

Pride’s flames.

I deployed them in order to eat as much of that destructive smoke as possible.

Pride had similar tendencies to me. It wouldn’t tolerate anything entering its domain without permission. The flames had high attributes so they wouldn’t lost against the smoke.

“My Dungeon Master! Don’t come any closer!”

Chrisley shouted louder. In the midst of her joy, she was worried that the uncontrollable aura would eat me. But I just slowly walked forward.

Ganak’s Essence.

I had a little bit of understanding after experiencing it.

‘Time.’

Garnak the King of Death. The true power he used was 'time.' He could speed up time and cause corrosion.

My prideful flames refused to be fast forwarded by time. It was blocked.

"It has been a while."

I said as I stood in front of Chrisley.

Chrisley painfully opened her mouth.

"My...Dungeon Master..."

Her eyes were filled with complicated emotions.

Her feeling of regret was the strongest. She seemed to have blamed herself after I disappeared in the battle against Okullos.

"Go to sleep. When you wake up, take steps to control your power."

Duk!

I placed my hands on Chrisley's forehead.

Then Chrisley closed her eyes and slumped down.

After that happened, Chrisley became moderately stable.

But I didn't know when Ganak's power would emerge again. I had to take action before that.

Therefore...I went into the Achievements Store and bought one item.

It was a parchment style contract that had various languages on it.

I confirmed it with Mind's Eye.

-Name - Advanced Training Room (5/5)

Description: The user will be moved to a place where training can be done in earnest. 'Time' and 'spirit' can be used to balance the body. It won't have any effect on those on the way to completion, but it is possible to see a sizeable effect for those in a transition period.

* Can be used a total of five times.

* Please note. Time in the room will move 100 times slower.

* Entrance isn't allowed if the total stat points exceeds 450.

** There will be hidden compensation in accordance to the clear time.

It was an ideal place to train Chrisley. In addition, I was very curious about the hidden compensation. I wasn't allowed to enter but it would be good for Chrisley.

I called Chrisley as soon as it happened.

"Tashmal. I didn't call you."

Tashmal arrived with Chrisley.

She was a fallen angel with six wings. She was a major contributor to defending the dungeon.

However, I had only called Chrisley. I didn't know why Tashmal had followed.

"I know. But I need to be strong."

"Did you hear from Chrisley?"

"She told me that it would teach her how to control her magic power. However, Dungeon Master. Haven't you stepped into the transcendent realm? If you tell me the secret to transcendence

then it will help me become stronger.”

I never said anything but Tashmal seemed to have noticed.

I quietly shut my mouth as Tashmal continued.

“Angels...have come down all over the world. Although I have fallen, I want to defeat the demons before they are all sacrificed. I have protected your dungeon for one year and eight months so I think I qualify.”

Tashmal had originally promised to end me. While I was gone, she had helped protect the dungeon for one year and eight months.

The influence of the Dungeon Core had weakened so she could have escaped outside to the angels.

“Okay. I will allow it.”

I coolly accepted it.

Her qualifications were sufficient.

The parchment had been split into five pieces. I ripped two pieces and a large door was made.

"Go inside. Then Chrisley will be able to gain stability and

Tashmal strength.”

I didn’t know how much they would grow.

However, this was from the Hell Monarch’s treasure trove.

It was enough to give it an entirely different feeling.

There was no need for doubts. Something from the treasure trove definitely wouldn’t be ordinary.

Soon Chrisley nodded. Her eyes were red-rimmed and looked sad. I quickly figured out the reason.

‘She knows that Krasla is dead.’

It seemed that someone had told her the truth.

Yet it was evident that Chrisley had become more determined.

Chrisley entered the room with strong fists.

Tashmal entered next to her. The door closed with a loud sound.

‘Then...’

I quietly stared before turning around.

Now it was time to take advantage of the next month.

Chapter 145: Roy, Rose (1)

The thing I needed most was information. I needed a clear understanding of what I missed in the world. The dynamics of power...it wasn't possible to move without knowing the movements of the demons, angels and humans.

And the lich Gaparam was the best person to ask about this.

Gaparam!

I remembered.

He was a lich researching life. Wasn't his goal to create a complete homunculus?

"I am fulfilling the promise, despite being late."

"It's okay. It isn't involving the homunculus but I've made my own progress."

Building a workshop. I promised to provide support so that he could continue his study into the homunculus. However, I had unintentionally spent one year and eight months in the Underground World. Points weren't available so he couldn't do his research.

Even so, Gaparam wasn't upset. He understood and didn't seem

to care.

I turned my gaze to the two children next to Gaparam.

"These children?"

"I have been teaching the children these days. They are bright and their learning speed is amazing. Now, shouldn't you introduce yourselves?"

Dark skin and pointy ears. The two children were dark elves approximately four or five years old.

It was unusual that they were twins but they looked familiar.

Among them, the girl walked out first and bowed.

"Hello, Dungeon Master. My name is Rose. I heard that Dungeon Master gave me the name Rose. It is an honour."

"I-I am Roy."

Unlike Rose, Roy had a timid nature.

‘They are already so big.’

Now I could remember the two children.

Not long after the children were born, I had named them. I had roughly named them but now it felt different.

Rose looked up at me with wide eyes.

"Queen-nim asked us to look after Dungeon Master if there are any problems. Rose is still young but I want to learn quickly to be helpful to Dungeon Master."

"M-me too..."

I gave a small laugh. The little girl was saying funny things. In particular, I liked Rose's unyielding eyes. I expected that she would be a confident heroine once she was older.

"It is brilliant."

"Correct. These children only have each other and are learning faster than others. The children will be a lot of help in my research. Roy's character is a little bit timid but can't that be gradually fixed?"

In the 3rd Demon World Auction, I had purchased a skill book called Twin's Mental Rapport. I was convinced after checking the two children with Mind's Eye.

It was obvious that the skill had been successfully learnt, causing

a rise in their abilities.

“Gaparam. I heard that you could help me. How can you help?”

It was the reason I came to talk to him.

When I asked seriously, Gaparam handed me a thick book.

"First, please take this. It is a book where I noted down my past work and my thoughts. You should be able to fill some of the gaps with it."

I opened the book and saw things like daily changes, things that happened in the dungeon and external exploration. Even details about the weather were written down.

Gaparam said with a warm smile.

"I am a researcher. I like to keep a record of everything. It isn't just limited to the dungeon as this place called Earth is also very interesting. There isn't a fixed topic but it should be enough to fill in the gaps for you."

"It will help."

This much information. It seemed like it would take a few days to finish reading.

I was scanning through the book when Gaparam quietly muttered.

“And...do you remember M3?”

"The artificial golem I purchased at the Demon World Auction?"

I turned and answered.

He was the completed version of M1 and M2. The name was a golem but he looked more like an artificial knight. Of course I remembered him.

However, I didn't know why that name would be mentioned right now. He didn't suffer a severe wound like the other high class creatures. Gaparam sensed my confusion and continued.

"I have been repairing and improving him every time he is broken."

Tak!

He clapped and a silver knight with red eyes emerged.

However, he was covered with soot. There was a crack that seemed to be forcibly created and one finger couldn't be seen.

Ha! I clicked my tongue.

It was surprising that he hadn't been broken by now.

"There are many scars."

"Many enemies have tried to break it but I managed to get it out alive. As a result, it has become much stronger. It is because I have transformed it according to the many battles."

"Transformed?"

"I fixed the core of M3. That...I used a little bit of the knowledge of humans. Connecting multiple nuclei would allow for more power."

I touched my jaw.

Gaparam's story was very interesting.

There were certainly some great parts about the technology of humans. However, I never thought about taking advantage of it. There was no need to bother, but now Gaparam had tampered with that technology.

"I won't tell you a complicated story. I created four nuclear fusion cores and connected them to make him move more efficiently. Roy and Rose were very helpful here. I connected their

‘telepathy’ skill to M3’s core so M3 itself started to grow.”

“Ho...”

M3 had been completed. There was no room for further growth. It was mentioned in his description. It meant the framework had been cracked.

I turned my head and looked at M3. I quickly opened Mind’s Eye.

Name	M3	
Stats	Strength	92 (+5)
	Intelligence	0 (+41)
	Agility	91 (+5)
	Stamina	84 (+5)
Magic Power	85 (+5)	
Potential	(352+61/340)	
Uniqueness	Completed from the beginning. There is no more need for growth and there is no sense of self since its intelligence is 0. But the golem gives its best performance under a powerful master. There are more improvements since M1 and M2.	
	** Four nuclear fusion cores. The lich Gaparam has made M3	

	more efficient to use.
Skill	Gale (Ex U) Joint Attack (Ex U) Roy and Rose (Ex U)

There was a hidden option and the pure stat points had changed a little bit. Furthermore, another skill called ‘Roy and Rose (Ex U)’ was created.

A change. I never thought this would be possible. Even I was forced to be surprised.

‘It is more combination than strengthening. He is transformed with pure technology.’

In the uniqueness, it had even written that M3 was complete.

‘Something useful might emerge if Oswen, Gaparam and the dwarf king work together.’

It was natural to feel such curiosity. I couldn’t imagine what would be created if those three joined forces.

“Roy and Rose can move M3. It will be a lot of help in battle.”

I remembered seeing him before. While I was fighting the titan and four demons, I had seen a silver armour moving.

Roy and Rose had controlled him. I looked at them with surprise. Rose had a sassy stance while Roy's head was bowed with shame.

"Was this also part of the research?"

"It is similar. If I have the right equipment and workshop then I can make it more neatly."

"Okay. Then I will invest three million points."

".....!"

Gaparam flinched.

He knew the weight of three million points.

He had no help for one year and eight months so this excited him.

"Really? Three million points..."

Of course, it wasn't just an investment.

"Instead, you should work with Oswen and the dwarf king. Help

each other out.”

Gaparam snorted.

“If it is the dwarf king then of course I will welcome the help. His dexterity will definitely be useful. But this is the first time I’ve heard of the name Oswen.”

“The Twilight Blacksmith Oswen. You’ve never heard of him?”

“I don’t know. I’ve never heard his name while researching in the mountains. If so, he can’t be that great.”

It was natural not to know, despite how famous Oswen was.

Oswen was originally a human. They moved in completely different areas.

“It will surely be helpful if you work together.”

“Hmm...I am to complete the research together with Dungeon Master’s subordinate.”

He agreed in a patronizing manner. I would see whether he maintained this attitude.

“I will leave the permission for the points to Yihi. Speak to Yihi if

you need anything.”

"I understand. You won't regret it."

Gaparam briefly bowed his head.

As I turned away, Gaparam hurriedly said.

"Oh, I will leave my assistants. I won't be able to teach them while building the warehouse. The children are really excited about seeing Dungeon Master. Maybe you can take them along on a small errand. They can also help you by manipulating M3."

Gaparam...I hadn't spent that long with him so he didn't know me well.

In particular, Rose was looking at me with shining eyes.

'Knowing how to control M3 would be helpful.'

They were young but I didn't think they would be useless.

'Dark elf lords. They have the makings of a floor master.'

I recalled that the potential of the two children was very good. As expected, I checked with Mind's Eye and they had grown well. If I helped them a little bit then they would grow into powerful

creatures in the future.

"Leave them behind."

I spoke curtly.

"I will immediately begin building the workshop. Then..."

Gaparam politely said before leaving.

However, the two children didn't easily move.

"Follow me."

"Yes!"

Rose responded with a laugh.

Roy...he answered in a small voice and followed behind me.

There was a huge amount of content in the book Gaparam handed over. It was neatly arranged by date so the information entered my head well. The short summary was something like this.

[April 5th. Pandemonium noticed the dungeon and his faction started the offensive. He had left a watcher around Okullos' dungeon. We will likely have to retreat.]

[April 9th. The second battle. It was safely blocked. The demons have entirely surrounded South Korea. Their movements have been blocked many times.]

[May 18th. The human counterattack has begun. The attacks of the demons have slowed. The humans called Awakened who joined together in 'guilds' have declared war against the demons.]

[August 23rd. South Korea's capital 'Seoul' was taken. The supply station has been formed and the demons are carrying out the full scale dungeon invasion.]

[December 31st. Tens of thousands of angels have descended all over the world. Archangels are confirmed to be present. The demons, including Ariel Diablo, left their dungeons and announced their existence to the world. South Korea is still being devastated by four demons and the 7th floor of the dungeon has been breached.]

.....

[July 3rd. A small number of human Awakened are being treated as 'points livestock' by the demons. They would force the humans to grow, earning more points that would allow them to summon powerful creatures. The angels have attacked the dungeons. On this day, the 12th floor of this dungeon was breached.]

.....

This was the information contained in the book. It was written with blood onto flesh. Based on this, I was able to get some idea of the circumstances.

I didn't move for more than half a day.

Once I set down the book, I noticed Rose sitting on her knees. Roy was rubbing his feet with a red face.

"What are you looking at?"

"I was watching Dungeon Master."

The answer naturally came from Rose.

It wasn't the end to Rose's words.

"I want to know about Dungeon Master."

Her expression was so intense that it was burdensome. It seemed like she had heard a lot of stories about me. She wanted to know about me.

She truly was very smart. On the other hand, Roy's expression seemed to be the opposite of her words. If they heard about me, they would know how resolute I was. He was worried about Rose making a mistake with her words and being punished.

I didn't care as long as they wouldn't rebel against me.

And...I was going to raise them both as floor masters anyway.

I stood up and said.

"I will leave the dungeon. Make preparations and follow me."

Chapter 146: Roy, Rose (2)

Near Seoul.

50 Awakened searched around with resolute determination. The slightest negligence was dangerous so they couldn't breathe easily.

A place that had been a huge city one year ago was already in ruins. Skulls were scattered all over the place as crows cried out. The cracked asphalt roads, abandoned cars and broken windows...

It was a place with no life. Only the sounds of death could be heard.

“Stop.”

The Awakened in the front raised a hand. The 50 people simultaneously stopped.

The captain was called Jin Woo-ram. His team was scouting around Seoul for a mission.

Jin Woo-ram confirmed the footprints on the ground and spoke.

"Four days ago, massive creatures started moving in this direction. The footprints of trolls and a few ogres seem to be mixed together. In the east to west direction. The estimated number is 500."

Gulp!

All of the team members were nervous.

There were only 50 Awakened here.

However, there were 500 intermediate trolls and advanced ogres. No matter how many elites were gathered here, it was impossible to defeat so many creatures. It would just be a massacre.

"Do you intend to follow?"

One of the team members asked.

It was reckless. Common sense made it clear that following the footprints was too dangerous.

But Jin Woo-ram ignored their words.

"Hundreds of Awakened are being raised as food. Among them are the main members of each guild. If we lost them all then there is no future for South Korea."

"But...the behaviour of the creatures has become strange since a few days ago. They have become very violent."

That's right. The reason was unknown but the creatures had lost their senses a few days ago. They ran wild and smashed everything. Even birds couldn't escape being wiped out.

Jin Woo-ram knew all this. However, he was still confident until the end.

"10 days ago, the drone reconnaissance confirmed that they are alive. Abandoning the survivors...if you leave then never show up in front of me again."

Jin Woo-ram's words caused silence. No one wanted to say anything.

They confirmed that hundreds of Awakened were alive but 10 days had already passed.

10 days! They could have been killed in that time.

The creatures had gone wild so they couldn't confirm how many were still alive. To be honest, few of the members were very hopeful. They were convinced that all the captured people were already dead.

Nevertheless, Jin Woo-ram didn't give up hope. If hundreds of Awakened were alive then there was hope that the situation could be overturned. There was a low probability. The lives of the 50 people here were also at risk.

"There are a number of airborne creatures so we need to move as carefully as possible."

Jin Woo-ram went ahead first.

The ruined Seoul...the 50 people moved to find the slightest bit of hope.

Before long, the target location was found.

Jin Woo-ram and the team spread prepared troll faeces all over their bodies.

The stench penetrated their noses but they didn't care. This act was skillfully carried out like they were accustomed to it.

A pair of Awakened with detection and stealth skills went on patrol.

"There is a tunnel 500 metres from here. We can avoid the creatures and verify the situation."

Jin Woo-ram was extremely prudent as a leader. He wanted to save the survivors but he needed to confirm it first. He couldn't move recklessly.

If those gathered here were wiped out...the bad situation in South Korea would get worse.

The scouting members spread out as much as possible. They were to closely watch the movements of the creatures in order to be prepared.

Kkuruk.

Kuoooooh.

The trolls drooled and looked around blindly. It made them extremely anxious. Fearsome teeth were revealed.

The ogres didn't hide their desire to kill. One wrong move would turn the members into victims. Just imagining it was terrible.

'There are approximately 500 trolls and three ogres.'

Jin Woo-ram's mind was complicated.

The number of South Korean talents being held was approximately 30,000. 500 was a small number but the number of Awakened moving around South Korea was limited.

The five large guilds in the past were almost in decline. Communication was cut off and the survivors were besieged by sudden raids. It was no different from the entire guild system collapsing.

-Survivors have been found. There are 200 people alive. Their conditions are very poor.

Soon the radio went off.

200 survivors!

Jin Woo-ram gripped his fists tightly.

'If we can rescue them safely...'

There could be a reversal. It could form a basis for driving the creatures out of the collapsed Seoul.

However, he was temporarily off guard due to that joy.

Kieeeeek!

A few wyverns in the air found him and cried out loud.

Although they were covered with the troll faeces, their bodies weren't hidden. Once confirmed with the naked eye, they were humans again and the targets of the creatures.

Gruruk.

Grruk?

The trolls turned their heads.

Kung! Kuwuong!

The ogres also moved their massive bodies.

“Damn!”

Jin Woo-ram spat out with disgust.

The wyverns were a problem. They blocked the rear so three team members had already died.

The situation was the worst. They would surely be wiped out.

Therefore, Jin Woo-ram and the team members chose to struggle.

“Let’s show them the power of humans!”

If they were going to die then they would take as many creatures with them as possible.

The humans couldn’t be looked down on. Although their numbers were small, all the Awakened here were quite influential.

They would let these creatures know that humans weren't just food. The dignity of humankind wouldn't be trampled on by the creatures.

Everyone had the idea of taking at least half down with them.

And the sword-wielding Jin Woo-ram shouted into the radio.

"We will be the bait to buy some time. Help the survivors escape!"

They would fight to the death.

It was okay if they died. The world had changed and their precious people had already died. There was nothing to lose so they would have no regrets about being buried in the ground. Most of the Awakened gathered here felt this way.

So...they hoped the survivors would be rescued while they died.

They hoped. It was a small sacrifice.

Chwack!

Skin was torn with their swords. Blood was spilled. The team members were desperate.

-Captain!

"Don't dawdle!"

A desperate voice flowed from the radio. Jin Woo-ram couldn't afford to talk.

He was enclosed on all sides. Team members prayed as they died.

'Dear God! Look down on us. I don't mind dying so please! Please!'

"Kuaaaak!"

Screams from the members could be heard every moment.

The group of 50 was cut in half in an instant. They couldn't drag out the time. If they hung in there a little bit more then morale would rise.

Jin Woo-ram cut down a troll and shouted.

"We are humans! We...are strong!"

10 minutes.

No, it wasn't even five minutes!

There was a clear possibility the survivors could get out alive if they lasted that long. Those sent to scout were all strong. The ones who hid their bodies came out.

Kueeeh!

But...the ogres joined forces and it became more difficult.

Kwaduk!

Kung!

They were being stepped on. It was impractical to think about the dignity of humans.

The end? It was only up to here.

Jin Woo-ram bit his lip.

Everyone slowly gave up hope.

Chwaaaaak!

A knight in silver armour ran among the creatures. His long lance was swung and killed dozens of trolls at once.

Hwaruruk!

Black fire hit the creatures and burned them down.

The survivors, including Jin Woo-ran, naturally turned their gazes in that direction.

At the same time, their eyes widened.

Black flames and huge wings. A person wearing a skull mask and black armour. An overwhelming presence could be felt just by looking at him.

Grrr...

The creatures also hesitated as they felt something.

The silver knight ran like the wind and quickly cut down the creatures. It took no more than 10 minutes to wipe out the 500 creatures.

Everyone was at a loss for words.

After the situation was wrapped up, Rose opened her mouth.

"How is it? Do you see Rose's skills? Roy just watched."

She moved M3 alone. I briefly recalled the scene of M3 fighting.

"There are too many unnecessary tricks."

Rose pouted.

"Queen-nim praised me...as expected, Master is too picky! I'll try harder."

Still, her attitude of not giving up was commendable. She didn't seem like a child and this might be due to Chrisley's influence. She was properly trained.

After killing all the enemies, M3 made its way over. Behind it, the 20 Awakened were just staring blankly.

"Who is the representative?"

"M...me."

A bear-like man came out.

I immediately looked with Mind's Eye.

Name	Kim Woo-ram
Occupation	Hero (Warrior)

Title	<div>* Take Charge (R, Strength +4)</div> <div>* Early Stage Master Fighter (U, Strength and Stamina +3)</div>	
Stats	Strength	62 (+7)
	Intelligence	55
	Agility	49
	Stamina	57 (+3)
	Magic Power	52
Potential	(275+10/368)	
Uniqueness	None	
Skill	<div>Warrior’s Will (U)</div> <div>Sensory Activation (R)</div> <div>Identify Weakness (Ex, U)</div>	

This was a good level for a human. The levels of the other Awakened were similar as well.

I spoke to Jin Woo-ram who was awkwardly standing there.

“There are other Awakened not far away. Their attack?”

“Ah...!”

Jin Woo-ram realized the important fact and pulled out his radio.

"All the creatures have been dealt with. Join us."

-That...are you serious?

"There was external assistance."

-I understand. We will immediately depart.

After a short radio conversation, Jin Woo-ram turned towards me.

"Thank you so much for saving us. I am a member of the Mithril Guild, Jin Woo-ram."

It was familiar. I frowned and asked.

“The top five guilds?”

"That's right. Although now we are mere scraps...of course, everyone gathered here doesn't belong to the Mithril Guild."

I knew a few points. It was because Gaparam's book contained some details mentioned. But this was the first time I had seen a living Awakened in South Korea.

"Are you moving to rescue the survivors? I didn't think this type of force still remained."

"We have a base in Yongin. That...do you mind if I ask who you are?"

"A hunter."

"Huh?"

Jin Woo-ram and his team showed signs of alarm.

However, I was reluctant to admit that I was the leader of the 'Devil Hunters' raid group when I was accompanied by dark elves. Things were occurring different from my previous life so there was a possibility of Pandemonium using the humans.

Maybe the fact that I was the Devil Hunters' captain had already been identified. It would be different in my past life but Okullos had already broken the taboo.

'There is nothing wrong with being careful.'

It was hard to see ahead.

The stereotypes needed to be boldly broken down.

I cleaned up my thoughts and murmured.

"I have no intention of harming you."

"I'm sorry. If you don't reveal it properly then I can't easily believe you. Besides, the identities of the two dark elves beside you are very suspicious...thank you for saving us, but we can't let our guard down."

Jin Woo-ram explained with restless eyes.

It was like I expected.

On the other hand, Rose exploded.

"Queen-nim's words are correct. Humans really are stupid. Why do they doubt Master who saved them? I would have killed them already if I wanted to."

"Stay still."

"...Yes."

Rose's cheeks reddened.

Roy just fidgeted and looked between Rose and I. Both of them were cute like Yihi, but now wasn't the time to appreciate it.

"I am going to the south. I will be getting rid of any creatures I meet along the way. You can follow me or go your own way."

I turned around after saying that.

Rose poked her tongue out at the humans before following behind me.

"...Captain-nim."

"Shit."

Jin Woo-ram frowned as one of his team members spoke.

After the 200 survivors joined them, the group would have to lead them back to Yongin. If they encountered any creatures while heading to the south then there could be massive amounts of victims.

Jin Woo-ram glanced at the surviving Awakened.

They couldn't even rebel properly and were almost wiped out by 500 creatures.

It was difficult to think of that person as a human. He had never heard of dark elves following a human before.

Should they follow the mystery man or try to head to the south with their own strength?

After a moment of thinking, Jin Woo-ram made a decision.

“Follow!”

They had no choice.

Chapter 147: Guardian Deity (1)

The demons who entered my dungeon. Half the creatures they brought had been removed from the dungeon. They were released all over South Korea and hadn't yet been cleaned up.

It was ridiculous that there was such a large number of creatures.

‘Other demons. Or it might be aid from Pandemonium.’

I touched my jaw.

By now, the demons would be aware that there was a problem.

They would be planning their next move.

So...I planned to wipe out all the creatures while making them aware of a ‘strong presence.’

I would use it to confuse Pandemonium.

‘A special event.’

Special events had happened several times in my previous life and referred to things like the angels' descent or the emergence of the Cruel Commander Maxium.

I knew how to cause one event.

I wouldn't have even dared dream of it before stepping into the realm of transcendence as well as obtaining the treasures of the Hell Monarch...I formed a small smile.

Hwaruruk!

A pair of large black wings fluttered on my back. They were slightly different from the ones I received when Corruption was used. They were an 'item' transformed after eating Pride's flames.

I recalled the brief description of the item called Thousand Wings.

Thousand Wings (Epic)

Wings that are said to be capable of holding thousands of different types of magic power.

* The user can absorb and store the magic power of creatures that they kill.

* The colour will change depending on the type of magic power absorbed.

** Once the limit is reached, it is possible to use the skill 'Thousand Summoned Doors.'

**** The amount of stored magic power - 445,344/1,000,000**

It was an epic item with no stats, skills or titles. If I couldn't see the hidden options with Mind's Eye then it would have been a trash item.

It certainly wasn't worth paying 5,000 achievement points for.

However, the hidden options were remarkable. There were restrictions but it was an item that enabled the use of an exceptional epic skill. Besides, I was familiar with the skill.

Thousand Summoned Doors (Ex Epic)

A unique monster can be summoned, depending on the specific place or time.. The summoned creature won't follow the summoner's commands but will act according to its own 'uniqueness.'

It was ambiguous.

But I knew a similar skill that had been triggered. As a result, something happened.

It was a half step lower skill called 'Traditional Summoning Door (Epic). A human had used it to reverse the destruction in South

Korea. Immense wealth and great sacrifices were exchanged to summon a 'guardian deity.'

I didn't see the summoning with my own eyes but it was enough to stop the demons' invasion.

'Thousand Summoned Doors' was a higher rated compatible skill. If I collected enough magic power then it was possible to open the summoning door without any restrictions.

Of course, I didn't intend to use the magic power to summon something evil. It should be helpful to humans.

'Wake up a guardian deity to protect South Korea.'

A guardian 'deity.' It was still a creature. At any rate, I intended to wake it up in order to counterattack against Pandemonium. If I wanted to do that, I needed the magic power of creatures and the 'origin' of humans.

'The three-legged crow.'

I looked through my memories.

At that time, the three-legged crow had been summoned. At first glance, it resembled a crow. It was bigger than the griffin and could cover the sun. I wasn't certain of its strength but it seemed to be between a high class 3Lv and 4Lv.

The problem was...it didn't listen to the summoner.

The three-legged crow certainly defended Korea but it was fickle.

After consuming the invading demons and creatures, it demanded more wealth. It liked flashy things and accumulated all types of jewels and goods on top of Mt. Baekdu. It caused things like tsunamis as a joke so the humans suffered.

In the end, it was cleaned up by Grand Duke Upa. However, the strength and will of the guardian deity was apparent.

‘It can’t attack when it sees me.’

I was a demon. There couldn't be instinctive recognition.

It wouldn't have been easy before the Underground World. Now I could easily defend against the guardian deity.

“Master. A lot of humans have come along.”

Rose said as she glanced back.

This was the third day.

I had traveled through half this land without any rest.

Meanwhile, thousands of people had seen me taking care of the creatures. Many people were following behind me.

Some were civilians and a large number were Awakened.

I didn't rest for even one minute or one second and managed to move up to here. Despite being slow, the humans desperately tried to follow me. Their mouths were foaming as they chased after me.

'I need their origins in order to summon the guardian deity.'

Hundreds of people weren't enough. Thousands, no tens of thousands were required. Otherwise, the creature I wanted was unlikely to be summoned.

"Take a small break."

On a small hill.

I sat on a rock and closed my eyes.

The procession of people stopped and rested for a while.

Roy and Rose.

It was the first time they had left the dungeon. They were filled

with curiosity and Rose was especially active.

While Roy stayed next to Dungeon Master, Rose started to move. She decided to enter the crowd of people to look at them.

"Ohh, Saviour-nim's child..."

As Rose approached, some humans kneeled down and raised their hands.

A modest attitude.

Rose blinked as one woman approached her.

"Are you hungry? It isn't much but have a steamed sweet potato. Try it once."

"Steamed sweet potato?"

"Yes. It is very sweet."

The old woman quietly laughed as she offered the sweet potatoes.

Rose bluntly grabbed one sweet potato.

Wagu!

She even chewed on the skin.

"Um...sweet."

It was delicious. Rose ate the sweet potato in the blink of an eye.

The old woman didn't know she would eat the skin but smiled after a moment.

"That...Saviour-nim's child."

"I'm Rose. By the way, are you referring to Master? What is a saviour?"

No matter how grown up she pretended to be, Rose was young. She learned twice as fast as others but there was still a limit.

The old woman replied slowly.

"Rose-nim, we call him Saviour-nim because he did what no one else could."

Ah!

Rose clapped her hands.

"Then Master is a saviour. Queen-nim used to always say it. Nothing is impossible for Master. Master was taken away by evil, but he came back to save us all. I knew it. Master is really great."

Um um. Rose nodded.

Every day was really new. Queen-nim, Chrisley's words weren't wrong.

Her confidence in that idea grew.

"From all evil...!"

"He will save us!"

"Finally! Finally!"

The humans interpreted it a bit differently.

There were good reasons.

A person taken away by evil. He came back to destroy all evil. Popular lines seen somewhere before...it was natural for him to be deemed a god.

Before she knew it, thousands of people were gathered around Rose.

They created a circle and listened to Rose's conversation.

This was the first time Rose experienced so much attention. It was natural that she would feel flattered.

"You don't have to worry. I don't know why but Master is trying to help you. Queen-nim said that Master will bring 'hope' to the humans here. You are fragile beings but potential can be seen. If you don't aim your sword at Master then that potential can blossom. By the way...Queen-nim has another worry. Will humans point their swords at Master after gaining strength? I have to say this. Would you really?"

Rose didn't understand this point.

Humans were stupid but she couldn't imagine them raising their swords in disobedience. Were they that stupid?

She wanted to ask the humans directly.

Biting the hand that fed them. No matter how strong they were, it was natural that they were weaker than Master. She thought a species that would willingly walk down the path of death was strange.

An endangered species became drunk on power and tried to rebel. It was ingratitude. It was impossible for the dark elves.

“Ah, no. It is a misunderstanding. I can’t say that no humans would do that, but there are more good humans.”

"So it would vary? I don't know very well but you shouldn't cut off ties with Master. He is very strong! You should be careful. He killed four demons alone...hup!"

Rose quickly covered her mouth.

The surrounding humans started shaking.

"Four demons?"

“Perhaps...”

“Oh my god!”

They didn't know why.

One day, the demons made their way to Korea.

There were exactly four of them.

Dipella, Anastasia, Amurun and Jeneral!

Their names were memorized. All the people gathered here knew the names of the four demons.

Yet, she said they were killed.

Curiosity filled the eyes looking at Rose.

Rose ignored them and turned around.

"Ah, I don't know. I will be going now. Master said that he will be moving after three hours."

Rose threw Master an embarrassed look.

Master didn't say it directly but Rose was aware of her role. It was to get the humans to follow him!

If not, Master wouldn't have bothered to wait for the humans to follow. Rose noticed and said a mix of facts to the humans.

Thanks to this, the faith of the humans became even stronger.

Mentioning the demons was dangerous, but that was only if they found out Master was a demon. 'Envy' would fill their eyes.

Now people who believed in Master would appear.

'Did I do well?'

Rose was young but noticed quickly.

She instinctively understood psychological methods.

So she was somewhat certain that her answer was correct.

‘That’s right!’

Then Rose hurriedly turned to the old lady and said.

“Can I have two more steamed sweet potatoes? I want to give one to Master...”

One was for Master. She would eat the other one.

She didn’t think of Roy.

It was the first time she had ever tasted the delicious sweet potatoes.

Chapter 148: Guardian Deity (2)

A large difference.

I collected 800,000 of the required one million magic power.

The number of creatures had shrunk so they were much more difficult to find now.

The number of humans joining increased steadily. It already exceeded 20,000. Some became tired in the middle and dropped out.

They wanted to know about me. But I had an invisible wall around me and nobody could approach.

‘There is no need to reveal my identity.’

It wasn't necessary to reveal that I was a demon or the captain of Devil Hunters.

The important thing was the mystery. A veil was needed in order to sublimate my existence.

In that sense, Rose was quite helpful.

She maximized their curiosity and I became a ‘religious’ figure for some humans.

Putting their faith in a demon. It was funny but it wasn't bad considering what I needed to do in the future.

Their origins were essential for summoning the guardian deity I desired. The guardian deity would move to a certain extent in accordance with the origin of humans. If they followed me even more, I might be able to exert influence on the guardian deity.

I followed this plan and more of the faithful gathered as I moved.

Late in the evening.

Once a full moon hung high in the sky, I discovered a group of people fighting.

"Water Boom!"

"Torpedo Sword!"

Chwaruruk!

Kwajijing!

There were 50 humans present. All of them were Awakened engaged in battle against a number of creatures.

I stared at some faces among them.

“Eun-hye! Behind you!”

“Leave the orc lord for me!”

“Edward...damn!”

The familiar names rang in my ears.

The Devil Hunters raid group.

I moved my eyes over the creatures. There were quite a lot left.

There were common orcs, orc shamans, orc warriors and orc lords. There were a staggering 1,000 orcs.

However, the humans had the numerical advantage after my appearance. There were over 10,000 people behind me.

I raised my hand to tell them to stay still.

At the same time.

Hwaruruk!

Pride's flames were created in the air. I pointed my finger and a black fireball flew towards an orc lord.

Kwarurung!

A huge explosion. The orc lord and the nearby orcs evaporated without leaving a single trace behind.

“Ohh, Saviour-nim...”

"Saviour-nim!"

Many of the humans following me kneeled down and watched. They had been marching for a few days. Their stomachs were hurting and their stamina was low. It was the same for the Awakened. The driving force that moved them was their faith in me.

To them I was a messenger of God, or maybe God himself. A person who would punish evil. The defender of justice. It was clear that I was a deep 'existence' inside their hearts.

A saviour who appeared after one year of suffering! It didn't matter if he dragged both dark elves and humans with him. Rather, the inhuman appearance made their faith even stronger.

The more cruel and cold I was, the more attracted the humans became to me. It was a little odd but in the end, they wanted a monster.

A real monster to annihilate the monsters!

'It fits me.'

A hunter should know the monsters well. So I should be a monster. In that sense, I would fulfill their faith.

As far as I knew, humans have never put their faith in a demon. Demons normally made them feel anger, fear, etc.

It was a funny feeling but it wasn't bad.

Hwaaack!

The wings that absorbed the magic power were exquisite. They already exceeded five metres in length. Once I injected magic power into the wings, hundreds of small fireballs would pop out.

The skill 'Pride' and Thousand Wings could be used together.

Kwang! Kwang! Kururung!

The fireballs hit the ground. The ground shook like an earthquake was occurring and there was a thick fog.

Kwiik!

Kwiiik!

200 orcs were wiped away at once and the attention of the orcs turned towards me. An orc lord whose body was burnt enough to see the bones ran over with a big sword.

The Devil Hunters were busy dealing with their own opponents. But the orc lord never reached me.

Chaeeng! Puok!

M3 consecutively took down two orc lords.

In the aftermath of the fight, it was tired and injured but M3's strength was quite amazing.

"How dare an ugly orc run towards Master?"

"T-that's right."

Rose puffed angrily with both hands on her waist. Next to her, Roy gave a small nod.

In the meantime, the Devil Hunters raid group was still moving. Despite being pushed numerically, they used wise and resourceful methods. Being able to grasp an opportunity was a skill itself.

“Eun-hye! Water Boom!”

"Electronic Shock!"

The water magician Lee Ji-hye. She used a huge ball of water to form a bomb. Yoo Eun-hye followed with an intense burst of electricity. The combination caused a significant explosive power.

Kwaaaaang!

Kwajijijik!

The water bomb exploded and then the electricity hit the water droplets on the orcs. The electricity penetrated their bodies and 30 orcs shook before collapsing.

Edward jumped between the panicking orcs. Every time he swung his longsword, an orc's head flew into the air.

The other team members weren't as good as these three. Out of the Awakened I had seen so far, they were the best.

‘Great growth.’

After unintentionally leaving, Devil Hunters had become more solid. I decided to stop intervening in their battle and used Mind's Eye.

Name	Yoo Eun-Hye	
Occupation	Hero (Lightning Magician)	
Title	<div>* Dozen Lightning Strikes (R, Magic Power +4)</div> <div>* Enlightened Lightning Spirit (U, Magic Power +7)</div> <div>* Laid the Foundations for a Magic Swordsman (U, Strength, Agility and Stamina +3)</div>	
Stats	Strength	55 (+3)
	Intelligence	78
	Agility	63 (+3)
	Stamina	61 (+3)
	Magic Power	66 (+11)
Potential	(323 +20/423)	
Uniqueness	Has received the protection of the spirit of lightning. A state received after being hit by lightning and standing in the doorway between life and death.	
Skill	<div>Lightning Sword (Ex U)</div> <div>Electronic Shock (U)</div> <div>Enhanced Strength (U, Passive)</div>	

--	--

Name	Lee Ji-Hye	
Occupation	Hero (Water Magician)	
Title	* Walking on Water (U, Intelligence and Magic Power +4)	
Stats	Strength	33
	Intelligence	75 (+4)
	Agility	29
	Stamina	32
	Magic Power	75 (+4)
Potential	(244+8/277)	
Uniqueness	None	
Skill	Water Barrier (Ex R) Water Boom (U) Water Mind (Ex U)	

Name	Edward Windsor
Occupation	Hero (Warrior)

Title	<div>* Warrior Pushed to a Corner (Ex U, Strength +8)</div> <div>* Weapon Destroyer (U, Strength and Stamina +4)</div>	
Stats	Strength	67 (+18)
	Intelligence	49
	Agility	60
	Stamina	74 (+4)
	Magic Power	41
Potential	(291+22/441)	
Uniqueness	Chosen by the cursed sword ‘Breaker.’	
Skill	<div>No Pain (U)</div> <div>Weapon Destruction (Ex U)</div> <div>Sprint (Ex R)</div> <div>Melee (U)</div>	
Skill and Item Effects	Magic Sword Breaker (Ex U, Strength +6)	

The growth of Yoo Eun-hye and Edward Windsor was great. When simply looking at their stats, they had more than doubled. There were even moderately high grade skills so I could see how hard they pushed themselves.

They were worthy of being some of the strongest humans before I came back. Although Yoo Eun-hye was still weaker than me, I wasn't judging her against myself.

In her current condition, she would be able to fight against advanced creatures. In fact, Yoo Eun-hye was challenging an orc lord.

"P-pant!"

"Crazy orc scum! Don't suddenly pop out!"

She kept talking while fighting the orcs.

All of the team members were exhausted after the battle. Still, they were looking with interest at my side.

There was no other options. The humans following behind me like a religion were enough to reverse the situation...

The first one to approach was Lee Ji-hye.

"Thank you for the help. I am the temporary captain of the Devil Hunters raid group, Lee Ji-hye."

Lee Ji-hye extended her hand.

I was currently wearing Infinity Armour and Thousand Wings. There was also a skull mask so she failed to notice my identity.

Certainly, my 'outer' appearance had changed. My stature had increased so they probably wouldn't be able to easily notice.

I stared at her hand before turning around.

Chapter 149: Guardian Deity (3)

Lee Ji-hye was puzzled.

"E-excuse me? Wait! Stop! Hey you, where did you get that? That mask is a symbol of our Devil Hunters' raid group!"

She took out a similar mask from her chest and waved it. She tried to follow but Rose blocked the path.

"Don't tail him!"

"Tail? No...rather, a dark elf...?"

Lee Ji-hye's eyes widened.

Dark elves!

She had traded with dwarves in the past, but the dark elves had always been aggressive. They were a creature to be cautious of inside the dungeon.

But now, dark elves were with a human. It was natural to be surprised.

Rose's small tongue poked out a little bit as she spoke.

“Fairy-nim said that I should stop women from twisting around Master. Bah, I can clearly see that you are uglier than Queen-nim.”

Yihi would occasionally meet with Rose and would give her some advice. Many of those words were related to women.

Lee Ji-hye was confused to have a young dark elf talking to her like this.

“...What are you people doing here?”

"Humans call our Master a ‘saviour.’ He does what no one else can do!”

"Saviour...”

Lee Ji-hye turned around.

Almost all those here were following only one person.

They bowed down with their foreheads to the ground. The only word they shouted was ‘Saviour.’

Rose flicked her head. She turned around.

"We are busy. If you want to follow then follow. Let’s go, Roy.”

"Eung."

Rose took Roy's hand and slowly walked away.

Yoo Eun-hye and Edward approached Lee Ji-hye with complicated expressions.

"Unni. What are we going to do?"

"I don't know. I guess the words heard on the radio were correct..."

Not all communication was dead. There was periodic communication with those distributing supplies, the ones in charge of warehouses and the people kept separated.

She heard that the 'Saviour' had come. It was only after arriving here that the Devil Hunters confirmed his identity.

"That person...he is familiar for some reason."

The masked man. Yoo Eun-hye gazed at his back.

He was a blunt man. Lee Ji-hye also looked at him.

"Have you forgotten? He is already dead. Even if he is dead, we have still survived."

“Anyway...it is Unni’s decision. Devil Hunters’ leader is Unni.”

Yoo Eun-hye sighed. There were shadows under her eyes.

Lee Ji-hye contemplated for a while before nodding.

“We will join. There seem to be many Awakened. Having a lot of people will be helpful.”

The invasion had been abrupt and proceeded very quickly. Demons and creatures. They knew what the weaknesses of humans were and occupied Korea.

The capital city was smashed before it even reacted. They didn’t want to give time for the clever humans to unite together.

But...they still united. The humans gathered. If they could gather people then they didn’t need to be afraid of the creatures.

‘Who is he? Is he really a saviour?’

She didn’t know. One thing was for certain, his strength was far beyond her imagination. He shattered a huge orc lord and hundreds of orcs. Yoo Eun-hye who was the strongest wouldn’t be able to imitate his actions.

Although he felt familiar, it didn’t make sense that he would be

called a 'saviour.' Lee Ji-hye started to organize her thoughts.

Humans were scary.

Once they started believing in something, they wouldn't be able to see the depths around it.

They believed in their faith and that it was the way to glory. Of course, that belief could be a driving force that made them crave 'life.' However, it could also have the adverse effect of making fanatics.

Wuuuuuuu.

Wooooo.

Small sounds filled the area. It wasn't an orderly song. It was more like bizarre moaning.

"People are strange."

Edward said while looking around.

"It isn't strange."

Yoo Eun-hye denied his words.

At the moment, they were walking in the rear.

Only those with a strong belief in the saviour could stand near him.

"Noona, don't you think it is strange? It looks so weird..."

"Everything has fallen apart. It is gone. Just when they couldn't see anything...someone offered their hands. He is a saviour to them."

It was the reason Yoo Eun-hye had followed that man two years ago. Despite being dangerous and often disappearing, he was someone who shone brightly to her.

However, now he was gone. The world was already on the brink of destruction and he didn't show up when it was in danger.

Even when precious people died...or when his home was lost...

"Indeed, I would go crazy if Noona disappeared."

"Don't say something so strange. You have the power to live alone."

"So what if I have power? I don't want to...hehe."

Edward laughed with a playful expression. The atmosphere just then had seemed somewhat depressing.

Next to him, Lee Ji-hye gazed at the long procession and asked.

"Where are we going?"

The answer came from elsewhere.

"The land of heaven. Saviour-nim is leading us to a place with no worries."

A passerby said while shedding tears.

But Lee Ji-hye refuted these words.

"Don't you see the angels? They believe that it is more important to destroy the demons. Humans aren't a high priority."

"They are fake angels! Saviour-nim is the only one who knows the real road to heaven! According to Saviour-nim and his children, we can go to heaven."

"I am too young to go there already."

"You who lack faith! Do you still have doubts about Saviour-nim?"

Lee Ji-hye replied.

"I know that he is strong. He took care of the creatures that we couldn't so I am thankful. But it is unlikely that he is leading us to heaven."

The passerby sighed like he was grieving. Then other people joined and surrounded Lee Ji-hye.

"You don't deserve to be in this line!"

"Heretics!"

"Heretic!"

A fiery reaction. Lee Ji-hye was forced to panic at the sudden crisis.

"I am a heretic just because I don't believe? Wait a minute, stop!"

Lee Ji-hye couldn't stay still any longer because people started grabbing at her hair and clothes. The Devil Hunters raid team rescued Lee Ji-hye and confronted the group.

"Ugly woman!"

At that moment, a voice was heard.

“Ah?”

"Ohh, Saviour-nim's child..."

It was like looking at Moses' miracle.

The people immediately gave way for the dark elf girl.

They stopped criticizing Lee Ji-hye.

The girl stood in front of Lee Ji-hye and the Devil Hunters.

"Master says we are moving. All the people around you as well! However, Rose won't forgive you if you stab Master in the back. Only Queen-nim can stay beside Master. Do you understand?"

They didn't know who Queen-nim was.

But the previous atmosphere had gone away.

Rose left after saying those words.

"Saviour!"

"Ohhhh..."

"Ohhhhhh..."

The people flattened their bodies like frogs and bowed.

"Unni. Let's go."

Yoo Eun-hye's voice broke through to Lee Ji-hye.

"Y-yes. Go..."

Lee Ji-hye swallowed her saliva and walked away.

She felt like she was walking into a lion's mouth.

Chapter 150: Guardian Deity (4)

Exactly 10 days.

Most of the creatures in South Korea were wiped out. The number of humans following me grew exponentially and reached 30,000.

And...I receive an achievement at the same time.

-The 'faith' of 30,000 humans has successfully been acquired for the first time.

The achievement is beyond what can be read. Looking for similar achievements and rewards.

0.001 achievement points will be obtained per person. The decimal points will be rounded up.

35 achievement points have been added.

There was something like this? The reward itself wasn't that great but the system window meant it was worth keeping an eye on.

If millions of people had faith in me then it would be possible to

earn high achievement points. It didn't seem impossible when looking at the growing trend.

Of course, it would be faster to do other work but it could be considered a supplementary income.

There was nothing bad about it. Especially when it came to my achievements score.

"Stop!"

It happened when we were nearing Busan. Many soldiers and armoured vehicles blocked the path in front of me. There were no helicopters or fighter jets visible. I heard that the demons had hit the air force bases first...it was surprising that the ground troops still existed.

I hadn't read any news about them but now their motives were clear. They intended to get rid of the creatures.

The man talking into the loudspeaker was wearing a hat with three stars.

"We are planning to recapture Seoul! Cooperate!"

He added a few words but nothing was clear. They meant to force 'cooperation.'

"If you try to leave...!"

"Vicious scum! You pop out when the creatures disappear? What have you been doing up to this point?"

"Saviour-nim is the one who removed all the creatures!"

The reactions of those who followed me were quite intense. It seemed like during the full scale attack, they abandoned the people and retreated to a far corner.

The people had lost serious faith in the soldiers. The blood pressure of the survivors rose.

"The soldiers stand for South Korea! There were limited resources and no supplies, so the only way was to be self-sufficient. But now it is different. Once Seoul is reoccupied, you can live a comfortable life as before! The technology developed using the cores has been put into practical use! Awakened, cooperate with us! Let's recapture Seoul together!"

It was no different from an armed demonstration. The soldiers were trying to use the weapons to force the people. However, my side included a much larger number of Awakened.

They even had 'faith' in me.

"Che!"

"Bullshit!"

The people spat and expressed their disbelief.

"Master. It is noisy. What is that thing?"

Rose frowned due to her sensitive ears.

"It is called a loudspeaker."

"Can I get rid of it?"

Cheok.

Instead of answering, I took one step forward.

At that moment, all the noise disappeared. The people complaining and the soldiers became silent.

But the atmosphere was just like before an explosion.

Hwaaaaaack!

I made a huge sphere with Pride's flames. The round sphere of flames floated into the sky like a sun. The flames that were twice as

large as an armoured vehicle constantly expanded and compressed.

I had 110 points in magic power. It was the highest of all my stats so even a low rated skill could offer more destructive power.

There was nothing to say if an epic grade skill was used.

Kuaaaaang!

I stretched out my hand and the compressed sphere hit a mountain.

A short explosion.

The mountain that was 700 metres tall unexpectedly evaporated.

An action that was impossible for current humans. It was something that couldn't even be called 'power.'

“.....”

The soldier shouting through the loudspeaker was silent after seeing the scene. He wasn't the only one from among those watching.

There was nothing to say.

It was like a wonderful dream had just soared into the sky. They stared blankly.

This was a warning. If they made more noise then I would bury them.

“God.”

“A god...”

Beyond a saviour, I now had the title of a god. The murmurs weren't only heard from the people behind me.

The soldiers. They were humans as well. I had learned about humans through the machine.

Every human was different but they still followed the same laws. I had already received their faith and the number of followers exceeded tens of thousands. My abilities were impossible to reproduce.

Duk!

Duk!

The soldiers started to drop their guns. Then like wildfire, all of them started putting down their arms. Those in the armoured vehicles came out with hands lifted. They had no intention of

hostile behaviour.

“You! What are you doing?”

“D-didn’t you see it? Humans can’t disobey a god.”

The soldiers were intensely agitated.

Kueeeh!

Just then, a scream was heard from near the mountain I blew up.

Kung! Kung!

A giant carrying a huge rod came rushing over. One of its two heads had disappeared but its presence was overwhelming.

A twin head ogre! One of the strongest creatures.

It had been attacked and wounded near the mountain. It breathed harshly as it ran uncontrollably.

At the very least, it was a species that common humans couldn’t deal with. The twin head ogre had appeared after its habitat was destroyed. People instinctively felt fear because of its size and ugliness.

Saaah!

Thousand Wings expanded. Just like the name, the wings could fly in the air. I flew horizontally along the ground and bumped into the twin head ogre.

Kururung!

The twin head ogre had dull movements but great power. It probably had at least 100 points in strength.

But...that was the same for me.

105. It was higher than the twin head ogre.

I grabbed the hands holding the rod and pushed them away.

I felt the twin head ogre hesitate. It never imagined it would be pushed in a pure power struggle. Creatures and demons made a point of avoiding a strength contest with a twin head ogre.

But I engaged in a frontal attack. I didn't let go of the rod.

Kung!

Soon the body of the twin head ogre was laying down on the ground. It tried to get up but it was off balance due to losing one

head.

I pulled out the Emperor's Sword. And my sword cut through its neck.

Phuak!

Blood spurted but I didn't care. The twin head ogre stopped breathing.

“God...”

"A guardian deity!"

Similar words emerged from their mouths.

Guardian deity? That name didn't really suit me.

I shook the blood off my sword and turned away.

Then I walked towards the soldiers.

Gulp!

All of the soldiers were tense. I moved slowly and didn't stop as I got closer.

Words weren't necessary. The soldier in the very front stepped aside. The other soldiers saw it and quickly moved their legs.

The dense group of soldiers parted and formed a road. As I walked through the centre, people started to follow.

I gathered all the required magic power for the wings. The creatures had dried up and the number of people increased to 40,000.

‘It is time.’

Now it was time to open the summoning door.

In my previous life, the three legged crow had emerged. I knew the place where he was summoned. If I went to the same place and used Thousand Summoned Doors, it was highly likely that I would see the three legged crow.

The result of Thousand Summoned Doors depended on the specific time, place or object. At the very least, I needed to adjust the location.

I crossed the border to North Korea.

The situation in North Korea was worse than South Korea. I couldn't see any people at all. There was no one to block me so the

march was much quicker.

The few creatures I encountered were wiped out.

After three days, I reached my destination.

I lifted my head and looked up at the mountain touching the sky.

Mt. Baekdu. I had arrived at my final destination.

Mt. Baekdu was foggy. My wings filled with a million magic power were noticeable even in the fog.

The people were nervous. They seemed to think this was the path to heaven.

A demon leading them to heaven. It was a delusion. Even if it was possible, I didn't want to open the door to take them there.

I just wanted to open the door. It was a demonstration that would confuse Pandemonium. Their desires were different from mine.

However, their 'origin' was needed. Their wish to be happy and go to heaven would be a great help in opening the summoning door.

“Thousand Summoned Doors.”

I used the skill near a lake.

At that moment...

Wiiing!

The wings scattered in every direction like smoke. They formed a circle in the air.

-The skill 'Thousand Summoned Doors' (Ex Epic) has been used.

The summoning door has been successfully opened!

There was a smile on my face. As if their souls were being sucked in, the magic power of the humans was dragged into the summoning door. It was a magic power created by their origin.

I wasn't certain whether the three legged crow would be summoned again.

However, the number of people here meant that the summoned creature certainly wouldn't be ordinary.

Jjeok! Jjeok!

The circle was torn open.

A large body passed through the circle and soon landed on the ground.

Its size was 30 metres. A slender body and four feet. A long face and fur.

The sharp eyes turned to me. It was asking who I was. There was a strong inquiring expression on its face.

It wasn't the three legged crow. It was totally different.

I studied the body of the creature.

It was unusual...

The summoned creature had nine tails.

The horn on its forehead made it seem like a unicorn but the flowing magic power felt very different. It was close to divine power but it was too ambiguous to call it divine power.

At first glance, it looked similar to a deer. However, the face resembled a dragon. It also had the feet of a horse so I doubted its identity.

Chimera? A chimera was made from various living creatures so it seemed to be similar.

But this creature was overflowing with health compared to a chimera.

I couldn't determine the identity. I confirmed it properly using Mind's Eye.

Name	Girin (TL: Korean version of qilin)	
Stats	Strength	105
	Intelligence	100
	Agility	90
	Stamina	80
	Magic Power	105
Potential	(480/???)	
Uniqueness	The name comes from a combination of two characters, 'Gi (麒)' for male and 'Rin (麟)' for female. It is a hairy beast in charge of sacred areas. It was originally born from the imagination of a god and the origin of many humans.	
	Consecration (Epic)	

Skill	Girin (Epic)
	Imagination Barrier (Ex Epic)
	???
	???

Despite Mind’s Eye being raised to an epic rating, there were still question marks. It wasn’t unexpected since the flow of magic power was completely different.

‘It originally did not exist.’

I stared at the words written in the uniqueness section. In other words, it was ‘created.’ If a real god was summoned then the balance would be disturbed. From what I had seen, the three legged crow ate dragons but the girin would be able to push back against it. It was similar to the three legged crow.

Kuuuuoh!

The girin cried out. Even the people far away became aware of its existence.

“Girin...!”

"Oh, a real guardian deity has appeared!"

The cheers only lasted a moment. The surrounding world started to reverse. Before I knew it, the sun split into nine and the mountaintop became a sea.

I immediately noticed the barrier.

A sacred deity. It noticed my essence and took an aggressive stance.

‘I have the advantage in stats...’

The problem was the skills. The Imagination Barrier skill was Ex Epic and the following two skills were just question marks.

‘I guess I can’t just pass.’

The girin moved its huge body. The hooves of a horse stepped down on me.

Kwaang!

At the same time, I struck.

Imagination Barrier. It was fake but it wasn’t fake. Any wounds received here would actually hurt. The humans were isolated so the girin and I were the only ones within this barrier.

Humans outside the barrier were just watching my fight with the girin.

What should I do...?

There was a moment of distress. The answer was clear.

I pulled out the Emperor's Sword.

It was surrounded by a dark aura that swallowed all the light around it. The sunlight had increased by nine times but it better revealed Dark Sword's appearance.

"I'll tear off your fur and fix it for you."

It would have been easy before I went to the Underground World. I would have been soundly beaten. But I had now broken my limits. My feet moved forward.

Of course, I wouldn't kill it.

I needed to make it yield before it would follow my intentions.

The girin was the right creature to provoke Pandemonium. In addition, the girin seemed like a sacred existence if I just looked at the attitude of the humans. The girin also showed no moves to harm the humans.

The girin had a harmony with humans, meaning it would block Pandemonium and his creatures. If that happened, I could buy some time.

Kwarurung!

Numerous lightning strikes appeared in the clear sky.

I wouldn't be pushed in pure stats. Except for strength, everything else was high. But skills were just as important as stats. Imagination Barrier was more difficult than I thought.

It clearly showed the girin's imagination. Impossible miracles kept occurring in this place.

Haup!

The girin used its nine tails and swallowed one of the nine suns. Then it inhaled and spat out the sun.

Hwaruruk.

The approaching sun felt like it could swallow the world so I felt a little alarmed.

'I can't be careless.'

It seemed like a serious situation. If I was hit then it was likely I would end up in a shabby condition.

"Paranormal."

-Paranormal's blessing!

High magic power (110) and intelligence (105) calibration has increased the magic power rate by 1.2 times.

Magic Power +6 for 30 minutes.

It was different from the previous times. The efficiency of the item had increased due to my transcendent stats. It was like a craftsmen bringing out the potential of a tool.

Either way, my magic power reached 116 points. It was a shame for the girin...I would use my strength to smash the sun head on.

I made Pride's flames burn more intensely. Then I added the power of Lightning God to it. It was the power I previously used to destroy the titan.

'I won't be pushed back when it comes to output.'

Despite the imaginary work, I was the owner of a transcendental power. In the first place, transcendence meant going beyond reality so it wasn't greatly affected by imagination.

Just...it was a little annoying.

The combination of Pride's flames and Lightning God's power was comparable to the sun. I threw everything at it.

Shortly after the sun hit... Kwarururung!

There was a huge explosion. The boundaries of the barrier were burnt and the illusion started to crack.

Jjejejeok!

The overwhelming output couldn't be endured.

The girin was confused for a moment and raised its horns. The horns reinforced the barrier. The cracked barrier was restored to its original state.

'I will break it.'

The barrier was annoying. I continued to struggle against a variety of natural disasters. The ground sprang up or molten lava would come pouring out. It wasn't something a normal body could survive but it didn't end there.

I once again brought out Pride's flames. I was going to smash the barrier.

Chapter 151: Guardian Deity (5)

Chiik! Chiiiik!

Instead of borrowing its power, I poured Lightning God directly into Pride's flames. Lightning God seemed to hesitate for a moment but soon gave up.

The great power was then compressed to the size of a fist. The power was incomparable to before.

I threw it towards the barrier.

As soon as the compressed power hit the barrier, it sucked in everything around it like a black hole.

It was the same with the shield around the barrier.

Everything was absorbed into the sphere.

The girin's horn shone intensely but the recovery rate was slower than the breakdown rate. It would soon shatter.

-Stop!

At that moment, the voice of a woman resonated in my head.

I quickly realized that the girin was communicating with me.

-If this power escapes then all the humans out there will die!

Aha!

She judged that it would be hard to fight against me and established the barrier. Now it seemed like she was worried about the people outside.

Wasn't she a divine being born from the origin of humans?

It seemed like she was capable of communicating. Things had become easier.

I wanted to know her true purpose.

"Do you want to protect them?"

-Evil one! Why do you want to kill all these innocent people?

"I don't know what you are talking about. You were the one who attacked first. I was just defending myself."

-Still...!

I spread my wings.

I laughed as I confronted the girin.

"They are vagrants. They lost their homes, their jobs and reached this place because of me. Didn't their origins reach out for you? Do you truly want their lives?"

No. Most of the humans followed me here in order to feel comfortable. They didn't want any more suffering. That's why they followed me while dreaming of 'heaven.'

They didn't care about their own lives.

They didn't know that their origins had been absorbed by the girin.

I turned my head and looked at the shaky humans.

"They don't care about that. Even if I am evil, they will follow me if it means revenge. If someone was willing to take them to paradise, they would follow people even more evil than me. You know the origin, yet you saw my essence and attacked."

I brought the humans here. They truly believed in me. That belief was also included in the origin.

-Then you are not evil?

Was she born crazy? She interpreted my words in a different way so I corrected her again.

"I am evil. More evil than anyone else. However, that evil doesn't apply to everyone. Only for those I acknowledge as my enemies. They are the target of my wickedness."

Humans were currently out of the question. Their level wasn't enough to even poke me in the teeth, let alone push me back. The girin seemed to finally understand.

-Then...okay, I admit it. So stop your act of breaking the barrier.

"I don't know how to reclaim the power once it has left. You take care of it."

I folded my arms and became a bystander. The girin that reached 30 metres in height turned her head with fright. And she concentrated on the barrier.

The barrier was lifted and the girin descended to the ground.

Her hostility towards me had disappeared but she looked quite tired.

The girin didn't stop moving until she arrived in front of the people.

The girin's whole body was covered in flames and she started to gradually transform.

Soon a naked woman appeared where the girin was.

The dream-like woman had burning red hair. Apart from the horn on her forehead, she looked no different from humans.

But the humans were stunned by her appearance.

“My name is Rin. I came here due to your origins.”

Gulp!

The people swallowed their saliva. Everyone was focused on the woman.

She wasn't just beautiful. There was an unapproachable atmosphere around her.

“However, I can't take you to heaven. It is possible to make a similar ‘dream’, but it is just a mere illusion. Do you want it?”

There was silence. They had imagined it numerous times. They were hoping it would be turned into a reality.

Rin continued.

"I'm not sure. But I feel extremely unpleasant towards those who bullied you. They trampled on this land and took away your precious things. I will punish them."

Huuung!

Her horn shone once again.

Flames spread and were absorbed by thousands of people.

After this was done, she said.

"And...the person who will end the confusion will appear here. He or she will become the real defender of this country."

I watched closely. The girin had planted embers in the humans. I wasn't sure what type of fire it was but it was probably the Girin (Epic) skill.

The embers would manifest once they experienced a certain occasion. In addition, there would eventually be a leader. Among the tens of thousands of people gathered here, a true leader would appear to lead them.

The faces of the humans were red.

They instinctively recognized the girin and what she was doing.

Maybe the girin was manipulating the humans with images.

Anyway, I did everything I needed to do.

‘I passed on the message.’

It happened while inside the imagination barrier.

I told the girin the true enemy who was trampling on humans.

I remembered the conversation that just occurred.

"Pandemonium. His servants are stepping on this land. They caused devastation. He is a demon, but unlike me, he wants the destruction of this world. The choice is yours. Will you continue being hostile against me or will you help the humans against Pandemonium and the other demons?"

"Does that mean you don't want his destruction?"

"I am a demon. I won't get revenge for the humans. So I summoned you."

"It will be tough if Pandemonium is at a similar level to you."

"You don't have to hit him. This time, four of his demon vassals have died. I know the location of their dungeons. Although

Pandemonium will urgently dispatch demons and creatures, there will be fewer of them. Hit those places. It will be the true springboard for revenge.”

“Springboard for revenge...”

"I don't wish to destroy humans. I just want to kill the other demons. Think carefully and act. I am not someone you should be hostile towards.”

Right now, I didn't care about the dungeons of other demons. It was more important to buy some time. If I could buy a few months then that was enough.

The girin and humans would give me that time.

In addition, they could have a taste of power once they succeeded in capturing the dungeons. They might be able to start properly fighting back against other demons.

Girin made the decision to hit the dungeons of Pandemonium's vassals. In that case, I didn't need to stay here.

‘Now...’

I turned around.

I didn't need to guide them anymore since there would be a

leader. It would be better to maintain my ‘mystique.’

Humans were like that. The more they didn’t know, the scarier it was...or they were more inclined to follow the mysterious.

"Saviour-nim!"

“Where...”

The humans panicked once I turned my back to them. Yoo Eun-hye was the first one to arrive.

"Wait a minute!"

Yoo Eun-hye was a lightning magic swordswoman. She could move as fast as lightning.

She glanced up into my eyes.

"Who are you? I have watched you. But I just don't know. Why do you feel so familiar?"

It felt like she wouldn’t let me go until I answered. I was going to use a scroll to disappear from Mt. Baekdu but I opened my mouth first.

"You don’t have the right to know yet."

"It is a familiar voice. Although it is familiar...I can't remember. My memory is foggy. Just...can't you tell me? How do I obtain the right to know?"

"Become stronger. All the humans should be beneath you. Once you deserve it, you will know everything that you want to know."

She had become stronger in one year and eight months. It couldn't be compared to before. However, that was just against the human standards. If she maintained this growth, it would only be a matter of time...I wanted her to grow faster.

Therefore, I pulled out two sheets of parchment.

The advanced training room tickets. A type of ticket that could be opened.

"If you want to become stronger then tear this when no one else is around. Convey the other one to the person with the most growth potential."

I wouldn't have given it if her growth was below expectations. But Yoo Eun-hye and Edward Windsor's growth had fulfilled it.

Unlike in my previous life, the humans couldn't be allowed to fall so easily. I would be able to gain a lot of benefits if they survived until the end.

It wouldn't be bad if Yoo Eun-hye emerged as the leader. The true power of humans came from their unity. She would become a focal point to destroying the demons and I would be controlling her from behind.

It wasn't a bad development.

“.....”

Yoo Eun-hye glanced at the two pieces of parchment. She alternated between the parchment and I with tight lips. I left it at that.

‘It is enough to make Pandemonium alarmed.’

He didn't know that I had returned. So it was possible he would send a large force after having contact with his demons broken. If the empty dungeons were raided then he would have to move.

In the process, there would be human casualties but the numbers wouldn't increase significantly. Even if they were close to extinction, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward would live. The moment they entered the training room, they wouldn't be able to come out until they cleared it.

“Roy. You will remain.”

"Yes, yes?"

I made one more preparation. I would leave Roy here to watch. If the situation could be determined through Roy then it would make planning tactics much easier.

Rose placed her hands on her waist and scolded Roy.

"Didn't you hear what Master said? And don't you know that Master hates repeating things? Roy, I will take M3. Will you use me as a crutch every time? Fix that timid nature of yours!"

Even though he was her twin brother, Rose was heartless.

Roy seemed like he was about to cry. He couldn't refuse so he just stood there.

"Master. Are we going now?"

Rose showed no signs of being shaken at all.

I nodded and Rose handed me the scroll. I tore it.

At the same time...light flashed and both of us disappeared from Mt. Baekdu.

Yihi was the first to greet me after I returned to the dungeon.

“You came, Master.”

She bowed and smiled. She was quiet but the awkwardness couldn't be erased. It was unconvincing acting.

"Have Chrisley and Tashmal returned?"

“Yes. They arrived two hours ago. Yihi carefully looked after them.”

She covered her mouth and gave an ‘ohoho’ laugh. It was different from her usual ‘yihih’...I felt like a bug was crawling on my back.

"Before that, Master. Aren't you tired? Yihi brought you some honey water as a sign of sincerity.”

Yihi reached out and a beautiful cup appeared from somewhere. It was a trick that she had learnt how to do.

“Please note that this cup was made by Yihi.”

She had come a long way. Yihi didn't have a sense of design but that had changed over time.

Gulp!

I swallowed it. A refreshing feeling went down my throat.

"Delicious."

"Yihihi!"

Yihi quickly received the cup that I threw.

"I have to see Chrisley and Tashmal."

"Yes Master. Yihi is happy to guide you."

Yihi bowed respectfully once more before flying off.

Yihi's garden.

Chrisley and Tashmal were collapsed in a room like they were dead.

King bees buzzed around them noisily but they didn't budge.

'The quantity and quality of their magic power has risen.'

Tashmal's wings had grown bigger and Chrisley had a 'strange' magic power. But I wasn't certain about one thing.

How much did they grow?

I quickly opened Mind’s Eye.

Name	Chrisley	
Occupation	Master Guardian (All stats + 5)	
Title	<div>* Person with the Blood of a True Demonic Dragon (Epic, Intelligence +6, Magic +6)</div> <div>* Blessed by the Moon (Ex U, Magic Power +8)</div> <div>* Balanced (Epic, All stats +3)</div>	
Stats	Strength	72 (+8)
	Intelligence	94 (+14)
	Agility	68 (+8)
	Stamina	68 (+8)
	Magic Power	80 (+26)
Potential	(382+64/484)	
Uniqueness	After going through some atrocities, the power of the true demonic dragon Aojin and the ark elf queen Shilla has been balanced with Ganak the King of Death.	
	Large Body Control (Ex U)	

Skill	Undead Manufacturing (Epic) Queen of the Sun and Moon (Epic) King of Death (Epic)
Skill and item Effects	Death Wand (Ex U, Set, Magic Power +4)

Name	Tashmal	
Occupation	Fallen Angel	
Title	* Angel of Light Steeped in Darkness (Epic, Intelligence and Magic Power +6) * Suffering and Awakening (Epic, Intelligence and Magic Power +5)	
Stats	Strength	72 (+8)
	Intelligence	88
	Agility	90
	Stamina	83
	Magic Power	85 (+11)
Potential	(434+22/471)	

Uniqueness	An angel that spread light into the world has now become a fallen angel. As a result of repeated suffering and enlightenment, she has become more complete.
Skill	Propagation of Darkness (Epic) Barrage of Dark Spears (Epic) Dark Thunder (Epic)
Skill and item Effects	Firm Conviction (Ex U)

It was a tremendous growth.

It was a level that could face other high class creatures.

They might be even stronger.

They were at least between a high class 2Lv and 3Lv creature. This was more than I expected.

The vacancy left behind by Krasla still remained.

"Y-you came? My Dungeon Master..."

Chrisley noticed my presence and sat up. Her complexion was pale. In indirectly told me how hard her experience was.

"Take a rest."

"No. Seeing you after a long time...I am very happy."

"How long did you stay there?"

"I don't know. At least three years. Yet only a few days have passed here."

There was a complicated expression on her face. She didn't know whether to rejoice or mourn that it wasn't three years later.

"Good job. You have become stronger."

"I am glad to meet Master's expectations. Oh, and..."

Chrisley handed me a fragmented piece.

"It was given to me when I left the training room."

"There is a weird pattern."

The piece was heavy. It looked like parts of it had been forcibly cut off. Strange mural paintings were carved on it. I would only be able to confirm its identity once all the pieces were gathered.

Mind's Eye didn't give an explanation.

-Name - Piece of Balance

Description: A piece given after clearing the advanced training room. It is a piece of balance. There will be a special effect once all five pieces are placed together.

That was all it said. Either way, I needed to join the five pieces together.

There was a similar piece in Tashmal's arms.

'A piece of enlightenment.'

I had gathered two.

Two tickets were given to Yoo Eun-hye so I would have to recover them later.

At that moment, Chrisley unexpectedly fell to her knees.

"My Dungeon Master. In the future, I will be the sword that cuts down your enemies."

“Instead of Krasla?”

Krasla. He followed my orders like a sword. He solved everything ahead of anyone else.

“Yes.”

Indeed. The vacant position had to be filled.

“Okay. You will be my sword and shield. Defeat my enemies in the future. And...I will give you Pandemonium’s head.”

“Thank you.”

Chrisley bowed deeply.

Chrisley had lost Krasla and many dark elves due to Pandemonium finding my dungeon and attacking. The death of four demons couldn’t fulfil her desire for vengeance.

It was just something small.

"Heal your body. I will be busy.”

“My Dungeon Master. Can I hear your next move?”

I said with a laugh.

“I have to prepare for the Demon World Auction.”

Demon World Auction!

Now that I had time, I needed to restore the dungeon and prepare for the Demon World Auction.

Chapter 152: Demon World Auction (1)

If my memory was clear, there was three months left until the 5th Demon World Auction. I skipped the 4th one due to the Underground World, so I needed to establish a strategy.

‘The 3rd Demon World Auction is when it fully started.’

Mago appeared, causing the atmosphere to change.

I didn’t know what came out in the 4th year. There was the titan but that wouldn’t be all. There would be instruments of power that could reverse the situation.

It was different from my previous life. The speed was rapidly increasing. I had no recollection of such speed in my previous life. The demons who suffered in the 3rd and 4th Demon World Auctions were more likely to bid higher this year.

The angels appeared and Okullos had died. They started to sweep the land in earnest. All the hidden cards...

They were likely to be found at the Demon World Auction.

‘The demons in Okullos’ faction. I don’t know what happened to them.’

Okullos was dead for sure. But I didn’t know what happened to

the demons in his faction. There was a chance they survived, but there would obviously be an impact.

And if they were alive...I couldn't rule out the possibility of them being absorbed into the other factions. I had to make plans with all that in mind.

'In many ways, this will be the basis for the 5th year.'

Drastic changes. There was no reason to be stuck in the dungeon. Those who progressed slowly would be eaten right away.

At this moment, Pandemonium was raising and killing Awakened. The collected points would be used to reinforce the dungeon as well as for the Demon World Auction. I didn't know what strategy Ariel and Upa had set up.

'There are certainly variables. If I don't want to be shaken by the variables, something unique is required.'

In fact, everything around me was a variable. Right now, I needed to remain low key and create my weapons.

'Points alone isn't enough.'

The time to use points to make my presence known was gone. Although I still held an enormous amount of points for an individual, it would be difficult to exert influence over the factions like before.

I needed something else. I had to make them nervous about my presence once again.

‘I will make changes.’

I nodded. The answer itself was simple. If it wasn’t what I desired then I would overturn the plate and try again.

The problem was actually overturning the plate.

‘Dubolong...’

I clicked my tongue.

If I could contact Dubolong then it wouldn’t be difficult. Besides, the Spirit World thought I was dead. I needed to contact them at least once. Their permission was required to access the Demon World Auction.

However, getting to the Spirit World was another problem. There was no way I could get in contact with Dubolong here. If I wanted to go there...

‘I have to open a crack.’

There were still many unclear parts about the cracks. There was no guarantee that the other side would be where I wanted to go.

But I had the token that Dubolong gave me. The small stone was insufficient. I needed to open the crack in order to get the communication working. There was no need to cross the crack directly.

The crack was a type of circuit. It would allow me to open the line of communication with Dubolong.

At that time, a name popped into my head.

Oswen!

At that time, he had said. He made the Seven Sins and then threw them into a crack.

In other words, it meant he opened a crack himself.

It was the only clue. I immediately moved my feet.

‘I have to see Oswen.’

I hoped he had the answer.

“A crack, you say?”

Oswen was making his arms in Gaparam’s workshop. He originally had six arms but four were cut off. Therefore, he was

making fake arms to replace them.

Gaparam and the dwarf king were nearby but I wasn't interested in them. I only looked at Oswen as I spoke.

"If you threw the Seven Sins into a crack then you must know how to open it."

"I know but...there is a risk. And I can't do it alone."

"What do you need?"

Oswen closed his eyes. He pondered for a moment before sighing.

"After forcefully opening a crack, it is possible that unknown things will pop out of it. For example, spirits from the Spirit World or...existences trapped in nothingness. There are many old existences stuck in the crack. They are very destructive and unreasonable."

"Do you think I won't be able to deal with them?"

Even if a transcendent presence came out, I was confident.

My resolve was firm. Oswen realized this. Oswen knew he wouldn't be able to discourage me and shook his head.

“Okay. However, materials are required. To create the device, I also need Gaparam’s help.”

"Tell me what you need. I'll get everything ready."

“First, lend me Wrath. I need to create a framework for the device.”

Suuk.

I handed over Wrath without hesitation.

Oswen looked at me like he was a little surprised.

"You are just giving it without any questions?"

"It is something that you made in the first place."

"I don't remember how I created it. At any rate, Wrath isn't the only thing I need to borrow. That item called Thousand Wings is wonderful. It is perfect for storing massive amounts of magic power."

Thousand Wings was detachable. Once the supply of magic power to Thousand Wings was discontinued, it would fall off.

“Ah! The Paranormal Ring! That as well. The irregularity of the

item is good for the crack.”

“Anything else?”

"Your Majesty. Have I lied to you?"

It was unclear but Oswen still had knowledge in this field. It was dubious in my previous life but now I had ‘strength.’

My subordinates meant I could move more efficiently.

"I will tell you the rest. Building the frame will take quite a bit of time...and the device is single use only. The consumption of other materials is beyond imagination. Do you really want to open the crack?"

He asked for confirmation. I nodded.

"Open it."

“Okay. Then...Gaparam, will you be my assistant for a while?”

Gaparam, who was watching from the side, opened his mouth with slight disbelief.

"Can you really open a crack?"

"How long have you lived? It seems like you have been living comfortably in the mountains for a long time. How could you not know? The dwarf king here is giving me a look of respect."

Indeed, the dwarf king was looking at Oswen with infinite respect. He was paying more attention to Oswen than the Dungeon Master.

In contrast, Oswen was a little upset that Gaparam didn't know him. Despite being in different fields, artisans should know each other.

"I admit that you seem knowledgeable and fairly dexterous."

"Tsk tsk. Wait and see. I'll push your haughty nose down properly."

There was a strange war of nerves.

I interrupted them.

"What is the estimated time for completion?"

"At least a month."

"Report the progress to Yihi. Tell Yihi if you need anything."

“I understand.”

Oswen agreed.

There was a way to open the crack.

It would take time so I had separate tasks to do.

-A remarkable achievement! For the first time, 10 ‘lizardmen villages’ have been created.

200,000pt will be given.

300 achievement points will be added.

-Great achievement! For the first time, the number of angels has increased through breeding.

400,000pt will be given.

500 achievement points will be added.

-Huge accomplishment!

The 'Origin Seed' has been collected for the first time. However, seeds from the Tree of Origin won't grow into the tree. Instead, a 'World Tree' can be germinated from the 'Origin Seed' under certain conditions.

1,000,000pt will be given.

1,000 achievement points will be added.

.....

The best way to gain points was to have many achievements. In order to fulfil my 'plan,' I needed special achievements and special items.

I had the Origin Seed, Essence of Origin, Angel Tear and several other items that could only be bought from the Achievements Stores.

My points recovered to 30 million in just one month. This was after restoring the dungeon, building Gaparam's workshop, investing in research and opening the crack.

And...I finally received word from Oswen that the device was completed.

"I will return Wrath to you."

"Once the crack opens, Wrath and the device will act as strong transmission equipment."

At first glance, Oswen's device looked no different from Wrath. Of course, the magic power was completely different but the appearance was the same.

"The crack shouldn't be opened for a long time. Your Majesty is obviously strong but you might become overwhelmed if numerous beings emerge."

"It is only for a short time."

"I understand. Then I will open the crack."

In addition to recreating Wrath's outward appearance, there were a few more strange items. A compass, a grey Thousand Wings and Paranormal. They were the same but looked uglier. Oswen had made all of them.

Oswen put on Thousand Wings and the ring. He infused the power of Wrath into Thousand Wings.

Hwaaaaack!

At the same time, all types of magic power started flowing. There were flames, ice and occasionally harsh winds. It was chaos!

Light rushed and a dark passage appeared. The light was distorted by the passage.

‘It seems that is how the crack will appear.’

I knew about it. It was similar to what I expected.

Soon the distorted passage disappeared and the crack replaced it.

“It is opened. Once the magic power is removed from Thousand Wings and the ring, the crack will disappear.”

I placed my hand in the crack. My hand was holding the stone that Dubolong gave me.

It started to vibrate as I poured magic power into the stone.

Duk!

I knew instinctively. The connection was made.

-No one should be able to contact me with this...who are you?

“Dubolong. It is me.”

-Me? I don't know. How did you obtain this communication line?

Dubolong's voice was filled with intense doubts.

"Who else would communicate with this stone other than me?"

No. It was hard to imagine that Dubolong would give it to many people.

Dubolong's voice shook as he noticed it.

-Perhaps...! No, but, it can't be?

I said with a laugh.

"It has been a while."

—.....

Dubolong couldn't answer. I could tell that he was surprised.

I waited leisurely.

I couldn't afford to be idle due to the crack but I needed to seem 'free' to take control of the conversation with Dubolong.

-Y-you are really Randalph-nim?

"There is no other demon that would use that name."

-It is ridiculous. I checked and you were erased from the system...

"You can see that?"

It meant they would know when a demon died. I asked with confusion and Dubolong replied.

-Please just wait a moment. I will check. It won't take long.

"I'll be waiting. A guest happened to arrive."

I pulled back my hand. Once the crack was closed, it couldn't be reopened. Dubolong could open it separately, but it would take too long. There were only two months left until the Demon World Auction.

Since I had to keep the crack open until Dubolong returned, the delay meant an 'existence' inevitably passed through.

"Oh my god! An ancient corrupted spirit. It seems like it has been in the crack for a few thousand years! Should I close the crack now?"

Oswen was startled as he saw the existence.

Thick hands. A dark body. Two eyes could be seen in the darkness as it floated in the air. An ancient fallen spirit...it should be an advanced creature. 10 such spirits appeared at once.

I shook my head.

“I will deal with it.”

I pulled out my sword. I looked at the fallen spirits with Wrath and the Emperor's Sword in both hands.

"I can't move because I have to maintain the crack. Is it really okay?"

“I am enough.”

The attribute of the spirits was darkness itself. I couldn't use Dark Sword and would have to deal a blow with Moonlight Falling. However...that was only if I followed the attribute. I was different from those creatures. My transcendental attacks ignored the attributes.

The crack couldn't be closed so I needed to take care of anything that emerged.

Kuoooooh.

The fallen spirits penetrated through the darkness. It seemed like they were aggressive.

But I was faster.

Chwack!

I cut one apart. The spirit was split in two.

‘It is a little annoying.’

The fallen spirits would be able to replicate themselves.

‘I need to slice them so they can’t divide.’

Dark Sword made repairing injuries impossible, but dividing was another area. Anyway, I didn’t think much about it. I would just attack them until they couldn’t split anymore.

Starting with the ancient fallen spirits, contaminated gnomes and gastric golems appeared through the crack. Fortunately, existences similar to Contegonom didn’t show up. After buying some time, Dubolong finally contacted me.

-Really...you are alive. I’m really surprised.

“I won’t die.”

Supak!

The gastric golem was cut into two.

My dream was still valid. Sitting on the throne of the devil with a large smile! I wouldn’t die until I achieved that dream. I was confident that I wouldn’t die.

-The sounds around you are loud. Are you in a fight right now?

"It isn’t a big deal.”

Hwaruruk!

I burned the remnants of the gastric golem with Pride’s flames. Now everything became silent.

-Ohh, it is quiet now. By the way...I am wondering something. Can I hear the story of where you went?

"Unfortunately, there is no story to tell.”

-This...I want to hear how to avoid the system’s eyes. I will pay a price...

Dubolong said urgently. Loopholes in the system would be accompanied by enormous sacrifices. The dark spirits were eager to avoid the eyes of system.

However, the Underground World was already incorporated into the system. It wasn't a loss for me because I got a lot of rewards after connecting the Underground World to my dungeon, but it was a pity for Dubolong.

“Dubolong. Don't you know that there is a reason why I contacted you?”

-Hmm, yes. Randolph-nim's time is very precious. Was the reason why you contacted me separately due to the Demon World Auction?

A valid reasoning. It was true that I contacted him for access to the Demon World Auction.

But there was something else more important.

"I have an offer."

-Offer?

“Dubolong. Have you even thought about changing the auction method?”

I spoke bluntly.

Dragging things on wasn't in my nature.

Anyway, my side was holding the key.

-It never even popped into my head. Change the auction method?

Dubolong's voice trembled at the unexpected words. I didn't delay.

"Add more items to the auction. The items will be obtained from the demons."

-In other words, you want to be able to contribute auction items?

"That's right. The anonymity of the demons contributing to the auction should be guaranteed."

-That isn't possible. There isn't enough time and the Dark Spirit King can't just change the fixed rules.

Was that really the case?

He could change the rules to his own benefit.

"It will cause some excitement before the auction. Please note that I will put up the Essence of Origin for auction."

-The Essence of Origin...!

The Essence of Origin. It was an item that the Dark Spirit King desired. I had asked for the Seven Sins in exchange for it.

It was an item that would allow someone to break through the limit. Although breaking it once was very difficult, it wasn't very hard to find the next way to break the limit. That's why Adonis desired the Essence of Origin and the grand dukes hid the way they broke through the limits in my previous life.

Now I declared that I would put it up for auction. Dubolong was silent for a moment.

Dubolong couldn't come to a conclusion so he asked.

-Randalph-nim. I can guess what Randolph-nim is thinking. Can I ask you a question?

"You still don't understand?"

-Isn't that why I am asking?

Dubolong was confused.

We had a relationship so he speculated that I was going to hand over the Essence of Origin to Adonis.

But now the situation changed. I couldn't overturn the plate without any changes.

"Adonis. He will become a participant in the auction."

I spoke like it wasn't a big deal but it was an unprecedented proposal.

It would overturn the plate!

I intended to drag Adonis to the surface. He would no longer be able to watch from the position of a bystander!

-...Crazy. The Dark Spirit King is the head of the Demon World Auction.

"Are there any rules that he can't participate?"

-The issue of fairness...I can't decide for the Dark Spirit King.

"That isn't your problem."

The final decision would depend on Adonis in the end. No matter how much Dubolong said, Adonis would decide in the end.

Dubolong was closest to Adonis but he was still just an advisor.

-What reason does Randolph-nim have to change the auction method and force the Dark Spirit King to participate?

"I will also benefit."

How would I benefit?

Adonis would be turned from a bystander into a participant. It would instill awareness in the demons that the Dark Spirit King had started to move.

I wanted the confusion caused by that.

The Dark Spirit King could be a doubled edged variable but he was only available for me.

In addition, I could acquire more points and purchase more auction items.

The demons in the other factions would covet the items I put up for auction. They were things that weren't available from the general store. It was because they were all from the Achievements Store.

-Hu! Okay. I will tell the Dark Spirit King. And...Randolph-nim's survival is very sudden so giving you the list of auction goods in

advance will be tricky.

"It doesn't matter."

-I understand. I will ask the Dark Spirit King for permission. Then all the demons will be told of the change in auction method. Don't expect much.

"I'm looking forward to it."

Duk!

The signal cut off.

Chapter 153: Demon World Auction (2)

I had old memories. I identified the alignment of Adonis and the other demons. Adonis would respond to my deal so I started to move in order to prepare for him.

The remaining grand dukes. I prepared things that I knew Ariel, Upa and Pandemonium would covet. It didn't matter if they were good or not. They were things the demons wanted but couldn't obtain. There were no clues about the items. All of them were from the Achievements Store. To be precise, they were part of the 'Hell Monarch's treasure.'

I didn't neglect to gather points from achievements. One month later, a message window popped into the air.

-Under the authority of the Dark Spirit King Adonis, rules have been added to the auction.

Prior to the full auction, individual auctions will be held.

Demons can participate in the individual auctions. They can place up to 10 goods as auction items. The seller's anonymity is guaranteed.

Unlike the previous auctions, spirits can participate as buyers of the individual auctions. Fire spirits and water spirits can also participate in the individual auctions. They can get a certain amount of points through a 'contract' and these points can be

used to participate in the auction.

Fire spirits and water spirits? Didn't they oppose the dark spirits?

I remembered their actions in the previous Demon World Auction.

Perhaps...something had happened in the meantime.

However, there was a smile on my face.

It was surprising that the other spirits were officially recognized and allowed to participate in the auction.

'Hooked.'

I was ready to overturn the plate.

The Demon World Auction.

I chose Chrisley to take with me.

She wanted revenge. The object of her revenge was Pandemonium but I selected her to show her off to the other demons.

In her first appearance, Chrisley was sold as an accessory to Krasla. The other demons didn't care about her.

Now she was better than Krasla. She had phenomenal growth and was now recognized as a high class creature.

I wanted to see how they would respond. My emergence together with Chrisley's growth...my smile couldn't be erased as I imagined their reactions.

'Ariel, Upa and Pandemonium! I'm back.'

I was making my debut again at the Demon World Auction.

They were aware that Okullos had broken the taboo and was killed.

However, I became more complete in the Underground World. I had set my feet firmly in the realm of transcendence.

On the other hand, what about them? Was their growth comparable to mine?

I felt a strange anticipation as I entered the crack and arrived at a familiar room.

A dark spirit in the form of a gnome was waiting for me.

“Kuhulhul! Randolph-nim. It has been a while.”

The dark spirit that I always saw when traveling to the auction greeted me. It was obvious that he had heard in advance.

It was good. This auction had changed in many ways.

There was a limit to figuring out things on my own. I would be able to get some information from my guide. He was perfect to fulfil my curiosity.

“Have you been well?”

"That's impossible. I felt very sorry when I didn't see you last year. In fact, I obtained the position of Randolph-nim's guide after much difficulty...I had a lot of fun.”

The dark spirit sighed. His expression was truly sad.

"I haven't seen any changes.”

“Kuhulhul! I am telling you now, the competition was intense. It is because it is possible for us to raise our ‘standings.’ It is a rule that the guides won't change if the participants in the auction don't die. When the 3rd year passed and Randolph-nim continued to show your true worth, a lot of people asked me to change...”

"Then I didn't appear the next year."

The dark spirit nodded.

"That's right. Dubolong couldn't find you in the 'system.' Usually, this only happens when the target is dead. I wa saddened. But then...surely, hyu~"

His face was like a girl who had fallen in love.

"I have no regrets about not swapping Randolph-nim. Kuhulhul! Would you like a succubus or elf?"

A sexual joke. He laughed 'kuhulhul!' at approaching succubi and elves. Just imagining it was terrible.

"I don't have an answer. Rather, I saw that the fire spirits and water spirits are participating in the individual auctions. What happened?"

"Ah...that is..."

The dark spirit's expression hardened. It wasn't a good expression. I remained silent and the dark spirit continued.

"Do you know the story about the other spirits sending spies?"

"I know."

Due to the summoning of Cruel Commander Maxium, the other spirits sent spies to obtain information from the dark spirits. I remembered it.

"Among them, the water and fire spirits pressed our dark spirits most severely. This time last year, the secret of the Demon World Auction was finally revealed. The Dark Spirit King made a deal in exchange for secrecy."

"Was it to participate in the Demon World Auction?"

"No. They showed interest in the system created by the devil. However, we don't know anything about the system either. We just made a deal and the authority was given to us."

The devil's system...no one could figure it out. This path hadn't been shown in my previous life.

No one had bothered to figure this out. The system itself was already complete. However, the other spirits looked at it from another perspective.

"Then?"

"Once the contract was made, we succeeded in buying some time. Then a few months ago, the other spirit kings decided to participate in the auction. They are limited to the individual

auctions but...”

That was all. I didn’t need to know anymore of the story.

‘Adonis. He accepted my offer but what else is he aiming for?’

It was a question that naturally came up. Adonis wouldn’t have made the decision suddenly. The risk was too big for that. He wasn’t dumb enough to risk his ‘destruction’ just for one Essence of Origin.

He responded to my request because of a separate idea.

“How many demons are participating?”

"There are 54. Kuhulhul, it is tragic since only five years have passed.”

In the first three years, I was the one who killed all the demons. That number had risen in just two years.

“The average number of points?”

"It was originally three million...suddenly, it rose by 700,000 in one day. Kuhuhul!”

The dark spirit sent me a sly glance. He had a sense of how many

points I had. However, his gaze was filled with respect.

"And there are contracts for the individual auctions. It will be stamped with the devil's seal but don't feel burdened."

The devil's seal. There were large constraints on its use. Contracts stamped with the devil's seal were absolute. I knew Adonis had it but I didn't think he would use it.

I read through the parchments the dark spirit gave me.

Anonymity guaranteed. Item protection. Confidentiality, etc. were written. The fire spirits and water spirits must have been handed similar contracts.

It wasn't strange since they were enemies. I looked at the seal and the place where Adonis's name was written, before biting my finger and placing a bloody imprint on the contract.

Immediately afterwards, the parchment was rolled up and passed to the dark spirits.

"The contract has been completed. Would you show us the items being sold at the individual auctions now? We need to see them before the auction starts."

I untied my magic bag.

Exactly 10 items. I placed the things I would sell at the individual auctions on the floor.

The eyes of the dark spirit shook as he saw the items.

"Hah...!"

An exclamation escaped from his mouth.

After this was over, the dark spirit guiding me said.

“The involvement of the fire and water spirits means there are changes from the previous years. It was possible to see the items before the auction started, but not anymore. It is for security reasons, so please understand.”

"Then we are proceeding straight to the auction?"

“No. Don't we have to give some time to adjust? You will be given half a day of free time.”

I frowned. Half a day of freedom seemed simple but it was actually a serious problem.

Demons and the spirits didn't have a good relationship with each other. It was highly unlikely they would ignore each other if there were encounters. It wouldn't be good.

As well as...there was enough time if they wanted to do something. So far, there had been no time to do anything. The auction proceeded immediately and once it was over, I would return to my dungeon.

'There was minimal time to adapt.'

From the beginning, the demons were feuding with each other. Unlike my previous life, everything was going much faster. There was a rule that only their creatures could fight but that didn't apply to the spirits.

Furthermore, the act of using Pakan Griolli as a scapegoat for Upa was unprecedented.

If they could kill some core people of the opponent's faction...it might be worth it.

'There must be a lot of confusion.'

Tsk! I clicked my tongue. In many ways, it seemed like this Demon World Auction wouldn't be able to progress as normal. Maybe this was what Adonis had been hoping for.

"Kuhulhul! Randolph-nim, I need to carry out the auction procedure. Then...I will see you after your free time."

The dark spirit opened the door and left. There were some high class spirits waiting on the other side.

“My Dungeon Master. What will we do now?”

Chrisley roughly grasped the situation. This might be her first time but she didn't feel awkward.

"What would you like to do?"

There were no correct actions. If I didn't move carefully then there was a high chance of receiving damage.

So I asked Chrisley. It wasn't bad to move according to Chrisley's opinion.

Chrisley briefly thought for a moment before saying.

"This is the conclusion I came to with my current knowledge...first of all, we should get in touch with the spirits."

"The spirits?"

Contacting the spirits first. It was surprising. I thought she would want to look at Ariel Diablo's side first.

Chrisley cleared her throat and said.

"The demons are still unaware of Master's survival. If they

know...I'm sure there will be a lot of actions during the next half a day. Especially when it comes to Pandemonium."

"Are you saying we should stay with the spirits so they can't take action?"

I was strong. However, there were limits to what I could do alone. I couldn't deal with all the factions alone.

Still, I was skeptical. Even if the spirits weren't hostile, they were likely to ignore me if I approached.

At that moment, Chrisley confidently declared.

"My Dungeon Master. The blood flowing through my body is very compatible with them. Please leave this to me."

The true demonic dragon Aojin and the dark elf Shilla!

They had strong attributes of fire and water. There was a chance the spirits could feel an affinity with it.

Certainly...it was reasonable.

There was no need to refuse.

"Okay. I will follow you. But I will choose the side first."

“My Dungeon Master. I will follow your words.”

Chrisley kneeled beside me.

Two feet lengths. In the past, she only walked three feet lengths behind me. However, I was satisfied after the training room. So I allowed her to narrow the distance.

"We will go to the fire spirits first."

"I will follow."

Fire spirits.

They were sent to an area filled with dark spirits, so they would have high standings.

Furthermore, fire spirits had a vigorous and valiant nature. It would be better to speak to them than the water spirits.

Chapter 154: Demon World Auction (3)

It wasn't difficult to find the fire spirits.

It was enough to go to the place where fire magic power was gathered.

The strange thing was that I didn't meet any demons in the huge castle. It seemed like the demons had gathered into their factions after arriving at the Demon World Auction.

'The grand dukes aren't idiots...'

It was clear they wanted to talk to each other about the items they would sell at the auction and develop a plan. I moved as an individual instead of a faction, so I could take one step faster than them.

'The security is poor.'

The most suspicious thing was that the security level of the castle was very low. Unlike before, the dark spirits were hardly visible. The spirits of the other elements were inside the castle so their intention was to 'stand by.'

"My Dungeon Master. Is the interior of the castle supposed to be this quiet?"

“No. It is quieter than usual.”

"Why...I feel animosity everywhere.”

That’s right. I couldn’t trust anyone other than Chrisley here. The demons and spirits felt a similar way. Of course, it wasn’t just hostility.

Soon Chrisley and I arrived at the place where the fire spirits were staying.

There was a huge door comparable to the one at the auction.

-Is this information true?

-This is...an unforgivable problem...

-'Kerpi' is the representative.

-This damn year?

-I am suspicious of their motives in sending Kerpi.

-Taking the initiative first...

-Quiet. A visitor has come.

The other side of the door was noisy. It instantly became silent after someone warned them.

Kkiik.

I turned the doorknob and opened the door.

Then...I witnessed huge flames all over the place. There were 20 existences that could be described as fireballs. Each of them had already reached the high class level. I felt it before opening the door so it wasn't surprising.

'The elite of the elite.'

They were the fire spirits. Each one could not be looked down on. A power that could turn a situation upside down! The king didn't seem present but they were certainly his close aides.

'I might be turned into a fireball when dealing with the fire spirits.'

In other words, I had to be wary.

Did they recognize me?

Of course, they didn't notice I was transcendent but that I was a formidable enemy. The spirits were amazingly hot and sharp.

“My Dungeon Master.”

Chrisley sought my understanding. She wanted to take a step forward.

The fire spirits were already tense after seeing me. Even if I went forward it wouldn't do much good. Conceding to Chrisley was the right step.

“I'll allow it.”

After hearing my words, Chrisley stepped forward and bowed.

“Fire spirits. My name is Chrisley. We are not your enemies. My flame is more intense than anyone else and I am seeking your goodwill.”

-An amazing aura.

-However, the other half is water.

-No...the fire side is stronger.

There was a short exchange of opinions. The fire spirits stared at Chrisley and measured how much fire and water energy she had.

Soon the largest fireball in the middle spoke.

-Child. I know that you have a strong fire aura, but this is too abrupt. Especially when the person behind you is a demon.

"This is my master. He is a person who is taking a completely different path from the other demons. Master is someone who hunts demons and is the owner of vast knowledge. He will be able to answer your questions."

She saw it right away. Chrisley was familiar with some parts of the Demon World Auction. She managed to identify and use the theme of the transaction.

The spirits became noisy once again.

-A demon hunting other demons?

-Demons originally hate each other.

-It is inconsequential.

The response was mediocre. This was the attitude of the spirits whenever dealing with demons.

Then the leader of the fire spirits said.

-What makes you think we want your information and goodwill?

"I don't mean any disrespect but I overheard you talking when I was outside. I take it that Kerpi is the name of a water spirit that you are at odds with for some reason. This meeting is because you suddenly received some information upon arriving. I guess that someone gave you information that would make you have a conflict with the water spirits."

Chrisley's speech was fluent.

Her ability to reason after only listening to a few words of conversation was great.

'I did well to bring her.'

Showing her off to Pandemonium wasn't the only reason why I brought Chrisley along. She was quick-witted. I acknowledged that she was a better delegate than me.

There was nothing wrong with that. Recruiting great subordinates was also a talent. Bringing her was the correct answer.

-Hoh...so you can solve our problem?

"Before that, I would like to hear your story first. If it can be solved then we will do it."

-No, from the beginning you said you came here out of goodwill. If we accept right now then will it achieve your goal?

“I’m not the type to shamelessly accept without giving anything in return.”

Huuuuong!

The flames gradually weakened.

A moment later, a man appeared in the flames. A man with red hair.

His eyes flashed and he opened his mouth.

“Okay. I will tell you. Anyway, this is a problem that we can’t solve alone.”

The man looked back.

"Everybody take your other forms. These guests aren’t enemies.”

Huuuuong!!

The 20 fire spirits changed forms. Instead of fireballs, they took the form of men and women who gave off strong impressions.

Once all the transformations finished, they sat down at the table. Chrisley was naturally seated on the other side. I was sitting next to her to hear the story as well.

The rest of the spirits stared at our side.

"I'll just say it once. We received information that the 'Great Fire Essence' would unexpectedly appear in the auction. The Great Fire Essence is one of the nine fires we worship, and was stolen from us thousands of years ago. And we assumed that the water spirits were the culprits who stole one of our nine fires. This is because the water spirits greatly expanded shortly after the fire was stolen."

"Yet the stolen item showed up here."

"That's right. The fire gods will never cease to exist, but 20,000 years have passed already. Little by little, the power will weaken. 'They' intend to sell it here before it loses all its power! Indeed...it is unacceptable behaviour."

"But only demons can contribute to the auction goods."

"Bah! There is no rule that the water spirits can't cooperate with demons. Just like you and your master coming to us. Maybe...you came directly here in order to manipulate us."

At first glance, there was nothing wrong with their thoughts.

There was a chance that water spirits could form an alliance with a demon in order to sell items at the auction.

But it was all without evidence. Even the part about who stole it was just a guess. What was the reason for the water spirits stealing it 20,000 years ago? Maybe it was because they were afraid...but no one could say for sure.

The same was true for the second part. It was ridiculous.

Chrisley also seemed to notice this.

"Once you start to suspect your surroundings, there will be no end to the doubts. I want to make one thing clear first. Who told you that information?"

"Dubolong said it. He told us that everything was in place for the sale of the Great Fire Essence."

Dubolong. His name came out. I really couldn't trust anyone.

Chrisley opened her mouth.

"Did the water spirits really do it?"

"Why else would they appear here?"

Chrisley closed her eyes for a moment.

She was thinking very hard after hearing the fragmented story.

Chrisley frowned and declared.

"I would like to hear more about the Great Fire Essence."

"What do you want me to say? It is an eternal flame. One of the nine sacred flames. To be specific, the Great Fire Essence is in charge of 'domination.' Thanks to this power, the water spirits suddenly expanded their power."

"....."

"Now, have you come to a conclusion? If not, we have to make a decision. We have to take care of the water spirits who tried to deceive us."

The man prompted. Chrisley sighed.

"The information is too fragmented. I need to know the story from the side of the water spirits. Unless you tell me more details, I won't be able to solve it until I meet with the water spirits."

"Child, I can only tell you up to here. If you want to meet with the water spirits then I won't stop you. I am certain we are right!"

There were more worries. After a moment, Chrisley asked cautiously.

"Perhaps...do you know someone called Arshilla?"

"How does a dark elf know that name? It is one of the ancient water spirits. I acknowledge their skills but they are already gone. They were a close aide to the Water Spirit King."

Chrisley seemed to sense something and nodded.

"I understand. Then I will go meet with the water spirits."

"Be warned. If this isn't solved then it will be a full-scale war!"

Indeed, the fire spirits.

They were vigorous and valiant.

"...My Dungeon Master."

Chrisley got up from the table and said to me. She seemed to want to say something. It would wait until we exited.

Suuk.

A man cried out as I got up.

“My name is Jives! The fire spirit Jives.”

His eyes were staring at me. He was looking at me with a strange expression. Jives had also been glancing at me in the middle of the story. It seemed he wanted a confrontation with another ‘powerhouse’...

“Randolph Briggsiel.”

I turned around and ignored him afterwards.

After moving a considerable distance from the room, Chrisley spoke.

"If my thoughts are right...the water spirits aren't the culprits."

"You seem certain."

“Yes. It seems to be going in a good direction. Originally I had planned on using my father's name to impress them...”

True Demonic Dragon Aojin.

A dragon could be called the incarnation of fire so it wasn't strange to use him against the fire spirits. It would be enough to establish a relationship with them.

However, they had a problem and she had a lead to solve it.

“The Great Fire Essence. Its power is ‘domination’ and that won’t go away forever. I know someone who owns something similar. I don’t know if it is true, but it is very likely if it has shown up at this auction.”

“Who?”

“Pandemonium.”

Pandemonium?

I hadn’t expected that name to pop up here.

The question naturally formed in my mouth.

"Wasn't it stolen thousands of years ago? Despite Pandemonium's age, he certainly hasn't lived for that long.

Age. He was the oldest among the grand dukes. But thousands of years was too long.

"To be exact...it was just after Okullos' dungeon collapsed. As his dungeon was falling down, everyone except me turned away. I watched the dungeon while hiding my body. Then one day, I saw Pandemonium arrive and pull out a small fire essence."

"That doesn't make sense. How is it connected to Okullos?"

"That's right. The person who is truly connected...Contegonom."

Contegonom was king of the yetis!

The name of the one who confronted me.

Thanks to the use of Corruption, I couldn't remember the last part of my battle with Contegonom. However, I was convinced that I killed him.

Chrisley continued while I was still puzzled.

"Contegonom was king of the yetis. He stole the sacred fire. As a result, he became king of the yetis and ruled the continent as 'king.' However, yetis originally have the water attribute. Arshilla is the water spirit contracted with Contegonom. A contract must have been formed in order to use the power of the Great Fire Essence. Then things would fall into place."

Tak.

I clapped my hands.

"A contract. There was a contract. But why don't the fire spirits know about Contegonom?"

"The spirits don't pay much attention to the Middle World. I wouldn't have known these things if I hadn't read a book about Contegonom written by Okullos. Furthermore, Contegonom only acted for a short time as king of the yetis. It was only 15 years. He only ruled the continent for a short time. His obsession..."

After I disappeared, Chrisley tried to investigate the reason behind it. Then she came across the story of Contegonom.

"Then the Great Fire Essence was left behind after Contegonom died and Pandemonium picked it up?"

"My Dungeon Master. That is my guess. I can make a more accurate judgement after meeting the water spirits."

I touched my jaw.

I never expected that Contegonom's name would pop up again.

But...it was strange. My stomach felt weird after hearing the name of the Great Fire Essence.

Duguen!

My heart also jumped.

It felt like there was a foreign substance in my stomach.

It hadn't happened until now, but hearing Contegonom's name made me feel nauseous.

"My Dungeon Master...what is it?"

"Nothing. Let's go."

I hadn't eaten anything strange and it wasn't painful. There was nothing that my transcendental body couldn't digest.

It might be a mistaken feeling. I had been in many tense situations.

It was odd but I denied it.

I shook my head and kept moving.

Chapter 155: Demon World Auction (4)

The water spirits firmly denied it. Nobody would willingly admit to criminal actions. In the first place, Chrisley hadn't come here expecting an answer.

However, we heard the story of Arshilla in more detail. Among them, the water spirit called 'Kerpi' was born from Arshilla.

Kerpi was a beautiful woman. Similarly to the fire spirits, she had beautiful blue hair. She was wearing an elegant dress made of water.

"I am a spirit born in the lake. He gave me my name."

Chrisley asked about the contract. She wanted to know who had contracted with Arshilla.

Kerpi shook his head.

"I don't know. All I remember is that he gave me my name. No matter how long the lifespan of a spirit, there is a limit of 3,000 years... After being born in the lake, I wasn't yet self-sufficient when he gave me the name."

The process of a spirit's birth was a little different from that of a fairy. A fairy was born naturally over hundreds of years. However, a spirit was conceived by another spirit giving a specific name to something in nature.

Of course, it wasn't just giving a name. A spirit's awareness would only be established after a long time. That point was similar to a fairy.

In the end, Kerpi didn't know many details about Arshilla.

Once Chrisley told them about the possibility of a war with the fire spirits, Kerpi was furious.

"As they wish. The fire spirits are the ones who stole our sacred artefact! It has already been 20,000 years but...it has shamelessly emerged in this auction. It is unforgivable."

There was an overlap of 20,000 years. It also appeared in this auction.

Even the person who transmitted the contents was the same. Dubolong! He had met with Kerpi and the water spirits.

Just as I was about to leave, Kerpi asked.

"Demon. What is your name? I feel a great sense of discomfort. I certainly don't remember, but I can feel Arshilla...I am very disconcerted for some reason."

Water spirits had penetrating eyes. There was a difference between each individual but they had a reputation for being

moderately accurate.

Kerpi was a high class water spirit so she felt something.

“Randalph Brigsiel.”

I answered briefly before closing the door.

Anyway, I had heard the stories from both sides.

"Did you come to a conclusion?"

I asked after closing the door. I had decided to leave this entirely up to Chrisley and I would follow her opinions.

Chrisley replied coolly.

"The spirits are simpler than I thought."

"Originally, spirits don't have very good minds. The dark spirits are strange."

The dark spirits had an incomparable knack for trickery. In some ways, they were similar to demons. Faithful to their greedy instincts...it was probably why the devil made the auction offer to the dark spirits.

"It is no wonder that Dubolong is in the middle of this. The spirits know it as well. However, there is no evidence that the dark spirits had anything to do with it. The thefts happened 20,000 years ago. Perhaps Jives and Kerpi stopped thinking at this point."

"They played a part in increasing the conflict between the two sides. When digging in deep, anger will emerge."

The spirits were simple but that didn't mean they didn't think. However, the relationship between the fire and water spirits was very bad. They both believed the other side stole something sacred from them.

It was more desirable to accuse each other than to assume someone else was involved.

Emotions ruled over their rationality.

The fire and water spirits had natures similar to their elements.

It was obvious that they wouldn't stay calm.

"My Dungeon Master. We have to choose."

"Between water or fire?"

Chrisley shook her head.

"The dark spirits, fire spirits or water spirits."

Dubolong was confident that the other spirits were dancing to his tune. The results of his work would be revealed.

I pondered the benefits and damages that would come from my choices.

I could help the dark spirits and urge the water and fire spirits to fight. Once the dark spirits gained an advantage over the others, there was a possibility that the quality and quantity of the items at the auction would improve.

On the other hand...what if I revealed the truth to the fire and water spirits in order to drive the dark spirits into a corner?

'I can gain more points.'

I was attracted to the latter option. Rather than helping Adonis, I could drive him into a corner instead!

Anyway, the Demon World Auction was just an additional benefit to me now. The quantity and quality of the goods didn't matter significantly. It was more important to keep an eye on what the demons were buying.

On the other hand, the cornered Adonis would be forced to open his hands more earnestly. It wasn't easy to make them collapse due to the devil's protection, but points from the demons were

essential to raise the power of the spirits.

Adonis was able to face the spirits based on that power. The opponents couldn't oppose him due to the power accumulated so far.

In fact, Adonis had dominated most of the Spirit World in my previous life. The balance was a little twisted.

Even if I took action...he wouldn't be able to go against me.

I spent more points than anyone else. An existence that was like a miracle to them.

"It would be better to tell the truth to the fire and water spirits."

The calculations were finished. My heart leaned to one side.

Chrisley nodded after I answered.

"So...we just need to discover the identity of the sellers. If Pandemonium put up the fire essence, we should be able to find out who had the stolen water essence.

"It is tied up with the devil's contract. It will be difficult to find loopholes."

“My Dungeon Master. The demons are the ones who signed the contract. The preparations weren’t ready so the guides were the ones who received the goods. In other words, we can get information from the guide in charge of Pandemonium.”

If all the preparations were ready then it would have been impossible. Even the guide wouldn’t know the contents. However, the auction had suddenly changed so there was no time to prepare. So I could move directly.

I would aim for the loophole.

“Is it possible?”

It was too dangerous so I had to handle it quietly.

I didn’t know what would happen if I was noticed.

If I tried a direct attack then it was possible our relationship would turn hostile.

Right now, Adonis showed no signs of urgency. He thought everything was moving as he planned.

Chrisley said quietly.

"I have acquired a new power from Ganak the King of Death. Ganak was a crazy black magician who tried to completely

dominate death and darkness. However, his specialty was ‘manipulation.’ I can manipulate the dark spirits. Although there are some prerequisites...”

“Then it isn’t difficult. All the guides will be gathered near the auction display.”

“My Dungeon Master. The demons are the biggest variable. Won’t it become complicated if they get involved?”

The fire and water spirits were placed far away from the auction location.

They must have been placed on the premise that they would fight each other.

Thus there were few dark spirits nearby.

In contrast, the demons were close to the centre of the castle.

Once the demons moved, the dark spirits were likely to become nervous. Becoming a guide could change their status.

But I shook my head.

“No, if there is some confusion then they won’t even notice the guides are gone.”

"Then...we need to know the exact location of the guides before acting."

"It is a simple matter."

It was for me.

There was no one who could hide from me in the castle.

Chrisley stared into my eyes. There was an infinite amount of trust in her eyes.

If my past memories were correct, there was a separate place for the guides to gather. They shared information about the demons they were responsible for and boasted of their accomplishments.

And my memory was accurate.

"He was alive? Ha!"

"Dubolong was very confused but there seemed to be an error in the system."

"Hiya...I wish. Won't you be promoted next year?"

"The items he is selling are also great. Half germinated seed of a world tree, Essence of Origin...isn't our king also participating in

the auction? Kuhuhul!”

I hid behind a wall and listened to their stories. Most of the guides were gathered here. It was a rule that they needed to be in this place except for guiding their charges at the end and beginning of the auction, and emergency situations.

This was due to confidentiality.

I waited patiently.

An uproar would soon happen.

The demons wouldn’t remain still for half a day.

A few hours passed.

Kururung!

“W-what?”

"Is the castle crumbling?”

The castle shook. The sound of a violent explosion was heard from close by.

“Evacuate! Have all guides evacuate immediately!”

One of the high class spirits guarding the entrance spoke urgently. As the guides rushed off, I finally moved.

I approached quietly like a shadow and snatched Pandemonium's guide.

“Eup...!”

The guide let out a small cry of shock.

I quickly took him to a space that no one could see. Chrisley was waiting with a giant crow next to her.

Garnak the King of Death. This was his power.

Chrisley used her Death Wand on the guide. The dark spirit who served as Pandemonium's guide seemed spellbound after looking into her eyes.

“Who is the one that sold the sacred artefact of the water spirits?”

“Ariel...Diablo...”

He then told me the name and appearance of Ariel Diablo's guide.

Chrisley glanced at me and asked.

“My Dungeon Master. The duration of the stun won’t last that long. But he won’t remember what happened.”

“It will suffice. Now it is time to grab another one.”

"Pleas..."

The guide had anxious eyes. I answered with a smile.

"Chrisley, I will not disappear.”

“...I believe you. My Dungeon Master.”

I had to move quickly. I needed to take full advantage of this confusion!

After 12 hours, the auction started.

I moved with the gnome dark spirit.

"Grand dukes Ariel and Upa were in a fight. Phew ~ it really scared me.”

"I see.”

“Kuhulhul! Fortunately it ended amicably. Although some demons were seriously injured...”

The dark spirit guided me.

Soon after reaching the auction place, I saw familiar people were standing in front of it.

"Huh?"

The dark spirit was confused. He couldn't understand why those people were waiting at the entrance.

In fact, the fire and water spirits weren't looking at each other. It was strange because they couldn't readily move.

However, his question was broken after a moment.

It was because they discovered me almost simultaneously.

“Randolph Brigsiel! I was waiting. Let's go together.”

“Jives. He'll be with us.”

The fire spirit Jives. And the water spirit Kerpi!

The two competing groups were looking at me.

I moved ahead of the dark spirit and stood in the centre.

The reason for this? It was simple. The truth was revealed.

For reference, there was nothing as powerful as the truth to move someone. I didn't know it in my previous life, but I realized that truth in this one.

And...Jives and Kerpi instinctively saw me as their only saviour in this castle full of dark spirits.

A demon who walked a completely different path and cleared the darkness planned by the dark spirits.

The whereabouts of their sacred items...that was another type of transaction.

'A relationship will develop if I obtain the items for them.'

The scope of the work increased. At first, it was a fight between demons but now it had spread to the Spirit World. When thinking about the interference of the angels, I might not be able to deal with things alone.

I needed allies. They would be the arms and legs that would move on my behalf!

I targeted the fire and water spirits.

They were a perfect match against the dark spirits and didn't have a deep relationship with demons.

Anyway, my points were large enough. I didn't know how much my points would rise through the individual auctions.

But I was confident. People would be interested in my auction goods.

In particular, some would cause a fervour.

I looked at the closed door of the auction.

On the other side of the huge doors.

Ariel, Upa and Pandemonium!

I smiled.

'In a mountain without hunters, they are fighting over territory.'

But now there was a hunter.

If the real thing was revealed...what would be their reaction?

Would they believe in their strength and bare their teeth, or would they hide their bodies?

Kkiiik.

I pushed open the door.

At the same time...a bright light welcomed me.

Chapter 156: Demon World Auction (5)

The four halls on the 2nd floor. Ariel, Upa, Pandemonium and Adonis each occupied one. Adonis was sitting in Okullos' original place, but that had become vacant after he died.

It was surprising that some of Okullos' demons could be seen.

It seemed like they had all been absorbed by Pandemonium. Even though I killed four of his demons, he had more subordinates than other factions.

Ariel had 15. Upa's faction had 18. Meanwhile Pandemonium had 20!

Including me, there were 54 demons gathered in this place.

'It seems like the balance has been destroyed after Okullos' death.'

Pandemonium had the most people, but seven among them originally belonged to Okullos.

Okullos had died after using soul assimilation but it seemed like the effect was less than I thought.

At any rate, I was somewhat surprised by Pandemonium's quick response. I didn't think he would absorb the power as soon as

Okullos died.

No, they felt like dolls that he was controlling. It wasn't impossible for Pandemonium who was familiar with magic.

But his eyes were currently watching me with shock.

That wasn't all.

Ariel and Upa were the same.

They hadn't expected me to show up at the Demon World Auction. Everyone thought I was dead. Dubolong had announced it.

Yet I returned.

Of course, I wasn't the same as before.

My strength couldn't be compared. I had reached the domain of transcendence but they weren't at that level yet.

Their growth was remarkable compared to their previous lives, but they were still inferior to me.

I ignored their gazes and sat down in the central hall on the 1st floor.

It was the place where I had sat alone in the 1st, 2nd and 3rd years. All the other demons were seated on the 2nd floor.

However, now I had the fire and water spirits beside me. It was natural that I would stand out in their midst.

“Randalph Brigsiel...”

Ariel Diablo. Her voice could be heard. At first she was confused, but now she was watching me with intense interest.

I wasn’t emitting magic power but Ariel had unusually keen eyes. She realized that I had transcended or something similar.

The strong curiosity of the other demons couldn’t match hers. Right now, she was more focused on me than the auction.

I glanced at her. My mouth was in a thin line. Relaxation!

Now I could confidently feel on the same level as them. In the past, I always felt something lacking but now I had broken through the limits. We were equal in all respects.

I used Mind’s Eye to look at Ariel’s status window.

Name	Ariel Diablo
------	--------------

Occupation	Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)	
Title	<div><div>* Devil’s Descendant (Epic, Magic Power +10)</div><div>* Weapons Master (Epic, All stats +3)</div><div>* Victorious over Chaos (Epic, Strength, Agility and Stamina +6)</div><div>* Path of a Ruler (Ex U, Strength and Magic Power +4)</div></div>	
Stats	Strength	84 (+15)
	Intelligence	92 (+3)
	Agility	89 (+11)
	Stamina	85 (+11)
	Magic Power	87 (+17)
Potential	(437+57/500)	
Uniqueness	One of the four grand dukes. Governor of Underhell and was the master of 18 demons. She realized chaos and started to walk along the path of a true ruler.	
Skill	Weapon Cheat (Epic), Abyss Sword (Epic), Power of Words (Ex U), Waterspout (Epic), King’s Blessing (Epic)	
Skill and Item Effects	Reign Sword (Strength, Agility, Stamina +2)	

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 75 Intelligence 76 Agility 81 Stamina 73 Magic 87
Potential (372+20/500)

Strength 99 Intelligence 95 Agility 100 Stamina 96 Magic 104
Potential (437+57/500)

It was a growth that couldn't be compared to when I first saw her at the Demon World Auction. Her total stats were 494 points and the strongest sword technique, Abyss Sword, was completed. In my previous life, Ariel didn't have such growth in the first five years.

It was a testament to the fact that things were moving as quickly as possible.

However, it was insufficient. When it only came to stats, I was superior.

The effect of her skills couldn't exceed the insurmountable wall of transcendence. My growth was also more excellent.

"Huh...!"

Upa had a different reaction.

My emergence was utterly unexpected. His eyebrows narrowed at the thought. Unlike Ariel, he couldn't grasp the truth about me.

Pandemonium...he was staring at me.

He was convinced I was the reason behind his demons disappearing. However, he couldn't move carelessly due to the alliance of humans and the girin.

It was too late for him to regret it now. I was well prepared before coming here.

‘The levels are similar.’

I gazed at the statuses of the grand dukes using Mind's Eye and they were all similar. The differences came in the titles, skills and items. In terms of power, Ariel Diablo was superior.

“Tsk.”

A sound was suddenly heard.

The Dark Spirit King Adonis. He clicked his tongue like he was disgruntled.

He had been hoping that the water and fire spirits would fight each other. There were no signs of fighting so he was very disappointed. Some doubts filled his eyes as he gazed at me. There

was no evidence so he just watched.

“Hello! Dubolong is glad to be with you on this auspicious occasion.”

Chwack!

The curtains parted and Dubolong emerged in clown makeup. He looked around with a wide smile.

"The auction rules have changed. There are also unfamiliar faces! Additionally...someone who was thought dead has come back alive. Randolph Brigsiel-nim!"

I responded by briefly shaking my head.

'He is really sly.'

I had contacted him but Dubolong showed no signs of previous knowledge. His acting ability was one of the best.

"I think everyone knows that the rules have changed. Guests, it is time to sell the items. Dubolong is very excited to see what type of items there will be!"

I was also curious about this part.

The individual auctions had meaning for the other demons.

It was a chance to fill their missing points before the auction began. Disposing of the items they didn't need...there was a possibility there would be 'mines.'

For example, a cursed item. Some demons had simple observation skills that couldn't penetrate through some cursed items.

There could be skills that would only be triggered under certain conditions or tracking spells on the items. Some demons were confident of being able to track the sold items.

Therefore, the demons had to decide carefully before buying.

Dubolong spoke slowly.

"Bidding for the items is simple. Each person will call out a higher number of points. If you don't have the points that you bid, the girls and boys on the ceiling will ridicule you. Please don't try if you don't have the required amount."

I knew the process but it needed to be explained to the participating spirits. The auction hall fell silent and Dubolong spread his arms out wide.

"All the guests! I greet you once again. It is nice to see you. If you have an item you want to buy, the spirits will pay with their 'rank.'

The system will then assign them points.”

A confident smile.

The plan to make them fight didn't work, but the fire and water spirits gathered here were strong. Only the elite were present. It would still benefit the dark spirits if they could reduce their 'rank.'

‘Dubolong. Now their role is just a folding screen.’

I would make the purchases. The fire and water spirits were just playing a role for me.

I wondered about the magic of their artefacts. That alone was worth an alliance with them.

In many ways, the plan of the dark spirits was being wasted.

“Now, you should be filled with expectations. Let's start the auction! We will proceed in two parts because there are many things. There will be a one hour recess in the middle.”

Jjak!

Dubolong clapped and the workers brought out the first item.

A large stone statue. It was in the form of a gargoyle.

"It is something surprising. The magic power that can be felt is unusual. A delicate statue of a gargoyle! The soul of the artist can be felt along with the magic power. The starting bid is 50,000 points."

-Name: Delicate Gargoyle Statue

Description: A sculpture carved with the power of a sculptor. It is full of vitality like the gargoyle could come alive.

* The reproduction rate of all gargoyles within a 10km radius will increase by 15%.

* Cursed by the artist. The moment it is owned, magic power will be reduced by 1.

Chapter 157: Demon World Auction (6)

‘Indeed.’

There was no way normal things would be sold through this route. It was in order to earn points...

“50,000.”

There was an exquisite option hidden. Demons with general observation skills were forced to go fishing.

The starting price was cheap and items related to reproductive rate were rare.

"Marquis Hamatuam-nim!"

“100,000.”

"Earl Ciel-nim!"

.....

The price rose. But I wasn't caught by it.

After a few more bids, it came to a stop.

“It has been sold to Earl Pururum-nim for 300,000 points! Congratulations!”

I watched the process silently with arms folded.

The item wasn't good enough to use as a decoy. I just watched.

After that, a few more items appeared.

They were normal things with almost no problems. They weren't that good. The items were literally just any that were grabbed in order to be sold.

Angela's Pot, Power Shoes, etc, came out but I didn't lift my hand even once.

I wasn't waiting for such things.

The atmosphere finally changed as the 20th auction item appeared.

"The item being sold this time is great. Don't be surprised! The Great Fire Essence. An eternal flame! An item that will give absolute power of domination...! I will show it right now!"

A vein in Dubolong's neck pulsed as he swallowed.

The workers brought out a big cage.

It contained the Great Fire Essence.

"A great fire."

"A strange magic power..."

The demons started to get excited.

"Oh, one of our nine gods!"

"The strength is fading away but it is still burning!"

The fire spirits were also excited.

However, I couldn't participate in their actions.

'Is that a fire?'

They called it a fire.

The Great Fire Essence seemed completely different to my eyes.

'It looks like a two-legged dragon.'

The appearance seemed to be a cross between a dragon and a two-legged animal.

I used Mind's Eye. It was due to my curiosity about the dragon.

-Name - The Great Fire Essence (???)

Description: One of the nine fires. It burns forever and has the power of 'domination.'

The description was too short. The name was no different. But...that wasn't all. Mind's Eye couldn't see the rating which meant there was a seal or other reasons behind it.

Grurung!

The dragon opened its eyes.

At the same time.

'Ugh.'

I felt a burning pain in my stomach. It felt like something different was inside me.

I frowned as I stared at the dragon.

‘Who are you?’

This was certainly the first time I saw it. I didn’t know the dragon. Nevertheless, it felt somewhat familiar to me.

Grrrung!

The fire essence snorted and grabbed the iron bars. Then fire soared from its body.

But that was all. They were burnt but the iron bars couldn’t be removed. It pretended to be strong but was very weak.

"Our essence!"

“You...! Open that cage right now!”

The fire spirits rose from their seats like they were going to fight. Some of them were prepared to fight in the form of fireballs.

The high class spirits were filled with fury. They would burn the castle down without leaving any dust. The dark spirits weren’t that powerful but they didn’t react.

Dubolong responded like he had expected it to some extent.

“Please wait a moment. The dark spirits don’t want any confusion in the auction house. This is an ‘auction item’ and it will be handed over to the final bidder. The spirits could use their ‘rank’ or a ‘contract’ to pay the price. For example...”

Dubolong sent a sly smile towards Jives.

The fire spirit Jives!

He stared at Dubolong with a menacing expression.

"In the case of the fire spirits, Jives is a rank 4 figure so it wouldn't be impossible for him to gain millions of points. Or you can procure those points through a contract with someone here."

That person could be a dark spirit or a demon. But Dubolong was very confident.

If they formed a contract, they were highly likely to do it with the dark spirits. The spirits were likely to use a ‘contract.’

Dubolong thought they would never make an agreement with the demons here.

"So please buy it! This is the auction house! There are items great to look at, powerful creatures, etc. This is a place to buy and sell

everything! Those with more points will buy better goods, and those who don't will end up losing. We provide equal opportunities for everyone!"

Dubolong finished his short speech. So far, they had just been listening. The gap between each person wasn't equal but no one deliberately challenged him.

They had already agreed by entering this place.

No two demons were the same and the spirits required contracts. They heard in advance how much points they could get through their 'rank' or a 'contract.'

"We will proceed with the auction again. The Great Fire Essence! One of the nine fire gods with the power of 'domination.' There are many parts that haven't been revealed yet. Starting at...five million points!"

The demons had an average of three million points. That fact that it was so high meant they didn't want to sell it to demons at all.

It was for the fire spirits.

'Do you want to buy it? Then this is the price. Or contract with us.'

Either way, it would benefit the dark spirits.

The power of the spirits would be reduced or they would enter into contracts that could set up several strategies.

Dubolong and Adonis had satisfied smiles on their faces.

They were saying ‘you can’t buy it.’

“Five million points.”

"It came out! Five million points. Randolph Briggsiel-nim..."

His voice trailed off. He stared at me. I knew that he was slightly frowning. I had touched a nerve since my appearance with the other spirits.

However...

‘Dubolong. There are no eternal allies.’

From the beginning, I had worked for my own benefits.

The deal with Dubolong to preview auction items in advance was beneficial. I also had something to gain from the fire and water spirits.

I didn’t think of it as betrayal.

A game for the final winner.

My past experience showed that there were no eternal enemies or friends. It all changed depending on the situation.

Besides...I also had a personal interest.

‘I want to know your true identity.’

The others just called it fire.

But for me, it had an entirely different meaning.

I felt something from the moment I saw the dragon. Something inside me was telling me to catch it.

“Five million points. Is there any more?”

“Six million.”

“...Ariel Diablo-nim!”

Once again, the spirits didn’t participate. Ariel Diablo. The grand duke was also eyeing the fire essence. It was a bold choice.

However, that wasn't her only unconventional action.

Taak!

She sat on my side on the 2nd floor.

The demons in her faction were looking at her with astonishment. They alternated between staring at Ariel and I.

Upa and Pandemonium were sneering. But they weren't laughing. They had guarded expressions.

They didn't know why I appeared...but I was a completely different person from the past.

In particular, Pandemonium felt like he was sitting on a thorny cushion.

He was aware that I had killed Okullos. There was no other person who could do it except for me. But while I was gone, Pandemonium attacked my dungeon.

It was like a declaration of war. After penetrating to the centre of my dungeon, he was an 'enemy' that I could never ally with.

A force he couldn't know...

The grand dukes knew each other after fighting for hundreds of years, but I was different.

If I angrily joined with Upa or Ariel then Pandemonium was in for a tough fight. His actions had come back to bite him in the feet.

'What is she doing?'

I was wondering about her actions.

Ariel was an unpredictable grand duke. She was very fickle. I couldn't read any intentions for her to come to my side.

I believed that Ariel wouldn't budge. She shamelessly stared at me and spoke.

"Randolph. Randolph Brigsiel. How do you feel about sitting with me?"

"It is unpleasant."

"Haha! That's right. Me too. Randolph Brigsiel, you are really an unpleasant man."

I didn't know what to say. I turned and glanced at Dubolong. It was a sign telling him to proceed with the auction.

But Ariel spoke faster.

"I am the direct heir to the devil and one of the grand dukes of the Demon World. I came into my position at an early age and ruled. I've never had anything that hasn't gone my way. I've always had the privilege of walking a clean road."

I frowned.

"What do you want to say?"

Ariel smirked.

"You are different every time you appear at the Demon World Auction. There is a confident attitude towards everything. However, an invisible wall existed between you and the grand dukes. So everyone didn't think much of you. You might have realized it yourself. But...this time is different."

Ariel's eyes turned to me.

There was an unlimited 'curiosity' shining in her eyes.

"This time you crossed the wall. I congratulate you for crossing the wall and reaching this position."

Suuk.

Ariel rose from her seat.

She glanced around the 2nd floor.

“Okullos has died. We have fought against him for hundreds of years. However...his death wasn't related to us. Are you convinced by these results?”

She was asking Upa and Pandemonium.

She wanted them to admit that their enemy died in a way unrelated to them.

There was no answer but Upa and Pandemonium seemed uncomfortable. Everyone realized that I was the perpetrator.

"I acknowledge Randolph Brigsiel as the new fourth grand duke. He has enough to fight us and has come to this place through his own strength. The pioneer of a new path! We should pay homage to that pioneer.”

Out of nowhere...

I was at a loss for words. It was natural. Ariel Diablo was fickle but gaining her recognition wasn't easy. She never admitted anyone as 'equal' to her. She was even scornful of the other grand dukes.

It was natural since only she could claim legitimacy.

But...

Ariel turned her head back towards me.

“Randolph Briggsiel. From now on, you are my enemy. ”

That’s right. This moment would cause an irreversible hostile relationship between Ariel and I.

It had been a rule for hundreds of years that no grand dukes would ally with each other.

In other words, there was no one on my side.

“I admit it.”

Pandemonium.

He admitted it as soon as he realized.

“Ariel! Pandemonium! Have you gone mad?”

Upa was the only one to argue.

But Ariel and Pandemonium stayed firm.

Even the system decided against Upa.

Chapter 158: Demon World Auction (7)

-Impossible achievement! The recognition of a grand duke has been received for the first time!

The grand duke is an absolute existence. A number of demons have received recognition from them in the history of the Demon World. Now that the devil is gone, the grand dukes will recognize those who meet their standards.

The status window will change from Earl -> Grand Duke.

-It is now possible to appoint a 'Dungeon Master' for your empty dungeons. The Dungeon Master has the same rights as a demon and can participate in the Demon World Auction.

6,000,000pt will be paid.

5,000 achievement points will be added.

I formed a fist.

I wanted to hit them in the same place.

My dream was to become the devil. Now I was one step closer to

that dream.

I was strong alone, but there was a big difference in being recognized by them. I was given ‘legitimacy!’

“It seems like the system created by the devil has acknowledged you as a grand duke.”

Ariel Diablo seemed genuinely happy.

She was satisfied that a strong opponent had emerged.

Tuuk.

Then she sat down again.

I didn’t know why she wanted to recognize me as an opponent, but I decided to ignore it for the moment.

"Host. Today is a happy day. But aren’t we here for a reason?”

Dubolong regained his spirit.

“Ah...congratulations. Then...the auction will resume. Ariel Diablo-nim has called out six million points! Any more bids?”

“Seven million.”

“Randolph Briggsiel-nim! Have you been collecting points for two years? How great.”

Baduk!

I heard a brief sound as I called out seven million.

It seemed like Ariel didn't like it. Even though she was just smiling a moment ago, her mood had easily changed.

'I really can't tell.'

I inwardly shook my head.

Ariel Diablo was proving to be the most difficult grand duke to deal with.

Furthermore, I was amazed that she had six million points. Due to the above system messages, I was able to speculate that grand dukes received more points but it was still a great number.

An average of three million. What percentage of the total did Ariel have?

“Eight million!”

However, Ariel didn't stop there. The boy and girl statues on the ceiling weren't laughing.

Eight million...that was certainly quite a large sum.

'Did she determine the value of the Great Fire Essence?'

In fact, even I was dubious. I hadn't made a contract with the fire spirits so I didn't need to obtain the item.

Now I was sincerely thinking about it. Would I bid more or stop here...?

The fire spirits were well aware of how much seven million points was. In the first place, they never intended to buy anything with their 'rank.'

They showed their intentions. If the fire spirits approached me now then it would be really funny.

If they wanted it, they would either have to sell their own rank or sign a contract. There were no other methods. They couldn't eat freely without making any efforts.

If they clung to the idea that I would obtain the essence for them, then it was likely to just be a 'surface' alliance. I wanted to see the sincerity of the fire spirits.

I shrugged. I shook my head towards Jives.

The action was stating 'it is up to here.'

Of course, it wasn't actually the case. Ariel Diablo's eyes had seen something more than I could imagine. I also felt a sense of attraction to it. There were plenty of reasons to buy the Great Fire Essence.

Jives noticed the meaning of my look. It was followed by an earnest stare. He was asking 'can't you afford any more?'

Tsk! I clicked my tongue. I could but I wasn't going to just pour it all in. My expression hardened.

"Grand duke Ariel-nim has called out eight million points! Is there anyone else? Great Fire Essence is one of the nine fires of the fire spirits. It is unexpected that the fire spirits wouldn't make any bids...I will now count to five."

Dubolong sneered at the fire spirits.

The dismissive tone showed that the item would go to someone else if they continued to sit still.

Jives' frown became deeper. He had learned about Dubolong's plan due to me so he was angry at the dark spirits. His words weren't wrong so I became more impatient.

‘What are you going to do, Jives?’

I took a leisurely stance. My crossed legs and raised chin showed a ‘casualness’ about the situation.

Jives was conflicted as he glanced between Dubolong and I. He only had two options.

Sell his rank or sign a contract!

“Five, four, three, two...”

Jives shouted just as Dubolong was about to say ‘one.’

"Form a contract. I am the fire spirit Jives."

Dubolong’s smile widened.

"It is worth more if Jives is the one signing the contract. But it should be more than eight million points. It will be difficult if there is no one in this room."

Dubolong sneaked a peek at Adonis.

Adonis was probably the one with the most points to spare. The Dark Spirit King. Head of the Demon World Auction. The points

that had piled up in four years were significant.

The other grand dukes had a lot of points but it wasn't easy for Jives to ask them.

However, Jives pointed at me and said.

“Randolph Brigsiel. I will contract with you.”

“...Certainly, he has shown a remarkable appearance at the auction. But the law states that consent is required from both parties. Randolph Brigsiel, do you agree to a contract with Jives?”

A contribution of eight million points. It was a large burden. The auction hadn't even started yet and a lot of points had already been consumed. I had to move carefully.

However, I inwardly smiled.

The fire spirit Jives! The contract with him wouldn't end simply. It was an opportunity to gain an opening with the fire spirits. In addition, I might be able to receive some unexplored achievements.

This wasn't a loss.

“I will contract.”

-A contract has been formed with the high class fire spirit, Jives.

This contract is complete only when the 'user' purchases the 'Great Fire Essence.'

The right to use Jives will depend on the number of points spent on purchasing the 'Great Fire Essence.'

A message window came up at the same time.

In short, I could use Jives depending on the points I spent.

"So how many points would you like to call?"

Ariel Diablo bid eight million points. The proper amount for the following bid was nine million.

"15 million."

"...15 million, are you sure?"

Dubolong was shocked.

I nodded.

15 million points. It was almost double.

The reason was simple. The higher the price was, the stronger my contract with Jives became.

My plan was to overturn the plate. 15 million points was a worthy investment if I could reliably use the fire spirits.

Jives was a rank four medium fire spirit. He had other spirits moving under him.

“Grand duke Randolph-nim has bid 15 million points. Are there any more bids?”

There was no chance.

By the way, ‘Grand duke Randolph-nim’...

‘It feels good.’

I started laughing.

Although the situation was confusing since I suddenly became a grand duke, Dubolong had great skills as a host.

"Aren't you being greedy, Randolph Briggsiel?"

Ariel spoke sarcastically.

I didn't even turn my head. We weren't close enough to observe each other and there was no point in being honest.

No one spoke.

"Congratulations. Grand duke Randolph-nim has won the Great Fire Essence!"

Dubolong sneaked a peek at me. He was skeptical at first but now he was certain. I had a deal with the other spirits.

'He can't move without confirmation.'

Then this happened. I didn't violate any of the rules so he couldn't drive me out of the auction house. Even if they did have conclusive evidence to move, my points were too precious.

Weakness!

That was my purpose.

Jives looked at me and bowed humbly. It was his way of saying thanks.

‘He can thank me later.’

I intended to thoroughly use him. That’s why I had invest 15 million points. All that remained to be seen was if he could keep up with the gratitude.

Dubolong opened his mouth with a slightly tense expression.

“The next item to be sold...is the Essence of Origin.”

‘Then...’

I couldn’t help smirking.

Finally!

The time I had been waiting for had arrived.

Now it was time to retrieve some points.

Chapter 159: Demon World Auction (8)

“15 million.”

“16 million.”

“17 million.”

"20 million!"

“...The Essence of Origin has been awarded to Adonis.”

Even if Dubolong didn't explain the Essence of Origin, all the demons had observation skills. There were no hidden options so the demons instantly wanted to buy the essence.

It was an item that would allow them to break through the limit. Everyone knew the value of it. The grand dukes followed closely to around 10 million, where it became a battle between Adonis and I.

Adonis had a lot of points that the grand dukes couldn't match.

Adonis had no choice but to bid, despite knowing I was intentionally raising the price. As a result, the Essence of Origin was sold for the overwhelming amount of 20 million.

-20,000,000pt will be paid.

The contract was effective immediately so I received the value of the item straight away.

Kwaduduk!

The sound of teeth grinding could be heard in the auction house. Adonis was the source.

He looked at me like I was a traitor...but I didn't care.

Anyway, he had impure intentions when he approached me in the beginning. We used each other for different purposes so there was no point feeling betrayal now. No, it wasn't even a betrayal.

'One winner. The rest of the people in the game are losers. Doesn't Adonis know that the difference between winning and losing is who strikes first?'

There were no eternal allies. It would be better for me to step forward first.

As the auction continued, the 'Hyacinth's Bow' emerged.

"That is it. The sacred artefact that we lost."

Kerpi told me.

In addition, she started the contract herself.

After Jives' case, she calculated that I wouldn't easily buy it.

It was a wise judgment.

-A contract with the high class water spirit Kerpi has been formed.

This contract is complete only when the 'user' purchases the 'Hyacinth's Bow.'

The right to use Kerpi will depend on the number of points spent on purchasing the 'Hyacinth's Bow.'

The auction didn't heat up like before.

It seemed likely to finish at seven millions but I just laughed.

"15 million."

All the points would be recovered anyway. The fire and water spirits seemed to mistake this as 'friendship' but...

It was an illusion of freedom.

Slow Sword (Epic) was a skill book that I bought at the Achievements Store. A sword with a lazy name. It was a slow and frustrating sword technique.

Even so, it had an epic rating. Although there was no guarantee because the rating was high and it was below Haien Moon's swordsmanship, but I was sure that Ariel Diablo would purchase it.

Ariel was interested in weapon techniques.

Her desire to learn was very big.

And it was like I expected.

-3,500,000pt will be paid.

My method...I placed items that I knew the demons, especially the grand dukes, would want to buy. They were things that stimulated the imagination. Both skills and creatures were sold.

They were unaware that the goods they bought came from me. If they knew then they would have refused to buy them.

Thanks to that, I had over 50 million points.

50 million...!

Originally I had 40 million and I spent 30 million to buy the Great Fire Essence and Hyacinth's Bow.

I received 20 million for the Essence of Origin and another 20 million for the other items. At least six million points were acquired from each grand duke.

On the other hand, the demons were forced to use more points in the individual auctions than they thought.

‘The points seem to be focused on some demons.’

I was alone but they weren't my match when it came to points.

"The individual auctions are over. Then we will enter the auction house after two hours."

The deadline for the individual actions came to an end.

Dubolong bowed and the light illuminating the auction house disappeared.

The individual auctions were finished. The fire and water spirits could only participate up to here. They needed to return and report about the auction experience.

"Will the auction items be sent back to the dungeon? Before that, I will report to the king first. Randolph Brigsiel! I will be sure to tell the king your name. We have a contract so if you call my name, I will show up wherever you are."

Jives told me excitedly.

For the first time, they hadn't suffered under the dark spirits.

They were now on the verge of reclaiming their god lost 20,000 years ago.

'I'm not sure what the Fire Spirit King will choose but...'

He wouldn't stay still. The Demon World Auction and points. Their 'rank' could be raised or lowered as a result. A significant number of goods were sold to the demons so it didn't make sense to stay calm.

Using the dark spirits or becoming hostile towards them...the latter seemed more likely.

And the dark spirits knew it. The dark spirits' original purpose had failed.

"The path won't be flat."

I spoke honestly.

Jives gave a small laugh and said.

"I came to this place with the elite troops. We were prepared to attack at any moment, and the fire spirits won't be easily beaten in an all-out war. Even if they attack us, there is a sea of hope."

"You seem confident."

Jives shrugged.

All the fire spirits present were high class. This power was enough to get away from the dark spirits.

Jives looked at me and declared.

"Now I will call you Contractor. Contractor! As soon as the Great Fire Essence is given to us, our contract will become fully formed. The Fire Spirit King will be pleased. I will make sure that Contractor's name will be provided. This isn't a small thing."

It was important that the Fire Spirit King took my name seriously. It meant he might give special help. A favour outside the contract was what I wanted.

It would properly overturn the plates!

‘Hopefully...it is doable.’

I laughed. It wasn't simple to gain merits in the Spirit World. I planned to cause massive changes on Earth.

For example, what would happen if a fire or water spirit contracted with a human?

‘The strength of the humans would drastically increase.’

The spirits were strong. In my previous life, there were few humans who knew who to handle their power. However, it wouldn't be difficult if there was a contract. It was my job to contact the spirit kings and make it possible.

‘If I can do it...’

It would be beneficial if I could increase the power of humans. I had a different status and the help of the girin.

Jives and the fire spirits bowed to me before turning away. It was safer to go with the water spirits, but it seemed like they were still stubborn about the bad relationship between them.

After they retreated, Kerpi and the water spirits came towards me.

“Randalph-nim. Congratulations once again on your promotion

to grand duke.”

Kerpi’s hair waved in the wind as she gave a cheerful smile.

“We will be in a complete contract soon. It has been 500 years since I got a new contractor...I will wait to meet you again.”

“It is possible if you don’t die.”

I wasn’t saying this to myself.

I was talking to Kerpi.

The fire spirits had a confident attitude but...the plan of the dark spirits was broken so I couldn’t see what type of action would be taken.

I had read their intentions through the auction and knew that they wanted to reduce the strength of the other spirits here.

There was a chance there might be an attack on the way back.

Kerpi didn’t lose her smile despite my words.

“Contractor-nim. Water spirits are a calm lake, but we can also be a rough sea.”

"I will keep the bow if you die."

"...I will be sure to return alive."

Kerpi had no choice but to be strong due to the Hyacinth's Bow.

The fact that the situation was dangerous was a reasonable conclusion. If Jives or Kerpi died then my 30 million points would have flown away. Therefore, it was necessary to hold the items as collateral.

"Then I will go now. If I talk to you for too long then bad people might gather."

I nodded. Kerpi laughed while covering her mouth and left the auction house.

"My Dungeon Master. The warehouse is open. Do you want to see it?"

Chrisley who was walking next to me asked.

Warehouse.

It was a place where we could preview the items to be auctioned off.

“Is it open to the public?”

"I just heard about it..."

Chrisley also didn't know the details.

'Should I look at it?'

The fire spirits and water spirits.

A considerable number of people would have been needed to catch both at the same time.

The interior of the castle wasn't empty...it was likely that the demons wandering around would become witnesses. The chance for a perfect crime would vanish.

It would be the worst case situation for the dark spirits.

‘From here onwards, I have to trust their talents.’

Right now, I was walking on a rope between two cliffs. If I got more deeply involved then I would fall.

And this auction was important. There was a gap of one year so I couldn't miss it.

I made a decision and said.

"Let's go to the warehouse."

I wondered how much better the quality of the auction items had become after two years.

I had seen a high class 2Lv titan so it wouldn't be strange if there were better items and creatures.

"There aren't that many goods."

I muttered.

There weren't 100 items being displayed. There were only 50.

It felt like a pretext.

"Starting from last year, they are only showing half of it."

Ariel Diablo approached me.

"Why?"

"Let's see? Are they trying to be mysterious? There could be lots of reasons."

They didn't show everything. It was to cause frustration. I felt an intense curiosity towards the invisible auction items.

'It is a type of teaser.'

This was a strategy. I couldn't complain because the dark spirits were the ones providing the goods...

"Randolph Briggsiel. I'm looking forward to seeing a great show this time."

Ariel said casually.

I briefly replied.

"The greater your expectations, the greater the disappointment."

"What did you say? Hmm...the greater the expectations, the greater the disappointment...however, I think that you will match my expectations."

Ariel thought for a moment before shaking her head.

Ariel seemed to be anticipating the results. She had superior eyes and the ability to see future paths.

‘There are many creatures.’

I stopped paying attention to Ariel and looked around the warehouse.

Overall, there was a lot of high ranking creatures.

Personal power was important but the power of the dungeon was also critical.

The dark spirits had captured this part well.

‘Gulpin, titan. The best ones are high class 2Lv creatures.’

The two of them seemed the best. It wasn’t bad but was it still too early for high class 3Lv creatures?

Or maybe it was intentionally hidden...

“Randolph Brigsiel. Isn't it disappointing? But when looking at last year’s auction, it is likely they are holding back. So don’t be disappointed.”

“.....”

Ariel continued staying by my side. On the other side, Chisley was looking uncomfortable but Ariel didn’t budge. She stayed even

when one of her subordinates approached her.

‘I don’t know her intentions.’

I inwardly sighed.

Ariel Diablo. She could be a really difficult opponent.

Chapter 160: Demon World Auction (9)

Two hours after the individual auctions were over.

The main auction began. The interior of the castle was quieter than usual so it seemed like a large number of dark spirits had left.

‘Jives. Kerpi. I hope you don’t disappoint me.’

If they couldn’t escape the dark spirits then I was stupid to spend 15 million on a contract with them. If my eyes were correct, they would be able to leave without difficulty.

“My Dungeon Master. Sit here.”

Chrisley guided me towards a seat.

Ariel, who had been stuck to me like gum, finally moved to the 2nd floor.

“Chrisley. Have you been paying attention?”

“Yes. I remember the faces of those who will become Master’s enemies.”

“What do you think?”

“One thing is for certain...”

Chrisley turned and looked at the 2nd floor.

"I am stronger than the majority of demons gathered here."

It was exactly what I saw. Chrisley had objectively judged how strong she was.

Everybody in the area could hear it. It was a type of taunt.

"That dark elf feels no fear."

“Bah...”

They remembered her. Chrisley was the dark elf bought along with Krasla in the first year.

But they didn't come forward directly.

I couldn't tell whether it was because of the spirits, Ariel Diablo or my new status, but I could feel many eyes watching me.

In addition, Chrisley had blatantly opened her magic power. I didn't try to restrain her attitude.

Her growth was amazing compared to the first time I saw her.

The people who wanted to buy Krasla and Chrisley felt a pain in their stomachs. Their expressions were rotten.

Chwack!

I looked at the front and Dubolong soon appeared through the curtain.

“Hello once again. I, Dubolong will be overseeing part two of this auction. It is less humid because there are no fire and water spirits.”

Dubolong sent me a slight glance like he was joking.

I stared at him with an intense, expressionless face.

Dubolong feigned ignorance and continued talking.

"Did you enjoy the time off? Now, I will introduce the first one. This is the real thing! An unmatched creature! The king of serpents with nine heads...the hydra.”

My gaze became stronger at those words.

Hydra. Did the dark spirits really catch it? Hadn't it only been five years?

The very first item was absolutely unbelievable.

“Hydra?”

"It is the first time I've heard that name."

However, the demons had different attitudes. I would have been unfamiliar with the name if it wasn't for my past experience.

A mythical creature that appeared in ancient literature.

Originally it had been sealed. The dark spirits were the ones who woke it up. But the timing was too early. It was only the fifth year so the demons would find it very difficult to deal with.

No, in the first place...the dark spirits needed the approval of the high class creatures to form a contract. I was skeptical about how they could form nine different contracts. They shouldn't have accumulated enough knowledge yet.

‘Did they make some progress? It is because of Mago?’

It was possible. Mago was unstable due to the contract and often ran wild. She destroyed everything around her until she was tired.

If the knowledge of the hydra from my memories was correct, the only demons who could handle it were the grand dukes. It

would overwhelm those who lacked the ability.

“Achacha! Thanks to its size, it can’t enter the auction house so I beg for your understanding. Instead, I’ll show you through the crystal ball.”

Soon workers appeared with a huge crystal ball.

The crystal ball showed an image of the creature that was supposed to be the hydra. But it wasn’t just the hydra.

The hydra was a creature with nine heads. Different types of breath attacks poured from each head. Thousands of orcs were being crushed by the hydra.

It trampled on them and caused devastation. Nothing could stop it.

Kwaoooooh!

Fire, water, lightning, poison, etc. poured out and slaughtered the orcs.

That wasn’t even mentioning its size. It seemed like a moving mountain. It was rare to see something that size. It was completely larger than the advanced golems.

The demons instantly paid attention. It was an overwhelming

sight and everyone forgot to swallow their saliva.

Dubolong smiled as he saw it.

“The ‘Red Feather’ is an orc tribe. They are in charge of an village on the outskirts of the Demon World and on par with an intermediate creature. In particular, the orc lord of the Red Feather tribe is two levels higher than a normal lord. But...look.”

The crystal ball showed the next scene.

The orc lord appeared! He was twice as big as a normal lord and started to wield a greatsword.

He didn't avoid a breath attack that hit it and was barely damaged. Instead...

"The orc lord is holding a magic sword. It is an ‘Eselal Blade’ that absorbs magic power. Depending on the user's abilities, the options are amplified and it can be possible to reverse the breath. The sword will come out in this auction so please pay a lot of attention to it.”

Dubolong's short description was over.

The video showing had already changed to the fight. The Eselal Blade appearing at the auction meant it was the hydra's victory.

After a few breath attacks, the orc lord reached the hydra. But the huge body of the hydra itself was a weapon. The ground shook and the orc lord stumbled.

However, he leapt without hesitation and cut off one of the hydra's heads. The orc lord was momentarily elated as the head fell to the ground.

Yet the cut off head was instant restored. Before he knew it, a breath was once again coming from its mouth.

It was a bizarre scene that made the demons feel greedy.

‘The nine heads of the hydra needs to be destroyed at the same time in order to kill it.’

Or it would grow back in the blink of an eye. The orc lord didn't know how to cope. And...those who didn't know the method would never be able to kill the hydra.

Chiik!

The video ended here.

"How was it? Don't you feel greedy? Even the finest high class creature can't match the fury of the hydra."

That's right. The other creatures couldn't reach the hydra when

it came to pure destructive power. Not only did it have a huge size, it could subject the enemy to nine different types of breath attacks.

Any demon would feel greedy.

If they had to buy one high class creature, it should be the hydra. This was true even if there was no information about it.

'The problem is.....'

I felt some insecurity about the contract.

If the hydra was really being sold then I would buy it.

Whether it would follow me or not was a separate matter. If the hydra didn't recognize its owner and attacked, not many demons could stop it.

Dubolong bowed his head humbly.

"I have just introduced the legendary creature! It will start at five million points."

No more words were necessary.

Chapter 161: Demon World Auction (10)

It started at five million.

Demons who accumulated a small number of points in the individual auctions wouldn't be able to participate.

I earned a lot of points.

It was one case but...it wasn't impossible to drive up points through the individual auctions. In fact, there were some unremarkable items that were sold for a high price.

‘Upa.’

Apart from me, I guessed that Upa was the one with the most points among the demons. The majority of the demons in Upa's faction raised the price and bought his items for a high amount.

‘It would have been an unfavourable fight if I didn't have the Achievements Store.’

I had the most disadvantageous position in the individual auction. I was alone and they had many people. Didn't the dark spirits anticipate this?

‘It would be a heavy burden to sell individually.’

It was expected. The ones with a low amount of money were forgotten.

They just had to sit on their hands. When a big item like the hydra showed up at the auction, there was a concern over whether it would be purchased for a low amount of points.

The price of a high class creature had to always be high. The price needed to be adjusted.

However...it was doubtful whether the system would stay still. The neutral system always sought equality. There was no way it would let the balance fall.

‘The starting bid takes this into consideration.’

The dark spirits and Adonis were certainly aware of it. I looked around.

It wouldn't be easy to come forward. Participating would prove that they had that much points. Ariel Diablo and I were the only ones revealed.

However, I used a significant amount at the individual auction so they didn't think I could participate.

“Five million.”

It had been silent for many seconds.

While everyone was worrying...someone opened their mouth.

"Grand Duke Upa-nim! I commend your great taste. Five million points have come out."

Upa was the first player. The number of points he had could be speculated. He was followed by Ariel.

"Six million."

"Grand Duke Ariel-nim! You are as determined as you are beautiful!"

"Seven million."

"Ohh, Upa-nim! You rarely participated in the individual auctions but now you are going full steam ahead. Seven million points have come out!"

Upa seemed to have decided to buy the hydra. The auction had just started so there were likely to be more good creatures and items. Yet Upa seemed highly focused on purchasing the hydra.

Perhaps he tentatively determined that the hydra was worth more. Upa's judgement was somewhat valid. It was hard to imagine something comparable to the hydra emerging in this

auction.

‘Pandemonium?’

It was a competition between Upa and Ariel. That alone was enough for Pandemonium to make a move. Yet all Pandemonium did was close his eyes.

Was he waiting to see if something similar to the hydra emerged in the second half?

“Eight million.”

“Ariel-nim. Will you get it this time? It might not stop here!”

“Nine million.”

"A destructive power comparable to a meteor! He has enormous financial reserves. Grand Duke Upa has bid nine million points."

It was on the verge of reaching 10 million.

Ariel sighed. Her expression showed she didn't like it very much. The hydra was being snatched away by Upa.

The relationship between Upa and Ariel wasn't very good. It was a relationship where they couldn't defeat each other.

The one who purchased the hydra would have their strength rise vertically. And Upa was likely to aim for Ariel. Ariel didn't want that to happen.

Dubolong opened his mouth in this tense atmosphere.

“Nine million. Is there anyone else? That is still low when considering the value of the hydra.”

Pandemonium didn't intend to participate at all. The points were centred around the grand dukes so if Pandemonium abstained, it was likely that the hydra auction would be finished.

Dubolong wasn't very satisfied but he shook his head and said.

“Then I will count from five...”

“10 million.”

I leisurely interrupted Dubolong. It wasn't a large or small voice. However, there was a heavy weight to my words. That alone was enough to make Dubolong jump.

“Grand Duke...Randolph-nim! 10 million points have come out!”

"Hmph!"

Ariel cleared her throat. She had a strange smile like she was delighted. If I participated then it was highly likely that I would obtain the item.

Besides, Ariel preferred that I obtain the hydra instead of Upa.

Upa frowned as he glanced at me.

I had spent 30 million points, yet I was once again involving myself in the auction.

“11 million.”

"Grand Duke Upa-nim! Should I stay out of it? How exciting!"

“12 million.”

"I can't see the end of this. It is like a spring that won't dry. Grand Duke Randolph-nim!"

Upa gaze at the boys and girls on the ceiling. But they weren't laughing.

“Tsk!”

Upa clicked his tongue. In contrast to Upa's expression, Ariel's

smile widened.

'He has quite a lot.'

It was clear that Upa had driven all the points of his faction towards himself.

I had a lot more points available so Upa needed to think about it.

I wasn't present last year, but he learnt after his experience in the first three years. I was on a different level from the other demons.

"Is there anyone else? 12 million points has been called. Then...I will count from five."

Dubolong didn't like it but Upa couldn't bid anymore. I knew Upa's character to some extent. Upa had stopped running. I was certain of it.

However, the nature of the auction meant that time needed to be given.

"Three, two, one! Congratulations. The hydra now belongs to Grand Duke Randolph-nim!"

I had succeeded in getting a big one.

Many auction items appeared afterwards. I was amazed at how the quality of the goods improved in just two years.

However, none of the items captured my heart. I focused more on observing what the demons purchased.

Whether they focused on items, creatures or skills...I could infer some of their situation by looking at the items they bought.

Chrisley also read every aspect of the demons.

In the meantime, 10 items passed and the sale of the 11th auction item finally started.

"Let me explain before showing the next item. We have spent decades following the traces of the True Demonic Dragon Aojin. One year, we found Krasla and Chrisley. Then this year, we were able to obtain something else related to Aojin."

Chrisley's eyes widened.

The True Demonic Dragon Aojin!

The dragon of dragons. He was one of the parents who gave birth to Chrisley.

Aojin could be obtained from the Achievements Store. I was able to summon him with 50,000 achievement points. It was natural to

be curious about something related to him.

It was also true for the other demons. There was no demon who didn't know Aojin's name.

All eyes stared at Dubolong as he spoke.

"The High Dark Elf Shilla who was mated to the True Demonic Dragon Aojin. Her body is cursed."

...What?

I was forced to be silent. I knew the dark spirits were chasing Aojin's traces but I never expected them to obtain Shilla's body. It didn't happen in my previous life.

A high dark elf. She was a high class 3Lv creature and the real leader of the dark elves. Only a few showed up each a century...and Shilla was the one who led Julliom and Chrisley's village.

Chrisley only told me that Shilla had died when she was a child but she didn't know the details. Chrisley was almost ignorant about Shilla.

‘There is something strange...’

World trees existed in the Demon World. Strong dark elves could live near them. Shilla was qualified but she took care of Chrisley's

village. But she disappeared after Chrisley's birth. Julliom and the others believed that Shilla was dead.

Yet...her body now appeared at the auction.

Pure white hair. There was a crescent moon mark engraved on her forehead. A beautiful dark elf female was trapped in the ice.

In addition, strange magic power was flowing from her.

'That is a curse.'

The ice itself contained a powerful magic power. A strange magic power that even caused me to frown! It was sealing Shilla's body.

"It is clear that this isn't an ordinary curse. It has the power of ice that is opposite to Aojin, but the power is comparable. We've been investigating this curse but haven't found anything so far. It is really strange. An unknown strength!"

Dubolong was excited.

Aojin was a true demonic dragon. Different from a normal dragon. A creature that had supposedly jumped into the realm of transcendence. Incredibly, the magic power had a similar strength.

It was binding the High Dark Elf Shilla.

‘It is strange for that type of strength to be unknown.’

I touched my jaw.

If this was true then the grand dukes wouldn’t be able to easily deal with the mystery.

In the Demon World, Aojin was treated as an ‘insurmountable wall’ that couldn’t even be touched. It might be possible to defeat him if all the grand dukes led their troops but the damage would be beyond imagination.

It hurt their pride so they never mentioned Aojin at all. There was a non-aggression agreement with the grand dukes every time Aojin became involved.

Then...this had a similar power. An unknown creature.

"The High Dark Elf Shilla fought against this curse and died in the process. How can you use the body? Ladies and gentlemen, this is a high dark elf. It is almost impossible to see the corpse of a high dark elf because they are normally buried at the world tree. But...it is now right in front of you. What type of power would an undead made from the body of a high dark elf have? The power of this curse will make a more powerful undead."

It made a lot of sense.

The power of this curse was extraordinary. Originally undead

had yin attributes, so strong curses would make stronger undead. A high dark elf had endless possibilities when turning it into an undead.

Usually high dark elves lived near the world tree, and would become its food after dying. It was impossible to obtain their corpse.

Maybe the strongest undead might emerge. Depending on the skill of the creator, a great creature could be formed.

I turned my eyes towards Chrisley.

‘Is this really Shilla?’ was my question.

Chrisley nodded with a complicated expression.

‘I have to buy her.’

It wasn’t simply because of Chrisley. I was curious about the power of the curse. I was curious to know what type of existence could curse Shilla and have comparable strength to Aojin.

Who was it? Such power hadn’t revealed itself in the Demon World. There were no indications at all. The curse was very powerful.

“Hoh...”

Someone made a sound of admiration.

Pandemonium.

He was familiar with magic and was also involved in the manufacturing of undead. The best material was currently in front of his eyes.

Upa was also interested.

‘I need to confirm it clearly.’

I opened Mind’s Eye. I used my eyes and tried to identify Shilla.

Chapter 162: Demon World Auction (11)

-Name: Shilla

Uniqueness: She is dead. She has an unknown 'cursed' status.

** An unknown strength is accumulating inside her heart.

No titles or stats could be seen. This was because she was dead. A status window would be useless unless she was revived as an undead.

However, there was a hidden option. An unknown strength inside her heart. I couldn't feel or see it with the naked eye. The dark spirits weren't aware of my transcendental state so they likely couldn't notice it either.

At any rate, the strength inside the heart was the only clue. I wondered what that power was and what changes would occur if I unlocked it.

"Starting at five million points."

Dubolong said with a laugh. The starting bid was similar to that of the hydra. It was expensive but worth it when looking at the high dark elf Shilla.

"Five million."

"Grand Duke Pandemonium-nim! As expected, you can appreciate its worth."

"Six million."

"Grand Duke Upa-nim! I hope you win this time."

Ariel didn't participate. She had no interest in making undead. It was the body of a high dark elf but it seemed like she showed no desire to participate in the auction of this item.

Upa and Pandemonium growled as they looked at each other. Both of them specialized in the undead. It was obvious that there would be competition over such a material.

"Seven million."

"He is finally pushing out his points! Grand Duke Pandemonium has called seven million!"

I didn't know about Pandemonium. Upa had a little bit more than 10 million points.

His points were revealed thanks to the hydra. Even so, he was confident enough to pick the fight.

When the grand dukes fought over an important item, the

winner would be delighted while the loser would be red-faced. Points were a type of ‘power’ so it showed that they were lacking.

Upa and his faction mainly participated in the auction when it came to strong creatures. It was evidence that he was elevating his strength. Shilla’s corpse was perfect for that purpose.

Pandemonium didn’t pay attention to that fact. His face showed his confidence in winning.

“Eight million.”

“Nine million.”

Upa called eight million and Pandemonium raised the bid before Dubolong could even talk.

Upa frowned fiercely.

“A close match! My body is trembling. This is possible due to the value of a high dark elf corpse. From the perspective of the host, I am grateful that something so good is being treated well. Grand Duke Pandemonium has bid nine million points. Any more bids?”

Dubolong was trying to maintain the atmosphere.

I stopped for a moment to ponder. Indeed, Shilla’s body was worth more than the hydra. In fact, the skill of the creator was

very important when it came to the undead. It wasn't guaranteed to get a decent piece of work based on the materials.

In relation to the creation of undead, it was true that Upa was ahead of Pandemonium. If it was made by Upa then a high class 3Lv creature might be born.

Pandemonium's mouth curled upwards. It was the expression of a winner. He was convinced he had won.

He was caught off guard at this moment...

I opened my mouth.

"10 million."

I couldn't fall down in this fight.

I finally bought Shilla's body for 12 million points. The problem was whether Chrisley was willing to revive Shilla as an undead. Of all my subordinates, Chrisley was the one most familiar with making undead.

She would do what the Dungeon Master told her to. However, it was unclear if the work would be carried out with sincerity. The mother who gave birth to her. Although Chrisley had no memories of her mother, she was likely to feel complex emotions.

It was called revival, but an undead was no different to making a doll that could be commanded. Depending on the degree of damage to the body, memories might be lost. Or there could be a different personality and she might not even remember she was Shilla.

‘She still has to do it.’

Chrisley’s expression was dark. She was sitting patiently in her spot.

Perhaps...as a clever woman, she already noticed what I wanted.

"Now I will introduce the next item that I am proud of. It is Puragamo’s Flute!"

I turned my attention back to the front. Anyway, I wouldn’t receive all the items until after the auction was over. It was time to concentrate on the auction.

I bought the ‘Conqueror’s Ring’, ‘Mindset of a Puppeteer’, ‘Gajuneok’s Echo’ and ‘Eselal’s Blade.’ It was the middle of the auction and I had already bought six things.

I had approximately 25 million points remaining. There was still room to spare.

The points used had already exceeded 100 million so other demons had used a lot of their points.

‘This might not be over.’

I continued to watch the auction. It wouldn't be bad if I settled on these six items. I could invest the remaining points in my dungeon and the leftovers would be used in next year's auction.

However, my expectations would stay until the end.

The dark spirits had driven up the points in the individual auctions. Many of the auction items were large so I was expecting special measures to be used.

If so...it might not end with the hydra and Shilla's body.

I was sure there was something else prepared.

I watched carefully as the auction progressed. Finally, an item that met my expectations appeared as the 54th item.

"Please pay attention. I am sure that all of you will be surprised by the following item. Right...an angel egg. It isn't an ordinary egg, but one that has been designated at the level of an archangel. Maybe even more...well, the explanation ends here. You will have to judge it for yourself."

An angel egg appeared as Dubolong's words ended! It was similar to the appearance I knew, but it had a stronger holy power.

'The one that will emerge won't be weak.'

I smirked. It was an angel egg. The level was higher than what I had seen before. I didn't know where it came from, but it was likely that the dark spirits stole it.

I was able to purchase normal eggs from the Achievements Store. But this angel egg was more peculiar and had excellent holy power. I stared at it.

The angel egg had never appeared at the auctions in my previous life. At that time, the dark spirits had steadily increased their strength and had no need for adventures. The fact that an angel egg emerged showed their urgency.

"Aren't you curious? Don't you have the urge to challenge it? Originally angel eggs are kept deep inside heaven. A place where only a few selected angels can enter! For many of the guests here, it will be your first time seeing an angel egg..."

Angels and demons had an antagonistic relationship. It was natural to have never seen an egg before. It was just an endless repetition of killing.

Yet...an angel egg emerged. It was also an egg with a very strong holy power. If they could breed an angel above the level of an archangel...the demons hadn't imagined it before.

That imagination could now be turned into reality. In addition, it was ideal for getting rid of other angels that were the demons' natural enemies.

Dubolong stimulated their desire to buy it.

"It is a very special item but I will start at a low price. Any guests can participate...for only 100,000 points."

Their desire started brimming over.

An angel egg came out and stimulated the buyers, so the atmosphere became very heated after that.

There were good quality items or mysterious ones that stimulated the curiosity of the demons.

I ended up taking 10 items, including the angel egg. When including the Great Fire Essence, Hyacinth's Bow and other small items from the individual auctions, I ended up with 15 goods.

So...the auction ended.

"Chrisley. Let's go back."

The auction was over and there was nothing more to see here. I needed to go back and organize my purchases.

As expected, the harvest would raise my power.

‘I hadn’t expected much.’

I was already in the realm of transcendence. I had concluded that I wouldn’t raise my overall power that much in the Demon World Auction. But the other elemental spirits appeared so the dark spirits put in a greater effort.

It wasn’t urgent but...thanks to that, the range of what I could do had increased.

“Yes.”

Chrisley responded calmly from behind me.

As I left the auction house, Ariel Diablo blocked my path.

“What do you want?”

I asked.

Ariel smirked and responded.

“Randolph Brigsiel. I will start moving.”

Moving? Did that mean she had been still until now?

I didn't know why she was telling me this, but Ariel said one final thing.

"Amuse me to the end, you who have entered the realm of transcendence."

They were crucial words.

'Indeed...'

She had noticed.

Right. Ariel Diablo's eyes seemed to be the best. I hadn't revealed my transcendence, but Ariel had spoken in a confident tone.

Her words about 'moving' could be interpreted in many ways. Furthermore, Ariel had been unchallenged so far. If she moved, I didn't know what direction this war would go in.

Upa's power had been cut, Pandemonium absorbed Okullos' faction but Ariel had been untouched so far. Despite Pandemonium absorbing Okullos' remaining forces, he wasn't comparable to Ariel who had been accumulating her strength.

'I have to prepare properly.'

I couldn't overlook her.

Ariel moving in earnest. I needed to prepare countermeasures.

There would only be one winner in the end. Everyone around me were enemies. This rule was absolute.

I couldn't be too relaxed. Despite entering the realm of transcendence...

‘War isn’t fought alone.’

The path forward seemed vaguely blurred.

“My Dungeon Master. Are you sure we should go back right away?”

"Is there anything left to do?"

Chrisley shook her head.

"I noticed that the auctioneer wanted to have a separate meeting..."

"Dubolong speaks too much. That guy doesn't need to concern you."

I noticed his sly glances after the auction ended. He wanted to

meet with me separately, but it didn't seem to be about anything good. It was better to just ignore him.

He would either ask about the days I disappeared, or my relationship with the fire and water spirits.

I quickly left, with Chrisley following behind me quietly.

Chapter 163: Demon World Auction (12)

I went through the crack and returned to my dungeon.

The familiar top floor could be seen.

Luxurious desks and chairs were set up with sweetened honey water and cookies.

“Master, you’ve come back.”

For some reason, Yihi welcomed me with a mild-mannered appearance.

She was wearing a maid’s outfit that didn’t really suit her.

“Are you tired? Please sit down. Yihi has prepared honey water and sweets.”

"This is different.”

I didn’t know where this came from.

Yihi had never been like this.

Yihi clenched her fists.

"Yihi is no longer the Yihi of the past. Yihi will do her best to be Master's faithful fairy in the future."

I didn't know how long it would last, but it wasn't a bad phenomenon. I couldn't hate someone who was working hard.

I sat down and enjoyed the honey water. Chrisley naturally sat opposite me.

"Master. What did you buy this time? Yihi wants to look at it. Something like the king bee wouldn't be too bad."

That reminded me, I hadn't seen the king bees following behind Yihi for a while.

'Dead.'

It seemed like some had died during the attack while I was away.

I hadn't thought about it at all. The king bees hadn't come out.

Yihi flew around me with the honey water and cookies. She didn't spare any effort and directly fed them into my mouth.

Her face was filled with expectations.

It seemed like she believed I had bought a king bee.

Chiiiiing!

After a while, a crack appeared in the surrounding space.

The auction goods had started to arrive.

“Yihihi. I wonder what will come out.”

Yihi flew to the crack and muttered. Yihi used to act like this at the end of every auction. It had been a long time since I’d seen this scene.

I stood up with my hands clasped behind my back. Chrisley stood close by like she was going to protect me.

Soon the first auction item appeared.

“...Eobobo.”

A massive, mountain-like creature.

Hydra!

It emerged first from the crack and almost reached the ceiling.

Yihi freaked out and retreated. Her body trembled with fear.

The eighteen eyes looked at Yihi.

"Y-Yihi isn't tasty..."

Yihi quickly retreated behind me. She peeked over my shoulder.

Grrrung.

Kuaaaa!

The nine heads.

Its condition wasn't normal but it didn't attack. It wasn't perfect but the contract was invoked.

"I am your master."

I walked up to it and lightly raised my hand.

At the same time, I opened my magic power to make sure it knew I was its 'owner.'

Hwaruruk!

There was a spark of arrogance after I opened my magic power. The hydra stepped forward, causing a huge impact.

But I didn't move. It stared straight into my eyes and seemed like it would step on me.

“M-Master!”

“Dungeon Master!”

Yihi and Chrisley cried out, but I just raised my hand.

This was a fight between the hydra and I. A third party intervention wasn't good.

Soon a massive foot moved and came down towards my head.

I just stared into its eyes.

I was prepared for the damage from the blow.

It was an urgent situation.

Chrisley couldn't bear it anymore and pulled out her wand. However, the hydra's foot stopped moving.

Grrrr...

The hydra snorted and took one step back. It was restless and bewildered.

But everything was decided with this one act.

"You will be a great sword to kill my enemies."

I said with a smile.

No matter how great the hydra was, I was the master and it was under my control.

Next, I decided to appoint the Dungeon Masters.

I obtained this privilege after becoming a grand duke.

In the meantime, the other dungeons hadn't been operating that efficiently. There was only one of me so I couldn't see the situation of the dungeons in real time.

But now it was different.

Those appointed as Dungeon Masters would have the proper permissions to make changes.

A fairy alone had limitations so it was better to take care of it

quickly.

“Chrisley. Take this.”

"This is...an item purchased at the auction?"

‘Mindset of a Puppeteer.’ It was a skill book suitable for Chrisley to create and manipulate the undead.

"I will leave the dungeon in China to you. This item is a gift from me. Now you will fulfill the duties of a Dungeon Master.”

“I...a Dungeon Master?”

Chrisley opened her eyes wide with disbelief.

"You are qualified enough.”

The method of appointing a Dungeon Master was simple. I had to acknowledge them and give them something as a token.

The effect was activated after Chrisley received Mindset of a Puppeteer.

-The dark elf ‘Chrisley’ has been appointed as the ‘Dungeon Master.’

Her loyalty is very high. Status - Blind devotion

Under the patronage of Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel, she will destroy his enemies from the forefront.

She was under my control so I could see her status.

But I didn't only have the China dungeon. There was also the one in Japan.

"Tashmal."

"Are you leaving the dungeon to me?"

She asked as her six black wings flapped.

"You will take Japan's dungeon. Raise the angels and forces there. It is a great place to build up power."

Tashmal was calm as she received Gajuneok's Echo.

Depending on the magic power, it was a harp that could give off a strong melody. In particular, the effects of angels and saints would rise significantly. Despite her corruption, Tashmal would be able to use it effectively.

“I won’t refuse.”

Tashmal coolly accepted Gajuneok’s Echo.

-The fallen angel ‘Tashmal’ has been appointed as the ‘Dungeon Master.’

Her loyalty isn’t bad. Status - You are an enemy of her enemy, good feelings.

She won’t hesitate to exert herself for the Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel.

Chapter 164: Ifrit (1)

I had three dungeons, including the one in Korea. I filled the two empty vacancies. Chrisley and Tashmal's abilities meant they would be good Dungeon Masters.

And I had one more thing to say to Tashmal.

“Do you recognize this?”

I presented something I bought from the auction to Tashmal.

Tashmal's eyes widened as she saw it.

“An angel egg? It is already blessed in the egg stage...oh my god, where did you obtain this?”

“The Demon World Auction. You can also go there next year.”

"The dark spirits have touched the heavenly soul!"

Tashmal's body trembled. Although I could purchase the angel egg from the Achievements Store, the dark spirits had to steal it. I promised her that I would save the humans from the demons.

In fact, that was a promise I made to the gods when they returned me to the past. I didn't care what the conditions were, as long as I had the chance to return. It was a miracle. Still, I wasn't

the type of person who would turn my back on a promise. So I gave the humans some opportunities.

Anyway...Tashmal willingly joined me, but the dark spirits were different. Tashmal knew a little bit about the Demon World Auction. She understood that the dark spirits sold items and creatures for their own benefit.

It was the same for the angel egg they sold.

Her anger was natural.

"Don't worry. This was the only one."

Tashmal's anger calmed down a little bit.

"This egg...it is a special egg that has the blessing of the Celestial Ruler. I know that the Celestial Ruler blesses the eggs that are designated as advanced angels."

She explained the item.

Hashmal, who was a Dominions Angel, had only been intermediate rank.

What capabilities would the advanced angels have?

“Tashmal. You will raise it.”

"It is nonsense! It is a sacred egg that I have to return to the angels right now!"

Tashmal hastily refused. It was an honour just seeing an advanced angel. She was anxious just holding the egg.

But I laughed.

“To who? Aren’t the angels now on earth? Do you think they will take the egg from our hands? They can’t return to heaven. They are always being attacked by demons so it won’t be safe.”

I knew a little bit about an angel’s physiology. Angels wouldn’t accept an egg that had been touched by a demon and a fallen angel. It was the same even for a blessed egg. The situation also wasn’t good for them.

“.....”

Tashmal was silent.

I had struck a sore spot.

“The only safe place to raise it is Japan’s dungeon. Do you understand? If not, this egg will just be neglected.”

“...I understand. But don't expect much. I don't know if I can raise an angel whose status is above mine...”

Tashmal said with a bittersweet expression and turned around.

If she couldn't do it then nobody could. Most of my knowledge about angels came from her. Although she had fallen, her essence was still an angel.

‘I have roughly 12 million points remaining.’

The appointment ceremony ended. It didn't matter if they acted separately. The important thing was their performance.

‘I will wear this ring.’

It was the ‘Conqueror's Ring’ that I purchased from the auction. I looked at the explanation using Mind's Eye.

-Name - Conqueror's Ring (Epic, Set)

Description: A ring that only a conqueror can wear. It is a paired set and if the other ring is worn, a great power can be exerted.

* The ‘dignified’ effect will be proportional to the wearer's magic power. Significantly increases the recovery of magic power (+10% per conquered territory).

* It is only effective for those who own a 'territory.'

* The skill 'Final Impact (Ex Epic)' is available when worn with the Contempt of the Weak Ring.

There were no options that raised my stats. However, I noticed the set effect as well as the recovery of magic power.

There were many items that healed a wound or restored stamina, but those that recovered magic power were rare. It was a growth type item.

The recovery rate was ambiguous because there were no precise standards, but I could roughly guess. In my case, it would take five days to recover if all of my magic power was consumed. The Underground World and my dungeons increased the effect by 40%, meaning the recovery would be reduced to three days.

'There is no way to obtain the Contempt of the Weak Ring yet...'

This was the first time I saw the ring. I had no idea where the Contempt of the Weak Ring was. However, I was convinced that I could get it.

"Chrisley. I wonder how Roy is doing."

Roy. The small dark elf was left with the Awakened and the goblin as they attacked Pandemonium's dungeon.

The raid should have taken place by now. I was curious.

"I will bring the crystal ball."

Chrisley nodded and left.

After a while, she brought a crystal ball that was the size of her body.

I poured magic power into it and could see Roy's surroundings.

"Damn!"

One of the Awakened spat with disgust.

He looked terrible. He gritted his teeth and forced his tired legs to move.

"We were nearly there! The Dungeon Core was right in front of us!"

"I didn't think there would be reinforcements."

The dungeon capture was a failure. They were forced to retreat

just before capturing it.

If it wasn't for the girin's barrier, they would have been wiped out.

"This will do for now. Serious damage was dealt to them. If we go home and rebuild our strength, there is some hope of eliminating them."

The girin in the form of a female spoke from the front. Although it was a failure, it was still a valuable experience. The suppressed Awakened had managed a counterattack. This experience would help them grow quickly.

"T-that's right..."

Next to her, Roy gave a small nod.

Roy also fought on the front lines. There were injuries on his body but he had a pretty reliable face.

The words from both of them reversed the atmosphere.

"Yes. Saviour-nim's child agreed."

"We need to raise our strength. Please help us."

"Pleas...!"

The eyes of the Awakened lit up. They had been on the verge of capturing the Dungeon Core. It was a remarkable achievement for the Awakened. An unprecedented event. Their confidence climbed.

In the midst of the turmoil, the girin spoke to Roy.

"Child. Their willpower alone won't be enough. If your master goes out it will be easy, but since he isn't here...you should go."

"Me?"

"I subtly suggested it to them. My 'girin' skill will bring out the temperament of a king in some of them. However, a suddenly created tower can collapse. A means of control is needed."

"Can't Girin-nim do it?"

"I am their guardian deity. My skills are based in belief. If I punish them, a king won't be born. Even if they were born, they would just be a tyrant."

Roy hesitated before saying.

"...I have to obtain Master's consent."

The girin laughed.

"He will agree."

I called Rose. Roy was alone in this situation. Rose would help him walk the path.

"Rose. Go to Roy and hand him this sword."

"Isn't this a really cool looking sword?"

"The Eselal Blade. It is a sword that will prove Roy's worth."

Rose's eyes shone.

"What about me, Master?"

Roy was given a sword so she wanted one as well.

"I will make you one. I was able to obtain a small amount of Orichalcum."

"Ah! I saw that in a book. It is a great metal. You are making a sword for Rose with it? Wah!"

Rose expressed her pleasure.

Orihalcum.

It was one of the things I bought at the Demon World Auction.

Orihalcum was the strongest iron and was called God's Metal. If it was refined and used to make a weapon, a masterpiece would be created. A skilled blacksmith was needed, but I had the dwarf king and Oswen. The combination should be enough to make something of the metal.

"I will send you the sword when it is finished. For now, join Roy and give him this sword."

"You are telling Rose to help Roy?"

"That's right."

"Well, Roy can be insecure when he is alone. Rose will keep an eye on him."

Rose casually held the sword that was bigger than her body. She carried the sword and headed to M3.

"I will go straight away~"

Rose sat on M3's shoulder and they started to move quickly.

‘Then...’

The post-processing of the auction goods was almost over. The other items needed time so I only had one thing left.

‘The Great Fire Essence.’

The Great Fire Essence had come to the dungeon in a cage. I climbed to the top floor and watched it for a while.

Everybody else saw fire, but I could see a two-legged dragon. It looked like a ‘dragon man.’

Fire lit up his spine and gave him a sharp impression.

‘What are you?’

It was something I had been wondering. I had felt a strange pull to him since the first time I saw him. He felt familiar to me.

Now it was time to check.

I would resolve my curiosity before returning him to the fire spirits.

Bump!

I unlocked the iron cage. The door was opened...

Grrrrrrrr!

He rushed towards me.

Chapter 165: Ifrit (2)

A white space stretched out endlessly in front of me.

I opened my eyes in the centre.

‘This place?’

I frowned. It was the first time I had seen a space like this, and I didn’t remember moving here. I could only speculate that it happened after the fire essence tackled me.

"Give me what is inside of you."

Flames appeared in this white space.

It was a familiar presence.

“Fire essence?”

The two-legged dragon. A human-like dragon.

This world seemed to be his.

“My name is Ifrit. One of the nine fire essences. The half that Contegonom stole was transferred to you. If you don’t give it back to me, I will destroy you.”

I had no idea what he was talking about. I guessed that something entered me when I killed Contegonom.

“Ifrit. Even if you are right, it became mine the moment it entered me. I would hand it over if there was a deal, however simple threats won’t work.”

“I have been trapped...but now it is different! This is my world, so you can never beat me. If you don’t...I will possess your whole body!”

Gugugung.

The world shook and Ifrit’s body changed.

After a while, Ifrit became the size of a huge giant.

There was enormous fire magic power! Ifrit was truly amazing. His magic power had to be over 100.

But...there were many ambiguous points.

He said that he was only ‘half.’ The other half had entered me. Nevertheless, he was still in the transcendental realm? Even a half transcendental being would be too much for the dark spirits to handle.

I couldn't understand how he didn't break the cage. At the auction, I had clearly seen Ifrit trying to break the bars to escape. The cage was made in the name of the devil, but it wouldn't be enough to keep a transcendental being in.

‘This is a dream.’

I laughed. Additionally, he was the one who gave me the big hint.

This was his dream.

Originally a work of fiction is called a ‘dream.’ It was a world that covers the truth and only shows lies. Even the impossible could take place here.

So...it was possible that Ifrit made himself appear transcendent in this landscape.

I started to see cracks as soon as I realized the truth.

I opened Mind's Eye. I would be able to reveal all of the truth if I used Mind's Eye.

Name: Ifrit

Stats

Strength 90 Intelligence 88

Agility 87 Stamina 85

Magic Power 90

Potential: (440/500)

Uniqueness: One of the nine fire essences. Their role is to act as guardians for the fire spirits. Currently, he has lost half of his ability to 'dominate.'

Skill: Image Implementation (Epic), Power of Fire (Epic)

I knew it.

The stats that I saw with Mind's Eye were considerably less than mine. The feeling of oppression was due to his 'manipulation.'

"How about it? I will spare your life if you give it to me now."

Ifrit thought I was wavering due to his words.

A laugh emerged from my mouth.

I never thought that the 'Great Fire Essence' would try to scam me.

The fire spirits worshipped him, but he was nothing more than a scammer.

"You talk too much."

I said curtly.

There was no need to start a conversation. It was something I developed over my long life as a demon. There was a winner and loser. The winner had the right to take everything. Words weren't needed.

It was a sign of insecurity. Ifrit might be half complete, but he had failed to recognize my 'rank.' He wanted to beat me with a bluff.

The attempt was good, but I didn't bite that easily.

"I will give you a chance. I hate using force when it isn't needed."

Ifrit still hadn't stopped talking.

There was a degree of bravado.

So I opened up my magic power and concentrated it on my throat.

“Reveal the true appearance, Ifrit.”

At that moment.

Kururung!

The world convulsed.

This world had no power over me once I realized the truth. It was far too rough to catch me.

"U-unbelievable...!"

Ifrit had returned to his original size.

He stepped back with confusion.

But I had no intention of leaving him alone.

I gripped Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

"This is a dream world so you won't die. No, can a fire like you even die in the first place?"

It didn't matter.

Whether he could die or not wouldn't change the fact that I would attack until he was destroyed.

Ifrit shouted in surrender.

"Stop! I lost. I'll acknowledge it."

But I still struck.

I used my full force.

This was a world of dreams, but a strike from a transcendent person would still deal a significant blow. From the beginning, this place was meaningless to me.

Yet he still had that attitude.

"You've maintained your consciousness."

I thought he needed more punishment.

"P-please..."

Ifrit's flesh was stretched out like a rag. The dream world tried to restore Ifrit's broken body, but my damage surpassed the regenerative power.

It couldn't keep up with the speed of destruction and now Ifrit's body was strange. His hands were on his head while his face was at his feet.

I gave a low laugh. I smirked and once again split apart his body. The flames around Ifrit's body were weakened.

"Stop! Stop! Aaaagh!"

Screams echoed through the entire space.

Ifrit lay on the ground in pain.

"I will destroy you! Once I die, the power inside you will run wild! Don't think that you will be safe!"

"Stop talking."

"...?"

"Every word from your mouth is a lie. And...this is also a bluff."

It was easy to distinguish the second lie. Even if Ifrit was correct, there was no reason why I couldn't control it. A little force would allow me to overcome it.

Kwajik!

I stepped on his mouth.

After one more hour of beatings, Ifrit's attitude changed.

"S-spare me. I can't be destroyed yet."

"The reason?"

"I haven't met my son in 20,000 years..."

"Do I have to continue listening to a dog?"

I clicked my tongue. By default, Ifrit was 'fire.' It was impossible for him to conceive.

It seemed like I needed to hit him a few more times.

Ifrit cried out desperately as my sword flashed.

"The ninth fire! The fire that symbolizes 'courage' is derived from me! I haven't seen him in 20,000 years so he must be heartbroken."

"So I should give you back unharmed?"

“T-that’s right.”

It was new information. I thought about it for a moment.

The great fire essences held important meaning to the fire spirits. A total of nine had been born since the creation of the Fire Spirit World.

This meant he had access to the fire of ‘courage.’ Needless to say, my influence was rising.

Ifrit continued nervously.

"I can work directly with the Fire Spirit King. If I can communicate with the Fire Spirit King...he will reward you. The Fire Spirit King can't ignore it if both my son and I speak to him..."

“I will give you back.”

I interrupted him.

Ifrit was delighted.

"Really?"

"However, I won't hand over what is inside me. There is also no way I will let you go so easily."

“...?”

Ifrit stiffened. He instinctively realized that my tone wasn't normal.

I aimed my sword at him and declared.

"Come inside me. I have no intention of eating you like Contegonom. You are a type of spirit, so a 'contract' is available."

"That...!"

I randomly stabbed a spot. I didn't hesitate to inflict damage.

A contract.

It wasn't comparable to a contract with an ordinary spirit.

If I made a contract with the higher fire essence, the fire spirits wouldn't be able to deal with me. I would also be able to use his power.

Anyway, 'half' of him was inside me.

Not only that, I was looking forward to meeting the fire in charge of 'courage.'

“I will give you two choices. Destruction or a contract. Pick which path to walk on.”

"It is unprecedented for a great fire to contract with someone. I acknowledge your strength, but this is completely different.”

"Then you will be destroyed.”

I erased my smile and took an attacking stance.

He had chosen his own death.

It seemed like there was no other way.

I would make an excuse to the fire spirits, maybe by blaming Pandemonium and Contegonom.

Ifrit sensed my determination as I raised my hand.

“Wait! Although there is no precedent, there is no rule against it. Contract...I will contract with you. However, this contract will be automatically destroyed if the fire spirits are harmed.”

"I will only act if they point their swords at me first.”

I shrugged.

I had to maintain the alliance with the fire spirits for a while.

One of my goals was to incite them to move. They would pressure the dark spirits.

"I will give you the source of fire, so don't reject it."

Hwaruruk!

After his words ended, an intense fire soared from Ifrit. The fire swallowed me up.

'It isn't hot.'

It felt strange. It was more warm than hot.

-The 'Great Fire Essence Ifrit' wants to form a contract with the demon 'Randolph Briggsiel.'

Do you accept?

I nodded and a new window appeared.

-The contract has been completed.

-Impossible achievement! For the first time, a demon has formed a contract with a great fire essence. In the future, the fire spirits will give 'Randolph Briggsiel' even more preferential treatment.

3,000,000pt will be paid.

2,000 achievement points will be added.

It was better to form a contract than to use force.

This seemed like the right path when looking at the future.

"I can't return to the Spirit World, unlike normal spirits. I have no choice but to make a home in your body."

Ifrit spoke in a gloomy tone.

"Where is your other half?"

"The heart. It is hidden there."

It was in the Heart of the Hell Monarch...

I wondered why I couldn't sense its presence.

'The contract is absolute. Ifrit won't be able to kill me.'

Furthermore, the Heart of the Hell Monarch was powerful.

If Ifrit tried something then the heart wouldn't stay still. It would become a true 'prison' for Ifrit.

Others might feel a little panicked, but I was different.

My body also contained Lightning God. There was no way I wouldn't know if Ifrit made any strange movements.

"Okay. Go to the heart."

Kururung!

After that, the fake world started to crumble.

When I returned to reality, I couldn't see the fire essence in front of me.

Under the contract, he had already moved to my heart.

At the same time, the two forces combined.

'Is this the power of domination?'

Ifrit. He was the fire essence responsible for ‘domination.’ I could subtly feel the power inside me.

-The split power of ‘Ifrit’ has been successfully combined.

The power of ‘Ifrit’ has been forcibly combined with the ‘Heart of the Hell Monarch.’

-Ifrit’s power of ‘domination’ has settled in the user ‘Randolph Briggsiel.’

What was this?

‘Combined power?’

The contract could exert power on the target.

Yet it had forced a combination and made an alternate form available to me.

‘Ifrit is shackled by the Heart of the Hell Monarch.’

I roughly understood.

It was unexpected but it wasn’t a bad thing.

Once I looked at my status window, a skill had been added.

-Name-Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive)

Description: You can 'dominate' opponents that are in a critical state. The success will depend on the user's magic power and the opponent's intelligence. If the opponent is dominated, they will gradually lose their ego and follow you.

** Invalidates the 'territory declaration.'

Chapter 166: Fire Spirit King (1)

A skill that overpowered the opponent and made them follow me. The Power of Domination was indeed amazing. It really was a skill for me.

‘The utilization is high.’

It was a great ability but there was a hidden option. Invalidating a territory proclamation! The meaning of this wasn’t simple.

It meant the domain of angels or dungeons of other demons wouldn’t be able to affect me. Some ‘nobles’ automatically had their own territory. Or it might be due to a skill...being able to invalidate a territory was worthwhile.

Tok.

I gently patted my heart. Thanks to Lightning God, I could feel the trapped Ifrit.

‘The Heart of the Hell Monarch and the Great Fire Essence.’

I was drawing closer to being able to challenge a god. The half body of Ifrit couldn’t be compared.

“Yihi.”

"Yes, Master. Yihi is here~"

Yihi flapped her wings and flew over. She had been waiting nearby for my call.

Joy was overflowing from her huge eyes. Ever since I returned to the dungeon, Yihi hadn't wanted to leave my side.

"Call Maxium and Oswen."

"Yihihi! Yes!"

Yihi laughed and withdrew.

I turned my head and looked at the statue of ice near me.

A female dark elf was trapped in the ice.

High dark elf Shilla!

Her body was cursed so I wanted to ask Oswen and Maxium about this matter.

Yihi brought Maxium and Oswen after five minutes. Yihi was delighted at the thought that she had fulfilled my order.

"I called you here to ask about this statue."

“A very beautiful dark elf. That symbol on her forehead...high elf?”

Oswen answered first.

"That's right. She is Chrisley's mother."

".....!"

Maxium and Oswen had been living in the dungeon so they knew who Chrisley was.

"She was cursed and died. I wanted to ask you about this curse. Does it feel familiar?"

"I don't know if I should say this but..."

“Maxium. Go ahead.”

"It is similar to Your Majesty's temperament before you lost your memory. There are also differences. That is why I can't give a definite answer."

I nodded.

"That's right. It isn't the Shadow Emperor. Something with a

similar temperament. But there is only one Shadow Emperor, and no one in the world can imitate him.”

I could affirm that this wasn't true.

I was a being similar to the Shadow Emperor. I could imitate him.

“...Nothingness!”

Oswen clapped his hands.

He knew that I wasn't the real Hell Monarch.

The Hell Monarch who challenged God. Those who couldn't become a god...nothingness. I also knew that Contegonom had been summoned by Okullos. Similarly, the Hell Monarch might be able to be summoned.

If the real Hell Monarch returned from the nothingness, it wasn't strange that the magic power would be compared to the True Demonic Dragon Aojin.

Maxium didn't know this so he frowned.

"Your Majesty. Your Majesty is currently here. Therefore I know that you were never dragged into nothingness.”

“If you can define nothingness, then it is no longer nothingness. So...I wanted to ask you who knew me well. This curse, how can we remove it?”

I was half-convinced. The Hell Monarch had been summoned from the nothingness. I'm glad he wasn't summoned to Earth but...I didn't know where he was.

If the Hell Monarch returned to the Demon World from nothingness, then there would be a change in the movements of the grand dukes. Maybe he would create an army with his power.

Therefore, I had to be prepared. I needed to be able to respond to the worst situation.

After a long period of thinking, Maxium responded.

"If Your Majesty truly did it then there is no way. However, one possible method is to create a 'harness' that will deflect the curse..."

"Isn't that magic specific to curses?"

"That's right, Your Majesty."

I stared at Oswen.

“Can you make it?”

Oswen shook his head.

"The materials are the problem. Making a harness that can deflect the curse...no matter how good my blacksmith skills are, there is a limit. I can imagine it but the legendary Orihalcum is required..."

Oswen had suffered under the Hell Monarch. He was well aware of the Hell Monarch's strength and had several ideas to defend himself. As expected, it seemed like he had some plans ready.

"I have it."

The only problem was the materials!

"You have Orihalcum?"

"I have enough to make a few weapons. Is it possible?"

I looked at Yihi who swiftly flew away. Yihi noticed what I wanted with just once glance.

She soon returned with a pile of Orihalcum.

Oswen's mouth widened as he saw it.

“...Did you gather all the Orihalcum in the world? I’ve only seen scrapings of it...”

“Oswen.”

“It is possible. That is plenty. I am unleashing my skills after a long time. Haha.”

Oswen shrugged.

“Do you require anything else?”

"I need time to look at the curse before determining more materials. I will tell the fairy separately if I need anything. Isn't that right, Fairy-nim?"

Oswen winked at Yihi.

Yihi looked at him with a haughty expression.

"Yihi wants a new teacup."

"Of course, I have to make it for you."

"Do you know the honey containers? I would like that."

"Of course, I have to make a new one."

It seemed like some type of deal was completed. I wasn't too concerned about them talking in front of me. At this point, I could hand it over to them.

‘Chrisley’s turn will come later.’

The curse needed to be removed first before turning Shilla into an undead. If I prepared, I could survive even the worst situation.

‘Hell Monarch.’

Shilla had been in this condition for a long time. I didn't know what to expect if the Hell Monarch had really come back from the nothingness.

How would the movements of the grand dukes change in response?

I watched Maxium with a firm expression.

“Maxium. I have something else for you to do.”

The next day.

Maxium exited the dungeon with thousands of skeleton soldiers and the lich. They took an inconspicuous path and crossed the Pacific Ocean.

He emerged again in Chile, South America and immediately swept everything away.

“For His Majesty!”

The dungeon creatures or humans didn't matter. He killed everything in sight and caused confusion. The number of corpses rose rapidly.

South America was the same area as Grand Duke Upa's military headquarters.

But they couldn't properly control Maxium's emergence.

It was because most of his troops were preparing for a war against Ariel Diablo.

North America.

Las Vegas, United States.

There was a dungeon but it was a peaceful city due to no monster waves occurring in the last five years. People's daily routines didn't change much. Rather, they gathered together due to the damage other people in the world received.

The people were complacent, thinking that this routine wouldn't

change. The United States was called a large resort.

In fact, monster waves rarely occurred from any dungeons in the United States.

At least...until today.

200 death knights. 500 dark warriors. Numerous ogres and cerberus. Other advanced creatures appeared from the dungeon.

And...Ariel Diablo was riding the high class ranked dark horse!

The moment she appeared, the noisy Las Vegas became silent.

“I am Ariel Diablo. I will wipe out humans and destroy the Earth.”

A dazzling beauty. She had large horns on her forehead. The overwhelming atmosphere caused some people to lose their spirit.

The creatures suddenly disappeared, but her presence was truly outstanding.

Ariel was a grand duke and demon. She didn't care about the eyes of the humans. Rather, she was sick and tired of humans.

Ariel Diablo looked around and said coldly.

"Kill everything."

Hihihing~!

As the dark horse ran wild, Ariel Diablo raised her sword.

Huaaah!

Dark stems flew out from her sword and penetrated the heads of the death knights and dark warriors.

It was the 'King's Blessing (Epic)' skill. At the same time, the dark magic power became stronger and the death knights and dark warriors were shrouded in a black fog.

The humans hadn't been completely unprepared for this situation.

There was always some Awakened waiting nearby. However, Ariel jumped down and struck the ground with her sword.

At that moment.

Kwaaaaaaaang!

A blast that stretched out a few hundred metres from Ariel

occurred.

The ground cracked and a huge storm occurred.

The elite Awakened couldn't withstand the aftermath. Many Awakened died without leaving any traces of their bodies behind.

In the midst of that, Ariel spoke with an expressionless look.

"It is time for your end, humans."

Chapter 167: Fire Spirit King (2)

I got a clue about Shilla and Maxium was currently outside causing confusion. Therefore, it was time for me to prepare.

“Jives. Kerpi.”

The fire and water spirits. I had to check if they had escaped from the dark spirits.

After I called both of their names, the contract was implemented. Small cracks formed and both of them appeared near me.

“Contractor. You finally called.”

"It is great to see you again, Contractor.”

Jives and Kerpi simultaneously greeted me.

They looked similar to humans, but were a little bit fuzzy.

“Both of you are injured.”

“Damn dark spirits! I will return this grudge a hundredfold.”

"Me too. I will make them realize how scary the water spirits are.”

The two antagonistic spirits had joined forces.

It was all thanks to the dark spirits.

At that time, the fire spirit Jives stared at me and asked.

“But Contractor. I feel something very familiar from you. What on earth happened?”

"I formed a contract with the Great Fire Essence.”

“What...? A contract with one of our nine fire essences? Wait...”

Kung kung!

Jives sniffed me before stepping back.

“It is unbelievable. It is definitely a contract. It is also the highest one!”

“What will you do? I promised to return it, but the fire essence has made a contract with me.”

I immediately cut to the chase.

Jives frowned and said.

"I will tell the king. I can't decide this alone."

"I will wait."

Swiing!

Jives hurriedly left.

"Contractor. Have you touched our artefact?"

"Don't worry."

I handed the Hyacinth's Bow over to Kerpi who carefully accepted it.

"Thank you. The Water Spirit King will be very pleased. Oh, and..."

As a reward, Kerpi handed me some small stones.

"These are old stones from deep inside our lake. They are spirits that will soon awaken. If a contract is signed with them, they will grow rapidly according to the contractor's tendencies. They are children that the king highly prizes."

I took the stones and examined them carefully.

They certainly felt strange. In short, these stones were the seeds of a spirit.

“Well, I have to go back quickly. The king is waiting...I will come back with good news, Contractor.”

Kubeok!

Kerpi bowed her head and left.

Jives returned as she left.

Jives had a determined expression on his face.

"The story is over. The king wants to see you."

Fire Spirit King.

I didn't know a lot about him.

Except for the dark spirits, none of the others were involved with the fight between demons. Their enemies were the other spirits.

Although I had heard some rumours, it wouldn't be as helpful as seeing him in person.

‘I know Adonis tried to take over.’

The light and lightning spirits put up the most resistance. Adonis had broken through the limits and managed to occupy half of the Spirit World through a fierce struggle.

One of his enemies was the Fire Spirit King. His name...

‘Garrash.’

I nodded as I remembered.

I couldn’t help feeling a little nervous about finding out the difference between rumours and facts.

"The king doesn’t like waiting. He might be a bit rough, but please understand."

"Don't worry."

Rough words and behaviour could easily be overcome. From the beginning, I wasn’t the type of demon to pay attention to the tone of my opponent. I wouldn’t become aggressive just because of the tone.

“Contractor. We need to climb the stairs in the ‘Fire Spirit World’ to meet the king. All outside presences have to climb these

3,600 stairs.”

There was nothing in the air.

Then I could see countless stairs made of flames going up.

Not long after passing through the crack, I arrived at the place.

It seemed that climbing the 3,600 stairs was a trial. The glowing red stones kept burning.

It seemed like some sort of magical measure...the Fire Spirit King would be able to climb it without any incidents. Anyway, flames like these couldn't harm me.

Chiik!

While climbing the stairs, I heard something frying.

Indeed. If my intelligence was only 80 points then it would have been painful. However, my intelligence had already surpassed 100.

Jives was surprised that I could climb the stairs so casually.

"Even intermediate spirits find it hard to climb this easily. Is it due to the contract?"

"It is easy even without a contract."

The contract with the essence of fire did give me a feeling of comfort, but I could easily climb up even without the contract.

"Outside existences have been climbing this staircase for a long time. Other spirits also watch this place with curiosity. Why don't you shake their hands?"

As I climbed the stairs, I noticed numerous eyes watching me.

Numerous fire spirits were solely focusing their attention on me. I had wanted to talk to him quietly but...it seemed difficult to keep this a secret.

'The water has already been spilled. I should cement the relationship.'

That's right. After helping the fire and water spirits, the water had already been spilled. My intention was to block Adonis from rising up any further. It wouldn't hurt if I could construct a relationship with the fire spirits.

I shook hands with the fire spirits around me. They rose up from the ground to my level.

"The spirits are delighted. Contractor has an affinity to fire so they are more enthusiastic."

"Is that so?"

"It isn't needed for someone of my level, but how about contracting with a subordinate spirit? Depending on the contractor, the subordinate spirits can grow rapidly. It wouldn't be bad for the contractor."

Jives suggested when we reached the halfway point.

A contract with a subordinate spirit. Kerpi had also handed me some stones containing spirits. They wanted me to raise the spirits.

'I don't have interest in training spirits but...'

Jives' words were correct. It wouldn't be bad. I had stepped into the realm of transcendence so contracting with a few spirits wouldn't matter. At best, they would only gnaw away at a little bit of my magic. Even this would be offset by the 'Conqueror's Ring.'

As the magic power recovery efficiency increased sharply, it would exceed what the spirits consumed.

"Let me think about it."

I briefly replied.

Jives smiled with satisfaction.

"Maybe you can mention it to the king. Ask for a spirit seed. Contractor will be able to raise a very special and wonderful fire spirit."

"I will raise it as a bad person."

"Haha! Contractor, are you joking?"

I was serious. If the spirits grew to resemble me then they wouldn't have a normal personality.

I didn't bother saying anything.

I walked up the stairs for another 30 minutes.

The scene that appeared before me was quite amazing.

There were many flowers made of fireballs and a few dozen cerberus. The sun was so close that it gave off a feeling of pressure.

"Let's hurry. The light from the sun is very strong so the king will be in a bad temper."

"Is he a person who hates waiting?"

"Maybe...at any rate, Contractor. Follow me."

Jives increased his speed.

The Fire Spirit King Garrash.

He looked like a sturdy man with red hair and a beard. He wore a red cape, ten rings and expensive necklaces.

However, my perspective was a little different.

'Most of his items are epic grade.'

I inwardly panicked after examining Garrash with Mind's Eye. It was the first time I met him, but he was wearing really good items. Did he wear better items due to a prejudice against the Dark Spirit King who controlled the Demon World Auction?

Maybe Adonis would be perplexed by his appearance.

'His stats are the strongest among those I have seen.'

My heart jumped quickly.

I thought I was the strongest after returning to the Underground World...

I couldn't let go of my tension.

Name: Garrash

Occupation Fire Spirit King Title

* Ruler of Flames (Ex Epic, All stats +4, Full immunity against fire)

Stats

Strength 107 (+12) Intelligence 103(+7)

Agility 104 (+12) Stamina 104(+7)

Magic Power 105(+19)

Potential: (523+57/550)

Uniqueness: The ruler of the Fire Spirit World. As the strongest Fire Spirit King in generations, the fire spirits have tremendous trust in him.

Skill: Spring Sun (Epic), Sun Shield (Epic), Majestic Fire (Epic), Photosynthesis (Epic), Hellfire (Ex Epic), Advent of the Sun King (Ex Epic)

Skill and Item Effects: Sun Ring (Epic, Magic Power +5), Hellfire (Epic, Strength, Agility, Stamina and Magic Power +2), Burning Power Ring (Epic, Strength +5), Cirhan's Necklace (Epic, Intelligence +2, Agility +5), Majestic Shorin Armour (Epic, Magic Power +7), Ring of Last Breath (Ex U, All stats +1)

[Relative Comparison]

Garrash

Strength 119 Intelligence 110 Agility 116 Stamina 111 Magic 124
Potential (523+57/550)

Randolph Briggsiel

Strength 105 Intelligence 105 Agility 100 Stamina 107 Magic
110 Potential (434+93/550)

A total of almost 600 stat points!

‘Overwhelming’ was the only word to describe it.

Even if Adonis managed to break through the limit, it would take a lot for him to catch up with Garrash. It wouldn’t be impossible, but Garrash was rapidly expanding his sphere of influence.

‘That is why he is so rushed.’

Adonis. He wasn’t the strongest among the spirit kings. I could feel the difference after seeing Garrash.

In addition...the reason why the dark spirits were moving so hastily was explained. It was possible that they could pressure the dark spirits.

Therefore, Adonis had to feel impatient.

Seeing Garrash explained everything.

‘The sky above the sky.’

It was surprising that the Fire Spirit King was the strongest. I hadn't expected a presence that would surpass me. This was why I couldn't be complacent. I had to walk further along the road while holding the reins.

"You contracted with a great fire essence?"

Garrash laughed with his hands clasped behind his back.

"That is correct."

"Hrmm. Your contract with Ifrit is relevant to us. Welcome."

Cheek. Garrash extended his hand.

"I am grateful for your welcome."

From the beginning, I had thought about maintaining a favourable relationship with them.

After a short handshake, Garrash said.

"I will speak briefly. Cancel the contract."

My eyebrows furrowed. It wasn't unexpected but I never thought he would immediately ask. It seemed like he was rude and

impolite, just as Jives stated.

I started to talk quietly.

"Ifrit is located in my heart. You will have to use force if you want me to cancel the contract."

If the contract was forcibly cancelled, there would be negative effects. In particular, he was located in my heart, so there was a chance he could be caught up in the aftermath and die.

Garrash puffed up at my words. Fire filled the spacious room.

'Amazing magic power.'

Even I felt some pressure. It had been a long time since I experienced something like this. I had hardly felt such tension since returning to the past.

However, my intelligence and magic power weren't low. It was enough to strike back against Garrash.

Pride's flames emerged as I stepped closer to Garrash.

I was challenging him to try it.

'Anyway, he can't hurt me.'

This was the Fire Spirit World. The current location was its heart.

If there was a battle with Garrash then many of the spirits I saw whilst climbing up here would be destroyed.

As well as...I was a 'benefactor' to them. Garrash had to know this. In these situations, the king needed to act with dignity. Every word and action had value.

He wouldn't kill me after I returned something to him.

This was a type of test.

It was to check if I was a worthy person to contract with Ifrit.

Jjak!

Garrash clapped his hands.

At the same time, the intense aura in the room disappeared.

He spoke in an admiring tone.

"How great. A demon who has already stepped into the transcendent realm...however, it seems like it isn't a perfect

transcendence. There is a strong feeling of imbalance.”

Not all of my pure stats had crossed the wall. Maybe that was what he was referring to.

I turned off Pride’s flames.

“The test is over?”

Garrash laughed.

“You pass. You are a worthy contractor for the great fire. I don’t like that you are a demon. But based on what I heard, aren’t you taking a different route from the other demons?”

He had a completely different attitude from before. I was speechless. It meant Garrash acknowledged me.

I touched Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword.

“Devil. My goal is to beat all the grand dukes and become the devil.”

"Devil...I like underdogs. Most of them will fail. However, the ones that succeed would change the world. At any rate, you are Ifrit’s contractor. You are now a friend to the fire spirits. I would like to give you a gift...is there anything that you want?”

It was a gift after the test. I felt somewhat dissatisfied, but I wasn't going to refuse.

I couldn't return with empty hands after coming here.

So, I told him my desire without any hesitation.

"I want to receive a large number of fire spirit seeds. The first time...100,000 should be enough."

Chapter 168: Spirits (1)

100,000!

Although they were spirit seeds, that was an unreasonable number. Fairies and spirits were born a long time after being conceived. I asked for 100,000 while establishing a business relationship.

However, a small number was meaningless. Contracting to the lowest level spirits wouldn't be very helpful to me. A few things were possible, but it was highly unlikely.

However...

'I can steer them from behind. The Korean humans will act as a breakwater in the dungeon...'

Roy and Rose had already become the centre of the Korean people. The girin was actively supporting me so I could move them from behind.

My dungeon would become safer if the Korean Awakened contracted with the spirits. They would act as a breakwater if I needed to leave again.

Of course, a contract with the spirits had strict standards. They had to sincerely crave strength. Their desperation as they followed

me would touch the sky.

In addition...there might be achievements related to it.

I had many reasons for asking Garrash for the seeds.

There was no reason for him to refuse. The problem was how many seeds he would allow. It was an opportunity to recognize what he was willing to distribute.

I watched Garrash carefully as he slowly opened his mouth.

"That is an unusually large number. Won't it take a lot of time to raise 100,000 seeds?"

Garrash's point was correct, but the spirits would wake up quickly in the dungeon.

I said calmly.

"That won't be a problem."

Garrash gave a small smile.

"Okay. I will give them to you."

He surprisingly agreed. It didn't take that long.

"What do you want?"

"I want information. The Dark Spirit King. No...Adonis, what is the ultimate goal of the black frog?"

The black frog. It clearly showed how Garrash thought about Adonis. It wasn't strange, even if they were both kings.

'Is he asking because he really doesn't know?'

Apart from that, I frowned at his question.

Was Garrash asking because he really didn't know why the dark spirits attacked the fire and water spirits at the auction?

"Control of the Spirit World."

I threw a fastball. Garrash just hummed. He shook his head and declared.

"It is a primary goal. I wouldn't call it the ultimate one though. I wanted him to show me the 'system,' but he kept it a secret. Raising and lowering the rank, opening cracks, etc...the system is very unrealistic. I want to know what Adonis will ultimately do with that system."

Ahh.

I remembered hearing something similar.

After summoning the Cruel Commander Maxium, the seal around Earth was shaken and the fire and water spirits noticed the system.

Garrash seemed to have a lot of interest in the system.

‘The dark spirits. In particular, Adonis is trying to use the system.’

I hadn’t thought about it. The system applied to everyone involved in the game and couldn’t be owned by anyone.

In my previous life, I never heard rumours about Adonis trying to use the system. But...to be honest, it didn’t make sense that Adonis would try to control the entire Spirit World in the first place.

The Spirit World was wide. The number of spirits was immeasurable and there were many types. There were at least twenty spirit kings discovered.

On the other hand, Adonis was alone. Even if he used the system to break the limit, would he be able to cope with the entire Spirit World alone? He had the help of the points from the Demon World Auction, but it was still unreasonable.

Unlike the demons, the spirits didn't pay much attention to their enemies. If the 'contract' benefited them then the spirits would work together.

So...what if he tried to truly unite them using the system? I never heard of Adonis associating with other spirits so it was truly strange.

'The dark spirits are always eager to find loopholes in the system.'

In particular, they looked for things related to the crack.

They had previously used a loophole to open a small crack to contact me.

What if it was possible for them to freely open and close the crack?

It would be possible to separate each element. An alliance between spirits would become impossible and they would be defeated.

It wasn't impossible to open a hole in the world with a crack.

In my previous life, Adonis had ruled the Spirit World like Ariel Diablo ruled the Demon World. I didn't know what happened after that...maybe Adonis and the Spirit World started a war with Ariel who became the devil.

Was it an assumption?

Even if it wasn't the same, he would have achieved it in a similar manner.

Now I realized that Adonis was acting in a more complex manner.

Ruling the Spirit World was just a primary goal.

"I suppose he wants to become an all-powerful god."

God!

That was it.

Although I didn't know anything about gods, it wouldn't be a strange achievement for him. It was possible to become like a living god.

Adonis. He had quite a strong greed.

"You see it as well?"

Garrash's eyes flashed.

He continued.

"I am ignorant about the system and the game that all of you are playing. So I had to guess what Adonis' ultimate goal was."

He was now convinced.

Garrash's expression seemed like things had become more interesting now.

"As I said, I like looking at an underdog. It would be very exciting to see them show off their power while facing me. It isn't ripe yet...I will have to wait for him to break through."

In other words, he was waiting for Adonis to break through the limits.

I couldn't understand his way of thinking.

'He also isn't normal.'

Why would he allow an enemy to threaten him?

I couldn't understand it.

I would have struck the enemy before they became equal to me.

Yet he was deliberately allowing Adonis to grow.

No matter how I thought about it, Garrash really wasn't normal.

There was a moment of silence. In the end, Garrash said.

"Randolph Briggsiel. I will send the seeds through Jives. I had a good time. And...it is sad news for Ifrit, but the ninth fire has entered the 'consciousness' to make his flames stronger. He will be asleep for the next three years."

"So a Great Fire Essence isn't complete?"

"The ninth fire was the last to manifest. At any rate...you can ask Ifrit the rest."

Ifrit was currently trapped by the Heart of the Hell Monarch. I was hesitant to take him out because I didn't know what would happen.

It wasn't important so there was no need to take risks.

"I am expecting the 100,000 seeds."

I turned around at these words. Garrash stared at my back and murmured.

“An interesting demon. I will watch your path.”

I reflected on the meeting after returning to my dungeon.

‘I don’t have a good feeling.’

Garrash. He was strong. A strength that could match the heights of the grand dukes in my previous life. However, he wasn’t fierce towards Adonis.

In the end, Garrash gave Adonis a chance to eat him.

‘Adonis. By now, he should have broken through the limits using the Essence of Origin.’

Time was needed to break through the limit and fill up the potential. Based on Garrash’s attitude, he would give Adonis that time. If Adonis started a full-fledged attack, would Garrash really be able to stop him?

‘I just thought about becoming the devil.’

It definitely made sense. I would laugh as I became the devil. That was my dream and it hadn’t changed.

I had never thought about what would happen after I became the devil. It was in the distant future so I hadn’t prepared for it.

But now it was different. I had time to prepare as much as possible.

Adonis was likely to be a potential enemy. I already turned him against me to a certain extent through the contracts with the fire and water spirits...

‘There is only one conclusion.’

My eyes shone.

I gripped Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword.

‘I have to become stronger than I am now.’

The shock from encountering Garrash was still fresh in my mind. I might be the strongest among the demons, but that might not always be the case.

It was just like the situation with Okullos.

So...I had to keep becoming stronger until there were no more enemies left.

Then I would have nothing to fear from Adonis and the Spirit World.

Garrash seemed to have acknowledge my strength.

In just three days, he sent 100,000 seeds through Jives.

Most of them were half burnt tree branches or leaves that had a weak vitality.

“Contractor. Don’t treat these children badly. If they are raised properly and sent back to us then you will receive a huge reward.”

Jives lectured me. It was a sign of his affection for the seeds.

"Is it necessary to return them?"

"The basics will be according to the contractor. However...think carefully when deciding. We have a lot of treasures. There are legendary things that the other spirit kings can't touch."

Garrash had been wearing remarkable items.

By the way...it was a little surprising that there were legendary ranked items.

'He is trying to entice me.'

I knew the effect of legendary ranked items so I couldn't help being attracted.

"Understood."

"Well, I have passed you the seeds so I will go back now. I want to rest a little bit."

He was tired from constantly working in the last three days. I nodded and Jives returned to the Spirit World.

"Master. What is all this?"

Yihi was waiting for me.

I replied in a calm voice.

"Seeds of the spirits."

"Ah! That is why I can feel fire magic power. Wah! It is the first time I've seen so many seeds."

Yihi flew around the seeds.

After a while, she returned to my shoulders with an unknown smile.

"Yihihi. Master. Are you going to leave all of them in the dungeon?"

"I will make them manifest first."

"Then ~ can Yihi take some?"

I was nervous about what Yihi would do, but there were plenty of them.

"Take only three."

Just in case, I limited the number.

"Yihihihhi! Then ~ can Yihi pick the seeds?"

I shrugged and said.

"Go ahead."

"Yihihihihhi!"

Yihi's laugh filled the dungeon.

Chapter 169: Spirits (2)

I was an amateur when it came to birthing the seeds of the spirits. They would wake up eventually, but a portion of it depended on the composition of the environment.

I immediately called Chrisley. She was the only one who had information about spirits. Yihi seemed like she was familiar with them, but I didn't want to ask her. It would be better to listen carefully to Chrisley.

“...Fire spirits. This is the first time I've seen so many seeds.”

Chrisley's eyes were wide with surprise.

Yihi had a similar reaction. However, Chrisley stared straight into my eyes and said.

“My Dungeon Master. Will you give birth to all of them?”

“That's right. What's the matter?”

"If so many spirits are born simultaneously in one place...there might not be any magic power remaining.”

“The magic power of the dungeon is sufficient.”

The rating of the dungeon had risen due to the Tree of Origin. It

could handle quite a lot of magic power consumption.

But Chrisley shook her head.

"The total magic power might be fine, but the fire magic will evaporate greatly. If the balance goes down then there will be many problems maintaining the dungeon."

Indeed...I was convinced by that.

The dungeon was made up of various types of magic power. I needed to consider all the properties of the magic power. If one of them was scarce, the balance would collapse and affect the creatures.

"What should I do?"

I asked her directly.

The other person was Chrisley. Her mind was quite good, her skills reliable and she often helped me. Right now, I didn't have any clues about the situation.

Chrisley responded without hesitation.

"Master should stay next to the fire spirits. Originally, Master has Pride's flames and now there is the fire essence...both are pure fire magic power. There will be some dehydration symptoms every

time a spirit is born but...you should have enough to feed them.”

In the end, I was the answer.

I had absorbed the Great Fire Essence. There were only nine of them in the Spirit World. In addition, I had Pride’s flames so it was appropriate for me to be their source of fire magic power.

“I will be by their side. Does it have to be all day long?”

“Yes. It will take some time for the seeds to familiarize and react to you. Master will have a good influence on the spirits.”

Chrisley was adamant. I felt a certain amount of relaxation after hearing it. It was better than receiving a nail in the side after starting.

This hadn’t occurred in my previous life.

I wasn’t familiar with this and had to hope for the best.

Although Yihi...her nature wasn’t significantly different from in my previous life. There was nothing else to be said.

Chrisley was an outstanding dark elf so she could easily handle things.

"Do you know when they will be born?"

However, I was busy. I couldn't only take care of the spirit seeds. Although I had the confidence that I could do well...that was something else involved. Right now I had 'work' I needed to do.

"Given the maturity of the seeds and what I previously saw...I think it should take a month at most."

"One month is too long."

"My Dungeon Master. Leave everything else to me. I can control Roy, Rose and Maxium to some extent."

Chrisley laughed.

I thought about it.

One month. The current situation on Earth was changing every day.

It might be wise to stay in the dungeon for a month.

'I won't be exposed and I might be able to beat a tired enemy.'

It was a strategy. Furthermore, I could believe in Chrisley.

'The spirits are worth it.'

100,000 spirits.

It was worth staying for a month when thinking of the benefits that would be given when they were born. In the meantime, I might be able to develop myself.

“Chrisley. I will leave it to you. You have to closely manage them. Maxium should be okay, but there are a lot of variables involved with Roy and Rose.”

In particular, Roy and Rose needed to be carefully watched. Even though Rose was smart, she was still a young dark elf. They were variables that I had no knowledge of.

Right now, Korea was rapidly changing. Many people were gathering and Seoul was recovering again. Technology was replaced with those powered by the cores and a new government and country were being built.

It was possible to move the humans in the desired direction with Roy and Rose. That's why I gave Roy the magic sword.

I gave them instructions, but it was unlikely that the work would be completed before the spirits were born.

“My Dungeon Master. Don't worry. Everything will go in the direction that Master wants.”

“I will trust you.”

This was enough.

Afterwards, Chrisley withdrew.

I turned my head and glanced at the seeds.

‘Then...’

The faster the spirits were born, the better it would be.

I needed to put all my effort into it.

I spread fire magic power around the seeds.

I was dubious but would try this method first.

I sat down in the centre of the seeds.

I slowly covered the seeds with the power of Pride’s flames and the fire essence.

-Randolph Brigsiel's fire magic power has been applied

throughout the floor.

The seeds of the spirits have responded. Their egos are slowly awakening. Awareness rate: 18.5%.

-The power of fire is too strong! 358 spirits have been destroyed without being born.

-The power of fire is too weak! The awareness rate has dropped.

-The power of fire is adequate. The awareness rate has increased significantly. Awareness rate: 19.9%...

It was harder than I thought to maintain the magic power. It was important not to apply too much or too little. In particular, I frowned when the message stating that spirits had been destroyed appeared.

‘It is hard.’

I would rather wield a sword wildly. It was annoying to sit still and control my magic power. It was no different from torture.

‘The awakening rate is slow.’

Besides, that was another point. Chrisley had said a month, but two weeks had passed and the awareness rate was only approximately 20%.

At this rate, it would take more than two months. Especially as the awareness rate decreased when the percentage rose.

My concentration plunged slightly after 14 days. I realized how hard it was to steer the magic power.

‘I have entered the realm of transcendence, but it is only halfway. Currently, I am no different from a strong child. My ability to move magic power efficiently is weak.’

I had to admit it. I thought I was slowly growing stronger, but I wasn’t at that level yet.

I needed to raise all my stats over 100. I was ignorant about how to control this strength since I had never experienced it in my previous life.

‘Originally, I naturally controlled my magic power while fighting. But fighting isn’t the only way that I can become stronger. I needed this process to realize what I am lacking.’

It was possible to have a breakthrough when there was ‘enlightenment.’

It would have been impossible with only fighting.

Enlightenment was an important part of it. I only discovered it recently.

'My magic power is too rough. It is like a wild horse. It only knows how to run.'

I thought about what I was lacking and came to this conclusion.

The regulation of my magic power wasn't appropriate for the spirit seeds.

If there was no roughness then the awareness rate would go up.

The seeds were eggs. they needed warm air to be hatched.

'Warm magic power...'

I needed to temper the qualities of the magic power. Controlling the properties. It didn't suit my nature.

'I can't give up just because it doesn't suit me.'

If it didn't fit then I needed to force it. Giving up meant there would be no development. I needed to smash through this

challenge to move forward.

Of course it was difficult, but I would eventually get the hang of it.

I thought about the time I felt warm magic power.

'Earth's protector Asis.'

A human. She was an Awakened from the United States. She knew how to move the land. At first glance, she was similar to Okullos but their fundamental natures were different.

She really disliked fighting. Whether it was plants or humans...she even trembled when seeing a demon get hurt. She couldn't help not wanting to fight.

Her magic power was the warmest I'd ever felt.

She thought she could redeem everyone. Eventually, she was killed by a vampire due to this, but she had many great accomplishments.

Asis had something.

I wondered what it was.

‘A presence of mind.’

Was it because she loved and cared for people?

I laughed at the idea.

Imagining myself like that caused goosebumps to form. I honestly couldn't imagine it.

I shook my head.

I wasn't generous like Asis. If that was necessary then it would be an impossible challenge. I couldn't change the way I had lived my whole life.

So...I had to find my own way.

‘Wake up. I will lead you.’

I stared at the seeds with a cynical expression. I needed to make my own path. The spirits would be those who followed me. This was the best I could do.

Pyorong!

Pyororong!

At that moment, the seeds shook like wind was blowing.

-The fire magic power has warmed. The awareness rate has increased significantly. Awareness rate: 32.7%

-The magic power of 'Randolph Briggsiel' has increased by one.

The conversion of a simple idea.

However, the awareness rate increased by 10%.

'This is the right direction.'

In addition, my magic power increased by one.

It was amazing. Once magic power exceeded 90 points, it wouldn't rise easily. My pure magic power was 95 points.

I felt a little bit more at ease.

This direction was correct so there was no more need to feel urgent.

Chapter 170: Spirits (3)

One week later.

Exactly three weeks after I started, the spirits began to wake up.

Pyorong. Pyororong.

The fire spirits that just woke up didn't have a concrete form. After springing from the seeds, they looked like small fireballs.

-Great achievement! For the first time, a demon has succeeded in creating a spirit.

300,000pt will be paid.

900 achievement points will be added.

It wasn't easy to achieve the messages. I watched as one or two spirits woke up.

The born spirits flocked to me like they already knew me. They hovered around me like they were asking where they should go.

The tenth, hundredth, thousandth...the spirits started being born.

It took three more days for the last seed to wake up and I didn't budge from my position until it did.

Finally, the last spirit flew around me and another achievement appeared.

-Congratulations. Of the 100,000 seeds, you have succeeded in giving birth to 99,318.

-Incredible achievement! 1,986,360pt will be paid.
1,800 achievement points will be added.

The 'Spirit Communication' skill has been added. For a more detailed description of Spirit Communication, please check the status window.

I received a new skill called Spirit Communication. I immediately opened the status window to check the skill.

-Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive)

The spirits will react to each other. This is a privilege only given to those who have created numerous spirits.

* When the spirit evolves, compensation will be paid

according to the 'rank.'

Lowest Class -> Low: 500pt

Low -> Intermediate: 5,000pt

Intermediate -> Advanced: 500,000pt, 500 achievement points

Advanced -> High Class: Residual stat point +1

** High Class -> Spirit King: The skill will change to 'Spirit King Communication.'

The skill wouldn't benefit me at the moment, but my expectations were very high. It wasn't limited to me. The skill was only epic ranked, but the benefits were worth it.

Of course, evolution wasn't easy.

But if it occurred quickly...the approximately 100,000 spirits would be my strength.

'There is definitely a limit by myself.'

Almost 100,000 spirits had been born. The contract itself wasn't a very big burden for me. From the moment the contract was signed, the spirits would eat my magic power. However, I had a sufficient amount after stepping into the realm of transcendence.

The problem was...

‘The spirits need numerous contractors for faster growth.’

...That was it.

Spirits would evolve through many types of magic power and experience. There was a limit to what I could do alone. Special measures were needed to get them to a higher rank.

I touched my jaw.

‘A contract with the spirits. The information related to it is widely spread through all the species. However...Earth’s humans are ignorant about this point.’

Who said an equal contract was required? Regarding contracts, there was a difference between the person who knew about it and the person who didn’t.

If I had to contract with someone, I could set up separate terms. Ignorant and desperate people would be forced to accept the terms.

‘In short...I can make a double contract.’

I folded my arms and smiled coldly. I could make a contract where I was the ‘lord’ and they were the ‘wealth.’ Once the spirits grew, I would be able to use them completely and I would have a

few more cards to use.

Touching someone's contract with a spirit was forbidden in the Spirit World, but Garrash had given me the seeds and it could mean the difference between life and death. Besides, this dungeon wasn't the Spirit World. The spirits born in my territory thought of me as their master.

It was purely up to me if I wanted to return the spirits to Garrash. He had no right to forcibly reclaim them.

My thoughts ended here.

Pyorong. Pyororong.

The atmosphere relaxed and the spirits started to circulate the space. It was similar to childcare so I had some concerns but...

‘It will be fun to guess which spirit will evolve first.’

It felt like I was pushed into a corner.

Every time I moved, the 100,000 spirits moved with me. The scene was like a huge fireball. The creatures that saw me shrank back with wide eyes.

"This is a little annoying."

The third day. I couldn't help releasing a bitter sound.

I hadn't expected that they would move so closely next to me.

They only moved away for a few seconds. It was like they were insecure and afraid that I would disappear. The spirits were still mentally fragile and thought they would fade away if they looked away from me for a moment.

'I can't go outside the dungeon...'

I turned and stared at the spirits.

They starting moving more actively like they were happy I was looking at them.

It was good they were happy to see me, but I couldn't help worrying.

"Yihihi. Fire-One, Fire-Two and Fire-Three! Align left. Align right. Uhuh, your response is slow. Once again, align left, align right!"

Once I reached the top floor, I found Yihi near the Dungeon Core.

Yihi was training the three spirits she chose.

"Two and Three! Are you doing this on purpose? Don't you see how lazy your movements are? Once again left...no, right, no, left, no, right! Yihihihhi!"

The three fireballs followed Yihi's instructions.

It was equivalent to hard labour, but Yihi just giggled happily.

'She managed to give birth to the spirits.'

I didn't understand, but Yihi was more innocent than good. Her definition of evil was small and she was just concerned with playing. It was also a type of warmth.

"This is fun, yihhi. The three brothers are following Yihi. Now, do it faster. Start!"

Shuuuuong!

Yihi flew quickly in the air. She was followed by three fireballs. The fire spirits were still unfamiliar with flying but Yihi was merciless.

Duk!

Yihi hit my chest while looking at the spirits following her.

"Ya!"

Yihi rubbed her forehead and pouted.

"Aish, what the?"

"What are you doing?"

"Uh...Master!"

Yihi blinked her large eyes. She quickly cleared her thoughts and pointed at the fireballs following her.

"I am training them!"

"Training?"

"Yihi is teaching the children to fly~"

This was what she meant by training.

Although it was unreasonable to expect something...I turned and looked at Yihi's spirits.

'Their growth is very fast.'

They could already fly faster. Compared to the three of them, it was like my spirits were crawling. It was unexpected since Yihi birthed them in a similar time period.

“Yihi. Do you know anything about the growth of spirits?”

“Yihi doesn’t know much. Well...ah! The Tree of Origin loves spirits. He told Yihi to move them like this.”

“Tree of Origin.”

I couldn’t communicate with the Tree of Origin. But it became possible for Yihi after she was promoted to an Origin Fairy.

I needed to consider that the Tree of Origin had an effect on the growth of the spirits.

“Master. Do you want to use Yihi’s training? Yihi is very capable ~ I can train you.”

“There is no need.”

I replied. Yihi was unlikely to be very helpful.

“Hiing...”

“Say hello to Chrisley. If there is progress then report it to me.”

A showdown was being built up in Seoul, Korea. When the humans came to Seoul, they divided into the group that followed Roy and Rose and the group that didn't. I couldn't leave the solution to them, so Chrisley had been dispatched.

“Yep. Master.”

I moved after Yihi's reply.

It was to see the Tree of Origin.

“Once again! Align left, align right! Roll around once! Good. Yihihihhi!”

The sound of Yihi's laughter rang through the dungeon.

There was no malice in it, but it was like a disaster for the three spirits.

The spirits moved more actively as I neared the Tree of Origin.

The branches and roots of the Tree of Origin shook, embracing the spirits.

‘It looks good.’

They played well.

I climbed to the top of the Tree of Origin and watched them.

‘Hopefully I can move further apart from them.’

I didn’t look away from the spirits. They still didn’t move far away, but it was better than usual.

At that moment, the spirits moved in unison and started looking for me.

-17 spirits are filled with anxiety. Please be careful. It is highly likely that a spirit without an ego properly formed will disappear from the anxiety.

Chapter 171: Spirits (4)

‘It isn’t working.’

I descended the Tree of Origin to an uproar.

Woorururu!

Approximately 100,000 spirits flocked at once.

The small fireballs the size of a baby’s fist moved in unison.

However, it was a bitter sight for me.

‘The contract hasn’t been formed yet...’

Was it because it was shortly after they were born? Or the way they were born had an influence. It could be both.

‘It can’t be helped.’

This was an investment for the future. It would ease a little bit once a contract was signed and they developed ego. Right now, the spirits were too unstable without the contract.

I stood still and stared at the Tree of Origin. Then the spirits started playing with the Tree of Origin.

-Name.

-Give me a name.

Four days afterwards. Once the spirits had been born for exactly one week, two thin voices were heard in my head.

'It will appear in the future.'

Two of the fireballs had formed children's faces.

They were twice as big as the other spirits. There was certainly no comparison.

-Give me a name.

-I would love to have a name.

The two fireballs spun in the air. Their attitudes seemed desperate.

'Does it originally take so long to give them names?'

I tilted my head to the side.

This was the process of naming for a spirit. It took a very long time after the spirits were born to be given a name.

‘Weird.’

At any rate, I needed to name them.

“Rei, Sera.”

The spirits starting to run around while saying their names.

-I like it. Rei!

-My name is Sera.

Hwaaak!

Shortly afterwards, the two fireballs blazed with an intense light.

-Names have been given to the spirits.

The lowest class ‘Rei’ and ‘Sera’ have risen one level.

They are the first spirits to be given names. They will have a larger growth than the other spirits.

-If a contract is signed, 'Rei' and 'Sera' will follow you more sincerely.

1,000pt will be paid.

After the short message, I noticed change in the two spirits.

After a while...the two spirits greeted me with changed appearances.

They looked like little children. Their size was still smaller than Yihi but they definitely had 'egos.'

"Rei, Sera. Let's make a contract."

The only thing left was to make a contract. They immediately responded without hesitation.

-Okay.

-Sera will do it.

"I will set the terms of the contract."

The spirits instinctively knew about contracts. It was like learning how to walk and run. Forming a contract was natural for them.

I couldn't help feeling tense.

However...their response was unexpected.

-If it is Father's will.

-I'm at your disposal.

I started frowning.

I heard an unimaginable word.

Father...

The spirits didn't have any parents. The higher ranked spirits just gave them names. The word 'Father' didn't fit with the nature of the spirits.

If there was one reason, it might be Ifrit. He was the fire in charge of 'dominance.' I devoured his magic power and gained his skill.

I tried to restore a calm expression. It wasn't bad, but I hadn't expected it. If the spirits followed me sincerely then my power would greatly increase. The contents of the contract could also be tailored to my taste, so it was like killing two birds with one stone.

"You should gain more experience with contracts. But...until you grow to a certain extent, you will need someone to light the way."

-Father's words are correct.

-I am still lacking. Please tell me.

Rei and Sera. The two spirits laughed and emitted warm fire.

"I will light the way. However, there is a limit to the basic contract. I will modify the contents of the contract."

I checked again just in case. Matters related to the contract needed to be confirmed several times. Especially if it was a one-sided modification.

It was normal to placate them...

-Father's words are right!

-Sera thinks so as well.

It seemed like not much work was needed.

‘Hmmm.’

It wasn't just a title, but an infinite faith in me. It was a blind faith I found difficult to understand. They believed in me from the moment they were born. Was the impact of 'domination' that big?

I took a deep breath and said.

"...This will be the contents of the contract."

I spent a while modifying the contents of the contract.

A double contract. I set conditions that would establish myself as the 'lord' and others as the 'wealth.'

No, I was greedy and went a little further.

My commands were absolute and I could terminate the contracts with other people.

-Father. Will you do it now?

-Then form a contract with Sera?

The spirits were fundamentally tied by the contract. I would now set off their fundamental instincts. Even so, there was no hesitation. It was a good idea to form a contract.

So far, the spirits looked completely different from the ones that

I knew.

I nodded, causing Rei and Sera to immediately pull out the seal for the contract.

Small letters made of fire formed on the bodies of the spirits. The basic contract and the modifications I made were there.

-Randolph Briggsiel! My father. Will you sign a contract with Rei?

-Daddy. What about Sera?

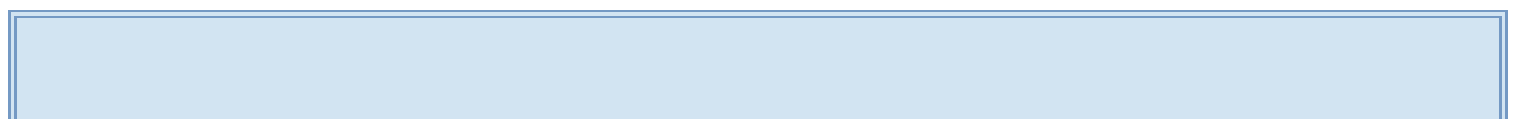
“...Okay.”

It was an unfamiliar atmosphere.

It was similar to the time I made the contract with Yihi, but completely different as well.

I occasionally felt it with Chrisley but...I was currently being bombarded with these feelings from the spirits.

After I finished speaking, the letters on their bodies burned up. Then the Tree of Origin wrapped its branches around the two spirits.



-The low class spirits 'Rei' and 'Sera' have formed a contract with Randolph Briggsiel.

The Tree of Origin has blessed the two spirits. An Essence of Origin has been consumed in the aftermath.

-The low class spirits 'Rei' and 'Sera' have successfully evolved into intermediate spirits!

-Due to the blessing from the Essence of Origin, they have a chance to obtain a higher 'rank.'

-The spirits can communicate with the contractor for growth. Conversely, if the communication is weak then there isn't a high chance of growth.

10,000pt will be paid.

After they emerged from the branches, Rei and Sera were approximately 1.5 times larger. Compared to their development, the other fireballs still had a long way to go.

-Father. Please contract with the other children.

-Sera is also okay with this.

When I turned my head, almost 100,000 spirits were gathered around the Tree of Origin. They instinctively approached after feeling Rei and Sera make the contract.

‘It is my job to name them.’

It was a strange problem.

Maybe that’s why Yihi named them ‘Fire-One, Fire-Two and Fire-Three.’

I worried over it. Anyway, the system messages stated that ‘communication’ played a role in the growth of the spirits. I guessed that they might disappear without this connection.

Of course, I couldn’t memorize all of it but I needed to give them names.

‘Crazy.’

It didn’t take long to realize that this was the wrong choice.

By the time I finished all the contracts, three days had passed. Only 500 spirits reached low class and none were intermediate class like Rei and Sera.

I couldn’t ignore the blessing from the Tree of Origin. They

reached intermediate rank due to the Essence of Origin. However, that wasn't all.

They also got a chance to increase their 'rank.' In other words, they could qualify to become a spirit king eventually.

I would invest one or two more essences if I could.

'I also have the seeds that Kerpi handed me.'

The water spirit Kerpi.

I had forgotten about the stones that she gave me.

It had been buried in my memories due to the fire spirits.

'The prized seeds of the Water Spirit King...'

I pulled out the stones. There were exactly five of them.

Kerpi had mentioned the Water Spirit King when she handed it over to me. I hadn't heard the story of the Water Spirit King, but there had to be a reason for giving me the seeds.

I could feel a stronger vitality compared to the fire spirits.

'Was it due to my bag? There is no change.'

Due to being in my bag, they weren't affected by the fire magic power at all. I placed the five stones on the ground.

-Father. What is this?

-Did I look like that Father?

Ray and Sera led the rest of the spirits around me.

Their natures were opposite of each other.

Rei spoke carefully while Sera reminded me of an immature child.

Due to the clear difference in personality among them, the 100,000 spirits also divided into two groups. The phenomenon was surprising, but the competition also helped their growth.

There would be some side effects from the antagonistic nature. However, I was certain that benefits would also be demonstrated. But perhaps due to the nature of fire, more spirits were gathered towards Sera than Rei. The ratio was approximately 6:4.

"Water spirits dwell in these seeds."

I glanced at both of them to check their reaction.

Rei and Sera were unusual compared to other normal spirits. Water was opposite to fire so it was normal to hate them...

The two of them approached the stones without hesitation.

Their faces were filled with curiosity. No apparent dislike could be seen.

-These children will be the youngest.

-A younger sibling? Sera doesn't hate that.

-Father. I want to see them soon. Can I help?

-Come quickly. Play with me.

Their interest was great. The spirits were watching the stones more closely than I was.

'I don't have to do it alone.'

The fire spirits were derived from my magic power. Their magic power wasn't significantly different from mine so there would be a good effect if they helped.

"Sincere devotion...look after them well."

The words were filled with sincerity. They felt weird in my mouth. I felt awkward since it was my first time saying such things.

However, my message was communicated to Rei and Sera, who nodded.

-Leave it to me.

-Sera will do it.

In this case, my thoughts were right. They started to look after the water spirit seeds with gleaming eyes.

Three days later.

The stones cracked open like eggs and water spirits were born.

-Water spirits have been born under the care of numerous spirits.

Originally they would be destroyed due to the loss of harmony, but the magic power of 'Randolph Briggsiel' has finely balanced it.

The limits have increased significantly. They are fundamentally water spirits, but they contain a weak fire

power.

The title ‘Balanced Water Spirits (Epic)’ has been acquired.

Chapter 172: Spirits (5)

Bbooooh...

Similarly to the fire spirits, the water spirits were in the form of water droplets. They were frightened and didn't come closer.

There was a strong atmosphere in the surroundings.

-Don't be scared. I am Rei.

-Sera! Your unni.

Rei and Sera extended their hands.

After a while, the five droplets slowly approached and took their hands.

-Father! Please name these children. It is bad to have no name.

-That's right.

Name. Another name.

Just a few days ago, I had spent time thinking of almost 100,000 names. It was just five more, but I didn't want to go through the process of naming again.

“Water-One, Water-Two, Water-Three, Water-Four, Water-Five.”

Yihi had given me a very helpful way of naming.

Yihi might be a seer.

At first I had laughed, but Fire-One, Fire-Two and Fire-Three weren't disobedient.

-...Pretty names.

—.....I won't say anything.

The two spirits replied shortly but I didn't care.

I made a contract with the born spirits but it was too early to release them. They needed more capabilities to adapt to the world.

My influence there was necessary. The spirits were particularly sensitive to my mood.

But I was always cynical so it was difficult to change my attitude. A majority of demons had this attitude, and I had always lived my life my own way.

‘Normally people would move to meet me.’

It was better than adjusting myself to match someone else.

However, the spirits were very sensitive so I needed to handle them subtly.

As time went on, Rei and Sera became increasingly difficult. It was a bad omen.

‘Changing the way I am for others.’

Was that possible?

If it helped then I would become more friendly. I’d actually done it many times. However, the spirits would recognize it as ‘acting.’ They would notice it was false and keep an even greater distance.

I was busy thinking about this.

At that moment, a few messages appeared in front of me.

-The Origin Fairy ‘Yihi’ has suffered a great blow to the soul.

In the past few years, ‘Yihi’ has been supporting the ‘dungeon’ and the ‘Tree of Origin.’ The aftermath has caused a depletion in the soul.

-Be careful. The fairy is the foundation of the dungeon. So if she disappears, the dungeon won't be safe.

I frowned. It was an abrupt message. It was related to Yihi so I couldn't do nothing. Yihi hadn't said anything.

I could somewhat tolerate it, but Yihi's nature meant that she wouldn't be able to hide this. Somehow it was all over her face.

In other words, it meant that Yihi hadn't anticipated this would happen.

‘Her soul is lacking...’

The area of the soul wasn't fully explored. Magicians, alchemists, etc., all tried. I only had a vague understanding of it.

It was surprising that I hadn't noticed after entering the realm of transcendence.

-The soul depletion is becoming severe. 28.2% -> 28.1%

‘There is no time to be playing around.’

I shook my head and immediately moved. Yihi's location was obvious.

The garden.

It was a place that Yihi had secretly made.

It was on the very outskirts of the 32nd floor. It wasn't a burden for me so I hadn't paid attention to the garden. In my previous life, I had gotten rid of the garden without stepping into it.

It wasn't inspiring so I never needed to enter.

But it couldn't be helped now that there was a problem.

On the outskirts of the 32nd floor, a small forest spread out for 100 metres. There were rare trees, grasses and flowers from Earth. Several bugs and deer caught my eye.

Normally I would say 'she managed to gather all this.' However, my eyes were directed towards the heart of the forest.

The Flower of Eternity. The item obtained from the Demon World Auction was planted in the heart of the forest. Yihi was collapsed next to it.

Three fireballs were flying around Yihi. They were the fire spirits that Yihi took.

'It isn't too late.'

Yihi's appearance was blurrier than usual. It was like she was lacking in several areas. It was a sign that her physical power was lost and her presence was fading.

But that would only happen if I couldn't resolve it in time.

I hastily approached Yihi and immediately injected magic power into her.

I was the master of this dungeon and she was the fairy. If she was weakened then she could recover through my magic power.

However, there was no reaction. She seemed to come back for a moment, but soon became transparent again.

Why?

What should I do?

I agonized over it in my head.

I held Yihi in one hand and headed to the top floor.

She was a fairy of the Dungeon Core so it could help her.

‘No...’

I placed her on the Dungeon Core. However, the light from the core was weak. Once the light disappeared, I had a strong feeling that Yihi would be gone as well.

“Chrisley, Julliom...Oswen. And all the lich and shamans.”

I used the function of the core while injecting magic power into it at the same time.

"Come to the top floor right now."

500 talented creatures gathered.

Some of them were hostiles creatures who met for the first time on the top floor.

Kobold priests, orc shamans, lich, goblin magicians, etc...

The thing they all had in common was that they studied ‘magic.’ Magic and spells. A power to make things not exist. The soul was in a similar area of study.

In particular, there were very few that became experts in the area of the soul. Even if they read and studied the ‘soul’, the results were very different.

Still, I summoned all of them.

I had the right as the Dungeon Master.

“Do you recognize these symptoms?”

I lifted Yihi up and asked.

Yihi was still breathing but she wasn't conscious.

She looked like she was just sleeping, except for the blurriness.

I was ignorant about research into the soul. I hadn't studied it. I had never felt the need. I humbly admitted it and gathered all of them together.

I wasn't stupid enough to hold onto my pride. I couldn't afford to lose my fairy. There would definitely be those who could read more deeply than me in this area.

It would be a success if anyone recognized her symptoms.

But no one opened their mouths.

"Is there really no one? It is fine even if it is a story."

"Soul...chwiik! Weak."

One of the orc shamans opened its mouth.

I gave it a look that said 'I know.' Still, one of the 500 creatures had started speaking.

"The soul is weak? Is that all?"

"Chwiik! I don't know."

The orc shaman's answer missed the mark. I couldn't help but feel disappointed.

The silence lasted for a while. No one could carelessly come forward.

They all knew that my mood was bad.

In case they didn't know, I decided to reveal more details.

"The dungeon fairy is now in a critical condition. She is fading due to her soul being weak. Are any of you aware of a method to restore the soul?"

I didn't care if they didn't recognize it, as long as they knew something.

Yihi was in this state due to soul depletion. If I could solve this then Yihi would return to normal.

But the reaction was the same. Indeed...it seemed like not many magicians and shamans studied the soul.

In the meantime, I had neglected to invest in the field of magic. I had thought it was better to raise their strength. However, it certainly was shocking that everyone except for one orc shaman was silent.

"How terrible."

I bitterly muttered.

I thought I could solve this, but I was stuck here.

South Korea's dungeon was important. My main base was here. With my strength, it would be simple to occupy another dungeon. But it wasn't that simple. The Tree of Origin, the higher dungeon rating and other benefits from the South Korean dungeon would evaporate.

The heavy atmosphere weighed down on the creatures' shoulders. All of them hastily stared at the floor.

The moment that I was about to turn away, Oswen came

forward.

"Your Majesty. The soul is the final goal of the creator of a homunculus. Maybe Gaparam would have an idea."

Ahh. It was like that. Oswen was right.

It was the job of an alchemist to create a fake soul for the homunculus. The lich who was making a homunculus would know the soul better than anyone.

So why didn't he come out?

Gaparam had an unsure expression on his face. He glared at Oswen.

"Gaparam."

"...I can't heal a weak soul."

"Is there really no way?"

"The soul that has accumulated for a long time is unique in itself. It can't be replaced or filled. It might be destroyed if forcibly refilled or something other than the fairy will be made."

"I am connected to the fairy's soul."

In order to make it more clear, dangerous words emerged from my mouth.

The fact that a fairy was connected to a Dungeon Master's soul was top secret information.

It meant the Dungeon Master could be hurt through the fairy.

But now wasn't the time to think about that. Rather, it was better to explain it.

Gaparam just shook his head.

"It is a pity but...soul exchange is impossible. There are no possibilities. If it is possible, it would be in an area completely different from established alchemy and science. It might be possible for a god?"

This was why he didn't want to come forward.

Only negative words were heard.

Gaparam actually looked sorry.

I understood his mindset.

-The soul depletion is becoming severe. 27% -> 26.9%

“Nothing is impossible. I just haven’t found it. One of the 500 minds here might come up with a way.”

"...It isn't a request but an order."

All the creatures including Gaparam closed their mouths and watched me anxiously.

"I will give you three days. Find out as much as you can. If you need anything then tell me immediately."

I turned around and left.

-Father is very sad.

-I want Father to laugh.

-He isn't laughing.

-Sometimes good feelings emerged from him. I liked that.

The spirits. In particular, the fire spirits became sulky.

-Is there something we can do?

-Father will be happy.

The spirits hurriedly flew to the side of their 'Father.' They tried all sorts of charms, such as singing and body kissing, but Father's feelings didn't change at all.

It was similar to a feeling of grief. The spirits couldn't stand this. They became depressed.

-The fairy called Yihi is important to Father.

-We need to fix the fairy to make Father feel better.

-Her soul is weak.

-What is the soul?

Unfortunately, not a lot of time had passed since the spirits were born. No matter how fast their growth, their knowledge was still lacking. Besides, the soul was a complex and difficult matter.

In the end, Rei and Sera who had been listening quietly came forward.

-We need to fill the empty spot left by Fairy-nim.

-Clean the dungeon.

-We need to manage the creatures...

-Play with the Tree of Origin.

The work that the spirits could do was extremely limited.

However, the almost 100,000 spirits decided that taking action was better than staying still.

I was improvising while following a set 'criteria.' I could handle most things.

However, this situation wasn't expected at all. It was like a natural disaster where I couldn't do anything.

-The soul depletion is becoming severe. 8.2% -> 8.1%

At this rate, wouldn't she disappear when it reached 0%?

As Yihi's body faded, features of the dungeon also stopped functioning. If Yihi died then the dungeon would shrink just like Pakan Griolli's.

‘It is related to the soul.’

I didn’t stay still.

I searched through the normal store and the Achievements Store.

I summoned several creatures and asked for their opinion, but there was nothing good.

There didn’t seem to be any items to restore the soul.

‘Surely there must be a way?’

I gritted my teeth. I hadn’t felt this helpless in a long time. Yihi and the dungeon. If I could save at least one of them then I would. But I couldn’t come up with anything.

Just as I was frantically thinking.

-Some lost features of the dungeon have returned.
The flow of magic power is normalizing.

-The Origin Fairy ‘Yihi’ has recovered by 0.1%.

8.1% -> 8.2%

Chapter 173: Unique Dungeon (1)

A sudden message. Only the last sentence caught my eyes.

Some of the lost soul was restored. A few days had passed since the depleted soul incident occurred. It continued to be lost and there was no sign of recovery.

What was the change?

I didn't do anything. The 500 creatures had wracked their brains but hadn't come up with a solution. It meant that it occurred due to an external factor...

'I can't tell.'

Something was occurring inside or outside the dungeon that I wasn't aware of.

It was only 0.1%. There was no change to Yihi's condition.

But...it was the first time it rose.

I needed to find out the reason behind this phenomenon.

"Julliom. Oswen."

Chrisley was currently outside. She was helping Roy and Rose.

Among those remaining in the dungeon, these two were the most intelligent and faithful.

-The orc is hurt.

-Support the wounded!

-We need to manage the garden! By the way, how do we manage the garden?

-Acha! Acha!

The fire spirits were busy. Almost 100,000 spirits moved here and there without a break. They were vigorously completing tasks in the dungeon.

While the creatures were busy gaining strength, the dungeon was being neglected. Cleaning was Yihi's task, but the spirits took the initiative while she was down.

The spirits managed Yihi's garden and played with the Tree of Origin. The born spirits moved for only one person.

Father!

They wanted him to be happy.

He was mourning for the fairy, so they decided to fill her absent spot. There was no reason other than that.

Rei and Sera were intermediate spirits and supervised the work. Each one was weak but the combined strength of 100,000 spirits was sufficient for the work.

Then after one day.

-Ah!

-Father is a little happier!

The contract had been completed so the spirits were sensitive to changes in emotions.

It wasn't a large change but the spirits were satisfied with this.

-Let's work harder.

-We need to fill the empty spot left by Fairy-nim.

-Acha! Acha!

The spirits became more energetic.

I was surprised after receiving the report from Julliom and Oswen.

‘This seems to be due to the spirits?’

Fairies and spirits were similar but different. It was almost impossible for them to affect each other. But Julliom and Oswen mentioned the spirits.

"Your Majesty. There are no other changes in the dungeon. If a change occurred then it is due to the spirits."

"I also think the same."

Julliom supported Oswen's opinion in a polite manner.

"What did the spirits do to restore the soul?"

I couldn't help asking. The spirits didn't come near Yihi. No, they hadn't come near me lately.

"Heart...it might be."

"Heart?"

What did that mean? I didn't understand what they meant by

heart. That alone didn't explain the current situation.

Oswen noticed my feelings and answered more carefully.

"Your Majesty. I'm a blacksmith. Putting my soul into the sword...I made all types of weapons to express it. What is a sword or a weapon? In fact, it is nothing more than a lump of iron. However...if you work hard then the sword will return the favour. The harder it is hit with the hammer, the more different it will look. The spirits are similar to that right now."

"The spirits are working hard for the fairy and that is restoring the soul?"

"It is similar, but the matter isn't that simple."

It became more cryptic.

"The spirits were born by Your Majesty. I don't know why but they blindly follow Your Majesty. Originally spirits aren't as obsessive. They don't even use the word 'Father' for the spirit kings."

I folded my arms.

It was a sign for him to continue.

Oswen continued talking.

"Maybe...the spirits noticed subtle emotional changes in Your Majesty since the problem occurred to Fairy-nim. Due to the absence of Fairy-nim, they are working to fill the vacancy."

"It is unbelievable."

"If not, Fairy-nim might be recovering naturally. It is only a guess."

Oswen stepped back.

I turned and looked at Julliom.

"Do you have the same opinion?"

Julliom. The chief of the dark elves. He took a deep breath.

"The shamans have said this. If a lot of people feel a strong desire, sometimes it will become true...if the approximately 100,000 spirits move together with the same mind, can't they fill the empty spots in the soul?"

It wasn't just the opinion of two people.

In that case, there was no reason not to believe. There were still many things that couldn't be understood about the soul. The lacking soul wasn't easy to fill up, but it might be possible.

“Okay. I will believe that the spirits are involved. Then what should I do?”

I wasn't sure.

I didn't believe it but I couldn't stay still.

I would move with the assumption that this was right.

Oswen laughed and said.

"Leave it alone. Just watch them approvingly."

I carefully watched the movements of the spirits. It was like Oswen said. I watched and saw a correlation with the soul.

‘Simple effort has an effect.’

The depleted soul started recovering little by little. It was only 1% a day but it was enough to feel hope.

But...I didn't fully understand. I tried to understand but it was something that the 500 creatures couldn't pull off.

The spirits were the only ones who had an effect.

At first glance, it seemed like they were ‘playing’ and didn’t have a lot of influence on the dungeon.

However, little by little, every small part of the dungeon was getting better. I couldn’t fail to notice. The spirits tried to fix every small gap.

-Father is watching.

-I will do my best!

-The Origin Fairy ‘Yihi’ has recovered by 0.2%.

14.5% -> 14.7%

As soon as I watched them, the spirits moved with more sincerity. Yihi’s soul recovery rose faster. I was certain that the spirits were involved in the soul recovery.

‘Striving for someone. It is a difficult task. I’ve only been trying for myself.’

I kept quietly watching but my mind was moving in complicated directions. I hadn’t done that much for the spirits. Even so, they worked as hard as possible for my affection. It was different from the creatures bought from the Demon World Auction and from the store.

A blind faith. It was like this from the beginning. It was similar to Yihi, but she was tied to me with a contract. Chrisley became my subordinate due to the ceremony.

Although I had a contract with the spirits, it was just a transitional one. They couldn't change the contents of the contract if they didn't like it.

It was the first time. It was the first time that someone had such blind faith in me.

I had never felt this emotion in my previous life.

So it was awkward. I didn't know how to react.

'I tried to change. But I didn't change.'

I frowned.

I vowed to be completely different after coming back.

I would accept the opinion of others and not be alone.

I would go beyond the framework of a demon to become a true devil. That was what I had thought.

Still, there was no change to a fundamental part inside me.

‘It isn’t easy to change my very nature. But...I might be able to lower the standards a little bit.’

At the very least, believing in those who followed me would be a good development.

I couldn’t become a warm wind. However, there was the possibility of being a cool breeze.

My mindset changed a little bit. There was a slight warmth in my eyes when looking at the spirits.

-The nature of your magic power has changed slightly. It is now pursuing a little more ‘harmony.’

Intelligence and magic power has increased by 2.

The limit of your potential has increased by 5.

It was a type of enlightenment. It was only a little bit but I had once again crossed the wall.

The conversion of a simple idea. I just thought a little bit differently and this kind of change occurred.

‘I am moving in the right direction. There can’t only be

destruction on my path.'

Harmony. I started laughing.

It was like a dog laughing. I, who was more self-righteous and believed myself above others was seeking 'harmony.'

But...now my cold gaze would only be directed towards my enemies. I would lower my standards for those who blindly followed me.

-Father is in a good mood.

-I like it.

-Let's work harder!

Chapter 174: Unique Dungeon (2)

The soul depletion was recovering every day, and it was cured within a mere 10 days.

"Awoo~ I'm stiff. Hah~ I slept well."

Yihi casually woke up and looked around.

"Huh? Master, why is Yihi here? Yihi fell asleep in the garden."

It was strange. The spirits were hovering around Yihi.

-The fairy woke up!

-So we don't have to work now?

-Surprise ~

The spirits stampeded over to check the results of their hard work.

"What are they doing? Yihihi. Master, Yihi is embarrassed to have so many people staring."

"Has anything changed?"

"With Yihi? Well...ah!"

Yihi stared with surprise at her body.

"My wings have increased!"

Her original two wings had increased to four. This change occurred when her soul recovery rate reached 90%.

"What? Why have my wings grown? I am filled with strength..."

Yihi spread her wings.

At the same time, a bright light poured out from her wings.

The light reached beyond the top floor and swallowed up the entire dungeon.

"Eh eh...?"

I blinked with confusion but then multiple messages popped up.

-The soul of the Origin Fairy has risen one level.

-The Tree of Origin has awakened. It will have a stronger influence on the dungeon than before.

-The spirits will have a faster growth rate.

-The dungeon's rating has been upgraded to 'Unique (Uniq).'
Further information can be found in Domestic Mode.

It was obvious that Yihi's power had grown. I had guessed it as soon as her number of wings increased. However, I hadn't expected that the Tree of Origin would awaken at the same time.

In addition...the rating of the dungeon had risen.

A crisis was an opportunity. This all started with the spirits.

If I hadn't received the spirit seeds then this result wouldn't have occurred. I wouldn't have been capable of solving the depleted soul on my own.

The coincidences overlapped. They were layered little by little until this phenomenon was created.

Kururung!

Shortly after the messages surfaced.

The dungeon started changing.

The roots of the Tree of Origin expanded through the entire dungeon. It felt like...the Tree of Origin was becoming one with the dungeon.

‘The concentration of magic power has thickened.’

Not only did the dungeon’s defensive power increase, my ‘authority’ also rose. I knew it instinctively. I could see more details by entering Domestic Mode...

‘Unique dungeon.’

I had never heard of a unique rated dungeon in my previous life. All the dungeons had been the same. There hadn’t been much difference even when it was upgraded to a rare rating.

I thought it couldn’t climb higher...but it reached the unique rating.

‘It means that epic and legend ratings are possible.’

I looked up as the light leaking from Yihi’s body shrunk. The light faded to reveal Yihi who had grown slightly bigger.

“Eh? Yihi has grown, Master!”

From Yihi's head to her fingers on her hands, every part of her

had increased by half a finger's length.

Yihi laughed with joy.

She was confused by the light emerging from her but then she realized her growth.

"Do you know what has changed?"

Yihi touched her lips and thought for a while before answering my question.

"A little bit. Some of the origin magic has flowed into Yihi. It isn't a lot but it is great ~ Yihi will be more helpful in the future. And the Tree of Origin told me. Hopefully...the 'first king' can be created.

"King?"

I had already noticed the origin magic, but I was curious about the mention of a king. Just like the achievements, the title of 'first' was attached to it. I was curious because it had a modifier attached to it.

Yihi nodded.

"But a king can't just be created. Master will decide. In the Demon World and Heaven, it is possible to create a king from

magicians, angels, demons or other creatures...then this dungeon will change into another world.

“.....”

I was at a loss for words. Yihi's words to me weren't simple. It meant that the dungeon could become an independent world. It would be a solid presence like the Demon World, Heaven or Earth.

In short.

"I will be a god?"

Yihi laughed.

"Hey that's not it. Master, what would a god do in a world with only one king? Of course, Dungeon Master can say 'I am a god!' but the creatures won't necessarily believe it. Well...you asked Yihi something like this . Master is still lacking to become a god. You will gain the qualifications to become a god after everything has transcended. You will be called a 'demigod' but then achievements have to be piled up in addition to your stats. In that regards, hasn't Master gained significant achievements already? So you will qualify if you become stronger! Yihihi!"

She was saying that I was still too weak to qualify as a god.

I was shocked but somewhat convinced by her words.

There were many people stronger than me, such as the Shadow Emperor, the True Demonic Dragon Aojin and Garrash the Fire Spirit King. In addition, there might be other stronger creatures that I didn't know about yet.

They hadn't obtained the qualifications to become a god either. The Shadow Emperor had become a demigod, but eventually gambled his fate and lost.

If I looked at the Demon World...it was true that no one had become a god yet.

However, it was an uncertain goal.

My main goal was to become the devil. I aimed to rule over the Demon World.

There was no need to build my own world.

'No. My goal won't change.'

I swallowed my saliva. I was more obsessive than I thought. Once I made a decision, there was no special reason to stop.

Anyway, the dungeon rating rose so I was able to obtain larger benefits than I thought.

"How do I make a new king?"

"That..."

I asked Yihi but she didn't answer. Was there some 'pattern' needed for the seed of a new world?"

"Pattern..."

It meant the shape and framework when creating something.

But I couldn't grasp it. Was there a pattern that allowed an angel, demon, human or creature to become a lord?

Such things would only be known to the gods.

'This shall also be known naturally.'

There was no need to rush.

It was enough to obtain a hint.

I didn't know it now, but someday I would naturally encounter it.

It was just like a puzzle.

“Yihihihi. Master, do you want Yihi to show you some magic?”

"Is it the origin magic?"

“Yes! Yihi will try it once.”

I couldn't see Yihi's status window with Mind's Eye. Therefore I didn't know what skill she had obtained.

It was origin magic so I needed to see if it fit the name.

'I should be careful, just in case.'

I stared as light flashed from Yihi's hands.

"Yap!"

A small ray of light shot out from Yihi's hands. Before long, the light reached the ceiling of the dungeon and the roots from the Tree of Origin started to simultaneously emerge.

Did she intend to attack with roots?

It was similar but different. The roots descended and intertwined to form a giant. Three giants the size of the hydra were formed.

"Hek hek phew, it is hard. This is it. Master. Yihi has summoned Origin Giants."

Name: Origin Giant

Stats

Strength 100 Intelligence 90

Agility 95 Stamina 100

Magic Power 80

Potential: (465/???)

Uniqueness: A giant temporarily created from the Tree of Origin. The strength and summoning duration will be determined by the power of the Origin Fairy.

A high class creature. The level was comparable with a 3Lv creature. The roots of the Tree of Origin must be present for the magic to be possible, so it was available in the dungeon.

The problem was...the time it took to summon.

"Pant! Pant! Pant pant! Ah, I'm thirsty. No more, Master. This is Yihi's limit."

After one or two minutes, Yihi gasped for breath like a thirsty dog. Three of them were summoned at once, so it felt overcrowded.

However, it was only for a short time.

‘The magic is similar.’

Yihi had power but she couldn't control it properly.

Anyway, the origin magic was quite appealing. If Yihi knew how to use this power properly then I would have a creature better than the other high class ones.

It was unreasonable for now, but the possibilities were there.

"Good work."

“Yihihihhi!”

Yihi's body twisted aimlessly.

Her reaction was worse because she hadn't heard praise for a long time.

I ignored Yihi and headed to the Dungeon Core.

‘Domestic Mode.’

The dungeon had been upgraded to a unique rating, so I entered Domestic Mode to see the changes.

At the same time, numerous letters formed in front of me.

I quickly noticed the changes.

-Dungeon Rating - Unique (Uniq)

Dungeon Barrier Total - 20,000,000

Dungeon's Magic Power Status - Pure (The stats of all creatures in the dungeon +2)

.....

The roots of the Tree of Origin have spread entirely through the dungeon (all floors, the breeding rate has significantly increased)

It is possible to change the appearance of the dungeon. Height and Width Upper Limit - 200Km]

The probability of giving birth to a creature that goes beyond the limits of its species has significantly increased.

.....

Merging layers is possible.

The potential limit of the Master Guardian has increased by 50.

There were many things. I went through it. The durability of the barrier increase by a noticeable amount...all of the creatures' stats went up. It was a total of 10 points for each creature so this number wasn't small.

In addition, some born creatures could go beyond the limits of their species.

Not a king or lord, but a higher existence.

'Named.'

It meant there was a possibility of more named creatures being born. It wasn't easy to have a name without transcending. For example, the name Aojin only emerged after he transcended.

Such presences were called 'named.' It was a language used by humans in my previous life.

'The Master Guardian is Chrisley.'

In addition, Chrisley's potential had increased by 50. Her original threshold of 484 was now 534. She had the qualifications to transcend.

'A transcendental creature who listens to my commands. It is okay.'

There was still a long way to go, but my fists clenched tightly as I imagined it. I would have more power if Chrisley transcended.

My expectations for Yihi's magic were also very high.

After summarizing it all in my head, I smiled and spoke to Yihi.

“Yihi.”

"Kuheom! Kuheom! Yes?"

Yihi tried to erase her happy face as she turned to me.

She was curious about what I wanted to say.

I only had one thing to say. It was simple.

"Reduce the dungeon to two floors."

The 33 floors would be turned into two!

I would separate the top floor and all the lower floors for a more efficient use of the land.

There were many inconveniences about it being split up. Joining them together would allow for more efficient management.

In other words, 32 floors would be combined together to create an area beyond imagination.

It might be possible to call the dungeon a small world.

Chapter 175: Quickening Period (1)

'The magic circles are still intact.'

I took a closer look at the ability to merge floors and found that the magic circles remained intact.

It was also possible to add a few magic circles.

There would be no difficulty in moving around the dungeon.

"It is possible, Master. Yihi thinks that there will be problems if the floors are suddenly reduced."

I touched my jaw.

Yihi's words were reasonable. It would be hard for the creatures to adapt to the sudden change. But I judged that there wouldn't be any big problems.

'The creatures in my dungeon are strong. They are superior compared to those of other dungeons. And there is also a desire to create their own cultures. Their adaptability is very high.'

I didn't know if it was due to the Tree of Origin or the dungeon rating, but the creatures in my dungeon excelled in all respects. It wasn't enough to give dominance, but there was a clear difference.

So...I was strongly convinced that combining the floors would stimulate 'development.'

Now was the perfect time to do it.

Maxium, Roy, Rose and Chrisley were drawing attention on the outside. I could afford to give some time for the creatures to adapt.

'There is no development without stimulation.'

I nodded. The floors would be merged together. I made up my mind.

Due to the chain relationship of eat or be eaten among the creatures, a transcendent creature might emerge. If successful, I would be free of almost all constraints. There would be no need to tie myself to the Demon World Auction.

"Do it."

"I understand, Master. Should I give a warning to the creatures to allow them to prepare?"

"That would be good."

"Yihihi. Yes~"

I didn't mind accepting Yihi's suggestion. It wasn't bad to warn the creatures in order to reduce the aftermath.

As Yihi moved, a light powder fell from her wings. It was a phenomenon that hadn't occurred before. The powder 'harmonized' with the light.

'She might be able to become a fairy queen.'

It was a phenomenon similar to something I read in literature about the fairy king. The place where the fairy king passed always had new life blooming.

Yihi hadn't reached that level, yet...it didn't seem impossible that she could become a fairy queen.

The fairy ruler.

It had been thousands of years since a fairy ruler appeared.

Fairies would be forced to accept the invitation to drink.

It was to celebrate the accomplishments of the new fairy ruler.

What if...Yihi became the fairy queen, what would the other dungeon fairies choose?

Would they celebrate the birth of a new fairy ruler? There would be no need for them to maintain their contract with the demons. Of course, a few would have their souls forcibly destroyed. However, the fairies with strong hearts could maintain themselves.

It depended on their attitude.

‘Destruction of the soul.’

The name of the Shadow Emperor once again flashed through my head. If I hadn’t known that he cursed the high dark elf Shilla, I would have thought he was dead. The first Easter Egg where I received the Heart of the Hell Monarch and the message stating he was ‘destroyed’ was to blame for my lapse.

However...there were no traces of him in the Demon World.

Maxium had admitted it. My magic power was similar to the Shadow Emperor.

Furthermore, the curse was stronger than a high class 4Lv dark elf. She tried to fight but there were no signs of a big resistance.

The curse was strong.

All the grand dukes were on Earth. No matter how much I thought, I couldn’t come up with an explanation other than the Shadow Emperor. However, it wasn’t entirely certain. There was

always the possibility of a 3rd party with a similar magic power to the Shadow Emperor.

‘He might try to rise again as a god. It might be another trick or a 3rd party.’

I shrugged. At any rate, the Shadow Emperor had prepared the Underground World to become a perfect god.

‘God. If he was prepared to become a god, the seeds of a new world should be somewhere.’

And they were highly likely to be in the treasure trove.

I searched through all the items from the treasure trove in the Achievements Store.

However, I didn’t find anything similar to a seed.

‘The name might be different. It might be connected to something else. Let’s look a little further.’

I spent a few days looking through the Achievements Store.

Ironically, the people who gathered in Seoul started to build their power near the dungeon. There were some people who expressed concerns, but no monster wave had occurred since the invasion of creatures and demons from overseas.

In addition, the ‘cores’ that replaced oil and electricity could only be obtained from the dungeon. It was the most suitable place for a base, unless a monster wave occurred.

The Seoul Metropolitan Government started to become active again.

"Damn, where did they go when we are this busy?"

Kim Yong-woo. He was the guild master of Heaven's Will. At some point, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward had disappeared. The two main people of the guild had disappeared, so it was difficult to maintain the guild's operations.

In particular, the two of them had disappeared at a crucial moment.

Kim Yong-woo sighed as he cleaned up a pile of paperwork.

Rattle!

At that moment, Lee Ji-hye entered.

"Guild Master, are you going to work?"

Instead of robes, she was wearing comfortable clothes and holding a shovel. Dust covered her face so she looked like a

labourer.

At the same time, Kim Yong-woo's expression stiffened.

"Hey. I am the guild master. Do I have to go to that place? Why do I have to handle it?"

"It is because you are the guild master that you have to go. Lead by example! The population is increasing every day and it is hard to build shacks. Do you think it is a good idea to show the discipline of our guild?"

"Don't keep running your mouth. Ahyo~"

"Are there no available personnel from your guards? The chances of terrorism will increase as more people flow in."

"The old government agencies..."

The restoration of Seoul was divided into two groups.

Those who followed the girin and waited for a 'wise king' to appear. Or those who wanted to revive the government with a president like in the past.

The controversy raged on. In the end, the latter group did a demonstration of force first. They didn't hesitate to use terrorism and randomly attacked Seoul.

"There will be trouble if this continues."

Lee Ji-hye whined. Kim Yong-woo nodded.

"There are too many irreversible mistakes. We have to be prepared. The country has become a mess."

There were many opportunities. The invasion was abrupt, but there wouldn't have been so many casualties if they calmly gathered their strength and prepared.

Their fear and frustration had caused them to be crushed.

After that, people would abandon others to save their own lives.

He didn't want to be disappointed anymore by repeating past mistakes.

Lee Ji-hye laughed.

"In the end, we need the king. I have reached that conclusion. I hope they will appear quickly."

The advent of the wise king to end the aggression!

All of the Awakened gathered in Seoul had this desire.

"The king...it would be nice if they came from our guild."

"You sound like a snob. Who cares where they come from? All they need to do is appear."

"It would be preferable. Are there any bad people in our guild? A representative. Rather than somewhere else, I would prefer they appear from our guild so that I know they will do a good job. I will support them from behind."

"I will push you."

"Yes. Push me. By the way, do you have any news about Yoo Eun-hye and Edward?"

"They left a letter and disappeared so how should I know? They'll be back."

"It feels strange."

"Is Guild Master worried? You don't have to worry about those children."

Lee Ji-hye didn't seem concerned at all. She had a firm belief that they would come back.

Kim Yong-woo licked his lips and said.

“Ara. Let's go back to work. Is this the time to chat?”

"You are one to talk."

"Hey, you..."

The two of them were very friendly after going through life and death situations together. Although both had personalities that the other one disliked, they ended up matching.

Kim Yong-woo clicked his tongue and changed into his work clothes.

And just as he picked up a shovel.

Kung. Kuuuuung.

The earth shook roughly.

“An earthquake?”

Kim Yong-woo quickly approached Lee Ji-hye.

Kurururung.

The shaking of the ground became even more intense.

“Damn, what is going on?”

"Oh my god..."

"What is it?"

"Dungeon..."

Dungeon?

Lee Ji-hye was looking at one spot.

Kim Yong-woo followed Lee Ji-hye's gaze.

He spoke with difficulty.

“The dungeon...it is changing?”

Chapter 176: Quickening Period (2)

The dungeon changed its appearance. The dungeon on Bukhan Mountain had now changed into a huge ‘castle.’

At a glance, there seemed to be no end to how huge it was. It stretched out for dozens of kilometres. The height...it was unimaginable. It reached high into the sky.

"The dungeon exploration will be prohibited until a clear cause is determined."

The girin declared.

She climbed on top of a podium and had a distinctive magical atmosphere around her.

"There is only a small stockpile of cores. We will stop all dungeon exploration for three days."

Kim Yong-woo disagreed. The girin and a few Awakened were gathered. Only the masters of the huge guilds were present.

There were seven guild master, the girin and two dark elves in a small hall.

They were gathered in one place to discuss measures.

"Many Awakened feel insecure about exploring the dungeon. If they explode then the damage will be great."

The Dambi guild master Alin. The atmosphere reversed as she talked.

But the girin was firm. Roy, who was holding a sword next to her, said.

"I can solve the problem of the dungeon cores."

"Do you mean that the cores can be obtained without exploration?"

Roy nodded at Kim Yong-woo's question.

"My master sent me a lot of cores."

"Saviour...?"

"He sent me a weapon. In order to clean up those who are causing trouble."

Jjak!

Roy clapped. Then a figure dropped down from the ceiling. It fell.

"Hup!"

The guild masters were surprised because they hadn't noticed its existence.

Its height came up to their shoulders at most. The figure was a naked male with no hair. The eyes were completely black and the tongue hanging out was weirdly long.

"Homunculus. This was a failure but...it will be enough to clean them up."

Homunculus. Artificial life!

The seven guild masters here didn't know anything about it. They just felt an instinctive fear.

Being a guild master didn't necessarily meant they were the strongest. Even within the guilds, there were many members stronger than the guild master. But the guild masters had selected and raised them. They had also experienced the dungeon exploration.

It was natural that they could measure the strength of their opponent. The strongest people were the man called Saviour and the girin, however the homunculus was next. The artificial golem used by the dark elf Rose was strong, but it didn't give off a sense of pressure.

“Hiii....”

The homunculus groaned and gazed at the guild masters. He came closer and licked their cheeks with his long tongue.

Gulp!

The people swallowed their saliva. Some raised a hand to their swords.

Roy noticed and said.

"This child has no eyesight. Instead, he has a great sense of smell and touch. Right now, he is recognizing those who are friendly. Don't worry."

"T-that is why he is licking our cheeks?"

Kim Yong-woo closed his eyes. He was relatively confident, but when the homunculus' tongue had licked his cheeks, he had thought 'this is the end.'

“Yes. Have some guards assigned to this child. Put together a party of reliable Awakened and allow him to recognize them. Master said he is somewhat violent, so he might attack allies if measures aren't taken.

"Shouldn't Roy-nim be with him?"

Roy shook his head.

"I will be planting the 'seeds' along with Rose and doing the ceremony. I won't be available."

"The seeds?"

Kim Yong-woo blinked as Roy pulled out two seeds.

The seeds didn't look typical and had contrasting colours of blue and red.

"The Trees of Life and Death. They are derived from the Tree of Origin. They will be a big help to us if we grow them properly. However, the creatures might move while we are planting the trees."

Roy's words were solemn. His haughty composure was completely different from his previous cowardly self. However, Roy seemed a little nervous when talking this time.

The guild masters couldn't understand the atmosphere.

Alin of the Dambi guild asked on their behalf.

"...Is a monster wave going to happen?"

“My master has dealt with many the creatures in South Korea. There is a possibility that the creatures nearby will come.”

There were many stray creatures without a master wandering. They used their instincts and attacked the people in Korea.

While the Trees of Life and Death were growing, they would release a fatal smell to specific creatures. They would instinctively come to the trees to destroy them before that could happen.

Alin asked calmly.

"Then why we should take the risk?"

"They are vulnerable when growing, but they will crush the creatures after they are grown.”

"Then do we have to plant them now? It isn't too late after everything is stabilized.”

“No, now is the perfect time. If we don't plant them in the next three days, then we will have to wait 12 years.”

Roy looked up at the ceiling. He seemed to be looking at something beyond the ceiling.

Alin looked at the other six guild masters. She was asking what

their opinions were. Everybody was dubious but thought it was worth trying the gamble.

Alin spoke once again after receiving their feedback.

“As soon as possible...clean everything up.”

The former government forces. The ones who committed terrorism.

The war with them had to be finished as soon as possible. The duration was three days. It was best if they finished it during that time.

They couldn't receive the attacks of the creatures and the government forces at the same time.

The key was the homunculus. Right now, the government soldiers didn't have that much strength. The ratio was 6.5:3.5, but they used guerilla tactics to be annoying.

It was at that time.

Roy and Rose's eyes widened.

They stared at a shadow and started to talk.

“Huh? T-then the ceremony?”

"That's right. Roy isn't reliable. The two of us doing the ceremony..."

Rose's ears pricked up. It seemed like she was listening to something. The guild masters were puzzled.

“Can you do it? R-rather, you don't have to do this. For now, just give me your advice. Well, we can do it.”

"No, Rose would be better. Queen-nim can be at ease.”

Queen-nim?

That meant it was the saviour.

In addition, both of the dark elves followed the presence.

10 seconds. It became silent. Roy and Rose bowed.

“...Understood.”

“...I will try it.”

Shortly after the two opinions were unified, somebody appeared from the shadows.

The outline gradually became clear.

The guild masters felt their breaths being blocked as they confirmed its appearance.

The person was a woman wearing a robe made of a silken material. Her skin and ears showed that she was a dark elf like Roy and Rose. Her face was veiled except for her eyes, but she gave off an overwhelming presence.

There was an untouchable atmosphere around her. Despite only her eyes being visible, they could tell she was a beauty. The men had to suppress the urge to stretch out their hands. They wanted to tear off the cloth covering her face.

“Nice to meet you.”

“Ah...”

Kim Yong-woo and the other male guild masters exclaimed. All the women except for Alin were also amazed. Her voice was also charming!

The female dark elf continued speaking.

"This mission, I will come along."

The time limit was three days.

It was honestly tight. They had to catch the scattered enemies. No matter how powerful she was, there was a limit to their speed.

...They thought like that. That was common sense.

But that common sense was smashed. The plate was overturned.

The homunculus was excellent for finding the enemies. His sense of smell and touch precisely spotted their hiding places, even if a stealth skill was used.

Was that all?

In terms of speed, he was unmatched by anyone else. A truly invincible speed! His destructive power was weaker than his speed, but it was still an insurmountable wall compared to humans.

However, not everything could be solved with strength. The girin said that she wouldn't fight humans, but Rose's golem was also very strong.

The problem was the number of enemies. They were weak but there were hundreds of thousands of them. In fact, Rose's golem had ran alone into a trap by the government forces and been damaged by two thousand skills.

Several conditions needed to be overlapped, but they couldn't be ignored.

However...there wasn't one strong being, but two.

One of them was so strong they couldn't be compared to anyone else.

The story was different.

Pasak!

Puk!

The female dark elf.

She moved forward despite the numbers.

In the middle of the enemy. She read all the traps the enemy set, grasped the enemy's movements and quickly killed them. Dazzling movements. Restrained but neat actions. No wasted movements could be found.

Eek! Screams could be heard from the other side.

The third day. They succeeded in attacking the headquarters of the government troops.

Of course, the dark elf and homunculus weren't the only ones involved in the war.

Thousands of Awakened surrounded the headquarters that was in the mountains. All seven guild masters and their members were present.

"Don't let them get away!"

"We have the Goddess of Victory with us!"

The morale of their allies had sharply increased.

In contrast, the morale of the enemy was extremely low.

There hadn't been a clear winner in the war against the two sides.

However, the situation was reversed after the two strong presences joined.

In particular, the female dark elf called the 'Goddess of Victory' played a huge part.

The momentum was fully on their side, so the results seemed predetermined.

The Trees of Life and Death.

They were an accidental product of the Tree of Origin's upgrade.

Yihi hadn't reported it to me, but the fire spirits found them because of the colour.

Fire-One, Fire-Two and Fire-Three were tired of Yihi's tyranny and told Rei and Sera.

In the end, Yihi was forced to hand the two seeds over to me.

No matter how much her rating increased...Yihi was still Yihi. It didn't seem like she would ever change.

Either way.

'It will be difficult to plant them in the dungeon.'

The Trees of Life and Death attracted creatures while growing. It maximized their aggressive tendencies. They would move instinctively and ignore my commands.

Therefore, the dungeon was unsuitable for planting the seeds.

'It is ideal for promoting the growth of humans.'

I sat in front of the Dungeon Core.

There were conditions to grow both trees.

The Tree of Life grew every time there was a birth near it and the Tree of Death grew when there was death nearby.

And when both trees grew, they would 'awaken' the surrounding species. For example, in the case of humans, there would be a higher percentage of Awakened appearing.

What if this was applied to the creatures? It was possible but...

'Humans are different from creatures.'

The creatures weren't significantly better than the Awakened. In contrast, humans had huge 'possibilities.' This difference was large.

In addition, there was a high probability that the dungeon would be a mess if two trees were growing inside it.

It would be better to assign the trees to promote human growth.

'There will be many benefits if there is a high ratio of Awakened.'

First of all, there was a need for the humans in South Korea to grow quickly.

'Quickening period. The time for change.'

I could deal with one faction, but there was a limit if another one joined. Humans would become helpful at that time.

They should be helpful.

That's why I was making this move.

'Humans. Do not disappoint me.'

Chapter 177: Those Who Protect (1)

There had been four demons who came to South Korea. They were part of Pandemonium's faction and brought a large number of creatures to occupy the dungeon. Pandemonium's active help meant that a considerable number of creatures entered the country.

They ranged from the lowest grade to high class creatures. People thought that there were over 100,000 creatures. The majority of them were wiped out by the man who the humans called 'Saviour,' but there were still thousands of creatures. They were scattered in various hiding spots and were steadily hunted.

The hunts had been easy so far. However, if all the scattered creatures were drawn to one place by the Trees of Life and Death...it wouldn't be an easy fight. Fortunately, the government forces had been handled so they could solely concentrate on the creatures.

The centre of the city.

The seeds were planted in the middle of a stadium approximately 110 m wide. The Trees of Life and Death. Roy and Rose were in charge of the ceremony.

During this ceremony, no one else could enter. The exceptions were the girin and Chrisley.

"Did your master command you to plant this?"

The seeds had germinated immediately after being planted. The girin looked at them with a surprised expression. Although she was a mythical creature, the girin was wise and deep like it was famous for. She perceived an intense feeling from the two seeds.

The veiled Chrisley spoke to the girin.

“Girin. We have to hold the ceremony. Help the humans.”

"The creatures haven't appeared yet. Rather...there is a strange feeling. The Trees of Life and Death. The trees have contrasting energies but are strangely harmonious."

As the girin approached, the germinated seeds moved like they were responding.

The girin's eyes shone.

"They are reacting to me. I don't know what your ritual is, but I should be able to help with the growth of these trees."

"Are you going to leave the humans unattended?"

"No, the humans are strong enough. The united humans are powerful. They aren't weak enough to be defeated by the incoming creatures."

Chrisley stared at the girin's unexpected reaction.

She had heard stories about the girin's birth through Roy and Rose, so she roughly knew how hard the girin worked for the humans of South Korea.

Now the girin's attitude was different from what she heard.

The girin laughed as she saw Chrisley's expression.

"I am not a babysitter for the humans. I will help them but they have to be self-reliant. Of course, I can't ignore the desire of the humans who gave birth to me. So...I will stay until the king appears and stabilizes the country. After that, I would like to explore this world a bit more."

She wasn't obsessed. She would do her work and then leave. Unlike her appearance, it hadn't even been one year since she was born. She was curious about this world.

The desire of the humans had played an important role when she was born. An explorer.

Chrisley opposed the girin's idea.

"What about returning to Master? Technically speaking, Master is the one who created you."

"I am not bound anywhere. Although I appreciate it, we are separate existences. I would give my help one day if he needed it. However, your master is strong enough not to need my help. I'd rather see more of this beautiful world."

The girin's beautiful red hair blazed as she expressed her will.

The girin's ego was strong. She had a tendency to tell the truth and liked exploring. Chrisley intuitively sensed this and changed the subject.

"...Stay silent while the ceremony is occurring."

A quiet and serious atmosphere was required for the ceremony.

The humans didn't stay still. They hastily prepared for the invasion of the creatures.

"Block all the small roads! Lure them to the big ones."

"We have exceeded the capacity of the central shelter. There are too many people!"

Among them, Kim Yong-woo directed the strategy. Traps were installed and they even made paths for the creatures.

But they couldn't prepare everything.

Kim Yong-woo frowned.

'It won't end in one or two days. It would be bad if there was no place to stay. We can't leave room for the creatures to enter...'

It was expected to be a long war. South Korea wouldn't be stabilized until all the creatures were wiped out. However, they needed to account for the civilians. Safe places were designed to accommodate them, but there wasn't enough room. There were too many civilians in the city.

Kim Yong-woo sighed and exclaimed.

"It doesn't need to be inside the building. Make a space anywhere, whether it is with tents or wooden planks! Anyway, we won't allow the creatures to reach the centre of the city."

The outskirts were completely blocked. Not one creature would be allowed inside. Kim Yong-woo's will spread to the other Awakened.

Kung!

And at that moment.

Kung! Kung!

The sound of huge bodies moving could be heard.

The seeds had already been planted for a while...

Kwarurung!

An installed trap exploded with a loud noise.

However, it didn't diminish the number of incoming ogres.

"Damn, it has started. Prepare to fight!"

Kim Yong-woo bit his lip.

Five ogres.

Two giant worms.

37 trolls.

One dullahan.

Vampires and ghouls...

There were 300 intermediate creatures and more than 900 hundred low grade ones!

The attacks continued over three days.

Fortunately, the fights only took place on the large roads due to the small ones being blocked. At least there were no innocent people to be sacrificed.

There were four barriers in every direction around the centre of Seoul. It was fortunate, however...the creatures were relentless.

As time passed, the damage to the Awakened grew bigger.

"There is no time to rest."

Dambi's guild master Alin muttered with a gloomy expression. Hundreds of orcs were gathered on the other side of the road, with some orc lords among them.

It wasn't difficult to cope with the orcs due to their previous experience, but it was the 3rd day without sleep. Some of the Awakened had trouble just standing.

"It seems like it."

Kim Yong-woo also sighed.

Four big roads. Among them, Kim Yong-woo and Alin were assigned to the west.

"Has there been any radio contact from the other side?"

"Not yet..."

"Then be prepared. Don't let even one escape."

Alin pulled out a bow. She was one of the strongest archers. The arrows she shot never missed. They were always fatal.

Kim Yong-woo's stats were lacking in comparison. However, a guild master required unique leadership abilities.

Piyok!

Alin fired the bow. Three arrows flew at the same time and penetrated the heads of three approaching orcs.

Grrr!

Gruruk!

The orcs became berserk and rushed forward. They didn't care about the death of their colleagues. A simple dash that didn't hesitate in the face of death!

At that time, Kim Yong-woo received some radio contact.

-A lich has appeared in the east! We are engaging! I'm asking for help!

-The north is fighting a large number of spartoi...kuack!

-The south! Hundreds of nagas...!

Lee Ji-hye heard the radio and grabbed his staff firmly.

"Guild Master. It is strange. After the past three days, I think that there is someone commanding the creatures from behind."

There were simultaneous attacks that didn't allow the Awakened time to rest, making them exhausted. It was impossible if the creatures were randomly moving. Someone had to be planning a strategy and moving the creatures from behind.

"Damn!"

Kim Yong-woo grinded his teeth and pulled out his sword.

The orcs had already come close. They didn't have time to help the others. They needed to take care of these creatures as quickly as possible in order to join the others!

"Pant, pant pant..."

Kim Yong-woo took a deep breath as he cut the neck of the remaining orc.

In the beginning, there had been 500 Awakened and this number was reduced by a third.

Kim Yong-woo looked around and immediately pulled out the radio.

“This is the west. Kim Yong-woo from Heaven’s Will. Please respond.”

-This is the south. We are still engaged with the nagas.

-This is the east. The lich is approaching.

-.....

"The north. Answer me. The north!"

There was no response from the north who were fighting against the spartoi. Alin approached while Kim Yong-woo was frowning.

“What happened?”

"The north side might have been breached. We have to go straight there."

-This is the centre. I am Oriental's guild master, Kim Woo-ram. A large number of spartoi, death knights and twin head ogres are coming from the north...we are requesting help.

As soon as he spoke, a scary message was heard from the radio.

Kim Yong-woo formed tight fists. The number of Awakened placed in the centre was the smallest. The plan was to intercept all the creatures on the outskirts. At best, there were only 200 people.

However...200 Awakened wouldn't be able to deal with the creatures heard on the radio.

“Damn!”

Kim Yong-woo ignored his nausea and quickly moved his guild members.

Chapter 178: Those Who Protect (2)

The citizens were shaking in fear. The people hiding in buildings could hear the sound of creatures approaching from the north.

Kwang! Kwaang!

Soon there was a battle.

The explosions and screams made it seem like the world was ending.

"Oh...Lord."

People closed their eyes and prayed to God.

But that hope was like torture. The explosions and screams of the Awakened gradually diminished.

In other words...it meant that defeat was coming.

The civilians would just be weak victims to the creatures. Hundreds of thousands of humans would die before help arrived. They would be slaughtered by the creatures. The young children, elderly people and everyone else.

The anxiety of the citizens soared.

Hwaaaaaack!

At that moment.

The outside was gloomy...

Then a bright light appeared from the sky.

A door opened in the sky and two humans descended to the ground.

Heaven's Will and the Dambi guild who protected the west arrived in the centre. They heard the sound of explosions from afar, but it was quiet when they approached.

Was it finished?

If so, it was likely to have ended badly. The 200 Awakened wouldn't have been able to stop all the creatures.

“Are we too late?”

“Damn. Speed up a little more. We have to save at least one more person.”

Kim Yong-woo bit his lip. Originally he had a lot of self-interest,

but that had changed over the past few years. He sincerely hoped for the safety of the people and moved quickly.

Kim Yong-woo and the other guild members were speechless as they reached the centre.

First of all, the corpses of the creatures were strewn around. There were also dead Awakened, but the number of creature corpses was overwhelmingly higher.

He had no idea what had happened.

He thought they had been too late. Normally, the creatures wouldn't have been able to be stopped. He had hope but the reality wasn't that simple.

"I am Kim Yong-woo from Heaven's Will. The centre, please answer me."

-.....

He tried the radio but it was quiet.

Alin stared at the wounds on the corpses of the creatures.

"Most of the creatures were killed by two people. Who...?"

The stab wounds were divided into two major types. This meant that two people had dealt with the creatures.

Kim Yong-woo opened his mouth.

"The place where people are gathered isn't far from here. We will know when we get there."

They headed deeper towards the place where civilians were gathered.

A heavy atmosphere.

Kim Yong-woo and Alin moved quickly.

There were less corpses as they neared the shelter containing the civilians. It seemed some of the creatures had been cut down while fleeing.

Creatures running away?

That wasn't impossible. Creatures had instincts and would withdraw if they felt like they were going to die. But...that was only low grade creatures. Intermediate and above creatures wouldn't retreat. That would only occur if a huge difference in strength was displayed.

For example, the Saviour. At first, they mistook him as prey but

eventually they ran away. Still, a large number of creatures was killed by him and people called him the ‘Saviour.’

And...there were intermediate class creatures among the corpses. There were occasionally some advanced creatures.

‘Was there someone this strong among the humans?’

It wasn’t the Saviour. His fights were straightforward and concise. There was tremendous violence but it was also ‘cool.’

On the other hand, these two people didn’t show signs of that. It seemed like there was a slight struggle. Even so, it was clear that they had great power.

Kim Yong-woo entered the shelter.

Soon he could see people gathered together.

“Eh...? Guild Master.”

At the centre were two familiar people.

Yoo Eun-hye and Edward!

Yoo Eun-hye saw Kim Yong-woo and gave an awkward laugh.

The two of them had left a letter stating ‘we are going to train’ and then returned roughly two weeks later.

"It is fortunate that you have returned now."

Kim Yong-woo sighed and relaxed. The safety of the citizens was a big problem so the burden on his shoulders was very heavy. Fortunately, the two of them could stop the creatures without much damage.

Many people were wondering about their emergence, but Kim Yong-woo dragged them into a corner.

"By the way, where have you been?"

"I told you, training. Has it really only been two weeks since I left the letter?"

The weary-looking Yoo Eun-hye said. Kim Yong-woo frowned and nodded.

"Only two weeks? Look out there! It has been extremely hard in the meantime!"

They had barely slept in the past three days. At night, they couldn't sleep at all. Edward wasn't very helpful but Yoo Eun-hye was different.

He was tired and in pain but Yoo Eun-hye showed no signs of reflection.

She spoke with an embarrassed voice.

"Our concept of time is very different..."

"Noona, we have become stronger. Don't be sad."

Edward's appearance was unchanged but he seemed more mentally mature. Edward patted Yoo Eun-hye's shoulder in order to console her. In order to check that it wasn't a dream, Kim Yong-woo asked again.

"What is going on? Where did you go?"

"We went to a training room. The man that people call 'Saviour'...he wanted us to become stronger."

"What?"

He exclaimed loudly.

Based on Edward's silence, it didn't seem to be a lie.

Yoo Eun-hye's following words were more shocking.

"I can't believe it but...we were training there for over 1,000 days. We couldn't get out until we cleared the room...I was desperate."

"1,000 days? That is..."

"Doesn't it explain why Edward and I can deal with so many creatures?"

Kim Yong-woo closed his eyes. He couldn't keep up with the story.

However, the situation backed up Yoo Eun-hye's story. Even if the two of them were strong, there were limits.

Now they had broken past the limits due to the training room.

"People won't believe that so we'll need to rework the story. Phew ~"

Everyone in South Korea would be focused on the two of them.

Yoo Eun-hye asked with a puzzled expression.

"Can't we just say it?"

"Well, a story that doesn't make sense will become complicated when it involves the Saviour. It needs to be spiced up a little bit. It

also has to be simple, damn. A spotlight will be shone on you after receiving the Saviour's recognition. I hate that."

Kim Yong-woo didn't like the Saviour. Yoo Eun-hye didn't argue about this. Everyone's beliefs were different.

"Well, you seem to be able to take care of things. Can I take a little break? I want to sleep for a long time..."

"Yes. I will rest today and get to work tomorrow."

Edward interrupted.

"Please give me a bed beside Noona."

"Are you crazy? You are a man and a woman! You will each have a separate room. Even if there is no room, I will make it."

Duk!

Kim Yong-woo turned around. He had roughly heard the situation and now he needed to adapt it. Then Kim Yong-woo halted and said to Yoo Eun-hye.

"But what is your age now? Are you older than me?"

"Shut up!"

Seven days afterwards.

The creatures' attacks stopped.

The people cheered. Heaven's Will had made the largest contribution and their names were widely proclaimed.

In particular, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward became major stars. Although they weren't widely known, they were like celebrities in South Korea.

The strongest among the Awakened. Both of them hunted advanced creatures alone, so the Awakened followed them.

Everyone was relieved and started using their strength to rebuild.

However...to their despair, a massive air strike occurred.

"Duke Martin..."

I muttered quietly as I looked inside the crystal ball.

I watched the blood and screaming from the massive air raid.

I heard reports from Roy, Rose and Chrisley and launched an investigation.

As a result, I was able to confirm that someone was behind the creatures.

Duke Martin! I was familiar with him.

‘Pandemonium. He is persistent until the end.’

He was one of the demons under Pandemonium.

Pandemonium had probably intervened. Martin wouldn’t have moved to South Korea without his permission.

Why was he attacking South Korea instead of my dungeon?

The Trees of Life and Death. It was unlikely that he hadn’t noticed. However, he had already prepared the systematic attacks in advance.

‘Revenge?’

The girin and South Korean Awakened had raided Pandemonium’s empty dungeons. Pandemonium would have been outraged. Among the grand dukes, Pandemonium especially despised humans.

It was enough for him to think about retaliation.

However, he knew that my dungeon was here. Of course, he didn't know that I had a relationship with the humans...

My decision here was important.

It was a good excuse to get rid of a demon. A pretext to 'eliminate' him.

However, humans wouldn't be able to stop Duke Martin. Yoo Eun-hye and Edward had satisfactory growth but a duke was a different story.

'It isn't an all-out attack yet. He is sending out feelers.'

I touched my jaw while staring in the crystal ball.

The Awakened were stopping the attacks of the creatures.

It was a state of continual fighting.

'It is possible that it is just simple payback. However, he doesn't seem to be just attacking...perhaps he is looking for something?'

If it was retaliation then he would strike all at once. After determining the power of the humans, he would strike like a storm. That was Pandemonium's nature.

It meant there were other reasons.

The Trees of Life and Death. The timing wasn't right.

'I need to look for it.'

I was very curious about the reason.

I couldn't guess so I had to determine it directly.

"Yihi. Prepare the griffin, Gigantes and the hydra. I will be going out."

"Yihihhi. Master, can Yihi go as well?"

"...You?"

My eyes narrowed.

It was a well established fact that the dungeon fairy couldn't leave the dungeon.

I had never heard anything that contradicted this opinion.

Yihi saw my expression and explained.

"I couldn't originally do this, but now I can. Yihi wants to see the outside of the dungeon!"

I only thought about it for a moment.

What would the consequences be if Yihi went outside?

"You shouldn't do anything other than what I tell you to."

"Yihihihi. Absolutely. I will listen to Master's words."

Listen?

Although I was somewhat dubious, she was firm.

Her eyes were burning with the will to go outside.

Anyway, I needed someone to move the high class creatures.

"Be prepared."

"Yes ~ yihihihhi!"

Yihi danced with glee.

Chapter 179: Saintess (1)

The griffin, Gigantes, the hydra...and Yihi!

The number was small, but exceptional existences emerged from the dungeon.

In particular, the hydra was beyond imagination and its body could be seen from a very far distance.

Except for Yihi, the combination was something that I couldn't hide.

Immediately after exiting the dungeon, there was a huge sound. The hydra left huge marks behind it as it destroyed the terrain while the griffin flew in the sky.

Kung! Kuuong!

I wandered around Seoul after coming out.

There were three high class creatures so the humans couldn't approach at all.

"Guild Master, what should I do? I am ready for battle..."

Yoo Eun-hye muttered in a small voice. Yoo Eun-hye, Edward and elite members of Heaven's Will were chasing after the high

class creatures. The role given to them was to observe without going closer.

Fortunately, the creatures were only moving within Seoul without acting, but they didn't know when that would change.

“...How terrible.”

However, Kim Yong-woo didn't answer. Kim Yong-woo could feel a little bit of the strength of the three creatures. It was especially strong from the huge creature with nine heads.

Without even looking at it, an instinctive warning rang in his head to avoid it as much as possible.

“A monster wave?”

No matter how strong Yoo Eun-hye was, she couldn't hunt a high class monster. It was to the extent that she would only be able to buy time.

Kim Yong-woo shook his head.

“That's not it. It seems to be related to the change in the dungeon...”

It was difficult to know what was going on. He couldn't guess what the three creatures had gathered together to do.

So they needed to keep as far away from the three creatures as possible.

In the meantime, the high class creatures faced a group of orcs that hadn't evacuated yet.

Kwang! Kururung!

The first one that moved was Gigantes. On top of that, the griffin used a breath attack from above. Dozens of orcs couldn't react and were melted.

The hydra didn't attack.

However, it was absolutely stronger than the griffin and Gigantes.

Just seeing it was enough to cause a tremor to run through his body.

It wasn't only Kim Yong-woo. The elites could only watch the slaughter with fear.

“Crazy...”

There was no need to look twice.

Kim Yong-woo's mouth moved before he thought about it.

"Tell the other teams. Absolutely never touch that group."

"Yihihi~"

Yihi was excited.

This was the first time she had left the dungeon and experienced Earth.

This was a new and thrilling experience for Yihi. She always felt joy when exploring unknown things.

Now everything seemed lovely in Yihi's eyes.

She sat on one of the hydra's heads and looked down at the ground.

"It would be great if Yihi could build a garden in this place. What do you think?"

Below her were the corpses of the orcs, but Yihi didn't care at all. She saw corpses every day.

"Little fairy! Be in trouble! From Master!"

Gigantes vehemently opposed the idea. He had a great deal of experience with Yihi's playfulness.

"Do you think Yihi is going to do something bad?"

"Yes! Please!"

"No. Yihi will only do good deeds in the future. The garden...well ~ that's right."

"What?"

"You don't know? Yihihhi. Are you a big fool? Yihi knows many things ~"

Yihi was irritating Gigantes.

In fact, Yihi didn't even know what she was saying.

She just thought that Gigantes' reaction was funny.

"Little fairy! Trouble!"

Yihi didn't listen at all.

She showed a willingness to establish a base here.

Yihi's eyes flashed and she grabbed a few seeds.

Soon afterwards, she sneakily hid it from Gigantes' eyes and scattered the seeds on the ground.

“Yihihihhi!”

I watched the movement of the creatures from afar.

‘Duke Martin. Will he be watching? Or...’

The creatures had been moving for three days. They seemed to be wandering aimlessly, but every action was being observed by Martin.

‘Where are you hiding? There certainly must be a goal. Show your movements.’

I searched for the location where Martin might be hiding. On the surface, I seemed to be cleaning up the creatures around my dungeon but my purpose was Martin's death.

‘Martin can see a set future. He is the most difficult to kill of Pandemonium's demons. I must use this opportunity to kill him.’

The ability to see the future was a cheat but it was far from universal. There were many restrictions and the future was uncertain.

But when it came to his 'life', he became aware of situations where he could become a ghost. In my previous life, he was one of the demons who survived until the end.

Martin attacked Seoul using the creatures but disappeared as soon as the high class ones left the dungeon.

However, he wouldn't have retreated.

He was hiding somewhere and watching for an opportunity.

The problem was determining Martin's goal.

I was waiting for his next move because I couldn't guess.

'This?'

A few days had passed.

I discovered a group of goblins carrying something.

They were moving a few human females. I immediately noticed that the females were Awakened.

‘What are they trying to do by catching Awakened?’

My eyes narrowed. It was true that the Korean Awakened had remarkable growth compared to the Awakened of other countries, but there was no reason to capture them.

If he wanted points, it was better just to wipe them out. Awakening wasn't hereditary so there was no need to kidnap them.

They were also only women.

If it was simple lust, there was no reason to only choose the Awakened.

‘There is something.’

I had an intense hunch.

I slowly and quietly followed the goblins. I needed to act cautiously to stay below Martin's radar.

A cave inside the mountains.

A lich examined the women captured by the goblins.

"Tsk, the tanned skin means that I can't easily determine their

age.”

The lich’s gleaming eyes seemed to penetrate through the women.

A total of eight women were trembling with fright as they avoided its eyes.

They wanted to live but when they examined the surroundings, their mouths naturally stayed closed. There were dozens, perhaps hundreds of naked women all over the place. They were all pale like the blood had been drained from them when they died.

There were some who weren’t dead, but trapped in a cage. And...some were being used as the playthings of the creatures. It was clear that they would soon die.

“Huoooh...”

“P-please spare me.”

The women burst into tears.

They didn’t want to die. Even if they were Awakened, they all cared about preserving their lives.

The lich said cynically.

“Kulkul, don’t worry. If you are ‘suitable’ than you will receive more hospitality than anyone else. I just need to verify it first. You should answer honestly. Humans in their 20s, raise your hands.”

Six people raised their hands.

The lich nodded.

"The goblins brought the proper ones this time."

The lich reached out to the two women who didn’t raise their hands.

Chwack!

They were beheaded.

It happened in the blink of an eye.

".....!"

The women stiffened. They couldn’t scream. Their mental strength was stronger due to the increased intelligence, but that was useless in the face of death. Every women had a limit.

"There is no need for those not in their 20s. Now, the rest are in their 20s, correct?"

It was silent.

The lich didn't like it and moved his fingers.

“No answer. Tsk tsk.”

“T-that's right...”

"2...23."

The surviving six women responded.

The lich took the next step.

It took out a small water bottle that continued a white mucus.

"From now on, I will feed you this potion. If you are suitable, there will be a sign on your body. If not, you will end up like those women over there."

He pointed to the women who were the playthings of the creatures. Their flesh was cut with a knife while their mouths were forced to do shameful things to the orcs. Little by little, the women who couldn't scream anymore were killed.

They thought this place was hell.

The ones who reached their limits were killed by the creatures.

"Drink."

The lich forced the bottle into the mouth of a woman.

The woman resisted as much as possible but the lich forced it into her mouth.

"Cough! Cough!"

As soon as she drank it, the woman's body started twisting in strange directions. She collapsed on the ground and her mouth became slack after 30 seconds.

"It seems like you aren't suitable. Well, there are still five women left so it isn't hopeless."

"W-what should we be suitable for?"

A woman who was watching barely managed to open her mouth.

The lich paused for a moment and replied.

"Duke Martin can see the future. He predicted that a 'saintess' would be born on this narrow land mass. I am trying to figure out

if you are the 'saintess.' Has that answered your question?"

"S-Saintess..."

"Kulkukul. It seems unlikely that a powerful saintess would be born on this earth, but Martin-nim's prophecies are never wrong."

The lich once again grabbed a potion.

The women bit their lips with a gloomy expression.

Chapter 180: Saintess (2)

‘Saintess. I see.’

I was hiding in the darkness and listening to the lich’s story.

I was wondering why they were attacking the humans so intensely, but now I had a clear reason.

Saintess. The holy woman. The complete opposite to the demons.

Naturally she would be a challenge. The Saintess used powerful holy magic like the angels.

A person like that was going to appear in South Korea.

But the timing was strange. Was it because of the Trees of Life and Death?

If so, there was a high possibility that the Saintess hadn’t appeared yet.

‘Martin might be acting independently of Pandemonium.’

Although it was limited, Martin could see the future and was acting to remove her beforehand. It was impossible to see far into the future but he could avoid my pursuit right now.

‘He is unaware that I am chasing him.’

If he knew then he would have stopped all activities. That didn’t meant there weren’t suspicions. Certainly, Martin's ability was limited.

He just detected ‘danger.’

I worried about it for a short moment. I was standing at a crossroad of whether to grab the lich or to leave.

‘I need to find his goal first.’

The potion could recognize the saintess but I couldn’t predict when Martin would move his base.

If I continued my chase then it would be an uphill fight.

Rather...it was better if he came to where I was.

‘This isn’t the main base. I need to monitor the bases and identify their movements. I will catch Martin after the Saintess is found.’

I shook my head and left.

In my previous life, there were many human Awakened called

‘Saintesses.’ They manifested in unspecified conditions and there were even instances of it occurring before the person Awakened. In short, I didn’t know where she would pop up.

The Saintesses were just as strong as the Awakened. The Saintess used her holy powers to drive out the demons and creatures, so many humans followed her.

Of course, there were questions.

The Saintess used holy power so wasn’t she related to angels?

Actually, the angels who descended to Earth made alliances with the Saintesses so it was reasonable to think so. However, the demons came to a different conclusion.

Believing was different from following God. The Saintesses were from earth while Heaven was an entirely different place. But...no one knew if ‘God’ had intervened or not. It was just a guess but someone that existed since the beginning of Earth used their hands to make the Saintesses.

‘I know something that the demons aren’t aware of.’

Late in the evening. I sat on the tallest building in Seoul and looked down. It was certain that a Saintess would be born somewhere where many humans were gathered.

I touched my jaw.

‘All of Earth’s gods are sealed in dungeons. Maybe...the destruction of a dungeon and the appearance of a Saintess is related.’

A Saintess was a woman called by a god. There were no gods on earth due to them being sealed in the dungeons.

Certainly, even in my previous life, the Saintesses appeared after the dungeon was destroyed. I might have hastened the emergence of the Saintesses. Of course, there were certainly more specific conditions.

I was just to blame for the time difference.

And...there were signs that a Saintess was a ‘weapon’ or a ‘holy’ person.

‘Martin is planning to use the Saintess for something.’

At first, I thought he was moving under Pandemonium’s orders. But based on this, Martin seemed to be moving on his own.

I found out he was aiming for a Saintess but I didn’t know what he wanted to do with her. Was he planning to make her his doll?

“F-forest! A forest appeared in the north!”

"What does that mean? A forest?"

"A place in the middle of nowhere became a forest!"

There was a sudden disturbance among the humans. The humans were shouting and making a fuss...I turned my confused eyes towards the north. Soon I was able to see a huge forest.

'What?'

I couldn't help but feel curious. The Trees of Life and Death were still growing. They didn't have the power to create a forest. I never ordered it which meant it was created by an external influence.

"What do we do? Should we report it?"

"If it is true, I think we should scout separately..."

"Watch out. There are bees everywhere. There are also king bees flying around. The number isn't a joke."

I nodded after hearing their words.

If there were bees in the forest then I could easily guess the culprit.

'Yihi.'

Yihi had an obsession with gardens and bees. There was a 99.9% probability that Yihi was the culprit.

The question was how she created a forest outside the dungeon.

‘Is it possible to set a terrain outside the dungeon now?’

This part wasn’t clear. It wasn’t as large as the one around the World Tree, but I hadn’t expected that.

‘Yes...I should use this as a sign.’

An idea suddenly emerged.

Yihi’s actions could be poisonous but they were also beneficial. It was just a forest but I decided to use it as a sign.

It would be an abrupt event for Martin. Martin wouldn’t be able to read Yihi’s improvised actions.

So...what if there was a good weapon in this sudden forest?

Perhaps Martin would think there was a ‘unique weapon’ in the forest. There were many vague points about the abilities of humans.

Martin would immediately dispatch some creatures to monitor the forest. Perhaps I might be able to discover Martin's position.

'I'll handle it as quietly as possible.'

I smiled with satisfaction.

The Awakened started exploring the forest in teams of 12. Their mission was to determine if the forest was a risk or not.

"It feels cold."

Edward muttered.

Despite it being a bright afternoon, it was dark inside the forest. The trees were high and thick, so little light came in.

"Damn, why did this forest suddenly rise up?"

Kim Yong-woo spat out with a tired expression.

A series of unimaginable things occurred to the world in quick succession so Kim Yong-woo's face was filled with suffering and exhaustion. He kept on having to adapt to hellish things so Kim Yong-woo wanted to rest for a little bit now.

"That is why we have to investigate. Guild Master. Do you think

we are here for a picnic?”

Lee Ji-hye pouted. She didn't know Kim Yong-woo's itinerary but it was his fate as a guild master.

"That isn't comforting... Please let this be a quiet incident. I'm sick of fighting.”

"Would guild masters of other guilds be talking like this?”

“Knock it off. You don't know what I've had to do.”

Kim Yong-woo bitterly muttered. It made a lot of sense.

Heaven's Will was stronger than other guilds, and thanks to that, the guild members were able to mature. He had to take care of all their affairs.

The guild masters of the other guilds gathered around him, but he didn't know if he liked this or not.

“Guild Master. Are you sulking?”

“What? We didn't come here to play. Quietly search the perimeter.”

Still, the guild master wasn't entirely aware of it yet. Yoo Eun-

hye laughed at Kim Yong-woo and Lee Ji-hye.

“You two look good together.”

"Don't they?"

Edward agreed with Yoo Eun-hye.

"What is wrong with you? Stop saying such terrible things."

"Eun-hye, do you want me to sew your mouth shut?"

There was an immediate reaction. Kim Yong-woo and Lee Ji-hye glared angrily at the two of them.

Yoo Eun-hye avoided their gazes and muttered in a small voice.

"Really go well together..."

They ignored her mumbling and the exploration resumed. It had already been more than an hour but they didn't find anything. At best, they spotted a king bee and a flock of honeybees.

Half of their tension was released. There were no apparent threats. Rather, it was more like the humans were a threat to this ecosystem.

After another 30 minutes.

"Stop."

Yoo Eun-hye stopped the party. Those behind her became nervous.

"What's going on?"

Kim Yong-woo carefully asked Yoo Eun-hye.

"There is something in front of us. It feels very dangerous."

"They haven't noticed us yet. We have the advantage."

Edward added.

Surung.

The atmosphere became tense as they took out their weapons. It felt dangerous but they would fight. After he entered the training room, Edward was able to become a strong warrior.

"It would be better if Edward and I go check it out. The rest of you should wait here. Don't forget to tell the other teams on the radio."

Yoo Eun-hye lowered her body.

There was a risk when investigating the forest. Moving like this would allow them to make more accurate judgements.

“Understood.”

Kim Yong-woo bit his lip.

The other Awakened were strong, but Edward and Yoo Eun-hye were unique among them. It was the right choice to support them from behind.

Soon Yoo Eun-hye and Edward hid their bodies. They used rapid movements and instantly disappeared from sight.

"What the..."

Kim Yong-woo sighed and took out his radio.

He wanted people to avoid provoking this area.

Three minutes later.

It wasn't a long time.

Kwang!

Kim Yong-woo and his group heard the sound of explosions.

Kwarurung!

The ground shook and the trees swayed.

"...Did they fail?"

He really didn't want to fight.

But it now seemed to be a combat situation.

"Prepare to fight. Yoo Eun-hye and Edward, join us."

The 10 remaining members, including Kim Yong-woo, swallowed their saliva.

There was a vibrating wavelength of magic power. The Awakened absolutely couldn't miss it.

The newly emerged enemy was strong.

But even so, they couldn't leave Yoo Eun-hye and Edward.

The 10 Awakened started to move quickly.

However...they had to stop after walking a few steps.

“Avoid it!”

Suaack!

Kwaang!

A spear of light shot past Kim Yong-woo’s cheek.

It hit the ground, causing a huge explosion and spreading bright light everywhere.

He closed his eyes for a moment and when he opened them again, he saw Yoo Eun-hye and Edward running.

Following them were a number of angels.

One of them gave off a really unusual feeling.

A little baby angel. The angel had four enormous wings and was being carefully held in the arms of another angel.

“Angels? Why are the angels...?”

"Don't just stand there!"

Yoo Eun-hye ran past while Kim Yong-woo was mumbling.

"Guild Master!"

"U-understood, I understand!"

Kim Yong-woo turned around after Lee Ji-hye cried out to him.

"Retreat! Run at full speed!"

Chapter 181: Saintess (3)

“Pant, pant, pant...”

"Cough! I was going to die..."

The people who escaped from the forest gasped for breath.

The angels stopped chasing after they left the forest.

It was like they could only act within the forest.

"What, pant pant, happened?"

Kim Yong-woo wiped the sweat off his brow and asked.

It wasn't possible while running away, but now the angels had disappeared so they could ask.

Yoo Eun-hye responded calmly.

“I saw a sword stuck in a rock. The angels seem to be protecting this sword.”

“What? A sword stuck in a rock?”

“Yes. Very...it was a sword that felt sacred.”

The words were very meaningful.

If so, didn't the forest and angels appear because of the sword?

Kim Yong-woo ended the talk as soon as possible. The information needed to be discussed with everyone.

The story of the sacred sword discovered in the forest soon spread among the humans.

Duke Martin.

He always kept his eyes and ears open. He use creatures and insects to stealthily listen to the humans.

‘The power of the Saintess will make my foresight complete.’

It wasn't that long ago that he had a prophecy. It had been less than a month. However, he was certain that a Saintess would appear in South Korea.

The problem was that he didn't know the exact time and place.

He didn't even know what the Saintess looked like. All Martin had foreseen was a woman in her 20s.

Thus far, his power was incomplete. He had the ability to see the future, but was very limited in what he could grasp.

That was always his complaint...in order to make his foresight complete, a god's blood was needed.

'God's blood. It is possible with the Saintess.'

A perfect example.

He felt a thrill just imagining it.

Duke Martin was an ambitious man.

He was currently in Pandemonium's faction, but it would be different if his power became much stronger.

He even thought about becoming a grand duke.

For that reason, he started moving as soon as he had the vision. It wasn't difficult for Martin to take control of the remaining creatures.

Martin stared into a crystal ball from a deep tunnel.

"The forest appearing is a good sign."

A sign announcing the advent of a Saintess!

A forest that contained a sacred sword.

He heard it from humans, but the angels guarding it meant it was obviously a 'sign.'

It meant that the emergence of a Saintess was imminent.

He hadn't discovered her yet but it would happen soon.

But...

'I can't get rid of an ominous feeling.'

There was something. He was frustrated because he couldn't figure out the answer.

'It hasn't been confirmed yet. If it is related to my death, there is nothing I can't foresee.'

He shook his head. No matter how uncertain his ability, it was possible to see a little bit ahead when it involved himself. In other words, he couldn't die.

'An existence that escapes from the principle of causality. I will

be this existence on Earth.'

Despite his unease, he couldn't help laughing.

Causality wasn't something that could be easily overthrown. And those who could overthrow it were called 'God.'

"I have figured out the location of the sword. I will go there directly."

He commanded all the creatures.

Anyway, he made a decision.

Martin pledged to take a more aggressive offense.

The movements of the creatures subtly changed.

The scattered creatures started to move through the forest.

'The fish is caught.'

I smirked. The creatures were moving.

Martin.

I was certain that he would want to secure the sword first.

The sacred weapon was for the Saintess. Of course, the Saintess had the power of attract this sword.

'It isn't a real sacred sword...but the bait is enough.'

It was the 'Lightning Sword (Epic)' that he bought for 2,000 achievement points. It didn't have good options for an epic grade weapon, but it was suitable for imitating a sacred sword.

'He moved straight away. As expected, was it due to the humans?'

Martin was cautious. I noticed that he had ears and eyes scattered all over, but it was hard to find all of them. As expected, he was also eavesdropping on the humans.

The rumours spread through the humans had an effect. Everything was as I planned.

Now all that was left...

'I won't interfere with the sword and will search for the Saintess.'

Martin led the creatures but he wouldn't expose himself. He would immediately retreat if there was danger.

Of course, there was still the possibility that I could catch Martin. Once he emerged from his hiding place, I could grab him. But there was also the possibility of missing.

I wanted more assurances before grabbing Martin.

In order to do so, I needed the card called a Saintess.

I would use the time while Martin was distracted by the sword.

‘A Korean Saintess...there was one.’

I had the memories from my previous life.

The Saintesses made quite a name for themselves and I remembered that one was Korean. There was definitely one person who became an Awakened quite late...

‘Kim Yura.’

I nodded.

It was unlikely that there would be another woman with the qualities of a Saintess.

Kim Yura. That was the name of the South Korean Saintess.

‘By now...she should be in her mid-teens.’

I roughly recalled her characteristics.

It was time to meet Roy and Rose.

Late in the evening.

Someone moved under the full moon.

I opened my magic power.

“My Dungeon Master.”

“Chrisley. Have you been well?”

The roof of the tallest building.

I smiled at the person approaching. The still veiled Chrisley came forward and kneeled down.

“It isn’t a very difficult job. Apart from Rose who is a bit of a troublemaker, Roy is very trustworthy.”

Chrisley said with a light expression.

She often looked sad after Krasla died, but she seemed to have overcome it.

Roy and Rose helped heal the wounds in her heart.

“Roy and Rose?”

“They are asleep. Should I wake them up?”

“You don’t need to wake them up. You...and the girin should be enough.”

I moved my gaze. The girin appeared in an empty space.

The horn on her forehead and nine long tail were her trademarks. The girin stared at me with an expressionless face.

“It has been a while.”

"It seems like you can use your abilities more effectively."

"I have learnt how to tie space together."

"Hoh...is that possible?"

"I came instantly because it is possible. Rather, what happened? I hadn't seen you since that first time."

Her tone was filled with thorns.

I had told the girin the location of the enemy dungeons and then left.

After that, she went through quite a lot.

Not long afterwards, she was inundated with problems.

"I need to find someone. Her name is Kim Yura. She is in her mid to late teens. A woman."

I didn't care.

The girin hadn't expected this and shook her head.

"Who is she? The person you are looking for wouldn't be an ordinary person right?"

"Don't worry about it. I won't harm humans."

"Then you will harm the demons. Is the human a threat to you? So you want to cut off the bud?"

“It is similar, but no. No human can threaten me.”

There were few demons who could threaten me individually. Only an alliance could keep me in check.

The girin had nothing to say. She realized it as well.

I turned around.

“Move covertly. There shouldn’t be any rumours. If you find her then bring her to me quietly.”

It needed to be done behind the scenes.

I made one or two traps to catch Martin.

The name of the baby angel was Hash.

Tashmal had looked after the angel egg I bought and shortly after, a cherub was born. I had trained Hash for a job. The angels’ growth was very fast so I gave Hash some special education.

Hash could create a few small light spears and would continue to grow in this battle situation. Of course, Tashmal opposed this. But there was a limited number of angels that could be used as a sign.

There was a possibility that Tashmal’s face and magic power

would be recognized, so there was no choice. However, Hash gave off a sacred feeling and his face wasn't known. He was perfect to be utilized as a sign.

And the angels who guarded Hash weren't weak. The angels guarding Hash and the sword were selectively screened.

I determined that it was a power that could pressure Martin. But it was a number that would allow Martin to make an attempt. These actions were designed to attack Martin and to make him take a bite.

Martin was watching the situation from a distance.

"Hmm...it is an obvious sign. The angels and high class creatures are keeping each other in check..."

Gigantes, the griffin and the hydra!

Even Martin couldn't easily touch the three creatures.

It was impossible not to receive heavy damage.

The hydra was especially unknown. There was a chance that the hydra was as strong as him. Maybe Martin would have moved directly.

However, those three creatures were now in the vicinity of the

forest. The angels were stopping the three creatures from entering the forest.

Although there were no direct attacks yet, it seemed like a conflict was going to happen.

‘Randolph Briggsiel. His dungeon is likely to be in South Korea. No, a demon wouldn’t leave angels alone. Maybe he will soon lead the creatures to attack them.’

Martin grabbed his staff.

It was inevitable that Randolph Briggsiel or other demons would become aware of the presence of the sword.

Even though the Saintess hadn’t appeared yet, the sacred sword had the power to attract one.

If he possessed it then finding the Saintess would be easy.

Another demon would be fine, but it would become complicated if the opponent was Randolph Briggsiel.

‘He is strong. There is also something unusual about him. He wouldn’t kill the Saintess. He might plan something similar to me.’

Martin started feeling a sense of urgency.

If the sword entered that guy's hands then his plan would be wasted.

His completed ability to read the future would go away.

‘I have to find the sword before those creatures attack the forest.’

Martin nodded.

The angels would have to move to stop the griffin, Gigantes and the hydra. He would be able to reach the sword without any problems.

"Great Worm, make a path through. A path leading to the very heart of the forest."

He had to find the sword first.

And...

"The Saintess will appear in critical moments. Have the dullahans and vampires attack the humans. Make the humans feel despair."

He had no thoughts about just stopping after obtaining the sacred sword.

Chapter 182: Saintess (4)

Vampires. The lords of the night. There were highly ranked among the 4Lv advanced creatures. Although they were a species with strong pride, the Dungeon Master's commands were absolute. They attacked humans and created zombies by injecting blood into them.

Injecting a real serum would make 'demi vampires,' but the human needed to have the aptitude so it wasn't easy.

After 28 days, the zombie effect vanished but it was effective in making humans panic. People they had known for a long time were attacking them as zombies so it was terrifying. And they needed to handle the vampires.

Vampires also liked malicious pranks. They ordered the zombies to attack the people closest to them.

"Sung-mi, it's me. Don't you recognize Oppa? Sung-mi! Please!"

"Kuaaaak!"

A rundown shack. A scream could be heard coming from it. Siblings, family members, friends...the zombies spread rapidly, causing the Awakened to suffer many difficulties.

An emergency meeting was quickly called but no proper solution emerged.

People needed to stay away from dark places as much as possible. Every Awakened also limited their patrol.

Above all, the citizens were exhausted. Their stress was on the verge of exploding. The people might rebel.

A dilemma. They couldn't allow the damage to increase further.

The guilds united in order to deal with the situation.

"We are dealing with vampires. It isn't just one or two."

The guild masters and main personnel of the guild were assembled.

Yoo Eun-hye came out and started the briefing.

She was the most prominent Awakened so Yoo Eun-hye played the biggest role in the operation.

Her sporty and youthful appearance made her very popular among men, but she used the lightning magic sword. Her usual way of talking meant she was known as the iron-wall girl.

It was the same even now.

She wasn't nervous at all as she casually explained.

"First...let's look at the vampire I captured."

Tak! Yoo Eun-hye clapped her hands, making Kim Yong-woo and Lee Ji-hye pull out a wheeled cage. The guild master Kim Yong-woo being used for such a chore showed how urgent the situation was. The concentration of the other guilds focused.

Many people were amazed as they saw the creature sagging like a corpse inside the cage.

"This..."

"A vampire?"

Yoo Eun-hye nodded.

"That's right. This is a captured vampire. I was only able to catch it after a hard battle. Really...there was a lot of damage. It is due to this vampire that I've called you here."

Yoo Eun-hye gritted her teeth. Vampires were persistent. Hundreds of Awakened had died.

They had to be very careful releasing knowledge about this vampire to the public.

Only the main members of each guild were allowed to attend.

“Ha!”

"How great."

But the people were greatly amazed by the results.

This wasn't the first time that vampires had appeared. They had been found in many countries and their strength was authenticated. It was surprising that one managed to be captured.

“We questioned the vampire to find out why they are attacking South Korea and turning people into zombies. After making its body weak, I succeeded with the help of various medicines and hypnotics.”

It was somewhat provocative. Still, it was better to explain it now compared to later. If she openly talked about it then there was no need to worry about being caught from behind.

“Look at this. The vampire has a lot of these bottles containing white substances.”

Yoo Eun-hye pulled out a small bottle. There was a diluted, white drug inside it.

“What is it?”

Yoo Eun-hye answered the leader of the Platinum Guild's question.

"It is a drug to identify something. If ingested by normal humans, it is just a deadly poison."

"Identify?"

"Prior to this...how many Awakened have disappeared since the raid of the creatures began?"

"The struggle against the creatures was harsh."

"Everybody thought so. It is reasonable not to find the bodies. But that wasn't it."

Yoo Eun-hye took a deep breath before saying.

"They are looking for a Saintess. This drug is the tool to determine the Saintess. Unfortunately, we found out that...a demon is certainly behind this."

"Demon...!"

"Crazy! Aren't they gone?"

The people murmured. It was natural. They had experienced firsthand the terrible strength of the demons. They thought it was finished after the 'Saviour' took care of them, but now a demon had appeared again.

They hugged their bodies tightly and trembled. All the Awakened gathered here were the elite.

"The important thing is the Saintess. The demon is afraid of the emergence of a Saintess. So the creatures are moving to find her."

"Then we must find the Saintess."

"Yes. It would be possible if we could use this drug."

"But doesn't the drug cause death?"

"That is for common people. I was told that it has no effect on the Saintess."

There was a clear gap in Yoo Eun-hye's words.

All the people here realized it.

"How will we know who the Saintess is? No, then we wouldn't even need the drug."

“Don’t you think it is strange that the Saviour’s children and the girin aren’t present at such an important meeting? Some guilds are also missing.”

“.....? They are very busy people. It is also hard for all the guilds to attend.”

None of them thought it was strange. Roy, Rose and the girin rarely attended meetings.

"I...Heaven’s Will has been wondering about the movements of the guilds who aren’t here. In particular Roy, Rose and Girin-nim have been using reliable people to search for someone.”

"That sounds dangerous. Are you doubting them?"

At least in South Korea, they were divine beings. The girin was worshipped as a god while Rose and Roy received special hospitality as the Saviour’s children.

In South Korea, doubting them was blasphemy.

But Yoo Eun-hye didn’t hesitate to nod.

“I am convinced that the person they are looking for is the ‘Saintess.’ And they have more information than we do. They are moving with confidence.”

"So...what did you want to talk about?"

"Cooperation is required. It is hard for Heaven's Will alone to pressure them. I want them to either disclose this information to us or we will tell the public."

"Madness."

A one word summary. It was madness.

It wasn't a peaceful situation so they couldn't afford to take such behaviour. There was no need to divide their power.

They should close their eyes to something if it was only a little questionable.

Even if Yoo Eun-hye's words were true, it should be covered up.

"I have no intention of agreeing with that crazy idea. I won't listen anymore."

The leader of the Platinum Guild rose from his seat along with his guild members.

At the same time, the door opened to reveal a number of Awakened.

All the Awakened were members of Heaven's Will or had a close relationship with them.

Yoo Eun-hye spoke with an expressionless face.

"Only those who agree can leave. Those who don't...will have to wait here until this is resolved."

"Are you trying to force us? The Heaven's Will guild has really gone crazy! Your ego has gotten away from you after being held up as the best guild! There will be a war!"

"We are not afraid of a war. What is really scary..."

Yoo Eun-hye continued after a moment of silence.

"The possibility of giving up our rights and going down the wrong path."

I was walking a tightrope with Martin.

I couldn't decide if I should appear to attack the forest or not.

In the meantime, Martin had invaded the forest twice.

'All the attempts failed.'

His plan to use the great worm to dig a tunnel was good. He came near the sword and threatened the angels.

However, the angels forced him back into the tunnel and minimized the damage. In contrast, Martin lost most of his creatures.

The second attempt was by air. He sent a group of wyverns carrying creatures. The angels didn't fly, they hid in the dense forest and used long distance attacks. The angels seemed to have expected enemies in the air due to their wings.

‘How interesting.’

These were all issues that I pointed out.

I was currently in the forest. I hid in the vicinity of the sacred sword and watched. The angels truly didn't know where I was.

However...

“Kyaaah~”

Hash.

He was different.

He figured out my location and approached me.

The baby angel born a few weeks ago came up to my shoulders. There was a backlash from yin magic and holy magic battling, but he didn't suffer great damage.

Both of the powers inside him were strong and pure.

“This unusual fellow.”

Usually angels instinctively hated demons. I wasn't significantly different. He just had a wider range of defense against other demons.

I briefly used Mind's Eye.

Name: Hash

Occupation Upper Rank Angel (Cherub) Title

Cherub's Authority (Legend, All stats +7)

Stats

Strength 12 (+7) Intelligence 35(+7)

Agility 20 (+7) Stamina 12 (+7)

Magic Power 44(+7)

Potential: (123+35/548)

Uniqueness: An angel born under the care of a fallen angel. It is impossible to predict how he will grow due to the combination of the Celestial King's Blessing, Origin Blessing and other variables.

Skill: Small Light Arrow (U)

Demons had the potential to overcome their limit when they were born. What about an upper rank angel? I couldn't understand the strength in Heaven.

However...looking at this, it felt like demons were weaker than angels.

After seeing the essence of demons when using Corruption, it seemed as if demons were weakened as a whole.

‘Okullos was aware of it.’

That's why Okullos cried out for evolution.

If he knew he was far ahead of other demons, he might have re-evaluated. He was already dead, but I understood him a bit more.

“Kyaaah~”

Hash was still young. But he wouldn't always stay young. He was growing fast due to being affected by the surroundings. He wasn't afraid but it was better than him being hostile towards me. Somehow my status as Dungeon Master seemed to affect the cherub.

I was just about to poke Hash's forehead when I heard something.

-My Dungeon Master.

It was Chrisley's voice.

“What's going on?”

As I pulled out a crystal ball to talk, Chrisley replied in a somewhat excited voice.

-I've found the Saintess.

Chapter 183: Half Awakening (1)

Finally!

There was a cynical smile on my face.

I could finally obtain the decisive card to catch Martin.

“Have you acquired her?”

-Not yet. There is a little bit of trouble.

"Trouble?"

-The humans are requesting that we disclose information about the Saintess. It seems like they noticed our movements...

I tilted my head to the side. I didn't know how the humans obtained information about the Saintess. I hadn't received a report about this.

“What happened?”

-They captured one of Duke Martin's vampires.

“Vampires have strong egos. They only follow the Dungeon Master so how was the information obtained?”

-Drugs and various skills. The human Awakened have many skills that I don't know.

Certainly.

There were many humans. They all had different skills.

It was completely different from the creatures, who gave off a similar feeling.

"They wouldn't just suddenly move. There has to be a leader."

-Yes. My Dungeon Master, Yoo Eun-hye and Heaven's Will are the ones taking the lead.

Tak. I frowned.

I hadn't expected that they would be the cause behind an affair like this.

If they were involved then it made sense that Chrisley wouldn't be able to move easily.

‘Why?’

I worried about it for a while. The issue about the Saintess was

still top secret. I didn't know detailed information about the Saintess and was using her as bait to catch Martin.

If the humans obtained the Saintess then I was concerned my plans would have to be changed.

‘Martin might have also noticed.’

Martin was annoying.

In Martin's case, he had eyes and ears among the humans. It was quiet now but if he heard the truth about the Saintess...he would certainly aim at Roy, Rose and Chrisley.

“Has the Saintess awakened?”

-She isn't an Awakened. However, I have confirmed a pure holy power. I wasn't sure but Tashmal recognized it.

Tashmal had the best eyes to determine holy power. If Tashmal acknowledged her then it was highly likely she was a Saintess.

‘I need a sure fire way to turn their eyes away.’

Particularly the human Awakened.

As they gained strength, their actions would escape my

calculations.

It was good that they had autonomous judgement but only when they were within my fence.

If they tried to go outside the fence then I had no reason to care for them.

“Chrisley, tell Roy and Rose. A large number of creatures will move...first, there will be a prophecy.”

-Prophecy...what?

“It will be a fake but real prophecy. It has to be suitable to make the humans move.”

In addition, it would be a way to make Martin flinch.

‘Humans. They are overlooking the fact that there is also a dungeon in South Korea.’

Was it because the dungeon was quiet now?

It seemed like they needed to experience it once again.

And this move would also deceive Martin.

The restructuring of the dungeon was necessary. The structure change meant the ecosystems of the creatures were out of balance. It was time for a housecleaning.

In the meantime, Roy became the ‘prophet’ at the centre of the humans.

"Once the biggest moon reaches the highest point, the entrance of hell will open and messengers will emerge. The messengers will devour all wicked beings. But they can't harm the Trees of Life and Death. Humans! Gather near both trees. We have to wait there for the evil to pass."

The Saviour's child was a prophet?

It was the first time. But apart from the girin and the Saviour, Roy had the largest influence among the humans.

Roy's words quickly spread throughout Seoul and people started to gather near the Trees of Life and Death.

And the full moon rose in the evening.

A huge 50,000 creatures exited the dungeon.

The creatures that represented South Korea's dungeon?

The saber tigers. They had the most numbers and were extremely

aggressive. A great number of creatures died from their long fangs.

White fiercely fought against the creatures of the other demon. Black followed behind him.

However, there wasn't only one black saber tiger. A total of seven black saber tigers had been born since then. Apart from White, the seven blacks were advanced 4Lv creatures.

There were at least 20 advanced 3Lv saber tigers. The number of normal saber tigers reached 3,000.

The next largest population was the minotaurs. 2,200 of them! Their unusual bodies were perfect for making the enemies panic.

Of course, they were many lowest grade and low grade creatures. The breeding rate of the orcs and goblins was beyond imagination.

The dark bears, mammoths and other beast-like creatures that matched the wavelength of the dungeon were also present. At any rate...I took out most of the lowest and low grade creatures with this move.

The remaining amount were intermediate or higher ranked creatures.

It was an overwhelming number to come from one dungeon!

The creatures immediately advanced towards the forest. They surrounded the forest and Seoul metropolitan area to create a dramatic situation.

Kim Yura was crying.

She lost her family and her 'self' due to the creatures. There were terrible burns on her face and the area below her waist was paralyzed. Her eyesight was very bad and she could barely see in front of her.

That wasn't all. She also lost all her hair.

She didn't die but was living a horrible life.

Nevertheless, she was still living due to her sister who was still alive.

She attempted suicide several times but was saved by her sister.

Her two year younger sister did everything she could so that Kim Yura would somehow live. Ever since the world became like this, she couldn't do that much but...her sister worked at a construction site in the morning and sneaked away in the evening for a 'night shift.'

Her sister thought she wasn't aware of this, but Kim Yura knew. If her sister didn't do this, Kim Yura wouldn't have been able to receive three meals a day.

Despite being on the outskirts, they lived in a moderately good shack. She guessed it was possible because her sister helped the Awakened and guilds with the construction.

"T-t-that...why...?"

Kim Yura spoke with difficulty. Her gums had melted so she couldn't properly speak. She thought this place was hell but she was worried about her little sister.

Her younger sister, Kim Min-ji had returned. Her face was swollen and bruised. Her hair was dirty and there were blood stains around her mouth.

"It's nothing. No, we have to get out of here quickly."

"Huh?"

"The Saviour's child has made a prediction. Creatures will soon be swarming this area. We need to take refuge beside the two trees. Other people have already left."

Kim Yura was carried into the wheelchair and Kim Min-ji started to push her.

Like Kim Min-ji said, many people were leaving the shacks.

On the other hand, they were bringing nothing but their own bodies. Somehow they were successful in joining the group of people, but that was all.

The procession was long and the speed was slow. Besides, Kim Min-ji was injured. Even if she received treatment, she was attracting attention by pushing a wheelchair around.

Kim Yura wanted to tell her sister to abandon her, but knew it would make things more difficult. Kim Yura tried everything she could to stay quiet.

Half a day passed and evening arrived.

The procession stopped for a while and Kim Min-ji slept leaning against the wheelchair.

"Bastards...collect...money...sister...I'll fix it..."

Kim Yura wept as she heard the words Kim Min-ji was muttering while sleeping. Kim Yura moved her hand to her sister's cheek and prayed for her.

She wanted her sister to live comfortably in this hellish world.

However, it didn't take long to realize that it was a dream.

The problem occurred on the next day.

She had a sore throat. She was hungry and her head was dizzy.

However, she couldn't obtain any food or drinks herself.

Kim Yura refrained from saying anything.

Kkoruruk!

However, she couldn't hide the response from her stomach.

“Unni, are you hungry? Just wait. I'll see if I can get you something.”

Kim Min-ji licked her dry lips and walked among the people. She only received cold glares in return. There was no one in this procession who would give away their food.

All the good people had already died...this was a saying that she had heard. She understood. Their lives were important and they had families.

In the end, she only managed to eat a little bit of herb porridge.

“Sorry, Unni. Tomorrow I will be sure to get something to eat.”

Kim Yura shook her head. She offered the bowl but Kim Min-ji

shook her head.

"I ate a little bit before coming back. If Unni doesn't eat then I'll just throw it away."

Her younger sister Kim Min-ji really was a child. Kim Yura ate a bit of bread and some herb porridge.

Not long after closing her eyes, she heard a rustling sound. When she opened her eyes, her sister was applying makeup on her injuries.

‘Ah...’

Kim Yura closed her eyes again.

This world was really hell.

The next morning, they were able to safely get something to eat. They had one sweet potato and a bottle of water.

"We just need to go a little further. Unni, have you seen Girin-nim? I've never seen someone more beautiful in this world. Unni would also think the same if you saw her. The children of the Saviour are cute. I've seen them once from afar."

Kim Min-ji continued talking while pushing the wheelchair.

She became relieved the closer they got to the centre of the building.

"I've never seen the Saviour. I've only heard stories about him. He is incredibly cool. The strongest in the world. Hihi. Isn't he like a prince charming?"

The Saviour.

Her sister was especially interested in the man called the Saviour.

He was like the prince charming who would save them from this hellish place.

In contrast, Kim Yura was skeptical.

Such people wouldn't be left in the world.

All the good people had died. Her sister was the only good person left.

"Vampire!"

"Aaaaack!"

It was at that time. The people at the front started screaming.

“U-Unni!”

It was dangerous as people bumped into the wheelchair.

She could barely hang on.

Kwang!

Kururung!

At that time, a partially collapsed building fell and caused an explosion.

The building's debris that fell all over the place...

“Avoid it!”

Kim Min-ji pushed the wheelchair.

Kim Yura fell out of the wheelchair but was able to survive.

“Ah...”

Her life was saved but her sister was lying underneath a steel beam.

Kim Min-ji's waist was crushed and her eyes weren't looking at anything.

“Ah...ahhh...!”

Kim Yura placed both hands on the ground. There was no way for her to move her legs.

But...Kim Min-ji wasn't breathing when she arrived.

“Ahhhhh!”

Kim Yura grabbed Kim Min-ji and tried to shake her. However, the person had already stopped breathing.

Like a kaleidoscope, memories of her sister passed through Kim Yura's head.

Devoted to Kim Yura...the light inside her couldn't be seen anymore.

Hate. She hated everything. Why did all the good people have to die? Why did God make this world so that only bad people could live?

At the same time, light started to shine around Kim Yura.

The light swallowed up everything around it.

Chapter 184: Half Awakening (2)

“She is awakening.”

A vast amount of holy power.

My skin was prickling.

I had been observing Kim Yura over the last few days to make sure she was the Saintess.

And she finally awakened.

The surrounding creatures couldn't withstand the light and were destroyed. In fact, the vampires were swept away by the light.

Even my transcendent skin was stinging.

‘But it is only a half awakening.’

I slowly went up to her.

The Saintess was still in a terrible state. Did she awaken due to her hatred of the world?

However, her body was bubbling due to the excess of holy power.

She would self-destruct in the near future.

So I called it half awakening.

In order to stop this rampage, I needed to erase her extreme emotions.

Therefore...I approached her quietly.

“Do you want to save her?”

I was looking at Kim Yura’s sister as I spoke.

Kim Yura didn’t answer. No, she couldn’t answer. However, I could see the expressions in her eyes. She was wondering about my identity since I had appeared out of nowhere.

“If you reply too late then I can’t save her. There is at most 20 seconds left.”

I prompted her for a reply. Actually, Kim Min-ji had just stopped breathing. There was still enough oxygen to save her. Of course, she wouldn’t be the same as before but it was possible to save her life.

“Ah...ah...”

Kim Yura regained her spirit and nodded.

"If I save your sister, what will you give me?"

Naturally it wasn't for free. I wasn't generous enough to just give something away.

I was a demon and would act strictly on a contract.

It wasn't normal circumstances so the contract wouldn't be that favourable.

There was no choice as time was short. There was only one thing that Kim Yura could give me.

'I will completely own her.'

Kim Yura seemed to be trying to speak. Her eyes only contained the desire to save her little sister.

In my previous life, Kim Yura wasn't a half awakened.

It was inevitable. Martin's invasion was created by me. Originally this hadn't happened.

In my previous life, Kim Yura awakened completely and became a Saintess who massacred demons and creatures. Although her

name wasn't that well known, it still held some weight because she was a Saintess.

I didn't know what effect the half awakening would cause, but she was still a Saintess. I just needed to somehow save her sister.

I took out a bottle from my magic bag.

'Originally, this was used for the manufacturing of homunculi.'

I shrugged. It was a potion made by Gaparam. It was the result of purchasing various expensive materials, ingredients from the Tree of Origin and six months' worth of work.

It was much better than the elixir. The potion could literally breathe life into someone who had stopped breathing. It wouldn't work on strong existences but was enough for a human.

A total of two were made and I had one of them. I had mixed my blood into this bottle.

The potion mixed with my blood and turned black.

I opened the bottle and fed half of it to her. The potion flowed down Kim Min-ji's neck and her body started to regenerate. In the case of her severed lower body, I could attach it again but decided not to. It was because the process would use up all of the potion.

The other half was for Kim Yura.

Blood returned to Kim Min-ji's face as life was gradually restored.

Kim Min-ji opened her eyes with a puzzled expression.

“Unni...?”

"Ah...!"

Kim Yura stretched out and hugged her. Her tears dried but she still needed to show her thanks.

"Drink."

I handed over the bottle that contained the other half of the potion.

Kim Yura hesitated for a moment so I said.

"It will improve your condition."

Bubbles were still forming on Kim Yura's skin. Her skin was already badly burned and the bubbles made it obvious that she would soon self-destruct.

The problem was the side effect from mixing in my blood...

'A contract of dependency. It is essential that she drinks my blood.'

I considered using her sister as a hostage but that meant she wouldn't move with 100% effort. A contract was necessary for her to help me voluntarily. I could feel more assured.

However, there was the possibility that there would be a backlash by the holy power against the blood of a demon. No, there was a high probability.

Still, I noted the half awakening.

Her imperfect holy power was devouring her body. My blood might play a role in neutralizing it. It was a 5:5 gamble.

The Saintess was already in my hands. As long as Martin didn't obtain her, it wouldn't be a huge loss if she died. Either way, the light from the forest was a 'sign' and Martin would be heading here. He didn't have significant strength so taking care of him wouldn't be a problem.

Gulp!

Kim Yura took the bottle and drank it without hesitation. She saw her sister surviving so she thought the potion was harmless.

However...

“Aaaaack!”

“U-Unni? No!”

There was an effect as soon as she swallowed it.

Her body twisted as the holy magic and my magic started to get tangled up.

'It is a fight.'

I watched the scene with my arms folded.

As expected, there were empty spots due to the half awakening. My magic power penetrated those empty areas and the fight started.

“Aaaaack!”

Kim Yura screamed and shuddered. Separate from the fight between magic powers, her body was slowly healing itself. The burns disappeared, the nerves below her waist were revived and her twisted posture was fixed.

"Hrmm..."

I touched my jaw.

I wanted to observe this process but an uninvited guest was coming.

‘Martin. You are coming directly!’

I started laughing.

A few kilometres away.

I felt a strong presence approaching.

It was clearly Martin.

‘He is apprehensive.’

The creatures from the dungeons came out and blocked his advance into the forest. In the end, Martin found it impossible to retrieve the sword that was a sign the Saintess had appeared.

I thought to myself.

If I missed this chance then it might not come again!

I would move directly.

‘I absolutely can’t miss him.’

So far Martin had been hiding and I couldn’t find him. Now that Martin had surfaced, there was no reason I couldn’t catch him.

I thought a little bit more before moving.

I couldn’t be hasty based on circumstantial evidence.

Impatience could be a sin.

I hid my traces and disappeared.

A pillar of light covered the sky.

Martin realized the Saintess had emerged as soon as he saw it.

It was similar to what he had foreseen.

He had lost a lot of vampires, but there wouldn’t be any damages if he could obtain the Saintess.

"I'll have to go there directly. Have all the creatures follow me!"

He had a total of 30,000 creatures following him now in South Korea.

He originally had more but 20,000 creatures had already been killed.

Gargoyles darkened the sky. There were also wyverns and king wyverns. All types of creatures in the ground started wriggling.

Their destination was the place where the light occurred.

'I can't miss her this time. I have to quickly obtain the Saintess.'

He had no intention of confronting South Korea's Dungeon Master. It was a pity but the number and quality of Martin's troops were far inferior. How were such troops gathered? A large army had emerged.

Maybe...Pandemonium was right about Randolph Brigsiel. He was irregular. A person who couldn't be easily messed with. He didn't know what would happen but he didn't worry about Randolph Brigsiel.

At any rate, Martin's goal here was to obtain the Saintess. As long as he could return to his dungeon safely, he had the confidence to stop strong enemies.

He just needed to pass this place safely.

"C-creatures...!"

"Help me!"

Creatures were moving in the sky and on land. It was like a natural disaster that the humans couldn't resist. The large number of humans moving towards the centre were wiped out by the creatures. There wasn't even a piece of bone left in the areas where the creatures passed.

It happened so suddenly that the humans couldn't cope. All that remained were a small handful of Awakened.

'My wait is over. I will take away the power of the Saintess and become complete.'

Perfect predictions!

If that was possible then he wouldn't have to fear anything.

Martin believed that there was no perfect and flawless existence. Information was power and his foresight could figure out the weaknesses of the opponent. Even strong existences had weaknesses so they would fall to Martin sooner or later.

That was why he took these risks.

Even now, weak alarm bells were ringing. The word ‘danger’ passed through his mind. However, he had come to this place for a reason.

“This...?”

It happened when he had almost arrived at the destination.

Martin frowned as he looked at something floating in the sky.

It was familiar. He had seen him a few times at the Demon World Auction.

The magic power was overwhelming. It was strange that he hadn’t noticed until he reached here.

“Randolph Brigsiel!!”

Martin exclaimed with shock.

Indeed!

It really was his dungeon!

But there didn’t seem to be any other creatures around. That meant he was alone.

He had hindered himself.

“Kill him! Cut off the flesh, pull out all his hair and split him open!”

The 30,000 creatures rushed simultaneously towards Randolph Briggsiel.

Chapter 185: Half Awakening (3)

Indeed, I couldn't kill 30,000 creatures alone.

Despite entering the realm of transcendence, I was still an individual. Of course, I noticed that there were no high class creatures among them.

Nevertheless, the reason for my actions was simple.

‘Martin is here.’

No other reason was needed.

Martin was in my sights.

There was no need for me to handle all 30,000 creatures. I just needed to kill him.

‘Half of them are creatures born in South Korea. If Martin is killed, his control will be lost and they will fight among themselves.’

I wouldn't need to touch the other creatures if I dealt with Martin.

They would struggle among themselves and I wouldn't need to get my hands dirty.

‘It will be a grand sight.’

I didn’t lose my smile at the creatures approaching me.

It was the first time I had confronted such a large army alone.

It was a scene I’d dreamed of many times but I knew my limitations. Now that scene was unfolding in front of me.

I was stronger.

There was no comparison with my previous life!

There was a noticeable difference in the way I looked at the world after becoming stronger.

I learnt how to deal with this.

I stretched out both hands.

Hwaruruk!

Pride’s flames sprang up from my body.

At the same time, another power emerged.

It was the 'Power of Domination'

'A skill that has a low probability of controlling an opponent in a critical condition. Now I should use it against the army.'

What was more suitable when dealing with an army alone?

Grrrrr!

Lightning God excitedly popped out.

Fire and lightning were around me and ready to be fired at any time.

'Then...'

I turned my head.

I pulled out Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

'Let's start, Martin.'

I would win or he would win.

My heightened feelings caused Wrath to tremble. It would be

good information for Pandemonium if he saw my force, but conversely, it could also be a deterrent.

If Pandemonium lost Martin, he would have to hesitate before acting. The cumulative damage meant he would have to concentrate on recovery.

I would use that time to further the distance between us. No, it was quite possible to devour Pandemonium. Without Martin, it was impossible for him to 'predict' his end.

'If I move alone, the probability of him getting a vision about it is low.'

I knew roughly what Martin could foresee. If thousands of my creatures moved here then Martin wouldn't have showed up. Since I was alone, Martin came here despite some risk.

However, this was also a significant gamble for me.

If I missed Martin today then Pandemonium's attacks would become more persistent and he would use a number of creatures that were difficult to deal with. So...I had to catch Martin.

If I moved a big army then Martin's foresight would likely catch it.

"Get lost."

Kuwuuong!

I opened up all my magic power and diverted it into the surroundings. My influence spread out over a few kilometres. At the same time, Martin and the creatures shivered and stopped moving.

Those who couldn't withstand my magic power fell. Martin and I were both Dungeon Masters, however even he had trouble enduring my power.

The lowest and low grade creatures were terrified. Some of the creatures were trampled on and died.

I moved my feet. Every time I moved my legs, the ground moved from the burst of magic power like it was welcoming me. This phenomenon occurred when there was an excessive amount of magic power.

I had a high density of magic power so...Pride's flames grew bigger and bigger. The wings of flames grew bigger and swallowed up dozens of creatures with every flap.

It was in the final form after all my magic power was opened. Of course, Lightning God was also affected.

Kwaaaang!

Lightning God was literally lightning. Lightning stirred in every place where Lightning God passed. Hundreds of lightning strikes burned the enemy and the lightning rose into the sky, forming a lightning storm.

Lightning in the sky and Pride's wings on the ground!

I alone moved both powers.

Kwaang!

The first one that I approached was a twin head ogre. I pressed down with my transcendent power and blocked the fists with Pride's wings. The strong flames covered the twin head ogre.

Keoooook!

Pride's flames would never go out unless I commanded it. Pride's flames encroached on the twin head ogre's upper body and spread out a little bit. I stabbed its heart with Wrath.

-Power of Domination has been used. The twin head ogre that lost one of its two hearts will now follow Randolph Brigsiel.

The power will slowly erode the opponent's spirit. At first it might be somewhat rebellious. However, it will never harm its master and will become completely obedient over time.

I was lucky.

It was the first time that power had manifested.

I erased Pride's flames from its body. The twin head ogre had complex emotions in its eyes.

It was still hostile towards me but its body was different.

“Attack those aiming for me.”

Once the command was given, the twin head ogre started to move immediately. Its face was confused but its big fists were already heading towards nearby creatures.

Kuuong! Kuuong!

The orcs were hit with a series of punches. The same side was attacking them so the creatures couldn't cope.

‘How fun.’

It turned out like this.

It seemed like a lot of interesting things could happen depending on its use.

In order to do this, I needed to attract more creatures.

It was like enjoying the taste of a free beer.

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword moved at once. Haien Moon's swordsmanship stretched out smoothly. My movements were similar to Haien Moon but they were a little bit more violent.

I moved like the moon was splitting.

I had improved Haien Moon's swordsmanship to reflect my own will.

Kwarung!

The creatures running from every direction were shattered.

But they were still annoying. I stamped my foot down. My feet were placed strongly on the ground and the land showed the aftermath of that power.

The earth rose like a wall and divided the creatures. I repeated this act twice and increased the length of the barrier. The creatures started attacking in a more orderly manner.

I smiled cynically. However, it was much more cheerful than usual.

A carefree feeling!

That's right. I now felt a sense of liberation. This was the first time I opened up all the power in my body since facing Okullos.

In particular, there had been no chance since becoming transcendent.

I had imagined it to an extent. I wondered what it would be like to have enough power to be free.

I imagined it on a daily basis. And now it was becoming a reality.

‘Nothing is impossible for me.’

I felt confident that I could accomplish everything.

I had that type of power.

In reality, I was much stronger than what I imagined.

This was the power of transcendence.

I was thrilled with myself.

I couldn't imagine what Martin was feeling as he watched me.

He would be gloomy. His chest would be tight and his face white.

I've experienced that a few times in my previous life. It was mainly when dealing with the grand dukes.

'I will win.'

Before starting, I was dubious.

However, now I was certain.

This fight would end with my victory!

I expressed my power with every movement of my sword. The more I attacked, the more creatures went on my side.

The chaos overlapped and I ended up close to Martin.

"You...Randolph Briggsiel!!"

Martin cried out with dismay.

It was unbelievable. He couldn't believe it.

This much magic power. This presence...

The overwhelming power that he had only felt from a grand duke!

They had become weak after coming to Earth. They were quickly regaining their strength. But nobody had crossed the wall yet.

Yet the one in front of him had climbed over it. He had climbed the wall to a great height.

Why hadn't Martin predicted this?

'My foresight is on the border of reality. A transcendent person is an unrealistic existence. My foresight can't see...'

If would have been possible if Randolph had moved with a multitude of creatures.

But Martin's foresight couldn't predict it when he was moving alone.

Randolph Brigsiel.

Martin honestly hadn't understood why Okullos and Ariel Diablo were nervous about him. Even Pandemonium was focused on him.

All he had was more points than anyone else. Martin thought his power wasn't that great.

No. He saw wrongly. He had felt pride in his eyes that could see most things.

Now Randolph had an army on his side. Whenever he swung his sword, the creatures would move to his side.

Martin commanded the creatures but it was like they couldn't hear it.

‘It is unbelievable.’

An authority beyond a Dungeon Master!

He couldn't believe that a demon had this strength.

However...it was right in front of him. This was the reality.

Martin was annoyed. He was also sick to his stomach. He had made this gamble in order to gain complete foresight, only to have a transcendent demon appear and laugh at him.

How on earth?

He couldn't guess at all.

There was a limit to how strong someone could get. In particular,

no matter how inaccurate, his foresight should have seen it.

However, Randolph remained out of sight until the end.

So he couldn't easily believe it.

"You...Randolph Briggsiel!!"

He made a desperate declaration.

Then his foresight was triggered.

It was an unchanging 'I will die here!'

He gritted his teeth. But he couldn't die.

"Change the axis of time. Time for you and I will flow differently."

Martin's strongest skill, 'Time Axis (Epic)' was triggered.

It was a skill that affected the time in a three kilometre radius. Some would move faster, others would slow down and some wouldn't move at all. It wasn't possible to designate a target for the skill but it was a gamble that could increase his survival rate.

But...

- 'Time Axis (Epic)' has been discovered by 'Mind's Eye.'

Defended against 50%!

Defended against 13%!

The opponent's high intelligence and magic power will nullify 'Time Axis' altogether.

“What...?”

It had been completely invalidated.

The skill had already started yet it was possible to break it?

But that person just laughed.

It was helpful for him.

Randolph came close and wielded his sword.

Could Martin avoid it?

It was too late.

Martin wielded his staff. Illusions were summoned to block the front.

- 'Illusion Technique (Epic)' has been discovered by 'Mind's Eye.'

“Crazy...”

All methods were blocked.

It was really the worst case situation.

There was such an overwhelming difference in power...

"I can't die until my foresight is complete!"

Martin grinded his teeth together.

I stabbed him with Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

Martin was gone. At the same time, the creatures started a crazy rampage.

I plucked out both of Martin's eyes.

‘I’ll give them to Gaparam.’

They were eyes that allowed foresight. The effect had disappeared due to Martin’s death, but if they were refined then some of their abilities could be recovered. The eyes would be a good material for a homunculus.

I placed the eyes in my magic bag and turned off Pride’s flames. Lightning God returned to me.

‘Now I have to see the Saintess.’

I had suddenly left in the middle of her changes. I had to confirm the results.

I turned around without any fear. I ran towards the place where the Saintess was.

Kim Yura was lying down.

Her body was recovered while the holy power and my magic power were mixed together stably.

I had been uneasy but they were actually rather balanced.

‘Saintess of Harmony.’

I laughed as I used Mind's Eye to check her status window.

The occupation column contained 'Saintess of Harmony.'

I had expected something like 'corruption' but the the result was completely different.

It might be because my magic power was pure.

'The contract is formed. You are now mine.'

Anyway, I had obtained a Saintess. It wasn't a bad income.

I carried Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji on my shoulders. And...I returned to the dungeon. It was the first time I opened all of my magic power so I felt a little bit tired.

'I will leave cleaning this up to Yihi.'

Chapter 186: Sacred Zone (1)

Yihi was excited.

She had forcefully made a garden from on top of Gigantes. She had been afraid of Dungeon Master's anger but actually received praise. He even asked her to 'clean things up.'

“Yihihhi ~”

Yihi laughed from her place on Gigantes' head.

It was proof that he trusted her. Perhaps his order of faith was reversed, with Yihi ahead of Chrisley.

The thought of Dungeon Master realizing her worth meant the smile never left her mouth.

“Little fairy! Noisy!”

But Gigantes didn't like it.

"What, why, what, is Yihi noisy? Yihihhi!"

"Get off my head!"

"Bald creature! Bah! Yihi is someone who received Master's trust.

You should be thankful that Yihi is on your head!”

“Crazy fairy!”

"Are you blaming Yihi now? Ssiing...naughty baldy!”

Yihi formed a fist and punched Gigantes’ head. Her physical strength had increased after the upgrade. A lot of power was contained in one fist. Gigantes frowned and shook his head.

"Baldy! Live for a lifetime bald, bald isn’t bad.”

“Bah, Master entrusted Yihi with a task. How important is a bald creature to him? Yihihihhi!”

"Insane fairy."

Yihi kept on teasing and laughing at Gigantes. Gigantes didn’t like it and shook his head.

“Yihihihhi ~”

Still, Yihi was very happy.

The attack of the creatures. And the ensuing fight. All the Awakened in Seoul heard the noises. They saw flaming wings and lightning.

In particular, there was a dark magic power that made them sick.

What was going on?

The Awakened immediately sent a team for exploration. They were speechless as they found the bodies of creatures piled up like a mountain.

"It looks like they died after fighting each other."

"Looking at the scene, that isn't necessarily the case. The first to die...doesn't it seem like they died from one person?"

"One person against all these creatures?"

"I saw a barrage of flames from a distance. There was also lightning strikes. The one who uses such powers...the Saviour. The Saviour swept away all these creatures."

There were many comments as they explored. The most prominent thing was the emergence of the 'Saviour.' No one other than the Saviour could handle thousands of creatures alone.

"I have found a demon. But both eyes are missing."

"Secure it."

It was the first time they could acquire a demon's body. Everyone on the exploration team was excited. The body could be used as materials or to experiment with skills. They salivated just imagining the uses for the corpse of a demon.

The members wrote down the different type of creatures in the notebook. It would be used to write a risk report.

After a few minutes.

“...Cough!”

Some of the crew started coughing up blood.

Their faces became pale like a ill patient and their hands and feet trembled.

There was only one thing that could cause such symptoms out of nowhere.

“Poison...!”

"What poison? Is it poison due to the decomposing bodies?"

"These bodies haven't been dead for more than two days. It can't be that. Someone...clearly sprayed poison."

It was a very strong poison.

The poison dissolved the skin of the creatures.

The creatures with weak leather skin were so melted together that their identities couldn't be confirmed. They discovered this too late.

The earth where poison was sprayed. They couldn't take it back.

"Ack!"

But that wasn't the end.

Something attacked the exploration team and many of them died.

“Creatures! They are in the ground!”

“Damn, poison goblins!”

Poison goblin.

A creature that emitted poison from its body. They had a strong obsession with their territory so not many dared go to places where poison goblins lived.

In the end, the team leader of the scouts bit his lip and said.

"Let's go back. This place...it is the land of the dead."

Yihi massaged her shoulders.

"Ahyu ~ how annoying. This is harder than I thought."

She returned to the forest and got some honey from the bees.

She held a cup of the most delicious honey.

As many bees wandered around aimlessly, she drank honey and water in the perfect ratio.

"Ah, delicious. Drinking honey water after working is really sweet."

Yihi touched her jaw as she drank the honey water.

"Handling this is an unpleasant affair. Processing the bodies? The instructions are clear. Then, um..."

Yihi had been happy after hearing Master's instructions, but was disappointed when she arrived at the scene. She decided to make a compromise by letting 'another' handle it.

Master had trusted her to deal with the things left behind.

Yihi turned her head and peeked at someone else.

“Puny angel? You, what is your name?”

"Hash."

A short reply. The angel was slightly larger than Yihi. There were many wings.

Yihi nodded.

"Hash? Ah ~ you are Hash?"

“Kyaaah~”

Hash flew near Yihi.

“Yihihihi. Do you want to go with Yihi?”

“Eung.”

Yihi grinned as Hash easily agreed.

"Okay, Yihi will specify what to do. Then where do you want to go? Well...ah! Let's go to see the humans. Humans are really funny. Yihihhi~ we can have some fun with Roy and Rose. What do you think?"

"Eung."

"Yihihhihi."

Yihi flew forward with Hash behind her.

Thus, the humans recorded the incident of the 'fairy and baby angel flying in the sky' as a horrifying nightmare.

Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji.

They were both laying motionless as I examined them.

Kim Yura's appearance was completely restored. There were no signs of disability. She was born anew with a clean and pure image. It was enough to think 'Saintess.'

On the other hand, Kim Min-ji was completely different. She had barely survived after losing her lower extremities.

'Humans can't live without their lowest extremities.'

It wasn't easy to heal the lower part of the body that had already been cut off. It was possible to live but I wondered if it was worth it.

'Kim Yura has become the Saintess. Her sister...I restored her life but I don't need to get involved if she dies again.'

I had kept my promise. I saved the dying Kim Min-ji but I didn't know if she would die again.

But...something was strange.

"Tashmal."

I called Tashmal. It felt like the hair on the back of my neck was rising. I didn't know what it meant so I wanted to ask Tashmal.

"What's going on?"

Tashmal was busy raising the angels. She seemed tired but answered my question immediately.

"Can you feel anything?"

"From the Saintess? Hmm, it certainly feels odd. I don't think she is a common Saintess."

"I'm not talking about the Saintess but her sister."

"Her sister...? The human without legs?"

Tashmal moved her gaze.

At the same time, Tashmal started frowning.

"This is...strange. She isn't a Saintess but has a holy power similar to that of a Saintess. In fact, she is much like her sister."

"What does that mean?"

"The holy power is connected to both of them. Perhaps it isn't just the holy power but also their lives that are connected. It is efficient and strong. This is the first time I've seen it so my answer isn't definite but...if my thoughts are correct, both of them will have power considerably higher than a normal Saintess. Instead, their strength will decline if both of them are away from each other."

It was another unexpected harvest.

This was the feeling that tickled me.

I hadn't noticed because Kim Min-ji's holy power was small.

But the conditions were tricky. There were two bodies but one life, and they had to always be close to each other.

“Can you train them?”

I asked Tashmal. It was impossible for me to tell them how to use holy power. The only one who could teach them was Tashmal.

“Dungeon Master. You will be a better match than me. I don’t know why but there isn’t just holy power. Your magic power is also present. I thought it was impossible for the two powers to coexist at the same time but...the younger sister has more of your magic power while the older sister has more holy power. The two bodies perform different roles.”

Ahh. It was balanced in that way.

Then it wasn’t impossible for me to train them.

‘I’ll have to make a lower body for her.’

I discovered that they were one, so there was no need to hold back.

Although it was a hassle, I would tell Gaparam and Oswen to make a functioning lower body for her.

"Rather, Dungeon Master. I heard you caught a duke this time."

“Martin was killed.”

"Then...what do you plan to do with his dungeon?"

"There is nothing planned. Why are you asking?"

Tashmal's expression became serious. There was a moment of silence before Tashmal carefully opened her mouth.

"The dungeon...can you think about giving it to the angels?"

"So they can declare a sacred zone?"

"That's right. I have been watching the angels in the world and they are being defeated. I don't like it. If they have a focal point then they can focus on killing the demons. Ah, except for you."

She hastily tacked on the final words.

"If I think there are benefits then I will obtain the dungeon."

I wasn't good enough to simply hand over the dungeon.

Of course, declaring a sacred zone would keep the other demons in check but that wasn't enough of a benefit.

Tashmal spoke with complex emotions in her eyes.

"In a while...Camael-nim will descend. One of the seven angels with the rank of seraphim...he has personally come to cleanse the earth. A place is needed to greet him."

My eyebrows furrowed. Seraphim. It was referring to the strongest angel in the hierarchy. How many times had I seen a seraphim descending in my previous life?

It was also strange that Tashmal knew about it. She was a fallen angel and wouldn't be able to return to Heaven. How did she know this if communication with Heaven had been lost?

"Are you sure?"

"I received a 'revelation'."

Chapter 187: Sacred Zone (2)

“Aren’t you a fallen angel?”

Ha! I sneered. The laws of Heaven were very strict. A fallen angel wasn’t considered an angel. It wasn’t strange to be treated the same as a demon after falling.

A revelation!

It was the act of hearing God’s voice directly. In my previous life, many angels died due to their intervention.

Tashmal found it difficult to understand my feelings.

“The revelation is real. On the day that the sun swallows the moon, Camael-nim will descend.”

I looked at Tashmal carefully. She couldn’t lie to me as I was the Dungeon Master, so she must really think it was real.

‘Camael. It is Camael.’

I heard there were seven angels in Heaven with the rank of seraphim. In my previous life, I had seen Zadkiel in the last war. The angel burned three dukes and several demons so I was left with a strong impression. Now an angel with similar powers was coming down?

'The balance will collapse.'

The demons were still inferior. Now it was time to start running. If Camael descended then even the grand dukes wouldn't be safe.

"What does it mean by the sun swallowing the moon?"

"I don't know. Revelations are always abstract. However...what I saw was terrible. The destruction of the world..."

Tashmal swallowed her words. She was slightly nervous.

"I don't know the exact timing."

That was the most important part.

I couldn't help but worry.

If the revelation was real then Camael would descend. It wasn't bad to decide the place where he would arrive. It would be worse if he was randomly summoned. So it was a wise choice to leave him within my reach.

The problem was that once a sacred area was proclaimed, all the angels would gather. I needed to decide if I could afford it or not. A wise choice that I could cope with was necessary.

“Camael is strong?”

Zadkiel was strong. Stronger than I was now. He was huge enough to cover the sky. It wasn't the common form of an angel. He was round like a planet and constantly shooting out rays, with each one having the power to destroy an island.

So I had to ask.

"He is immortal. If his 1,140,000 subordinate angels aren't killed then he won't die."

"1.14 million...?"

The army was truly different. I didn't even have one million creatures. At best, it was tens of thousands.

Yet he had 1.14 million subordinate angels. It was far beyond what I had.

"Are you saying he will come down with 1.14 million angels?"

Tashmal nodded.

“That's right. Once the sun swallows the moon...”

"Wait, isn't his purpose the demons?"

Camael would descend when the sun swallowed the moon. Listening to Tashmal's words, it seemed like the reason Camael was descending was due to the sun.

"Unfortunately, that is all I know. I can't give you any more answers even if I wanted to."

Tsk. I clicked my tongue.

There was information missing.

Anyway, Camael was coming down with 1.14 million angels. The story was different if those 1.14 million angels needed to be killed first.

'It will be difficult. I have to designate a sacred zone.'

1.14 million. The last time the angels descended, it was hard to find them because they were randomly summoned.

Of course, I wasn't thinking about giving up. I would take a few steps so I would be prepared the moment he descended.

In addition...

'I will catch Camael. It will be a very good accomplishment before becoming a devil.'

Even if he was descending, it wasn't occurring right now. I would become stronger in the meantime in order to catch Camael. Among the current grand dukes, I would gain orthodox achievements that no one else had. So that no one in the Demon World would argue if I became the devil.

Killing one of the seven main angels was enough qualification to become the devil.

And...I was curious. I wondered if I could fight with a seraphim if I took more steps further into the realm of transcendence. If it was similar to my previous life then it would be a fierce battle.

"Okay. They can proclaim a sacred zone. However, placing an angel there...is it possible?"

"The other angels are already dead or half corrupted by the power of the dungeons. The only possible angel is Hash. The other angels wouldn't dare doubt Hash."

"Hash? He is still too young."

He wasn't even six months old. Hash was a little angel that could barely say one word. I couldn't expect a lot from his ability to properly perform a task.

"The other angels won't work. They won't be able to get past the angels' eyes. Once there are suspicions, they will start attacking. It is under the pretext of angels being bred."

Indeed...

I didn't have a lot of faith but couldn't deny that Hash was the only possibility.

"Hmm, I want you to train Hash as much as possible. It will end the moment the sacred zone is declared."

Several long months. There was no answer except hard training for as long as possible.

"I will try."

Tashmal had a dubious attitude.

No matter how fast the growth was in the dungeon, there were still limits.

It was up to Tashmal to teach Hash while he was growing.

I turned around. Tashmal withdrew shortly afterwards. She needed to start training Hash immediately.

‘A sacred zone. Camael. The sun swallowing the moon.’

There was a lot of work in the immediate future. If the revelation was true, it seemed like all demons would experience a radical change.

I knew the information, but what would the demons do when Camael descended? It was fun just to imagine it.

"Uhh..."

A feeble groan was suddenly heard.

It wasn't far from this place.

Kim Yura was waking up.

"Min-ji!"

Kim Yura shot upwards after waking up. She cried out the name of the sister who sacrificed herself, but an unfamiliar scene entered her sight.

“This place...?”

It was dark. A candle was lit but it was feeble. A damp and humid place. The first thing she saw were rocks.

'Wait a minute, my voice...'

Kim Yura's eyes widened.

Oh my god!

Her voice came out normally. Her gums had been melted so her pronunciation wasn't normal, but her words just then had been correct.

"Ah..."

Even her legs could move.

She used to be a paraplegic that required a wheelchair. She couldn't use the muscles in her legs but now they were fine.

Kim Yura urgently raised her hands to her face.

It was smooth. The burns on her skin were gone.

'How?'

She frowned. She touched her hair with her hand.

At the same time, memories started passing through her head.

The assault of the vampires. Her sister's sacrifice. And...a man appeared.

The man asked if she wanted her sister to be saved. And then she drank something from a bottle.

That was all she remembered. No matter how hard she tried, she couldn't recall what occurred next.

"You woke up."

At the moment, the voice of the man who brought her out from hell could be heard.

"Who are you? Where is my sister?"

I gave a small laugh. That was the first thing she asked after seeing me. She was suddenly daring.

She was acting quite brave. This was a place that she didn't know so it was natural to feel confused.

"You will know soon. Do you want to confirm the changes in your appearance?"

I pulled out a mirror from my magic bag.

I raised a thumb and the dungeon lit up. Small lights emerged and instantly brightened the dungeon.

Kim Yura's eyes widened with surprise. She accepted the hand mirror and confirmed the image reflected there.

"This is...me?"

It was incredible.

Her body had been horribly burned.

Now her skin was clean and clear. The criteria of beauty wasn't that different between humans and demons.

It was natural to be surprised by waking up to a completely different face one day.

After giving her some time to appreciate it, I spoke.

"You have awakened as the Saintess. Your power was running wild and I saved you. Therefore, your life is mine."

"Wait a minute, wait a minute. I'll ask again. Who are you? My...where is my sister?"

“I am Randolph Brigsiel. Some call me Saviour while others call me Dungeon Master. Your sister is recovering in a safe place, so don’t worry.”

Anyway, my contract with Kim Yura was completed.

She wouldn’t be able to escape from me. I coolly revealed the information.

"S-Saviour! Are you really the Saviour?"

The contents afterwards didn’t seem to have entered her ears. The Saviour part was more important than the Dungeon Master because the Saviour had a huge influence on the humans in South Korea.

And humans usually heard what they only wanted to hear. I didn’t try to deny it.

"I am called that."

"Ah...!"

Kim Yura’s entire body trembled.

She clenched her fists and said.

"Saviour-nim. L-let me meet my sister. Please."

"Follow me."

I led the way with my hands clasped behind my back. Kim Min-ji was currently being examined by Gaparam. There was a lot of work to do in order to customize new lower parts for her.

Gaparam's workshop was located quite far away from the core. Kim Yura's face became pale as we walked by many creatures.

"E-excuse me, perhaps...is this the dungeon?"

"That's right."

An orc lord was leading a group of hundreds of orcs.

But rather than attacking, the orc lord just struck the left side of its chest with its right hand.

Kung! Kung! Kung!

The other orcs followed suit.

It was the method that the orcs used to greet their master.

Kim Yura was confused and asked.

"By the way...why aren't the orcs attacking? It looks like a greeting..."

It was clear that she hadn't heard my previous words.

I disliked repeating things but I would explain it once more for a smoother conversation.

"Didn't you hear me say it? Some call me the Dungeon Master. I am the master of this dungeon."

Chapter 188: Sacred Zone (3)

Kim Yura remained silent while moving. She sometimes looked at me with complicated eyes but she didn't open her mouth.

I was the Saviour and also the master of the dungeon.

It was an unchanging fact.

Due to the atmosphere, Kim Yura didn't dare speak and just moved her feet.

"Here."

A place where the dark elves lived.

I stepped on the floor where the Tree of Origin was.

It was a presence larger than any creature we had passed.

Kim Yura's eyes widened. Due to her awakening and the holy power of a Saintess, the Tree of Origin was welcoming her.

"Divine tree..."

Kim Yura muttered in a small voice.

I just laughed.

"It isn't a big deal."

We had different perspectives. Some might call it a divine tree but from my point of view, the Tree of Origin was just an unusual tree.

I had met the gods of the earth before returning to the past and the tree didn't feel like them. It was just some pressure. I wasn't going to look up to it.

"Welcome, Dungeon Master."

Julliom was the first one to notice my presence. The dark elves of the village lined up behind him.

There was roughly 1,000 of them. There were many children...it seemed like the population of dark elves had been increasing.

At the same time, they were looking at me with total loyalty. I took such devotion for granted but Kim Yura stared at them with fascination.

"Dark elves..."

The dark elves were famous for not following anyone. The only person they followed was naturally the Dungeon Master. Kim Yura

bit her lip as if there was no doubt now.

Whether she believed it or not, I went straight to the point.

"Bring me to the female human that I left here."

"Yes. Although she hasn't regained her spirit."

Julliom replied. I shook my head and said.

"I will see her."

"Follow me."

Julliom led the way. An unusually lush forest area in the centre. After walking through some buildings, Julliom's house appeared.

I had left Kim Min-ji, who needed treatment, with Julliom. The dark elves didn't like humans very much...they followed my orders but that wouldn't change.

Kim Min-ji lay on a bed made of grass and leaves. Dark elves were taking turns feeding her some porridge.

"...Min-ji!"

Kim Yura was overcome with emotions as she ran towards Kim

Min-ji. But for some reason, Kim Min-ji acted like she couldn't hear it at all.

“Is something wrong?”

I asked about Kim Min-ji's strange attitude and Julliom replied.

"That...she seems to have lost something important."

“Lost?”

"Her spirit. I don't know why but she is just like a doll."

I turned my eyes towards Kim Min-ji. Kim Min-ji was expressionless like a marionette.

Spirit. The spirit.

Originally it was normal. In addition to the physical injuries, she seemed to have received a larger shock.

Was there a problem with the awakening?

"Is she an idiot?"

To be honest, I didn't know if she had really lost her spirit. But this type of reaction was usually seen from those who were idiots.

Julliom shook his head.

"She isn't an idiot. She reacts to some things. But...isn't she connected to that human woman? Then there might be a reaction."

Kim Yura was sobbing while holding Kim Min-ji. Even so, there was no reaction.

"I will be back after a while. I will be near the Tree of Origin."

"Go take a look, Dungeon Master."

Julliom glanced towards two dark elves. I refused to allow them to accompany me and started walking alone.

Yihi could communicate with the Tree of Origin as the Origin Fairy, but I had never managed to talk to it. It was a special challenge that I hadn't tried.

But after hearing the story about Camael and the sun swallowing the moon...I wanted to come here and think for a minute.

'It isn't me.'

It wasn't in my nature but I decided it wouldn't hurt to be emotional for once. I leaned back against the Tree of Origin and

folded my arms.

‘Camael, the sun swallowing the moon...’

A strong being that hadn’t appeared in my previous life. His emergence was due to me.

‘I am changing everything.’

Change was never bad. I looked at these changes positively. However, the changes were often abrupt.

Despite Camael and the angels, my goal to become the devil was unchanged. Still, it was crucial to become stronger faster. The current me couldn’t beat a seraphim.

‘I went to the Underground World and became stronger. More than anyone else. I won’t stop here and will surely continue to grow...it isn’t enough.’

Camael was a very big variable.

And I needed to get my hands on this variable.

Right now he was out of reach.

‘There is no meaning in becoming stronger alone. Expanding my

forces is one way to become stronger. I can consolidate my dungeons and increase my power.'

I frowned.

Zadkiel

I had seen a seraphim in my previous life.

He was powerful. He was an enemy that brought great fear to the demons.

Hundreds of thousands of creatures were wiped out by him. It wasn't unreasonable for him to fight a grand duke one on one. It took an enormous sacrifice in order to eliminate him.

'I want to win.'

However...I wanted to win.

I wanted to kill Camael alone.

Getting rid of Camael with my creatures wasn't an accomplishment that would be remembered for long, but the story would be completely different if I took care of him alone.

In order to do that, I had to be stronger than I was now.

'I have to look at just my pure stat points.'

My potential was 555 points. However, I still hadn't filled all of it. At best, I had 440 points. I still needed to raise my stats by more

than 100 points.

Filling it all up...it was possible. I thought it was possible. The stats calibration would increase it up to 650 points. It wasn't impossible to be called a 'god' and I could even deal with Camael!

'Upgrade my pure stats.'

I predicted that they would rise to 500 points without much difficulty. If not, my potential limit wouldn't rise. However, that wasn't enough to fulfil my greed.

'Something unexpected. A strange idea that I wouldn't normally think of...'

The conventional methods wouldn't work.

I needed a method that no one had thought of but was efficient.

But ideas that no one could figure out also applied to me. It was like catching a cloud in the sky.

I worried about it for a long time.

Then my eyes were caught by the giant tree that extended endlessly.

Origin resembled purity. Origin didn't have a colour.

I raised my hand and brought it to the Tree of Origin.

"I need an answer. In Heaven, the Celestial King can communicate directly with the Tree of Origin when there is a serious matter. If so...tell me the answer to my troubles."

It was just a story. There was no credibility and no one could confirm it. However, my eyes were serious.

My senses were saying 'the Tree of Origin has an answer.' No, it was like I gained a similar ability after killing Martin and taking his eyes.

It took a few seconds for a result, but the response was very strong.

I had never communicated with the Tree of Origin but this time was different. I had previously opened my magic power and talked as the Dungeon Master yet the Tree of Origin hadn't reacted.

Swiik!

Soon the branches started to move.

Kuuong!

The ground shook and roots popped out to swallow me.

At the same time, I received a vision.

After coming back, I opened my eyes and found that I was still in front of the Tree of Origin.

The roots and branches wrapped around me were gone.

‘It felt like a dream.’

I scowled. I barely remembered what had happened.

‘Definitely...I fought with myself.’

It was blurred as I forced myself to recall it. I had fought against myself. But that was all. The contents and result of the fight were erased from my head.

‘Do I need to fight with myself because I have no enemies?’

I clicked my tongue as I looked at the Tree of Origin. Anyway, the fact that my memory was ambiguous meant the result wasn’t good.

“I’ll come again.”

I turned around.

I had received an answer. I didn't know if this method would make me stronger but it was better than doing nothing.

Angels scattered all over the world started moving. They spread their long wings and gathered in one place, ignoring all enemies.

It was like they had all received a revelation.

The angels gathered in Ukraine, Europe.

It was the place where Martin's dungeon was located.

"For eternal glory."

Thousands of angels gathered on the top floor of the dungeon and Alex, a thrones angel stabbed his sword into the floor and declared a territory.

Huuuuong!

At the same time, a divine light exited the dungeon and spread through the sky.

The dungeon was transformed into one huge cradle.

The cradle scattered holy power around. All creatures in the area

were melted down, leaving no traces behind.

Only the pious humans could stay in this place. The wicked would have to take care of themselves.

As they prayed, a multitude of lights was simultaneously seen around the world.

Demons, humans and the remaining angels started to focus on the light.

Chapter 189: Fight With Oneself (1)

The gathering of the angels and manifestation of the sacred zone had some influence on the demons. Ariel and Upa stopped their war for a while. Maxium's fight with a gorgon was also disrupted before resuming again.

Pandemonium...he rallied his power and tried to determine the movements of the angels. He had discovered Martin's death. It was like gunpowder on the brink of exploding.

"My Dungeon Master. The Trees of Life and Death have grown normally."

Chrisley returned to the dungeon.

She came to see me to report on her mission.

I stood motionless near the Tree of Origin as I watched it. I didn't answer but Chrisley just nonchalantly continued.

"The emergence frequency of Awakened has more than doubled and their growth rate is quite fast. Roy and Rose's positions are stable...there are several candidates for a king."

"Hmmm."

I took out Wrath and the Emperor's Sword. Then I wielded the

two swords with my eyes closed. I was listening to Chrisley. I just wasn't greatly interested.

It was what I had been expecting.

"The girin has named seven people as candidates. Two of the humans are Yoo Eun-hye and Edward. The decisive battle will take place on the sacred day with the biggest moon."

"Will all the humans agree with the outcome of the battle?"

"Yes. I'm afraid..."

"I will observe it."

If the Saviour emerged then it would feel more auspicious. Roy and Rose might be able to move the humans with greater force. My appearance was needed.

I moved Wrath as I made a decision.

Hwik!

Wrath quickly split through the air but I shook my head.

'Strange.'

I had gone to the Tree of Origin several times to fight against myself. My clone appeared and I used my skills and swordsmanship, yet I always lost.

The clone's stats weren't higher...and I lost most of my memories of the fight every time. It was like some type of 'cognition.'

My memories were scattered. After a few challenges, I tried to remember the feeling with my swords.

In addition, one of my pure stats rose after recalling those memories. Strength increased by one. This was a surprising result.

'I would need a few months to raise a pure stat by one point using ordinary methods. If one increased in less than 10 days...the possibilities are enough.'

I decided that it was suitable for growing quickly, so I focused more on my fights against the clone.

The person certainly had the same stats and skills as me. However, he seemed to use my power more flexibly than I did.

I tried to make some preparations based on my memories but it was difficult to prepare for the 'unknown.'

"My Dungeon Master. Are you troubled about something?"

“Have you ever fought with yourself?”

“With myself...”

Chrisley thought about it with a serious expression.

“Recently...there was a similar fight in the training room.”

"Tell me."

The advanced training room.

Time flowed differently for Chrisley inside the training room.

"I heard a voice in my head the moment I entered. It said ‘only those who are more complete can leave here.’ And...I didn’t know that the flow of time was different, so I trained hard to get out as quickly as possible.”

Her eyes were complicated. It seemed like she didn’t like to be reminded of that time. I didn’t say anything and Chrisley was forced to go on.

"One day, a few days...after 100 days, I realized that I could utilize some skills more properly. However, the door didn’t open because I was far from completion. I felt some heartbreak and memories of my past emerged. I was trapped by the sickness of the heart for over 100 days.”

Chrisley was a dark elf who was rarely shaken. I could hardly imagine that she became so sick of heart that it lasted for more than 100 days.

"However, that sickness opened up another path. I saw the weaknesses in my past. After that, I was able to grow stronger and leave the training room."

"How did you get over the sickness?"

"That..."

Chrisley sneaked a glance at me before looking away again.

"...I don't know. It is hard to say exactly what it was."

My brows furrowed as I squeezed Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

In short, her weak parts were highlighted and she was able to strengthen herself by resolving those weaknesses.

I worried about it.

'My weak parts?'

Sickness of the heart was caused by weakness. I had been worried and distressed but never sick to the heart. If so, I needed to think about my weaknesses.

But...I didn't have much to say about my weaknesses. Arrogance and high self-esteem were essential elements to me. I had succeeded based on this confidence.

A clear desire to get everything was required to become the devil. I couldn't allow these things to grab my ankles. No matter how important, it wasn't more important than my dream.

"My Dungeon Master. Is that the answer?"

"You have given me an idea. Thank you."

I nodded and continued thinking.

Weaknesses. Me weaknesses.

The weak parts of me?

My pure abilities were low but that wasn't a weakness in itself. My skills were also highly rated so that couldn't be the weakness.

'I will have to think about it.'

It was a completely different direction that I would have never thought about.

I had just been worrying about a lack of swordsmanship.

I closed my eyes and thought deeply.

It was the 31st challenge.

The Tree of Origin encircled me and I appeared in a world of illusion, with my clone facing me.

"It is getting tiresome."

Although it was my face, I was getting tired after seeing it for 30 consecutive times.

I took out Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

My clone also brought out Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

"I'm not tired."

The clone spoke.

"You can talk?"

I had no memory of this. However, I didn't remember much of the last 30 times so he might have spoken.

Yet the answer was surprising.

“This is the first time. I wanted to say that I'm not tired.”

“The first time?”

“You can ask me questions. But you will just forget my answers. Anyway, the result will be the same!”

Hwaaak!

The clone's swords were surrounded by a dark aura.

It was the manifestation of Dark Sword.

He also ignited Pride's flames and rushed towards me.

'As expected.'

This was a pattern that had been repeated many times already. I combined the sparse memories and grasped some of the clone's movements.

Kang!

I returned the same attack.

Anyway, his power and stats were exactly the same as mine.

There was a power struggle for a few minutes.

"You look exactly like me and have the same abilities, yet you are obviously different. A fake. It is obvious if I look closely."

"Is it because I am better?"

The clone sneered. I didn't react and remained silent.

"The mannerisms and personality...everything except the outside appearance is different. Are you really my clone?"

Aside from his movements, I could infer things from his habits and personality. As a result, I concluded that he was a different person from me. I was cynical but not pessimistic. I didn't always laugh at others.

However, the clone's eyes were always filled with ridicule.

"I am me. Nobody else but me."

Huaaah!

Many cracks appeared in the space.

It was because he focused his magic power on Wrath.

Kuaaaaang!

"Today I will take one of your 'childhood memories.' The 'nightmare'...huhu, you might not know it yourself but there is always a trauma! Completeness is the same as discarding the incomplete parts."

My head was hit a few times.

A strong pain. I searched through my memories but the fight with the clone was still vague.

'I can only remember that he spoke.'

It was an approximate dialogue. But there was a question mark about whether he had spoken before.

'Another one. The way he used his magic power.'

I recalled one of the scenes of the battle.

In the final scene, he had let out a burst of magic power. Wrath was used as the focus and it resulted in a new cohesion with Dark Sword.

-Agility has risen by one.

I nodded. Simply remembering it raised my stats like this. It didn't happen every time, but it was still a quick development.

Over the 30 attempts, my pure stats had risen by three points. If this continued then I would be able to fill up all the remaining potential in a few years at most.

It would be faster if I could try more than once a day, but it was impossible to move the Tree of Origin. I could only fight the clone once a day.

Either way.

"I should challenge again tomorrow."

It wasn't a pleasant experience. The opponent was still me after all.

I left with the thought of winning.

The 50th attempt.

As soon as I arrived, I faced my clone with a smile.

"Do you remember the battle? Or maybe a memory from your previous life? You look just like a twitching cockroach."

"That will soon be your appearance."

"Huhu! That's funny. That is only if you win."

The 60th time.

"Nobility! A title only given to powerful demons. But unlike you, I am strong without such titles."

"What do you want to say?"

"It is funny how you are hanging onto something so meaningless."

"You are talking nonsense."

The 70th time...

"Why do you come back? Do you want to change the results?"

“You are asking something obvious. I will be the devil.”

"So you made a promise with the gods in order to return? Are you seeking strength by killing yourself? Funny, funny..."

Chapter 190: Fight With Oneself (2)

As the number of attempts increased, the fights started to vary.

Little by little, I started to understand the existence of 'I.'

'As the fight goes on, he starts to resemble me more. On the contrary, I am...'

At first, it was different. As the fights were repeated, it started becoming more equal.

No, I was moving further away. That guy was now chasing after me.

'I am becoming like him.'

I clicked my tongue.

Then I received a little enlightenment. I realized that it didn't just apply to the clone.

And finally, it was the 100th try.

I went back to the beginning.

Who was whose clone?

Now I couldn't differentiate myself from him.

I was become more complete, while he was becoming incomplete.

And...I was becoming increasingly apathetic. Or was I becoming dried out?

I had cold eyes. I showed off neat movements.

It was like a machine.

That guy was no longer my opponent. He was becoming increasingly weaker while I was getting stronger.

However, there was an emptiness inside me.

In this situation, even my blood was cold as I fought.

I suddenly had the thought that 'this isn't the type of completion that I want.'

I was getting stronger, but I didn't want to be complete if I wasn't myself.

'I am going to laugh loudly when I become the devil.'

That was my wish. My dream. It was my wish to sit there and laugh loudly, not just sit down.

That laugh would mock everyone who tried to take it away from me. But...if I was apathetic then I wouldn't be able to feel anything when I became the devil.

‘It can't be.’

In order to be complete, did I have to discard the incomplete parts?

If so, I wouldn't become complete. I had gone through many trials and errors even when incomplete. However...this sudden change was like laughing at my efforts.

It was like I was denying my dream.

I was very satisfied with my arrogance and high self-esteem. Yet it was dismissed as a weakness.

I'll accept it.

It wasn't funny.

‘I don't like this.’

A small change.

I would turn it backwards.

It was literally a fight with myself.

It took a great deal of mental effort to recover my original mindset.

-Agility has dropped by one

My stats dropped. After replenishing the missing parts, my stats returned to their original state. But I didn't mind. This type of completion wasn't the direction that I wanted.

It might be slow but I would succeed in my own way...

Then the eyes of the clone changed.

"Stupid person. You can't throw it away. Did you come all this way to completion only to kick it away?"

His words were rough but his eyes were different.

Surprise. He was surprised by me.

His eyes were asking how this was possible.

I already understood him because I was being assimilated with him.

“Throwing this away?”

I laughed. The things I gained from reaching completion. I was abandoning them now.

Then the clone grinded his teeth together.

"Choosing imperfection! Foolish and stupid!"

“Don't make me laugh. Aren't you the one who wants this foolishness?”

I laughed as I stared at him.

He was different every time we fought and changed little by little. And those changes were sometimes familiar. I couldn't help noticing because they were elements taken from me.

At first it was nothing, however that changed once dozens of things were taken.

I could see it just by looking at his various expressions.

"Don't you want completion? Completeness begins with discarding the imperfections! Don't you want to become stronger?"

He asked with a distressed expression.

"I want to become stronger. However, I don't think of myself as incomplete."

The things he took from me. I didn't think of them as my weaknesses. My clone had other thoughts... so I was different from him.

Then he started running wild.

"Incomplete! You won't win over me!"

"I don't think of myself as incomplete."

Right now I was a little bit relaxed. Once I saw how wild he was, it seemed like I was going in the right direction.

"Incompleteness, what if you aren't incomplete? You won't be able to become the devil!"

"It is a stalemate. Our standards are different."

I raised Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

That person yelled out.

"Never! You can never beat me unless you are complete!"

"You are my weakness."

Unlike my clone, I was confident.

I took a deep breath.

And I put down Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

"What are you doing?"

"I won't sell my soul to become stronger. And..."

There was a mocking smile on my face.

"I won't tolerate anything of mine existing somewhere else.
Come back."

He and I were different. We would never be the same. However,

there were similarities. I finally realized the reason. He was a part of me that had been split off.

Deep into the mind, the part that I thought was 'weak' had become independent. I didn't understand myself so it showed my narrow-mindedness.

The eyes of that guy with the same face shook violently.

"Drop it. This is the fastest route to completion. Don't you know it yourself? Haven't you realized the truth after facing the gods and going back in time? You clearly knew. There was such detail in the truth they told you. Then why...?"

"Why am I doing this?"

"Yes. Why? Your heart is being cleansed. Yet you are still hesitating?"

My hidden side. That's what I called my clone. I shook my head.

"The gods didn't ask me to become complete. After all, they admitted that they were incomplete. Of course, even without such complicated content, there is no way that I will follow the path someone else took."

I would carve out my own path.

The memories of my past life were only the foundation and I would walk a new path. It wasn't always right but I would somehow run towards the end.

Perhaps I might have hesitated if my path was wrong.

But now it was different.

"You will surely regret this. I was barely able to separate from you...once you acknowledge it, this can no longer be reversed.

"Even if you are a part of me that I didn't care for, I will become more complete by acknowledging you."

"Sophistry! Just sophistry."

"Someone told me this. I was too young, my pride would tighten around my neck. However, the person who said it died by my hands."

I fought Okullos who had broken the taboo.

The winner would be right and Okullos was defeated. They were nothing more than words.

"...Okay. Wait and see. Your heart will be frustrated."

My clone walked slowly forward like he had given up.

I laughed and spread open my arms.

And he entered me.

The first thing I saw when I opened my eyes was a little fairy.

“You have woken up, Master?”

"Yihi."

I got up from my position. It was a small wooden building that seemed to be in the dark elf village.

"You haven't woken up in three days. Yihi was really, really worried."

Yihi wiped away her tears with her fingers.

“Three days...has anything happened in the meantime?”

"Chrisley left. The Trees of Life and Death have grown safely and seven candidates for the king were nominated. Yihi asked and two of them are humans that Master know."

"Chrisley told me that dozens of days ago."

Yihi blinked.

“Huh? That is strange. Yihi was only told a few days ago...”

The conversation didn't fit. I sensed something and asked.

“Yihi. What is today's date?”

“The 12th of September. It is a little bit colder now. Yihi doesn't like the cold.”

“12th of September?”

“What's wrong, Master?”

"Nothing."

I slightly frowned.

The first time I went to the Tree of Origin and fought my clone was on September the 9th. It had only been three days since then.

Even the conversation with Chrisley...

'Was it a vision?'

I recalled Martin's eyes but I didn't remember directly implanting them. Yet it seemed like I obtained a little bit of his power.

I wasn't sure what was happening.

'Or is this also the impact of Power of Domination?'

Perhaps Power of Domination was triggered when Martin was dying. I saw a lot of messages during the massacre of creatures so I didn't pay attention to everything.

'At any rate...if time hasn't passed then my stats wouldn't have changed.'

My stats had risen as I struggled with the clone. Although some had been decreased, a considerable number had still risen. I would be upset if it was all in vain.

'Status window.'

I opened my status window for confirmation.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title(s):

- * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)
- * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)
- * First to Receive a Fairy's Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)
- * Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)
- * Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)
- * Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)

Stats

Strength: 89 (+20)
Intelligence: 96(+15)
Agility: 85 (+20)
Stamina: 90(+22)
Magic Power: 100(+16)
Potential: (460+93/570)
Remaining Stat Points: 14
Electric Power: 21GW

Uniqueness: The master of the Underground World. The Heart of the Hell Monarch has completely awakened.

Skill: Combine Everything (Ex U), Mind's Eye (Epic), Dark Sword (Epic), Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Pride (Epic), Corruption (Ex Epic), Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive), Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive)

Skill and Item Effects: Wrath (Strength +7), Sloth (Agility +7), Pride (Stamina + 7), Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 105 Intelligence 107 Agility 100 Stamina 107 Magic

113 Potential (434+93/555)

Strength 109 Intelligence 111 Agility 105 Stamina 112 Magic 116
Potential (460+93/570)

I stiffened after checking the status window.

‘My pure stats...’

They had soared. My stats had climbed by more than 20.

Laughter emerged.

‘I wasn’t expecting it.’

I was honestly glad to see it. I had fought in a dream so it was natural to think everything would be reset.

But the results were completely different.

‘Even the potential threshold went up.’

I hadn’t done anything specific.

I just didn’t recognize ‘myself.’

Enlightenment was enlightenment, but I hadn't expected it. Before checking the system, I thought that my stats were at my original level.

'I'm not frustrated but full of hope.

A corner of my mouth went up.

The clone said I would be frustrated, but I didn't feel any frustration.

"Master?"

Yihi cocked her head and asked.

"Release the spirits. It is time to contract with the humans."

"Yes Master. By the way...Master."

"Did something happen?"

"Your face looks very good, Master. Yihihi."

"I don't have an answer."

"Hiing, really good."

Yihi swelled up and moved to begin the mission.

Chapter 191: Spirit Contract (1)

The growth of the spirits was smooth.

Rei and Sera weren't the only intermediate spirits as more than 10 had already joined them. The spirits had also developed their egos and were no longer dependent on me.

There was a clear difference in rewards between the lowest grade, low grade, intermediate and advanced spirits. Not all spirits would be able to reach the higher ranks.

Experience was experience, but they needed to go through special occasions to enter the path of evolution. It was difficult to reach the upper hierarchy of the spirits.

Looking at the compensation from the skill 'Spirit Communication,' the low grade gave 500pt, the intermediate grade 5,000pt and the advanced grade 500,000pt. It jumped up by 100 times once it reached intermediate grade.

After filling up Yihi's empty spots, the spirits had learned how to communicate. Originally I had scheduled the contract with humans for later but I changed my mind.

The Awakened were growing due to the Trees of Life and Death so it was an appropriate time for the spirits to form contracts.

'The double contract will make it easier to move the humans.'

There were approximately 100,000 spirits. All of them were already contracted to me.

It was normally impossible but I guessed it was due to the great fire that I had.

Thanks to this, I could forcibly destroy the second contract with the humans if I wanted to.

It was good enough to send out the spirits and quietly move behind the humans.

“Father. Please find Sera and I a contractor.”

“Yes please.”

Rei and Sera who had the bodies of adults came to visit me.

The two of them were now able to change into a shape similar to humans. Just like their names, they looked like normal girls but the difference was their hair was made of fire.

I was sitting on a chair made of stone near the Tree of Origin.

It was the first time I was sitting down without any thoughts and worries.

Usually I would split the time with training...but I wasn't feeling motivated at all. This was the effect of swallowing up the clone.

It wasn't a bad feeling.

However, Rei and Sera had interrupted my first break.

"Are you asking me to find them?"

"T-that...not one child has made a contract yet. We would like to try a demonstration first..."

"I'm sorry..."

Rei and Sera sensed my anger and shrank back.

I sat back and rubbed my brow.

"So you want to form a contract?"

"Yes. It will be enough if we demonstrate it to the children. We are connected so they will receive the knowledge."

"That's right."

Rei responded as sincerely as possible.

'That is an obstacle.'

Even if they knew how to communicate, none of the fire spirits had left the dungeon. Looking for a contractor themselves would be unrealistic.

That's why Rei and Sera came to me for advice. Sitting motionlessly would delay the work.

'Rei and Sera's contractors...'

Both were special. They were the first ones to evolve into intermediate spirits and followed me the best. They showed the most growth among the mid-level spirits. In the near future, one of them might become an advanced spirit.

The first contract was very important so it wouldn't hurt finding someone special for them. There was a good reason to set an example.

However, I couldn't think of someone suitable.

Yoo Eun-hye and Edward?

Neither of them would benefit greatly from the intermediate spirits.

By default, a spirit should be compatible with the contractor and grow with them while fighting together. The two of them had polished their basic techniques so they likely wouldn't help the spirits.

The spirits also ate a lot of magic power.

‘Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji.’

I nodded.

Strictly speaking, they were under my control but were currently humans outside the dungeon.

‘This might be able to solve Kim Min-ji's problem.’

The spirits had been a great help in recovering Yihi's soul. Kim Min-ji had also lost her spirit.

Both of them had Awakened as very strong Saintesses. At the same time, the synergy between them was greatly amplified. I knew this so there was no reason not to use it.

In order to do that, some ego needed to be restored.

‘Right now they are outside the dungeon, so I need to look for them.’

Kim Yura had suggested going outside the dungeon for her sister's recovery. She hoped that seeing familiar sights would help. I readily allowed it so now they were walking among crowds of humans.

All the conditions were met.

“Follow me. I will introduce you to your contractors.”

“Yes, Father.”

"I'm excited!"

I laughed and started to move.

Rei and Sera followed behind me.

Kim Yura was wandering around South Korea with her sister.

She had a lot of hope as she walked with her sister.

After Awakening, all of Kim Yura's wounds were healed and her stamina was so great she could walk around for hours. Unfortunately, their fortunes had reversed and Kim Min-ji was now the one in the wheelchair.

"Isn't this a nice place?"

There were partly destroyed buildings and overgrown weeds but Kim Yura was delighted. Although her sister wasn't in a normal condition, she was still alive.

The only problem was her 'spirit.'

On the surface, her artificial lower body looked no different from other people.

'It is all thanks to Saviour-nim.'

It was believable that he was the Dungeon Master but...he was her greatest benefactor. He saved her sister's life.

In addition, he was the Saviour.

Kim Yura thought there was some reason for him to be the Dungeon Master.

He was acting behind the scenes while saving the world.

If not, Kim Yura didn't know what to do if he was truly the enemy of humans.

For now, her sister came first.

She didn't doubt that her sister would return to normal. In that sense, she deserved to be called the Saintess.

"It is time to leave. We've been here too long."

Kim Yura looked around.

People were wandering around vigorously.

In addition, they bowed as soon as they saw Kim Yura.

"Ah, Saintess-nim. Are you taking a walk?"

"Saintess-nim! My injured shoulder is fine. Thank you."

Kim Yura responded with a small smile.

Saintess. In fact, her healing was much stronger than those with the occupation 'priest.' She could even delay or cure terminal illnesses, so it was like a miracle.

At first, she only healed injured people but rumours spread and many people came looking for her. In the meantime, she started to be called the Saintess.

In fact, she was the Saintess.

‘There isn’t much time to delay here...’

Kim Yura’s eyes darkened.

From that moment on, her house was the dungeon. Her chest had become tight after leaving the dungeon. She didn’t know why, but she guessed it was related to the Saviour.

Kim Yura had to solve the problem with her sister as soon as possible in order to return.

Spending more time outside would be ingratitude. She hadn’t even been able to say thank you yet.

‘I have to leave quietly in the evening.’

Kim Yura made a decision.

She had stayed in this village for too long.

The people had been kind to her so far. But they might change if she left the area.

“Min-ji. Is the sky clear? I can hear the sound of crying insects.”

Kim Yura made a decision deep in her heart and talked to her

sister Kim Min-ji. There was no answer but she just continued.

The sun had set and the moon was rising.

A clear evening. It was time for everyone to go to bed.

Kim Yura quietly left the village.

‘I’m a little sorry.’

The villagers were good-natured.

They heard rumours that she was the Saintess so they gave her a home and food. She only had to sometimes cure patients. She was able to leisurely spend time with her sister so she wasn’t too stingy with the treatments.

“Min-ji. We have to cross a mountain. Please put up with a little inconvenience.”

The only way out of the village was through the mountain. It was a tough place to climb in a wheelchair but Kim Yura had Awakened.

She could push it with strength.

Duk! Duduk!

The sound of rocks being kicked was heard.

They had been climbing for a while and Kim Yura frowned as she smelled blood.

‘Definitely...the smell of people bleeding.

Even if she disliked the scent, it couldn’t be helped.

If someone was injured then Kim Yura needed to treat them.

She walked for five minutes and arrived at the source of the blood.

At the same time, Kim Yura was at a loss for words.

"Aren't you just scum? You should just die."

"Hey, a vain effort. Vain effort. That Awakened could handle a sword pretty well. I hurt my leg."

"The injured will go see the Saintess in the morning. Our Saintess-nim will cure you."

Bodies were on the ground while people were sitting on top of them.

They were people from the village.

They seemed to be hunting humans.

Duuk!

The wheelchair moved across a twig and made a sound.

At the same time, the villagers turned their attention towards Kim Yura.

“Huh? Saintess-nim?”

"Where are you going in the middle of the night?"

Their eyes were half blurred. They had taken drugs.

Kim Yura frowned and said.

“This...what is going on? Why are you fighting people?”

Even though they were caught, they maintained casual attitudes.

They shrugged and laughed at Kim Yura.

“That? We want to live. It can’t be helped.”

“Yet Saintess-nim somehow caught us. Saintess-nim is indispensable. The death rate significantly reduced after Saintess-nim came.”

“Kilkil! Saintess-nim, this part of me is injured so can you treat it?”

They didn’t hesitate to spit out obscene jokes.

‘Crazy.’

For sure. They were all drunk.

At the same time, they were dangerous.

She didn’t know what they were going to do.

Eight people. Could she deal with all of them?

‘I have to.’

She would rather die but her sister wouldn’t be able to run away.

‘So...this is why I can’t believe in people.’

People who seemed good could do wicked deeds like this.

Kim Yura carefully tied the wheelchair to a tree and bit her lip.

They continued to talk.

"It is a little troublesome to fight you. If your legs are cut off, will you still be able to heal?"

"Are we going to cut them?"

"You idiot, of course. Will the cells die if everything is attached?"

"The young have a strange colour...huhuhu. In the meantime, I've learnt ways to prevent death. Isn't that face better than a few celebrities'?"

"I'll go first. Preferences should be given to seniors."

It was a tiring conversation. They approached like they were taking a walk.

Kim Yura pulled out a small knife. She had no other skills and brought it for self-defense, but it was better than nothing.

Awakening strengthened the entire body. Despite the men being

Awakened, she wouldn't be an easy target. It was a problem if she was caught...but she couldn't allow them to get at her sister.

"It will poke me."

"Will you stab me with it when I approach?"

"Aigoo ~ I'm scared!"

In their eyes, Kim Yura was just a toy.

'I can't allow myself to be beaten.'

Kim Yura tried to calm herself as much as possible. She had experienced many harsh things in her life so she wouldn't panic. In these circumstances, it would be advantageous to hit first rather than wait.

Huk!

Chapter 192: Spirit Contract (2)

She lowered her body slightly and scratched the skin of the man in the lead. It wasn't a fatal injury but the scratch on his cheek was bleeding.

“Shit! This bitch is crazy!”

The man whose face was scratched burst out. He never imagined a surprise attack.

It was a pity for Kim Yura. He was hurt but wouldn't have any problems moving. In the end, it seemed like a situation where she had to deal with eight people.

‘Holy Armour.’

It was a skill that surrounded her body in holy power. In fact, Kim Yura awakened as a Saintess but she didn't have any attack skills. Healing and defense were the main ones.

Holy Armour wrapped a wall around her that minimized damage. A unique rated skill. A decent Awakened wouldn't be able to leave a scratch on her.

Kim Yura moved with the armour around her body.

“Eh eh? What is this?”

"The knife isn't going in!"

The men panicked as the knife didn't pierce the skin. Meanwhile, Kim Yura moved the knife and stabbed a man's thigh.

"Kuaack!"

The stabbed man sat down.

It was possible to take his life but Kim Yura stopped, believing that was enough to stop him fighting.

'I can do it.'

Gulp!

She swallowed her saliva. It was the first time she had to take care of people like this. Her life, along with her sister's was at risk. Her sister couldn't run away so she needed to handle it as quickly as possible.

"T-that bitch..."

At this point, the men couldn't easily rush towards her. They thought she was a cornered deer or mouse, only to find out differently.

"What are you doing against a woman? Pull yourselves together, you idiots!"

The man with his thigh stabbed cried out loudly. The confused group immediately changed attitudes. They had needed to survive in a world of creatures.

They instinctively sensed danger from Kim Yura. The men realized there was no chance of victory if they didn't move.

"Hah, hah...!"

Kim Yura panted harshly.

It was fortunate that the level of the male Awakened were below average. They were hunting civilians but...Kim Yura, who awakened as a Saintess, was different from them.

If she had a little more experience then they wouldn't have gotten this far.

The men's expressions changed over time.

As one, two and three men fell, they couldn't ignore her anymore.

Kim Yura licked her lips and took a stance.

"If you approach then I will kill you."

It was the first time that she had blood on her hands. She tried to stop her hands from trembling.

She glared poisonously at the men.

It was a world where only the strong survived.

The weak were killed. Even if they were weak, being able to survive until now was enough to be considered strong.

"Saintess-nim, look here."

It was at that moment. She was confronting the five men when she heard a voice behind her. She turned around...she saw the first man she stabbed with a knife to Min-ji's neck.

An ordinary person wouldn't be able to move easily with a stabbed thigh, but Kim Yura had overlooked that he was an Awakened. She had placed an Awakened on the same level as the general public.

"Put the knife down. Yes? You wouldn't want marks on the pretty neck of your sister."

"Ah..."

The villages knew how much Kim Yura took care of her sister. The flustered faces of the men started to recover.

Kim Yura's face paled. It was the end the moment she put down the knife. For her and her sister. However, she couldn't let her sister be harmed.

"Eh eh? You're not putting it down? Should I show Saintess-nim her blood?"

"Stop! I am putting it down. Down..."

Kim Yura closed her eyes at the man's intimidation. She slowly placed the small knife on the floor.

At that moment, the men ran up to Kim Yura and pushed her to the ground.

Kim Yura sensed her future. She could take damage to her body but her sister was the problem.

"My sister...don't touch my sister."

"It depends on how sweetly Saintess-nim submits to us. Isn't that right, friends?"

"Yes yes."

"We won't kill you."

The man holding her sister hostage shrugged and the others agreed. However, their eyes still weren't normal.

"Ah, God.'

Would it have been better to avoid the people when she smelt blood?

Or was treating injured people a sin...

All the good people died. All that was left in the world were those who sinned. She shouldn't have trusted, it was her mistake.

She didn't know why this was happening to her and her sister.

-Do you want to contract with me?

At that moment, a voice was heard in her head.

'Hallucination?'

-I am Rei. A proud name my father gave me. If you form a contract with me then I will defeat all those humans.

The voice she was hearing became more evident.

It was a girl's voice. However, there was no girl in the area.

-Quickly. It will be too late soon. It will be different.

There was a possibility that was a hallucination caused by her own desire. However, she was already on a cliff.

“The contract...I agree.”

Hwaruruk!

At the end of her words, flames appeared out of thin air.

“Fire?”

"Ack!"

The flames grew largely and started to swallow up the men. It was so powerful that their skin was quickly melted.

"W-what? Shit! What is this?"

The man holding the knife to Kim Min-ji's neck was dismayed as he saw the other men killed by the flames. He tried to escape but couldn't run quickly due to his thigh.

“Aaaaack!”

The flames burned the last man.

The flames moved in front of Kim Yura and transformed into a female.

"I am pleased to meet you, despite the urgent situation. As I said before, my name is Rei. What is Contractor's name?"

It happened in an instant.

Kim Yura had barely recovered her mental state. She replied in a terrified voice.

“Yu...ra. Kim Yura.”

“Kim Yura! Let's do our best in the future.”

The beautiful girl with hair made of flames smiled.

I was watching the scene from afar.

Intermediate or lower ranked spirits had to sign a contract before they could be seen. Despite already having a contract with me, they weren't capable of showing themselves to others without a

contractor.

‘Kim Yura will stand out thanks to the spirit contract.’

Kim Yura the Saintess. She would attract people’s attention everywhere she went. After Rei, the spirits would continue to extend their contracts among the humans.

I decided not to intervene and gave Rei full authority.

The more that the spirits contracted with humans, the stronger my forces would become.

‘I wish there was a way to obtain spirits with other attributes.’

In order to do that, I needed to raise the fire spirits properly. It wouldn’t be difficult to enter the Spirit World and I could use them to appeal to other spirit kings.

I would also receive additional rewards if I returned the fire spirits that I raised.

There were many things that would benefit me if I looked ahead.

‘Now I need to go see Maxium. There is currently a truce between Upa and Aiel so I need to help.’

Upa and Ariel.

Upa had the advantage so I added Maxium to balance the odds.

And Maxium lost a lot of power while trying to hinder Upa.

If I didn't refill his troops while there was a truce, there would no longer be another chance.

'Five million points should be enough.'

I calculated the points I would use to buy additional troops for Maxium and moved back to the dungeon.

Troops could be purchased from the Achievements Store.

It contained a number of the Hell Monarch's treasures, with many of them not being opened yet.

'The treasure is further divided into warehouses and opening them requires points or achievement points.'

I touched my jaw.

Hell Monarch's warehouse. There were multiple warehouses. Not all of them were released immediately. It took a considerable amount to open the warehouses so I had placed them on hold.

‘I won’t need to use points for a while, so it wouldn’t be bad to open one.’

I looked through the long list.

[Sealed Warehouse List]

-Opening the sealed warehouses can be purchased using points.

Magic Weapons Warehouse - 1,500 achievement points or 2,500,000pt

Unknown Secret Warehouse - 2,000 achievement points or 3,200,000pt

Scrolls Warehouse - 1,000 achievement points or 2,000,000pt

Skeleton Soldiers’ Warehouse - 2,500 achievement points or 4,000,000pt

.....

I had around 10,000 achievement points. My normal points were around 15 million. It wasn’t at a level where opening one warehouse would be a burden.

'Maxium needs soldiers. Skeletons will be perfect.'

There were few skeleton soldiers. Most magicians were reluctant to release their recipe for creating them.

However, there was a high probability that there would be general skeleton soldiers in the warehouse.

'I need to open the Skeleton Soldiers' Warehouse.'

-4,000,000pt have been used to unlock the 'Skeleton Soldiers' Warehouse.'

The Achievements Store will list the types of soldiers stored in the Skeleton Soldiers' Warehouse.

I nodded. I used normal points to unlock the seal for the warehouse.

Another list appeared in front of me.

[Skeleton Soldiers' Warehouse]

Skeleton Warlock - 100 achievement points or 100,000pt

Skeleton Guardian - 300 achievement points or 400,000pt

Chaos Soldier - 1,000 achievement points or 1,300,000pt

Bone Dragon (2) - 3,000 or 4,000,000pt

Chapter 193: Magician Of The Moon (1)

There were four types of skeletons. In particular, the warlock and guardian were familiar names that I had seen a few times in my previous life. They had been mass produced by Pandemonium, but individually, they weren't very strong.

But...the chaos soldier was unfamiliar.

Not only that, the next item was enough to amaze me.

'Bone dragon.'

A high class 2Lv creature! I could purchase a maximum of two of them.

'The Hell Monarch possessed a great number of high class creatures.'

The Hell Monarch was someone who tried to become a god. Someone who reached a level that was impossible for humans and caused fear in demons. It wasn't strange that he would place a lot of high class creatures in the Underground World.

Maybe there were other similar high class creatures in the sealed warehouses.

'Conceding in quality.'

I touched my jaw. I could fill the numbers with warlocks and guardians but there might be better strategies. Anyway, Maxium engaged in guerilla warfare rather than a frontal battle.

He could pressure the opponent with small numbers. Maxium's fighting ability was efficient. In terms of strategy, Maxium was better than me.

‘Then...’

I nodded as I decided to make a purchase.

It would be a considerable expenditure but it was well worth the investment.

Belem, Brazil in South America.

In the past, it was a port city that was the centre of commerce and transportation.

It originally had a population of over one million people. However, now it was so devastated that it was hard to find any people.

Maxium was in the centre.

He led 5,000 skeleton soldiers but he only succeeded in delaying

for some time. Of course, that alone was great. He moved the army while avoiding being caught by Upa.

But that didn't last long. The five thousand soldiers had been reduced to only two thousand. The quality of the skeleton soldiers wasn't very good so there was a limit.

"Hrmm, it is too bad that a resupply of troops is needed."

Maxium muttered from near the shore.

The soldiers were made from dead bodies. They didn't need to eat. The problem was that their rate of recruitment was much slower.

He turned his head and saw a pile of bones a short distance away.

Two liches were commanding the soldiers and combining the bones.

There were human bones, creature bones and animal bones, but not all of them could be used to create soldiers.

"Even if it isn't a surprise...kuoong."

He didn't know when the enemy would come to interfere. It didn't make sense for there to be no obstacles but he secured some bases. Then he had been ambushed by some of Grand Duke Upa's

troops late at night.

He was a bit late and almost lost all the soldiers. They were able to be preserved due to Maxium's skill.

‘Now is the perfect time to restore some of the troops.’

Upa had stopped advancing. He was stationed in South Africa and didn't move. At first Maxium was nervous because he thought something was discovered, but that wasn't the case. The sacred zone that occurred caused the demons to reduce their activities.

Anyway, now was the chance to increase his troops without any interruptions.

He had never been able to stay more than five days in one place, so the speed of production was very slow.

"Is the work going well?"

Maxium approached the two liches and asked.

"These humans, too weak. Good bones, not many."

"Speed up the pace anyway. It should be twice as quick."

"Hands, more help! Two people, there is a limit."

The liches' voices were adamant.

They collected dead bodies and extracted the bones. The materials weren't very good so there was a limit of 30 created per day.

The skeleton soldiers moved and collected the bones. Clattering filled the surrounding area but Maxium wasn't satisfied.

'His Majesty entrusted this task to me. If I stop here then I won't be able to maintain my pride.'

The Underground World. Vacant and empty. Maxium was called the Cruel Commander. Unlike the other commanders, he maintained his neutrality and stayed out of the fight for the treasure trove. He might have been sitting still, but in truth, he was maintaining his troops for when His Majesty would return.

If someone truly aimed at the treasure trove then he would move...but he was half-exhausted.

Then he was forcibly summoned to a strange world and heard the sound of the heart. It was at this time that he discovered what he needed to do.

After returning to the Underground World from Earth, he instantly started to stop the battle between commanders. Then he was surprised when His Majesty came to the Underground World.

He didn't like the word fate but he devoted his loyalty to His Majesty on that day.

He was entrusted an important task so he couldn't stop here.

'I need to hit the weak dungeons.'

It was a bit extreme but it was the most obvious way. He had a rough idea of where the dungeons in Upa's faction were located. If he occupied the weakest one then he would be able to restore all his power at once.

The problem was after that. Upa wouldn't be able to stay still. He couldn't act rashly.

Hwaaack!

Kuwuuong!

It happened while Maxium was looking to see if there was another way.

Giant stones started to fall all over the place, the ground was torn and flames appeared.

'These signs...Earl Arend!'

His magic power was unique. He had sensed it the other day when he was ambushed by Arend.

Now he was somehow in the rear.

Maxium looked towards the sea and saw a few krakens and huge boats.

He hadn't noticed at all until they moved. If he made a mistake then it was a mistake, but it didn't make any sense.

'I put up as many defenses as possible...how?'

The liches installed magic warnings in various spots and soldiers were placed in the surroundings. Yet he hadn't heard any news. They started attacking before he noticed.

'There is a magician with great talent.'

It was impossible for a lich to compare to a magician with a lot of skill.

Maxium urgently pulled out his sword.

"Keep your ranks and respond!"

He was determined.

Anyway...it seemed like this fight wouldn't be easy.

Earl Arend, a member of Upa's faction, smiled while revealing his teeth.

"Huhu, your face is an amusing sight. You didn't notice until I got behind you."

Arend was ordered to kill Maxium. But whenever he approached, his target would run away like a ghost. He wasn't able to catch Maxium.

Sometimes Maxium would hide for hours. It was also difficult to deal with Maxium in a one on one fight because he was the leader of an army and at least a high class 3Lv creature.

But it would end today.

Arend laughed and looked back.

There was someone sitting on all fours like a dog and their long hair made it difficult to tell if they were a man or woman.

Upa had given them to Arend directly. A magician who could even deceive high class creatures. They were very useful despite having some limitations.

‘Upa-nim gave me this opportunity. I must use it.’

Maxium!

A death knight.

He didn’t know where Maxium came from, but he had to catch him this time. He might be an event like the angels but it was strange that two would be occurring at the same time. There was a chance someone had caused his appearance.

“There is no place to escape. Death awaits on land, ocean and even underneath you.”

Arend raised his hand. At the same time, one of his skills ‘Earth Explosion’ was used.

Kwaang!

Fire and earth rose up on all sides. The hot flames swallowed up the skeleton soldiers and melted their bones.

It was the worst situation, but he was a seasoned veteran.

Maxium had already set up movement magic in preparation for a situation like this. There was a restriction that large amounts of materials were needed and the magic circle couldn’t be moved, but

it was necessary when preparing a base.

‘The liches and main soldiers need time to get away.’

It took a considerable amount of time for the movement magic to activate. That time needed to be earned. In this situation, he had to survive.

Even if all his troops were lost. Because Maxium was worth more than them.

However, he couldn't assume failure from the beginning and retreat alone.

Maxium aimed to buy some time.

His sword shone a brilliant gold and he swept it around him.

A cerberus and many other creatures around him were wiped out.

‘Arend!’

Maxium only had eyes for one person. Earl Arend. Next to him was an unidentified creature.

‘That guy.’

Ahh. He realized it immediately.

That guy was the magician. The magic power flowing around him was very different.

‘I have to kill him.’

It wouldn’t end with just this.

They had obviously planned for a surprise of this scale.

A magician was very dangerous when chasing someone. It was very risky.

‘If he lives then he will be a stumbling block to His Majesty.’

At the very least, it was more urgent to get rid of the magician than Arend.

The liches had no way of matching the magician’s black magic. No matter how strong His Majesty was, the magician would be troublesome.

So...it was best to cut off the bud now.

“Sword!”

Huuuuong!

The sword trembled and the gold light spread out more widely.

Shortly after that, Maxium ignored all creatures and started running.

I scowled.

‘Strange.’

The crystal ball I gave to Maxium before he left had lost its light. It was proof that it was destroyed or couldn’t be contacted.

If something happened then it would have been reported. However, it was clear that something had abruptly happened.

‘Maxium would have noticed if someone was about to ambush him.’

Maxium had an outstanding ability as a commander. He wouldn’t be caught off guard. He always prepared a few things in case something happened.

But there were some doubts. I didn’t feel good.

After getting some foresight, my senses had become more sharp. If I felt like this, nine out of 10 times I was right.

Crunch. Dalgurak.

A sound came from the rear while I was looking into the crystal ball.

I turned around and two unusual skeletons greeted me.

‘Chaos soldier.’

Eight legs reminiscent of a spider and two torsos.

Of course, there were two heads and four arms.

They were all made of bones and had a geometric look.

Both of them were chaos soldiers.

I immediately opened Mind’s Eye and saw their status windows.

Name: Chaos Soldier

Stats

Strength: 101

Intelligence: 66

Agility: 88

Stamina: 99

Magic Power: 77

Potential: (431/431)

Uniqueness: Born in the midst of chaos, a powerful skeleton soldier.

Skill: Chaos and Destruction (Epic), Seconds Acceleration (Ex U)

Chapter 194: Magician Of The Moon (2)

They had a very good quality for skeletons. There was also one epic grade skill. Typically, creatures could be bought that surpassed the limit of general creatures.

The two chaos soldiers followed behind me as I moved. We eventually reached the entrance of the dungeon where some creatures were waiting.

Two bone dragons!

They were more expensive than expected, but there would be no harm if I bought them. If I had bought the bone dragons from the Demon World Auction, they would have been more than 56 million points due to the competition.

Their bodies were close to 100 metres long. Their wings were even bigger. There were even two of them. It was hard not to feel overwhelmed.

I slowly climbed on top of one dragon. The chaos soldiers boarded the other bone dragon and grabbed the reins. The combination of chaos soldiers and bone dragons would give me an unimaginable destructive power.

Of course, it wasn't a demonic dragon, but it was still a dragon!

Dragons were arrogant and prideful. It was almost impossible of

make them follow someone. I had been very envious of demons who managed to obtain a dragon as a mount.

Now I was able to fly directly on a bone dragon. Weaker than a demonic dragon, the bone dragon was the strongest among the undead.

“Master ~ where are you going?”

Yihi who was napping rubbed her eyes and asked.

“I am going to meet Maxium. Report if anything urgent happens.”

"Yihi will do her best. Yihihi."

I didn't have great faith in her but Yihi had matured a little bit after the accident. If there was an urgent matter then she would be the first to report it. Of course, her version of 'urgent' might be different but both Chrisley and Tashmal were busy.

"Talk to Julliom about small things."

Julliom of the dark elves was somewhat trustworthy. Yihi swelled up like she was upset.

“Trust Yihi, Master. No problem will be able to escape from my eyes.”

I was glad.

I kicked the bone dragon lightly.

Kuaaaaaah!

The bone dragon roared and spread open its wings.

As the chaos soldiers grabbed the reins more tightly, the bone dragons quickly left the dungeon entrance.

"Take care~"

Yihi bowed as carefully as possible.

The last contact was in Brazil. I was told that they were hiding in a small city called Belem.

It was quite far away but the dragon's speed was more than I imagined. I was able to reach the destination in only half a day.

It was adjacent to the sea but the city was already ruined.

The corpses and bones of all types of creatures were strewn around.

I got down from the dragon, looked around and came to a conclusion.

"There was a surprise raid. It was in the immediate vicinity."

It was literally a raid. It was unexpected and Maxium was greatly damaged.

Fortunately, I couldn't see Maxium's body anywhere.

The culprit was one of the demons in Upa's faction but...I was skeptical as I saw the remnants of a fierce battle.

'He wouldn't lose thousands of creatures in one step.'

In the meantime, I hadn't bothered going out. In order to interfere with Upa and Ariel, I had crammed a fishing rod between them.

Maxium obstructed them. He played that role for me.

'I have to find him.'

Maxium had many uses. He couldn't be lost in a place like this.

"Look around. If you see anything strange then notify me straight away."

Swiii.

100 shades started to move.

After losing contact, I had brought the shades just in case.

Approximately 30 minutes later, the shades started returning. Most of them found nothing, but a few discovered markings.

‘Movement magic.’

Shabby markings.

It was half-erased but it was unmistakably a magic circle for movement magic.

It took a considerable amount of time and materials to set up the movement magic. No other demons were staying here so Maxium must have been the one to set it up. It was a precautionary measure in case he was attacked without notice.

‘The flow of magic power is broken.’

Unfortunately, I discovered that the magic power circuit of the movement magic was completely blocked. I couldn’t chase after the flow of magic power.

‘Someone followed Maxium and deliberately blocked the flow of magic power.’

I raised a hand to my forehead. If Maxium was attacked and had to evacuate quickly then there would be no way for him to block the magic circuit.

It certainly wouldn’t benefit Maxium.

Why? The enemy must believe that Maxium had a helper.

‘There are some doubts but it is almost certain.’

My thoughts weren’t foolish. Anyway, it was a wise judgment by the enemy. Thanks to this, I was blocked here. I didn’t have the ability to recover the traces that had been erased.

“Hrmm...?”

While searching around, I found a sword in the ruins.

“This...Maxium’s sword.”

I grabbed the ordinary-looking sword.

It was obviously the sword that Maxium used. The sword gave off

a splendid golden colour when fighting the enemy, but it usually looked plain like this.

Maybe this was the reason why the enemy didn't find the sword. They had always seen it shining brightly in Maxium's hands.

I injected magic power into the sword. A faint golden aura surrounded the sword.

Bururu!

At that moment, the sword shook. I moved it and the sword stopped shaking. I did the same thing and the sword shook again.

'The sword is responding to the southeast.'

I nodded.

The sword wasn't shaking for no reason.

It was almost unprecedented but it wasn't strange for a sword to develop an ego after being used for a long time. Maxium had used this sword for more than a thousand years.

It wasn't a complete ego sword but it knew where its master was.

I left the ruins.

Then I got on the dragon and said.

“To the southeast.”

All of South America was Upa's area. I couldn't move around wildly. It could be a problem if I was caught.

'Somebody came.'

A demon near here...Drumin? He was a demon who had considerable attachment to this area.

He fiercely pursued me with dozens of wyverns.

"Speed up."

However, the wyverns couldn't keep up with the bone dragons' speed.

Puaaang!

The bone dragons spread open their wings and flew even quicker.

There were a few more chases by the time I got to the place where the sword reacted strongly. It was a place with a lot of mountains and Maxium was clearly somewhere here.

“Wait here.”

I was bound to be discovered when moving with the bone dragons. I hid their bodies as much as possible and moved alone. The chaos soldiers were also near the dragons.

‘The smell of death.’

My frown deepened as I entered the mountains. There were no traces of creatures but an unpleasant smell was hanging around.

It was a similar smell to when I killed the commanders in the Underground World. It was very weak but still awful. However, this was Earth and the only commander was Maxium.

This smell obviously came from Maxium.

‘I won’t know until I check.’

Unless Upa came out directly...I never thought Maxium would be so easily hit by others.

Tsk. I clicked my tongue as I moved.

I moved in the direction that Maxium’s sword pointed to and soon found a cave.

There was a strong smell coming from inside the cave.

Here. Maxium was in here.

The inside of the cave was quite long. I didn't see any other soldiers at all.

Soon...deep inside the cave, I found Maxium collapsed against a wall.

He was losing consciousness.

It was difficult to tell if he was dead or alive simply by his appearance.

“Maxium.”

I opened my magic power and gave him some strength.

After waiting dozens of seconds, Maxium moved slightly.

“Emperor...Your Majesty...?”

Maxium tried to stand up after recognizing me. I stopped him and said.

"That's right. You don't need to get up. Just explain what happened."

"Moon..."

"Moon?"

"Enormous magic power of the moon...magician..."

Maxium's story ended there. He lost consciousness again.

I slowly laid my hands on Maxium's shoulders.

'A non-demonic magician.'

If the opponent was a demon then he would have said the name. All Maxium said was 'magician.'

However, I didn't have any memories of a moon magician. Some human Awakened had similar names but it was impossible for them to face Maxium at their level. It didn't fit.

'Upa must have done something.'

I shook my head.

First I had to treat Maxium.

Chapter 195: Magician Of The Moon (3)

Maxium recovered his senses two days later.

In the meantime, I watched the surroundings from deep in the mountains. It was because there were demons in the surroundings.

They weren't chasing after me...they were certainly looking for Maxium.

“What happened?”

Shortly after Maxium woke up.

I asked him bluntly.

His body was already dead so there was no need to restore his physical strength.

Maxium quickly kneeled down.

“...I was taken by surprise.”

"I know. But I don't understand. A quick raid shouldn't have done this. Did I overestimate you?"

All the soldiers were wiped out. Maxium alone survived.

No matter how high level the demons, there were few who surpassed Maxium. The one who did this...I couldn't imagine.

"I'm sorry, Your Majesty. My abilities were lacking...I couldn't do anything against the demon Arend."

"Earl Arend led the raid."

I was familiar with him. In the past, he was an earl who was fairly strong. He was one of the earls in Upa's faction.

Maxium slightly raised his head. His eyes flashed as he said.

"That's right. But there was a nondescript person next to Arend. A mighty magician with the power of the moon! An unusual magician who turned the surroundings into night in an instant."

Maxium had said that moments before he collapsed. I had been curious about this part.

Furthermore, it seemed like the magician had hurt Maxium.

"Give me the details."

"He can turn an area into 'night.' The space is isolated so I didn't notice until I entered it. And he had an invincible power inside it the area. Of course...Your Majesty is stronger..."

In short, his abilities were to blame for Maxium not noticing the raid. This was a part that I had been dubious about.

'It means the magician is strong.'

My eyes narrowed. A magician that used the majestic power of the moon.

It was a bit surprising. If Upa has such a person under him then they would have been advantageous in the fight against Ariel.

No, if there was such a magician then I would have heard about it. Chrisley had visited many enemy territories around the world.

'Is there a reason why they can't be used?'

He was called the 'magician of the moon.' Anyone would have used him against Ariel. There was no reason to hide it.

Maybe...the magician was testing his strength against Maxium.

'Upa. What did you do?'

I pressed a hand against my forehead. The magician of the moon was likely to be within the area of transcendence. Or maybe he could exert his strength under special conditions.

He was obtained from either a summoning or special accomplishment.

Anyway, he was certainly an unexpected variable.

"Is that all you've found out?"

"Arend is controlling the magician. He is always located next to Arend."

If I monitored Arend then I would be able to know where the magician of the moon was. However, it meant entering the 'domain of night.'

Maxium hadn't noticed until he entered it.

Would it escape my detection?

'There is nothing as difficult as the unknown.'

I stood at the crossroads of choice. It wouldn't matter if I ignored it. I could gain something by default. The aim was to kill the winner of the fight between Ariel and Upa. However, if Upa had a subordinate that was as powerful as a transcendent person then the game was already over.

If he sent out the magician then it would lead to overwhelming

victory. Then Upa would become an even bigger opponent. It was tricky.

Cutting off the bud...

This was one of the options but it had to be handled quietly.

“Maxium. We need a plan to quietly bring out the magician of the moon. At the very least, a one on one fight with me needs to be created.”

I was inferior when it came to tactics. I didn't know much. This was a problem in the past but now I had subordinates who could do it for me. And Maxium was quite reliable in that area.

Maxium thought for awhile before opening his mouth.

"There is...but I require quite a few soldiers.”

Maxium was very careful when he started to speak again.

I briefly answered.

"I can't give you a lot.”

Giving him additional troops was a stumbling block. Currently Upa's demons were surrounding this area and watching.

It was fortunate that I came here with two bone dragons and two chaos soldiers. If there were more creatures then it would have been difficult to stay undetected.

“A lot of soldiers aren’t required. Quality is more important.”

"That is a simple matter. Follow me."

This place was inside a cave.

I led Maxium outside and slowly released a little of my magic power.

Eventually, I led him through a dense forest.

“This...”

"Bone dragons and chaos soldiers. Is that enough?"

There were four high class creatures. It was enough power to capture one dungeon.

Maxium’s body trembled.

“Ahh, it has been a long time since I’ve seen them. They were there when the Emperor first created the Underground World.”

He also knew the chaos soldiers. Maxium was the Hell Monarch's oldest knight. It wasn't strange.

Maxium then continued.

"That is enough. No, it is more than enough. Tying up Arend's feet and separating the magician of the moon..."

"I will leave it to you."

"M-me? These creatures can only be moved by Your Majesty."

"I will leave them to you. I will take care of the rest."

Maxium stared at me blankly before forming a fist.

His eyes also changed. He was full of desire to do so.

After a moment, Maxium bowed even deeper.

"New Maxium, I will follow Your Majesty's order."

Arend was frantic to catch Maxium. Arend had persistently followed and harassed Maxium. Maxium was aiming for this.

"Your Majesty, please be patient. I will settle this in a week."

"Are you that confident?"

"It would be hard with me alone, but the bone dragons and chaos soldiers are the same as having half a million allies. How can I fail?"

It was natural that the operation would be a success.

"Then be careful. Your Majesty. The magician of the moon has strange magic. I couldn't understand everything."

I wasn't offended by his remark.

A mysterious magician who even fooled Maxium. It was enough to be tense.

"There is nobody in this world who can beat me."

I said confidently. In fact, those words weren't wrong. Even if the magician of the moon showed up, I was still the strongest in this area.

"I believe you. Then...I will move right away."

I nodded. Maxium climbed on the back of a bone dragon.

The creature wouldn't move unless I was the one controlling them. That might have been the case with the Hell Monarch but I also had the authority of the Dungeon Master.

'I can practice while waiting.'

I had entrusted it to him. I decided to act separately while listening to periodic reports.

But I wasn't playing around.

These mountains were remote with no humans. I would use this opportunity to review my fights with myself. I couldn't pass up this chance.

As soon as the creatures left, I found a place where I could concentrate. There was no need to train by moving my body and wielding my sword. I only needed a quiet place to meditate.

Maxium separated the two bone dragons and used one to raid Arend's troops. He skillfully attracted the enemies and destroyed them.

Only a few creatures could be handled at a time. However, the story was different if he repeated this dozens of times a day. Arend immediately convened all his troops and chased after Maxium.

"You are good at running away!"

The red-faced Arend shouted at Maxium who was running away. Maxium didn't stop and quickly disappeared on the bone dragon's back.

The speed of the bone dragon exceeded imagination. Once it started flying away, there was no way to catch it.

Nevertheless, Maxium didn't allow himself to completely escape. He was luring them somewhere on purpose. In the meantime, the other bone dragon didn't appear.

"If you are a knight then face me!"

"You!"

Arend was frustrated every time he nearly caught Maxium. He felt queasy every time he saw Maxium's face.

A week passed and Arend felt desperate. He chased Maxium with his fastest creatures.

Naturally that included the magician of the moon. He was confident that he had enough troops.

Maxium deliberately allowed Arend to catch up with him.

"Your running ends here."

"....."

"Surrender. Then I will neatly kill you."

"I will never surrender to you in a million years."

"Ha! Even in a situation like this. You keep mouthing off!"

It was clear there would be a battle.

Thousands of creatures started to attack Maxium and the bone dragon.

Arend pursued Maxium with the magician of the moon while the rest of the creatures took on the bone dragon and chaos soldier.

Just before they clashed. Maxium raised his sword and golden light shot into the sky.

"Sword!"

Kuaaaang!

The sky turned gold and at the same time, a roar was heard from far away.

Immediately...a dragon and chaos soldier that hadn't been seen before appeared.

Two of each for a total of four creatures!

It was a small number but their power had doubled.

Arend only chose the quick creatures so the quality wasn't good. Except for the magician of the moon, the strength advantage had been reversed.

“Eek...!”

In contrast, Arend gritted his teeth.

“You deal with that dragon. I will take care of him.”

He wanted to handle Maxium quickly but the situation had changed. It was dangerous for the creatures to deal with the bone dragon and chaos soldiers.

Maxium smiled as he saw the magician of the moon leaving.

‘It is going as planned.’

It was halfway there.

The bent over magician of the moon straightened. The person with tangled black hair sprang up towards the sky and revealed two completely black eyes. It was like the night had been transferred into his eyes. The face and body were so dried out that it was difficult to tell if the magician was a man or woman.

The magician of the moon started to rise into the air. Darkness rushed to him and the surrounding area became as clear night. The moon rose in the space and both black eyes began to shine yellow.

The bone dragon instantly turned around. It noticed that the strongest creature was here.

The magician of the moon stretched out his hands and the moon shone brighter.

Wiaaaaang!

Light particles gathered at his fingertips. After a moment, the light split into thousands of rays. They were like shooting stars as the rays headed towards the bone dragon.

Huuuuong!

Kwarururung!

The bone dragon breathed out. It was a default skill for a dragon.

The dragon's breath was one of the top ranked skills. It was common for everything in front of the breath to disappear.

However, the starlight touched the breath and started to absorb its power. Something unimaginable was happening in front of its eyes.

The bone dragon noticed the danger, stopped the breath and descended. Creatures ran up to it but the bone dragon quickly flapped its wings and left the area of night.

The magician followed with an expressionless face. His speed wasn't slower than the bone dragon's.

A cat and mouse chase. The area of night also moved with him, leaving only slight starlight in his path.

The magician of the moon didn't care as Arend got further away.

He received only one command. Deal with this bone dragon.

Chapter 196: Magician Of The Moon (4)

I was waiting. A signal would eventually reach the top of the mountain. My perception was quite large and I would immediately notice if someone entered the area.

Maxium said that he hadn't noticed the magician of the moon until he was close. In other words, this was a test. I wondered if I could recognize the 'night' that the magician of the moon used.

I sat at the top and closed my eyes in meditation. A few days passed as I maintained my position.

'I just thought that moving my body was training.'

I had thought that moving my body was the key to becoming stronger. If I didn't do that then I wouldn't become strong. Indeed, it was true to some extent.

However, I received some enlightenment from the Tree of Origin. Now just meditating and imagining it was efficient. I could look at myself as objectively as possible and refine my techniques.

It was really incredible. I had judged that I couldn't become stronger without raising my stats, but I had gone one step further even with the same stats.

No...that wasn't it.

I knew it. But I had forgotten.

It was in my previous life. Was it before I came to Earth?

I knew better than anyone else how the weak could overcome the strong on the battlefield.

But after coming to Earth, I had been too focused on the status windows and skills. They were both visible and reliable indicators so I hadn't doubted them.

However, my shadow had overwhelmed me with the same stats. I was able to feel the difference between the same stats.

I had literally become a slave to the status window.

So I had neglected the other half of my development. It was my responsibility. I had to fix it.

'This feeling is...'

At that moment, I narrowed my eyes.

An alien feeling on my skin. Creepy...

I wanted to laugh but didn't. My body had reacted first. It was before I could even consciously think!

In this case, it meant only one thing.

Meeting a strong enemy!

I already met the grand dukes and knew how strong they were in my previous life. Their adjusted bodies weren't as good. I was surprised when I met the Fire Spirit King, but he was still within my range to some extent.

However...the approaching presence was different.

In any case, it had been a pretty long time. It wasn't an overwhelming feeling. It was just different. Everything was different. I couldn't understand it so I frowned.

Then I opened my eyes.

I looked towards the direction that gave me the alien feeling.

'He has arrived.'

Night was approaching from far away.

I confirmed it with the naked eye.

'Perception.'

Maxium couldn't sense him but I did.

But that was it. I couldn't tell what he was.

The weak ability of foresight wasn't any use right now.

Therefore...I produced Pride's flames in order to confirm it.

'Who are you?'

A magician of the moon who created night. The secret weapon Upa had been hiding was right in front of me.

He was fiercely chasing the bone dragon.

As he came closer, my surroundings gradually turned into night.

However, my eyes were complex as I gazed at him.

I couldn't take his measure.

Strong, weak, the type of magic power...

He seemed to be complete since there was no instability.

The flow of magic power from him felt like the beginning when the world was being born. I had never seen that type of magic power before so I wasn't sure how to judge it.

‘I have to face it.’

An unknown enemy.

If everything was covered in a veil then I needed to peel it back. If I peeled off even a little bit then an outline might appear.

I raised Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

‘Dark Sword.’

The two swords turned black.

I concentrated my magic power on the swords and swung towards the magician.

Kuwaaaaaang!

A huge explosion occurred that devoured hundreds of metres around it. The explosion expanded and compressed, destroying everything.

However, it didn't have an effect on the magician. His hair was

just seared a little bit.

It didn't make sense. Even I would be a little hurt from that.

My eyes went to something behind him.

Moon. A large moon was shining brightly. He was also dragging the moon with him.

'A life vessel?'

It was sometimes used to save a lich's life. Many lich couldn't resist the temptation of immortality and the life vessel would save their lives. The moon felt similar to a life vessel.

But...preparing a separate life vessel reduced the efficiency of the magic power. Strong magic couldn't be used and if the body was broken, restoration would be very slow.

'It was destroyed and recovered in an instant.'

I was convinced the life vessel was the reason.

Just before the attack, I confirmed that his body was broken. It was a very short time but the blow was enough to crush parts of the magician. Regardless of what I thought, regeneration was impossible.

However, he was broken and restored simultaneously. It could be called recovery, but it exceeded the normal level of recovery. It was beyond shocking.

‘Then what?’

I didn’t know. That person was really strange. Dark Sword made repairing injuries impossible, except for transcendent beings. In other words, that person had entered the realm of transcendence.

The magician of the moon glanced at me. I was prepared for an attack from him. He definitely knew I was there after receiving my strike.

However, he just passed me like nothing had happened. He only chased after the bone dragon.

Was my attack not even on the level of a tickle for him?

‘Ha.’

It was really outrageous. I had never experienced this type of disregard in my previous life. If I attacked then an opponent had to respond.

I grinded my teeth and stared at the moon. If that was really a life vessel then I couldn’t ignore it.

The wings made of Pride's flames burned even more intensely. Walls instantly rose up on all sides...but just like a real moon, I couldn't get close to it. I judged that it was disguised as the moon in the area of night but that wasn't it.

'This situation...'

I had wide limits in regards to my common sense. Still, the magician of the moon was beyond these limits.

I didn't know and checked the status window.

'This is the effect of Haien Moon's Necklace.'

When the moon was up, there was an option to increase magic power by three.

This was a real moon?

I attacked the moon but couldn't reach it.

"Tsk."

It wasn't something could forcibly capture.

I descended.

In this time, one third of the bone dragon's wing had disappeared.

The bone dragon would soon be destroyed if this continued.

‘I have to hit him.’

There was no other way. If I destroyed the body several times then he would eventually reach his limit. Then I would see if he could still ignore me.

"Paranormal."

-Paranormal's blessing has been granted.

All stats will rise by 2 points for one hour.

‘Lightning God. Go and eat.’

I increased my strength even further. I triggered Dark Sword again around Wrath and the Emperor's Sword. I concentrated and added the power of Lightning God.

I had never done this before. Now all my different types of powers were gathered around the two swords.

I aimed the power that was on the verge of exploding at the magician of the moon.

He didn't even bother to avoid it. Of course, a huge explosion occurred the moment it hit.

Kwaaaaang!

It was an overwhelming sight that seemed to create a wall between heaven and earth.

It was ten times stronger than my previous attack.

'I can only use it a few times.'

I had forced a tremendous amount of magic power into it. There was still some left but I couldn't afford to recklessly repeat it.

So what about this time?

The explosion repeatedly expanded and compressed. I wasn't able to confirm the situation inside.

Soon, the aftermath of the explosion disappeared and I could see the target.

One of his arms had disappeared. To be precise, it was the area

where the arm and legs should be.

It seemed he restored his body several times before it wasn't as effective.

‘There is an effect.’

I couldn't be ignored this time.

The magician of the moon turned his head and looked at me.

Approximately three seconds.

Then he focused on killing the bone dragon again.

“.....”

I had felt an indescribable feeling when I looked into his eyes.

Chapter 197: World (1)

‘Let’s see how long he can ignore me for.’

The attack had clearly hurt him yet the magician had only glanced at me for three seconds.

In fact, I had never seen this before.

I had decided to test him.

He didn’t even think of avoiding it...that didn’t make him difficult. I could simply attack wildly.

Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword were filled with magic power. Due to his regenerative power, it wasn’t enough to simply cut his neck. I needed to make a big impact on his body.

Chwaruruk!

A huge amount of magic power was squeezed out of the swords and rushed towards the magician of the moon.

“Ha...”

It took a long time. A sigh emerged from my mouth. I didn’t move my body but my magic power was almost depleted. I attacked like crazy for more than an hour.

At this point, he couldn't afford to ignore me. His empty eyes moved from the bone dragon towards me.

However, the magician of the moon didn't move. Approximately one third of his body had suffered irreparable blows.

It was great. To be honest, I couldn't really believe it.

So far, I had launched so many direct hits that a seraphim wouldn't be fine. Even the Fire Spirit King and grand dukes from my previous life would have disappeared after being hit by such enormous attacks. That was under the assumption that I hit them.

Incredibly, the magician of the moon managed to maintain a lot of his body. It seemed like he would only reach his limits after hundreds or maybe thousands of attacks.

“Who are you?”

I approached him quietly. The magician of the moon still didn't move. His eyes only faced my direction. I felt like there was a little bit of 'confusion' in his eyes.

Perhaps he didn't know how to deal with me. His body was at risk but he couldn't decide what to do.

‘I heard he is always next to Arend.’

Maybe...he was nothing but a puppet following a command. He was ordered to deal with the bone dragon and chased it up to here. Even if I attacked, his order to was to exterminate the bone dragon.

‘A doll with strong capabilities.’

I couldn’t imagine how Upa had obtained such an existence.

It was impossible through simple summoning. The presence of nothingness, it was completely different from when I met Contegonom.

I didn’t know if he had similar accomplishments such as raising a Tree of Origin and upgrading the dungeon to unique, but such events seemed unbelievable.

The magician of the moon. The person in front of me was someone who hadn’t appeared in my previous life.

‘Dangerous.’

My instincts warned me.

I saw him attack the bone dragon. He wielded the power randomly so the efficiency wasn’t good, but the offensive power of one strike was outstanding. If he had such high regenerative power then it was no wonder Maxium called him ‘invincible.’

Even I felt the risk.

What if Arend showed up and commanded him to take care of me?

I needed to make a calm judgement. It was advantageous if he kept on moving like a doll.

‘The Power of Domination isn’t acting.’

I was a threat. He had been in a critical condition many times. However, Power of Domination didn’t show any signs of manifesting at all.

It was unlikely that Upa’s dominance was greater than mine. It was strange that the power hadn’t manifested.

It was proof that the existence of the person called the magician of the moon was as great as the fire essence with the power of domination.

The great fire...

One of the nine fires that the fire spirits worshipped.

A god of fire to the spirits. They weren’t real gods but some parts were true. When dealing with creatures, many advanced creatures

bowed to their power.

"I have to kill him here."

I said in a heavy tone. I couldn't let him go back and add to Upa's power. If I couldn't have him then I needed to get rid of him now.

I gazed at him seriously. Even now, there was a delay in his reaction. He was curious about my sudden appearance.

It wasn't impossible to approach him.

However, there was confusion in his eyes.

This was the first time he had been physically hurt and he would die if he didn't ignore the command. If he died then he couldn't kill the bone dragon. The confusion caused him to stop acting altogether.

I gathered my magic power.

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword became overheated but I didn't stop.

The moment when all my magic power was gathered.

His eyes changed.

I was his pure enemy!

It seemed like he realized he had to kill me in order to fulfill the command.

‘It is too late.’

I was already on the verge of completing my attack. When he realized...

Syuuaaaang!

‘Ha...’

The ‘night’ that surrounded him was sucked into his body. Only the moon stayed there.

The night was sucked in so I felt like something intense would happen.

I struck first.

The previous strikes couldn’t be compared to the power used now.

That attack that contained all my magic power finally reached

the magician of the moon.

Kuaaaaaaaaang!

It seemed like my whole body was burning up. I opened my eyes to terrible pain and the hot sun.

Swaaack! Swaaack!

The sound of rough waves could be heard. After I raised my body with difficulty, I was convinced that this was the beach.

‘Where is this place?’

However, the beach was unfamiliar to me.

The last attack had destroyed the magician of the moon but the ‘night’ that he absorbed caused an explosion. It was quite a formidable explosion...maybe the blast swept me away.

All my magic power was depleted so I fell unconscious after being hit by the blast.

‘I have almost no magic power left.’

My magic power was empty. It wouldn't recover anytime soon. That meant I couldn't use most of my skills. The depletion of magic power also affected my body, so I wouldn't be as powerful as before.

I calmly examined my body's condition.

‘The worst.’

I would only have the strength to face up to advanced level creatures. I needed to find a place to recover for a while. It was imperative that I restore my magic power.

At least I was wearing the Conqueror's Ring. It was an item that recovered magic power by an extra 10% for each territory. According to my estimates, it would take three or four days to recover all my magic power.

Of course, I didn't need to stay here during that period.

‘Yihi.’

I could communicate with Yihi over a far distance. This was due to Yihi's blessing.

I wanted to have Chrisley or Tashmal bring me back.

However, the communication didn't reach her. There was no

answer from Yihi.

‘Strange.’

A similar thing had happened in the Underground World.

Yet the area around me looked like Earth. There wasn’t an alien feeling like in the Underground World.

“Wahh! What to do? At this rate, the world will fall!”

At that moment, a creature passed me at a tremendous speed. The appearance was similar to a rabbit but it was approximately two metres tall. The pure white fur and red eyes were impressive, but the problem was that it was too fast. It was running past the beach.

If it wasn’t for my keen eyes, I wouldn’t have seen it.

‘This?’

The rabbit glanced at me as it ran past.

“A bug has occurred near 666! Aish, I’m so busy I feel like dying!”

It left behind those strange words.

It disappeared in one direction.

‘I guess I have to follow.’

I’d never heard of such a creature. It was similar to a creature but didn’t give off the same presence.

In addition, the rabbit’s smell was similar to that of the magician of the moon.

If so, this wasn’t a normal place.

I walked in the direction that the rabbit had disappeared in.

‘Speed...hrmm.’

My speed was slow due to my magic power exhaustion so I naturally frowned. I started to run with just my pure body.

This lasted for several hours.

The traces of the rabbit were obvious but it was too far away to be seen.

Instead, I saw both familiar and unusual looking creatures.

"Areas 811 and 544 have failed. I have to repair them!"

“Go!”

Giants were moving around carrying hammers.

They also didn't see me as I walked past.

Large warts were sunbathing while magpie-like birds were pecking at the ground.

They were muttering something unknown but didn't acknowledge me when I approached.

I tried to touch one but nothing happened.

"Hey, can't you see me?"

It was the same when I went up a being that looked like a nose and talked.

It didn't pay attention to me at all.

'It seems like the rabbit is the key.'

The first rabbit that I saw was the only one who acknowledged me.

I left the nose and followed the trail of the rabbit.

Chapter 198: World (2)

I ran for a long time. It seemed like I had been running for over 10 hours but the sky was still the same. This place seemed to have no evening.

The strength of my body was still decent but I couldn't run non-stop. A few hours later, I was able to achieve my goal.

‘Here.’

A place where the rabbit's traces ended. It was a forest with a small wooden house in the centre.

I didn't hesitate to enter the house.

"A crack in area 784 again!"

"Close area 227! Everybody take shelter!"

"Wahh! Where is Teacher?"

It seemed like a small wooden house. When I walked in, I saw a strange room with no end.

A giant rabbit was sitting in front of a screen that was a similar size.

It wasn't the rabbit that I had first encountered.

My magic power might have been depleted but I could still smell it.

After a while, I was able to find the rabbit holding a notebook in a corner.

"Ah, what to do, I can't do this alone without Teacher..."

"Hey."

"The system is a complete mess. Why is this happening? Who has access to the administrator privileges? I don't have access to it at all. There is no way to repair this. Euuuugh."

"Look at me."

Duk!

The rabbit's legs thumped strongly.

"Huh?"

The rabbit looked at me strangely.

At the same time, the rabbit's eyes expanded to twice their size.

"Eh eh... Why did the bug near area 666 come here? No, how did you come in?"

"I'm not a bug."

The rabbit had said it on the beach but I didn't like hearing it again. I frowned as the rabbit cocked his head.

"A bug just called himself a bug. I don't know how he got here but a strong vaccine should work..."

"The other beings here can't see me. Only you have acknowledged me. Tell me. Who are you and what is this place?"

"Vaccine!"

The rabbit turned his head and shouted loudly. He waited a while but nothing happened. The rabbit looked at me with very confused eyes.

"Why isn't there a vaccine reaction? Wait, only I can see you?"

I folded my arms and watched the rabbit's next movements. I judged that the rabbit didn't have the power to threaten me. I was still weak because my magic power wasn't entirely restored, but I could cope.

Then the rabbit's eyes narrowed. He gazed closely at the top of my head.

“No ID...what are you if you're not a bug?”

“Randolph Brigsiel. A demon.”

I waited as he panicked. Now I introduced myself first.

“Demon? Ahh! Teacher mentioned it a few times. But how did you travel here from the Demon World? Wasn't Teacher the one who devised this program? Let's see.”

He searched around his long white ears before grabbing some glasses. The rabbit put on the glasses and started to gesture in the air.

It seemed like he was dancing alone. He seemed like a crazy guy.

-Forced intrusion from the outside has been blocked.

‘Huh...?’

A message popped out in front of me. At the same time, smoke was emitted from the glasses worn by the rabbit.

The rabbit quickly took off his glasses.

"W-what the? This program? Isn't it different? Moreover, the security level...it is over Teacher's level! Unbelievable!"

Both eyes were shocked. His mouth dropped wide open and he looked at me with disbelief. The horror in his eyes changed to amazement.

"It would be very scary if you were a virus from outside. Disabling the vaccine and only recognizing me as a part administrator...maybe I might have already been infected."

"I don't know what you're talking about."

I really didn't know. I had heard similar words from humans but that was all.

"You are called Randolph Brigsiel? Can I hear where you came from?"

The voice of the rabbit was desperate.

"There has to be some give and take. You know me but I have no idea who you are."

"Ah, I'm sorry. My ID is 0001. I am the administrator of the

Reverse World.”

"The Reverse World?"

The rabbit nodded and said.

“The moon! We call it the rear of the moon.”

After a brief introduction from 0001, I was guided into a small room. The room was filled with moonlight and a map of the universe.

"You came from Earth? I'm sorry. I really thought you were a program. Anyway, is this the Earth that you are referring to?"

0001 pointed to one area of the map of the universe. He tapped his index finger a few times, causing the map of the universe to expand and a blue planet to appear.

"It seems correct.”

“Really? Right here...ah, it is difficult.”

“Difficult?”

“This is a planet that the administrators can’t interfere with. It is a rule passed down from the top administrators. One...it has been

five Earth years?”

A little over five years. It overlapped with the period when the demons came to Earth. I narrowed my eyes and asked.

"What administrator are you specifically talking about?"

“Gods!”

“Gods...”

I didn't understand at first. 0001 referred to himself as an 'administrator.' He didn't feel like a god at all.

"The gods also have ranks. In this case, Teacher, who manages this world is the middle administrator. I am only Teacher's assistant. I'm not a god."

I nodded and 0001 continued.

"At any rate, the middle administrators are assigned a world. They make sure that the rules of the world don't collapse...in contrast, the top administrators don't allow us to engage directly or indirectly with Earth."

"What about the location of the [devil Death Bringer](#)?"

For me, the story of gods was like catching floating clouds. After I said the name of the devil, 0001 responded kindly.

"A devil would be one of the top administrators. Ah, that's right. It was a devil who forcibly removed Earth from our jurisdiction. The name was...yes, Death Bringer. There was some opposition but the low level administrators were forced to proceed."

0001 closed his mouth. He stared at my face blankly like he was worried about something.

"And you came from Earth. Is this related to Teacher's disappearance?"

"Who is this teacher you are referring to?"

"The Reverse World's top administrator. Two months ago he suddenly disappeared. As soon as Teacher disappeared, someone else got administrative permissions and this world became a complete mess. We can't do anything because of it."

0001 had a grim expression on his face.

I touched my jaw.

0001 said that this was a world behind the moon.

The moon. And the administrator disappeared. The time and

place oddly coincided. Above all, there was a smell similar to the magician of the moon coming from 0001.

"I might have met the one you call Teacher."

"What...?"

"He used the power of the moon. He always had night around him and despite destroying his body hundreds of times, it was regenerated instantaneously. Then he sucked all of the night inside him."

"That...that's right! Teacher! When Teacher is in a bad mood, he will suck the night in. There is no night here now that Teacher isn't present. He took it all. By the way, Teacher's body was destroyed?"

Even with some information missing, 0001 was convinced.

Then was the magician of the moon a god?

Ha! It wasn't easy to believe.

I couldn't understand why a god would be wandering around in such a manner. What was Upa doing?

However, if he was a god then his nonsensical regenerative power would make sense.

"He was being manipulated by another demon. He was a doll that lost all sense of self and just followed orders. I fought him because he was hostile and tried to destroy him, but failed. After the last confrontation, I woke up on the beach."

"Being able to fight evenly with a god...what a great guy! If you collect his divine essence than won't you be able to become a god? Envious...not! Wait. What? Teacher was being manipulated?"

0001 showed signs of confusion.

"He was being manipulated by another demon."

"An immortal being controlled by a mortal? No way! It goes against the rules of the world! The gods wouldn't allow it!"

I recalled the time when I returned to the past.

All the gods of Earth were sealed. The devil Death Bringer used this. He created dungeons in the places where the gods were sealed and invited demons there.

All the gods were sealed so there was no one maintaining the rules of Earth. Except for the devil Death Bringer.

However, there were no sanctions against him.

The devil wasn't bound by the rules. I had no idea what Death Bringer was hoping for.

“Uhh...what to do? I have to find Teacher.”

"Return me to Earth. Then I will kill the demon controlling him."

I would remove both Arend and Upa. It would benefit me to kill both of them.

However, 0001 shook his head.

"It's not that simple. It has infiltrated this world and contaminated Teacher. It won't be enough. A mortal...how is it possible? Ahh, I wonder if the crack was the problem..."

“The crack?”

"About two years ago, the program made a mistake and opened the crack. It was a chance for the world to be exposed for 100 years. After a second...I dealt with it. I searched through all the systems. There were no problems but maybe something happened during that one second...no, does that make sense?"

0001's body trembled.

His shoulders became heavier at the thought that it was his fault his teacher was being manipulated.

The rabbit bit his fingers.

"No, it was connected to the nothingness. There was only access to the nothingness for one second! It isn't possible that a mortal from Earth used that one second. The existence of nothingness isn't really known in the first place..."

Approximately two years ago!

And nothingness.

It was somehow familiar. I was very familiar with it.

It was the period when Contegonom was summoned and eliminated.

A being from the nothingness that I had never heard of had been summoned to Earth.

"The probability isn't zero at all."

"I guess...it can't be helped. I need to stop Teacher first."

The rabbit went to a corner of the room and pulled out an arrow from a drawer.

“It is a request. This vaccine can save Teacher. Otherwise the world will be finished.”

It was a seemingly normal arrow.

I was suddenly curious and used Mind’s Eye.

-Interpreting the program.

Interpretation is complete.

-Name: Moon Arrow (Legend)

Description: An arrow formed from the strong condensation of the moon’s aura. Contains the gods’ blessing and grace. It is enough to call it the clone of the gods of the moon.

*All stats +2 when held, can pierce through all boundaries.

** There is a completely different effect depending on the opponent that is pierced.

Legend!

It was the first time I got my hands on something with that rating. I had seen it a few times but never touched it.

I encountered it in a totally unexpected place.

“I’ll make the passage. The passage will go from the Demon World to Earth.”

"Passage from the Demon World?"

I wondered if that was really necessary. 0001 saw my expression and explained.

"I get the code for the passage from your body. Aren't you originally from the Demon World? You won't be able to go straight through. If my thoughts are correct...certain conditions are needed before you can move to Earth. If you go from the Demon World then those conditions aren't necessary. It makes sense since that is your original region."

0001 took out another pair of glasses.

After putting them on, he moved his fingers and spoke.

"Please wait a few days. It shouldn't take that long."

The Korean word for the 'devil' when used in regards to Death Bringer is different from the word used for Randolph's goal. I've

translated them both as devil, but if I could go back, then I would probably make Randolph's goal as 'demon king' rather than 'devil' just to make the distinction more clear.

Chapter 199: Meeting The Messengers (1)

Three days after, I was able to return thanks to 0001. My experience there was very unusual and I was able to learn a little bit about the 'gods.' There were regulations and rules, but the current situation on Earth was a little bit different.

But that didn't change my mindset. My purpose was to become the demon king and take out all enemies blocking my path.

I learnt that the magician of the moon was called Gustarte.

He was a god but now he was just a doll underneath a demon.

If the Moon Arrow didn't work then there was no way to get rid of Gustarte. I would do the minimum to keep my promise but I wouldn't hesitate to kill Gustarte.

Killing a god. I never thought I would say such a thing.

'A demon killing a god.'

How funny. It was a mythical feat that only existed in the books. I couldn't help laughing as I imagined my name in there.

I also set up some plans. Gustarte couldn't fully use his powers. He was designed to follow orders completely. If conflicting commands emerged then he would become very confused. He even

stopped moving for a while.

The advent of the seraphim was still far away and a powerful enemy was right in front of me.

Gustarte. If he didn't want to die then he should stop being a doll.

Once I reached the ground again, the world was dark. A clear evening. I was able to land precisely where the collision had occurred.

The surrounding area was a mess. All the structures were destroyed and there were numerous holes in the ground. It was to the point of becoming dizzy as the holes seemed to go on endlessly.

‘This magic power...’

I sensed many creatures and demons. It was imperative that I get out of here.

‘I have to find Maxium.’

The dark night. I dashed out of the area quickly.

It wasn't difficult to find Maxium because the place to meet up had been pre-determined. There was a small island near Recife, Brazil where the bone dragons, chaos soldiers and Maxium were

waiting while hiding.

"Ohh, Your Majesty!"

Maxium appeared as soon as I opened my magic power and revealed my presence. He was very pleased as he quickly kneeled down.

"I've been waiting for you."

Maxium had many injuries. It showed how intense the fight was. However, it wasn't over yet. Rather than praising him, I asked.

"Have you taken care of Arend?"

"I'm sorry. He bought time due to the reinforcement of other demons. I crushed that mouth but..."

I nodded. Maxium decided that destroying Arend's mouth would stop him from giving any more orders. It was a decent enough merit.

"Then the magician of the moon is with Arend."

"That isn't necessarily true."

"It's not?"

I looked at Maxium with surprise.

"The explosion seemed like the world was collapsing. It was an explosion caused by Your Majesty and the magician of the moon. Shortly afterwards, I went to the area but Your Majesty and the magician has disappeared. Just in case, I kept an eye on Arend but didn't see the magician of the moon around him."

Maxium didn't do things carelessly. He was confident so it was highly likely that his words were true.

The magician of the moon had disappeared...

I touched my jaw.

"The plan will be modified. Don't worry about Arend."

"Arend? Then I..."

"No, this time I will go forward."

At the same time, Maxium's eyes shook.

".....! Is it because I didn't do it fast enough? My abilities might be lacking but please give me a final chance!"

Kung! Kung!

Maxium bumped his head against the ground several times as he bowed.

It wasn't my intention but that was what it sounded like to Maxium.

I had a different purpose. I was waiting for Upa and Ariel to meet each other. And I also needed to handle Gustarte.

If I dealt with Arend then Gustarte might show up. At that time, I would need to deal with Gustarte.

The problem was still Upa. He might move.

Of course, I didn't intend on showing up directly at Arend's dungeon.

I simply had to turn Upa's attention away. He absolutely couldn't pay attention to Arend!

In order to do so, I needed to use some tactics.

'A meeting.'

A gathering of grand dukes.

After a series of invitations, they would gather in neutral territory to talk or provoke each other. They might ignore the invitation but it was worth trying.

‘They will be quite curious.’

Upa and Pandemonium especially would have questions. I could sound them out and pick up information so it would be killing two birds with one stone. Conversely, they would try to get information from me but...that conflict wouldn't be so bad.

"I will leave attacking Arend's dungeon to you. I will also tell you how to check for the magician of the moon."

".....! New Maxium, I will do my best."

The shaking stopped as he felt relieved.

I looked down at Maxium.

While in the Reverse World, I thought of a way to tie up Gustarte's feet. There was a way to handle Arend and tie up Gustarte.

Once the meeting was over, I would be in an ideal position to deal with it.

‘Yihi.’

The fairy’s blessing!

It didn’t work in the Reverse World but this was Earth.

After a while, Yihi’s clear voice rang in my head.

‘Yes ~ Master. Yihi is working hard right now.’

‘There is work to do.’

‘Yes ~ Master. Yihi is working hard right now.’

My eyes narrowed. It was the same answer. Her voice was oddly slack. I spoke in a grave voice.

‘Have Oswen create four invitations. They should be completed by the time I get back.’

‘Hup! Y-Yihi. Yihi wasn’t sleeping. Invitations? I’ll tell him. But what invitations? He just needs to make them?’

‘They will be delivered to the grand dukes. I will take care of the words. Feel free to spend on the necessary materials.’

‘Yep!’

I stopped the communication after hearing Yihi's reply.

"You couldn't find any footprints left behind by the magician of the moon?"

"Yes, Your Majesty. By the time I arrived, they had already vanished."

"Hmm...then I guess I have to go back."

"I will start to attack Arend's dungeon."

He desired my recognition. A burning will filled his eyes. However, I shook my head.

"No, you will be coming with me."

"Huh?"

"Don't you need new equipment?"

"Ah...!"

Maxium was greatly impressed. He was using equipment from the Underground World. The equipment itself was excellent but it had clearly been through a lot. Both the armour and helmet.

They were rusty and had holes in several places, making the defense poor. It had a lot of options but there was better equipment in the dungeon.

"Let's go."

I boarded the bone dragon with Maxium following behind me. And the chaos soldiers started moving the other bone dragon.

It felt like a returning tide.

When I arrived back at the dungeon, Oswen and Yihi were waiting for me.

"The invitations were completed. Will this be enough?"

I received the invitations that Oswen gave me and examined them.

The most impressive thing was that there was a little bit of Orihalcum powder. Stars surrounding Wrath and the Emperor's Sword were drawn on either side of the invitation. The space to write the contents was red and very provocative, so I liked it. They were magnificent invitations with no flaws.

"Excellent."

“Thank you.”

“Yihi. Call Chrisley and Julliom. I will be next to the Dungeon Core.”

"I understand, yihihi! Yihi will go call them right now!"

Yihi flapped her wings and flew into the dungeon. It seemed like she was going to convey it directly.

'Now...I need to decide what the contents should be.'

It was the reason why I called Chrisley and Julliom.

The contents of the invitation!

I didn't know how to write an invitation so I would receive the help of two intelligent people.

The grand dukes' participation would depend on the invitation that was created.

Chapter 200: Meeting The Messengers (2)

Chrisley, Julliom and I sat next to the Dungeon Core and created the contents of the invitation.

"First, we need to be sure of the purpose for the meeting."

Julliom said.

I replied without hesitation.

"On the surface, it is to exchange information about the angels. However...since Okullos, all the grand dukes have had an agenda. It is certain for Upa and Pandemonium. I don't know anything about Ariel but it is likely. Put a phrase to imply that."

Pandemonium had taken Okullos' demons. Upa had made Gustarte his doll. Ariel might be orchestrating things that weren't obvious. No matter how pure she was, she was still a demon.

"It will be somewhat provocative."

"How about using a poem?"

Chrisley commented.

I started laughing.

"I don't know if the grand dukes have such a elegant hobby."

Demons reading poetry. I had never heard or seen it. If it was Ariel, she might have a basic degree of literacy.

"My Dungeon Master. Even so, it would be good to decorate it with poetry. Is the invitation not sent in good faith?"

"That's right."

Rather than good, it is full of evil.

Besides...it was to subtly threaten them.

I knew the dungeon locations of the grand dukes. I could only give them the invitation if I knew the locations. That itself was a provocation.

Julliom then spoke.

"If you want them to participate then it is good to mention something like their weaknesses."

"Weaknesses."

"Emphasize that if they don't participate, the information might

leak to others. It doesn't have to be big."

I didn't know every detail about the grand dukes. I only knew a few facts from my previous life.

'I can throw in a few of those facts.'

I didn't need big facts.

I nodded.

"I will allow it."

"Chrisley and I have discussed the contents. I will write it right in front of you so please give advice."

"Understood."

I was new to poems. I had never read them. There were few demons with such an elegant hobby.

Before long, Julliom and Chrisley wrote down the contents of the invitation.

Upa.

One of the four major grand dukes who had the title ‘Destroyer.’

He had decorated his dungeon as a castle and was reigning over it. He didn’t spare any effort to recreate the huge castle ‘Bullenon’ from the Demon World.

Thanks to this, his dungeon always had a dreary atmosphere. The long displays of black armour, paintings and swords that decorate the wall contributed to the atmosphere.

The bloated body and hair that soared into the sky. On the contrary, the pair of eyes looking forward had no sense of companionship.

“The home of a grand duke. What do you think Chrisley?”

Two people were standing in front of Upa.

Chrisley and Oswen!

Both of them came to Upa’s dungeon.

Chrisley nodded slightly. She wasn’t familiar with places like this. On the other hand, Oswen’s body relaxed like he had calmed down.

“Hrmm, I...”

“I am Oswen! We have come here as Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel’s messengers.”

“How funny. Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel.”

Upa’s expression of dissatisfaction was strong. He was sitting on a huge chair made of bones and looking down at them.

Grrr!

Kiii!

A long red carpet extended down the stairs and there were creatures slobbering all around them. Depending on Upa’s mood, the creatures would bare their teeth.

There were at least over 1,000 and they seemed to be at the advanced level.

In addition, the ambient temperature around Oswen and Chrisley rose sharply. It was so hot that Chrisley’s face became red. Upa’s fingers moved subtly as he controlled the space.

Then Oswen came forward.

"We are messengers. It is our task to hand over Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel’s invitation. Is Grand Duke Upa afraid of some

messengers?”

"What are your justifications? I don't remember inviting you. Furthermore, Randolph Briggsiel and I have a strictly adversarial relationship."

Duk. Duk.

Upa's hand movements started becoming faster. It was proof that he wasn't in a good mood. If they made one wrong move here then they could lose their heads.

Oswen couldn't help but tense up.

"Thank you for meeting us. If there wasn't a reason then we wouldn't be standing here now. But I am confident that the invitation we brought is enough to receive us. At the very least, you won't receive any damage!"

This was a dungeon. They would need to deal with the creatures. No matter how strong Chrisley and Oswen were, there was a limit. Furthermore, in order to reduce the damage as messengers, they needed to contact Upa convincingly.

Upa had questions for them. Randolph Briggsiel has sent some messengers? It wouldn't hurt to meet them once. His thoughts were up to here.

By the way...he wouldn't let them live after the meeting. Oswen

and Chrisley both sensed Upa's intent.

They could only hope that the invitation saved them. But Oswen was consistent in his attitude.

"Hmm...another person receiving an invitation at the same time. I know that you are at war with Ariel..."

Upa tapped his chin a few times.

"I knew he was just quietly waiting for the results but...tsk, I'll see you once. Bring them."

Upa had anticipated that there would be a rush to feed on the winner after the war between him and Ariel finished. But he hadn't imagined that an invitation would be sent the moment the war was paused.

Oswen climbed the stairs with the invitation. He reached midway when a lich popped out and blocked his path.

"What?"

"Invitation. Inspect."

It was to check if anything had been done to the invitation. Oswen frowned and handed over the invitation.

The lich used a special mirror and chanted a few spells before nodding and handing the invitation to Upa.

Chwack!

Upa opened the sealed invitation. He quickly started reading the contents.

“.....”

A brief moment of silence.

Oswen and Chrisley watched with casual expressions, but they actually felt like they were walking on eggshells. No matter how confident they were, it was impossible to stop Upa if he wanted their heads. They had very little chances of surviving.

Kwack!

Upa's face become harder the more he read. Power entered his hands and the invitation was destroyed.

“Randolph Brigsiel...!”

Kwaduduk!

Upa gritted my teeth. Like an active volcano was erupting, his

red eyes glared at Oswen as he burst out.

"Tell him that I will participate. And...I won't fall for this cheap taunt. Tell Randolph Briggsiel that I will take his head along with Ariel's!"

Upa turned his head away. It was a declaration that this had ended.

However, the words 'tell him' implied that they would leave here alive.

Oswen and Chrisley looked at each other.

Oswen instantly drew a V in the air with his fingers.

The griffin flew over to them.

Chrisley and Oswen climbed on top of it.

"Upa's personality is just like Dungeon Master said."

"It was a fierce confrontation."

Chrisley spoke.

The two of them had been roaming the world to extend

invitations to the grand dukes. But it wasn't that easy to meet them. The grand dukes had the strongest dungeons among all the demons. Bringing an invitation didn't mean they could meet the grand duke.

They had only met Upa so far out of all the grand dukes, but their expressions weren't that good. They had come to the dungeon as 'messengers' and there were many twists and turns before they could meet Upa. There were many opportunities to die.

"He was scary. If it wasn't for the contents of the invitation, he would have tried to get rid of us. Actually...there is someone behind us right now."

Upa wasn't a demon who could pretend to be magnanimous.

He didn't hide his desire to kill them. If they had done something wrong then Upa would have cut off their heads.

"He wants to figure out the location of the dungeons from us."

"It is difficult. We need to hand over the invitation."

Wyvern king!

The creature was following behind the griffin.

It was keeping a distance but couldn't avoid Oswen and

Chrisley's senses.

Upa knew that they were meeting Ariel and had sent the king wyvern after them. Upa and Ariel were at war so it was natural that they wanted to figure out the location of the dungeons.

"Speed up."

The griffin flapped its wings harder.

The king wyvern soon disappeared and Oswen muttered.

"I hope that Ariel Diablo is a nicer demon. Hu! My heart is pounding."

"I will do the next one."

Chrisley had been quiet when they met Upa. It was because she didn't have a lot of experience with situations like that. She didn't want to make any mistakes so she decided to learn from Oswen.

Ariel Diablo and most of her demons were located in North America. Ariel's dungeon was in the United States, but recently she had been running two dungeons.

Greenland. The largest island in the world. More than 80% of the land was covered in ice!

Originally it belonged to a marquis in Upa's faction but Ariel got her hands on it. It seemed like she quite liked the ice covered land.

Thanks to that, Chrisley and Oswen had to travel to Greenland. It was more tightly guarded than North America so they had to use considerable effort to fly over it.

"There are almost no gaps."

Oswen couldn't help feeling admiration. Ariel's demons were all following a strategy. They were called the 'Grand Duke's Knights.'

Watchtowers were installed on paths where the enemy could move. There were also large creatures surrounding the watchtowers.

"How do we arrive?"

Chrisley asked while sweating.

There were magic items and stealth scrolls packed. The griffin couldn't be caught in the air, but it was hard to get rid of enemies that covered the land.

"It seems like I am destined not to live..."

Oswen shook his head.

His body was already dead but he sighed at the thought of dealing with all these creatures.

They were piled up like a mountain.

'Kuoong. The equipment to repel the curse was almost reaching a breakthrough as well. It will be fortunate if I can come back alive.'

Chapter 201: Meeting The Messengers (3)

In front of Greenland's dungeon.

A white knight was guarding the dungeon door.

However, Oswen and Chrisley could see that it wasn't a simple opponent. The flow of magic power was strange and it smelled like a type of incense. It was clearly a high class creature.

"Who?"

A loud and beautiful female voice emerged from the helmet.

The knight guarding the dungeon door was a pure white woman covered in snow.

Oswen tried to step forward but Chrisley was faster.

"We are messengers from Grand Duke Randolph Brigsiel and have come with an invitation for Grand Duke Ariel Diablo."

"Randolph Brigsiel! I have heard that name before."

The white knight nodded.

But the atmosphere didn't seem very positive. A hostile feeling

was directed towards them.

Chrisley ignored it and said.

"If you know then open the door. We don't want to fight."

"No. To cross this door, you have to prove your qualifications. Grand Duke Ariel won't meet with just anyone."

"We are here at the command of Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel..."

"I will listen to weapons, man and woman."

The white knight took out a rapier.

A desire not to let them pass was coming from her.

Chrisley turned and looked at Oswen who nodded bitterly.

He couldn't gauge the opponent but she didn't seem that easy.

No, Oswen and Chrisley were both equivalent to high class creatures.

In particular, Oswen had a long and unimaginable experience. Now that his six arms were restored and his weapons were

stronger, he could face the white knight.

He was confident about fighting the opponent.

Oswen pulled out his six swords and said.

"I will do as you requested."

The moment the knight's rapier headed towards him.

It disappeared. In the blink of an eye, the rapier had reached Oswen.

Swaack!

But it was shallow. Oswen was somewhat surprised but his body wasn't. His body had reacted first and avoided the rapier.

But even though he avoided it, Oswen had a headache.

It was due to the differences. He couldn't say the knight was weak...

'It won't be easy.'

Still, he would win. Oswen didn't think otherwise. The number of those stronger than him in the Underground World could be

counted on one hand. The white knight wasn't one of those stronger than him.

Chu chu chuk!

Oswen overlapped his six swords. The rapier was blocked.

'I can't be a crazy bull.'

He couldn't rush recklessly. The knight was lacking power compared to her speed. There wasn't a strong sense of balance. However, small attacks became stronger when overlapped.

The white knight used small gaps to push Oswen. Even a small gap could break a huge rock.

"I must look very funny to you."

Oswen was originally a blacksmith. And a blacksmith had surprisingly high ambitions. If he didn't feel intense obsession for the sword then he wouldn't have created masterpieces. The same was true even now.

At least...he wanted to be acknowledged by his opponent. The temperament of a strong winner rose.

He was attacking.

He had confidence that his actions wouldn't be disparaged.

‘Hell.’

After regaining his ego, Oswen made six swords. He used the iron of the gods received from Dungeon Master to set up six pillars that represented hell. The name was Hell and after its completion, a ‘skill’ popped into his head.

The six swords would fire out hellfire when they were overlapped. The hellfire swallowed up Oswen and became one with him. Soon it was like a fierce lion had emerged from hell.

The white knight paused in her attacks. She started to intensely concentrate on the rapier.

It was an attack that concentrated all her destructive power on one point.

Oswen recognized it immediately. It would be better to avoid it, but he knew that dragging this out too long wouldn't be good.

So he would hang it on this one strike. Both of them were confident about their attacks.

Soon the two of them started to rush towards each other. As Oswen moved his feet, black fire spread in a manner reminiscent of hell. In contrast, the white knight's magic power gathered on the rapier shot forward like a projectile.

And...just as they were about to hit each other.

Chaeeng! Ching!

The sword and rapier flew away.

"Stop."

A snow covered island. A woman left footsteps in this place.

A demon with colourful goat horns on her forehead that contrasted with her pale eyes.

The appearance of Ariel Diablo.

Ariel stood before everyone with an expressionless face. Although she didn't seem like she was going to harm Oswen and Chrisley, they had no idea what she was thinking.

Even her words were ambiguous. They could only follow her quietly.

The dungeon that they entered was calm.

There didn't seem to be any creatures. She had forcibly occupied this place so it wasn't surprising.

The friendly atmosphere made it seem even more hostile. In particular, Oswen was shocked that his attack had been blocked.

If it was just blocked then he wouldn't have been so surprised. However, if this had been a battlefield then his head would have flown away.

“You were sent by Randolph Brigsiel?”

After stepping on a magic circle, Ariel opened her mouth for the first time.

“That's right. We are here to pass on Grand Duke Randolph Brigsiel's invitation...”

"Those are long words.”

She only wanted to check that one thing.

She activated the magic circle with a casual gesture.

A bright light shone and a small crack was opened. Once the light disappeared, everyone was in an entirely different space.

At the same time, Oswen and Chrisley were quite surprised.

White knights...there were at least 20 white knights lined up in two columns.

Their sizes were all different. Their identities couldn't be identified due to the armour completely covering their bodies, but some seemed to be young children. It was obvious that the white knight guarding the entrance was an older model.

Their strength couldn't be easily measured. Even if they weren't high class, at the very minimum they were advanced class.

"You've come back, Ariel Diablo"

"Set the table. Guests have come so we have to treat them."

"Yes."

Soon afterwards, Oswen and Chrisley were seated at a huge table. A white knight guided the two of them in an orderly manner.

Oswen and Chrisley couldn't open their mouths as food came out. They needed to grasp Ariel Diablo's intentions. But they couldn't read through her.

"You seem to be confused."

Ariel had a small smile on her face. This was the composure of the strong. Confidence and freedom were in every gesture.

She had an atmosphere around her that they would never be able to acquire. Since birth...it was possible since she had been born with the blood of a demon king.

Oswen was well aware of this. He knew of only one other person like this. The Hell Monarch.

"Randolph Brigsiel has something to tell me?"

"That..."

"Here."

Oswen restrained her when Chrisley tried to come forward.

Chrisley was still weak at handling things like this. It was impossible for her to deal with a strong powerhouse. He had wanted to give her a chance until he saw Ariel. Ariel Diablo wasn't someone who would overlook a lot. Maybe...Oswen's instincts shouted that she was more dangerous than Upa.

Ariel accepted the invitation and started to read it.

"Hrmm..."

Unlike Upa, she showed no signs of irritation. She just read the contents of the invitation with very interested eyes.

It didn't take long. After 30 seconds, Ariel glanced at Oswen.

"This is very interesting. Are you giving invitations to the other grand dukes?"

"Yes."

If he mentioned that he met Upa first then Ariel might take it the wrong way. Ariel knocked lightly on the table at Oswen's words.

"It is unprecedented. After the demon king disappeared without a successor, there has never been a gathering of grand dukes. Yet the one who occupied Okullos' position as grand duke has convened all his enemies together! Huhuhu..."

Ariel seemed very excited.

She was at war with Upa, but Chrisley and Oswen were surprised by the completely different reaction.

Her attitude was like she didn't even care about Upa.

"The food will cool. Come on. It was made specially for you."

She certainly wasn't hostile.

But they still felt uneasy.

Oswen and Chrisley picked up the knife and fork. It was the beginning of a very quiet and long meal.

Once out of the dungeon, Oswen sighed.

"She is a woman with no gaps. She was the daughter of a demon king? Indeed..."

"Those knights. They seem to be a blend of things."

Then Chrisley opened her mouth. It seemed like she had been paying more attention to the knights around Ariel.

"Ahh, they aren't ordinary. They definitely feel strange...I don't know what the mixture is."

"Maybe those knights are Ariel Diablo's strongest weapons. Upa has tamed the magician of the moon."

"Our Dungeon Master has to deal with such monsters so it won't be easy."

Oswen clicked his tongue. The grand dukes were all playing games. It was highly likely that Pandemonium also had something.

"Let's finish it quickly and return. There are too many things to tell Dungeon Master."

"Now there is only one place left. Let's go."

The two people quickly got on the griffin and flew away.

I heard Oswen and Chrisley's report and started pacing around the Dungeon Core. The contents of the meeting with Upa, Ariel and Pandemonium were unexpected.

'What made them change?'

Upa, Ariel and Pandemonium were each hiding something. Ariel hadn't openly revealed it but it was still too soon.

If they had just increased the number of creatures like they originally did, it would have been a power struggle.

'Okullos.'

It seemed like they had changed plans due to Okullos.

Okullos had warned all the grand dukes after breaking the taboo. He died by my hands but the effect he caused wasn't dead yet. Maybe it wouldn't be strange for another grand duke to break a taboo.

Furthermore, Ariel had subdued Oswen at once. I had checked her status window at the auction but it seemed like she had been working hard. Even if he was caught off guard, Oswen was a high class creature. He should have noticed and been able to act.

Things were changing very quickly. I was as well.

“But, the winner will be me.”

The word ‘winner’ was sweet. The confident words emerged from my mouth. They were changing but their speed didn’t reach mine.

Even though I was alone, I had the power to deal with them.

‘Hah, I didn’t think Ariel would raise such strange things.’

Ariel’s knights!

Although the qualities of a demon couldn’t be removed, she was still the demon with the most integrity. Yet she had created something like the white knights.

I was told that a few things were mixed together to make them, but I couldn’t understand their identities. She wasn’t an expert in alchemy so I didn’t know how she made them.

‘This meeting will be quite interesting.’

One thing was for certain, it would be a place of indirect fighting.

There would be no deterrents like at the Demon World Auction. There was no penalty. If they wanted to fight then they would fight.

A huge wave. Hail. Overturning the world.

No one could stop it. I honestly hadn't expected it would become so large when I first thought about it.

It might be a disaster for humans but now no one could stop the changes.

It was the same for the demons. Even if a god appeared, would mediation be possible?

'I need to make the final preparations.'

My hands itched at the thought of seeing them all in one place.

Only five years. But for me, it had already been decades.

Those who would laugh and those who would cry...

I smiled and moved from my spot.

Chapter 202: Greenwich Observatory (1)

Greenwich Observatory, London, United Kingdom.

Humans called this place the centre of the world. It was the place where the meeting would occur.

I moved quickly and arrived there first.

I had sent the invitation so I needed to decorate it.

However, there were too many people around.

Of course, I decided what to do. There was extreme confusion the moment that Gigantes and the hydra appeared.

The humans couldn't resist the strong creatures and fled. Even so, there were those who remained. For the humans left, I only said one word coldly.

“Trample.”

I stood on top of the observatory and looked around.

A serene atmosphere.

Just a few hours ago, it was a place packed with humans.

‘There are those already watching.’

Unlike the tranquil atmosphere, there were many eyes watching this place.

‘Pandemonium’s creatures.’

Most of Asia and Europe were Pandemonium’s domain. The meeting would take place in his area so his creatures were the first to arrive.

“Is it really okay with these numbers? If you...”

“It’s okay.

Chrisley had spoken in a worried voice but I declined firmly.

A low number of creatures had come here. They didn’t exceed 100. The grand dukes would have hundreds or thousands of creatures...maybe more than that.

I couldn’t afford to worry about it.

The reason was simple.

‘The bigger they are, the more damage that will be received.’

The grand dukes were gathering. An unprecedented situation.

It was impossible for it to end without any problems.

Everyone knew it and were prepared.

Of course, bringing more creatures meant a higher chance of losing them in the chaos. Besides, I didn't intend this meeting of grand dukes to be that simple.

"My Dungeon Master. At least allow me to install a magic circle."

Chrisley was worried. I had already disappeared once and this was a place where all the grand dukes were gathering.

"Pandemonium is someone experienced with magic. If there is a magic circle then he will instantly identify it and nullify it. There is no need to cause a misunderstanding by installing it."

It wasn't well known but Upa was also quite perceptive. Chrisley wouldn't be able to deceive the vigilant demons with her skills.

"...I understand."

Chrisley stepped back. I didn't scold her.

I didn't know it before, but it wasn't bad to have someone worried about me. It was awkward but felt good.

‘There is still time.’

The meeting would occur in a few days. I hadn't come here a few days early for simple cleanup.

I started moving and Chrisley hurriedly asked.

“My Dungeon Master, where are you going?”

"Buckingham Palace."

“...?”

"They should have gathered by now.”

I smiled coldly and moved.

Buckingham Palace, United Kingdom.

A very iconic place in the United Kingdom that was the Queen's residence. Since the British Prime Minister died in a monster wave, she was handling most of the work.

There was a space to conduct business.

A meeting at Buckingham Palace would only occur when something special happened.

“The Greenwich Observatory has been occupied by creatures.”

Tak!

Queen Mary struck the desk after receiving the report of the army chief.

"The report has already been received. And...I don't want a report from you but a future solution. The creatures are at the centre of the world."

The problem was the monsters.

If they were just monsters then this meeting wouldn't have been convened.

However, there were true monsters who occupied the top rankings.

The sweaty army chief opened his mouth.

“An all-out...”

“Stop. It isn’t at a level that ordinary armies can deal with. What about the Awakened unit? How is their performance right now, Lieutenant General Karls?”

The mentioned Lieutenant General Karls stepped forward.

"They can destroy any army. Even if the opponent has the best creatures, our ‘White Lion’ unit can deal with them. Ma'am."

"How dependable. Do you want this task?"

“Your Majesty! Placing unverified Awakened into this position...”

The navy admiral protested but Queen Mary was firm. She was only looking at Karls.

The regular military forces had already been defeated several times.

Numerous governments tried to nurture Awakened but often failed. Once humans gained strength, they weren’t easily controlled.

But Karls was a top level Awakened. There were no other Awakened gathered here except for Karls.

He had never failed in any missions and his patriotism towards England was very high. Queen Mary had high expectations for

him.

"Lieutenant General Karls. Can I see them?"

"Of course, Your Majesty."

"So I would love to see them."

Karls hit the floor a few times. Then it seemed like his task was over. Question marks appeared above everyone's head. Was it after 30 seconds?

Hwaaaat!

A light came pouring out of the floor of the conference room. As everyone's eyes except for Karls' widened, the light formed a hole and 30 warriors appeared through that hole.

They stood in an orderly manner and bowed to Queen Mary.

"They are the warriors of the White Lion unit. All...no, they are more like friends."

Karls laughed heartily. He showed off a confident figure.

The 30 people that appeared here gave off greater presences than anyone else in the room. Except for Karls.

They appeared through the floor.

There was no record of them ever visiting Buckingham Palace. In other words, there were no constraints on where they could go.

“Are they capable of destroying the monsters at Greenwich Observatory?”

"Doing it all at once will be hard. But it is possible to remove them one by one. Anyway, there are approximately 100 creatures gathered at Greenwich Observatory. Three days. Just give me three days, Your Majesty.”

It was definitely tempting.

They couldn't be sure what would happen if powerful creatures were provoked.

However, they intended to handle them quietly, one by one.

"Then you will irritate the creatures. Wouldn't it better to handle them all at once?”

The army chief came forward.

It was a good point.

There was a chance their actions could provoke the creatures.

"A stalemate. Please choose wisely..."

It would be a problem if the creatures spread out through the United Kingdom. There would be casualties all over the place and buildings would be ruined. There was no guarantee that everyone would be safe.

The United Kingdom wasn't as risky as the other parts of the world. The Awakened had quite high levels and the army itself could hunt some creatures. Over the last five years, they had analyzed the creatures more than any other country.

"There are many Awakened in the army. The ones escorted to Buckingham Palace are the true warriors of the White Lion unit. Wouldn't it be better for 30 people to handle it? The rest of the world won't be able to laugh if we succeed."

They were good words.

If they could handle it then they would become pretty credible.

Lieutenant General Karls' face was full of confidence.

"True warriors...isn't it too early to shout out something like that?"

Some of the military officials scoffed as they looked at Karls. But...it was definitely quiet. It was strangely quiet. They couldn't even hear themselves breathing.

Everyone here was extensively trained. They could hear a heartbeat even if it was a little distance away. However, they couldn't hear anything.

What was going on?

Chapter 203: Greenwich Observatory (2)

Just before they were about to ask.

Kkiiik.

The door opened and 20 new people appeared.

One of them was dragging a fallen soldier while another one was chewing gum. Unlike the previous 30 people, most of them didn't have good attitudes.

"Let me introduce the last of the White Lion troops. My friends are somewhat rough but their skills are excellent."

"This...what are you trying to do, Lieutenant General Karls?"

All the military officials were furious. Fighting in the sacred Buckingham Palace.

Furthermore, it seemed like all the guards had been taken care of. It was enough to be called a traitor.

However, Queen Mary didn't mind.

"Great skills. I didn't hear anything."

"They are great friends. How about it Your Majesty? If you give me three days then I will clean up the creatures."

"Were the guards killed?"

"They are a little rough but they won't kill anyone without my command. They are only stunned."

"Okay, then I will leave this mission entirely to Lieutenant General Karls."

Queen Mary readily accepted. It was a serious matter but it was an excellent way to show the power of the White Lion unit. Thanks to that, all the others had red faces but couldn't say anything.

Times had changed. Power was everything. The stronger the power, the better.

Karls smiled and shook Queen Mary's hand.

If this mission was cleared up then there would be no more obstacles in the United Kingdom. There would be no more interference every time the unit tried to do something.

He imagined a bright future as he shook her hand.

"Three days might not be enough."

".....!"

Karls hurried in front of Queen Mary and turned towards the voice. The White Lion unit also reacted.

The window above.

A man with a pale face and dressed in a suit who had been sitting on the window sill jumped down.

They hadn't noticed him. Nobody in here!

Karls' body stiffened.

Among the Awakened here, he was acclaimed as the strongest. He was from the United Kingdom but his fame had spread throughout the world. He could handle a great number of advanced creatures alone and he could sense them to some extent.

But...this happened.

He hadn't known. He didn't feel anything. It was ominous.

The White Lion troops quickly surrounded the man. They were ready to cast skills and destroy him. There was a total of 50 White Lion troops and Karls, making them able to deal with a high class creature. They were even confident about handling demons. Even if that man entered here unnoticed, he wouldn't be able to escape.

"Keep this in mind. Anyone who attacks me will die."

The man chuckled slightly. It wasn't a false cynicism. He had an infinite amount of confidence. No, his expression showed no worries at all.

He ignored the White Lion troops!

They had only been formed a few years ago but the White Lion troops were elites that had personally been chosen by Karls. Every day was life and death training so they had a lot of pride.

They were truly the best in the world.

They were the strongest unit of Awakened.

'Was I scared?'

Originally, he would have attacked as soon as the enemy was discovered. Karls was someone willing to cause turmoil in the sacred Buckingham Palace.

But he was frozen. He couldn't make a decision. It was because the man said that anyone who attacked him would die.

"You are moderately strong for humans..."

The man glanced at all the unit members. Then he laughed. It was a look full of ridicule.

"You are lacking. The creatures will destroy Greenwich Observatory within three days. I guarantee that all of you will die within three minutes."

"Crazy bastard!"

There were 20 members who hadn't been fully trained. They were good but had problems with their attitudes. Therefore, they were normally placed in the rear. But they were very proud that they belonged to the White Lion unit.

Now that pride was stepped on by a man that they hadn't even heard of.

The first 30 people didn't move without Karls' command...the other 20 people rebelled.

Syuuuk!

A small crack of light appeared behind the man. One of the soldiers had opened a crack. The soldier appeared inside the crack and prepared to stab the man in the back.

Kwarurung!

Thunder struck. Or at least it seemed like that. The soldier turned to ash as his sword fell to the ground. The man didn't even care.

Hwaruruk!

Instead, flames appeared behind the man. The flames wrapped around the entire room.

They felt it now. An overwhelming magic power! A fearsome presence! Karls felt like he was falling into an abyss as he found it difficult to breathe.

Cheek! Cheek!

The White Lion unit quickly prepared to attack. They instinctively moved despite not hearing a command.

“Kuuaack!”

The members moved back. Among them, three members caught on fire. Despite using recovery or water skills, the flames never died out.

They wouldn't be extinguished until the victim's life was completely gone.

Ddubeok. Ddubeok.

The man walked forward. Some of the members ran forward but they were just like moths flying into a fire. Just like moths, they burned up.

The difference was too big. The man ignored everything. The White Lion unit members had never felt such a large difference before. They had managed to defeat every creature and demon they encountered.

Lieutenant General Karls opened his mouth.

"Stop!"

Sweat flowed down his body. His back was already wet.

It was the first time he had felt like this.

"Captain. We were handpicked..."

The members were still filled with desire to fight but Karls shook his head.

"You can't do anything."

He was sure of it.

That man was a monster.

Someone on an entirely different dimension from the other creatures.

The world had changed! Demons.

They invaded Earth with their creatures. The giant dungeons were their bases.

Only the brave would be able to attack them. Karls knew exactly how to distinguish between them.

This man was far beyond them. The location especially wasn't good. It didn't matter if they died as long as Queen Mary was protected.

She was the symbol of the United Kingdom. The spiritual support of all citizens. If she died then the United Kingdom would collapse. All the citizens would lose hope. There was no future for a country without hope.

Gulp!

Karls swallowed his saliva and spoke.

"You...who are you? Why did you come here?"

His black eyes were dispassionate and his footsteps sounded heavy. The man laughed. It seemed like he thought everything was ridiculous.

Karls blocking Queen Mary's view was impolite behaviour but...

Soon the man opened his mouth.

"I am one of the four grand dukes. Randalph. I have come to pass on both despair and hope to you."

"Grand duke."

Lieutenant Karls moaned. It wasn't the first time he heard the words 'grand duke.'

He had more information than others. In particular, he knew quite a lot of secrets about the demons. He was aware that each of the 72 dungeons was managed by a demon and they each had a rank.

The grand dukes were at the very top.

The demons above the other demons. Officially, only Ariel Diablo had revealed herself as a grand duke. She revealed her name to the world while leading a massive invasion, so every country leader knew the name Ariel Diablo.

Her power was amazing. None of the humans could stop Ariel Diablo. Even the arrogant 'Templar Knights' had to give up fighting. An unofficial Awakened organization...in the past, they had been just as famous as the Freemasons and Illuminati.

Karls was confident that their power was no less than his unit's. However, they had prematurely went against a grand duke.

It was okay if they attacked a demon who was a baron, but a grand duke was an entirely different thing.

Their power was completely lacking!

"Despair and hope? Do you mean to give us Pandora's Box?"

But he hid it. It was like showing no fear in front of a wild beast. Then he would look for the slightest ray of hope.

However...the opponent was too good. The man had eyes like a snake. It felt like he could see through everything.

"You can't win."

Short words. Karls understood what he meant. In other words, he was speaking about all humans. Humans couldn't beat demons.

The man's voice was full of confidence. It was like he was

speaking the absolute truth.

Lieutenant General Karls didn't answer. He didn't know if it was due to a grand duke's presence or the absolute confidence...

"I will give you a chance."

"...A chance?"

"Demons will gather at Greenwich Observatory. That includes me, the other three grand dukes, the demons they lead and their creatures. This is the only chance for the human race to win."

".....!"

Karls and the others' eyes widened.

Everybody would be gathered in one place. Demons and their creatures were very tricky. If they were gathered in one place then it was possible to try modern weapons. There had been cases where advanced creatures had been killed by nukes!

"Why are you giving us this information? On the contrary, it might be a trap by the demons."

Pisik!

The man scoffed.

"Humans have only been holding onto life for one reason. Competition! If the demons weren't competing with each other then the humans would have already been destroyed."

Was it really like that?

It wasn't likely.

After the massive offensive of the demons began, humanity couldn't fight back properly. Important bases were lost and modern science became useless. Thousands of jet fighters had turned into piles of junk.

There was only merciless slaughter.

Karls wanted to tell him not to joke around.

But at that moment, the man's eyes stared at him.

"Think carefully."

The man disappeared like the wind, leaving only those words behind.

However, a large amount of items poured out as the man left.

Glowing stones. Cores.

When hunting in the dungeon, there was a 0.001% chance of obtaining an advanced core.

But...all the cores here were advanced or high class.

The amount here could produce countless weapons with powerful magic spells. There could even be some unique grade weapons.

If they were lucky...epic grade items might emerge.

“I don’t understand his intentions.”

Karls sighed and said with a frown.

That man was holding out an apple. However, there was a chance that the apple could be poisoned.

He was a demon but it would be a great opportunity if his words were true.

‘What should we do?’

Karls and everyone else gathered there were deep in thought.

In the meantime, a woman was gazing at the window with a calm expression.

Britain's ruler and hope...Queen Mary's eyes weren't dead yet.

Therefore Karls felt a ray of hope.

Anyway, she was the only one who had the authority to make the decision.

Chapter 204: Greenwich Observatory (3)

If this wasn't an emergency then what would be called an emergency situation?

It was indeed a serious emergency!

Leaders from each country were gathered. It was accomplished in only a few days. Normally such a complex procedure would take a long time.

However, the issue was significant.

Many people wanted to join this meeting and powerful but unofficial groups participated.

The Builder Bug Club, Triangular Committee, the Triad and the Mafia.

The Templar Knights, Freemasons and Illuminati also made a statement for the first time. They declared their existence and gathered attention. They were three organizations completely obscured by secrecy that revealed themselves.

Whether that would happen again in the future...

Every country was heading towards the United Kingdom due to the event happening at Greenwich Observatory.

The meeting proceeded strictly. Queen Mary and Lieutenant General Karls were sitting at a long round table with other major members having seats.

"Are you trying to imitate the Knights of the Round Table?"

The Mafia Godfather Don Gullenom laughed. His position was very far from Queen Mary and the Triad members were sitting near him.

In contrast, the Templar Knights, the Freemasons and the Illuminati were given seats close to Queen Mary. Don Gullenom had no choice but to be in this position.

The bad groups were isolated. Even when the world was like this, they were still obsessed with past faults...Don Gullenom scoffed at Queen Mary's foolishness.

"It must be hard to get up with such a heavy rear."

The Triad leader, Li Chao Xiong. He didn't even turn his head as he spoke to Gullenom. No, Don Gullenom thought that he seemed to be trying to say something. It was because there was no one else around except for him.

"The smell of food is too good. It is something I can't live without."

Don Gullenom laughed, revealing all gold teeth. That's right. Materialism, a capitalist society and those who controlled the world with gold had their power weakened.

Now the armed forces were the best in the world.

At this meeting, Don Gullenom was convinced that something would happen to change the world's landscape. The number of people who participated was great. It was difficult to tell the influence of the 100 people gathered here.

"Snob. I have been worried about a man."

"Is he a demonic grand duke?"

Li Chao Xiong nodded his head.

This meeting and the main subject.

It was to discuss the emergence of the grand duke and what would happen at Greenwich Observatory.

Li Chao Xiong spoke like he was talking to himself.

"It wasn't long after the dungeons appeared. My brother Lei Feng and mercenaries from other countries cooperated to attack the Korean dungeon that was known to contain treasures. Everyone was wiped out. No, I thought they were all wiped out."

"Any survivors?"

"One...a mercenary from the United States survived. His whole body was injured and his mind wasn't normal. I got some decent prosthetics for him and had him accompany me."

"Ah, that ignorant looking man behind you."

Don Gullenom moved his gaze.

A man with a steel arm and leg was standing firmly behind Li Chao Xiong. His chicken hair was prominent but he must have been very skilled to be a guard. However, he didn't look normal as he kept on drooling.

"He responded to the face drawn in the invitation."

Queen Mary had sent an image along with the invitation. The image of a burning man. It seemed like the chicken haired man had remembered that man.

"Then..."

"That grand duke, it is very likely that he is in charge of Korea's dungeon."

"North Korea?"

“South Korea.”

Don Gullenom stroked his chin.

“Korea, Korea...”

The location of a grand duke was identified.

Great information.

Maybe he could use that as a weapon in this meeting.

Li Chao Xiong handing this information to him...it was obvious. It was to join forces. In this meeting of world leaders, it was essential to distinguish between friend and foe.

Don Gullenom knocked his shoulder against Li Chao Xiong. The result was an implicit alliance.

Not long after they were all seated, Queen Mary cleared her throat.

“For those who have gathered here, thank you for coming such a long way.”

Queen Mary smiled gently. Don Gullenom thought her smile was

smarmy. He knew that Queen Mary had absolute support in England but wasn't sure of the reason.

“This meeting is taking place to determine humanity's future. It is a great opportunity to remove the cancer infecting this world.”

Greenwich Observatory.

Something big was happening there. That was the only thing written on the invitation.

"Can we really get rid of the creatures?"

The president of the United States asked. Queen Mary shook his head.

"It isn't the creatures. Don't you know? It is the presence of the demons."

"Then..."

"The demons will gather."

".....!"

The eyes of the Awakened widened.

The only ones who didn't react were the three mysterious groups, including the Templar Knights.

‘Are they humans?’

Don Gullenom clicked his tongue.

Those in the three groups never even changed their expressions. They were really bland humans. He even wanted to call them robots.

Then the president of Russia opened his mouth.

"Where did you get that information?"

“...From now on, I want everybody to keep this secret. There is no time.”

Queen Mary warned. Everybody nodded so she continued.

"The man in the invitation told me directly. He referred to himself as a grand duke.”

"Are you confident about that?"

“After seeing his ominous power, I am sure that he is a grand duke. Even Lieutenant General Karls gave up when he saw the

enemy.”

"Lieutenant General Karls...him?"

Lieutenant General Karls was a famous Awakened.

It wasn't common for him to just give up.

Queen Mary frowned as she was reminded of that time.

"Most of all, the members of the Templar Knights confirmed it directly.”

At the same time, the leader of the Templar Knights opened his mouth.

"I can read the past of a place. The only time I can't read the past is when there is an extraordinary presence. And I couldn't read the past at Buckingham Palace.”

The leader of the Templar Knights was a strange man wearing silver armour and holding a thin sword. A face that seemed both young and old. His age couldn't be guessed at all.

"There was a skill like that? No, how can you be sure the man is a grand duke just because the past couldn't be read?"

Australia's leader. It was a country relatively free from the aggression of the creatures and had developed their strength. However, the leader of the Templar Knights just casually looked in his eyes.

"I said 'place' but that also includes humans. I can read the past of everyone in this place, including the nasty things you did inside the airplane yesterday. Aang and Raineri...I know you enjoyed them."

"....."

There was silence. They all looked uncomfortable.

It was difficult to imagine that something was installed in the plane. They always searched with state of the art detectors as well as unique magic power detectors.

"The Knights Templar have followed the whereabouts of the demons. The most in-depth ones are the grand dukes...! We can read other demons, but not the grand dukes. This means they are highly dangerous."

"I agree."

"I agree."

The leaders of the Freemasons and Illuminati also agreed.

They viewed the grand dukes as different...

The identities of the grand dukes were unknown except for Ariel Diablo!

Queen Mary said quietly.

"And there is one more clue. His name is Randolph. I coincidentally heard that name in Korea."

Don Gullenom swallowed his saliva.

The weapon he thought about using was already known?

"At this meeting, Kim Yong-woo who is the general leader of the South Korean Awakened and Heaven's Will guild master is present."

"Heaven's Will. I've heard of it."

It was a name they heard once in awhile. It was due to the fact that they had more achievements than other guilds. But South Korea had been ruined by the invasion of numerous demons and creatures.

Kim Yong-woo was behind Queen Mary.

He bowed his head but had a displeased expression on his face.

“You said his name is Randolph Briggsiel?”

Kim Yong-woo scratched his head at Queen Mary’s question.

“That name, don’t say it so casually. He is our savior. The hero who saved South Korea. To dare compare him to a demon...”

“Wasn’t his performance amazing compared to normal Awakened? I heard from some of your guild members, so it is doubtful that he is a human.”

“Of course! A hero can’t be like ordinary humans! Each Awakened has different strengths and he is just on a higher level. I am uncomfortable to be here, but I came in order to resolve Queen Mary’s misunderstanding.”

His words could be considered rude but Queen Mary didn’t lose her smile.

Kim Yong-woo’s faith was amazing. There was blind faith in his eyes. Other people didn’t know it, but eyes held great secrets.

Don Gullenom couldn’t understand it either.

The same name could be a coincidence. It was highly likely.

Nevertheless, why was she like this? Queen Mary was confident.

And if she was right, what type of person was Randolph Briggsiel? He was very curious...

It was ironic that a demonic grand duke would be called a saviour and hero.

That much faith was unusual.

Heaven's Will. They were once lauded as the best guild.

Who could instill such faith in their guild master?

If all the puzzles were joined together to form a single picture...

Don Gullenom felt goose bumps form on his body.

‘He really is the best scammer!’

Chapter 205: Greenwich Observatory (4)

Kim Yong-woo didn't know how this had happened.

Randolph Briggsiel.

His master, hero and maybe saviour. No, it was highly likely that the person called Saviour was Randolph Briggsiel. At least, Kim Yong-woo thought so.

He was covering his face for some reason. He didn't care about his achievements which was why he didn't reveal himself.

However, now someone was trying to shit on his great achievements. Framing him and starting a witch hunt. Kim Yong-woo couldn't stand still.

‘Even if...’

Only one.

If he really was a demon then it didn't matter to Kim Yong-woo. If it wasn't for him, Korea would have ended. It wouldn't have been possible for Kim Yong-woo to keep his place as leader of Heaven's Will and he would have probably already been buried in the ground.

It was because Kim Yong-woo lacked power compared to his

authority. There were hyenas in every direction aiming for his position.

However, Heaven's Will was everything to Kim Yong-woo. Kim Yong-woo's life started to change after he became an Awakened and made Heaven's Will. He hadn't even studied properly and had no special skills, yet he somehow became the man with the best guild in Korea.

And Randolph Brigsiel was the one who helped him with the reversal. Now that name was being ruined.

Even if it was the distant past, Kim Yong-woo knew better than anybody what faith was. Having faith was the only way for someone to live in this confusing world.

"Even if he is the one who really showed up, it was just to warn humanity, not threaten them."

"Then you admit that he is a demon?"

The leader of the Templar Knights stared at Kim Yong-woo with cold, machine-like eyes. They were definitely creepy but he didn't feel threatened.

"No! What demon would be concerned about humans? The name Randolph Brigsiel...in Korea, it literally means hero! However, you are firm in the belief that he is a grand duke. His actions might not be understandable, but you shouldn't judge his actions without

seeing the results!”

“No human can escape my skill. Yet...there are many scenes in your past that I can’t see.”

Kim Yong-woo only sneered after hearing that his past was read.

“He was present from the beginning. It was like the heavens had sent him to me to solve my trials. He was stronger than anyone else yet didn’t come forward. It was like he was preparing for something...I even had the feeling that he knew the future. And the preparations he made started to bloom one by one.”

“The future?”

“That’s right. He knows the future! Reading the past? That is nothing. He is a messenger sent by the heavens to prepare for the future!”

He was agitated.

But Kim Yong-woo’s words were 100% projection.

Kim Yong-woo had been thinking about a man called Randolph Brigsiel.

That’s why he followed Randolph Brigsiel. He had often disappeared, but he always appeared at the necessary moment.

He had done a background check once. But there was nothing.

He had complete confidence and was reliable. There was no other towering presence like that on Earth. Kim Yong-woo didn't think he was a demon or creature, but that was a thing of the past. Now he didn't care about that at all.

"He might be a demon favourable towards humans."

Kim Yong-woo clicked his tongue at the words of the leader of the Templar Knights.

"A demon helping humans? No, do you know anything about demons? Several demons devastated Korea. One day they dragged their creatures and attacked. They locked humans in cages. Our bodies were used like toys and experimented with. Watching those days of humiliation...the Korean warriors know more about demons than anyone else in the world. For demons, humans are just to be mocked."

Kim Yong-woo knew this fact very well. As the leader of the most powerful guild, Kim Yong-woo had a lot of experience with demons.

He was certain that Randolph Brigsiel wasn't a demon. A demon would absolutely never help humans.

And his confidence convinced some of the others.

The leader of the Templar Knights couldn't answer. Queen Mary was watching with great interest. Kim Yong-woo had placed a decisive wedge.

"Anyway, we've received a warning. Heaven's Will will actively participate in this mission."

A raid was organized.

The leaders of each country and major groups had sent their strongest Awakened to the United Kingdom.

In addition, the United States used the 'cobalt' that they had secretly manufactured. Cobalt maximized radiation leaks in nuclear bombs so it was a prohibited material due to the dangers. There were no reports about it being developed due to it being lethal to humanity, but the United States had done it in secret.

Of course, the cobalt weapon was only supposed to be used as a last resort. As the fate of humanity started being at risk, the scientists studied the Awakened and created something beyond imagination.

"I don't know if humanity will self-destruct."

Kim Yong-woo sighed after finding out some parts of the operation.

Although Heaven's Will dispatched 20 people for the operation, he belatedly felt regret.

"Guild Master, did you see?"

Yoo Eun-hye asked mischievously.

"Did I see what?"

"The Awakened that were gathered. I am curious."

Kim Yong-woo shrugged.

"They are not stronger than you. If you are in danger then Edward will protect you, so why should I care?"

Yoo Eun-hye laughed.

It was like he said.

A large space underground. There were more than 1,000 Awakened gathered and they were the powerhouses of each country or guild.

But Yoo Eun-hye and Edward weren't inferior to them. No...they were one or two stages stronger. All the other Awakened from Korea also had high levels. It was the reason Kim Yong-woo wasn't

worried.

"Anyway, you are like a sly fox."

"Shut up. Spend the next three days becoming familiar with the team. It is like raising a chicken from an egg. Make it so that they won't throw your body away if you are dying."

"Why is Guild Master acting like this?"

"I am busy."

Kim Yong-woo used a thick book to slap Yoo Eun-hye's cheeks lightly. He was the operation's commander so there were many things to know. It would take three weeks to memorize all of this, let alone three days.

Yoo Eun-hye pouted.

"Edward. This uncle is no fun. Will you play with Noona?"

Edward Windsor. The young man standing behind Yoo Eun-hye couldn't take his eyes off her.

"That's good. What should we play?"

"Well...do you know how to break a seal?"

Kim Yong-woo shouted as he heard those words.

“Hey! What are you going to do?”

"Do you know what is more important than comradeship, Guild Master? It is the pecking order, pecking order. If I don't properly establish the pecking order then the dog might bite the owner in an emergency~"

“Ha...”

Kim Yong-woo shook his head. It was true that there could be incidents in times of trouble.

Not long ago, people used an excuse to try something against the ‘Saviour’s children.’ Kim Yong-woo had gone to Yoo Eun-hye, who directly dealt out punishment.

"Anyway, if I don't move then won't other candidates start taking action? Didn't Girin-nim set this operation as the ‘decisive battle.’ Depending on the performance, the king will be decided. The timing is good.”

The decisive battle for the king was supposed to have the seven candidates fight fiercely against each other. However, the timing made that impossible. Instead, the girin decided that the one with the highest achievements in this operation would get the position.

All seven candidates agreed.

Yoo Eun-hye's thoughts didn't stop there.

She was obsessed with being the 'king' so that she could become stronger...

So he said.

"Quietly and neatly. And make it clear. Do you understand what I am saying?"

"I will come back as the best. At that time, Guild Master should be calling me Boss."

"Yes yes."

Yoo Eun-hye laughed and left.

At that time...

I was near the dungeon in China.

I looked at the lush mountains opposite the dungeon.

"Tashmal, where is Hash?"

Tashmal spoke with a complicated expression.

"It isn't a good idea to do this right now. The other angels have just started to acknowledge him."

Of all the angels currently on Earth, Hash had the highest rank. The angels moved under a tricky hierarchy so Hash was given the best treatment. He might not be that old, but luckily he managed to infiltrate the sacred zone and deceived the angels.

It was a very important time.

But I firmly shook my head.

"This will be the true beginning of everything. There is no way the angels can miss this stage. Tashmal, bring Hash to me straight away."

"...I understand."

Tashmal moved.

A sacred zone. A place that would cause even my skin to tingle. Demons and creatures wouldn't dare step foot in there.

However, Tashmal was a fallen angel and had considerable resistance to the divine power.

She moved and disappeared from my sight.

‘I need to use all the cards I have. The grand dukes will bring a significant amount of creatures...I wonder who will be the strongest.’

I folded my arms and laughed coldly.

Chapter 206: Those Who Gather (1)

Gathering all the grand dukes.

It was a public meeting at the Greenwich Observatory. At the very least, I needed to decorate the meeting place. I had showed off my status by sending the invitations so I couldn't skip this task.

I called the dwarf king and all the dwarves. Of course, Oswen was necessary and he arrived first at the Greenwich Observatory.

"Your Majesty. You are giving me too many things to do."

"I know."

"Isn't unraveling the high dark elf's curse the most important task that Your Majesty gave me? It takes a considerable amount of time to create a weapon that will block a curse like that..."

"I know."

"I was just finishing off an idea for an experiment. At the very least, my skills are needed to create..."

"Oswen."

"Hum hum, I couldn't help saying such words. It is very important."

Oswen was somewhat disgruntled. It seemed like unraveling the high dark elf's curse wasn't going that well.

Chrisley's mother and Aojin's lover. She had been killed by a very powerful being and trapped by a curse. It wasn't easy even for Oswen.

I understood but he needed to cool his overheated head a little bit.

He had profound knowledge in the blacksmithing area, but wasn't he also my subordinate? I wouldn't have cared in my previous life but now I felt some sympathy. If things weren't going well then he should take a break.

"Complete it in two days."

"Two days is a little tight. 200 dwarves will be required."

Oswen's eyes burned as he decided to change his mindset. Even if things didn't work out, it was clear that he liked making things.

I nodded lightly.

"I will give you 400 dwarves so take care of it."

"So...it is possible to decorate things a little more luxuriously."

"Did you complete the request I asked for a week ago?"

"Ah, that request. It is finished. There are exactly 200."

I touched my jaw. I had clearly entrusted many things to Oswen. This was because Oswen was the only one who could do it. I had great respect for Oswen's abilities.

When talking about 'usefulness,' Oswen was one of the top two. He was sly but thoroughly capable. I didn't care as long as he didn't go against me.

Anyway...Oswen was busy with the high dark elf's curse when I presented him with a task. Fortunately, he managed to complete it amongst everything else he had to do.

"Install half of them."

"Should I make them as inconspicuous as possible?"

"You understand."

"I will tell Fairy-nim what is necessary."

"Do so."

"Then..."

Oswen bowed and left.

There were many tasks but he had no substitute. He could only blame his own excellent abilities.

However, Oswen never did a shoddy job. He was always committed to producing the best possible results. I couldn't not use him.

‘This magic power?’

Just like the wind carrying a scent, I turned my eyes in the direction that the magic power was coming from. As soon as I noticed, the source of the magic power appeared next to me.

"This is a fairly decent place."

A familiar face. The grand duke who won in my previous life.

I remembered being struck by her and dying.

"Ariel Diablo. The appointment time is still far away."

"It is polite to come early."

"This is the first time I've heard that."

Demons. It was natural for them to come later than the set time. It wasn't polite but they took it for granted. I never thought that the grand dukes would show up exactly at the set time.

Of course, Ariel Diablo was a very special person. She was different from the other demons. I had no intention of denying it.

'It has become troublesome.'

However, Oswen had just left. It was to install the pre-prepared things. It would become complicated if Ariel Diablo noticed.

Ariel Diablo spread out her arms and said confidently.

"My army will arrive soon. During that time, I want to relax and see this place."

There was no apparent hostility.

She was friendly and asked many questions. I couldn't rule out the possibility that she had come here first for some secret reason.

But I still had a lot of work to do. I didn't have time to show Ariel Diablo around.

‘It is a little tough.’

I should have written on the invitation not to come in advance. However, there had been no reason for it. I shrugged and said.

“It is fine as long as you behave well as a guest.”

"Haha, I'm not as brutish as Upa."

The two of them were at war. It was natural for them to gossip about each other. Maxium had interfered in the war between them, however I spoke impatiently.

"I will assign someone to guide you."

"The other guys don't fit. Can't we have a leisurely conversation while walking?"

“Yihi!”

Something small popped out as soon as I called her name! It was Yihi arriving.

“Yihihihi. Master, did you call Yihi?”

"Be a guide."

“Who...? Ah! Demon!”

Yihi screamed and hurriedly summoned her sword, helmet and shield. They were all tokens of a fairy knight. Ariel Diablo gazed at her appearance with interested eyes.

“A magical fairy.”

"Get away from Master! You bad demon!"

Yihi brandished her sword in preparation for battle. An ordinary fairy would find it impossible to attack a demon, but Yihi had considerable strength. But Ariel just stretched out her hand.

Duk!

“Hiing...”

Yihi rubbed her forehead while sitting on the ground. She didn't disappear from the blow due to being connected to the Dungeon Core.

"Hmm...there is a way to upgrade a fairy? How interesting."

Her eyes were filled with curiosity. Before I knew it, I was in the background.

“Yihi. She is Grand Duke Ariel Diablo. Guide her moderately.”

I emphasized the idea of ‘not everything.’

It wasn’t strange since she was an enemy.

‘Keep to the outskirts. Avoid the interior as much as possible.’

I sent those words to Yihi.

The perception of Ariel Diablo’s eyes transcended imagination. It wasn’t just limited to the physical. It would be a problem if she found what Oswen was installing. I believed in Oswen but it didn’t hurt to be cautious.

Yihi blinked and replied.

“Yes~ Master. Yihi...well, yes. Yihi will guide this bad demon. Che.”

She shook her rear and flew up again. Ariel Diablo folded her arms and looked at Yihi.

"I am not a bad demon. Mysterious Fairy."

"No all demons are bad except for Master Yihi knows it well."

"You resemble your master."

Ariel Diablo laughed. She continued.

"Then guide me well."

"Come along ~"

Paang!

Yihi flew off at her highest speed. She was fast like the wind.

"A funny fairy."

"She is a troublemaker."

Ariel touched her chin as she wondered.

"I wonder how you managed such a thing."

I frowned.

She had an attitude when talking about me. I didn't like it. Ariel Diablo saw my expression and shook her head.

"I have no intentions of causing trouble. I...need to catch that

cute fairy. Then I'll see you later.”

She clasped her hands behind her back.

She slowly moved her feet.

Paaaang!

As soon as she took the next step, she disappeared.

'Yihi is slower.'

She would be caught sooner or later so I moved.

The time remaining was short and I had a lot to do.

Chapter 207: Those Who Gather (2)

“What is Randolph Briggsiel like as a demon?”

Ariel Diablo asked after Yihi ‘surrendered.’ There was a moment of silence after Ariel Diablo’s question.

Yihi snorted and spread open her ten fingers before counting them one by one.

"Nice, caring, cool, strong, smart, helps me out, a very attractive smelling magic power..."

"I understand. Stop. I roughly get the idea."

She really would list his qualities without ending so Ariel Diablo waved her hand.

"Why do you ask?"

"Huhu, it has been a long time since I’ve been treated like this. By the way...if you can become the fairy queen then why are you here?"

"Fairy...queen? Yihi? No?"

Yihi’s eyes widened with shock as she answered.

But Ariel just continued like she was talking to herself.

"Doesn't the contract only last until the fairy becomes the fairy ruler? If you become the fairy queen then you don't have to maintain this current unequal contract. The emergence of a fairy ruler is something that all fairies desire. They long for it. It is something that can't be easily replaced."

"Bah, are you telling Yihi what to do? Do you think becoming the fairy ruler is that easy?"

"I know quite a bit about fairies. Fairy Yihi."

At the same time, Ariel Diablo's eyes turned a pale blue. It was a change from the usual red. The atmosphere was also very different.

Yihi's mouth dropped open.

"You..."

"Shhh. This is a secret that nobody knows except for my deceased father."

"H-how does a demon have fairy eyes? It is impossible..."

"I will tell you everything."

Ariel Diablo looked around.

It was a small comfort that there was nobody around them.

After a while, her red eyes returned while Yihi was staring at her.

Yihi was nervous. It was like she was going to be eaten at any moment.

Ariel Diablo continued in a small but sharp tone.

“Fairy Yihi. I have told you one of my secrets. So won’t you tell me? Why you won’t become the fairy ruler even though you are capable of it?”

Ariel Diablo’s army was surprisingly small. Silver knights. It seemed like the white knights I heard a report about had been completed. They appeared exactly one day after Ariel Diablo.

I looked at them from the top of Greenwich Observatory. There were exactly 250 of them. Royal guards? They felt different from ordinary creatures.

‘It is like how it was reported.’

They weren’t significantly different from what Chrisley and Oswen reported to me. They had brought my invitations to the

grand dukes and in return, they reported back to me what they saw. Their words weren't exaggerated.

‘Is that all?’

I tilted my head to one side.

If so, she had great confidence. Ariel Diablo's nature wasn't to do a lot of back maneuvering. There was a reason why her preparations might seem lacking.

‘Confidence...’

That's right. Ariel Diablo was completely confident in her creatures. That's why I decided to judge it for myself. So...I needed to look more carefully.

250 silver knights came through the gates. Their sizes were different and all of them were female. Their ages were also different.

I took a deep breath.

Their magic power smelt a little different. There was an ominous feeling that I couldn't explain. They were neither death knights nor dark warriors.

‘The synthesis of a new species.’

I nodded a little bit.

They weren't an entirely new species. There was some sense of familiarity from the silver knights. The knights were all made of 'advanced' creatures.

There were no signs that they were even human.

I didn't know what Ariel intended by combining the creatures together.

Or that it had even been possible.

'I wonder what creatures were used? Interesting.'

There were thousands of different creatures. I only had a simple abbreviated list of creatures so it wasn't surprising that I didn't know every one.

However, that wasn't what I was talking about right now. The knights were made by synthesizing creatures. Although they were a new species, they were usually called chimera. The problem was combining the creatures and ensuring that they maintain a constant shape.

'Impossible.'

As far as I knew, it didn't make sense.

I didn't have deep knowledge about chimeras but I was certain about this.

A chimera made from combining more than three creatures wouldn't be able to act.

It was because the body would become unstable and they would self-destruct.

I met the eyes of the silver knight in the lead.

“Hrmm...”

Those eyes!

I nodded lightly.

I noticed one truth the moment I met the knight's eyes.

‘A large mixture.’

I was convinced.

The 250 knights that represented Ariel Diablo were a mixture of hundreds of creatures!

‘Indeed.’

I couldn’t ignore her source of confidence.

The date on the invitation.

I honestly hadn’t expected any of the grand dukes except for Ariel Diablo to be on time.

They were arrogant, proud and irreverent.

But it didn’t take long to find out that I was wrong.

The day after Ariel Diablo’s silver knights arrived. From the east, west and north...the armies of the grand dukes simultaneously appeared.

It was right after the appointed time so I couldn’t help but sneer at the coincidence.

A wave of creatures. Hundreds of thousands...maybe over a million creatures filled the fields.

A spectacular sight!

It was hard to feel any joy at the situation.

The sight was enough to cause despair. The large armies arrived in front of the doors. The grand dukes and the demons in their factions dismounted from their mounts and walked forward with dignity.

There was no tension in their faces. They were just filled with absolute confidence.

Each grand duke had no doubt that their faction was the strongest.

However, it was impossible to turn back. There would only be one final winner!

I couldn't look weak. The weak demons were culled since birth...

"Open the door."

I ordered.

Soon the door opened and they stepped foot inside the castle.

What should I say?

It was a strange atmosphere.

I had invited them to the Greenwich Observatory that was an excellent castle. However, the castle just looked small from the viewpoint of the grand dukes.

The numerous expensive decorations couldn't satisfy their eyes. It was because there wasn't enough time to get everything ready.

It was literally nothing more than a show. They had been caught.

There were a number of reasons, with the main contributor being the 'invitation' I sent. However, I didn't see any signs of discomfort on their faces.

'The contents were provocative...'

I wrote down a secret that nobody else knew. Their gazes were filled with questions about how I knew. Yet, strangely, there was no tension.

I led them to the banquet prepared for them as the creatures quietly played music.

"Have some."

I copied a human's banquet and politely handed them cups. This calm atmosphere...it was mimicking a human 'party.' In the case of the demons, they were uncomfortable because it was unfamiliar to them.

However, they were grand dukes.

They had experienced many things and were well prepared.

The factions gathered together and drank from the cups.

“The taste is okay.”

Upa smirked. He was someone with quite a lot of greed.

I replied lightly.

“This is the best drink. It is a cognac...I don’t know the name but isn’t it okay for a human brew?”

My words were insulting to the drink. I predicted that the alcohol lover Upa would say something.

However, his reaction was quite different.

“It is much better than the silly contents of the invitations.”

“It is funny since you don’t have the ability to write well.”

I parried his insult. Neither of us was apologizing. Even if it was a

prank.

‘The magician of the moon isn’t here.’

I searched around Upa but couldn’t feel the mysterious magic of Gustarte. No matter how powerful the weapon, it wouldn’t be here if it was unstable.

That was what I thought.

However, the power of the demons under him was quite good. In the meantime, they had made steep progress and the magic power was slightly better than other factions’.

‘Succubus queen!’

The most prominent one was Groggy Inpir.

A demon who loved succubi. He filled his entire dungeon with succubuses.

He was accompanied by a succubus queen. A creature I hadn’t seen in my previous life. A high class 3Lv creature that had never appeared at the Demon World Auction.

It was clear that events were different.

On the other hand...what about Pandemonium?

He didn't seem much different from before. It felt like his power was similar to when the girin and Korean Awakened first attacked his empty dungeons.

He had absorbed Okullos' faction but that was all. He had also lost a considerable amount of power attacking my dungeon.

Out of all the grand dukes, Pandemonium seemed to be the most lacking. I didn't know what Pandemonium was doing.

"This banquet...it is like the humans."

"Pandemonium, you must have experienced a human banquet. You have lived for many years."

"I've never seen it before. By the way, you didn't send the invitations for something like this, Randolph Briggsiel. Wasn't it to discuss countermeasures?"

Ahh. I nodded.

I remembered that I had put that down in the contents.

But to be honest, I didn't know Pandemonium would react this way.

The angels on earth weren't very threatening. However, it seemed like they were aware that Camael would soon descend.

I opened my mouth.

"Countermeasures against the angels? Of course..."

"I didn't mean that. Angels are things that I can easily step on."

Then what?

I looked at Pandemonium with confusion.

But...Pandemonium's face was distorted with displeasure.

It wasn't just him. The other demons and grand dukes were the same.

They thought I was pretending not to know.

'There is something.'

The problem was that I couldn't tell what it was.

But it was easy to figure it out.

They were seeking something from me so I just laughed.

“A special event...do you know?”

Chapter 208: Those Who Gather (3)

Special event!

It was an event that appeared suddenly and they didn't know when or where it would happen. But I didn't know about any special events right now.

In addition, the others didn't have a big reaction to the words 'special event.'

That wasn't it.

'Do all the other demons have a special event? But I didn't receive it.'

It was strange.

If everyone else experienced a special event then there was no reason for me to be excluded. But I was excluded and they responded quickly to my invitation.

At least, that was what I saw.

Pandemonium came close to me and said.

"Open the way to the Demon World, Randolph Brigsiel. You know how to do it. If not, you wouldn't have thought of gathering

all of us like this. There is no time for a banquet.”

All eyes turned towards me.

‘This isn’t good.’

My goal was to make the grand dukes hostile and uncontrollable towards each other.

But everyone was aiming towards me. I would never be able to win.

At that moment...my skin started to prickle as I felt holy power.

"The angels have left the sacred zone.”

Ariel Diablo declared as she stared towards the east.

‘Not good...’

The news made matters worse.

I only wanted one thing. The demons would start to crack at the meeting while the angels and humans pounced. All the demons and creatures were gathered here so they would receive considerable damage.

And I would start the negotiations from the most favourable place...

'It is broken.'

They were only focused on me for some reason. The words 'special event' rang in my ears. I didn't know why I didn't see it and they did.

'Shouldn't a special event happen to everyone?'

So I started to try and clean this up.

Right now I had a headache, but there was still a chance to turn this to my favour. Rather, I had the ability to reverse the situation to put myself on top.

I thought for a moment.

For example, the emergence of the Cruel Commander Maxium. The message was delivered to all demons and human Awakened. Not only that, I also had experience from my previous life. It was abnormal no matter how I thought about it.

Something had taken a terrible turn.

I wanted to find out but I had to pretend to know the situation.

If I didn't know then they were likely to have suspicions. The grand dukes would jump on me. I had to avoid that situation.

'The Demon World. They believe I can open the path to it. No...they are hoping I will open it.'

I inwardly nodded.

A large amount of angels were coming from the east but there was still time.

A method to travel to the Demon World. I know a possible way.

Yihi!

Yihi's golden crown.

It was a treasure she received that sent me to the Underground World. It was a simulated world created by the Hell Monarch.

As a result...it wasn't impossible to return to the Demon World. It was only a prediction but the likelihood was high.

'I wonder why I didn't get a message about the special event. If Yihi is the key then that would also apply to me. The message not being delivered...maybe it is for those who belong to the system but have nothing to do with the special event or those who don't belong to the system.'

I scowled.

The system made by the devil was highly sophisticated.

Of course, I belonged to the system. I had come to Earth through the agreement with the devil.

I shouldn't be cut off from the special events.

So the only thing left were those who didn't belong...there were some creatures who appeared as special events in my previous life where clear messages weren't received. This was for sure.

'The Hell Monarch.'

I couldn't think of any more possibilities.

Of course, he was recognized as the Dungeon Master. But he couldn't operate the dungeon itself. At the same time, I was recognized as the Hell Monarch. Otherwise Yihi's crown should have returned me to the Demon World.

There were still many doubts.

I had the Heart of the Hell Monarch so the world might recognize me as the Hell Monarch.

Of course, the demons were unaware of these facts.

At the same time, I remembered the curse on the high dark elf. Chrisley's mother lost her life in an attack from someone with a similar magic power. It was hard to believe that there would be third person who inherited something from the Hell Monarch.

Was this somehow connected with returning to the Demon World?

As far as I knew, the Hell Monarch was one of the strongest. There were few who could fight against him in a 1:1 fight.

He died due to the manipulation of the gods but who could stop him if he was resurrected?

‘Something must have happened in the Demon World for them to be so eager to return.’

It was obvious.

I formed a loose fist. I straightened my back and looked towards the east.

Kurung!

Kwa kwa kwang!

The outside of the castle was already a battlefield.

The creatures waiting outside and the angels coming from the east engaged in battle without hesitation.

Many demons also left the castle to control them.

This situation seemed unacceptable and I wanted to finish it as soon as possible.

I gave a small smile when I saw it.

At first it seemed complicated, but I just needed to look at the important parts.

‘I am still holding the key.’

My mind became lighter.

The term ‘cherub’ referred to a superior angel who was said to have sublime wisdom. The second highest amongst the ninth level angels, they were very powerful.

It wasn’t impossible to call them a one man army since they possessed the power to take care of a grand duke.

Right now, a cherub was the highest rank among the angels on earth. Although he hadn't been born for a long time, he exerted absolute influence on the angels.

Tens of thousands of angels appeared from all over the world.

They proclaimed a dungeon in China as another sacred zone. From there, they were able to become stronger and regain their lost strength.

Of course, the sacred zone was a fortress and the demons didn't dare attack.

Now the angels had forsaken that fortress and attacked the demons. Their numbers might be inferior...but most of the angels had recovered their strength and wouldn't be easy.

Even so, the results were fixed...

‘Without the humans...’

The angels weren't the only ones moving under my hand.

Hash moving the angels on Earth had been a success, so now it was time to wait for the other side.

The joining of the humans.

The exact date was set so they would be fools if they didn't move.

It was quite a cheap method.

‘Unless an upset happens, I can watch with both hands behind my back.’

I stood on top of the clock tower.

It was time to watch everything occurring.

The Awakened secretly hiding started to move. The moment that the grand dukes started to move, the humans thought of it as an ‘opportunity to decide the world's fate.’

They used their information network to read the movements of the grand dukes and creatures, and became convinced they were heading to Greenwich Observatory.

At the very least, it was obvious that something unusual was happening at Greenwich Observatory. It was an opportunity to take care of the demons.

“There is a flower here. A flower...hu! Should we have flower code names, Guild Master?”

Dozens of kilometres from Greenwich Observatory.

Yoo Eun-hye and her team were moving between the ruins of a shattered city.

An answer came from the radio after Yoo Eun-hye spoke.

-Then I'll give you a flower best-suited for you.

It was Kim Yong-woo's voice. He was directing the operation through the radio.

Yoo Eun-hye sighed.

"Will it be bad?"

-People call you the 'flower of the battlefield.' Didn't you clean up everybody? Then shall I call you the boss flower?

The strongest people from every country had been gathered in the underground bunker.

After defeating all of them, Yoo Eun-hye proved she was the strongest.

As promised, Kim Yong-woo started calling her 'boss.'

Of course, Yoo Eun-hye didn't dislike her position. Flowers...flowers were too vulnerable.

"Shut up. I will receive the next instructions. We have arrived at the designated position."

-Already? Then wait. There is another team that needs to reach that position.

Yoo Eun-hye asked with confusion.

"Huh? Don't we have the most important thing to do? Shouldn't we move in secret?"

-It is important, but it is an emergency right now. It was decided that another team is necessary to penetrate through.

"What's going on?"

-Angels are appearing. There are thousands of them.

Tak!

Yoo Eun-hye slapped her forehead.

"Why all of a sudden? No, shouldn't we have known that in advance?"

-Electronic devices don't work inside the sacred zone.

Furthermore, they suddenly appeared via a warp. How could we humans read that?

Yoo Eun-hye gritted her teeth after hearing Kim Yong-woo's complaints.

"I planned to go quietly. How can we move in the midst of a war zone?"

Yoo Eun-hye turned around.

Edward Windsor was walking while carrying a steel bag.

-That is humanity's hope. You need to move somehow. Just break through. You know that it is almost impossible to penetrate from the sky or the sea right? The Awakened have to move quietly and directly.

Inside the bag was the most powerful weapon in the history of mankind. Yoo Eun-hye had the role of bringing it to the centre of Greenwich Observatory.

If it was in the centre then they calculated they could kill a huge number of demons and creatures at once.

‘This is a weapon created by the essence of science, numerous magic items and a large number of cores.’

Yoo Eun-hye bit her lip.

If she did it properly then it would be humanity's victory.

Hundreds of supercomputers made a quadrillion calculations so it couldn't be wrong.

The problem was how to move it.

Even a powerful jet fighter flying at mach speed wouldn't show any strength in front of a powerful creature. It was likely to be shot down. It was the same for the sea.

There was no other way but for strong Awakened to hide and move with it.

So Yoo Eun-hye and her team were picked.

“How long do I have to wait?”

-Um...soon!

Soon? It was an ambiguous answer.

However, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward were able to notice immediately.

A holy power that could even be felt from afar.

At first they thought of angels, but they were clearly humans.

That wasn't the only strange part.

It was too small to be called a 'team.'

There were only two women...

Ah! No. Fireballs were floating next to them with the appearance of teenage girls if they looked closely.

So there were four of them?

"Hello."

"....."

One was energetic while the other remained silent.

The fireballs just floated around quietly.

"Are you the team that Guild Master Kim Yong-woo said...?"

One of the women laughed at Yoo Eun-hye's question.

"Yes, that's right. I'm Kim Yura and my quiet sister over there is Kim Min-ji. We both have the 'high priest' job so we will be useful. And our partners are Rei and Sera."

The girls made of fire greeted them briefly.

Yoo Eun-hye knew that the girls were fire spirits. These days, quite a large number of Awakened had made contracts with fire spirits.

"Ah...I'm Yoo Eun-hye. I have the job of a soldier. Please take care of me."

"I will."

Kim Yura answered with a sweet smile.

Chapter 209: Gustarte (1)

There was a long way to go and their foes were numerous. Even if they only had a small elite party, it was impossible to completely avoid so many eyes.

The millions of creatures and angels were all enemies. Setting aside the creatures, the way that the angels fought was disgusting for humans. In a combat situation, the angels were no different from the creatures.

The way the angels fought. It was an ‘insensitivity’ that didn’t care about anything but themselves.

If a passing human blocked the road then the angels would burn them. At least angels didn’t go hunting humans.

But right now, this was a war zone.

A chaotic place filled with blood where reason was paralyzed.

Anybody found was hunted without delay.

Yoo Eun-hye’s party were the top level Awakened and even they had trouble holding on.

Among them, the high priests Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji played great roles.

"Suture."

"Regeneration."

The combination of the two was beyond astonishing. They watched in amazement as amputated limbs were miraculously restored at once. Among the priests' jobs, it was a 'miracle' not possible for them.

Yet it had become a reality. Suture could immediately stitch up wounds while Regeneration completely healed a wound.

There were no side effects.

Commonly referred to as equivalent exchange...each Awakened experienced it to a certain extent when using skills. The higher ranked the skill, the more severe the fatigue due to loss of magic power.

But...they didn't get tired.

'Are they really people?'

Yoo Eun-hye inwardly shook her head.

Right now they were halfway there.

They had encountered angels and creatures dozens of times, causing casualties to appear. However, their common point was that they ‘died instantly.’ Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji couldn’t save the dead.

If they could bring back the dead then it would make the weight of living seem too low. She had seen many deaths. If they were revived...she felt like her mind would be troubled.

Either way, the party was able to reach this point due to the severe injuries being treated immediately. Half the party members had been sacrificed to reach halfway to their target. If a simple calculation was done, they would all die by the time they arrived at the target.

‘They have to arrive, even if it means dying. To do this, I must protect them.’

Yoo Eun-hye’s eyes were shining.

She had seen many Awakened with healing skills, but it was the first time she had seen it to this degree. Their talent was necessary to reach the goal.

She only needed one person to fulfill the purpose. There was no guarantee that person would be Yoo Eun-hye. Rather than that...

Yoo Eun-hye looked at Edward Windsor.

“Noona, are you nervous?”

Edward Windsor grinned.

He was different compared to when she first saw him as a child.

Sometimes he looked at her like a mother, sometimes like a lover, but Yoo Eun-hye couldn't repay those expectations. He wasn't to blame.

Edward Windsor was too young. That's all.

He grew stronger at a speed beyond imagination. Yoo Eun-hye was praised as the best but Edward Windsor had the qualities to become the 'strongest.'

He had already almost caught up with her so it was an unbelievable speed.

If only one person could survive then it had to be Edward Windsor. Yoo Eun-hye thought it was the right choice for the world and for him.

"What is there to be nervous about? Let's move quickly. We'll need to skirt around that road."

"Go around that road?"

"I think there is some fighting in that area. Even if it takes a little more time, it is better to go to the side."

"I agree."

Puok!

Edward shrugged as he slashed an ogre's neck. It was dead but he cut it again just for confirmation.

The captain was Yoo Eun-hye.

Every team member followed her commands without questioning it.

Edward was still too young and inexperienced to lead.

However, he would be able to take her place in one or two years. He could rise to Kim Yong-woo's position in an instant.

She felt like the burden on her was a little bit lighter.

'This mission...not all of us can survive.'

Yoo Eun-hye tried to be stronger as she faced all types of absurd situations. The strong had to protect the weak and fight against

injustice. If no one did that then corruption would be the only thing remaining.

This world would perish!

It was obvious when people showed radical and violent behaviour towards the Saviour's children.

She went on this mission to make sure it would succeed. Her final goal was to become the king, but Edward was also a candidate.

The more they fought and got closer to their destination...the survival rate was unlikely to be high. Her intuition was usually never wrong.

"If I die, you will lead the party Edward."

"Don't talk like a loser."

Edward scowled. Even though he had spent a long time in the training room, Edward still had childlike aspects.

"Promise."

However, Yoo Eun-hye was serious. If a crisis situation happened and Yoo Eun-hye died, then Edward needed to take over.

It wasn't just for the future.

Was it something like a deep affection?

She spoiled him despite never having a younger sibling or child, so it felt strange.

Edward turned his head with a serious expression.

"I promise, but it isn't going to happen."

"Good. Let's move on."

"Captain-nim, it is hard to move right now."

Kim Yura approached Yoo Eun-hye after treating her last patient.

"It is hard to move?"

"Creatures and angels are approaching this direction quickly. I'm sure since my spirit Rei has detected it."

The fire spirits!

Although numerous Awakened had contracts with them, they were much smaller than the sisters' fire spirits. Apart from their size, the fire spirits were powerful. To be honest, they were better

than some Awakened.

“The distance?”

Yoo Eun-hye believed Kim Yura’s words.

She couldn’t believe it earlier, but similar situations had happened several times. Now she had no questions.

“Forward...wait, Rei, what?”

Kim Yura’s expression became determined. The fire spirit Rei seemed to be telling Kim Yura something important.

Kim Yura spoke hurriedly after hearing the contents.

“Run away. Right now.”

“We can’t handle it?”

“There is no time. We...there is no way we can handle it!”

She didn’t even want to waste time saying the name?

Yoo Eun-hye had to choose. It was happening very quickly.

Should she believe Kim Yura's words and retreat, or keep going forward?

There was no time. If they retreated then it would be more difficult to accomplish their goal.

But she made a quick decision.

“Retreat...”

"It's too late! Avoid it! As far as possible...!"

Just as Yoo Eun-hye was about to open her mouth.

Kururung!

The ground shook.

Syuuuuuu!

The sky turned black.

Swaaaaah!

A black sphere similar to a black sun was floating in the centre of the sky.

Swaaaang!

It started to suck in everything around it. The black sun swallowed up everything quickly and indiscriminately.

It was like a black hole.

"Let me show you the power of a true king, harpy swarm."

The owner of an amazingly deep voice walked forward. The black sun moved slowly according to his movements. Even darkness was assimilated.

Kyaaaaak!

And...the angels couldn't resist.

The harpy swarm was referring to the angels.

All they could do was scream as their wings were torn. There were angels away from the radius of the black hole but they didn't survive.

The power of a king wasn't that simple or limited.

A king that was equal to an army!

He called it the power of a king.

Countless creatures followed behind the king.

In particular, there was an impressive unknown creature with black wings. Cerberuses with black wings! It was like something that would show up in a myth.

But such beings wouldn't follow a simple king.

He had a droopy face and two eyes that seemed to be drowning in madness!

One of the grand dukes qualified to call himself a 'king.'

He was the demon most hostile to humans and had slaughtered the most.

Intelligent humans were wary of him. The most destructive and outspoken demon, he was no different than a living nuclear bomb. He was a grand duke that would try to destroy the earth to earn the highest achievements.

Now he was slaughtering the angels.

Chapter 210: Gustarte (2)

Huuuuong!

Hundreds of black spheres rose around his body, creating an overwhelming black typhoon. The space twisted and the boundary between the earth and sky disappeared.

It wasn't a usual typhoon. Surprisingly...this phenomenon was nothing more than a weapon created by Grand Duke Upa.

His right hand grabbed the bottom of the typhoon and the typhoon followed the movements of his hand. The typhoon was handled like a sword and instantly evaporated the angels.

“...A monster beyond the level of a human.”

Yoo Eun-hye said miserably. They weren't attacked because they weren't targets. They were a considerable distance from him, so if they were lucky enough to find a hiding spot then they might not get caught. However, the odds were very slim. Still, it was more risky to move away from this place.

A dilemma.

Once all the visible angels disappeared, it was likely that a big attack would head their way.

“That is a grand duke.”

Kim Yura. She was a high priest along with her sister. They were always calm, but right now her voice was strange.

It was filled with something other than fear.

However, Yoo Eun-hye didn't realize the subtle difference.

"Is it different?"

"A grand duke is much stronger than those at the same level. For sure...yes."

There were 23 people surviving in the party. All of them were silent with fear after Kim Yura's words.

It was because they were stunned by the battle scene itself.

Huuuuuuong!

The huge typhoon rose and fell like a piece of paper. Nothing remained in the area that the typhoon swept past. It wasn't enough to say that they were processed. It was at a level to move a mountain.

And the black sun floating in the sky like a black hole was

steadily pulling in the angels around it. One person was overwhelming the angels so it was impossible to measure his strength.

“Kuhuhuhu!”

At that moment, Grand Duke Upa laughed loudly.

There was one angel not threatened by the typhoon or sucked into the black hole.

An angel with three pairs of wings. An intermediate rank angel.

Rays of light were pouring out from her. The light seemed to protect her from all attacks.

Upa said with a smile.

"Can that light protect you forever?"

"God's blessing is a solid thing that can't be penetrated!"

"That is great."

Soon Upa touched the typhoon with his right hand. The typhoon divided into hundreds or thousands of blades that wrapped around the angel.

Upa rode on one of the blades and approached the angel. And he carefully pushed his hand into the light.

Chiiiik!

It was a light that resisted evil. As soon as Upa's hand touched it, the light fiercely rebelled and tried to burn him. However, there was a triumphant smile on Upa's face and the area his hand was touching was turning dark.

“Cough!”

Upa's hands grabbed the angel's neck.

"I will eat you myself."

Once all the light had disappeared, his right hand stroked the angel's body as his mouth bit her neck.

“.....”

Yoo Eun-hye closed her eyes at the sight.

She didn't want to see an angel being eaten by a demon. The scene itself was a triumph for evil. Even if angels didn't help humans, they were still divine beings...she felt somewhat weird.

'I'd rather...'

Yoo Eun-hye was struggling.

They had brought a bomb. The name was 'Hope.'

If they used it from this distance, would they be able to kill Grand Duke Upa?

It would be one great achievement. Hundreds of thousands of creatures would also be wiped out so it wasn't a bad exchange.

'A last resort. If we get caught then I will press the switch for the explosion.'

She opened her eyes and breathed out.

She would act depending on what happened between Upa and the angels.

Fortunately, Upa turned around and all the creatures followed him.

"I'm going crazy."

Yoo Eun-hye finally spoke a while after Upa left.

“Huu!”

“Crazy. What type of unspeakable monster is that?”

"Can we win, Captain?"

The remaining party members calmed down their wildly beating hearts.

"We still have Hope. As long as we have Hope, we can win."

Yoo Eun-hye repeated like she was hypnotizing them.

While all the party members agreed with her, Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji had a completely different reaction.

In particular, Kim Yura's eyes were complicated.

“Grand duke...”

I watched everything from the clock tower in the centre of the castle. My senses touched the sky and the earth, making it possible to read everything that was happening in the vicinity.

‘Upa doesn’t hesitate to use his force.’

Ariel Diablo was at war with Upa Bullenon. How much power did he have that he didn't hesitate to use it? I had to admire him.

‘He has found most of the power from my previous life.’

It felt like Upa had transferred everything over from my previous life. There seemed to be no difference from then and now. How did he achieve this?

‘I remember that once he transcends, he can summon the giant castle Bullenon.’

I had transcended but it wasn't true transcendence. The same was true for Upa. It meant he wasn't qualified to summon the castle Bullenon.

Bullenon...

I shuddered just thinking about it.

It was carved out of the largest mountain in the Demon World and once Upa summoned it, no one could stop it.

‘The only thing I don't see is Pandemonium's power.’

Ariel was leading her knights and slaughtering the angels. The white knights seemed to become stronger when they were together. Moreover, not all of them were fully grown yet so they

weren't perfect.

On the other hand, Pandemonium wasn't active in removing the angels. He didn't even leave the castle.

"Pandemonium, he must be thinking that I would try to escape."

I started laughing.

I had created this situation. Naturally I couldn't be excluded.

A lot of creatures were left to watch over me.

"Pant pant! Master! Master!"

I suddenly heard a familiar voice.

When I turned my head, Yihi was flying towards me.

"What's going on?"

I immediately used magic power to block the area around me. I needed to be careful about surveillance. It would be a hassle if the 'work' I was planning was passed onto the enemy.

Yihi wiped her forehead with one hand and opened her mouth.

“Master. Yihi just received a communication. It was from Chrisley. Yihi wondered what it was...”

"Don't be afraid to tell me."

"The magician of the moon has been captured."

"I see."

I nodded.

The magician of the moon!

It was as I thought.

I suspected that Upa wouldn't bring the magician of the moon to this place due to his instability, so I had been planning to catch the magician of the moon.

Fortunately, my plan seemed to be working. The magician of the moon had been found.

'I'm not sure what they want but...'

The grand dukes' special event.

I still wasn't exactly sure what it was.

They wanted me for a specific purpose.

I was uncertain due to this part.

But at least I knew what I could get my hands on.

I looked beyond the horizon. There was no room for rest. The area was filled with dark smoke and blood. The angels were being pushed back. Upa and Ariel's offensives were very sharp.

If the angels were destroyed then Hash would be threatened. I was worried but I didn't mind at all.

'The angels aren't idiots.'

They wouldn't always be pushed. I had learned about the angels from Hash. The number of deaths was regrettable but they caused considerable damage to the demons.

I searched for something.

Soon I touched a sharp arrow. It was the item that 0001 had given me.

The legend ranked 'Moon Arrow.'

It was an essential item to take care of the magician of the moon ‘Gustarte.’

I didn’t know what this arrow would do.

My next move would depend on whether he was successfully bound or not.

“I need to move from this spot for a while.”

“Huh? Do you plan to look around? Yihi thinks...”

I looked around me. In addition to Upa, the other grand dukes had a lot of creatures left. It would be difficult if they noticed my movements.

But I couldn’t not move.

“Call Oswen. He will take care of the rest.”

"Yes, Master. I just need to call him?"

Yihi flapped her wings.

"I believe that you will do it well."

Pahat!

I took out a teleport scroll and tore it. I blocked the flow of magic power in this area but this scroll was a special grade. There was a disadvantage of not being able to move far, but I could move quietly without disturbing the flow of magic power.

After a while, I quietly disappeared. The only one remaining was the confused Yihi.

Chapter 211: Gustarte (3)

“Master?”

Yihi blinked.

She knew he used a teleport scroll. The problem was that it happened suddenly.

“Hiing. Where did he go without telling me?”

Yihi pouted. He had disappeared, leaving only the words ‘I believe in you’ behind. He had shrugged when saying it but he had faith in Yihi.

“Ah! This isn’t the time. Don’t I need to call Oswen?”

Yihi clapped and quickly moved her wings. Anyway, Oswen would know the whole story when she met him.

Oswen was sitting in the basement of the castle and taking a break.

“Oswen! This dead body!”

“I was killed by someone and became a skeleton...I’ve heard worst insults, Fairy-nim.”

"Master sent Yihi to you."

"Why?"

"Yihi doesn't know. Master suddenly went somewhere."

Yihi shook her head.

Oswen was frustrated by her answer.

"You don't know?"

Oswen worried about it for a moment.

"I can roughly guess, but I wonder if Fairy-nim can do it well..."

"What? Yihi can do it well!"

"Really? Then I'm glad. Fairy-nim must imitate Master."

"Huh...?"

"You have to transform. Can you fool the enemies? If they discover that Master isn't here then they might wonder what he is doing."

Yihi's eyes widened.

Oswen laughed at her reaction.

"Are you not confident?"

"Ah, no, Yihis confident. But how can Yihis imitate Master when Yihis so small?"

"I have a way."

"You have a way?"

"Who am I? I am Oswen, Master's left arm. Of course, Fairy-nim is his right arm. I will make Fairy-nim so perfectly like Master that no one will notice."

After a moment, Oswen pulled out a book.

"This book contains a lot of details about Master. The book will change you into the person written in it."

"Uhh, eung..."

"Then shall we begin?"

Oswen opened the book. After reciting a few words, a grey light surrounded him.

After three minutes, Yhi looked exactly like Randolph Briggsiel.

Even the flow of magic power was similar. It should have been able to deceive the creatures. It was unknown if Yihi could pull off the role but...

Oswen would later reconsider having Yihi play the role, but the water had already been spilled.

The magician of the moon, Gustarte, was strong. It was natural. He was a god.

A god.

A unique being that was called divine and immortal.

It was natural that a mortal had no chance of beating him.

But Gustarte was under the control of a mortal. He was extremely unstable from losing his sense of ego. In other words, it meant he was only half a god. A god was a unique type of being. The spirit had to be intact.

It was easier to say that he was located between a mortal and an immortal.

So it didn't necessarily mean a mortal was doomed to perish against him. The problem was the method.

After the location was determined, Chrisley moved with powerful creatures. She gathered all the high class creatures and those with good maneuverability.

Then she started to move once all the grand dukes gathered at Greenwich Observatory.

Gustarte was with another demon.

Earl Rakikan!

He was one of Upa's dependable subordinates and his creatures were quite high level.

"We will block all external magic power."

Chrisley said. She pulled out a small bottle. The bottle was opened and she scattered powder on the ground.

The powder traveled in every direction and soon a thin wall was formed. The length reached dozens of kilometres.

"Using my magic power, the duration is three hours. We must lure in Gustarte."

“Do it. Win!”

The first one to answer was a titan. The 100 creatures around it stomped their feet like they understood. The hydra was also behind it.

Chrisley raised her wand.

The reason for this operation was simple.

To prevent communication with the outside. It was highly likely that Rakikan would send a message to Upa once they started to move.

Chrisley had to move with that possibility in mind. They had to move carefully and succeed in this mission.

The price of this powder was enormous. Even Dungeon Master suffered when buying it.

If he failed...the risk was too big.

Greenwich Observatory was very dangerous right now. Dungeon Master had a considerable shortage of creatures around him. It was due to the fact that all the high class creatures were here.

She wanted to be there but Dungeon Master said that her help

was necessary for this operation to be a success.

If so, she had to succeed.

“The first goal is to kill the demon Rakikan. Keep that in mind.”

Fire burned in Chrisley’s eyes.

She subsequently said.

"Then let's get started.”

Kuoooooh!

The nine hydra heads roared at once.

Kung! Kung!

The other creatures advanced.

Earl Rakikan.

All the strong creatures were gathered here.

The magician of the moon was a variable but if they got rid of Rakikan quickly, there would be no one to control him. Then they

could take care of the rest of the creatures.

'Everything is for the sake of My Dungeon Master.'

Chrisley's 'Death Wand' fluctuated due to her will.

Earl Rakikan.

He was the 5th rank demon in Upa's faction. It meant he was right after the dukes.

But he couldn't attend the important meeting. He needed to control the mysterious magician of the moon, Gustarte. It was unknown what would happen if Gustarte was left alone so he needed a watcher.

Rakikan was aware that this was important, but he still wanted to attend the meeting.

"I can't help feeling regret. It sounds like a pretty interesting situation."

Rakikan sat in a small castle and sipped wine. It was boring. It was obvious that most of the demons were gathered in one place so he was unlikely to receive an attack.

"Should I go and see the situation a little bit...? I can use this guy to take care of some demons."

These were his true intentions.

Anyway, there was no possibility of an enemy striking.

Only the device was needed to control Gustarte.

He didn't understand why a senior demon needed to be used for something like this.

"I know Upa-nim's real intentions but it is really boring."

He drank all of the remaining wine.

Two creatures were fighting in front of him.

Chwiik!

Grrr!

An orc lord and bugbear!

The bugbear was an advanced 3Lv creature that was one level higher than the orc lord. However, the use of space was more important inside the castle. By taking advantage of the geographical features, the orc lord was slightly ahead.

Numerous creatures were gathered around to watch the fight.

This was entertainment. He didn't have anything to do so this would pass the time.

"The winner will be granted one wish. Whether it is females, weapons or a wider place to live in the dungeon."

Rakikan declared with a smile.

The creatures would fight harder if they were being paid.

Among the prizes, females or a higher floor in the dungeon were most desired. The closer they were to the top floor, the more magic power that was available. They could be more secure and breed powerful creatures. In addition, it meant getting Rakikan's favour.

If Rakikan sat on the left or right side of the devil then the creatures in his dungeon would also receive benefits.

The tribes were able to receive wider land and were guaranteed stability. Their species could keep on multiplying.

In many ways, the creatures also had dreams.

Chwack!

Gueeeeeeh!

After a life and death struggle, the orc lord won over the bugbear. The orc lord immediately tore off the bugbear's head.

Chwaruk!

Duk!

The bugbear's head rolled on the ground and soon the huge body collapsed.

"What is your name? Unlike the bugbears who don't think, you would have a name."

"I am Iron-eating Lion."

The orc lords had pretty high intelligence. They were able to speak easily.

"Iron-eating Lion. You have won a few times and now it is time to fulfill your desire. What do you wish for?"

"Red Wolf, fend off, please."

"The Red Wolf tribe?"

"We, the Iron Lion, confront our tribe."

Rakikan touched his jaw.

Cases like this didn't often happen.

Frankly, the orcs were often lacking from Rakikan's viewpoint. They wanted to replace each other but also used some ambiguous methods. Using 'survival' through fighting like this was also considered a honourable method.

It might be that the other tribe had a similar strength and defeating them wasn't easy.

'It might not be bad.'

It was already asked. A demon could forget that he made a promise, but this was something he did due to boredom. He didn't want to kill the tribes.

"Okay. The location of the Red Wolf orc tribe will be on the 6th floor in the future. Meanwhile, the Iron Lion tribe will be placed on the 14th floor."

"Thank...you!"

Rakikan's dungeon consisted of 20 floors.

Among them, the 14th floor wasn't a place they could live in unless the creatures were pretty high level.

It was a great reward so the orc lord was thrilled.

‘Once I return to the Demon World, I will create a separate dungeon.’

Rakikan laughed. Running a dungeon was quite fun. He wanted to repeat that fun in the Demon World.

Kuuong!

The dungeon convulsed.

“...What is going on?”

Chapter 212: Gustarte (4)

He quickly realized that someone was attacking.

But it was strange.

None of the emergency devices were working.

All the creatures gathered here were silent.

“Sniff Sniff! What happened?”

Rakikan called his fairy.

A fairy called Sniff Sniff appeared with a hand on his nose.

“Sniff! T-the enemy is here, sniff! They came!”

“The enemy? Show me the situation.”

“Sniff sniff! Wait a minute!”

The fairy Sniff Sniff took out a heavy crystal ball. After a moment, the crystal ball revealed an image of the intruders.

At the same time, Rakikan’s face distorted.

“...I have to contact the grand duke.”

"T-that, magic power isn't flowing out, sniff!"

“What?”

“Sniff!”

Sniff Sniff turned restlessly.

He had nothing more to say.

Rakikan frowned. He didn't know what they did but something seemed to be blocking the magic power from going outside. It was impossible to contact anyone.

There was no other way. There were a few items at the Demon World Auction that would help in this situation, but he hadn't bought them.

"It can't be helped...gather all the creatures together. I just need to defeat them directly.”

Rakikan made a decision.

The enemies invading were very different from the humans.

He had no confidence in stopping them.

Rakikan's gaze naturally turned in one direction.

‘I might have to unlock Gustarte's seal.’

He didn't know what the aftermath would do to his dungeon, but it was better than losing it to the enemy.

Especially when considering the ones hitting the dungeon.

The dark elf he saw at the Demon World Auction. Was her name Chrisley?

And Chrisley accompanied only one demon.

‘Randalph Brigsiel!’

He had struck him in the back of the head.

What was his purpose?

“Quickly!”

"Yes! Sniff.”

Rakikan gritted his teeth.

Was this what it felt like when an enemy came to his front yard and he couldn't stop it?

Chrisley had some sympathy for him.

A good army. She had brought more than half of Dungeon Master's power, so there was no way Rakikan could stop them. This was a force that would threaten a duke or even a grand duke. Chrisley was convinced as she had looked around the dungeons of the grand dukes.

It took less than half an hour for them to pass through half of the 20 floors. One hour passed rapidly.

"The remnants..."

Chrisley clicked her tongue while looking at the outer wall of the dungeon. It was due to the discovery of a creature who escaped the dungeon and was flying through the sky. It was inevitable that the creature would deliver the news to Grand Duke Upa.

Chrisley couldn't allow it to leave.

She raised her wand and a black crow flew quickly. It instantly snatched the flying type creature. As a result, communication with

the outside was completely cut off.

‘A matter of time. The only thing left is to lure Gustarte.’

In the first place, she never paid attention to Rakikan’s defense. Chrisley was completely focused on Gustarte, the mysterious magician of the moon.

Dungeon Master told her to be careful. He was an opponent she couldn’t be defenseless against. He was a powerful opponent that was even a match for Dungeon Master.

She needed to move cautiously.

All the possibilities needed to be accounted for in order to catch him.

That would start from this point onwards.

It would take a certain amount of sacrifices. However, achieving the goal with minimal damage was also important.

The army gathered here was a significant portion of Dungeon Master’s forces. If they were lost then it would be a huge blow.

At least...it was obvious that Dungeon Master would be on the defensive. She didn’t doubt that he would rise above all the hardships if such a thing happened, but such a situation didn’t

need to be created. She would do her best to get the optimal results.

Kwarurung!

The dungeon shook tremendously.

The high class creatures and Rakikan's army were finally colliding.

'I have to prepare.'

Chrisley pulled out some small stones. They were stones that could contain magic power.

Garnak the King of Death. Chrisley had inherited his strength.

However, his strength was quite unusual. The magic power was gathered for special situations like this. It would deal a big blow to her.

After it woke up in her, she gathered it little by little. However, she decided to release it all this time. It was enough magic power to even take down a great number of high class creatures.

She set up camp on the ground. She took out three wands and created magic circles.

The short preparations were over.

Now...she just had to wait for the end of the battle.

‘How many minutes will they hold out for? 10 minutes? 20 minutes?’

They pushed ahead with pure force. She didn’t like it very much but it was efficient.

Dungeon Master valued swiftness and efficiency. It was hard to manage many dungeons, but it wasn’t strange for grand dukes to have one or two more.

And Chrisley’s expectations weren’t that far off the mark.

15 minutes later, the dungeon became silent.

The battle was over. There were no more creatures left to attack them.

‘Now I have to lure Gustarte.’

Half of the plan was successful.

However, in the meantime...Chrisley frowned.

She was reading the flow of a vast amount of magic power. The magic power was very pure and intense. It was enough to even break the shield protecting the dungeon!

Kwaruk!

A short, thick sound.

The 20th floor disappeared without a trace.

The sky was black and there was a huge moon.

It meant Gustarte's seal had been released.

Kuaaaaang!

The first thing that fell from the top floor of the dungeon was the titan. It slammed into the ground, causing it to shake like an earthquake had occurred.

Its chest was moving up and down like it was breathing, so the titan didn't seem to be dead. One arm had disappeared.

"How?"

It was obvious that it was the work of Gustarte. She hadn't expected this type of impact.

Soon the high class creatures started to rampage. The griffin aimed lightning and flames while the hydra restored the seven heads that were cut off.

Rakikan and his subordinates couldn't be seen anywhere.

'I can't stay still.'

At this point, she no longer needed to block her magic power. She gathered her magic power and channeled it into the three circles.

It wasn't unexpected.

Anyway, after Gustarte appeared, he was moved to the place where Chrisley was. The creatures recovered their spirits and moved according to the plan.

After gathering the magic power, Chrisley grabbed the small stones.

They were a secret weapon that Dungeon Master made directly from secret materials. It wasn't long before Gustarte would arrive here.

'The creatures need to buy some time.'

The three magic circles shone. Her magic power was amplified

and exploded. Chrisley moved the magic power into the little stones.

The stones devoured the magic power.

“Queen of the Sun and Moon.”

Chrisley cried out as the stones swallowed the magic power.

Her strongest skill.

Queen of the Sun and the Moon (Epic)!

When the two opposing magic powers were added to the stones, they repeatedly burned and cooled.

Now even Chrisley wouldn't be able to control the magic power contained in the stones.

If this continued then they would burst.

Chrisley turned her gaze towards Gustarte and used a skill.

Chiiiiing!

Soon, a laser-like beam shot out from the stones and reached Gustarte at a tremendous speed.

Swaaaaah!

Gustarte momentarily paused as the magic hit him.

It was contradictory since he normally ignored all physical attacks and skills.

Magic power poured out from the stones and bound Gustarte. This process was repeated many times in the blink of an eye.

‘There is an effect.’

It was the power of the stones. Chrisley instinctively realized that the stones would only stop him for a short period of time.

"Scatter!"

Once Gustarte's movements were stopped, the creatures urgently rushed away. They had to get out of the dungeon as soon as possible. Only the ones with good maneuverability were left behind.

‘Just a little bit more...’

Every now and then, Gustarte showed some little movements. It would only last dozens of minutes at best.

But there were no more methods. She just had to wait and hope.

Chapter 213: Gustarte (5)

The creatures succeeded in escaping the dungeon. At the same time, Gustarte got free and started acting. The scene was like a miracle as Chrisley's hands started sweating.

Since the ground-based creatures scattered, only the maneuverable airborne ones were left behind to lure Gustarte.

Dungeon Master was coming using the bone dragon's speed, so Gustarte had to stay trapped until then.

At the very least, the griffin and king wyvern would be able to keep up with Gustarte. There was even a bone dragon here.

It was funny that all this power was here, but they were only focused on distracting the opponent.

'That's it.'

Chrisley coolly commenced with the plan.

Gustarte had no idea after losing all his ego.

Even though they were luring him, he showed no signs of stopping.

The target place had hundreds of small stones scattered.

Gustarte entered this place.

If a few stones could seal his movements for dozens of minutes, hundreds would be able to semi-permanently seal him.

‘The giant slime is an item from the gods.’

Chrisley laughed at Gustarte from the back of the griffin.

A giant slime.

It was once a big headache for a duke’s dungeon and it was now Dungeon Master’s armour.

Greed!

A few remnants of it had been picked up. This was the identity of the stones. They might be the remnants of a fake Greed, but the stones were quite effective on Gustarte.

In Dungeon Master’s previous confrontation with Gustarte, he said that his armour wasn’t seriously damaged. He focused on that to create a method to counter Gustarte.

It was great in hindsight. They would have received serious damage without it. She really respected this part.

‘Success.’

Chrisley nodded.

They finally succeeded in attracting the target to the desired place.

It wasn't without damage, but the result was very good. Now everything would be perfect if the seal succeeded.

Chrisley thought of it as a huge mountain range. It was a spell that was invoked by the hundreds of Greeds planted throughout the mountain range.

And the spell was quite simple. The magic power of the stones was already connected to Chrisley.

Then Chrisley opened her mouth.

"Invoke."

Swaah!

The entire mountain range turned red. Intense light was emitted from hundreds of stones towards Gustarte. The magic spell surrounded Gustarte and greedily swallowed his magic power. The result was a great success.

I folded my arms. I stared at the place where Gustarte had collapsed.

The night sky had cleared up. The moon had lost its light. It was simply Gustarte.

"It has been a while."

I laughed.

I wasn't expecting an answer.

A god had fallen to the ground and seemed no different from a mortal. His body was shivering like a wet lamb.

‘Even though all the magic power is blocked, he still hasn’t gained his awareness as a god?’

It was questionable. In other words, it meant that magic power wasn’t controlling Gustarte. I wondered about the method to control a god.

I had met a big rabbit in the Reverse World. 0001 called it an ‘infection.’ The ‘program’ was a word that emerged from his mouth. It meant controlling Gustarte did simply involve magic power.

There was a slightly different, more unconventional way. It would be close to the secrets of the gods, meaning that Upa almost succeeded in tasting the fruit of the gods.

This happened in my previous life.

It was the strongest Ariel Diablo.

But in this life, Okullos and Upa were the ones involved.

I had directly punished Okullos but...if a similar thing happened again, I would have to be careful when striking Upa.

"Good job."

I turned and looked at Chrisley.

"I was just doing my job, My Dungeon Master."

Chrisley responded roughly. Her complexion made it seem like she was going to collapse soon. Some creatures were half dead before they managed to get Gustarte in the circle.

I wasn't greatly affected due to Infinity Armour. This was a phenomenon confirmed by several experiments. It was because Infinity Armour was made out of Greed's body.

“The damage?”

"Gigantes died and 30 advanced creatures were killed. There are approximately 20 seriously injured. Except for the dead, all the other creatures have succeeded in escaping."

Ho! My mouth formed a thin line. This was a great success. I honestly expected that I would lose more than half. It was obvious for a meeting like this.

However, the task was accomplished with far less damages than expected. Chrisley had played a large role in this.

Still, the death of Gigantes made me cold.

"It is regrettable since he was pretty loyal. Bury his body next to the Tree of Origin."

Chrisley went down on one knee.

"I will follow your command, My Dungeon Master."

"Make a comfortable spot for the rest of the dead creatures."

"Yes...!"

Joy appeared on Chrisley's face. Was it due to my attitude

towards the creatures?

Anyway, her performance was very commendable.

Those who made great achievements should have suitable rewards.

They would receive a burial place near the Tree of Origin.

Being buried at the Tree of Origin was considered a great honour among the creatures. I set the rule that this wasn't allowed for just anyone.

Thanks to that, I was able to achieve this level of admiration. It was a welcome thing for me. There wouldn't be any separate troubles.

'Middle rank god, Gustarte.'

I pulled out the Moon Arrow. He was half caught due to Greed so the arrow would surely work. I didn't know what the effect was, but the legend ranked item would surely do something.

Bururu!

The tip of the arrow trembled.

The key to solving the 'arrow' was in the arrowhead. It was a matter of seeing whether Gustarte's ego would be restored like 0001 said.

'If there is no effect...'

It would be good if that happened. There were many things I wanted to try with Gustarte. The body of a god was so rare that it couldn't be found anywhere else in the world.

'I'm sorry, but I can't keep my promise for now.'

I laughed and put the Moon Arrow away again.

I made a promise with 0001, but a time wasn't set.

I wouldn't fulfill my promise to use the Moon Arrow until I fully experimented with Gustarte's body that was a god.

'There is a familiar feeling to him. This feeling...the Hell Monarch.

He wasn't sane right now, but he somewhat resembled the Hell Monarch.

My heart was beating wildly so it wasn't unrelated.

However, the Hell Monarch was someone who failed to become a god.

Now a real god had fallen in front of my eyes so I wanted to know the reason why.

I changed my mind.

I originally intended to use the arrow, but not anymore.

The secrets of the gods were also interesting. In addition, I intended to figure out the method that Upa used. It was necessary to dig the secrets out of Gustarte.

‘I will get his body.’

I turned back to Chrisley.

"Tie him up using Greed's stones. Drag him to the dungeon for separate research. Leave it with the lich, but you should participate."

"I will do so, My Dungeon Master."

"It is only my guess, but you should be able to obtain a lot if you study Gustarte. The lich will like it."

Gaparam, the lich studying the homunculus, would joyfully jump at this chance. Creating a true homunculus was challenging the realm of the gods. He couldn't get anywhere without seeing a god itself.

Furthermore, it would be a good experience for Chrisley in many ways.

"My Dungeon Master. Are there any specific areas of research that you want?"

I stopped a smile from forming. Her eyes seemed pretty interested. Based on Chrisley expressing these words, it seemed like there was an experiment she wanted to try.

"Just dig into the secrets of the gods, including how Upa managed to control him. Add this to the research."

Chrisley was overflowing with motivation. I pulled out the Moon Arrow again and handed it to Chrisley.

"I feel an amazing divine power."

"The Moon Arrow is an item. It is legend grade and originally intended for Gustarte. If this arrow touches Gustarte's body then his condition should improve. However, that should only be done at the end. We can't study him if he recovers his divinity."

"I will keep that in mind."

"This arrow should be investigated separately."

"Yes."

Chrisley nodded to all my words. Chrisley liked research so she didn't mind being given this mission.

I had no doubt that there would be a good outcome. I didn't mind even if there weren't significant results. The secrets of a god weren't that easy to find.

"I will return to Greenwich Observatory. Wait for my return at the dungeon."

"...Please be safe."

"No one will harm me."

"I know."

She didn't doubt my strength. No matter what dangerous situations arose, I had the power to protect myself. Chrisley was well aware of this.

After I confirmed that Gustarte was restrained, I turned around.

I couldn't leave my position there for too long.

And this uneasy feeling wouldn't go away.

Yihi stood on the clock tower of Greenwich Observatory in the guise of the Dungeon Master. The Dungeon Master had crossed arms and a stern expression, but there was a sense of discomfort when looking closer.

Oswen advised 'don't say anything and stay calm', but it was unclear if she could follow those instructions.

Moreover, the surrounding gazes were irritating.

'Hiing...'

Yihi inwardly cried out. Her mouth drooped down a little bit. It was awkward due to the unfamiliar body and she couldn't even stand properly.

Creatures were hiding all over the castle. Now they were simultaneously staring at the Dungeon Master. There seemed to be dozens, perhaps hundreds.

Their gazes were casual so it was like she was sitting on a thorny cushion. Yihi couldn't be blamed for feeling uncomfortable.

"Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel."

Then someone suddenly appeared next to her. A silver knight with a white emblem! It was one of Ariel Diablo's aides that she had seen a few times.

Yihi involuntarily swallowed her saliva. She didn't know what to do in this situation. She hadn't been aware that someone would casually walk over and just talk to her.

Yihi's face distorted before returning to normal.

“.....?”

She didn't say anything.

Now she had no choice but to follow Oswen's words to stay silent.

‘Master is taciturn so it doesn't matter.’

Besides, this was the position of a grand duke. There was no need to be friendly to an opponent.

"Excuse me, but when are you going to move? Ariel Diablo said that you wouldn't continue to stay here. Unless there is a special reason.”

“.....”

It felt like thorns had entered her mouth. She wanted to answer but she knew her own bad habits. She couldn't stop herself from saying 'Yihi!'

'Oh my god.'

'Master saying Yihi!' She couldn't even imagine it.

She didn't even want to imagine him with such a habit.

The silver knight continued talking as there was no response.

"She added that staying here means you won't have any good intentions. I hope that we can continue our good relationship with Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel. Please tell us why you have blocked the nearby magic power. For a moment, it seemed like you were going somewhere else and didn't want to be tracked..."

It was very blatant. The question being asked was very blatant. And the silver knight was waiting for an answer.

'Tell me what you were doing.' How should she answer? At any rate, Yihi was certain that the silver knight wasn't stupid.

There was no answer so the silver knight took one step back.

"If you don't say anything then I will tell Ariel Diablo."

".....!"

Yihi's eyes twitched.

If the opponent received the wrong meaning then an irreversible misunderstanding might occur. No, it was likely to happen!

Ariel Diablo hadn't showed any intentions to touch Master. She acted friendly towards him. But what would happen if the opponent's attitude changed? Master was sure to scold Yihi.

Therefore, Yihi tried to speak as sternly as possible.

"I...for a moment...went to drink honey water. Yihi."

Chapter 214: Ark (1)

“.....?”

The silver knight hesitated. Leaving the position to grab honey water didn't make sense. If he wanted then his subordinates would instantly grab honey water for him.

Furthermore, he added 'Yihi' to his sentence. The silver knight couldn't help feeling misgivings.

Yihi swiftly realized her mistake and explained.

"Hum hum, it was for Yihi. Yihi! I, my lovely fairy."

“Lovely?”

The silver knight showed signs of distrust. Confusion was also visible.

Grand Duke Randolph Briggsiel. As of now, he was the most famous of the demons. As a demon, he wasn't the type to use the word lovely.

However, Yihi didn't pay attention to the silver knight's reaction and improvised.

"Listen well to my words. My Yihi! I...she is the best fairy."

“...I understand.”

The silver knight had nothing more to say. She had made a decision.

"Then...I will tell Ariel Diablo that Randolph Brigsiel left to get honey water for his lovely fairy Yihi.”

Yihi didn't sense the sarcasm and nodded. The silver knight stiffened with surprise.

"Can I really say that?"

Yihi quietly looked at the silver knight.

The silver knight didn't speak anymore.

‘There must be a reason for this behaviour. He is Randolph Brigsiel’ were her thoughts.

His appearance was so different from what had been seen before.

Out of all the demons, he was the one with the most overwhelming charisma.

It was natural to think there might be a trick.

Of course, Yihi had no idea and just wanted to praise herself while looking like Master. However, the silver knight obviously misunderstood.

The silver knight bowed and left.

“Yihihi.”

Now Yihi’s mouth loosened.

She was proud of herself for crossing that hill unharmed.

However, nobody knew what Ariel Diablo's reaction to this would be.

There was a little angel. He was looking down at the ground from the sky while wearing a crown made of grass. Around him, numerous angels were engaged in a fierce battle with the creatures.

But apart from that, the little angel had a very gentle look. His appearance was cute like a cupid, but a air of nobility was felt from him.

Hash was a top rank cherub.

At present, he was leading them on behalf of the angels and was

playing the role of commander. Even though he didn't know everything about strategy, the other angels helped clean things up nicely.

He was young, but the angel hierarchy was strict.

"93rd unit, destroyed by Upa Bullenon."

"77th unit, engaging in a fight with Ariel Diablo. Assemble all nearby troops."

"33rd unit..."

There were battles going on but they didn't forget to report back. Numerous commanding angels hurried to Hash and suggested what to do.

All Hash needed was to give consent.

Even if he couldn't speak, his will was naturally transmitted to them.

"Hash."

A thrones angel also in the upper hierarchy called Opinion talked to him. The angel with huge wings approached with a resigned expression.

As Hash shifted his glance, Opinion continued talking.

"The situation isn't good. I will lead the troops and punish the seeds of darkness."

Like his words, the worst situation was currently happening on the battlefield. In particular, Ariel Diablo and Upa Bullenon's presences were very difficult. The two grand dukes were annihilating the angels so the momentum was with them.

At this rate, the damage would only increase. It wouldn't be a bad choice for the thrones angel to move and try to overturn the situation.

Opinion confronting the grand dukes was an option.

Hash closed his eyes. It wasn't long after he was born but Hash absorbed everything faster than anyone else. He finished understanding the life and death battlefield, and realized what qualities were needed for a leader.

There were three types of angels in the upper hierarchy and the cherub was near the top. Only the seraphim and Celestial Ruler were higher than them.

There weren't only two seraphim's. There was one Celestial Ruler and Opinion was one of five thrones. Truly the best of the best. It was natural that his speed of learning would be extraordinary.

Even so, there was still a lack of experience. This was a battlefield that wouldn't even tolerate one mistake.

Right now a decision was needed.

And it needed to give the best outcome.

The best outcome was killing as many creatures and demons as possible.

He received a message from his master, Randolph Brigsiel.

Sending Opinion right now was the worst option. He needed to lead the battlefield until the end. Randolph Brigsiel was a warrior who knew more about the battlefield than Hash.

Hash couldn't stop here.

Hash opened his eyes.

As he felt thousands of eyes looking at him, Hash sent them a short message.

It was permission to use the 'Ark.'

After Grand Duke Upa swept through.

Yoo Eun-hye and her party were able to speed up a little more.

The road to reach the centre was hard and long, but they couldn't give up.

However, there were some regrets.

If they failed.

They regretted not taking out Upa and his demons when there was the chance.

It really was a golden opportunity while he was fighting the angels.

Upa and his demons wouldn't have noticed.

All the team members would have been swept away by the explosion, but they could have killed a grand duke and many demons.

'No. I can't give up Hope just to catch one of them.'

Yoo Eun-hye hardened her heart every time she felt this.

Sometimes creatures and angels moved like they were scouting.

There was no need for the party to worry too much. Angels wouldn't attack humans first and the creatures wandering weren't strong.

“At this rate, we will arrive at our destination in three hours. Our ultimate goal is to plant Hope at the destination and return as quickly as possible. There must be no one who falls behind.”

Yoo Eun-hye spoke from the front. She had given this warning several times.

Three hours.

Three hours spent in hell.

Everything around them was the enemy. There were many opponents they couldn't afford to cross.

If their luck was bad enough to get caught by a scout, they could lose both Hope and their lives.

Yoo Eun-hye continued encouraging her team members.

The story that they could win, that they were humanity's hope.

It didn't alleviate the grim atmosphere.

It had been too shocking. The sight of Upa wiping out the angels alone. It was enough to plant the perception of being untouchable in the hearts of the humans.

“Wait...what is that?”

"What?"

The party stopped moving. Everyone was looking at one point with their mouths wide open. They were highly trained elites. Yet Yoo Eun-hye and the members were all amazed at what they saw.

It floated in the sky.

Even though it was a considerable distance away, the object was so big that it was visible to the naked eye.

“It is...a ship.”

Kim Yura said with a strange expression.

That’s right. A ship.

A wooden ship floating in the sky!

It looked like a normal ship, except for the fact that it was big enough to cover the sun.

‘Please don’t be a bad sign.’

Yoo Eun-hye barely suppressed her sigh as she stared at the sky.

Unexpected things kept on happening.

She was extremely worried about whether they could reach their destination safely.

Upa shifted his gaze from the angel whose wings he was tearing towards the sky.

"Something moderately interesting showed up."

Upa laughed roughly. He had been bored hunting ordinary angels. His opponents were only mid-rank angels and soldiers, with no high ranking angels being sent out.

It tasted of hunting.

The plan was obviously to consume a lot of his energy.

However, Upa followed this plan despite it being obvious.

He thought that the real opponents would come out if he kept on slaughtering the angels.

And...it seemed like the real thing had now appeared.

"Turn around. From now on, I will take over the ship."

There were some cerberuses with black wings. The symbol of Upa, the huge castle Bullenon, was painted on their collars.

Upa's hundreds of thousands of creatures started to move.

There was a half smile on Upa's face.

He desired that ship. So he would capture it directly.

It was a ship made by angels, but he thought it would be temporarily useful while he didn't have Bullenon.

Upa already imagined standing in the centre of that ship.

"Ho..."

Ariel Diablo.

She had stopped hunting and was resting for a while.

The angels had only sent weak soldiers.

There was a huge difference between them so she lost interest.

She was just watching Upa hunt when a ship appeared in the sky.

Ariel Diablo raised her ivory sword. A sword made of balrog ivory.

A hazy bone armour was also around Ariel Diablo. The bone armour wrapped around her whole body and there was a long tail.

The bone helmet seemed to look like a dragon's head and her magic power naturally dominated the surroundings.

"Let's go. I deserve that angel ship."

“.....”

Cheek! Cheek!

The silver knights lined up behind her.

An answer wasn't required.

They only acted according to her will.

Ariel Diablo kicked off from the ground.

Wind blew up the dust as she instantly disappeared.

Chapter 215: Ark (2)

The Ark was a hidden card made by the angels. They gathered holy power and plants together to make it complete with wings. There were all types of magic and holy powers to stop the darkness, so the grand dukes' strikes wouldn't break it so easily.

There were 50,000 angels on the Ark. The angels started to fire the cannons on the Ark at the creatures.

Kung! Kwaang!

Those directly hit by the shells disappeared without leaving any traces behind. The airborne creatures attempted to attack from the sky, but the shield of holy power intercepted them. The evil creatures couldn't stand touching it and received wounds that couldn't be healed.

Even so, there were more high ranking creatures wiped out by the angels guarding the ship.

There were 20,000 angels protecting the ship. They wandered around the ship and killed any creature trying to pierce through the shield.

It was a dramatic reversal from the angels' previous state of being slaughtered.

“Dumb guys.”

Grand Duke Upa watched the ship. He was disappointed in the demons hitting the Ark.

Even though he had entrusted this task to them, not one of them was able to scratch the Ark. The capabilities of his demons seemed to be inferior when compared to the vassals of the other grand dukes.

‘I don’t like it.’

He had no favourites among the demons. The creatures were like consumable items, while the demons would be together with him until their deaths. Yet they were like this.

He needed competent subordinates.

‘In that sense, Gustarte is the best sword and shield for me.’

He would make Upa the best. Not a demon but a god. A demon becoming a god!

Just thinking about it made his body heat up.

Kwaang!

However, the sound of the Ark returned Upa to reality.

Dozens of wyverns were thrown to the ground. The other creatures were crushed to death because of the wyverns.

Of course, not all of his subordinates were useless.

Some high ranking demons were battling the angels.

There was someone who used the huge flying beast 'golgon' to push the Ark.

But there was no meaning to it if not all of his subordinates were competent. Upa personally didn't like this.

"Get out of the way. I will take care of it."

Upa immediately pushed aside the one commanding and came forward. He didn't like what he saw in front of him but he couldn't waste time.

He would use a blitz attack to finish it quickly.

It was best to start quickly and finish fast.

There were many ways to end it quickly but...

The best way was to show the overwhelming difference in

strength.

Hwiing!

Upa waved his hand and strong winds started blowing.

Soon dozens of typhoons emerged and danced around Upa's right hand.

A huge typhoon was creature once they were joined together.

"The ship looks good."

Upa rode the typhoon into the sky.

He felt some comfort that he would be able to obtain the ship in a good condition.

At that time...

Pandemonium and his army hadn't moved far from Greenwich Observatory. He had no interest in the fighting as his gaze was only directed towards the observatory.

Randolph Brigsiel was a significant demon. The angels weren't high risk compared to him. He had dealt with one of the grand dukes, Okullos. There was no guarantee he wouldn't act against

the other grand dukes.

As one of the oldest demons, Okullos was careful about everything. Some might say he was scared, but that cautiousness allowed him to maintain his position as grand duke for a long time.

‘Does he really hold the key?’

His mind with filled with other thoughts while he went through the motions of fighting the angels.

It started with the invitation, but the true beginning was the special event.

A few lines of words had appeared in front of all the grand dukes.

And then the assault of the angels started...

‘It isn’t clear.’

The first special event was the emergence of the angels. This assault might also be one. It seemed suspicious but he wasn’t sure how. He couldn’t erase the feeling that someone had deliberately created this situation.

Then he needed to look at who would gain the most from this.

‘Randolph Briggsiel.’

That guy. If the grand dukes’ troops were reduced then the most profitable one would be Randolph Briggsiel who had no faction.

However, the angels wouldn’t listen to a demon and they didn’t seem like they were being used.

So Pandemonium decided to save as much power as possible.

If Randolph Briggsiel did anything then he would be able to respond flexibly. Or Pandemonium would surround Greenwich Observatory and stop him from moving.

‘Humans.’

In the meantime, a dozen humans entered Pandemonium’s field of vision.

The intelligence of humans was amazing so there was no reason for them to not notice this battlefield. Still, it was strange.

‘Why would humans be here?’

Why would humans risk themselves to enter here?

Inferior organisms. All they could do was accept their fate.

Furthermore, the movements of the humans were careful.

It was clear that they were trying to do something.

‘I need to find out.’

Pandemonium raised his hand. It was necessary to find out about any ambiguous occurrences. Then he could align the unseen puzzle pieces.

He knew from long years of experience that it was better to be as careful as possible.

Kwaang!

Suddenly there was a sound from the sky. Huge flames hit the Ark.

The problem was where the flames were launched from.

Pandemonium turned his head.

"He is doing moderately well."

There was an unmistakable man not far from here.

Randolph Brigsiel!

Despite not being close to it at all, he had attacked the Ark. He thought Randolph Brigsiel would continue to stay in the castle.

“Pandemonium. Aren’t you interested in hunting the angels?”

That guy turned and proudly spoke to him.

It was natural for demons and angels to confront each other. A desire to hunt was also natural. It wasn’t surprising for him to be rebuked for not moving.

Yet Randolph Brigsiel was the one saying it.

He was someone who had only stayed in the castle so far!

"I want to have a good time. Don’t you think this isn’t as entertaining as the banquet?”

"Are you trying to play word games with me now?”

Pandemonium frowned. He didn’t want to get caught up in that guy’s pace. Randolph Brigsiel might be young but he was surprisingly tricky. He likely had a separate purpose for this conversation.

"It is a joke. Aren't we close friends?"

"Shut up if you are just going to continue with the useless barking. Come back after you hunt all the angels."

"If I can't then isn't it impossible for you?"

"Impossible...?"

Pandemonium's expression hardened.

He hadn't expected the conversation to head in this direction.

That's why Pandemonium thought the words were a joke.

"It will be a big deal if I take action."

"It doesn't seem like a big deal to me."

"You will see after finding the way back to the Demon World. If you're not lying then all the others won't stay still."

A smile suddenly appeared on that guy's face.

"Demon World...I won't have any regrets about going there."

“Right. You are just an idiotic demon who is alone. You don’t deserve to be formally called a grand duke.”

“But I see grand duke in my status window. How is that possible if it isn’t true?”

“It is a virtual one. The Demon World won’t recognize you as a grand duke.”

“I won’t stay as a grand duke forever. In that sense, our wills match.”

If he didn’t stay as a grand duke, it meant he would become the demon king.

He left after saying those leisurely words. It seemed like he was going to find a nice place to watch the battlefield.

“You...”

Pandemonium shook his head.

That guy had moved away from the castle so there was no reason to stay here. In any case, it was necessary to finish this fight quickly.

“I will start hunting the angels. Spread out.”

“As you command.”

“As you command.”

Pandemonium’s demons moved with their assigned creatures. Pandemonium was proud of the quality of his demons compared to the other grand dukes’. They were all competent and did the required work without him needing to order them.

After a while, only a handful of creatures and the doll-like demons taken from Okullos’ faction were remaining.

‘They won’t be able to endure.’

Pandemonium closed his eyes.

If he joined then the hunt would soon be over.

I shrugged.

It was a dangerous moment.

Pandemonium had noticed the humans. I knew exactly what they were carrying and what their plan was.

I had sent them Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji so that they could move as safely as possible.

‘I don’t know how much hope that bomb will be.’

Humans named it ‘Hope’ so it didn’t seem entirely useless.

Anyway, entering the battlefield was the right decision.

Thanks to that, I was able to confirm some good information from Pandemonium.

‘He must be looking for a way to the Demon World.’

The path to the Demon World!

This was possible if I could use Yihi. Perhaps it was the purpose of the special event. Yihi had the ability to move an opponent to the place they originally came from.

‘I wonder what happened to the Demon World. It must be very important for them to move in such a hurry.’

I slowly headed towards the centre of the battlefield like I was taking a walk while lost in thought.

I continued to speculate on Pandemonium’s words.

‘The demons won’t acknowledge me as a grand duke. In contrast,

the other grand dukes have enough forces to be acknowledged. In a nutshell...the strength of my forces isn't something that the Demon World can overlook.'

That's why I had to go back properly.

The power of the Demon World would support the winner when they became the devil. Without power, I would become a puppet devil. Or I would be hunted by other forces.

Therefore I had concentrated on growing my dungeons. They would become my power when I became the demon king.

'I got good information and stopped him from obtaining a clue.'

It was a rewarding experience.

I looked up at the sky.

I was able to confirm that Pandemonium had joined the battlefield.

...The hunting would end soon.

Unless a small conflict upset the balance.

Chapter 216: Hope (1)

The beginning was simple. Capture the Ark. However, a relationship between two people soon became a big obstacle.

Ariel Diablo. Upa Bullenon.

The two of them were at war.

They cut down each other's forces and plotted against each other.

After arriving here, it was tacitly agreed that they wouldn't fight.

But that was nothing more than putting out an urgent fire.

The fire roared up even bigger.

It wasn't a concern until it became a big problem.

The result was...

There were no surprising results.

The confrontation between the two was taken for granted.

In terms of sheer numbers, Upa was the winner. However, Ariel was far ahead in terms of quality. In addition, Ariel's faction were waiting nearby.

The simple confrontation between demons and angels spread in a totally different direction.

‘This is the most fun thing in the world.’

I was remaining still. Once this happened, the only one hunting the angels was Pandemonium.

It would be easy if all the grand dukes were facing one enemy, but Pandemonium was forced to take on the angels alone.

I...was a bystander.

I hadn't brought that many creatures here in the first place. Many had gone to face the magician of the moon and were injured. I decided to go watch the fight between Ariel Diablo and Upa Bullenon.

If I was noticed then I could just pretend to hunt the angels.

Besides, I was the only one who could open the path for them. I wouldn't be outright attacked just yet.

The fire spread and no one could stop it.

"Are you going to ride the angels' ship? It is only suitable for being burnt!"

Ariel was insistent. She had the bloodline of a devil and had a very bad opinion of angels.

"Isn't the angels' ship still a ship? It is very good. This bitch, your eyes are already rotten."

Upa didn't change his opinion.

Most of the angels on the Ark were removed.

Now the only decision remaining was to own or burn the ship.

But the differences in opinion between the two couldn't be narrowed.

It wasn't a big deal, but the grand dukes had a lot of pride. They had no hesitation about fighting between each other.

"A way to solve this problem exists traditionally. Upa Bullenon, I will end you here."

Ariel Diablo raised her ivory sword.

Balrog. A sword made from the ivory of one of the strongest creatures! It was the balrog's bad luck that it was said to have been destroyed by the devil due to its strength. Their population was low so I was curious about how she obtained this sword on Earth.

"Okay. I will welcome any fight from this bitch."

Upa laughed wildly, revealing his teeth.

Hundreds of thousands of troops emerged simultaneously.

Ariel Diabo's army numbered approximately 5,000. Even if there was a qualitative difference, it was hard to bridge this absolute number difference. In other words...this was likely to be Ariel Diablo's grave!

"Visach Mentam. You will take the vanguard."

He was one of the dukes. Upa put him in the front as a vanguard.

The huge Ark had crashed to the ground. A huge war between Ariel and Upa was occurring.

A demon fight was very simple.

Gather, fight, crush.

It was the tradition of the demons to pour all their power in until the opponent was completely destroyed. There were rarely any fights on a small scale.

It might be like a duel between nobles, but an aspect involved a war of attrition.

Now the two of them had started a 'traditional' fight.

In conclusion, they would end up using all their strength.

Upa had overwhelming numbers but I guessed the odds of him winning as 6:4. The difference in numbers couldn't be ignored and I could see that Upa's side was a little superior. However, Ariel wouldn't have decided to fight if she didn't think there was a chance of winning.

'Good.'

This couldn't be better for me.

Both of their strengths would be shaved for me.

One person might be able to fight back but the damage would be considerable.

If so, it wouldn't take Pandemonium that long...he also couldn't afford to deal with the angels alone. Perhaps the one most

confused about this situation right now was Pandemonium.

Thanks to me, he couldn't stand still and engaged in an all-out war with the angels.

It was clear that the angels had glimpsed an opportunity in the battle between the two grand dukes.

I expected that there might be a conflict, but I didn't think it would explode like this. I was satisfied and would love to watch this fight. However, I felt like I had to go to the next step.

‘Then...’

I turned my head away.

I was looking at a little figure covered in a cloak behind me.

“Rose.”

She took it off when I called out her name.

Rose.

The dark elf female that was Roy's twin.

Originally she should be in Korea but I specifically called her.

Rose grinned after her head was revealed by the cloak.

“Yes Master.”

“Follow me.”

“Yes Master.”

"Be on the lookout for the rest of the angels. There is no need to actively fight. White will lead the saber tigers and attract the angels here."

There were hundreds of newly born white tigers that grew rapidly in the dungeon. As one of the main creatures, I decided to use White and the saber tigers as bait.

I intended to attract the angels to this place and make the fight between the two even more dramatic.

I had brought approximately 3,000 creatures to Greenwich Observatory. Most of them were intermediate to advanced level creatures. There were many saber tigers mixed in among them.

There wouldn't be any difficulties in carrying out the operation.

Grrung!

White briefly cried out.

Then he quickly disappeared from my field of view.

Not to be outdone by him, I also moved.

‘Now it is time for the item to be delivered.’

My cheeks were itchy with impatience.

I needed the humans’ Hope to achieve another purpose. By now, they should have reached their goal at Greenwich Observatory.

The situation on the battlefield was urgent.

So Yoo Eun-hye was forced to move faster.

There was a battlefield where it was difficult to predict even one second ahead. A field where kings were fighting.

There was a high possibility that they would become caught in the middle. Being caught up in it would just cause their deaths.

"There is an underground passage that is connected to the basement of Greenwich Observatory. There won't be many creatures and we can leave after installing Hope in the centre. Only

a bit more to go.”

The place where they were currently standing was a ruin. However, there was a gap between the buildings. That gap was the underground passageway connected to Greenwich Observatory.

Yoo Eun-hye and her team started removing the wreckage. Afterwards, they entered the passageway without releasing any of their tension.

The passage was naturally dark. If they weren't Awakened then they wouldn't have been able to see in front of them. Thanks to going beyond the limits of a human, they were able to find their way in the dark.

'The communication got cut off.'

Their line to the guild master Kim Yong-woo was disconnected. Yoo Eun-hye ignored it and just focused on the darkness around her. From now on, no outside assistance should be expected.

They had to overcome this ordeal by themselves.

Duk. Duuk.

Their footsteps could be heard.

Ssik! Squeak squeak!

There was a lot of rainwater and rats. It seemed like this place had been abandoned for a long time.

Yoo Eun-hye had seen so many horrible things that she wasn't surprised by rats anymore. She moved while preparing for any attacks from creatures.

‘There is no reason for them to not know about the passage under the observatory.’

That's why she couldn't release her tension.

If she built a castle then it would have an underground area.

She would know all the places connected to the underground and would put guards on it in advance. It wasn't strange.

But...no matter how far they went, no creatures could be seen.

The only living organisms were rats.

‘Is it this easy?’

She frowned. No creatures had emerged in this long passage. There were no defenses at all.

‘Trap?’

It was a possibility. However, demons wouldn't bother waiting for a trap. Rather, it was more convenient and effective to place a few creatures to protect the underground.

“Noona, I don't have a good feeling.”

Edward spoke carefully.

"There are no creatures.”

"Even if there are none...I don't feel good.”

"There is no other road but this one. It is impossible to enter Greenwich Observatory from the normal methods.”

She also didn't have a good feeling.

Yoo Eun-hye turned her head and looked at the team members once again.

They all had nervous expressions on their faces.

Now was the peak of their mission.

And...Kim Yura's expression was dark in another manner.

Apology? Guilt?

‘She is probably just nervous.’

There was no time to dig into the details.

Yoo Eun-hye turned back to the front and started moving forward.

She had memorized the path of the passage in advance.

There were no obstacles blocking their path.

At that time, they heard a voice in the darkness.

"Stop."

At first, she mistook it for a hallucination. But the voice of a woman clearly entered their ears.

“I told you to stop.”

On the other side of the passage.

They were almost at their target when someone showed up.

Yoo Eun-hye and Edward's eyes widened as they saw the person.

The others were puzzled and vigilant. But for Yoo Eun-hye and Edward, that presence wasn't normal.

Chapter 217: Hope (2)

“Rose-nim...?”

"Yes, it's been a while."

Rose completely removed her cloak as she came closer.

The young lady was holding a long scythe in one hand.

Yoo Eun-hye asked with amazement.

"Why is Rose-nim here?"

"Master told me to come. Yes? By the way, am I scary? Why are you so cautious?"

"Rose-nim shouldn't be here. Or...did you come with the Saviour?"

Rose was confused.

“Saviour? Ahhh ~ that is him. By the way, is that big thing Hope?”

Rose pointed towards one of the team members with her scythe. Two members were carrying something.

But Yoo Eun-hye tensed up even more at Rose's words.

Why did she know the name Hope? Only a very small number of people, including Kim Yong-woo, knew that name.

Yoo Eun-hye formed tight fists and said.

“...That's correct.”

"Wah ~ really? Master, it is correct!"

Rose turned her head and cried out.

Who was behind her?

Yoo Eun-hye's question was answered in a matter of seconds.

A shadow showed up behind Rose.

Yoo Eun-hye was shocked after seeing the shadow.

“You...!”

It was a man wearing a skull mask. A key figure in the guild who always disappeared, yet would reappear whenever they needed

him.

People kept on saying he was dead. He had a tendency to move alone until he finally died when exploring a dungeon. Another time was due to a monster wave. At any rate, the majority of people thought he was dead.

Since then, Korea was invaded by demons and overwhelmed. Countless people died and cities were destroyed. Every time, Yoo Eun-hye and other Awakened always thought he would return.

He always appeared when they were facing danger. But he did not appear.

The demons unleashed a large number of creatures and devastated Korea.

So his presence was slowly forgotten.

"It has been a while. Yoo Eun-hye, Edward Windsor."

The man took off his mask.

At that moment, Yoo Eun-hye's eyes shook.

‘Ah...!’

That face, she was sure of it.

There was no mistaking it.

It was a face she had memorized and seen many times.

He was the one who found Yoo Eun-hye and built up her foundation.

The man who led her from the front.

He also caused Edward's talents to bloom.

"Alive...you are alive."

Yoo Eun-hye spoke with as much calm as possible. She wasn't her old self. The playful and bright Yoo Eun-hye had become an adult. She was a warrior who knew how to compromise with reality and fight coldly. Now she had the role of leading the party.

"Many things have happened."

His voice was different.

A heavy bass. A cold expression.

His arrogant eyes that looked down on everything.

She was pleased but couldn't crumple. Randolph Briggsiel had been her idol. However, he was already dead.

Maybe he was revived through a demon's plot.

It didn't matter if his appearance was the same.

It was now customary to have doubts first.

"Captain-nim?"

One of the members asked Yoo Eun-hye as they stepped forward. They noticed that an unusual atmosphere had formed.

The members who didn't know the relationship between those two or Rose's identity were confused.

However, Yoo Eun-hye didn't hear their voices. She was sweating and trying to conceal the fact that her heart was beating wildly.

"Why are you here? How does Rose-nim...?"

"Why do you think?"

He asked. Yoo Eun-hye was confused.

Rose was one of the Saviour's children. The Saviour saved Korea and soon disappeared. Only Roy and Rose remained. People held up his children as kings. The influence of the two dark elves in South Korea could be considered the best.

‘...It isn't possible.’

Yoo Eun-hye's body trembled. It was like being hit by lightning.

She had considered it once in awhile. The Saviour hid his face. No one knew what he looked like. Yoo Eun-hye sometimes thought that the Saviour was ‘him.’ Randolph Brigsiel might have appeared like that on purpose.

But no matter how positive the thought was, it was unreasonable.

There were similar but slightly different parts. It wasn't simply referring to his appearance. To be honest...the person called the Saviour had a very atmosphere around him. Fear. There was something about him that touched their primitive instincts. Sometimes it was horrifying to see his indiscriminate slaughtering of creatures.

Randolph Brigsiel had a different atmosphere.

And their capabilities were different. Although the leader of the Devil Hunters had been the strongest human, he wasn't at the level of the Saviour.

The dark elves...demons or creatures.

The Awakened, including Yoo Eun-hye, were convinced that the Saviour was one of those existences.

Even so, none of them said anything. The civilians had no power. They needed to have faith and hope to rebuild Korea. If he could make them stand up then they wouldn't question the Saviour's identity. It was a secret they would keep inside them forever.

However, the captain of Devil Hunters had been a human. She believed he was a human.

He was violent, but Yoo Eun-hye thought he was different from a demon. So far, demons and creatures had never compromised with humans. Korea had only one dungeon but that was changed due to the invasion by other demons. The floors disappearing played a pivotal role.

So the captain couldn't be the Saviour. It was too far-fetched.

‘Master, Saviour...’

Yoo Eun-hye considered Rose's words.

But...she just couldn't know.

Her body shook and her eyes rapidly moved. If those two were the same person...

“It seems like Kim Yong-woo hasn’t said anything.”

The man said.

Kim Yong-woo?

The guild master knew something?

It sounded like he knew and was deliberately hiding it from them.

The man had a cynical smile on his face as he spoke.

“I was the one who gave the warning that the demons would gather.”

“The British leaders...”

“Humans tend to hide their own dirty linen. By the way...”

It seemed like he had confirmed something as he asked Yoo Eun-hye.

“It looks like your growth is fine. Wasn’t the training room quite

helpful?”

“Ah...”

Flop!

Yoo Eun-hye’s legs weakened.

Only two words. But they were decisive. Yoo Eun-hye and the Saviour were the only ones who knew the meaning of those two words. The Saviour said that Yoo Eun-hye would know everything after she became stronger. His words were implying that this was the time.

"You...an ally?”

She barely managed to open her mouth.

It was natural to think that the Saviour would be a friend.

Yet she still felt anxious.

She couldn’t get rid of this anxiety that came from the deepest part of her heart.

She was glad but now everything was confusing.

If he turned into the enemy then nobody would be able to stop him. She thought that everything was playing into his hands.

“You...are you a demon, Randolph Briggsiel?”

The Saviour wasn't a human.

All the Awakened were sure of it.

There were some who believed he was an 'angel' or a 'god', but that was also uncertain.

When looking at the angels, the Saviour definitely couldn't be one. No holy power could be felt from him at all.

In contrast, a god...Yoo Eun-hye's belief in the gods was completely dead. She also ruled out the possibility that he was a god.

Creatures. They were the puppets of demons. They were affected by demons.

The rest...she hated to admit it, but there was only one option.

There were a few Awakened in Korea who thought the Saviour was a demon. They didn't want to believe it. They self-rationalized it.

More than anything else, the words wouldn't emerge from their mouths.

Human faith was surprisingly easy to collapse. And once faith collapsed, they were likely to feel despair.

In a world filled with despair, they tried to maintain a glimmer of hope.

Everyone knew it.

Now was the time to think about tomorrow and have hope.

Thanks to that, Korea was in the process of recovery.

‘Please.’

Yoo Eun-hye looked at him and swallowed her saliva.

It was okay if he was a human.

All his actions could be justified.

But what if he was a demon?

Everything he had done since the beginning would be different.

And he would have had an agenda for raising Yoo Eun-hye.

Her idol that she trusted in would turn into a betrayer. All his actions would need to be reconsidered. It certainly wasn't good...

Soon he opened his mouth.

“That's right.”

Chwang!

The members simultaneously pulled out their weapons.

The conversation was translated through magic items so everyone understood the meaning of 'demon.'

Demon!

A target that needed to be handled before the creatures.

No, if the demon could be eliminated then the creatures in the dungeon would naturally disappear.

And...no matter the situation, they had to destroy the demons.

“S-stop. Don’t attack him.”

Yoo Eun-hye barely recovered and tried to stop the members.

However, they were members picked from different countries. They hadn’t originally followed Yoo Eun-hye. She was only temporarily the leader because she was the strongest.

Due to this, they were able to move independently.

"But there are only two opponents."

"It can't be helped."

“Captain Yoo Eun-hye! How can we not fight? The two of them are suspicious so did you deliberately lead us towards them?”

“It isn’t like that. Never!”

Doubts started to form. Even if Yoo Eun-hye denied it, the eyes of the members started to gradually change.

"Then please stay out of this. We can’t just let a demon get away after encountering them."

They wanted to kill all demons and creatures. If the opponent appeared then they would attack first.

It seemed like humans and demons could never compromise.

"Power of Heaven!"

"Enhanced Strength!"

"Blessing of Strength!"

The members used buff skills and rushed towards him.

It was something that Yoo Eun-hye couldn't stop.

She could only stay still.

Yet he didn't seem threatened at all.

A sardonic smile was on his face.

"I won't spare those who aim their swords at me."

He declared.

Soon, his words became reality.

Chapter 218: Hope (3)

The elite were selected. The Awakened that were praised as the world's best.

They were raised as secret weapons...

They knew how to fight.

The Awakened also knew how to fight against someone stronger than themselves.

They would be able to endure in any situation in order to produce the best results.

They were people designed to survive in even the most adverse conditions.

Thanks to that, they didn't know defeat and only felt pride in their abilities.

There were no opponents that they couldn't overcome over time, just like water eroding a rock.

However, that was all wishful thinking in front of this opponent.

Not rock, but harder than steel...they were facing a wall that they couldn't surpass.

“Cough!”

Death spread. There were those who couldn't even make a sound before dying. The thing they all had in common was that they ran towards the man with a weapon.

The man was cruel. He really shed no blood or tears!

He showed no mercy. One move would take a life. He didn't miss a single one of their movements. Still, he didn't show any reaction. His expression was just like he was 'playing with them.'

"Pharma's Arrows!"

There were only three people with weapons raised remaining.

A female with the occupation of archer used a skill. All of the magic power in the surroundings gathered on the arrowhead. It burned violently and intensely.

"Accurate Shot!"

A unique skill that anticipated the movements of the enemy.

Soon, the arrow went flying through the air.

Hwaruruk!

However, that was also useless.

The arrow was burned by a strong flame before even reaching the man's body.

".....!"

The Awakened with the bow widened her eyes. It was the first time that this technique had been blocked. However, that panic only lasted for a short moment. She quickly calmed her mind and prepared for the next attack.

No, she tried to prepare.

She placed her hand on the bow. It was the last thing she remembered.

Kwaduk!

Mysterious lightning popped out from the man. The lightning in the form of a dragon swallowed the woman and instantly turned her to ashes. It looked like a dragon eating its prey.

“Stop...! Stop now!”

Yoo Eun-hye shouted. Five people had died in only one minute. If she didn't do anything, then the surviving members would die. She couldn't help but realize that.

The man turned his head towards her. He looked interested.

“They are trying to kill me. What reason do I have to stop?”

"It isn't fair!"

"Why does fairness need to be involved in killing?"

His words were correct.

In the current world, there was little room for fairness when it came to death.

Those who thought about fairness would be buried in the ground.

The good died quickly and the wicked survived.

In this sense, Yoo Eun-hye was one of the few people remaining with a conscience.

"Isn't it too cruel that one mistake could cost them their lives? You have the capacity to show generosity."

Yoo Eun-hye admitted it.

He was the captain of Devil Hunters and the Saviour...along with the fact that he was a demon.

The team members couldn't understand his skill. He sometimes showed signs of some moves that he used in the past. Thus, she couldn't escape the reality.

Yoo Eun-hye rose from her spot. Armed with a steel mentality, she was determined to reduce the damage as much as possible. The past was the past. In a world where every minute and second counted, there wasn't much room to dwell in the past.

“If I show generosity then what will you give me?”

An exchange.

Yoo Eun-hye inwardly thought.

He would do what he wanted to anyway.

No one here could stop him. It was impossible, even if Edward and Yoo Eun-hye joined together. She didn't know if they could grab his collar.

The strong had rights.

However, he didn't use those rights.

This was a chance...

She held onto the desire to save her team members.

"I'll give you this piece. I obtained it through the training room."

When he was the Saviour, he gave Yoo Eun-hye a ticket to enter the training room before he left. She was able to obtain an object from that room.

Edward was the same. Just in case, she handed over both pieces to him.

He politely received the pieces. His expression didn't change.

"This is something I let you hold for a while. It does not count as an exchange."

"Then what would you like? Actually, coming to this place..."

She was filled with resentment. Yoo Eun-hye grinded her teeth together.

Come to think of it.

Why was he here?

Only those who knew about it were involved.

Even if he gave the information to the British Government, he couldn't have known about their plan.

Yet, he had been waiting in advance. It meant someone had handed him the information.

If so...perhaps he was looking for Hope.

"Hope, are you going to take it?"

"It seems you really are smart."

Indeed!

His goal was Hope.

A bomb made by humans in order to wipe out the demons and creatures.

Advanced creatures and demons couldn't tolerate a few nuclear bombs. There was an investigation about their relationship to magic power. Thus, the incorporation of magic items and cores

made it more effective.

There were also many who died through the 'self-sacrifice' skill. All the magic power, holy power, and the dead were poured into Hope.

Hope was an item that couldn't be recreated.

He knew about the existence of Hope and planned from the beginning.

Yoo Eun-hye bit her lip. She turned and glanced at Hope.

Should she take her life to deal with him?

She had no chance of winning. But to have Hope taken away...

"I know what you are thinking. But you don't need to worry. My purpose is to kill all the other demons."

She knew that the demons were split into factions and the relationships among them weren't good. But even if he used Hope to get rid of them, he would still remain. She couldn't be assured until she knew of his true purpose.

"Then what will you do?"

"I'm not greedy for Earth."

He wasn't greedy for Earth after invading?

What type of sophistry was this?

If he wasn't greedy, then he shouldn't have come in the first place.

Yoo Eun-hye stared at him with disbelief.

To be honest, right now she had no idea who 'Randolph Briggsiel' was.

What was his true self?

"I will beat all the remaining grand dukes and returned to the Demon World as the demon king. Earth is just the arena for our struggle. All the demons want the destruction of Earth except for me."

"...Isn't this just bad luck?"

They had come to Earth for an entirely different reason. It was absurd.

"Yes."

However, he didn't deny it.

"I can't believe it. You sound different from other demons. Then why did you kill my team members? You must have been able to spare them."

He laughed.

"Don't misunderstand. I am a demon. Don't imagine some quality of goodness that I don't have. Unlike other demons, I am not interested in the destruction of the Earth. Why should I not kill those who go against me?"

"Then why are the other demons...?"

"Demons have hated humans for a long time. They envy the freedom of your short lives and the incessant changes. I don't have such strong feelings against Earth, but I am still a demon."

"Didn't you pretend to be human? You led Devil Hunters. How could you do that if you hate humans?"

"I wanted to give humans strength. Then, I would use you for my own purpose."

".....?"

He took one step closer. He was silent for a moment before continuing.

"I am a solitary demon. Unlike other grand dukes, I don't have a faction. While they are focused on short-term goals, I have no choice but to make a long-term investment. In that sense, humans are very useful. I was sure that human swords would eventually reach the necks of other demons."

Ddubeok.

The sound of his footsteps were exceptionally loud.

Yoo Eun-hye took a step back and bit her cracked lips.

"The human potential surpasses that of demons. I hate to admit it, but it is true. However, the attacks of the demons would be too fierce in the beginning. I kept you from them, gave you a hard time, and increased your experience. I also imitated human behaviour to lead you. Of course, I hadn't expected other demons to invade my territory while I was away."

"Perhaps..."

Ahh. That was it.

South Korea's dungeon.

“I am Randolph Brigsiel. I am a demon, one of the four grand dukes, ruler of the Underground World...Dungeon Master.”

There were more.

The leader of Devil Hunters. Saviour!

Those were other words that could represent him.

He didn't bring it up because Yoo Eun-hye already knew.

Then, he spoke again with an arrogant expression.

"I am your hope."

Chapter 219: Melee (1)

There was evil. But not all evil was the same. There was a difference in intensities.

I was evil. However, the degree of evil depended on my choices.

I chose to destroy the other demons. I had no desire for Earth since my dream was to win over the grand dukes and return to the Demon World as the demon king. I would laugh loudly as I welcomed everyone.

Compared to that, I felt no desire to conquer a place like Earth. There was also the promise with the 72 gods. So...they could rest assured. Once I became the winner, Earth would be safe.

Yoo Eun-hye was troubled. But it wasn't an exaggeration to say that she had already come to a conclusion.

There was no better choice besides me. They wouldn't be able to break through the other demons on their own. Angels? They also killed humans.

I looked at her with relaxed eyes.

In addition, there was Hope.

It was contained in a large iron box.

The appearance didn't match its name.

I opened Mind's Eye.

-Name – Hope (Legend)

Description: A one time disposable item. A bomb filled with the hope of humanity. It is a mixture of skills, cores and self-sacrifice. Be careful. It will cause a huge explosion that will erase everything it touches. Nature friendly. There are no side effects.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is less than 250, there is a 100% chance of disappearing.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is between 250~260, there is a 80% chance of disappearing.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is between 260~270, there is a 60% chance of disappearing.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is between 270~280, there is a 40% chance of disappearing.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is between 280~290, there is a 20% chance of disappearing.

** If the total of stamina, strength and intelligence is over 290 then the effects are unknown.

Strength, stamina and intelligence were all defensive stats.

Strength was a little bit different. However, the efficiency of Hope changed depending on every increase of 10 points.

For me, the total of those three stats had already surpassed 290. I didn't know what would happen but I wouldn't disappear. The grand dukes also wouldn't receive a significant blow.

‘Humans have managed to create this type of thing.’

I couldn't help feeling surprised. A legend rating. The result of human desperation was quite brilliant. Self-sacrifice was a skill where the person literally sacrificed themselves. If it was used several times then it was impossible for the item to have a low rating.

I touched my jaw. It seemed to be a fairly powerful weapon. It wouldn't be very effective against strong or transcendent beings, but the bomb would reduce the enemy troops.

Million of creatures were gathered here and most of them belonged to other demons. If it was used at the appropriate time then many creatures could be killed.

"Rose will guide you to a place to install the bomb. Once the installation is complete, escape and wait for my signal."

Installing it in the centre of Greenwich Observatory was good but not very effective. It was better to drop it in the middle of the battlefield.

I didn't wait for Yoo Eun-hye's decision.

Even if she made the wrong decision, it wasn't easy to change the story.

'Kim Yong-woo. He deliberately kept his mouth shut.'

The guild master of Heaven's Will. He had a quick head that always thought about the benefits. He kept his mouth shut despite knowing my identity.

'He probably didn't want to make a big mess.'

The status of Devil Hunters would have fallen and Korea would have become enveloped in turmoil.

It was a situation where keeping his mouth shut was more advantageous.

I turned around slowly.

Anyway, I had achieved all my goals for coming here.

I secured the pieces from the training room. I also confirmed Yoo Eun-hye and Edward's growth. It was all very satisfying. In particular, the growth of Yoo Eun-hye and Edward was very steep. It was more than twice as fast as it was in my previous life. In the

near future, demons would be reluctant to face both of them.

'I can't finish everything in this fight.'

It would take a little bit longer.

I could handle things during the turmoil, but pushing myself too much might cause a backlash.

'First...'

I smiled coldly while maintaining my pace.

The battlefield would be changed. As long as Hope was as good as I thought it was. If it successfully exploded then a very interesting scene would be produced.

Hundreds of thousands of creatures were flocking. They pressed against Ariel Diablo's army. But things weren't progressing quickly.

Flash!

White light was coming from the silver knights. That light connected the silver knights.

They shared strength, damage and skills.

It was 'Great Mountains (Epic).'

When thinking about it simply, it meant it was possible to deal a shock to all the silver knights.

However, the silver knights had excellent individual abilities. They were even able to fight against high class creatures. Upa had an absolute advantage in the number of creatures.

Ariel Diablo's demons were also unbelievable. They followed her like she was a queen. They all acted like knights. They never neglected their training. Thanks to that, they were able to continue fighting despite the numbers disadvantage.

"Damn cancer, I will stop this."

Upa was furious. He thought it was possible to win through overwhelming numbers, but that wasn't the case. It was also hard to concentrate on fighting with the angels around them.

"Upa Bullenon, if you don't watch your words then your mouth will be torn out."

Ariel wore armour and a weapon made from the bones of a balrog. A balrog was a high class Lv5 creature, so it was considered one of the best. The resistance to magic power embedded in those bones was beyond imagination. It had the ability to invalidate quite a few skills.

In a simple 1:1 confrontation, Ariel Diablo had the slight advantage.

It played a big role in arousing Upa's anger.

Upa spread his arms wide. A number of black spheres rose from his arms. The black spheres were black holes that sucked in everything around them. He gathered them together into one huge black hole.

The black hole had a very strong pulling force that didn't distinguish between friends and foes. But Upa didn't care. He needed to dispose of them.

Ariel's expression changed subtly.

She instinctively perceived the danger in this skill. It wouldn't leave anything alive.

“Abyss Sword.”

The patented skill of Ariel Diablo!

Her sword was surrounded by chaos.

Ariel was threatened by Upa's skill, but she showed no intention of avoiding it. She was going to tear him apart piece by piece.

She didn't think that the black hole could stop the Abyss Sword.

Ariel Diablo and Upa collided in the air.

Huuuuuuong!

Pandemonium frowned.

The situation was grave. The movements of the angels were strange.

'We are being herded.'

The angels were driving the creatures with the Ark. He didn't notice at first, but it became clear as time passed.

'Do they want a melee?'

Ariel Diablo and Upa Bullenon were engaging in battle near the Ark. Pandemonium had no intention of intervening in their fight. It would be good for him if they fought. If the damage to both of them was great then he could get rid of both of them.

But this plan was broken due to the interruption of the angels.

It seemed like everyone was fighting near the Ark. Or there were

some other intentions.

Sururuk.

It was at that moment. Dozens of shadows gathered around Pandemonium.

"Did the mission fail?"

Suruk. Sururuk.

The shadows didn't speak. Instead, they only talked using subtle movements.

‘Failure.’

He clicked his tongue.

They were shadows created by Pandemonium himself.

Shadow hunters.

He created them to assassinate demons and creatures.

He had sent 3,000 of them and they looked like they had been in a violent fight.

‘They weren’t enough to catch the cherub.’

A cherub was the second ranked angel in the upper hierarchy.

He had experienced this once in the Demon World. They had amazing powers. There were 3,000 shadow hunters yet it still ended in failure.

Suruk!

The shadow hunters couldn’t help shaking after seeing Pandemonium’s disappointment.

"Hmm, you failed to hunt the cherub but did you get the thrones angel?"

Tak. Pandemonium clapped his hands. A thrones angel was a high ranking angel. It was lower than the cherub but it was better than nothing.

‘The thrones angel is called Opinion.’

Opinion was a thrones angel who fell to Earth and Pandemonium knew a little bit about him. Among the angels, he was someone who had a strong leadership ability. His eyes that watched the battlefield were excellent and he did the work of 10 commanders.

He was killed. In other words, killing Opinion would crack the system between angels.

‘It wasn’t a total failure.’

Half of it was a success. Perhaps this result was better than assassinating a cherub.

It was a different story. It was time to move.

"Tell all the creatures. Move to the Ark. Let the angels know how difficult a melee battle is."

Melee combat wasn't something that everyone was capable of.

Could they keep their heads and solve complex situations?

Pandemonium had a lot of experience. He was confident. If Opinion was dead then he could win this battle without much damage.

And...it might not be impossible to hunt Upa and Ariel.

He tried to avoid direct combat with them, but it all depended on the circumstances.

Going to the Demon World was important, but he also had to

eliminate competitors here.

‘Randolph Briggsiel. You should be careful.’

Pandemonium didn’t release his tension.

Suruk. Sururuk.

In response to Pandemonium’s movement, the shadow hunters melted into the ground.

Chapter 220: Melee (2)

I climbed on top of Greenwich Observatory. It was evening with a full moon. The battle lasted a few days.

I placed creatures in Greenwich Observatory.

The number itself wasn't much and there weren't any high quality creatures, but the combination was good.

There were 500 saber tigers and 500 orc variants, with trolls and ogres mixed in moderately. And I also added 'doppelgangers.'

'They can only copy the appearance, but it doesn't matter in a situation like this.'

Doppelgangers could change their appearance to look like the opponents. Although it wasn't a strong intermediate creature, the utilization rate was excellent. In this situation, their uses as 'scammers' would shine even more.

I had hidden 300 doppelgangers in the basement of the Greenwich Observatory. All of them transformed into death knights. I also mixed in 30 real death knights among them. Thus, a good death knight unit was completed.

'There is no need to increase the damage.'

They were just a formality. I would use them to play the opponents. Despite not participating in the battle, I would be able to show off some influence.

“Melee...”

It was already the second day.

Everyone was moving around the Ark.

Ariel, Upa, Pandemonium and the angels were engaged in a bloody feast!

Before they noticed something suspicious, I needed them to look at me.

It was too early to use Hope.

‘The moment the winner is decided. Just when they think everything is over, I will be the one to laugh last.’

Although I could see the effect of the item through Mind’s Eye, it still wasn’t clear how strong Hope was. So, I needed to make moves to minimize the risk.

Waiting. Patience was something I was good at.

‘How interesting.’

I turned around. Oswen had finished all the preparations.

"Your Majesty, if you tell me then Oswen will destroy all your enemies."

Oswen declared in a vigorous voice. I could feel his sincerity. He followed me for only one reason. I saved him and dealt a blow to the Hell Monarch.

I laughed.

"You sound like Maxium. Yes, have you received any contact from Maxium?"

"He has entered the dungeons of two demons of Upa's faction."

"Things are going well."

Oswen shrugged.

"It is thanks to the powerful reinforcement that Your Majesty gave him."

Originally, Maxium's role was to hinder Upa. Now he was given a new mission: to occupy dungeons.

I also refilled his troops. The high class Mago and bone dragons, as well as skeleton soldiers!

I gave him all the high class creatures that I didn't use to catch Gustarte.

It was in order to create more confusion in the melee fight.

'Upa will be distracted while fighting Ariel.'

If this was a normal situation, many of the troops would have left after hearing the news. However, Upa was currently waging a war against Ariel. He couldn't afford that right now.

Thanks to that, the task of occupying the dungeons was proceeding smoothly. It didn't matter if it was an important stronghold or the dungeon of a low ranking demon. All that mattered was getting as many dungeons as possible.

That alone was enough.

I was satisfied with that. I was doing several things at the same time and everything was going as I wanted.

"Your Majesty. Whose side do you like? Ariel Diablo, Upa Bullenon or Pandemonium? Or do you want to take the side of the angels?"

Right now, everyone was an enemy. The tacit agreement had been broken. Once the fire was set, nothing could stop it until the result was seen.

"The answer is obvious."

I pulled out my sword.

Then I said.

"All who oppose me are my enemies."

Chwang! Chwang!

Hiiing!

Wooooo!

All the creatures were crying out. The doppelgangers that weren't really death knights simultaneously pulled out their swords.

It was a suitable show.

I would ensure that we were noticed.

"Let's go."

Hwaruruk!

Pride's flames emerged.

The first ones that aimed at me were the angels. Despite the angels rushing, I stayed still. I didn't want to be forced to move my hands.

"Oswen."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

"Who do you think will win?"

A large ship. Upa and Ariel were engaged in a bloody battle near it. It was a fight that showed no signs of ending.

"Upa."

"Isn't Ariel slightly dominant?"

"A war isn't won with only one strong person."

Oswen was a commander in the Underground World. Despite regaining himself, that experience still seemed intact.

I tapped a finger against my forehead.

In the 1:1 fight between Upa and Ariel, the one that was dominating was Ariel.

If this continued then the gap would keep growing.

On the other hand...in the confrontation between demons and creatures, Upa was leading. Ariel only brought a few elites so her numbers were too few. The absolute number advantage was inevitable.

The gap between Ariel and Upa would keep on widening.

In particular, the silver knights...they were showing a great performance, but I used Mind's Eye to study their skills.

‘They will fall at the same time. This is the end.’

Giant Mountains (Epic) was certainly a good skill, but it had the disadvantage of all of them collapsing at the same time once all the stamina was consumed. Little by little, gaps were forming and more troops were required to fill that vacancy.

"What about the fight between Pandemonium and the angels?"

"Pandemonium will win. His ability in melee combat is

excellent.”

I agreed.

The longest surviving demon. A person who mastered demonic magic.

That was Pandemonium. He was used to situations like this.

In contrast, the angels were forced on the defensive.

They were being grinded down.

"What do you think Pandemonium will do once he wins?"

"He will either deal with both or attach himself to Upa. Pandemonium and Upa have similar tendencies."

Upa and Pandemonium instinctively knew one thing.

Ariel Diablo's strength!

In my previous life, she was the winner. She survived until the very end.

"Then we will have to help Ariel Diablo."

"Weren't you aiming for that from the beginning?"

In this battlefield, at least one of them should be eliminated.

I was sure of that.

But it was a little bit difficult because it was Ariel Diablo.

She had the honour of complete victory in my previous life. Personally, I hoped that the final contest would be against her. It would be a neat ending.

In that sense, Upa and Pandemonium were tricky. So it might be easier to clean them up first.

My army was small, but it would be enough. I would give Ariel Diablo a chance to turn the situation.

My first action was the most important.

Upa, Pandemonium...

The result would be completely different depending on who I aimed for.

"Aim at Upa. Hash isn't a child that will break that easily."

"Isn't that a problem with the angels' command system?"

"That won't be a problem. Right now, Hash has a complete understanding of melee combat."

"Aren't you overestimating him?"

"Your Majesty, Tashmal has arrived. She is currently next to Hash."

I frowned.

I didn't understand Oswen's words for a moment.

"Tashmal is corrupted. How can the angels fail to notice that?"

"She isn't right next to him. She is following from a distance and giving advice. It isn't hard for her to use the angel system to convey a message. And...doesn't Hash follow Tashmal very well? He is like a child trying to look good in front of his mother. It will make a difference. Of course, the outcome won't change much, but the angels will be able to deal a bigger blow."

It was convincing.

Anyway, Oswen was better than me when it came to strategies on the battlefield. I could admit this fact.

I had always acted alone in my previous life.

I nodded and said.

“Okay. Attack Upa.”

I concluded. If the angels were motivated to stop Pandemonium then I had some time. In the meantime, I would help Ariel take care of Upa.

Chapter 221: Melee (3)

Just in case of an angel attack, Upa had left many creatures in the rear. There was a chance he might be surrounded by Ariel's troops and the angels.

So he built a wall of creatures.

I decided to hit the weakest spot.

Even a solid wall would collapse if there was a gap.

The first one that stood out was Groggy. Groggy Inpir. He was one of Upa's demons who loved succubi. His one accomplishment was being able to summon the succubus queen.

Thousands of succubi were flying in the sky. Originally succubi were intermediate 4Lv creatures. However, they were enhanced due to the influence of the succubus queen.

I set the 30 real death knights here.

The remaining 300 death knights, that were actually doppelgangers, were placed at the rear as a screen. They wouldn't be that much help in this fight anyway. They were just there to give a sense of pressure.

The succubi turned towards me. Groggy, who was touching the

succubus queen's chest, stared at me.

“Hah, Grand Duke Randolph Brigsiel! Aren't you protecting the castle? Stepping outside the castle is too dangerous for you!”

His tone was full of ridicule. Soon, Groggy and the succubus queen descended from the sky.

"This place looks good."

I replied leisurely. Groggy's smile widened further.

“Huhu! Then watch quietly. There is no place for you on this battlefield!”

"If I don't have a place then I should make it. Oswen."

Oswen briefly bowed his head.

"Yes, Your Majesty."

"Can you get rid of the guy in front of you?"

“It is the easiest thing to do. Instead, please take care of the succubus queen.”

"Isn't it usually the other way around?"

"I think this can save a lot of time."

Oswen said with a smirk.

Indeed, Groggy Inpir was easy to kill. I would be able to leave him to Oswen.

"Believing in your creatures...this is a surprise. Randolph Brigsiel, if you interfere then I will kill you here."

I clicked my tongue.

"First and foremost, cut off his tongue. That voice is disgusting."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

Kill him. Groggy Inpir's face was red due to our attitude.

The battle had already been going on for a few days. It was natural to get excited about small things.

"I disapprove of you having the title of grand duke! The only true grand duke is Upa!"

Thousands of succubi flew at me in a flash.

The bat wings filled the sky. Evening. The full moon further strengthened the succubi. They were similar to wolf type creatures. There was also the influence of the succubus queen...she looked like a normal succubus but was bigger.

‘In short, the first thing I need to do is subdue the succubus queen.’

Wrath and the Emperor's sword.

The succubus queen had a very beautiful appearance. Violet hair and seductive eyes. Her red lips were swollen like they would burst. She had a shapely waist and protruding buttocks that were revealed by tight leather clothes, making any man want to jump on her.

-Mind's Eye has discovered 'Temptation of Instincts (Epic).'

High intelligence (111) calibration has succeeded in defending against 100%.

The skill was caught. It was entirely useless. Seduction skills didn't work on me.

‘This is the first time I've seen a succubus queen.’

It was a bit of a novelty. Succubus queen. I had only seen it in

books, so this was my first actual experience with one. I was told that the succubus queen could attract men and women due to her looks.

In that sense, Groggy was great. How much love did he have for succubi that he summoned a queen? No, maybe it was a direct birth.

‘A high class creature.’

I used Mind’s Eye.

Name: Succubus Queen, Dolla
Stats
Strength: 99
Intelligence: 91
Agility: 97
Stamina: 82
Magic Power: 105
Potential: (474/474)
Uniqueness: Succubus queen. She has inherited the name of Dolla, the legendary succubus queen. Has a strong protection blessing. Every succubus in the vicinity will be affected by her.
Skill: Dolla’s Protection (Epic), Temptation of Instinct (Epic), Queen’s Anger (Ex Epic), Festival of the Whip (Epic)

Indeed...she was strong among the high class creatures. She was between a high class 3Lv and 4Lv creature. A creature that received Upa's recognition. It was the reason they were the only ones in such a wide space.

It was unfortunate that I was here. Then one more message popped up.

-Dolla's Protection (Epic) has encountered Power of Domination (Ex Epic).

Power of Domination will offset 64.4% of Dolla's Protection.

Dolla's Protection has become very weak.

I smirked. The Power of Domination had various effects, and it seemed to exert itself on a wide area skill.

It wasn't bad. Dolla's Protection had been a light imposition. I wanted to finish this quickly.

However, there was no need to overdo things.

Despite being weakened, the succubi were still moderately strong intermediate creatures. Their numbers weren't enough to reverse the situation.

Groggy's expression became determined.

However, the fight had already begun.

"Then I will teach you something, demon."

Oswen held six swords with his six hands.

They were excellent swords. They were all directly made by Oswen. He was a blacksmith good enough to create the Seven Sins set.

He absolutely never made half-hearted things. Oswen desperately made the weapons. That was Oswen's pride.

The succubus queen grabbed a whip. I stared into her eyes and thought.

'An existence in a book. This isn't your place.'

At first she was a novelty. That was all.

A few thousand. A succubus queen had appeared in the world after a few thousand years.

However, I would return the succubus queen to the storybooks

once again.

The wall created by Upa was surprisingly poor.

Was he not worried?

Or the error might be because he was focused on Ariel Diablo.

I only joined briefly and there was already a hole.

It wasn't surprising so I didn't care.

'We were enemies from the beginning. I am not gentlemanly enough to be kind to the enemy.'

I was a little better than other demons. There was no point in feeling resentment towards me. At any rate, this was a perfect opportunity to defeat a grand duke with no risk. I would borrow Ariel Diablo's hands to do so.

I just needed to pierce through Upa's blind spot.

Blind spot. I was currently located in his blind spot.

All of Upa's nerves were completely focused on Ariel Diablo, so he couldn't easily move even if he heard the news.

Even if he did move, the timing would need to be perfect. It was because Ariel Diablo couldn't be left out.

He had no choice but to keep fighting her. That was Upa's fate.

"This is enough."

I had killed three of Upa's demons. I also received some damage. A large majority of my creatures were lost.

This was enough for now. There was a gap and it was Ariel Diablo's job to find this gap. I had no reason to care anymore.

"Hu! Now what do we do, Your Majesty?"

Oswen asked while wiping his brow. Actually, he was an undead so he was just pretending to be sweating.

I put away Wrath and the Emperor's Sword before turning away.

"You have worked hard. The doppelgangers that have turned into death knights, it is enough if they just wander around without fighting."

"I will watch Upa."

"I will return to the castle."

"Your Majesty, is that okay? Right now there are no loyal followers of Your Majesty in the castle."

Oswen joked around. I gave a moderate reply.

"Don't meddle. I will go back and look at the situation. If you need anything then come and find me."

Oswen nodded his head.

"Yes, I will lead the rest of the creatures."

His task was decided.

I started moving. I soon assimilated with the wind and disappeared.

I had a reason for returning to the castle.

It was to see the pieces. And I needed to find the timing to launch 'Hope.'

Hope wouldn't explode unless I instructed it to. In order to get the timing accurate, it was better to watch from the castle since it was slightly away from the battle. I needed to understand the whole context to get the best timing.

Underneath the castle. There was a secret room hidden. I could see all the areas of the castle from here.

Thousands of crystal balls were intricately linked.

'It is a device that instantaneously boosts all the magic power in the castle. Pandemonium also won't be able to find me here.'

This was one of the items belonging to the Hell Monarch. A device that caused an enormous amount of magic power amplification. Pandemonium might be experienced in magic but he wouldn't be able to find the Hell Monarch's device.

I constantly monitored the situation in the castle using dozens of crystal balls.

I looked into the crystal balls as I pulled out five pieces from the training room.

'The advanced training room.'

The pieces were tokens obtained from clearing the room.

Chrisley, Tashmal, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward had entered the advanced training room. If so, there should only be four pieces. However, I already had five.

‘One was used by Hash.’

That’s right. The method I used to mature Hash in a short amount of time was the advanced training room.

The body didn’t age in the training room. But it was possible for the spirit to grow. The flesh wasn’t grown but he could be able to think like a reasonable adult.

If not, I wouldn’t have allowed him to go to the angels’ sacred zone. Even if he was a cherub, there was a possibility that he would be influenced by the other angels. However, that worry decreased after his spirit grew to some extent.

‘Why did the Hell Monarch prepare this?’

I had that question from the beginning.

He was close to perfect yet he prepared something like this.

I was curious about the reason it was placed among his treasures.

There were many other legendary items so this one was conspicuous.

It wasn’t intended to grow his subordinates. I also wondered why only five people could enter. There were also the pieces given after they left the room safely. I strongly sensed that something would

happen once all the pieces were gathered.

I was going to check it now.

I placed the five pieces on the ground.

But I didn't have a chance to put them together. I placed the pieces back into my magic bag.

‘A guest.’

I felt indications that there were many creatures present.

It was like they were prowling around looking for someone.

They suddenly appeared. They didn't seem to have any good intentions.

I shook my head and exited.

It seemed like I needed to welcome these guests.

This place wasn't for them.

Chapter 22: Melee (4)

Shadows rose from the ground. It was ironic that shadows existed in the dark underground.

The shadows filled the underground space.

They seemed to get closer.

Soon all the shadows started to gradually change. They appeared to look like me.

‘Doppelganger?’

I tilted my head to the side. It was the first time I had seen such creatures. I had never heard of a creature that looked like a shadow and turned into the opponent like a doppelganger.

I opened Mind’s Eye.

-Name: Shadow Hunter

Uniqueness: A shadow that turns into the opponent. Created by Pandemonium, the abilities when transformed will depend on the opponent. They are specialized creatures. There is a strong desire to destroy the target they had changed into. On the contrary, the opponent will be helpless.

Skill: Imitation (Ex Epic)

A designated task.

In other words, a creature that specialized in assassination.

They were like a curse designed to kill one target.

‘Pandemonium made something interesting.’

I couldn’t see their stats. It meant there was a large variation in their stats.

But they couldn’t copy my capabilities. If that was possible, Pandemonium would have already won the game.

After a while, there were only a dozen creatures that resembled me.

It was a pretty funny situation.

My mouth opened.

“I am familiar with fighting myself.”

I didn't feel panicked. I had already fought against myself many times due to the Tree of Origin. There was no need to be nervous about things that were merely imitations.

There were many of them but I just shrugged it off.

‘Pandemonium. He intends to catch me.’

A formidable person. In this situation, he had prepared assassins.

The only thing...

It wouldn't be easy but it was worth a try.

The shadow hunters that looked exactly like me moved their hands. It seemed like not only could they copy my appearance, but they could also use my weapons. I was curious to see who would win in the confrontation between the real one and the imitations.

The shadow hunters' moves were good. But they were also different from me. The difference in depth was too much. I was in the transcendent realm so they couldn't perfectly imitate me.

It seemed like the shadow hunters couldn't enter the realm of transcendence.

‘But there are a lot of them.’

Chaeng!

Our swords clashed.

Jjejeong!

There was a crack in the Emperor's Sword that the shadow hunter was holding.

Naturally it couldn't win against the original. Originally the Emperor's Sword couldn't break but the copy was smashed.

The limits of imitation. There was no depth. It was nothing more than replicating the outside. The skills they used were similar, but that was it. This...I couldn't help laughing while looking at them.

However, there were as many as 10,000 creatures. They were equivalent to advanced 1Lv creatures! It would be a little bit arduous.

They weren't low, but advanced grade creatures. They wouldn't die with one strike. I needed to apply my strength when dealing with each one.

It was enough to contend with a transcendent being. If this was possible then the angels would have defeated the demons in my previous life. The seraphim Camael. He was like a small planet.

‘Tsk.’

I clicked my tongue.

I had consumed a lot of magic power dealing with Upa’s demons on the battlefield. It would be strange to kill three demons in a short amount of time without taking any damage. Now I needed to fight in this state.

Should I call reinforcements?

They would be of some use. Yihi could pass my instructions onto them. However, I shook my head. It was possible that my creatures wouldn’t be able to escape the explosion in time if I called them. My life was important, but I also needed to look at the bigger picture.

This was a trap prepared by Pandemonium.

Perhaps it wasn’t the only one...

I felt a thrill at the thought of crushing his plans alone.

‘I will try it.’

Hwaruruk!

Pride's flames started burning everywhere. An unquenchable flame swallowed up the dark shadows.

Hwaruk!

The shadow hunters used Pride's flames but they couldn't beat the original. Pride was one of the Seven Sins. It was a fire that no one could imitate.

Kururung!

Lightning God came out. It swept the area with a huge roar.

I freely released Lightning God. I couldn't pay attention to every move.

'I hope that Power of Domination is invoked.'

I had one more great weapon.

The Power of Domination!

It was a skill with a very low probability to subdue the opponent.

I wondered if it would work on the shadows, but there was no reason for it not to.

If it worked then I would be able to fight alone against so many creatures.

Even without it, I alone might be enough.

“Dark Sword.”

Yiing!

Wrath and the Emperor’s Sword were surrounded by darkness.

At the same time, the shadow hunters tinged their swords with a red aura.

Hope had finished being installed. Now it was time to quickly retreat. Their chances of survival would increase if they got as far as possible.

But...Yoo Eun-hye abruptly stopped.

"Noona?"

Edward asked with confusion. The only members left of the team carrying Hope were Yoo Eun-hye, Edward, Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji.

Yoo Eun-hye spoke with difficulty.

“I’m going back.”

“Where? Perhaps...”

“Yes. I need to confirm it with both eyes.”

“Are you crazy? Why are you going back there? Noona can’t do anything. I don’t know about later but right now...”

Edward swallowed his final words.

That’s right. With Yoo Eun-hye’s abilities, she wouldn’t be able to do anything. It might be possible after a few years or a few decades. However, going right now would just cause her death.

"Does he really have no feelings? When he was in Devil Hunters, he was cold but I clearly saw some moments of warmth. Really...I need to make sure that he is really a demon. For the future of humanity.”

If he was the last hope, Yoo Eun-hye felt obliged to discover his true face. If Randolph Briggsiel was similar to other demons then it might be the worst choice.

However, Edward showed extreme opposition.

“Noona. You can’t go. That man, no that demon used us.”

"Do you really think so? Originally I was so hopeless that I was cleaning toilets. I was just like a frail child before death. Heaven's Will has suffered and Korea was almost destroyed many times. But what was the end result?"

"Noona! Why is Noona like this? I heard it. He wanted us to become stronger so that we would someday strike at the demons' necks! He just saw our potential. If Noona didn't have any potential then do you think he would have saved us?"

"He knew it from the beginning. The danger that humanity would face! So he needed to gather people like us. If he is like other demons then why did he move at all? Didn't he become the Saviour to help us? Why did he collect the scattered people to summon the girin?"

"So now he is a good demon? No. He killed the other team members in the blink of an eye. He needed no reason to use his sword!"

"...A cultural difference. Haven't we suffered thanks to other demons? They are cruel and vicious. Still, he feels different from the other demons. Clearly...I can't express it well..."

"Hoo."

Edward sighed deeply.

It was severe. Nothing he said would work.

Yoo Eun-hye's remarks were just sophistry that she wanted to believe in. The result wouldn't be good if he allowed it. He needed to draw a clear line.

Edward pulled out his greatsword. It was time to use force to protect his beloved Noona. If she went back then she would clearly die.

"If you want to go then step on me. I won't send you to that place to die."

"Edward."

"I don't want to do this. But...Hope has already left our hands. We can discuss him later after Hope gets rid of other demons. If Noona dies then humanity will suffer a great loss."

Edward was logical. He wasn't a young child.

But there was a complex expression on Yoo Eun-hye's face. Even so, she was stubborn.

Suuuk.

Yoo Eun-hye quietly pulled out her sword. A gleaming sword was soon revealed.

The two of them had similar capabilities. So far, Yoo Eun-hye still had the advantage. However, Yoo Eun-hye's mental state wasn't normal right now so no one knew what would happen.

Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji were just watching the confrontation with dark expressions. However, they couldn't tell them the truth.

All they could do was pray that this fight would end safely.

"Hmm..."

I shook my head. The flow of magic power started to reverse. I was dizzy for a moment. It felt like my entire body was empty because I had used too much magic power.

'It is still a success.'

A one on one confrontation!

I had broken the trap prepared by Pandemonium.

Thanks to that, my body reached the limit but it wasn't enough to make me fall.

The shadow hunters disappeared as soon as they died. There was nothing left in the surroundings.

‘I am glad for the Conqueror’s Ring.’

It was an item that helped speed up the recovery of my magic power.

Even now, magic power was quickly being restored.

If I was given a day and a half then a significant portion of it would be recovered.

I wasn’t in a big hurry.

I had suffered like this despite not facing strong creatures due to my greed.

In order to capture Gustarte and attack Upa’s dungeons, I brought only a minimum of troops with me.

Of course, I was stubborn about facing the shadow hunters alone but...

There was no regret. I had achieved a good result. I was very invigorated.

Swiii. Swiiiiii.

But after some time, I scowled. I noticed that the sound of the wind flowing through the underground passage changed subtly.

"I know that I'm not alone."

How did they find me?

'Pandemonium knows about this place. He was just pretending not to know.'

I thought bitterly.

It seemed like I had underestimated Pandemonium too much.

He was the one who mastered the essence of demonic magic. He pierced through the magic of the Hell Monarch. However, he probably pretended not to know. He had been waiting until I came here alone.

'It is too demanding.'

Although I could get through this wall, it might not be possible if Pandemonium knew about this place.

It was because Hope was here. There was a chance that Pandemonium knew about the exact usage of this place. I could only pray that he was ignorant about Hope.

Hope was too good to give up. I also had to consider the possibility of Hope entering Pandemonium's hands.

'It can't be helped.'

Soon puppet demons emerged. There were 12 of them. Originally, they were Okullos' vassals but they lost themselves and became Pandemonium's limbs.

Suruk. Sururuk.

Approximately 1,000 shadow hunters joined.

'Demons...'

I shook my head.

This seemed to be a tricky fight.

There was dense smoke. Yoo Eun-hye saw that there were already many changes when arriving back at Greenwich Observatory.

Bodies were scattered all over the place, with traces of fire.

'Where?'

Yoo Eun-hye didn't stop walking. She was only looking for one thing. The person who raised her and led the group in the past! He called himself a demon, but it was still unbelievable.

She had thought this while walking through the battlefield.

It was formidable. Demons and angels were fighting each other in one place. The creatures were also fighting amongst themselves. One wrong move meant not even a bone would remain.

'Not here.'

Still, Yoo Eun-hye didn't give up. She looked around the battlefield as much as possible and was sure that he wasn't here. Then where was he?

She infiltrated Greenwich Observatory. Maybe he was preparing for Hope to explode. She wasn't far from the place where Hope was installed.

There were a few dangerous situations, but she fortunately managed to enter the underground area.

A rotten smell soon seeped into her nose.

'What is this smell?'

The smell became worse as she continued walking. Yoo Eun-hye

grabbed her nose without knowing it.

Soon, she was forced to stop.

The underground area was half destroyed.

'Something obviously happened!'

It had been fine when she came here before. Something had happened in the meantime.

It wasn't completely collapsed so she could enter.

Right away, she was able to find the corpses of demons.

'Other demons...!'

There were signs of a battle.

Yoo Eun-hye kept on moving.

And after a while.

Yoo Eun-hye's eyes widened as she discovered something.

"Ah...!"

Chapter 223: Explosion (1)

A familiar demon was collapsed against a wall. His whole body was covered with blood. His white face was even paler.

If it wasn't for the rising of his chest, she would have thought he was dead.

Yoo Eun-hye caught her breath. Her mind was blank. Her hands shook as she formed fists. And she moved quickly.

‘Please.’

The Awakened. Among them, she was one of the best. Her hearing went beyond the limits of a human so she could hear the sound of a beating heart from far away. But right now, she felt like an ordinary person. She couldn't hear or feel anything.

Yoo Eun-hye brought her ear to the man's chest.

Duguen!

Finally, she heard the sound of a heart beating.

Ahh!

Yoo Eun-hye shed tears of relief. She didn't know why the tears were emerging. There was just a vague feeling.

At the same time, Yoo Eun-hye was quickly able to recover her control.

She looked around.

There were traces of a disturbance. Dead demons.

‘An assault. He was taken by surprise.’

She nodded. It was clear that the man had been attacked and fought back. Yes. He wasn’t an easy opponent. All of his enemies were eventually slain. But the man himself was wounded and collapsed.

‘It isn’t over. It happened at least twice...’

Her mind was jolted awake.

The traces in the surroundings didn’t lie.

It was obvious that he was assaulted several times but defeated them all.

If that was the case.

‘There might be another attack.’

Yoo Eun-hye immediately lifted the man. It was like he was dead. The man was exhausted and Yoo Eun-hye was unable to deal with any demons.

However, the outside was filled with creatures. She didn't know if it was possible when alone, but they wouldn't be able to escape notice with two people.

‘Hide in a safe place.’

That seemed to be the only way.

Yoo Eun-hye started walking. She hadn't experienced any obstacles when coming here. She was able to remember a place that seemed the most secure.

‘The clock tower.’

The creatures couldn't easily approach the clock tower.

It was a gamble. The clock tower had to be dangerous for the creatures to avoid it.

Yoo Eun-hye used all her strength to escape the underground area with the man.

Yoo Eun-hye moved quickly.

She had memorized a map of Greenwich Observatory. Although the interior was renovated, the framework hadn't changed that much.

This was the fastest and safest road.

‘I have to treat him.’

The man's body was like a fireball. Once his stopped heart started to beat again, it burned like a flame. He was emanating such heat that Yoo Eun-hye's back started to warm.

It would be unlucky if there was a creature that detected heat. There seemed to be no other way.

Yoo Eun-hye looked around as much as possible. She used all her senses to try and determine the position of creatures in the area. Thanks to that, there was a small time delay.

But she couldn't risk it. It was a situation where the man's life was threatened. It was the only way to move safely.

The path to the clock tower felt very far. Fortunately there weren't as many creatures in the castle as she thought. None of them were high ranking.

Suruk. Sururuk.

After she had gone approximately halfway.

Yoo Eun-hye felt an incredible amount of magic power surrounding her.

She turned her head and could see shadows coming up from the ground.

‘This?’

She swallowed her saliva. The shadows found Yoo Eun-hye and the man wrapped around her.

Their intentions didn’t seem good. The shadows seemed like a type of creature.

‘It can't be helped. I have to fight.’

Yoo Eun-hye carefully put the man down and pulled out her sword. But her sword was considerably damaged. It was due to the battle with Edward.

Thanks to the treatment from the high priest sisters, her stamina remained, but her weapon...

‘It will be hard with this sword. What to do?’

She bit her lip. At that moment, the shadows turned into Yoo Eun-hye.

Doppelganger?

They were similar but a little different. A doppelganger didn't appear in the form of a shadow. They stayed as the last creature they transformed into.

"I'll borrow these for a moment."

Yoo Eun-hye's gaze moved towards the man's waist. Two swords. She pulled out both of them.

One sword was black while the other one was golden and jeweled.

Bidul!

Yoo Eun-hye stumbled the moment she grabbed both swords.

-Warning!

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword are looking at the user. The two swords have weak egos and will cause a strong repulsion force when used by the wrong user.

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword have temporarily accepted the user Yoo Eun-hye.

Yoo Eun-hye regained her posture. The power she felt disappeared.

‘Ego sword!’

Her eyes widened. An ego sword. She had heard of it but this was the first time she had seen the real thing. She never heard of anyone having one so she thought it was just imaginary.

Yoo Eun-hye quickly shook her head.

Now wasn't the time. She had to move as quickly as possible to remove the shadows that looked like her. If she took too long then other nearby creatures might join.

The enemies also copied Yoo Eun-hye's weapons. It seemed like they copied everything.

‘...It can't be.’

Yoo Eun-hye thought despairingly.

“Pant! Pant!”

Yoo Eun-hye was sweating. She kept on panting. It felt like the world was turning and she wanted to sit down. But Yoo Eun-hye used every bit of her willpower to move her feet.

The shadows were persistent. They had already struck a few times and didn't know how to give up. Thank to that, her pace was delayed.

She knew how to ease this problem.

She could give up the man.

The goal of the shadows was the man.

If she threw him away then they would stop their pursuit.

But she couldn't do that. Her heart cried out not to do that.

She leaned against the wall. She peeked at the man's face.

Despite being bloodsoaked...his face looked comfortable. Did he know the current situation?

However, the man had a different atmosphere than usual.

Despite killing in cold blood, she could never hate his face. He

seemed like a pure baby.

Yoo Eun-hye's mouth twitched.

Yoo Eun-hye believed in him, no matter what mask he used.

Everyone had an unknown face. He didn't have to put on a mask!

“Hold on a little longer. Now...almost there.”

She could see the clock tower.

There was only a bit more to go. If she walked a hundred more steps then she could enter the clock tower.

Yoo Eun-hye moved while holding onto hope. But she didn't make it far enough.

Suruk. Sururuk.

The shadows emerged again.

Yoo Eun-hye was sick and tired of them.

No matter how many she killed and killed, they kept appearing from somewhere. They were like a curse. They wouldn't stop until they exterminated their target.

Yoo Eun-hye raised the swords again. She moved despite not being familiar with dual swordsmanship. To be exact...it felt like the two swords were telling her how to move. She listened to the swords' whispers and moved.

And her movements closely resembled that man's.

-The skill 'Sword Flow' (U, Passive) has been created.

Strength and agility have increased by two.

You have become more sensitive to the sound of the swords.

She didn't worry about the messages. Yoo Eun-hye took a deep breath and quietly took an attack stance. She felt more pliant than before so now it was time to deal with the shadows.

Chwack!

The shadows surrounded Yoo Eun-hye. Yoo Eun-hye sliced the waist of the first clone.

Yoo Eun-hye soon forgot all tiredness. She only focused on killing the shadows. Nothing else mattered.

-The skill 'Trance' (Ex U, Passive) has been created.

All stats have increased by two.

When falling into a trance-like state, all stats will increase by five.

Was it due to following the man's movements? Or was it because the two swords were telling her the way? The messages continued rising. Right now, none of them entered Yoo Eun-hye's eyes.

Flop!

Yoo Eun-hye collapsed to the ground soon after defeating all the shadows.

She had no stamina left. She didn't even have enough stamina remaining to flick a finger.

'Nearly there...'

Her vision was becoming increasingly blurry. Yoo Eun-hye reached out and grabbed the man's hand. If the shadows attacked again then she wouldn't be able to do anything.

Death.

Her life would end along with the man's.

It was at that moment.

"Lul lululul Mirror, mirror, is Yihi the prettiest in this world? Yes ~ Yihi is the best in the world! Omo, really? Yihihhi!"

Yoo Eun-hye saw a small fairy holding a hand mirror and dancing in the clock tower.

"Huh? Ugly woman! And...heok! Master!"

The fairy cried out in dismay after confirming the man's appearance.

Chapter 224: Explosion (2)

Pandemonium was persistent. I should have watched him more carefully. That was my fatal mistake. Thanks to the many surprise attacks, I was wounded and exhausted.

I was able to do a lot of damage but Pandemonium recognized my strength and prepared suitable troops.

However, everything became faint after the fight was over. I heard a familiar voice, but I thought it was already too late.

Too late...

“Master! Master! En en! Don’t die and leave Yihi.”

"Aigoo ~ keikei! If Master dies then Yihi will go with you!

“Eeeeeng! Eeeeeng! Kuhuhuhung!”

My ears hurt.

Someone was wailing by my side.

My mouth opened without me knowing.

“...Noisy.”

“Sniffle! Sniffle! Peeeeng...Master?”

Yihi’s snot-covered hand touched me. I got up with a slight frown and saw an entirely different place from where I last was.

“Yihi, this is the clock tower?”

“Yes. Yihi moved. And the bad girl is tied up.”

Yihi finished crying and placed her hands on her waist.

“Who?”

“You know. That ugly girl. Yihi doesn’t remember her name.”

Her explanation was inadequate but I was convinced that she was talking about ‘Yoo Eun-hye.’ It was because I heard Yoo Eun-hye’s voice in my dream.

“Where is Yoo Eun-hye now?”

“That ~ in the next room. Yihi tied her down. Did that bad girl attack Master?”

I got up and headed to the next room. Oswen was standing in front of the door, guarding it.

"Your Majesty, are you okay?"

"You came back."

"I received an urgent message from Fairy-nim stating that I should come back. By the way, Pandemonium is really terrible. Sending so many after Your Majesty..."

Oswen had already determined that the opponent who drove me into the corner was Pandemonium. I entered the next room.

I was able to see Yoo Eun-hye naked and bound to a chair.

"...Fairy-nim insisted on doing this. I couldn't stop her."

Oswen muttered a little bitterly.

Yoo Eun-hye had helped me greatly when I fainted, but Yihi was mistaken. She didn't know and tied Yoo Eun-hye up.

I clicked my tongue as I entered the room. I unfastened the chains one by one, then caught Yoo Eun-hye before she fell and laid her down.

Soon I took out a potion from my magic bag.

Elixir!

It was a potion that could heal someone as long as they weren't dead.

I had confirmed some things.

I drank the elixir after Pandemonium's surprise raid, but it wasn't that effective.

It was clear that there was a relationship between transcendence and the effects of the elixir.

Anyway, it wasn't necessary for me because it wasn't that effective. I poured the elixir into Yoo Eun-hye's mouth without any hesitation.

“Cough!”

Yoo Eun-hye started coughing. But I didn't stop pouring the elixir and Yoo Eun-hye was forced to drink it.

‘The origin is damaged.’

It seemed like she had used all her magic power coming here. The elixir helped restore the origin of her magic power.

I poured all the elixir and placed a hand on Yoo Eun-hye's chest. It was to help the circulation of magic power. There was the possibility of a side effect so I filled the empty spaces with my magic power. I gently covered her with my magic power.

I stayed in that position for about an hour. After finishing, I stood up.

"Go back. This isn't the place for you."

"That..."

Yoo Eun-hye called out from behind me, but I didn't stop. I honestly couldn't understand why she returned.

I sent a glance to Oswen once outside of the room. Oswen nodded.

Oswen brought Yoo Eun-hye far beyond the boundaries.

'My magic power recovered quickly.'

I stretched my neck from side to side. There was the sound of my bones and muscles relaxing.

After that, I grabbed Wrath and the Emperor's Sword and descended the clock tower.

“Master. I should stick to you!”

Yihi immediately followed me but I didn't pay her any attention.

"I have to look at the situation."

It seemed like I had been collapsed for one day. In the meantime, many things had changed greatly.

First of all, Ariel Diablo had dealt damage to Upa. She took advantage of the gap and reduced Upa's power by half.

It was the same for the battle between Pandemonium and the angels. Pandemonium turned a lot of his power on me and almost succeeded. There was a hole in his power and Hash counterattacked. Thanks to that, the battlefield became more chaotic.

'Pandemonium would have realized that his surprise attack failed.'

The shadow hunters were persistent. They weren't difficult opponents but there were a lot of them. Besides, the puppet demons didn't die easily due to an ability to regenerate.

I succeeded in destroying all of them, but had been injured.

I knew that it was Yoo Eun-hye who brought me to the clock

tower while I was unconscious. However, I didn't have room for gratitude. I couldn't understand why she had returned. It was a really risky tightrope.

‘Victory and defeat will be determined in the near future. I need to use that gap.’

They would feel confident at the moment of victory. The winner would only be paying attention to the loser. If I used Hope at that time then I could do the most damage.

Pandemonium's surprise raid was over. He was currently moving quickly to stop the angels. If successful, half of his purpose would have been achieved by assassinating me. However, Pandemonium failed and was on the defensive.

His army was now inferior to Upa and Ariel's. Only a terrible future waited for him.

‘Pandemonium. You shouldn't have aimed for me.’

If he had kept that power to deal with the angels then he would have already won. It would have been Pandemonium's overwhelming victory. That would have been more profitable, but he failed...it was too late for him to regret it now.

I headed back to the underground area. I was confident there would be no more raids.

Once the moon rose again in the night sky, victory would be decided.

“Kuhuk!”

Ariel Diablo was kneeling on the ground. Her mouth was bloody and her whole body was a wreck. Upa was similar, but he had a little more room to move.

"You cowardly wretch!"

Ariel grinded her teeth together. She was able to break through and set a stage for reversal, but the absolute difference in numbers was too much. The silver knights eventually collapsed. The monsters gathered in that gap and cooperated to strike at Ariel.

Since ancient times, all things yielded to a larger number.

Ariel was strong but her opponent was the same. As she kept fighting Upa and the creatures, her stamina became severely depleted. In the end, Upa succeeded in knocking Ariel down.

“Heook...damn bitch, this is my strength. Why do you keep going on about cowardice?”

In fact, Upa was really discomforted. Ariel had been slightly ahead after fighting for a few days and his wounds had accumulated. But the last person standing was Upa.

Of course, he had received tremendous damage. His creatures had visibly reduced by hundreds of thousands. There were around 50,000 left? He also lost a considerable number of demons.

“I will kill you cleanly. It is time to end the unfortunate relationship between us.”

Upa and Ariel had an extremely bad relationship between them even in the Demon World. Now it was finally time to break those chains. He was pleased. Upa couldn't help laughing.

Ariel tried to raise her ivory sword. Most of her demons and creatures had died. Some were able to escape but Ariel couldn't. Upa didn't care about the others and persistently struck Ariel.

It was hard for her to escape. Still, she thought it was better to die fighting.

The demon king.

She had the bloodline of a demon king, but she couldn't always be the winner.

"Raise your weapon. Upa Bullenon. Aren't we friendly enough to have a small conversation?"

Ariel laughed at him. Upa didn't like being laughed at.

"Talking like that until the end...come, I will kill you in the worst possible way."

Upa summoned typhoons. There were dozens of them. His attitude showed that he wanted to finish everything at once.

Soon they collided.

And...at the same time, the whole world was covered in a white light.

Pandemonium was attacking the angels' main army. He didn't have enough troops to drag the melee out, so he decided to strike the enemy's base. But only underlings were present at the angels' base. He killed the thrones angel, but the most important cherub wasn't there.

"Where did he go?"

Pandemonium frowned.

Did the angels realize that he was coming?

No. It couldn't be. His plan was perfect. He slowly surrounded the base with creatures. It was impossible to notice without being able to predict the future.

If so...why did his plan fail?

Why?

For what reason?

Pandemonium's mind started spinning quickly.

Not only the cherub, but the major angels couldn't be seen. All the high ranking angels had left their positions. Usually, this was confirmation of a defeat.

But the angels were equal to him. He couldn't push them back that much. Why was it necessary for them to leave when there was a chance of winning?

He thought about it for a long time. But an answer couldn't be determined. However, he soon realized why.

The world turned bright. He was surrounded by a white magic power. This feeling...

'Get the hell out!'

His instincts warned him.

It was dangerous!

The white light wasn't normal!

But he was already one step too late.

The light spread out for hundreds of kilometres around Greenwich Observatory.

I was also swept up in the explosion.

I didn't move because...I needed to keep the grand dukes here.

There were creatures keeping an eye on the clock tower. They checked many times to confirm that I was still here. It was a situation where I couldn't move. There was a danger that the grand dukes would notice something and escape if I left Greenwich Observatory.

I needed to make the net stronger.

I was still slightly injured from Pandemonium's attack. Now I needed to deceive them.

A risky gamble.

I had installed magic power boosters in Greenwich Observatory to amplify Hope's power. The range of the explosion would double and the destructive power would be stronger. In other words, a

great number of demons and creatures would be destroyed right away.

'I need to be more certain.'

The range of Hope couldn't be too narrow. There was also the possibility of escaping through a scroll. If the destructive power wasn't what I imagined then many could survive. So I made a gamble.

It was a requirement when going on an adventure. I evacuated all the major creatures and Yihi returned to the dungeon. The explosion of Hope would only affect me.

Kwaaaaang!

When the explosion happened, I was also on the battlefield.

I was almost at the place where the grand dukes were when the world turned white. My skin started to gradually melt. The grand dukes felt the danger and quickly put up defenses, but the rest vanished in the blink of an eye.

'How great.'

My expression slightly distorted.

Were my calculations wrong?

Even though most of my magic power was restored, the explosive strength of Hope was beyond imagination.

My skin was melting.

Not many would survive in the aftermath of this explosion.

I was closer to Hope than others and felt the effects more strongly.

...It was a little bit dangerous for me.

Chapter 225: Explosion (3)

Yoo Eun-hye looked at the white flash from a distance.

"His Majesty will be safe."

Oswen was next to her.

The two of them were traveling on White. They had moved for half a day and barely escaped the scope of the explosion.

"I don't have a good feeling. Again...can't we go back?"

"His Majesty wanted me to take you to the original location. I have to follow that order."

Oswen spoke gently.

Although he now had the terrible appearance of a creature, he was originally a human. He was a skillful blacksmith who dealt with iron. It was unfortunate that the Hell Monarch noticed him, but he didn't completely forget his human mind.

"By the way, you are really a stupid woman. Why did you come back? Thank you for bringing His Majesty back, but aren't you human?"

"He said something. He is our hope. I came back to verify if he is

that hope.”

Yoo Eun-hye replied without any hesitation.

She had gone over that answer in her mind several times.

Oswen closed his mouth. Then he opened it again.

"Is he your hope?"

“Yes. I guess so. He...is humanity’s last hope. Nobody else knows it.”

"Huh, a human still thinks that despite knowing His Majesty’s true nature? Then what will you do next?"

"I don’t know. Everything is confusing. However, I feel sorry for him knowing that he is surrounded by enemies."

Yoo Eun-hye sympathized with the man. She didn’t know why. She just felt sorry for him.

Oswen was dumbfounded. He thought that this woman was crazy.

"Then what about staying by His Majesty’s side?"

“Huh?”

“The seal of a slave. Then His Majesty will give you some credit.”

Oswen threw out those words.

In fact, Oswen knew that His Majesty, or Randolph Briggsiel as she knew him, tended to open up a little more when there was a contract.

It was because he was sure that person would stay at his side.

“...I understand. I’ll do it.”

“You will regret it.”

“It is fine as long as it will benefit the world. Getting closer to him will help out a lot.”

“Ha! A totally genius idea. It is so bizarre that it is genius.”

Oswen was filled with admiration.

Yoo Eun-hye gave him a pained smile.

“Will he be okay?”

"Believe in him."

Oswen replied concisely.

A heavy silence returned.

Soon the explosion stopped and the white light faded.

My eyes were ringing. My senses felt shallow. My vision was blurred and my whole body was stinging.

It was the aftermath of the explosion.

‘My magic power has evaporated.’

I shook my head. Of my restored magic power, only 2% was remaining. This was just enough to sustain my flesh.

It was a testament to the enormous magic power that went into protecting my body. Of course, I didn't have that much magic power remaining before...I turned and searched the surroundings.

There were craters all over the place. The holes were deep. The clouds in the sky were cleared.

The creatures around me had evaporated. I couldn't see even one

bone. All the corpses were gone. There weren't even the remnants of high class creatures left behind.

‘How great.’

I clicked my tongue.

It was more destructive than I imagined.

The terrain in this area had changed and I alone had survived.

However, I soon shook my head. It had great destructive power, but it wasn't enough to kill a grand duke. At best, it would only destroy the demons and creatures. The grand dukes would be able to keep their flesh.

Of course, that was assuming that their original state was fine.

I climbed up from a crater. My body was at the bottom of the steepest cliff. The melted ground was still hot but I managed to hold on.

‘My magic bag is messed up.’

I wanted to get some useful items from my magic bag but it didn't listen to me. It seemed like the explosion had caused the items in the magic bag to be jammed.

I shook my head and kept moving.

Chiik. Chiiik.

It felt like the ground was melting with every step. The earth was burning and melting like it was lava.

Chwaaaak!

It happened when I almost reached the top of the crater.

A sharp sound entered my ears.

Degururu!

A person's head fell into the crater. I was familiar with it.

It was the head of Grand Duke Upa Bullenon.

His head had been cut off.

As I climbed out of the crater, I looked at the person who killed Upa Bullenon.

"You son of a bitch."

Someone was cursing while vomiting. As I expected, it was Ariel Diablo. Her surroundings were filled with hundreds of corpses of demons and creatures. She had killed all the strong opponents that survived Hope.

It was a pure physical achievement, with little help from her magic power. She truly was a weapons master. She could use all types of weapons.

“Randolph Briggsiel. Do you have business with me?”

Ariel Diablo glared at me. A third of her proud horns were cut off and she had deep cuts on her shoulders. Spears were stabbed in her sides.

Anyone could see that she was at her limits. If I attacked Ariel Diablo now with my sword then it was highly likely I could kill her.

She knew it as well. I wasn't in my normal state, but she was in an even more serious condition.

"You could finish me off now without much difficulty. You can do it but...it should be finished before the other demons under my command arrive here."

I shrugged.

"I won't touch an injured beast."

The possibilities were high but I had lost almost all of my magic power. Besides, in terms of pure swordsmanship, she was ahead of me. There was no guarantee that I wouldn't be gravely injured.

Of course, Ariel Diablo would weaken over time. She had far too many injuries for them to heal naturally. It wouldn't be too late to kill her if I just sat and watched.

But...I needed to be faster than her troops. She was the first person to enter Greenwich Observatory, but her demons and creatures arrived very slowly. It felt like they were coming one at a time. It was a very wise decision.

"Huhu, I guess you are more of a coward than I thought."

"A day will come when we will meet in a normal environment. There is no need to hurry."

"That is just a coward's excuse."

She was provoking me. She was a demon who didn't like being weak. No matter how noble her lineage, she couldn't help her instincts.

I smiled and stared into Ariel Diablo's eyes.

"What is happening in the Demon World?"

I needed to know this. It was the original reason why the grand dukes assembled. I had wanted to hear the story but the invasion of the angels caused a battle.

Ariel frowned. Then she smiled like she realized something.

"You, did you not receive the special quest?"

"Let's say it is something similar."

"Haha! Cough...! You don't know. No, I will tell you. Right now, there is someone running around the Demon World."

"Someone strong enough to threaten a grand duke?"

"Half of my forces were eaten by him. Upa, Pandemonium...Okullos' forces in the Demon World have completely collapsed."

What?

I didn't answer for a moment.

I put my thoughts together.

"Who would have that type of power in the Demon World?"

I asked incredulously.

The Demon World was originally divided into four equal parts. Ariel, Upa, Pandemonium and Okullos had divided the Demon World precisely between the four of them.

This had continued for hundreds of years.

Yet that was blown away in a few years?

It was nonsense. It was an impossible task.

"There wasn't even an army. He is the only one."

"One? Is he a god?"

"He is someone who tried to be a god in the past."

Ariel was calm. She didn't seem surprised that something like this had happened. While I was frowning, Ariel asked me.

"Randolph Brigsiel, do you know about the Shadow Emperor?"

Shadow Emperor.

Hell Monarch.

He had many titles, but I never imagined that name would pop out of Ariel's mouth.

Ariel scowled with frustration.

"I don't know the exact details. That was just what was written in the contents of the quest. But I know a little bit about the Shadow Emperor. If the Shadow Emperor is truly in the Demon World then it will be a hassle."

Not only Ariel, but the other grand dukes seemed to know about the Shadow Emperor. They felt fear and hurried after hearing his name. If not, they wouldn't have gathered so quickly like this.

Indeed, that was the reason.

I recalled the high dark elf Shilla for a moment. She was originally Chrisley's mother, but became frozen and was sold at the Demon World Auction. She was surrounded by ice and I felt a powerful curse magic. Oswen hadn't yet found a way to melt the ice.

I heard that the magic power was similar to mine. To be precise, it was similar to the Shadow Emperor. I had thought the Shadow Emperor might be in the Demon World, but the possibility was extremely low. How could a dead person be in the Demon World?

Yet now Ariel said that he was in the Demon World. The Hell Monarch was devouring the forces of the grand dukes. It wasn't easy to believe.

“The Shadow Emperor, I've never seen him but I believe Pandemonium has. Anyway, the demons in the Demon World wouldn't last that long. Pandemonium said that the strongest mortal is the Shadow Emperor. He said that only all the grand dukes attacking him would work. It is a really ridiculous story. We ignored him because he was human. Anyway, he was executed by the gods. However...I remembered. It is the first time Pandemonium has recognized someone. How can I not remember?”

"It doesn't make sense. Even if he was revived, can he alone take over the Demon World?”

The power prepared by the Hell Monarch.

I took over the Underground World.

His treasure trove was still intact.

Yet he was trying to take over the Demon World alone.

It was impossible unless he was a god, and he wasn't one.

“The special quest stated that he will occupy the Demon World in one year. We have been participating in the game so we didn't

know about the situation in the Demon World. Only you have the key to solving this problem.”

The key to solve the problem?

Returning to the Demon World?

Something seemed suspicious. I should have received the quest to stop the Shadow Emperor.

“But it is over. I lost my main force, Upa is dead and I don’t know about Pandemonium. If Pandemonium’s words are true, we won’t be able to stop the Shadow Emperor now. I can’t stop him alone. It will be better to build up my strength here.”

I roughly understood. Ariel Diablo seemed to have determined her route. It would have been different if the four grand dukes had led all the creatures in the Demon World. But now that this had happened, she decided that they couldn’t win.

“Huhu, if you don’t kill me now then you will be very annoyed later on.”

“Pandemonium would be more annoying.”

I moved my eyes around. Pandemonium couldn’t be seen anywhere. He didn’t seem to have died so he must have escaped.

I missed him... I felt regret.

I desperately wanted to stab him after he attacked me, but it seemed like I would need to postpone it.

"That's right."

Ariel Diablo also agreed. She had to admit that Pandemonium could be very annoying. In some respects, Pandemonium was more annoying than Upa. He was sly like a snake.

I turned back.

Ariel was unlikely to die here due to her demons and Pandemonium had escaped.

‘If Pandemonium knows that Upa is dead then he will move straight away.’

From now on, it was a fight against time.

I had already eaten some of Upa’s dungeons, but it would be annoying if Pandemonium started moving.

I needed to move faster.

‘Hell Monarch. Shadow Emperor...’

I thought about the Hell Monarch as I walked.

I thought he was dead. His heart was inside me. Even now, my heart was beating faster when I thought about the Hell Monarch.

Was it the real Hell Monarch?

Or was it someone posing as the Hell Monarch?

‘One year.’

The special quest specified one year. If I became a devil and returned to the Demon World then I would meet him.

Or...he might come here, so I needed to think about my options carefully.

Chapter 226: God (1)

It signaled the beginning of the contest. Upa's death was a great opportunity for the other grand dukes. It was a perfect opportunity to reinforce their weakened troops and gain Upa's achievements.

I moved faster than anyone else.

I swept through Upa's dungeon with Maxium.

If I took it over then I would have problems managing it, but I wasn't in the position to worry about that right now. It was better to have a poorly managed dungeon than to have Ariel or Pandemonium occupy it.

The three remaining grand dukes fought over the dungeons belonging to Upa's faction.

The humans also started some major movements. They also seemed to know about Upa's absence. They succeeded in preparing the Awakened and conquering one of the dungeons.

The dungeon cores...they were a very useful energy source for humans. And the fact that one dungeon disappeared meant that new heroes could possibly appear. Dungeons were overflowing with products that humans could use.

But I didn't really care about the activities of the humans. I

wanted to prevent the remaining grand dukes from absorbing Upa's dungeons. If humans destroyed the dungeons then it would also benefit me.

I stirred up the Awakened in Korea. The girin selected Edward Windsor as the king and he led them to conquer the dungeons. The titles and buffs given to Edward Windsor after he became the king made him humanity's strongest Awakened.

Korea was safer than any other country in the world. Monster waves didn't happen often and they could steadily gain resources from the dungeon. Once Edward started his career, many foreign refugees came to Korea.

Humans truly gained hope. The most inspiring place was Korea. Korea was recovering and growing remarkably quickly.

And I...I was doing my best to pressure Pandemonium.

From Africa to Asia, these places were Pandemonium's main stage. Most of his demons were there and his army was like a solid wall.

With strong bonds and superior intelligence, they weaved a spider web from Africa to Asia.

While Ariel Diablo of North America and Upa Bullenon of South America were fighting, Pandemonium was able to accumulate his power.

Once the fight between Upa and Ariel was over, he would rise as a new power.

But that was a story of the past.

He suffered huge losses at Greenwich Observatory. The loss was half of his original army.

Upa was dead and Ariel's damage wasn't that great. In the aftermath of Hope, Pandemonium was the one who suffered the most damage.

And Africa was the place where one of Pandemonium's most powerful vassals, Duke Beilla was stationed.

He was one of the demons who didn't participate in the meeting at Greenwich Observatory. He had been in charge of support from the rear.

Of course, Duke Beilla was one of Pandemonium's strongest followers.

“My Dungeon Master.”

Egypt. It was a wide, open land where the wind was blowing.

Chrisley knelt down and waited for my next command.

I moved my gaze.

There were 100,000 creatures lined up in an orderly manner.

It was the result of using my points and achievement points.

Originally I had two to three times as many creatures, but the rest were at the dungeons or assigned to Maxim. Occupying Upa's dungeons was also important.

Besides Chrisley, there was a three metre tall human with a bald head.

‘An evolved homunculus.’

Gaparam finally received a clue after studying Gustarte. After examining the flesh of a god, Gaparam's skills in the field of life increased by several times. The result of his work was strong enough to chew on the strongest high class creature.

Although mass production wasn't possible due to materials and time, he added a considerable amount of force to my army.

I moved my gaze back to Chrisley.

"The preparations?"

"It is done."

I nodded.

If Chrisley said it was done then it would be.

My crimson cloak waved around me. Then I walked through the creatures.

Kung. Kung. Kung.

Words weren't necessary.

Chrisley and the 100,000 creatures quietly followed behind me.

The successive victories continued. Pandemonium was on the defensive. Ariel also put pressure on Pandemonium so it was inevitable.

At this point, I controlled half of Pandemonium's dungeons. My army increased by more than 200,000 to reach 280,000 and many of them were advanced creatures.

I now had room to breathe. I rearranged the army and dealt with issues that had been postponed.

After a long time, I returned to the Korean dungeon and took out five pieces from my magic bag.

They were the pieces that Chrisley, Tashmal, Hash, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward brought out from the advanced training room. They were divided like a puzzle.

I joined the pieces of the puzzle together.

-The Piece of Balance, Piece of Enlightenment, Piece of Growth, Piece of Faith and Piece of Valour have been combined.

-The interpretation...

-The five pieces mean five types of balance.

-The interpretation...

-The pieces have combined and transformed into one seed.

-‘Seed of Creation’ has been acquired. The Seed of Creation is a necessary item to qualify as a true ‘god.’ The species born from this seed will belong to the owner of the seed. The creator is their god and has the responsibility to lead them.

I touched my jaw.

‘The Seed of Creation.’

It was an unexpected result. I was convinced.

This was an item that the Hell Monarch deliberately hid.

After he was resurrected as a god, he had been thinking of creating his own species.

Thus, he had a plan to be reborn as a true god.

I smiled thinly. It might seem useless, but it was an item necessary to become a god. This was the first time I had seen something like this.

‘Tree of Origin.’

At that moment, I thought of the Tree of Origin. I had gone there hoping to be qualified. I wanted to test myself against my shadow and make myself perfect.

Perfection!

What was perfection?

It was often said that only a god was perfect.

Then did the Tree of Origin want me to become a god?

I stood up. I was curious to see how the Tree of Origin would react to the Seed of Creation.

Tree of Origin.

A huge tree situated in the centre of the dungeon with long roots stretching out.

I walked near it. Then the stems wrapped around me like it had been waiting. I accepted the stems without any hostility and was sucked into the Tree of Origin's inner consciousness.

A dark space.

A small light appeared.

The light soon looked like me.

"It has been a while."

I recalled the bitter memories of my confrontations with the

shadow hunters, but shook them off.

The clone in front of me was just an illusion created by the Tree of Origin.

It was a virtual image that was different from the main body.

It was something I didn't know about before now.

That shadow was the Tree of Origin itself!

"You have realized."

"Is this the world of your consciousness?"

"That's right. This is the closest place to the origin."

The man who looked exactly like me spoke without hesitation. I didn't scold the Tree of Origin and asked.

"Do you know what this is?"

I pulled out the Seed of Creation. The seed was about the size of a palm and kind of looked like a human fetus.

"It is one of the items that acts as a god's qualification."

Indeed.

The Tree of Origin seemed to know what it was.

"Then I might become a god now."

The Tree of Origin shook his head.

"No. To become a god...your divinity is lacking to become a god. You are at a weak level. And there is a way to fill it up."

"Fill it up?"

I was confused. Divinity wasn't something that could be easily gained. But the Tree of Origin spoke like I could fill it up.

The Tree of Origin opened his mouth with a smile.

"Don't you possess an intermediate god?"

"Gustarte..."

I muttered.

I succeeded in capturing Gustarte.

Thanks to that, Chrisley's skills advanced and Gaparam completed his homunculus. But that was all.

"He is a god who has already entered the hands of a mortal once. Divinity is easy to lose but difficult to gain. Once lost, it is rare that the person would wake up. You can wake up the god's will once again with the Moon Arrow, but what will happen to the god who has lost his direction?"

His opinion was different from 0001's who I met in the Reverse World. 0001 said that the Moon Arrow would fix the man. Yet the Tree of Origin said it was already too late.

"You seem to know a lot."

"Nothingness is a place where those who failed to become gods go. And the origin...those who lose their divinity are sent there. Gustarte's soul is already halfway to the origin."

The Tree of Origin told me something that I hadn't known.

But I still had a question.

"Who are you?"

"The administrator of the origin. All the Trees of Origin are controlled by me. I have to lead the former gods here and create

new god candidates. And I am now watching the birth of a new god.”

Tree of Origin.

No, the administrator of the origin didn't hide anything. He spoke honestly.

A god. The Tree of Origin said that I could become one.

My eyes narrowed.

"So I should absorb Gustarte?"

The administrator of the source slightly bowed his head.

"This is all according to the gods' will."

He was acting like I was already a god.

If I earned the divinity and used the Seed of Creation, I could become a true god.

It certainly was an enticing offer.

If I became a god then I could easily become the demon king. It wouldn't be hard to defeat both Ariel and Pandemonium.

But that wasn't all I thought about.

"Don't I have to die to become a god?"

The administrator of the origin laughed.

"That's right. Once possessing divinity and having the appropriate qualifications, death is required to become a god."

"It sounds like you are telling me to die."

"It is worth becoming a god. It is much more valuable than being a demon king."

"I understand your thoughts."

I was curious to some extent.

I closed my eyes and opened them again. My connection to the origin was disconnected and I returned to reality.

Chapter 227: God (2)

A real godship was obtained due to the death of the body and the rise of the soul.

Gustarte.

However, he had a body. It meant that his body itself was made of divinity. Nevertheless, he had fallen and was used by a mortal.

Even so, it couldn't be denied that he had a divine flesh.

‘Absorb him.’

I moved away from the Tree of Origin. I would become a true god by absorbing Gustarte. But I would have to give up my present life.

A god...

I had never thought about it.

The first god I met was the devil Death Bringer. Death Bringer recognized me as a participant of the game and sent me back to Earth. Thanks to that, I became one of the 72 demons and now reached the position of grand duke.

And the gods of Earth. While I was on the verge of death, the 72 gods joined forces to turn back the axis of time. I was able to have

more experience than others.

However, I had never thought about becoming a god myself.

I shook my head.

I couldn't be swayed by something I hadn't imagined before.

From the day I was born, my dream was to become the demon king.

People might say it wasn't comparable to being a god, but I placed different values on each position.

For me, I wanted the position of the demon king. My dream was to sit on his throne and laugh loudly. I came all this way for that one reason. My goal wasn't going to change now.

It was irrelevant if I died. Even if I became a omnipotent god, I wouldn't be able to sit on the demon king's throne. The gods had a different concept of time, and they didn't intervene in the affairs of mortals.

The administrator of the origin saw me as the next god's candidate.

‘I will awaken Gustarte.’

I had completely different thoughts from the administrator of the origin. It was because he had a completely different opinion from 0001. So I thought about waking up the involved party.

The study of Gustarte's body was still ongoing, but it was sluggish. The information was so intensive that it seemed like it wouldn't end in one or two years of research.

But time was limited. After a year, the next enemy to appear would be the Hell Monarch, or a person impersonating him. I needed to prepare for a confrontation with him in the Demon World.

Until that time, I couldn't leave Gustarte's body alone.

"Yihi."

"Yes Master. Did you call?"

Since I entered the dungeon, Yihi had always been waiting nearby. This phenomenon was further strengthened after I collapsed at Greenwich Observatory. It seemed like she didn't want me to leave her sight.

I calmly said.

"Tell Gaparam, I want to see the results of his research on the Moon Arrow."

“Yihihi. I watched the research but couldn’t understand anything. Then, should I go and kick him?”

“Go ahead.”

“Yihihihi!”

Yihi laughed happily as she flapped her wings.

Gaparam stood before me nervously, with one hand holding the research materials and the other one holding the Moon Arrow. The leather on his face looked like a child’s face.

"The study results are good. You did well."

The homunculus was very useful. On the actual battlefield, the dominance of the homunculus was great. The homunculus was the one who broke Duke Beilla’s neck.

“No. It is thanks to Master’s grace that I managed such an achievement.”

Gaparam bowed deeply. He seemed to have a deep respect for me. Since giving him Gustarte’s body, Gaparam started to act very politely towards me. I didn’t care about his original tone, but it didn’t hurt to have Gaparam act like this.

"Have you made any other progress in the research?"

"I've found out the reason for the homunculus' short life. I had to approach the culture differently from the design itself. When I looked at how a god's body works..."

"It is a technical talk."

"I wrote it down in a simpler manner in my journal."

Gaparam handed over the research data.

Most of the results were things that I already knew. He described the tests on the flesh and the effects of a weakened Greed, but it was just a hypothesis.

"Tell me about the Moon Arrow."

He handed over all the data. Then Gaparam sighed and said.

"It isn't a common item. The Moon Arrow is more veiled than his body. But one of the numerous veils...I found out that the Moon Arrow exists for 'balance', but that is all."

Balance. Maybe it also represented the origin.

It seemed like the arrow might restore Gustarte's original

balance.

I spoke in a small tone.

"I have to try it."

"What?"

"I will stab the Moon Arrow into Gustarte's body.

".....!"

Gaparam jolted with surprise.

"I-it isn't clear what will happen. He might run wild."

"The Seven Sins are objects aimed at the gods. Did you know that? And Greed is the best at sealing Gustarte's power."

That's right. During his research, Gaparam found an association with the Seven Sins. The remnants of the flesh managed to suppress Gustarte's power, but the Seven Sins themselves were aimed at the gods.

The more that I thought about it, the sneakier the Hell Monarch appeared. He had prepared a lot for his revenge.

“...I understand.”

Gaparam quietly retreated after handing me the Moon Arrow.

I turned my head. Gustarte was lying down like he was dead. If it wasn't for the rise and fall of his chest, then I really would have thought he was dead.

I held the arrow vertically and I struck Gustarte's chest without any hesitation.

Puok!

The Moon Arrow shone with a blue light after it entered Gustarte's chest. The light grew. The Moon Arrow changed to look like a big key. A hole was formed in Gustarte's chest for the key to enter.

Soon, Gustarte's body rose up. After the key entered, Gustarte's body was split into thousands of pieces before joining back together again.

His flesh was being reconstructed. Just like a snake shedding its skin, the unnecessary parts fell to the ground. This process was repeated for dozens of minutes.

Once the reconstruction finished, Gustarte opened his eyes. He looked at me with deep eyes that were clearly different from when he lost his ego.

“Randolph Briggsiel. This is Earth. I must have malfunctioned for a significant amount of time.”

His words made it seem like he already knew everything. I didn't see any confusion at all. I felt strange as I looked at him.

"Gustarte, you are a god of the Reverse World right?"

"That's right. I am a god that originally shouldn't be here. And...although I am back, I don't have much time left. Soon Death Bringer will notice and erase me.”

“...Are you referring to the devil Death Bringer?"

"Yes. Now that I've regained myself, I am the only god who knows Death Bringer's purpose. His system is even able to neutralize intermediate gods...he will remove me before I can tell the other gods.”

That was the story behind being controlled by a mortal. Upa wouldn't have been able to just suddenly discover a method one day to control Gustarte. I felt a pure sense of curiosity.

"I want to know more.”

“Randolph Briggsiel. Didn't you participate in the experiment involving Death Bringer's system? Impossible things are created

through this system. The dark spirits used a crack to plant a powerful fungus in a gap in my mind.”

I somewhat understood it. The system. The messages that floated in front of me seemed like they were created by Death Bringer.

Certainly...I had been curious. Such a system was created for a reason.

Death Bringer had said.

"From now on, you are a player in a game I created of this world's destruction!"

It meant the system was a game created by Death Bringer.

I received new information that the dark spirits were the reason why Upa could control Gustarte.

Gustarte read my expression and said.

"The dark spirits have learned how to deal with cracks. They accessed the nothingness through the crack. The dark spirits invaded my world, which had been connected to the nothingness. Originally, it was impossible, but they borrowed the power of the system and I couldn't do anything. The system is complete. It even has the power to tie up gods. Death Bringer plans to use this system to remove the other gods."

"In other words, the demons are his test subjects."

"That is correct. Death Bringer isn't the type of person to be interested in filling the position of the demon king. Gods shouldn't intervene in such a thing. As the dark spirits master how to use the cracks, they will naturally seek out other gods, or they would try to wake up the beings in the nothingness or origin. The ancient beings that had already been lost...I don't know why but the dark spirits have become limbs that move according to Death Bringer's intent."

The story contained a lot of information. I couldn't follow it easily.

One thing was for certain, the dark spirits were doing a job.

But it was strange.

This hadn't happen in my previous life. The dark spirits had been on the defensive against the other spirits. There were no cracks or fungus that could control cracks.

"This is all possible due to you. Randolph Brigsiel. It is a side effect of shifting the axis of time backwards. As a result, there is a slight imbalance in the world and lots of cracks formed to fill it up. The many cracks set examples for the dark spirits. Maybe this was what Death Bringer intended. If he planned such a thing by guiding the gods of earth to you...he is a really scary guy."

"I am the cause? This happened because I came back?"

"So, you need to repair it. The system created by Death Bringer is so perfect that even I can't touch it. If you take advantage of that face, you might be able to turn his plan upside down."

I shook my head.

"I don't intend to interfere with the gods."

"Is this interference? Death Bringer is already acting through the dark spirits. He has received enough data from the demons. Who knows what might happen in the future? Death Bringer might get rid of the demons remaining on Earth."

"...He will delete the evidence."

"It is an undeniable truth. It is already in progress."

My eyes narrowed. It was hard to deny Gustarte's words. But it seemed like that was only half the story involving Death Bringer.

"Gustarte. Is there any relationship between the dark spirits and the resurrection of the Hell Monarch?"

The Hell Monarch had died. I had his heart. But it is said that the Hell Monarch is in the Demon World. It was weird no matter how I

thought about it. That's why I asked Gustarte.

"Hell Monarch...it isn't impossible for the beings deep in the nothingness to return again to this world. Neither the gods or Death Bringer can interfere. The dark spirits planned and executed the work.

"But I saw a message that the Hell Monarch was destroyed. Is there a means of destruction without a complete disappearance?"

"The deep depths of the nothingness is a place where even Death Bringer isn't allowed to enter. It isn't unusual for the system to assume that something it couldn't detect was destroyed."

One of the things I was most curious about was solved.

The Hell Monarch wasn't destroyed, just trapped. Then, the dark spirits reached into the nothingness and pulled him out.

Chapter 228: God (3)

“The Hell Monarch is a sword to kill the demons.”

I nodded. In my previous life, that name hadn't appeared that much. It was strange that he would suddenly occupy the Demon World in one year.

“Randolph Brigsiel. You have received the protection of the system, so it is impossible for the dark spirits to try something on you through the system. There has to be direct military intervention.”

Gustarte confirmed it. The dark spirits wouldn't be able to plant something in me. They had the ability to deal with an intermediate god. I thought that was a little burdensome, but it turned out that I was safe in this area.

"If you make my dream come true then I will return you, Gustarte."

I seriously said. I wouldn't be able to harm him if I didn't use the system, so it wouldn't be bad to have him on my side. Thorough preparations were needed.

"Absorb me."

"I don't want to be a god."

I flatly refused. A god. It sounded good, but that was just on the surface. I couldn't do everything I wanted as a god.

However, Gustarte intended something different.

"You won't be a god. It is just to stop Death Bringer from getting his hands on me. That is the worst case scenario."

The gods originally didn't get involved with humans. That was the history of the old days. A typical example was that they didn't care if a species was destroyed.

But those same gods seemed to have changed. If I absorbed Gustarte then I would have tremendous divinity. For all I knew, there was a possibility that my body wouldn't be able to endure it and I would die.

I glanced at Gustarte's chest. After the key was turned, it had melted and concealed itself in his body.

"The Moon Arrow. This is the key to balance. It is a weapon that even Death Bringer doesn't have. As long as this key is kept in your heart, you will be immortal forever. You will gain divinity but not become a god. It will be fine as long as you have a strong attachment to the world. However, your flesh will cease to exist once that attachment disappears."

It seemed like a chant.

I scratched my chin and asked.

"Won't this be a waste if Death Bringer's plan isn't stopped?"

"You have to plant a seed in the system. If the results aren't registered, the Seed of Creation can't be registered. It will cause a strong error. Death Bringer invested most of his divinity in the system so he will fall down. It will take a considerable amount of time to restore his scattered divinity. During that time, you need to destroy him. If you don't, you will continue to suffer for a long time from his ploys."

I started into Gustarte's eyes.

I didn't see any expressions or emotions.

There was no suffering or joy.

Was this a perfect 'god'?

'I will be the first demon to kill an immortal.'

I started laughing. A demon killing a god. It was quite a good accomplishment. I had no doubt that it would be registered as a legend grade or better.

Death Bringer was a higher ranked god than Gustarte.

“There is no time. He has noticed.”

Gustarte looked up at the sky. The ceiling was blocking his view, but he seemed to see things that weren't visible to me.

At that moment.

Kung - kung - kuoong - kwarurung!

The sky was shaking. Numerous lightning strikes and strange anomalies occurred. A powerful swirl of magic power could be felt nearby.

I stood at the crossroads of choice. However, I stopped worrying. If I stayed still then Gustarte would be defeated by Death Bringer. I would go through hardships after that. It wouldn't be good business.

“I accept.”

I immediately placed my hand on Gustarte's chest. The key appeared and I openly took it.

Kwaaaaack!

The divinity poured into the key. Gustarte forced the divinity into my body. Soon his body became slightly transparent.

"Kkuck...!"

However, I couldn't look at Gustarte properly. My body that accepted his divinity was collapsing. It was hard to endure the power spilling over. It was the first time I had felt like this. I soon felt a strong sense of helplessness and had a desire to give everything up.

‘I can't give up.’

I couldn't give up. I would lose my life if I gave up here. But I would regret it. I would have a lot of regrets if I couldn't handle the divinity.

I sharpened my willpower so that it was like a knife. And I soon forgot the physical pain.

“I will go back to the origin. I will cheer for you from there. Please...become stronger. In this world, those who are weak will die...”

It was a familiar saying. When I was a child on the battlefield, a dying man I didn't know had said it to me. I used it as my creed and became stronger.

I painfully opened my eyes.

Puk!

Something was stuck in my chest. The Moon Arrow. A key of balance.

The key was stabbed in me and Gustarte had completely disappeared.

He left with a small smile.

Hot. It felt like flames were burning inside my body. I wanted to cut my own neck to end this pain. But I still had a few lingering strands of attachment.

That's right. I had a lot of regrets. There were many things I still wanted to achieve. I would feel sorry if I gave them up now. Thus I persisted. Despite my teeth and gums bleeding, I didn't let go of my life.

Time seemed to go on for an eternity. Later I even forgot about the flow of time. Gradually the pain disappeared and the period of stabilization arrived. But my head was empty. I couldn't remember my name, yet the strong lingering attachment was still in me.

It could also be called greed.

My flesh melted and disappeared. However, it was reconstructed again. This was continuously repeated. Five times, ten times, twenty times...after my flesh was reconstructed for the thirty-third time, it was finally able to accept the divinity.

My body had clearly gone through a great upheaval.

The cells of my body were normalized.

Although it was initially some lingering attachments, many things pulled me back to this world. I moved my feet. As my feet moved, I started to remember everything.

I was Randolph Briggsiel.

One of the four grand dukes and demon king candidate.

There were several other stories but this was enough for now.

After a long time, the heat subsided and I could open my eyes.

I opened my eyes and raised my upper body.

I felt a fluffy futon, the magic power that filled the earth and a familiar place.

“Master...!”

I heard Yihi’s voice and raised my hand to stop her. I needed to check the condition of my body first.

‘I have changed.’

What was this?

My spirit was still the same. But everything else was new.

I was a little bigger and my hair reached to my toes. No matter how many times I cut my hair, it grew again in a flash.

There was a strange pattern engraved on the back of both hands.

‘Dragons swallowing a mirror.’

A giant dragon swallowing a mirror was on both hands. It clearly had a relationship with absorbing the god of the Reverse World, Gustarte.

In addition, my body had become harder than steel and my internal power felt like overflowing lava. It wasn’t comparable to exceeding the limits of my potential or transcending.

Was this divinity?

It felt like the majesty of a true god.

‘Status window.’

I was able to quantify the changes in my body.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon Grand Duke (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

- * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)
- * First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)
- * Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)
- * Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)
- * Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)

Stats

Strength: 110 (+20)

Intelligence: 120 (+15)

Agility: 110 (+20)

Stamina: 115 (+22)

Magic Power: 130 (+16)

Potential: (585+93/???)

Remaining Stat Points: 47

Electric Power: 557GW

Uniqueness: The master of the Underground World. The Heart of the Hell Monarch has completely awakened. Has a

strong divinity for some reason.

Skill: Combine Everything (Ex U), Mind's Eye (Epic), Dark Sword (Epic), Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Pride (Epic), Corruption (Ex Epic), Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive), Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive), Reverse World (God)

Skill and Item Effects: Wrath (Strength +7), Sloth (Agility +7), Pride (Stamina + 7), Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 119 Intelligence 111 Agility 105 Stamina 112 Magic 116
Potential (470+93/570)

Strength 130 Intelligence 135 Agility 130 Stamina 137 Magic 146
Potential (585+93/???)

Ah...!

I was able to see more clearly thanks to the status window.

I became ridiculously stronger.

Furthermore, I hadn't seen the end of my limits yet!

Aside from that, no title was given. However, my pure stats had increased remarkably and I received the skill 'Reverse World.'

I looked at the skill Reverse World more closely. After a moment, an explanation emerged.

-Name: Reverse World (God)

Description - Contains the strongest powers of the god Gustarte from the Reverse World. The rating of two skills can be permanently raised to Demigod.

An amazing function is available in the Reverse World.

** Once specified, it can't be switched to another skill.

It was the first time I had seen a god rank skill so of course the effects were amazing. The skill Reverse World itself had no effect, but it could raise the level of other skills to demigod rank. I would be able to achieve enormous efficiency by using it.

'It isn't strange to call me a living god.'

I was stronger. No, it wasn't enough to say that I was stronger.

I was indeed like a living god.

And I suddenly thought about the existence of a ‘god.’

If it wasn't for the sin Greed, I would never have been able to capture Gustarte. He was able to use skills even in his unstable state.

But now his strength was mine.

‘The dark spirits. Hell Monarch...Death Bringer.’

It was worth a try.

Chapter 229: Demon King (1)

It wasn't bad since I had powerful enemies.

I turned my head and looked around.

Most of my main subordinates were here.

Oswen, Chrisley, Tashmal, Roy, Rose and Yihi.

Shock, worry, and astonishment could all be seen.

But the one emotion they had in common was relief.

"How long has it been?"

"To be precise. 139 days, Master."

Yihi said.

"Ha!"

I laughed bitterly.

139 days. That was almost half the time limit given for the Hell Monarch's invasion. It wouldn't be surprising if there were sudden

changes during this time.

I didn't know what had happened. I expressed my curiosity.

"I don't see Maxium. Is he still trying to occupy Upa's dungeons?"

Maxium.

A knight who thought of me as the Hell Monarch and swore allegiance. He moved according to my orders.

If everyone had gathered then he should be here as well. But I didn't see him anywhere.

The area became filled with static. None of them could open their mouths.

"Master...Maxium is dead. That bad Pandemonium."

Yihi was forced to speak. I frowned.

The last I remembered, Pandemonium was on the defensive.

He couldn't afford to send out separate troops.

I gave Maxium a massive army and he sliced the enemy like a fish

in water. In order to get rid of Maxium, the army also needed to be removed.

Then how did Pandemonium remove Maxium?

It was impossible in terms of common sense. My expression hardened.

"Tell me about the last 139 days."

In the early days, nothing big happened. I was absent, but it was difficult to reverse the situation.

Pandemonium weakened and Chrisley continued winning. Maxium also took half of Upa's dungeons. I could see how much was gained by looking at the residual stats.

Ariel also did her best to keep Pandemonium in check. She quickly called her forces and also succeeded in restoring the silver knights. If this continued then it was obvious that Pandemonium would be ruined. There were only a few steps left until he had to officially confront Ariel Diablo.

So all of Pandemonium's limbs were cut off. He had only one dungeon remaining.

"All Yihi knows is that Pandemonium pretended to retreat. Chrisley will tell you the rest, Master."

I turned my eyes towards Chrisley. Chrisley spoke with a grim expression.

“...My Dungeon Master. Pandemonium planned something separate. He took Hash. I should have been more careful, but I was drunk on the successive victories.”

"Pandemonium did something to Hash?"

It was strange. Hash had the highest rank among the angels on Earth, but there was no reason to kidnap him. Even if Hash was kidnapped, the angels wouldn't help Pandemonium. In that respect, the angels were like swords that Pandemonium didn't understand.

Chrisley continued like she knew my question.

“Pandemonium...he used Hash as a sacrifice in front of his dungeon. Along with the cherub blood, he also obtained the blood of a thrones angel from somewhere. When we attacked his dungeon, he opened the door in front of us.”

The thrones angel Opinion. I knew the name. Apart from Hash, he was the next highest ranking and led the angels at Greenwich Observatory. He offered the blood of both of them as sacrifices. It was clear that something unusual had happened.

"What did Pandemonium open?"

"The summons. Celestial Door...opened."

Chrisley closed her eyes like she was recalling that time. She shuddered like she was sick. Tashmal, Oswen and the others also formed fists.

At that time, Tashmal interrupted. Her black wings flapped strongly as she spoke.

"The seraphim Camael descended. Along with his 1.14 million subordinates...I saw that Camael-nim would descend, but I never imagined it would be at the hand of a demon."

Tashmal's voice was filled with rage. A summoning by a demon wasn't permitted. She had fallen but was still influenced by her previous angel state.

A seraphim was an angel at the very top of the hierarchy. Except for the Celestial King, a seraphim was the strongest angel in Heaven.

"I don't think that Camael would help just because Pandemonium summoned him. Self-destruction?"

"He was driven to the edge. He has a nasty temper and can't stand anyone else taking his position."

Tashmal's words were correct. Pandemonium was greedy. He wasn't completely different from Upa in this regard. He absolutely hated anyone being above him. His ruin was guaranteed if he opened the Celestial Door.

Pandemonium learnt demonic magic. He even knew ancient magic. He was well aware of what would happen if he opened the Celestial Door. It was strange that...Camael.

"What is the damage? Tell me the situation."

I turned back to Chrisley.

Chrisley spoke in a calm manner.

"Maxium returned to the earth and the army he commanded was destroyed. After Camael was summoned, 70% of the army I led also returned to the ground."

I frowned.

I was fortunate that not all of them had disappeared. I hadn't expected it. It was proof of Camael's power.

I remained silent and Chrisley continued.

"Fortunately, Pandemonium was killed by Camael. In addition, Camael is annihilating all living things around him in the name of

cleansing the world. I collected all the creatures in Korea to resist but I don't know when Camael will hit."

It meant that I was on the defensive.

This had all happened in 139 days. Laughter emerged.

"And..."

"And? Is there something else to report?"

I wasn't surprised to hear that there was something else.

My gaze pierced through her and Chrisley opened her mouth.

"My Dungeon Master. Grand Duke Ariel Diablo is waiting."

Ariel Diablo.

She was a grand duke who built up her strength in North America.

In my previous life, she had survived until the end and became the final winner.

It was surprising that she came to where I was alone.

It seemed like she was near the dungeon and had been waiting for me to appear for two weeks. It seemed like she had something to share with me.

She didn't even have a creature with her.

She risked coming to see me for a reason.

"It has been a long time, Randolph Briggsiel."

Ariel was outside the dungeon. She was staying at the humans' old outpost while waiting for me.

I quietly stared at Ariel. She had become stronger in the past 139 days. It seemed like she had used this momentum to cross the 'wall.' She entered a state of transcendence.

Even the broken horns on her forehead were restored. Rather, they had grown larger than before. The horns were a symbol of her strength.

I erased any expression from my face and asked.

"What did you come here for? You must be bored to be playing around like this."

"Huhu, I'm not a lazy demon."

Ariel slowly gazed at me. I took an estimation of her. Her words seemed to be loaded with meaning.

It was the skill Power of Words. Those who were lower than her would be affected when she spoke. Her words just needed intent behind them. But it had no effect on me.

"You have crossed the wall. Yet even though you are transcendent, I can't see any end. You are truly a monster."

Ariel was shocked. She had become able to measure my capabilities after becoming transcendent. Now that I had absorbed Gustarte, it was impossible for her to figure out anything about me.

"Are you busy?"

"I thought it was time for a chat or two between us. Oh, I'll tell you why I came. You might have guessed. Camael...it is to discuss measures against the person who came through the Celestial Door."

"The situation doesn't look good."

"I won't hide. What about you? Camael destroys humans as well as demons. He is truly running wild. This is all due to Pandemonium's summoning. We have to work together if we want to keep Camael in check."

Joining forces?

It was an astonishing remark from Ariel.

She was the direct descendant of a demon king. She had a demon king's blood. If the grand dukes weren't antagonistic to each other in the Demon World then she would have risen to the seat of the demon king.

So she didn't know how to compromise. I never thought she would ask for an alliance with me. I had suffered many difficulties in my previous life due to her.

As far as I knew, she never extended a hand to anyone first.

Yet now she was requesting an alliance with me. She came directly to South Korea!

It was amazing.

It was a reasonable choice to remove the enemy first. I had been hoping for a confrontation with her under normal circumstances.

However...there was no room for that. It wasn't at the end even if Camael was removed. The dark spirits and Death Bringer still remained.

I organized my thoughts.

“Ariel Diablo. You and I have to clear up this fight.”

"A competition to decide the demon king?"

"What good would it do to drag it on?"

I said indifferently and Ariel soon smiled.

She had the same idea as me. The last one to remain would use everything available to defeat Camael.

“Okay.”

"You decide the timing. Although I would prefer if it is in the near future."

Both of us weren't in the best condition. I needed my physical state to recover a little bit more.

The confrontation between Ariel Diablo and I would be watched by all our subordinates. That way, things could be finished without any discord.

I turned around. Ariel also disappeared from the outpost.

Chapter 230: Devil (2)

Exactly seven days later.

She led five loyal subordinates to South Korea. Ariel was the one who set the timing and location, and she insisted on the confrontation being in South Korea. It seemed like she was sure that I wouldn't use any tricks.

It might have been stupid, but she was stubborn. I never thought about using any tricks. I realized how important the meaning of my words was after acquiring divinity. There was a chance that I might lose my divinity. I knew it instinctively.

"Let's decide this. Randolph Brigsiel."

Ariel was wearing armour and holding a sword made of a balrog's bones. The long tail bone made her seem like a balrog.

I wore a crimson cloak and Infinity Armour. Wrath and the Emperor's Sword trembled in my hands.

As a result of this fight, the demon king would be determined.

I couldn't relax. I had been dreaming of this moment since I was young. Now it was time to achieve it directly, rather than just dreaming.

"I'll do that."

I nodded.

I only had a short time to breathe.

I struck an attack posture.

Kuwuong!

An expert in weapons. She could use any weapons. In particular, no one could follow her in regards to swordsmanship. She spent a considerable amount of time trying to learn all the sword techniques in the world. If I got into a pure armed struggle with Ariel then I might not have the advantage.

Even though I had made many advances in Haien Moon's swordsmanship, it was still far below Ariel's pure sword ability. I was two or three times inferior to her in that regards. It was like the difference between an adult and a child.

However, I wasn't going to fight using just physical strength. I was using everything I had in this battle. Even if Ariel Diablo had swordsmanship, I was far ahead of her in other areas.

Kwaduduk!

The ground shook. It was like an earthquake was occurring.

From the beginning, Ariel had surrounded her sword in chaos. It was her patented 'Abyss Sword.'

In order to counter this, I used Dark Sword. It used to be inferior Abyss Sword, but my magic power was superior and so it showed several times its original strength.

'I see.'

Ariel Diablo's brilliant movements caused minor tremors. I felt it. Her next movements were expected. And I had the ability to dominate every situation.

If it was before then I wouldn't have been able to catch all her movements. Ariel Diablo's movements were filled with finesse and every subtle movement was elaborate. I discovered the optimal route to dismantle her attack.

Chwack! Chwack! Chaeeng!

Our swords clashed. Ariel Diablo was pushing ahead with more vigour. She even used dual swords so I was forced to be amazed at the frequency of her attacks. She was pouring everything into her swords.

My movements were haphazard as I defended against her swordsmanship. Although I was just defending...

Hwaruruk!

I brought out Pride's flames. They weren't flames that could burn for eternity. Pride's flames became a real hellfire after my rise in magic power. They swallowed everything for dozens of metres around me. The land melted and her movements were sealed.

Kuaaaang!

But Ariel didn't stay still. If she stopped moving even a little bit then it would be her defeat. She raised her swords up high and the ground surged like waves.

'Waterspout.'

This was also one of Ariel's skills. The land turned into a tsunami that tried to swallow me.

Kwang! Kwang! Kwaaaaang!

The tsunami was repeated dozens of times. As if that wasn't enough, Ariel raised her sword again and invoked a skill.

Swaaack! Swaaack!

The number of ivory swords had increased. They were the same swords, genuine copies. Every single one had remarkable destructive powers. There was a total of 512 swords in the air.

‘Weapon Cheat (Ex Epic).’ It was a skill that could make hundreds of copies of a weapon. The sword was made from the bones of the strong balrog, and used the high rated swords to create a huge storm.

A total of 512 swords became stuck in the ground, causing it to shake. It was a rain of swords.

“Giant Swamp.”

That wasn’t the end.

Ariel clutched her sword and closed her eyes. Then the swords stuck in the earth started to shine. Soon all 512 swords formed a circle around me.

Kuuong! Kuuong! Kuuong!

The 512 swords pushed through the ground.

Chiiiiing!

Noises were heard from underneath me. A loud noise that paralyzed my hearing. The sound grew bigger until it reached its peak, then it became completely quiet.

Kuwaaaaaang!

This was the calm before the storm. A deep hole formed and a fierce light emerged from it. The light reached up to the sky and wiped out everything in the middle.

A linked skill. Rather than relying on only one, several skills were connected to increase the power.

The hole was several kilometres in diameter. The demons and creatures were warned earlier, so they were much further away. If not, they would have been swept away and died. There would have been no exceptions.

That's how destructive it was. The gigantic pillar of light continued crying out like a god. Ariel Diablo had transcended. It was an attack that she poured everything into. If she had completed this skill at Greenwich Observatory then the winning party would have been Ariel Diablo.

She would have overturned the battlefield by herself.

However...

Hwaruk! Hwaruruk!

My fire didn't go out. I slowly climbed into the hole of light. Pride's flames were protecting my body. After my growth in magic power, Infinite Armour had also transformed to look like a red dragon.

Ddubeok.

Finally, my feet touched the bottom of the hole. Ariel Diablo's attack was certainly great. If it hit my body then I would have been severely wounded.

However, this was a fight for our lives. This strike wasn't enough to get rid of me.

Grrrung!

Lightning Elemental.

Lightning God cried out. Lightning God and Pride's flames both embraced my body to reduce the blow.

Once the skill was over, I no longer needed to be protected and Lightning God moved to an attack stance.

The size of Lightning God also increased. Skills were affected by magic power, so all the ones I learnt had become stronger.

I moved my finger and Lightning God swallowed up Ariel Diablo.

Kuaaaang!

Lightning God roared. Ariel calmly switched targets. She blocked Lightning God with her chaos sword.

Chiik! Chiiiik!

Ariel's sword split Lightning God exactly in half. The unleashed power fell to the ground, causing power outages. After a while, Lightning God merged and changed shapes.

It seemed to be a spear and shield. Lightning God struck, but couldn't pierce through Ariel's sword. However, Lightning God infinitely regenerated and constantly tormented Ariel.

I knew it wasn't the end so I moved.

I covered Wrath and the Emperor's Sword with Dark Sword, then again with Pride's flames. Also...

I recalled Lightning God. Lightning God immediately mixed with Pride's flames.

Linkage. However, it carried a very big risk. This was the first time I had tried it. Yet I was confident I wouldn't fail.

As magic power increased, so did my level of understanding. In addition, the 135 points in intelligence meant I could safely use the skills.

Grruk. Kurururu...

There was a slight rebound but that was it.

It caused so much confusion that chaos also formed on my swords.

Ariel's eyes changed as she saw it.

The time for general attacks was over. Now was the time to meet.

Ariel also knew it. We were both confident about the outcome of the fight.

If the strike failed then the only thing left...

Chwang!

The ivory sword was split in half.

The chaos on the sword was severed.

Ariel stared at me like it was absurd.

"You monster."

Duk. Ariel Diablo raised her hands.

"I lost."

I had the freedom to kill Ariel if I wanted. This was a fight between demons. The loser lost everything and the winner gained it. It would be a natural action for me to take her life after becoming the winner.

Soon her vassals arrived. I was accompanied by my creatures.

Ariel's demons bit their lips while my subordinates were cheering and laughing.

I spoke to Ariel who was kneeling in the centre.

"Take the lead in killing Camael, Ariel Diablo. You will act as the vanguard to destroy my enemies."

I didn't kill Ariel. I didn't have a choice.

The winner had been determined, but the war wasn't over yet. First, Camael still remained. Camael was a very tricky angel to kill alone.

'I need to kill 1.14 million angels first. Until that happens, he is immortal.'

This was something that Tashmal had told me.

The seraphim Camael. An almighty angel who shared life with 1.14 million other angels. Although it was similar to the skill that Ariel used on the silver knights in the past, Camael was different in that all 1.14 million needed to be killed first.

In order to do this, I needed to keep Ariel alive. It would be a little easier if she took the lead to destroy the angels. Camael was close to omnipotent, but he wasn't invincible. The most important thing was to kill his army. I needed to shorten that time as much as possible.

I extended my foot. Ariel had to kiss my foot for the ceremony between master and slave to end.

If she refused then she wouldn't be able to keep her life. I was doing her a great favour by stamping her with the seal of a slave. It allowed her to keep her honour, but she could never be hostile towards me. From the beginning to the end. I needed to take the result into account.

Her choice was also the choice of her demons. I waited patiently. Soon Ariel opened her mouth.

"I, Ariel Diablo, admit defeat and will swear myself to Randolph Brigsiel from now on."

Ariel slowly moved her mouth to my foot.

I was surprised. I never thought she would comply without a reaction.

It was different from what I knew in my previous life. Did I not understand Ariel's personality because I was too weak?

Jjuk!

Ariel kissed my foot.

The winner and loser had clearly been decided.

My expression didn't change. But I was feeling intense emotions.

I had moved without a break and finally achieved my goal.

I had succeeded in climbing from the bottom up to the highest place.

If someone heard my story then they wouldn't have believed it. They wouldn't want to believe it.

But it was all true. I was now on the verge of grasping the truth.

Once the ceremony was finished, messages popped up before me.

-All the demons on Earth have been subdued.

You are qualified to become the demon king.

-An incredible achievement. The title 'The Demon King' has been acquired.

Your occupation has been changed from 'Grand Duke' to 'Demon King.'

The demon king is the ruler of the Demon World. It is the absolute name given to those who have conquered the Demon World.

It is now possible to open the door to the Demon World. However, it is impossible to open right now due to Camael's appearance. The Celestial Door and Demon World Door can't overlap.

Chapter 231: Demon King (3)

The sky was dark. Even the moon was invisible in the darkness. The darkness ate the light as it spread all over the world. And invisible things started to show themselves.

The dead...specters. The millions of specters started to move around me. The boundary between the living and the dead was only visible to my eyes.

The demon king could see the other side. That was a story I had heard. I thought it was just a rumour, but it turned out to be true.

I lifted my head. I could see the Celestial Door and the Demon World Door floating in the sky. Both of them were closed and couldn't be opened. If I killed Camael then the Celestial Door would disappear and I could open a path to the Demon World.

-Resentment.

The specters kept whispering to me. Their misery and anger. It was a negative magic power. If my mentality wasn't strong enough then I would be assimilated on the spot.

But I just laughed.

I knew the identity of these specters.

‘Those who were killed by former demon kings. It is hard for them to leave.’

There had been many demon kings. Most of them had destructive desires and couldn't stand others. They sought ruthless destruction and some became crazy. It was impossible to count the lives they killed using one hand. The despair that was enough to fill the world was now entering my ears.

The demon kings' karma...

I nodded. It had always been like this. In ancient books, the power of the demons couldn't even be compared to the demon king. Once recognized as the demon king, they had the power to instantly establish peace in the Demon World.

I also thought this was ridiculous. But the grand dukes seemed to be aware of it. So I was thirsty for the position of the devil.

‘It looks like absorbing the negative energy will affect the quality of the demon king.’

The negative magic power was beyond imagination. Even if I absorbed and absorbed, it was an amount that would never end. No matter how much I absorbed, it wouldn't even be 5%.

But my mind wasn't controlled by the ghosts.

I cleared away the ghosts. I had obtained divinity and gone

beyond transcendence. I was able to grasp the identity of the specters in an instant.

‘Get lost.’

I ordered. Soon the ghosts split apart and a long road was formed.

At the end of the road. The place where the powers of the former demon kings were kept!

I looked down at my chest.

Gustarte had given me the key of balance. Thanks to this key, the divinity wasn't overflowing and was moving smoothly.

However, I was always in danger of becoming a god.

I was now trying to defile that divinity.

I placed my hands on my chest.

Tuduk. Tududuk.

And I extracted the key.

Kuwaaaang!

As soon as it opened, my body acted like a black hole and started to attract the specters around me.

But what I really wanted wasn't the specters. The specters were specters. I wanted the powers of the former demon kings.

I stretched out my hand. I couldn't scoff at the former demon kings. They always had the title of the strongest. Even though I was transcendent and obtained the divinity, they were formidable experts who dominated the Demon World with force.

But...only one person responded to my call.

He was huge. Huge wings, goat horns and the skin of a dragon.

The demon king Diablo!

He ruled the Demon World for the longest time among the demon kings, and his family was always guaranteed the position of grand duke. Among the nobles, the origin of his clan could be considered the highest. He existed a very long time ago, perhaps when the Demon World and demon king system had just begun.

I briefly bowed my head. He was worthy enough to be greeted.

-I was watching you. I have been waiting for a child like you. A child with the true power of a demon! A child who will bring down

the god Death Bringer, the coward who brought down his children due to fear!

Diablo took a step forward. Soon he joined me, and the impact was more intense than that of the specters around me.

Diablo sent me some short memories.

The story of a faraway past. It was around the time when the Demon World was being created.

The devil Death Bringer created the demons. But the demons' appearance was very different from what I knew. They had goat horns, rough leather and wings.

It was different from what I knew, but I still knew it.

I had become like that after using Corruption.

And I knew how strong that power was.

Death Bringer was worried about it. The demons were too powerful. The power of the species itself threatened the gods. Even the confident devil felt like his position would be threatened over time, so he took special measures.

The degeneration of the species.

He removed the horns and wings that were the symbol of their power and inserted human genes.

He also added a more violent nature.

The demons were weakened and the balance of power between the Celestial World and the Demon World weakened.

If this continued, the Demon World would be destroyed by angels. Maybe the demons would self-destruct in a battle among themselves. The devil intended to leave it alone.

The demon king Diablo was furious after finding out the truth.

The angels were designed to have a similar strength to the demons. This was in order to maintain the balance between worlds. A devil shouldn't want to destroy the children he created simply because he was scared of them.

Diablo couldn't stand still while the balance between the two worlds collapsed.

So he secretly left a feature in the new demon kings. His power as the demon king would be passed on. In order to achieve a miracle against the angels!

He noticed Death Bringer's actions too late. And when an immortal became too deeply involved in the affairs of mortals, their divinity would fall. He was forced to watch as a species was

manipulated to degenerate.

Due to the presence of the demon kings, the Celestial World and Demon World barely maintained the balance. But that was it. The demons and Demon World were still at a risk of perishing at any time. Both internally and externally.

So Diablo had been waiting.

The origin demon king.

He wanted a demon who could go against Death Bringer.

And now, the wait was finally over.

I plugged the key back into my chest. The swirling magic power gradually calmed down. However, the sacredness of the divinity was greatly lost.

The mirrored red dragons had turned black. Even the intermediate god Gustarte wasn't able to block all of Diablo's magic power.

No one knew what would happen when two different powers joined. But if the combination was completed, an unprecedented power might be obtained.

Chwaaack!

I tore apart this negative world.

Thus, the ceremony to become the demon king finished.

"I see the Demon King."

Once the ceremony concluded, Ariel Diablo was the first one to kneel at my feet. She had still spoken informally with me but it was different after the ceremony.

"I see the Demon King."

Along with Ariel, the demons in her faction kneeled down. Even the quietly watching creatures took the same posture. Even Yihi was swept away by the atmosphere.

Huoung.

I flapped my wings. My appearance had changed. I had huge horns and wings. Even if I stayed still, my magic power flowed around and overwhelmed others.

This was power. It was a distinctly different feeling from when I obtained the divinity.

I had to check my status window. A smile emerged as I saw my changed status window.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon King (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

* Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

* Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)

* Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)

* Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)

* Origin Demon King (God, all stats +10, grants a transcendent rank)

Stats

Strength: 127 (+30)

Intelligence: 129 (+25)

Agility: 121 (+30)

Stamina: 133 (+32)

Magic Power: 138 (+26)

Potential: (648+143/???)

Remaining Stat Points: 47

Electric Power: 742GW

Uniqueness: The master of the Underground World. The

Heart of the Hell Monarch has completely awakened. Has a strong divinity for some reason. Inherited the power of Diablo, the origin demon king.

Skill: Combine Everything (Ex U), Mind's Eye (Epic), Dark Sword (Epic), Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Pride (Epic), Corruption (Legend), Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive), Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive), Reverse World (God), True Words (God, Passive)

Skill and Item Effects: Wrath (Strength +7), Sloth (Agility +7), Pride (Stamina + 7), Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 130 Intelligence 135 Agility 130 Stamina 136 Magic 146
Potential (585+93/???)

Strength 157 Intelligence 154 Agility 151 Stamina 165 Magic 164
Potential (648+143/???)

The origin demon king.

Apart from Reverse World, there was a new skill added.

True Words! The words I spoke would contain true power.

The rating of Corruption also went up.

I liked it.

I had become even stronger. My monster like stats were close to 800 points! I had never seen stats so high before.

However, this wasn't the end.

I would become even stronger. I had no thoughts about stopping here.

At that time, Ariel looked up at me. Her eyes were different from before.

Longing, respect...

She was aware of what I had.

Her name was Ariel Diablo.

Now I had the blood of Diablo inside me.

Blood was a powerful draw.

I hadn't thought about it, but it wasn't bad. As a result, she was my faithful servant and would handle the enemy more enthusiastically.

I was the demon king but I still hadn't accomplished my dream.

It was to sit on the throne in the Demon World and laugh heartily. My dream was to sit there and laugh out loud.

In order to do this, I needed to deal with the enemy standing in my way.

"Listen."

Huuuuong!

My voice was loaded with magic power.

Furthermore, the skill 'True Words' was added. It had a powerful effect that surpassed Ariel's skill.

All eyes turned towards me.

"This is my first order as the demon king. My faithful servants. Kill all enemies blocking my way. Don't leave even one of Camael's angels alive."

“As you command!”

“As you command!”

My rule was absolute.

I didn't allow for questions.

Everyone naturally agreed, so the only thing left was to ruin Cael.

Chapter 232: Camael (1)

Camael was an angel with 10 wings. He led a huge army of 1.14 million and obliterated all life around him.

His power was conditional invincibility! He was immortal unless the 1.14 million angels died. The angels' lives were like nutrients for Camael.

But Camael now had an intense desire to destroy everything. His original personality as a seraphim was almost neutered. It was because Camael was an angel who moved according to the great will. In the aftermath of the summoning, Camael was unable to hear the voice of the great will.

This caused Camael to want to destroy all living things. They were ordinary humans, but some of them had a strangely different feeling. He thought they were polluted or cursed, so he decided to clean them up. If he erased everything then the closed door would open again and he could hear the voice of the great will.

In fact, he was strong enough to do that. A third of Earth had already been destroyed and turned into a land of despair. Destruction seemed inevitable.

They thought so until my army struck.

The humans were frustrated. After the angels' attack began, nobody could stop them. Originally, the angels didn't actively hunt humans. There was complete disregard towards the humans. To be

more accurate, they didn't care at all. The angels only actively hunted demons, with human casualties along the way.

However, the attitude of the angels suddenly changed. They left countless dead bodies behind them. The angels started in the west and quickly advanced to the east. Humans started to quickly evacuate towards the east.

And one of their destinations was Korea. It was a country that was recovering quickly. There were the strongest Awakened, and the average level was also high. There were also refugees because they knew that Korea was safely acquiring resources through the dungeon.

But there were also top-ranking people from other countries. They lost their countries and moved to Korea.

Thanks to that, there were numerous problems but also a lot of support. The defensive wall was thick and there were many strong Awakened protecting it.

All the Awakened in Korea united to prepare for a war with the angels.

Everyone was united until the world darkened and a series of 'signs' appeared.

After the signs, many creatures exited the dungeon.

“We have to attack. The Dungeon Master has exited so this is a perfect opportunity.”

"It won't work. Let sleeping dogs lie. We should just watch unless he attacks us.”

They were divided into two sides and argued fiercely. However, they couldn't come to a conclusion. They constantly scouted the creatures in the dungeon, and there was also a frequent outflow of creatures. The only helpful aspect was that the creatures didn't attack humans.

People were curious.

Korea's dungeon was quiet. There weren't many monster waves and the master of the dungeon didn't do much damage. The only exception was shortly after the dungeon was created.

But right now, Korea's dungeon was in an unexpected boisterous state. The creatures left the dungeon and headed somewhere.

Communication around the world was cut off so they had no idea what the creatures were doing.

However...a Chinese reporter entered Korea and revealed what the creatures were doing.

"The creatures are fighting the angels. It is terrible. The angels have already reached Lanzhou in China. They are being pushed

back thanks to the creatures. The last line of defense is the creatures."

Lanzhou in China was right near them. It wasn't that far away.

If the angels pushed through the line then they would come here...!

It was faster than they imagined.

But the more surprising thing was the attitude of the creatures. Due to the fact that they stopped the angels in another place, the risk to Korea was greatly reduced.

Still, there wasn't much hope.

People knew how numerous and powerful the angels were.

There used to be many demons who fought against the angels, but now there were few.

Most of them were dead. The demons weren't strong enough to overcome the army.

They wondered if the creatures from Korea's dungeon could stop the angels...

"They can't stop it. We have to help them. Whether we like it or not, we have to."

"Look. South Korea in an iron fortress. We should leave here to help out the creatures who have been killing us for years? That doesn't make sense."

But the reporter's attitude didn't change.

"Not the creatures! I mean the master of Korea's dungeon. Originally, I thought the demon of Korea's dungeon was a dark elf. But that isn't the case. He is...the king of the demons. A demon king. A monster who can annihilate tens of thousands of creatures alone! More powerful than any demon I've ever seen! You shouldn't deny him. We should strike him while he is distracted by the angels."

The reporter closed his eyes and shook as he recalled it.

"The demons have a king? If so, isn't he our true enemy?"

The majority of the Awakened opposed this. Their voices became increasingly louder.

There weren't many who took the side of the reporter.

"It is a necessary evil. Demons have sought to annihilate humans, but the king of the demons doesn't intend to do that. If the reporter's words are true, he would have been able to sweep away

Korea at any time. We have to choose. Will we choose to live with evil or meet our end here?”

In fact, everyone had doubts.

Master of the Korean dungeon. He was different from other demons. He didn't try to wipe out the humans. He just threatened them once in a while.

On the other hand, the angels were different from the stories. They unconditionally hit everyone! Like ants being stepped on, humans were indiscriminately massacred.

In the end, the choice was put to one person.

Edward Windsor. And Yoo Eun-hye.

Edward was the king, but Yoo Eun-hye practically managed Korea. Edward was young while Yoo Eun-hye had many experiences.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that Yoo Eun-hye was the one making the decision.

“We...”

Like expected, Yoo Eun-hye opened her mouth.

"Send out a group to strike at the angels. The damage will be minimized if we stop them out there instead of allowing them to reach here."

"Should we help the demon?"

"No. I will be honest. I want to live. We have survived to this day, accumulating a lot of strength and hope. However, it still isn't enough. We need time. If we die then we won't be able to do anything. Our deaths will be the end of humanity. We are humanity's last hope."

Wanting to live. The power of those words was great.

There were many weak people here. But they had hope for the future. It would be risky to fight here where the weak could be trampled on. So before that, those with power had to stop the enemies.

Yoo Eun-hye moved the people's hearts and added one more thing.

"I will send a message to the countries with governments still remaining to attack the angels. No, I will make sure that they participate. This fight...it is humanity's greatest hurdle. Everything will be decided with this fight."

Yoo Eun-hye's expression was stiff.

Hope was blooming.

Everything would be decided in this fight.

I used my points and achievement points. It was so that hunting the angels would be as efficient as possible. There were too many angels for me to handle. I couldn't hunt 1.14 million angels alone.

-Number of angels remaining: 371,332

This was recognized as a quest, so the remaining number of angels floated nicely in front of me. More than one million angels were hunted by creatures in a fortnight. My points started to dry up as they couldn't keep up with the respawning of creatures.

‘Camael has started to move.’

More than anything, Camael was the problem. I aimed at him immediately after the angel hunt started. I was curious to see if his invincibility could keep up against my strikes. And I concluded that it could. There was a transparent membrane that blocked all my attacks.

Nothing got through. It was a skill that invalidated all attacks...there were conditions but the power was real. I had no choice but to go out and hunt the angels.

But it was a bit lacking. Time was finite. I had limits alone, so if the humans wanted to destroy my dungeon then I would have difficulties.

So I had to finish it before that.

It would have been easy if I had more to spare, but Ariel and her demons were lacking strength.

‘The troops are in a sorry state.’

Besides, the angels weren’t stupid. They realized they couldn’t stop me and started avoiding me. They could freely fly around because they had no homes. As a result, my troops received a heavy blow.

In particular, Camael was too strong. There were no demons or creatures who could stop him. Ariel Diablo? Well...I wasn’t able to judge her.

‘I’ll have to go out directly.’

Tsk! I clicked my tongue.

Time was dragging out. I had to pray that the demons and creatures wiped out all the angels while I was distracting Camael.

Once all the angels were gone, the barrier would disappear and I

could end Camael.

My magic power seemed infinite at first glance, but it wasn't. So it was a fight against time.

'It can't be helped.'

I raised Wrath and the Emperor's Sword. It seemed inevitable now.

Camael was huge. He seemed to be five metres large. That was tall. Of course, he was much smaller than the seraphim I previously saw. That seraphim resembled a giant planet.

In contrast, Camael was life. He looked around nonchalantly while holding a spear. Of course, there was a great deal of destruction in the vicinity around him.

Camael turned towards me when I showed up. It was humiliating as I already attacked him once, but I couldn't avoid him now. It would be tough to kill all the angels if Camael killed the creatures.

My glance moved to the side where a message was constantly floating.

-Number of angels remaining: 271,994

Based on the rate of progress, it would take another week. And I was planning to grab onto Camael during that period.

“Let’s see who will last. Seraphim Camael.”

“.....”

Camael was silent. He just raised his spear.

Chwaaaaaak!

The spear was thrown and instantly appeared in front of me. The spear had jumped through space and quickly aimed at my forehead.

Chwang!

However, I had already expected it. I wasn’t stupid enough to receive it.

I had covered my two swords with Dark Sword, Lightning God and Pride’s flames.

Kung!

I jumped forward before he could react and stabbed out.

But the thin shield stayed firm.

“Tsk!”

I was superior in all areas except for one. The shield couldn't be penetrated.

I didn't like it.

There were many angels around Camael. There were at least 30,000 of them. It would be difficult if they struck all at once, but the solution was easy.

"Don't interrupt."

True Words. They were overwhelmed by the power of my words. It wasn't just merely my words, but my gestures and expression as well. The angels flapping their wings stopped moving like a wall had formed.

100,000 angels were just standing in place. I glanced at Camael, but the transparent shield meant he wasn't affected.

‘That power is a problem.’

True Words didn't have a shortage of power. But Camael's shield also had its own strength. It was rare for a protective shield to be

able to block the area involving the power of words.

Once Camael's shield was gone, he would no longer be my opponent.

‘I have to wait for the angels to be removed.’

At the same time, numerous angels gathered around Camael. I decided to get rid of those angels while dealing with Camael at the same time.

Hwaaaack!

Pride's flames filled the whole sky.

It would take too long to kill each one separately with a sword.

Suuong!

Dark Sword extended. Once Dark Sword grew to 200 metres in length, I wielded it like a whip and every angel it touched was disintegrated.

Camael threw thousands of spears to block me, but that wasn't enough to stop my one-sided massacre. The angels didn't attack due to True Words, so it was simple to deal with them.

'Thank you for reducing the numbers, Camael.'

It was similar to what I had been looking for. 100,000 angels were gathered around Camael. I killed many of the 100,000 angels. I couldn't kill Camael, but Camael couldn't block me.

After that, Camael didn't gather many angels around here. He watched my movements and only placed the lowest grade angels. He moved alone. It was like Camael realized that the angels were my prey.

Our defenses were so strong that we couldn't touch each other. But little by little, cracks were occurring in Camael's shield.

'I will see how long he can hold out.'

Chapter 233: Camael (2)

The number of angels decreased slowly.

There weren't many creatures left under my control.

Even though I removed the angels here, the rest were vying with the creatures.

It was a pure fight.

I needed to bind Camael's feet here indefinitely.

It was at that time.

Papapat!

Camael noticed my intentions. I also knew that he didn't have enough power to stop me. Then Camael started to move away from the angels. I was sure it was to hunt the demons and creatures.

There was no reason for me to leave him alone.

Kwaang!

Lightning God moved ahead. It completely swallowed up Camael's body. It didn't deal any damage, but it affected his

movements.

I instantly moved in front of Camael.

"Where are you going?"

My mouth was in a thin line.

My speed was superior. He wouldn't be able to leave this place without my permission.

"....."

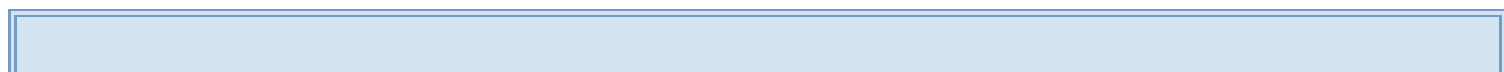
Camael frowned slightly.

"So you're not a doll."

My smile widened.

It was the first time I saw any expression on his face since I encountered him.

The fight had lasted for three days. Yet I didn't know when it would end. It was because the angel killing rate had slowed down a lot.



-Number of angels remaining: 153,229

The creatures had excellent detection capabilities and found the angels. The problem was that the number decreased by less than 1,000 in an hour. I had to keep fighting as the speed slowed down.

It was a tedious war of attrition. I couldn't rest while Camael had time to recharge. The shield was an inherent power so it didn't contain any holy power.

I was aware of this and took a defensive stance. I only went out actively when Camael tried to get away. However, magic power was consumed as these actions were frequently repeated.

If this continued then I would only be able to last one more fortnight. It took more magic power than expected to compete with him. There was a limit to how defensive I could be.

'I have lost a lot of creatures.'

I was still receiving reports through Yihi.

The total number was still more than the angels.

However, the angels led by Camael were much stronger than the creatures at Greenwich Observatory. It was a situation where I couldn't be sure if my creatures could win.

The hopeful observation...

‘Humans.’

It was the participation of humans.

I honestly believed it. The community of humans in Korea moved. Most of the remaining Awakened gathered to oppose the angels.

The humans were stronger when united. It was a truth I learnt from previous experience. And they became stronger quickly. Heroes emerged and it was humans who dealt with the dukes and grand dukes in the end.

It was great that they didn’t attack my empty dungeon and instead helped with the angels.

‘Chrisley’s plan turned out well.’

This was a plan that Chrisley had thought of. Chrisley moved Yoo Eun-hye and Yoo Eun-hye agitated the humans. Thanks to that, I had a little help.

For example...it was difficult to kill the angels moving on the outskirts. It was satisfactory to let the humans deal with it.

In particular, the activities of the Korean Awakened were dazzling. Each of the Awakened had a high level and had no difficulty in dealing with the angels. It was a little rewarding after I raised them.

"The more you and I fight, the angrier you seem to be."

A devastated land. It stretched out all the way to the horizon. The traces of my fight with Camael were carved all over the land.

Camael wielded his spear angrily.

I lightly shrugged as I easily got rid of them. I was more bored than him.

The 7th day.

Camael started to change his behaviour. He acted like he wanted to get away from this boring war of attrition. He decided to move while ignoring me.

But I wasn't going to let him go. The strikes caused him to flinch and pause. I set up a wall with Pride's flames and used Power of Domination. In addition, my True Words weren't broken at all.

"Stop."

It wasn't an offensive ability so it had some effect. The duration

wasn't long, but it was enough to bind his feet. I realized that I could achieve what I wanted without hitting him, so I aimed at that part.

Camael's shield was solely for defense. If I didn't intend to use an attack then he couldn't completely stop it.

I just talked and Camael stopped moving. At the same time, Camael's face distorted. It was a really strange move.

He couldn't move freely nor defeat me in battle. The angels were slowed down and Camael had no choice but to be influenced.

Camael started moving again.

“Stop.”

And he stopped.

Of course, it didn't always work.

Sometimes he managed to defend against True Words. It was a fight of probability. Every time it didn't work, I had to go in person to stop him.

‘Approximately 100,000 are left.’

It was the key to how long this war of attrition would last.

Tsk. I clicked my tongue. The number of times True Words worked against Camael decreased.

On the 15th day.

I started feeling a burden on my body. I couldn't catch Camael's movements like before. Sometimes I missed him and a lot of creatures died.

I gritted my teeth. I bought more with the points I earned, but the creatures died much faster. There were only 40,000 creatures left.

On the other hand, there were 20,000 angels remaining.

The number was now only decreasing by 300~400 every day.

If this continued, I would be defeated.

If I lost all my creatures and dungeon then I would have nothing left to supplement me.

-Master. Gaparam has made a large quantity of homunculi. They are specialized in hunting angels. Although they have a short lifespan, he learnt about angels while studying Gustarte. Yihihi!

A communication suddenly came from Yihi.

Ahh, Gaparam. He was also there. He had asked me for some time before the battle began. I had agreed and now the results could be seen.

Homunculi that were specialized for hunting angels!

After Yihi's words, the speed that the angels were killed at increased significantly.

Finally, there were only 400 left at the end of the 20th day.

But...it was hard for the number to decrease once it reached 400.

‘Hiding.’

They needed to be eliminated one by one. Camael felt the danger and scattered the angels across the world.

If he could drag out the time then it would be his victory.

21st day. There were 350 remaining.

22nd day. 270 left.

At the end of the 25th day, there were 10 angels alive.

But...I needed to leave some magic power behind in order to kill Camael. I would soon reach my limit.

I was walking a thin line.

And on the 28th day.

-Number of angels remaining: 1

The one remaining angel hadn't been killed yet.

While Camael escaped once more, the demons and creatures hastily searched for the remaining angel.

Yoo Eun-hye led 300 Awakened to fight the angels. At first, there were 1,000 of them. However, this was the number remaining after one month. She was able to have this many people left because of her intelligence.

"I don't see any angels. Are they all wiped out?"

An Awakened next to Yoo Eun-hye asked. But Yoo Eun-hye firmly shook her head.

"There are still some left. It is obvious. Tell the other troops.

Search around carefully!”

The different Awakened parties had scattered across the world. However, news came that angels hadn’t been found for a few days.

Everyone thought it was over. They became more relaxed.

However, Yoo Eun-hye knew that it wasn’t over.

Kung! Kwarurung!

A huge sound came from far away.

“How terrible. A fight involving the demon king.”

It was the sound of fighting between the strongest angel and the demon king. Even though the distance was very far away, the sound of them fighting could be heard.

The world was locked in darkness and light repeatedly leaked out.

If humans saw that fight then they would realize how small they were.

“Here! The last angel!”

It was at that time. An Awakened shouted loudly.

This place was near Pandemonium's dungeon. It was filled with the corpses of many creatures. It was where Camael was summoned.

No one had thought of approaching this area.

The stench of rotting corpses was a good enough reason.

Yet a small light was coming from Pandemonium's corpse. The light was clearly an angel.

"You hid well."

The last angel!

When Camael killed Pandemonium, it was obvious that he secretly hid an angel in the corpse.

It was preparation for this situation.

However, the body decayed and the light eventually leaked out.

It was correct. A very small angel was hiding inside the corpse.

Yoo Eun-hye spoke slowly as she watched it.

“Get rid of it.”

Finally!

I smiled with satisfaction.

The number of remaining angels finally reached zero.

At the same time, the protective shield gradually faded away.

Soon Camael was naked.

His expression was shocked. His face reddened. Was he not going to accept his defeat?

“Camael. Now I will finish this.”

I unleashed all my stored magic power.

It was magic power that I placed in reserve after some calculations.

Huuuuong!

A strong storm blew. Pride’s flames set up endless barriers.

Only Camael was left.

Chapter 234: Demon World (1)

Camael was caught. The powerless angel was no longer my opponent. I wasn't completely fine, but the one month battle finally came to an end.

However, I didn't get rid of Camael. I found a way to use him.

'I can absorb him like Gustarte.'

I had once absorbed divinity. Thanks to that, I got more than I expected. Of course, it wasn't entirely arbitrary but I could become a monster if I absorbed Camael.

It was impossible if I was just a transcendent person. Even if I succeeded in absorbing him, the body wouldn't survive and would explode. This was true even if my body had been reconstructed several times.

However, I had the key to balance. There were still some vacant spots. I hadn't reached my limits. It was clear that I could become stronger.

'Greed...'

I grabbed a stone made of the fake Greed. The Seven Sins were aimed at the gods and could trap them.

Greed was suitable for what I intended.

I nodded.

Greed needed to eat in order to absorb something.

But this was a fake. A skill wasn't generated when I obtained it. The Seven Sins were held by the Dark Spirit King.

However, that didn't mean there was no way.

I used my remaining points to buy all skills related to 'absorption or digestion' from the Store of All Things and the Achievements Store.

Combine Everything.

It was a universal skill that could combine everything.

After that, I tried to combine skills as well as the stone of the fake greed.

Of course, this was risky behaviour. Once created, the skill couldn't be deleted even if it wasn't good. If a debuff skill was created then it would be a dilemma.

In my previous life, there was an incident where Duke Dipella did

something similar.

But I was different.

“Reverse World.”

I used this skill for the first time. Then the tattoo on my left hand started to shine.

-Please select a skill to enhance.

It was a no-brainer.

“Mind's Eye.”

The dragon swallowing a mirror blinked.

-‘Mind’s Eye (Epic)’ has been upgraded to ‘God’s Eyes (Demigod).’

Huuuuong!

The light turned off.

Before long, my view of the world started to change.

God's Eyes. An absolute power overlooking all things. My eyes looked around at the surroundings. Just by watching, I was able to see when the rocks were created and how they had survived the traces of time. My eyes didn't perfectly track the past, but the important events were played.

Ha!

I had a blank expression of surprise on my face. I hadn't expected Mind's Eye to change to this. The rating had increased and many things could now be seen.

I raised my head. The Celestial Door was still in the sky. However, this time I noticed a giant eye in the door that I hadn't seen before.

The giant eye was watching the ground.

To be exact, it was staring at me.

‘The Celestial World's eyes.’

I immediately flew into the sky.

Once I reached the Celestial Door, I faced the giant eye.

“Are you searching for the summoned Camael? Or are you spying on me? Will it be detrimental to the Heavenly World?”

At that moment, the huge eye split apart. Thousands, no tens of thousands of eyes were watching me at once. I just laughed.

"This is scarier than I thought. I can't move now that I know this."

What to do?

This was Death Bringer's plot.

Maybe the eye had been there since the first angels were summoned.

If the eye had been watching the ground since that time then it wouldn't realize Death Bringer's ruse.

But it didn't show any movements. I didn't know if it was because the eye thought that Earth had nothing to do with it or because the Celestial World was in the sky...

It was clear that the Celestial King was a considerable coward.

"Continue to watch. But you will have to look from the sidelines. If you jump into my fight then I will immediately destroy your

Celestial World. I promise.”

Kuuong!

I knocked on the Celestial Door with magic power.

I knew it wouldn't open but I didn't like that it had been secretly watching the ground.

I would rather it stay as a bystander for the rest of its life. Unless it was forcibly summoned like Camael.

Otherwise I would thoroughly break it down.

This was the demon king's promise.

I owned divinity and had Diablo's power. My words had weight to them. Otherwise, there was a chance that True Words could lose power. The eye slowly disappeared.

I hadn't noticed until the rating of Mind's Eye increased...I was in a bad mood, but I wasn't going to declare war. The Celestial King, or god, would have carefully listened to my words.

I descended to the ground. I entered my dungeon and headed to the core.

I looked through the Store of All Things and Achievements Store to find the necessary things.

'I can see it.'

I wanted a combination of skills.

I was going to combine the skills and fake stone using Combine Everything.

My goal was to use Reverse World to change the rating and then absorb Camael.

I activated Combine Everything and looked through the skill books. God's Eye showed the intended result of the combination.

If I knew the answer then I didn't need to experiment. I didn't need to experience a failure like Duke Dipella. I could get the maximum benefits without any risk.

'I can't do it just once.'

I first joined 'Appetite (Normal) with the stone of the fake Greed.

And the Absorption (Rare) skill was created. This alone wasn't enough.

I once again combined the skill 'Digestion (Normal)' with the stone and this resulted in 'Bio-Absorption (Rare)' skill. This absorption wasn't the type I wanted.

Yet if I combined Absorption and Bio-Absorption then I got my desired result.

- 'Robbery (Ex R)' has been completed.

This was it!

I nodded.

Robbery. Taking something by force.

At first, I was thinking about enhancing Corruption. However, the upgrade to legend rank had reduced the rebound of using that skill. I thought it was better to raise a skill with a low rating.

“Reverse World.”

- Please select a skill to enhance.

I didn't think about it anymore.

“Robbery.”

-Robbery (Ex R) has been upgraded to ‘Absolute Robbery (Demigod).’

-You have finished enhancing skills with Reverse World. It is impossible to enhance any more skills.

Camael had injuries that couldn’t be healed and was stuck deep in the ground. He collapsed and didn’t move a single inch. He was five metres tall but couldn’t do anything.

I had a determined expression on my face. This would determine if it was worth strengthening the Robbery skill. If there weren’t any effects then I had made an irrevocable mistake.

I placed a hand on my chest. I turned the key to open my insides and hwaack! The sound was accompanied by a big blast of magic power.

"Absolute Robbery.”

I selected the target.

It was his power.

Jjejeong!

The first thing I heard was a cracking sound.

Then white light started leaking from Camael.

The light entered the storage place for magic power.

-The power of the seraphim angel Camael has been stolen.

-The angel Camael was equipped with a mighty divinity. The robbery was successful, but if there isn't anything to neutralize the divinity then there will be significant side-effects.

The robbery!

I kept it in mind. Anyway, I was a hunter. A hunter was predatory. In that sense, there was no other word that represented me so well.

After sucking in all of Camael's power, I locked the key again. The power swirled and integrated with my current power.

'I feel full.'

I expressed my satisfaction.

I was certain that I was stronger.

I had a determined expression on my face. A calm smile could be seen.

‘Status window.’

There was no reason not to confirm it.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon King (Dungeon Master)

Title * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying dungeons and hunting demons)

* Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)

* First to Receive a Fairy’s Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)

* Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)

* Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)

* Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)

* Origin Demon King (God, all stats +10, grants a transcendent rank)

Stats

Strength: 130 (+30)

Intelligence: 149 (+25)

Agility: 125 (+30)

Stamina: 145 (+32)

Magic Power: 142 (+26)

Potential: (691+143/???)

Remaining Stat Points: 47

Electric Power: 742GW

Uniqueness: The master of the Underground World. The Heart of the Hell Monarch has completely awakened. Has a strong divinity for some reason. Inherited the power of Diablo, the origin demon king.

Skill: Combine Everything (Ex U), God's Eye (Demigod), Dark Sword (Epic), Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Pride (Epic), Corruption (Legend), Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive), Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive), Reverse World (God), True Words (God, Passive) Absolute Robbery (Demigod)

Skill and Item Effects: Wrath (Strength +7), Sloth (Agility +7), Pride (Stamina + 7), Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

[Before and After Comparison]

Strength 157 Intelligence 154 Agility 151 Stamina 165 Magic 164
Potential (648+143/???)

Strength 160 Intelligence 174 Agility 155 Stamina 177 Magic
168 Potential (691+143/???)

“Excellent.”

I passed 800 stat points.

And Camael was a defensive angel, so my related abilities were greatly increased. Intelligence and stamina.

It wasn't wrong to say that this was enough to resist almost all magic attacks.

Camael's body was only a shell and he soon turned to dust.

Kuuuuong!

Suddenly, there was a sound from the sky. The Celestial Door was fading away.

The giant eye was already gone.

I spread my wings and floated in the air.

And I shouted.

“Victory.”

Chapter 235: Demon World (2)

The shout echoed and spread all over the world.

Now...after finishing, it was time to go to the Demon World.

‘The Hell Monarch.’

The dark spirits woke up the Hell Monarch sleeping in the deepest part of nothingness in order to kill the demons. Now he was devouring the forces in the Demon World.

If he did this alone then he would have great power.

But I didn’t know the limits of my strength. In this state, I wouldn’t be afraid of a god. I met Gustarte, experienced his strength and absorbed him. I was sure of it.

The Hell Monarch was just an unfortunate emperor frustrated by the gods and who died trying to become a god. In fact, I felt some degree of anticipation towards his skills. I reached this place with the help of the Heart of the Hell Monarch, so I couldn’t imagine how strong its owner would be.

‘I won’t lose.’

I was sure of it.

Frankly, Camael wasn't my opponent when it came to pure power.

Now I was even stronger than when I dealt with Camael.

I formed a fist. The door to the Demon World gradually neared the ground.

I took a short break. Cleaning everything up and reorganizing the creatures was exhausting. It wasn't a good idea to open the door to the Demon World right away. Plus...

"It is finished."

Oswen spoke to me in a pleased voice. Oswen held a necklace in his hands. A mysterious magic power could be felt from it. I couldn't avert my eyes from it. I stared at it with God's Eyes.

Soon, detailed information about the necklace surfaced.

-Name: Pharma's Necklace (10/10)

Description – A necklace that protects users from certain curses. It will be destroyed after blocking 10 curses.

List of curses that it defends against - Pain, Ice Crystal, Doll's Expression, Golem's Soul, Soul Destroyer, Destructive

Humanity, Flames of the Soul, Curse of Thorns, Knight's Curse...Divine Suffering.

The list included countless curses. There were many that I didn't know.

"This is to protect me against the Hell Monarch?"

"That's right. I designed it to stop all the curses that the Hell Monarch might use."

He was full of pride.

I shook my head and asked.

"The Hell Monarch knows how to use these curses?"

"Yes! He immersed himself in it and studied curses very hard in his later years. His learning speed was at the level of the gods."

"He isn't a shaman."

It was amazing. There were at least 100 curses on the list. It was almost impossible for one person to know how to use so many curses proficiently. The Hell Monarch wasn't someone famous for using curses.

He was a genius of swordsmanship and a master of demonic magic. In short, he was a magic swordsman.

I was sure that he would be difficult to deal with even with the curses not affecting me.

"Your Majesty's body can't be affected by curses...most of the curses on the list won't work. But you should wear it just in case."

I had 174 points in intelligence. Curses couldn't harm me. I had commanded Oswen to make it before I knew that.

But Oswen didn't seem to care.

'He has a great grudge against the Hell Monarch.'

Oswen was originally a human. He was a good blacksmith who liked fire. Then one day, the Hell Monarch came and forced him to make the Seven Sins. But that wasn't the end. He was dragged to the Underground World and lost his original appearance.

It was natural for him to hold a grudge. The evidence was that Oswen's eyes were burning with anger.

"Thank you."

The advice of one's subordinates. It wasn't bad.

"It will clearly be helpful."

"I hope so."

I turned away after putting on the necklace.

I stood at the top of my dungeon and stared down at the ground.

I had almost fulfilled the promise with the gods.

They returned me to Earth in exchange for Earth and the lives of the humans. Although many humans died, they still survived and continued to grow together.

This was the strength of humans. It was similar to a cockroach, but I liked that persistence. It was similar to me. I wouldn't have reached this position if I wasn't greedy and hadn't stopped until the end.

In any case, humans were strong. They would become stronger and stronger until the glory of the past was restored.

If I left this place then Earth would be safe. Even if there was a problem, it wouldn't collapse easily due to the presence of the Awakened.

It had already been 50 days since I absorbed Camael.

There was nothing more I had to do on Earth.

Everything was finished so it was pointless to waste any more time. I still hadn't received the message that the Demon World had been occupied. I couldn't give him time to completely conquer the Demon World.

It was almost time so he wouldn't have expected someone else to come from behind him.

I returned to the dungeon.

There were numerous creatures gathered near the core.

Chrisley and Ariel were at the forefront.

I opened my mouth without hesitation.

"We will travel to the Demon World."

The Demon World. They were nostalgic words.

I raised my hands. An invisible line connected to the Demon World Door was always following me.

I tugged on the line.

Soon, the gigantic door in the sky opened and a huge crack appeared in front of me.

The crack turned into a magic circle.

I moved my feet first. Everyone started moving behind me.

A strong smell pierced my nose.

There were corpses scattered all over the place.

A purple sky and crows crying...

Three moons floated in the sky.

‘The Demon World.’

I immediately knew that I had arrived in the Demon World. There was no way I couldn’t know. This was the place where I was born and grew up. Everything was different from Earth.

‘I need to head to the centre.’

The surrounding terrain was familiar. The demon king’s castle wasn’t far from there. The four grand dukes occupied the north, south, east and west around the demon king’s castle.

But there was also a deep smell of death.

The Demon World was always at war and there was no day where blood didn't flow.

The number of demons who died in battle couldn't be counted.

Nevertheless, the smell of death had never been this severe. The loser usually died and the winner survived. This degree wasn't normal...

In particular, it became stronger in the vicinity of the demon king's castle. The centre was the place where the grand dukes were kept in check.

My senses spread far and wide. If I paid attention then I would be able to notice any presences within hundreds of kilometres. However, my senses didn't notice anything.

There was another strange thing.

The smell of death was unbearable.

"There are no corpses."

That's right. There weren't even any dead bodies. Both the living and the dead couldn't be seen.

I didn't know what this meant.

“Ariel Diablo. Whose forces are still remaining in the Demon World now?”

The Hell Monarch hadn't conquered the Demon World yet. A message would have popped up if that had happened. In particular, Ariel would have noticed first.

Ariel and I respected each other. The power of Diablo dwelled inside me. I would leave her castle intact. Ariel knew how merciful I was being.

Ariel bowed her head thankfully and said.

"My forces are left. The rest of them have collapsed."

Upa, Pandemonium and Okullos.

The forces of three grand dukes had already collapsed.

It was alarming.

"Let's go to your castle. The Hell Monarch might be nearby."

The Hell Monarch would be forced to appear where there were still some opposing forces. His goal was to conquer the Demon

World.

There was no need for a guide.

I knew exactly where Ariel's castle was.

It was because I had visited that place to challenge her in my previous life.

'I would love to sit down right away.'

I moved my gaze in the direction of the demon king's castle.

Only those recognized as the demon king could enter that place.

The throne of the demon king was left there. I wanted to sit on the throne, but there was still work to be done. I wouldn't truly become the demon king until I took care of the Hell Monarch. The Demon World was the place where the demon ruled, but now the Hell Monarch was trying to conquer it.

It wasn't right.

'I will delay it until later.'

I couldn't let greed move my feet.

It wouldn't be too late after killing the Hell Monarch.

Ariel's castle was located on the north side of the demon king's castle. It was a place covered with snow. The reason why she stayed at the dungeon in Greenland was due to the familiar environment. It was a gigantic castle where snow fell all year long.

Castle...it was the size of a city. It might be a little exaggerated, but it wasn't strange to call it the size of a small country.

This was the place where Ariel's forces remained. It was the place where Ariel ruled directly.

However, even this great castle was quiet. Creatures could be sensed inside, but they were too nervous to even breathe.

Most of the demons were hiding and couldn't be seen unless I looked closely. They all had a typical combat posture.

Demons were also protecting the gates.

'They seem to have detected my troops from a distance.'

I led an army of 150,000 creatures.

I was able to bring this many due to the points I got from Camael. They were a little weaker than before, but they mainly consisted of intermediate and advanced creatures.

The demons in the castle detected my army from a distance and judged that we were enemies.

Ariel asked for my permission and headed to the gate.

"Open the door. I am Ariel Diablo."

Her voice echoed around the gate. Mild magic power infused her voice so there was no way they couldn't hear it. The ears of the demons were ten times better than humans'.

Someone appeared at the highest point of the gate.

It was an old demon with a short beard and wearing armour.

"Is it really Ariel?"

"Can't you see the horns? If you don't open the door right now then you won't be able to avoid censure."

Ariel raised her chin as she replied. She was the original owner of this place. Ariel's subordinates followed her loyally so they should open the door right away. But it turned out differently than I thought.

"I'm sorry. I can't open the door."

“What...?”

As the old demon shook his head, Ariel's expression turned chilly. She wasn't allowed to enter her own castle. What did this mean? Despite being defeated in the game to become a demon king, Ariel was still a grand duke.

"This might be a ploy of the Hell Monarch. My choice might destroy this castle so I have to be careful."

The old demon persevered.

“Sasun! You, don't you even know your master? I will break down this gate and kill you all.”

Ariel's long horns trembled. She took out an ivory sword and covered it with chaos. Ariel's patented skill. It was a skill that only she could use. That should have been enough proof, but the old demon was stubborn.

"Then take off all your clothes and turn around. I will see if there is the Hell Monarch's scar. If I use magical measures and my opinion is wrong then I am willing to offer my neck."

“This cowardly bastard...”

Ariel growled. Her followers always acted like knights towards

her. But this was the last straw. Besides, I was here. I didn't give her permission to move. This was also her castle. She didn't want to damage it.

Ariel's eyes turned towards me.

I shook my head and said.

“Do it.”

Ariel had great ambitions so she promptly responded.

She respected me and obeyed without protest.

Chapter 236: Hell Monarch (1)

After our innocence was proven, we could safely step into the castle.

The old demon Sasun offered his head, but I didn't take it.

He was the one who ruled this castle instead of the Hell Monarch. There was a lot of information I didn't know so it wouldn't be good if the commander changed suddenly.

"When the Hell Monarch first appeared in this place, he was alone."

A spacious room. It was a large room that reminded me of a plaza. There were a lot of luxurious tables, chandeliers, etc. as well as high quality food.

Sasun quietly kneeled down and proceeded to tell the story. He was on the ground due to his sin.

"However, his army increased in size as time passed. All the demons he killed became his puppets. Although the White Knights found him, the power of the Hell Monarch exceeded our imagination and we lost an important power. I wasn't even aware of this fact until the White Knights became an enemy."

Sasun hit his head against the ground.

He felt regret about not knowing sooner, but it wouldn't have changed the situation.

Ariel sat in her seat and didn't move. Only the main demons could enter this banquet hall.

I sat in the most prominent position with Ariel beside me.

As the deep silence continued, Sasun kept talking.

"The ones who became puppets of the Hell Monarch only follow his words. The amazing thing is that the puppets still maintain their own personalities. He is able to use magic freely while wielding a sword. In some cases, they pretended to be allies and completely decimated the bases. We have to distrust everything..."

They had no choice.

It was a situation where they didn't know who was the enemy.

Their smiling allies could stab them from behind.

They couldn't trust anyone.

In such a situation, a proper war couldn't happen.

It wasn't a coincidence that all of the grand dukes' troops were

wiped out except for this place.

"His army is growing so big that no one can resist."

"How many?"

"Three million...that is the lowest estimate."

"Hah."

Ariel breathed out heavily.

Three million? That was the number if all of the grand dukes' troops were combined.

It meant that those killed by the Hell Monarch's puppets were also changed. I didn't think that the Hell Monarch could wipe out a large army of three million enemies alone.

It was the same if he killed or his army did.

Who would be able to deal with it?

The soldiers lost their will to fight.

'An invitation to a place of death.'

I remembered Greenwich Observatory.

At that time, all the grand dukes except for me received a special quest to go to the Demon World.

It was clear what would have happened if they reached the Demon World.

They wouldn't have been able to win. My army this time was no exception.

"Still, Ariel has returned so the morale of the soldiers is soaring to the sky. The knights are also motivated."

"I am not the master of the castle now."

Ariel said strictly.

Perhaps Sasun might have already noticed. I was just listening with my arms folded. Yet he always paid attention to me.

"Sasun, raise your head."

Ariel ordered once again.

Then Sasun slowly lifted his head.

Ariel glared at him coldly and declared.

“Randolph Briggsiel. He carries the name of the demon king. Remember this.”

“...Demon King...I am glad to meet you.”

Sasun knelt in front of me.

This was my position. It was a position that wouldn't change for a very long time. I would be Ariel's eternal master. Her subordinates' loyalty was unchanged, but the ruler of this place had shifted. There were also the creatures following me.

Sasun was forced to face the reality that Ariel was defeated in the war to become the demon king.

The number of troops inside the castle was 300,000.

Including my creatures, there were 450,000.

A sufficient number. Quite a large number of troops were stockpiled. It was proof of Sasun's exceptional abilities.

But it was also true that it was troublesome.

The demons and creatures were likely to become obstacles.

"Your Majesty. Just leave it to me."

Oswen came out once again.

Oswen pulled out a small mirror.

"One of the Hell Monarch's curses is to keep the dead moving. This 'Mirror of Truth' can stop the curse from spreading to our troops like a contagion."

"Isn't this too small?"

I asked. A small hand mirror didn't seem capable of stopping a curse. Oswen nodded like he agreed.

"I can make it bigger. I just need enough time and materials."

Ariel interrupted.

"All the magic materials required are available. But time is the problem. The army of the Hell Monarch is nearing."

"A week. Please endure for that time. Of course, it won't end even after I finish the mirror. The mirror must be protected. If it breaks then the curse will be triggered and spread again."

"Can't you solve the curse?"

"It is possible, but it is a matter of efficiency. It can't be done in a week. Even if I had 10 other people at my level, it would take me three months."

"You have to create the mirror."

Ariel also realized the reality. By this time, she had realized that Oswen was the great blacksmith.

Oswen. The Twilight Blacksmith. Even the gods were jealous of his techniques, so there was no one at a similar level to Oswen.

"Go ahead. I will buy you one week."

If my thoughts were correct, it would be possible.

"I will follow."

"Me too..."

Ariel and Chrisley both came forward.

I shook my head.

“I will go alone. Don’t you two have something to do?”

They were embarrassed as they realized. Ariel needed to stabilize the soldiers inside the castle while Chrisley’s brain would be used to develop a plan. Magical measures also needed to be taken.

These things couldn’t be compromised. It was only possible for them.

“Alone...will it be okay?”

"I have an idea. It will be enough to buy time for a week."

I was confident. Even if I made a mistake, it wouldn’t be that easy to kill me. Many high ranking demons and creatures were guarding the Hell Monarch, but it was possible if I was only buying time.

‘Most of the high ranking demons have transcended.’

I could almost say that they were above a duke. All 72 demons, including the grand dukes, had their abilities restricted after being sent to Earth. But now, Ariel had almost recovered the power of her prime days.

‘Hell Monarch. I will make you prove yourself.’

I smiled thinly.

I had most of the things that should have belonged to him.

It couldn't be helped if he felt pained when looking at me. He could only blame himself for coming back from the nothingness.

As soon as I left the castle, I raised the Emperor's Sword.

A treasure preserved by Maxium, it was originally used by the Hell Monarch.

It would never break and had one more function.

“The Emperor's Army.”

Chwaaaaah!

A golden light sprang from the Emperor's Sword. A large crack formed near the Emperor's Sword, and creatures started to gradually emerge from it.

Cheok. Cheok.

They came from the treasure trove.

Their names were the phantom cavalry.

100,000 cavalry members lined up behind me.

They had no body, but wore iron armour. All of them were advanced grade or higher.

‘90 days.’

This was the real emperor’s army. The 100,000 strong army would remain for 90 days and would destroy the enemy according to my commands. They had been made by the Hell Monarch for this function.

They had no flesh, just artificial armour. In addition, curses wouldn’t work due to my skill ‘Power of Domination.’

‘Hell Monarch. I wonder what it feels like to be attacked by a soldier you made yourself.’

I spread my wings and flew forward quickly.

Dagudak! Dagudak!

And the 100,000 phantom cavalry moved in an orderly manner behind me.

The army of the Hell Monarch wasn’t far away.

At most, they were three days away.

If I was even a little later, the castle would have fallen.

‘A lot.’

Camael had led 1.14 million angels.

1.14 million. It took a month to wipe them all out. If I had delayed even a little longer then I would have used the Emperor’s Army.

‘I did well to save it for now.’

It would have been a waste if I used the Emperor’s Army on Camael. I would have had no way to stop the army that was three days away. I could use myself as bait, but I couldn’t be sure without knowing the Hell Monarch’s power.

His curses were able to affect transcendent demons. It was good that I didn’t move when I realized how annoying Camael was.

‘It is hard to figure out because there are too many of them.’

Sasun had estimated three million enemies. However, the number seemed to go far beyond that. In addition, there were the creatures of the demons. Among them was a mixture of dragons and earth dragons.

‘Balrog...’

I saw a balrog that was known to be extinct long ago.

Endless creatures.

The highest grade creature was the balrog.

They were a high class Lv5 creature and no higher levels existed.

The true demonic dragon Aojin wasn’t treated as a creature, so he couldn’t be ranked at Lv6.

In other words, the balrog was the strongest creature in the Demon World.

It was about the size of a hydra. Despite being smaller, it was still over 10m. But it also had large wings.

Just flapping the wings caused magic power in the area to fluctuate.

When looking at ancient stories, even the demon kings had struggled to remove a balrog. A balrog never got tired and many demons were sacrificed.

Even the ninth demon king ‘Alexus Troja’ was killed by a balrog.

Like Aojin, the balrog surpassed general creatures by an unimaginable amount.

The appearance of the balrog who killed the demon king was described in detail.

The name.

'Rogujan.'

I frowned.

Rogujan's description in the literature was very similar to the balrog that I could see now. Except for the right wing, everything else was the same.

'It came from the nothingness.'

It seemed like the Hell Monarch wasn't the only one who came back from the nothingness.

Chapter 237: Hell Monarch (2)

The phantom cavalry didn't engage in a full scale war with the enemy. It was an insurmountable wall of creatures so it was foolish to run at them from the front. They quickly hit and retreated, steadily buying some time.

Common demons and creatures couldn't survive the swords wielded by the phantom cavalry. If there was a strong enemy then I came out and minimized the damage.

'The enemy is moving faster.'

Why?

It was simple.

The Hell Monarch had realized the existence of the phantom cavalry.

The soldiers he had created were now appearing as enemies, so he was angry.

'He won't come directly.'

It was a little disappointing.

If the Hell Monarch came out for the phantom cavalry then I

would have a chance to strike. It would be difficult if he kept moving behind the three million troops.

It was best to just buy time.

'I was only able to win against Contegonom by using Corruption. I'm not the same as I was at that time, but Rogujan is something that came from the deepest parts of the nothingness. There are many differences.'

It was on a completely different level. Thanks to God's Eyes, I could see that Rogujan was much stronger than Contegonom.

'A total of 721 stat points...'

Indeed, a demon king slayer. Something far beyond normal creatures. An exceptional balrog who had managed to kill a demon king. At that time, it was able to absorb some strength from the demon king it killed.

I wasn't disturbed by the simple numerical comparison. There was a difference of over 100 points. If I went against him then I would be able to win with no difficulty. But then I would have to give up on buying time. The phantom cavalry would be surrounded by enemies and 100,000 troops would disappear.

I wouldn't be able to block such a large army for four days alone.

'The Hell Monarch isn't my only enemy.'

The dark spirits might try some tricks. I was also worried about Death Bringer. It would be wise to reserve some troops to prepare for another confrontation.

Fortunately, Rogujan didn't seem to possess any authority. He was strong in terms of brute force.

'I need a way to get rid of Rogujan independently.'

I looked at Rogujan as I directed the phantom cavalry. Rogujan floated in the air and calmly watched the phantom cavalry.

'The balrog are a warlike species.'

I heard that it was a characteristic of balrogs to be excited when a battle took place.

Was it because it thought there were no enemies? It might not be stimulated by the phantom cavalry.

The huge creature set me on edge. Something that big and powerful could smash the castle at once.

'I have no choice but to stimulate it.'

I nodded. I had no choice but to move.

In order to reserve some troops, I needed to fight.

It was time for me to come out.

"I will be back in 30 minutes. Try not to be surrounded as much as possible."

I gave a command to the phantom cavalry.

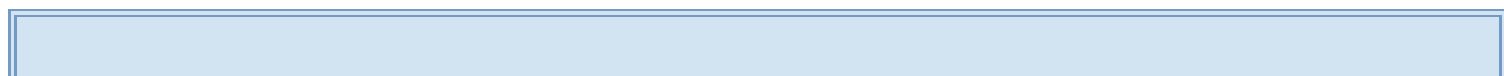
30 minutes. I was sure that I could remove Rogujan in that time.

It wasn't difficult to deal with an enemy who came out alone. It was because True Words would work to a certain extent on transcendent beings. As long as the Hell Monarch didn't come out with the demons and creatures, I would be able to handle Rogujan.

If the ghost cavalry stayed safe then I would be able to continue buying time.

I flapped my wings and gazed at the balrog.

Wrath and the Emperor's Sword were covered in a dark aura. Then I applied Lightning God and Pride's flames. After my superior magic power was added, it was an extraordinary skill comparable to Ariel's proprietary Abyss Sword.



-As the result of repeated linkage, the skill 'Chaotic Blade (Legend)' has been learnt.

If something was repeated many times then a skill could be obtained. The odds were slim so it was unlikely to appear even after thousands of repetitions. Even if it came out, it was hard to expect a high rating.

Yet a legend rating had emerged.

'It was thanks to my high intelligence.'

Intelligence played many different roles. It increased magic resistance, familiarity with skills, eliminated the drawbacks when using a skill and improved mental power. As such, it was possible to rapidly create a skill. It was the first time for me, but it wasn't a bad result.

Then the balrog headed towards me.

Huoong!

It flapped its large wings and instantly appeared before me.

I was strong. It noticed the great magic power contained in my swords.

The difference in our sizes was evident.

But fighting had nothing to do with size.

"I'll give you a chance. Go back to your original place."

A demon king slayer. A historically famous creature. It should be fine for me to face him.

Huuung!

The balrog flapped its wings strongly.

Kwarurung!

Lightning struck me.

However, I had a high level of magic resistance.

And...the balrog was a magic-using species.

The worst mistake. This was why I bet on a quick victory.

"I received your greeting. Rogujan."

Chaotic Blade grew longer. The balrog was a magical species so it

naturally had high resistance. Its physical defense also exceeded imagination.

But it was doubtful if its body could withstand my attacks.

"Now it is your turn to receive my greetings."

Chwack!

My swords penetrated through the lightning.

I split Rogujan's body exactly in half.

Dozens of demons who were dukes rushed towards me.

"Stop."

I consciously used True Words. This skill gave my words power. Even the transcendent couldn't be completely free of this influence. There was only a difference in the duration time.

True Words was advantageous when dealing with a lot of opponents.

And the dukes stopped moving according to my words.

However, the duration was extremely short.

It only lasted a fraction of the time.

‘Overlapping power.’

I had experienced this before. It was when I faced Camael. It overlapped with Camael’s power and didn’t have a great effect. This time was the same as well.

The demons and creatures were dominated by the Hell Monarch so they were protected by his power. In particular, the dukes received more protection.

I activated God’s Eyes.

-There is a defense with a higher security rating than ‘God’s Eyes (Demigod).’

But thanks to high magic power (168), 77% of the interpretation has been completed.

Guardian’s Power (God), Destructive Humanity (God), Absolute Domination (God), Death (God), Song of the Dead (Legend), Curse of Shadows (Legend), Curse of the Mountains (Legend)...

There were four huge curses on them. That was why the power of my words hardly had any effect.

Besides, I needed to look at the curses hanging on them.

It seemed like the Hell Monarch already had the power of a god.

How much...

‘I need to be vigilant of a god.’

The Hell Monarch was a human. He had guardians around him. As far as he was concerned, foreign invasion was impossible.

He wanted to become a god.

But the gods didn't allow him to become one.

The gods joined forces and pushed him into the nothingness.

He didn't think they would stand still and planned something, but failed.

Then the dark spirits pulled him out again.

‘He would have become even stronger.’

I was sure of it.

He was stronger than he was during his days as the Shadow Emperor.

The dark spirits would have helped.

No, I still didn't understand his power. No matter how godlike a human was, he needed to have his own power.

He was passionate about learning curse magic, but endless hours were needed to make it reach this point. He might just be close to a god in relation to curses.

Rather, he didn't learn curses that were below a legend rating.

The Guardian's Power was definitely strange, so he must have guardians.

Maybe there were even more. God's Eyes had only interpreted 77% of the information.

'Is he really the Hell Monarch?'

I wondered.

I wanted to determine the truth.

"Get lost."

Pride's flames explosively wrapped around them.

As the demons hesitated, I instantly rushed through the air.

The army of the Hell Monarch was great. Millions of creatures were lined up for dozens of kilometres.

And at the very back.

I found a person slowly climbing up the back of a dragon like he was taking a leisurely stroll.

I knew who he was as soon as I found him.

The figure on the back of the dragon was the Hell Monarch.

My heart was jumping wildly.

However, my eyes weren't looking at the Hell Monarch.

I was looking at the aura around him.

It was a scary feeling. It felt like my whole body was stripped bare. I couldn't move, it was like my entire body was in the clutches of a leviathan.

I had experienced it once before.

Before I went to Earth, the man who made me an offer was emitting that type of magic power.

I only felt it very weakly at the time, but now I knew for certain.

‘Death Bringer...!’

Death Bringer was inside the Hell Monarch.

That's right.

He was the Hell Monarch but wasn't.

Death Bringer was wearing the mask of the Hell Monarch.

Death Bringer's eyes turned towards me.

A thin smile. He was laughing at my arrival.

No wonder why it was strange. The Hell Monarch had four powers at a god rating.

It was possible if he was Death Bringer. The devil. A god with the highest level of divinity. Among the gods, he was a powerful existence. Even if there were dozens of Gustartes, they wouldn't be able to beat Death Bringer.

‘It must be possession.’

It was impossible for an immortal to enter the Demon World to conquer it. It was the same even when it came to possession. His divinity was lowered. If someone let their guard down then they could be deprived of their qualifications.

Then was it possible because the Hell Monarch came back from the nothingness?

I didn't know the details. Maybe it was because he was already like a god himself, so his flesh was able to contain a god. But it wasn't clear.

My heart trembled.

And the aura around me increased.

It was due to Gustarte and Diablo!

They both had a serious resentment against Death Bringer.

The feelings of anger came back. However, I remained calm.

The odds weren't high if I attacked him from the front.

Besides, this place was filled with enemies. It was a place where it wouldn't be easy to escape once the fight started.

I asked the both of them if there was a way.

And they whispered to me.

‘There is a method.’

Chapter 238: System (1)

Gustarte and Diablo's method was simple.

The system.

The best masterpiece created by the devil.

It could destroy or cause a failure.

The system was perfect and powerful enough to kill other gods. The devil was the best god. It was likely he was aiming for the gods from the beginning. Otherwise the devil wouldn't have built such a system.

Saying in other words, there was a high probability that the system contained much of the god's personality or even his essence. If there was a problem with the system then it would hinder his divinity.

It was possible to win if I decreased his divinity a little bit. It would be like dealing with Gustarte.

'Where?'

The problem was finding the system.

At the very least, it wasn't in the Demon World. If it was in a new

world then I wouldn't be able to do anything.

But...my mind moved quickly.

The first thing that popped up was the dark spirits. Even if they studied the crack, was it possible for them to enter the deepest part of the nothingness so early?

I thought it was strange. The cracks had become bigger too quickly. Even if there were samples, the work had proceeded too radically. They had succeeded in cracking open the deepest part of the nothingness.

I thought Death Bringer must have helped them...perhaps there was another cause.

I asked Gustarte and Diablo for comments.

Then I nodded my head.

It was a gamble.

‘Go to the Spirit World.’

I glanced at Death Bringer, who was wearing the mask of the Hell Monarch. He didn't look impatient at all. He appeared certain of his victory. He was confident that he could get rid of me at any time.

I thought so as well. No matter how strong I was, I wasn't a supreme god. I was convinced I could defeat the Hell Monarch, but it was a different story if the opponent was Death Bringer.

He also knew that I was aware of the Hell Monarch's true identity.

‘God's Eyes.’

Nevertheless, I invoked God's Eyes.

I needed to make sure.

The system was perfect. Even Death Bringer couldn't touch the system.

If the status window appeared, it meant that Death Bringer wasn't free of the system.

If it didn't, it meant he secured it so that his status window didn't appear.

And just as I hoped, a window soon appeared.

-The power in the target doesn't allow 'God's Eyes (Demigod)' to function.

Name: Hell Monarch (Death Bringer)

Occupation: Devil

Title: * Devil (God, ???)

* Supreme God (God, ???)

* Sublime Existence (God, ???)

* Ruler of Death (God, ???)

* Defiled Guardian (God, ???)

Stats

Strength: ???

Intelligence: ???

Agility: ???

Stamina: ???

Magic Power: ???

Potential: (???/???)

Uniqueness: In a state of possession. However, the possession isn't complete yet.

Skill: ???

Everything was filled with question marks.

But it gave me some assurance against the devil.

There were also the devil's additional titles.

I couldn't see the status properly due to his power, but at least there was a status window.

It was sufficient.

Although everything was a question mark, the lines about the

uniqueness appeared.

I raised the Emperor's Sword.

The moonlight reflected off it and showed off a radiant beauty.

It was originally the Hell Monarch's sword.

One of his most loyal servants, Maxium, was in charge of this sword.

"Maxium acknowledged me as his emperor. He gave me this sword as proof. You are just a fake shadow."

Death Bringer sneered at me. But I didn't stop talking.

"Do you hear this heart? It was originally yours, but now it is completely mine. The Underground World, the 100,000 phantom cavalry...you are just a fake self who failed to accomplish anything."

I was taunting him.

The possession wasn't complete yet.

If the spirit of the Hell Monarch remained even a little bit, it would lead to extreme confusion.

“You are not the Hell Monarch. I am the Hell Monarch!”

My thoughts were soon proven to be correct.

"Keuk...!"

Death Bringer grabbed his head.

“This bastard...!”

He glared at me with a pained expression. But he couldn't easily move.

Attacking now could also be a method.

However, I gave up as I saw him gradually regain stability.

The Hell Monarch couldn't win against Death Bringer. There was only a little resistance.

'It wasn't much.'

His spirit would eventually be eaten away. His soul would fade away and his body would belong to Death Bringer.

I deployed Chaotic Blade.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

My target wasn't Death Bringer.

It was the dragon he was riding!

The dragon screamed and Death Bringer fell to the ground.

I put away my sword.

If Death Bringer completely swallowed the Hell Monarch's spirit then things would become harder. My actions would only buy a few days at most.

In the meantime, I had to go to the Spirit World to destroy the system.

Death Bringer's condition wasn't normal, so there would be a problem with the enemy's advance.

I spread my wings.

And I quickly began to return.

I had brought everything from the dungeons with me to the

Demon World. Among them were the items that I previously used to go to the Spirit World.

I immediately called Oswen. Oswen, who was busy making the mirror, immediately responded to my call.

“Oswen. Can this device allow me to go to the Spirit World?”

"It is possible but..."

"Work as quickly as possible. I must go to the Dark Spirit World."

A device to open a crack. The materials were enough and Oswen was skilled, so I believed he could do it quickly. It wasn't a recreation but just making use of what was already made.

“I understand.”

He didn't ask for the reason.

Oswen left to work on the device and I heard a mosquito-like sound.

“M~aster!”

It was Yihi. I frowned. Everything was moved except for the Dungeon Core. This was a completely different world so I didn't

understand how Yihi came along.

Yihi was a fairy of the Dungeon Core.

No, she wasn't. I had become the demon king.

Yihi should have become the ruler of the fairies, so it was right that she could throw away her constraints.

But Yihi still belonged to the Dungeon Core. Was she rejected? Or did she not have enough qualifications?

"How did you come to the Demon World?"

"Yihihi. The power of love."

"...Your job is over. You have an obligation to create a Fairy World."

Unlike the spirits, the fairies didn't have their own world. But it wasn't right that they disappeared. So the fairies hoped that a ruler would appear to make a world for them.

The fairy ruler had that type of power. In fact, it was quite significant.

Then Yihi spoke with a grouchy expression on her face.

"I don't know. But I felt like I had to come here. Yihi feels uneasy."

"The fairy ruler doesn't have the power of foresight."

"It's not like that. Can't Yihi just stay here?"

I touched my jaw. Yihi was now fully qualified to become ruler of the fairies.

There was no harm in allowing her to stay here. Rather, she might be a great help in the war.

After finishing my calculations, I opened my mouth.

"Help the other demons and creatures."

"Wah! Is that so? Yihhi. I knew Master would allow it! Jjuk!"

Yihi stopped looking so moody, kissed my cheek and flew off. It wasn't really obvious, but it seemed like Yihi had grown a little bit more. I was busy, but I strongly felt like I wouldn't see her for a long time.

Immediately after Yihi left, I started thinking deeply.

‘Spirit World...’

Frankly, it was a type of gamble.

If the dark spirits didn’t have the system then I would suffer a great loss.

The war would flow in an adverse way.

I would have to face Death Bringer who became perfect.

"I’m back."

Soon Oswen came carrying the device.

“Is it possible?”

“Yes. I’ll run it right now. Please don’t get lost.”

There was a high chance of getting lost when walking through the crack. In addition, the crack needed to be kept open so I needed to return as soon as possible.

If not, I might become lost in the crack and be destroyed by the presences in the nothingness. Once I was lost, my army wouldn’t have the power to deal with the Hell Monarch.

"I'll go as quickly as possible."

The crack was opened.

I stepped into the crack.

The Spirit World was deserted. There were cracks everywhere and sounds of things being destroyed.

The dark spirits were fighting with other spirits in numerous cracks.

I looked into many of the cracks.

Most of the Spirit World was devastated. The elemental spirits were killed and the survivors obeyed the dark spirits.

But there was still one place where a battle seemed to have been going on for a long time.

"The Fire King commands you! Burn them with Hellfire!"

The Fire Spirit King Garrash!

He led the struggling fire spirits.

The so-called strongest spirit in the Spirit World was covered

with wounds.

The dark spirits used the power of the crack to relentlessly pursue him.

I worried about it for a short moment.

It was possible to enter the centre of the Dark Spirit World.

But in a situation where everything was uncertain, a person with information had considerable value.

'I have to ask about the situation.'

The Fire Spirit King Garrash would know more about the dark spirits than anyone else.

After making a decision, I quickly entered the crack connected with the Fire Spirit World.

Hwaruruk!

Pride's flames burned roughly and widely. They weren't lacking when compared to the flames of Garrash the Fire Spirit King. Rather, my flames were even more powerful thanks to my high magic power.

Chaotic Blade was then used and the dark spirits were cut like trash.

"All dark spirits, stop."

I used True Words. Once the power of my words manifested, the dark spirits couldn't move. They didn't seem to be protected by any power.

'Lightning God. Jump out.'

I freely released Lightning God.

The lightning roared and slaughtered the dark spirits.

It took 10 minutes to clean up all the dark spirits fighting the fire spirits.

It was an overwhelming victory.

Many dark spirits came here, but there weren't any strong presences. And I was hunting my prey.

Chapter 239: System (2)

After cleaning everything up, I approached Garrash.

"It has been a while."

"...It seems so."

Garrash nodded with a puzzled expression.

There was a good reason. I was quite different from the last time he met me. It wasn't obvious, but Garrash was a transcendent being. He could see a little bit of my essence.

Garrash glanced over my whole body and asked.

"Are you really a demon? It isn't strange to call you a living god now."

"I'm trying to kill a god."

"Interesting. Very interesting. If I wasn't so busy then I might have joined you."

"Garrash. Do you want revenge on the dark spirits?"

I stared straight into Garrash's eyes. More than half of the Fire

Spirit World was broken. There were only a few spirits remaining, so the result was obvious. If the dark spirits invaded a few more times then they would be destroyed.

It was impossible that Garrash didn't know this.

After seeing my strength, it was easy for Garrash to choose.

It was as good as placing himself below me. Garrash smiled and spoke.

“What do you want?”

He was a reasonable king.

He told me the story about the Spirit World. Cracks opened and the dark spirits ambushed them. The plan of the dark spirits was amazing. The even more amazing thing was related to Adonis the Dark Spirit King.

"He broke the balance. Each spiritual world maintains a balance, but he became a madman caught up in destructive desires. If left alone, the Spirit World...hoo."

Garrash sighed. The fire he exhaled from his whole body was intense but didn't contain any power.

"Is there anything else that is strange? Anything is fine."

Garrash nodded.

“Yes. We united. The surviving spirits joined forces and headed to the Dark Spirit World. And we were wiped out. I was the only one to come back.”

“What happened?”

“I don’t know. Just...Adonis was impervious to any attacks...”

An impervious target couldn’t be defeated. He seemed like a demigod. Garrash’s pride didn’t allow him to call Adonis a god.

“Is that the end? You didn’t see anything else?”

"Anything else? Something strange. Let’s see. I saw...a door, yes it was a door. A giant door was floating in the sky. It was only a glimpse, but I definitely saw it.”

A door?

The Dark Spirit World was a place that I knew.

The auction was held several times in a castle in the centre of the world.

But I had never seen a door in the sky.

If this door was new then it probably had something to do with the system.

"Anyway, that's all I can tell you. The dark spirits are strong, have a lot of numbers and Adonis is also powerful. Is there any way to beat them?"

"You don't need to do anything."

I spread my wings.

If that was the whole story then it was good.

I could move without worrying.

Time was more important than anything else. If Death Bringer noticed that I was near the system in the Dark Spirit World, then he would come immediately. I didn't have a lot of time. Right now, the possession was incomplete so he had to concentrate on absorbing the Hell Monarch.

"You will handle it alone?"

Garrash was filled with admiration.

"If I return then you will have to open your warehouse."

"If it depends on coming back...I understand. I will freely open the warehouse. Take what you want. Instead, get rid of those guys and come back."

Garrash had given up.

It was originally meant to be a reward for returning the fire spirits, but the situation had changed.

At first glance, he wanted to fight beside me. However, he was obliged to chase the remaining spirits.

I headed back to the crack.

Lightning quick.

I couldn't give them time to notice and prepare something.

Everything had to be resolved quickly.

The dark spirits were originally merchants. They had raised their strength by relying on the points from the demons. In my previous life, they had waged a war for several decades. But now it took less than 10 years. What was the reason?

The crack was just a crack. They might be able to save power through the crack, but it wasn't enough to deal with the whole Spirit World so quickly.

There had to be a reason why it was possible. The reason...it had to be the system.

I entered the crack and emerged in the Dark Spirit World.

I raised my speed so that the dark spirits wouldn't notice.

There was no one here to stop me. There were some spirits but they couldn't see me. In the Demon World Auction, the demons were overwhelmed because their strength was temporarily sealed by the devil's contract. In fact, the Demon World was a much stronger existence.

No matter how strong the dark spirits were, my eyes didn't pay attention to them. I only needed to pay attention to one presence.

‘Adonis.’

My problem was Adonis.

Garrash mentioned it, but he must have the power of a demigod. Of course, that wasn't a problem, but he got rid of the limitations of a transcendent in a short time. It was a growth beyond common sense.

Soon I reached the centre of the Dark Spirit World. A huge castle. And a door floating in the sky!

It wasn't detailed, but it definitely existed.

My heart jumped. That door was the 'system.' Gustarte, who lived in me, strongly agreed.

However, the gate was blocked by numerous dark spirits. There were stairs leading into the sky with numerous castles all over the place. Any unauthorized people would be blocked.

'I won't be able to pass unnoticed.'

I scratched my cheek.

I hadn't intended to move quietly in the first place.

And I planned to catch Adonis. There was something I wanted from him.

'The Seven Sins.'

I wanted all of the Seven Sins items that he had. I had three and Greed was an imitation. With the exception of Greed, three more remained.

I wondered what would happen if all of them were gathered. The Hell Monarch had thought it was good enough to kill a god. However, Oswen realized the danger and hid them in cracks.

Chwaruruk!

I woke up Lightning God.

Lightning God sprang out.

"Let's give them a greeting."

It was enough to lightly say hello.

Lightning God moved through the dark spirits like they were a nuisance and assaulted a castle.

And...

Kwarung! Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The castle was instantly destroyed.

Dark spirits were slaughtered.

There were still some spirits alive, but I didn't care. They wouldn't be able to stand between me and my goal. The relationship between merchant and customer was entirely gone, and now we were complete enemies.

I wasn't nice enough to show mercy to my enemies.

I stepped on the dark spirits like they were ants.

They couldn't exceed the wall between us. I didn't even need to use any power.

I wondered how many I smashed.

"...Randolph Brigsiel. I don't remember sending an invitation to you."

Adonis!

He appeared wearing a thick black cloak.

The griffin feathered mask and ornaments seemed to have a legend rating.

He was pretty fashionable for a dark spirit.

"Adonis. Give me the things left to you."

"Left?"

"The rest of the Seven Sins and that door!"

My finger pointed to the sky. A large door. The system was behind it.

Adonis scoffed. And then he laughed.

"You don't have the strength."

"No. I am asking politely. I'll let you live if you give them to me."

The dark spirits used whatever method they could to obtain goods for sale. I did the same. In addition, I had definite proof of a collusion with Death Bringer.

It wasn't a lie when I said I would spare him if he gave them to me.

It only applied to Adonis.

I wouldn't necessarily spare the other dark spirits.

Of course, Adonis wouldn't give them to me nicely...

"Despite getting power from somewhere, I will grant your wish to die."

I didn't want information to be exchanged between Adonis and Death Bringer. Adonis wasn't able to predict just how strong I had become.

The relationship itself between Death Bringer and Adonis was strange. Adonis was given the system while Death Bringer took over the Hell Monarch's body.

Garrash saw it. However, Adonis was unable to recognize the gap between us.

If he did then he wouldn't have come out like this.

'I'm glad that he is an idiot.'

I shrugged and grasped Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

There was no need to use another skill against him.

The moon was floating in the sky.

'Haïen Moon's swordsmanship is sufficient.'

I intended to shatter him with pure swordsmanship.

I didn't use all of my magic power.

Adonis wasn't my opponent in the first place.

The attacks of the spirits didn't connect because he had a demigod ranked skill.

'Elemental Shield (Demigod)' was a skill that negated the attacks of the specified opponent.

But it was no use in front of me. Even if he had a demigod ranked skill, the difference between us was too large.

All he had was a good weapon. He was also bad at using it. He failed to properly show off its efficiency.

I understood all this when using God's Eyes. God's Eyes was a skill that allowed me to see the status window of the opponent, although sometimes it could fail due to a difference in the defense skill, intelligence or magic power.

It was the same for this.

There was no Elemental Shield in front of such a difference in stat points.

"This...ridiculous..."

Adonis' eyes widened.

He couldn't believe that there was such a huge gap.

But he couldn't finish speaking.

My swords sliced through Adonis.

Chwack!

I shook my swords and looked around.

There were numerous dark spirits surrounding me, but they were just staring blankly.

'I need to fulfilled my promise to Garrash.'

The dark spirits all committed the same sin.

They destroyed the balance, so I would destroy all of them except for a few.

Hwaruruk!

Kururung!

Lightning God moved.

Pride's flames wrapped around the dark spirits so that they couldn't escape.

The were imprisoned.

And...their numbers sharply decreased in an instant.

After stopping the attack, I headed to a trembling spirit. It was a stupid looking spirit in the form of a kobold.

“What is your name?”

"S-Sni...hiccup! Sniffer.”

I nodded.

"Sniffer. From now on, you will be the leader of the surviving dark spirits.”

"H-hiccup! Yes, yes?”

"Leader Sniffer. Bring the rest of the Seven Sins. Or you will receive Adonis' fate.”

It was simply interpreted as death.

Despite looking bamboozled, Sniffle nodded his head vigorously.

“Yes, yep!”

Sniffer ran off at his best speed. I didn't think he would run away.

Then I looked at the handful of remaining spirits.

The dark spirits were unable to move and just bowed. They had completely lost.

"You are defeated."

I used the power of my words.

It was to imprint the defeat into them.

Thanks to the mercy of the winner, the balance of the Spirit World was preserved.

I had no obligation to maintain the balance, but the dark spirits might be helpful later. They had the ability to find excellent things.

It wouldn't be bad to save a few to be used after everything was finished.

‘Then...’

I moved my gaze.

I looked at the giant door leading to the system.

Chapter 240: System (3)

Adonis had placed some of the Seven Sins up for auction. I had won everything, but I turned down a deal when Adonis offered it.

There had been no way to obtain the other four items in the Seven Sins set...now I obtained all of it.

‘One is missing.’

Pride, Greed, Sloth, Wrath, Envy and Lust.

I had them all except for one.

I couldn’t see Gluttony.

But there was no need for Gluttony. Infinite Armour would play that role.

Wrath was a sword.

Pride was a pair of gloves.

Sloth was a cloak.

Greed was an armour as well as a pair of silver earrings.

Lust was a belt and Envy was a pair of shoes.

Once all the Seven Sins were worn, a strange power started fluctuating.

-You have worn all of the Seven Sins. The skill 'Power of Destruction (God)' has been created.

It is a skill that was made to kill a god. There is enough power to destroy a god's power.

Power of Destruction...!

I formed tight fists. Personally, I wondered about how the Hell Monarch would kill a god. Now it seemed like they could fight on equal footing after a god's power was eliminated.

I examined Power of Destruction. Soon the description appeared in front of me.

Name: Power of Destruction (God)

Description – permanently destroys one of a god's powers. Can't be duplicated on the same target. A skill that only exists for the destruction of a god.

Every time it is used, one of the Seven Sins must be sacrificed.

(7/7)

Indeed. It could only be used seven times, but that wasn't really a disadvantage. I was only dealing with Death Bringer. In other words, I could remove one of Death Bringer's most troublesome powers.

This...it would be very advantageous in a fight if I used it correctly. It was clear that the Hell Monarch made this after knowing how difficult it was to go against a god.

‘If he succeeded in being fully resurrected...’

If the Hell Monarch had successfully resurrected then he might have really killed numerous gods.

After gathering the Seven Sins, I knew how strong the Hell Monarch's rage towards the gods was.

I nodded and spread my wings.

I achieved one goal and it was time to reach the finish.

I quickly flew into the sky and stopped in front of a giant door.

‘The system.’

I placed my hands on the door.

And I pushed.

Kuooooong.

However, it didn’t open easily.

‘Is a key needed?’

I frowned. However, there was no such thing as a key.

The presence of the key meant that it was possible for someone to manage it, which meant it was possible to manipulate the system.

If no one could touch it then there was no need to make a key. It was a system made by Death Bringer, so it was hard to imagine that someone could secretly enter.

There had to be a way.

"Open."

The power of words. It was able to influence a consciousness. It wasn't limited to living beings. There was some effect on inanimate objects.

-Checking divinity.

Checking authority.

System access has been given.

That message suddenly emerged.

I put aside my questions.

Kuooooong.

The door started to open with a huge sound.

The inside of the door was bright.

But there was nothing.

It was a blank world.

'Is this the inside of the system?'

It was designed so that only a god, or someone with divinity, was permitted to enter. I didn't know what to do in this empty space.

Gustarte didn't answer. It was the same for Diablo as well. They were also outsiders to the system.

System-a set of related elements are combined according to certain laws in order to achieve necessary functions. Lexical meaning, positive.

Yet...the moment I had the thought, the answer appeared in front of me.

I nodded. Now I knew what this space was for.

It was a place that gave 'answers.' This was a place that managed all the information.

The game system was created here and Adonis learnt a skill from it.

I couldn't help wondering about something.

'Randolph Brigsiel.'

First of all, I wanted to see the conclusions about me.

But was it because the amount of information was too big? This time it wasn't shown through words.

Instead, something else appeared in front of me.

Randolph Brigsiel.

The video started from when I was born.

'I also had parents.'

There were no demons born without parents.

This was the first time I saw those who gave birth to me. They were ordinary demons. They were demons who tried to escape from a war.

They had laughed when their baby was born. However, their joy didn't last long. War was engulfing the entire Demon World. There was no place for them to avoid it.

In the aftermath of a war, they died. The baby persistently survived through other people. He was an experiment, someone's slave, a sword of war...

The child grew stronger. He progressed alone and made his name known. They were my memories.

I once again replayed the memories. It started from the moment I was born to shortly after I grew stronger. The time when I was a baby was brief, but it was both weird and amazing.

It was like I really experienced the video playing. I felt their touches. I could feel the sensation of being a baby in my parents' arms for a while.

I repeated it five times before shaking my head. My parents' faces were now imprinted in my brain, but I couldn't watch any longer. There was no point in holding on to the past. Even if I went back to the past, I would just be a newborn baby who couldn't do anything.

'A memory storage.'

That's right. This was a place where all the memories were stored. It wouldn't be strange to call it a repository of information.

'I know what to do.'

My role was to break this system.

I pulled out a seed.

It was similar to a human fetus, but very small.

The Seed of Creation.

The Seed of Creation was unknown.

It was nothing but could give birth to something.

Planting an unknown answer would destroy the system or cause a giant error.

I placed the Seed of Creation on the floor.

The seed immediately dug into the ground.

And.

-Unknown.

Error.

Danger.

Error.

At that moment, the world turned black. Everything was words. The words 'error' and 'danger' were repeated many times.

I turned around without any fear.

If I had a lot of time then I could have found out more about the truths of the world, but I had an urgent task.

Kwarurung!

Kwang! Kwaang!

The huge door started to crumble.

The dark spirits' castles in the sky started disappearing.

The system was crumbling. The divinity was spreading. The quality was something I could taste with my tongue. It was Death Bringer's divinity and I couldn't absorb it. As soon as the divinity scattered, it started slowly returning to Death Bringer.

'It is like this.'

Death Bringer's divinity was definitely exhausted.

But if it all returned then he would recover his strength at once.

This was the time to fight.

I needed to go back quickly.

I robbed the warehouse containing the dark spirits' treasure.

Then I headed to the Fire Spirit World through the open crack.

Garrash was at the entrance. He was watching the problems in the Dark Spirit World in real-time. He stared at me with a look of amazement after I emerged.

"Did you do all of that?"

"It wasn't difficult. How much time has passed?"

"It has been five days."

Five days!

I hadn't spent all that time catching Adonis.

It seemed like the passage of time in the world of the system was

different. It would have been bad if I spent more time in there.

By now, the war should have started in the Demon World.

My mind became more urgent.

“Keep your promise, Garrash.”

“...A promise is a promise. Okay. I will open the warehouse. Take whatever you want.”

Garrash said in a pained tone. I had taken care of the dark spirits in the flash, giving me a high merit.

I accepted the guidance of a spirit and headed to the warehouse.

Then I opened my magic bag and swept in all the items I could use.

There were a few legend rated weapons.

‘They will be helpful.’

I nodded. This would be a big help in the war. There would be a significant increase in power if a demon or creature used them.

‘There isn’t anything for me.’

I was a little sad. However, I soon forgot about it.

The Seven Sins was a seven items set. I had no need for other items.

After taking half of the huge warehouse, I exited.

“Are you going to kill a god?”

He remembered what I had said before heading to the dark spirit world. I responded lightly.

“That’s right.”

"Indeed, you do seem able to kill a god."

Garrash was convinced. To him, it seemed like I took care of the dark spirits in five days. In fact, Garrash’s eyes were shining.

"When your task is over, come back again. I want to maintain a strong relationship with you."

Was there a reason to come back?

Of course, I didn’t know what could happen in the future.

I nodded and turned away.

The gamble was a success.

The system in the Dark Spirit World was destroyed.

Now that the system was destroyed, Death Bringer's divinity was scattered all over the place. Death Bringer definitely wouldn't be in a normal condition.

I had to finish this before he recovered.

A long time ago.

He came to me with an offer about the game.

I was willing to participate. However, Death Bringer saw all the participants as expendable from the start. We were used for the sake of an experiment.

I didn't like that part. Even if he was a god, I wasn't his puppet. I was independent and nothing could control me.

I needed to engrave this fact into his bones.

'I will be the last winner.'

Overturning the situation.

Now it was time for the final fight.

The war started.

The Hell Monarch commanded an army that was close to five million.

On the other hand, the opposing side had less than 500,000.

The numerical advantage wasn't something that could be easily reversed. Furthermore, the concept of demons fighting brutally was very rare.

They were powerful beings that could destroy something in the blink of an eye.

"Shameful demons. You who have forgotten your souls. I, Ariel Diablo, will erase you today. Be aware of your own faults and die."

She used an ivory sword and armour made from the bones of a balrog.

Hundreds of silver knights followed Ariel.

Kung! Kwarurung!

A massacre. The war had already begun. Millions of demons and creatures collided with each other. The screams and blood didn't end. But Death Bringer's army was powerful. It wasn't simply due to numbers. Almost all the demons with noble titles were included.

The ranks of demons were usually determined by force. They weren't going to be weak.

"Hold on until His Majesty comes back!"

Oswen also took part in the war.

He fought more enthusiastically after confirming that it was the Hell Monarch who led the army.

Kwaduk!

He greeted the enemy with more than 50 homunculi made by Gaparam.

The homunculi were incredible. They grabbed the enemy's head and tore it off.

There were struggles in other places. They protected the important points against the enemy who were pushing like a tsunami, and continued to fight.

The giant mirror in the castle stopped the curse. And 100,000 soldiers were fiercely protecting the mirror.

The enemies knew it as well. The enemies intensively targeted the mirror.

They could prevent it for one day but...there was no time for a break. Their allies were rapidly decreasing and there were no signs that the enemies were being reduced. All that was left was defeat.

Furthermore, the Hell Monarch hadn't taken part.

They felt despair. However, they couldn't give up.

And the second day.

When the sun rose in the sky, the Hell Monarch appeared.

Chapter 241: The Final Battle

The Hell Monarch coughed up blood. His body shook and he grinded his teeth together. Blood flowed from his eyes so he didn't look normal.

“Randalph...Brigsiel...!”

His voice filled the battlefield. Just listening caused an eerie feeling to cover their bodies. The strong people instantly recognized that he was the Hell Monarch. It was the very last trial. They felt both hope and despair.

The Hell Monarch raised his hands.

Gradually, the power of destruction gathered around his hands.

A mighty magic power. Dangerous. But it couldn't be avoided.

As he reached out his hand, a purple sphere hit the ground.

Kuwaaaaaaaang!

The explosion couldn't be blocked. A storm erupted that touched everything. Destructive Humanity (God). A power only for destruction. The high ranking demons and creatures couldn't withstand the power. 30,000 creatures and demons died in an instant.

Death Bringer looked on expressionlessly. Originally he should have been much stronger. The divinity locked in the system was scattered so he was weakened. He looked at the castle that he wanted to crush in his fist. No matter how much he was weakened, he was still Death Bringer. A devil.

Getting rid of the huge castle wasn't his job.

"A mortal cannot overcome an immortal. I am the devil Death Bringer! Do you dare go against a god?"

He once again reached out. A multitude of hands stretched out from the earth. The hands grabbed the 30,000 corpses on the ground and made a huge doll.

Kwaruk!

Kwaruruk!

The 30,000 corpses combined to form a monster over 100 metres tall. This was the result of properly combining his powers and skills.

The monster was ignorant. However, it was strong.

The place that the monster swept through didn't have any bodies remaining.

Death Bringer didn't distinguish between friend and foe.

"I will kill all of you in the end. Before that...I will get rid of everything."

He declared. Words containing divinity. He infused his words with his strength, in order to ensure that he kept the promise.

The balrog Rogujan, Adonis of the dark spirits. I couldn't deny that they were strong, but they were lacking compared to me. It meant that Absolute Robbery would have no effect. Of course, it would be a different story if they had a power like Camael's, but they didn't.

Adonis...he got into the system and obtained Elemental Shield. The system gave him a way to achieve it. But that wasn't enough to call it a power. He couldn't even use Elemental Shield properly. He was stunned by the sudden power I had and stopped thinking.

Absorbing the two of them wouldn't make me stronger. And Absolute Robbery seemed to have a limit on the number of times it could be used.

'I can't absorb more than five.'

At first, I thought it was the amount of magic power. But when I used it several times, I realized there was a limit on the number of things I could absorb. It depended on my ability and it seemed like

there were approximately five times left.

Anyway...I was looking forward to it.

‘What would happen if I absorbed Death Bringer?’

After all, Death Bringer was a devil and god, even if he lost his divinity. A supreme god!

He was likely to have a similar or even greater strength than me.

Although I had the same divinity as a living god, it was difficult to imagine stealing divinity from Death Bringer.

Becoming stronger was always enjoyable.

And I heard from Yihi that he had started a massive attack.

‘If he attacked, then it is natural to receive it.’

Survival was in my nature.

As soon as I returned through the crack, I took out all the weapons I brought. There were hundreds of epic rated items piled up. The unique rated items also numbered over a thousand.

"Give them to those who need them."

“Yes, Master.”

Yihi instantly obeyed my command.

The state of the castle was the worst. Thanks to the constant retreat and pushing back, the condition of their equipment was terrible. The craftsmen could repair the tools, but the story was different on the battlefield. If two people had similar skills, the one with better equipment would win. This could mean the difference in winning on the battlefield.

Changing their equipment could increase the skills of quite a few demons. This was the castle that Ariel Diablo ruled over, so they were quite well organized.

I left the work in the castle to Yihi. I immediately checked the status of the battlefield. I clicked my tongue lightly.

'The worst.'

It hadn't been long since the Hell Monarch's attacks began. But there were devastating traces all over the place. Bodies of both enemies and allies were piled up. Even so, the number of my allies was noticeably reduced.

‘There aren't even 200,000 troops remaining.’

I swept my gaze over the battlefield calmly. After a lot of struggle, they had reduced the opposing side, but there were still three million remaining. It was a situation where my side was enclosed in a narrow place. They wouldn't be able to last much longer.

If only one road was opened then the rest would be easy. They would be annihilated in the blink of an eye. Plus...

I moved my gaze. The highest place. Death Bringer, in the guise of the Hell Monarch, was gathering energy of destruction. The energy was the size of an adult male, but the magic power coming from it was tremendous.

‘He is aiming to wipe out everything.’

I understood it immediately.

This was Death Bringer's power!

The power of a god. Among them, Death Bringer had the most destructive energy.

Could I block it?

I shook my head.

I couldn't block it. Although I could interfere, I couldn't prevent

the destruction energy from touching the ground. I would have to use a god power and I only had two. Reverse World and True Words. Neither of them were offensive powers.

‘I can't do it.’

If that hit then the castle would collapse. Was it just the castle? Every creature nearby would collapse.

He wouldn't have two similar powers.

My worry was short-lived.

I unfastened the earrings. I held them in my hands and said.

“Power of Destruction.”

Chwaaaaak!

White light emerged from the earrings. The light swallowed my intended target, Death Bringer. Then his expression stiffened.

‘A message isn't popping up. Maybe it is because the system collapsed.’

The system normally gave me a choice of what to do. I just followed it. But now that the system had crashed, I needed to

manipulate it on my own.

Five colours emerged from the earrings.

Black, purple, vermillion, red and blue.

It meant I could eliminate one of them.

I chose purple. My hands touched it.

Swiik!

At that moment, Death Bringer's destructive aura disappeared.

The earrings also evaporated.

'Now there are four powers left.'

I nodded. Power of Destruction wasn't a skill that only destroyed powers. It also allowed me to confirm how many powers the opponent had.

Five lights appeared and one of them had been destroyed.

Now there were four powers remaining.

"The Hell Monarch made something good."

I shrugged and glanced at Death Bringer. He was currently trapped in the body of the Hell Monarch. He wouldn't be able to escape from the Hell Monarch's body until his divinity returned. So if the Hell Monarch was killed, he would also die.

It was the end after being destroyed.

"Randolph Briggsiel...!"

He felt one of his powers disappearing.

Death Bringer's body trembled. Was it because his divinity had fallen greatly? The expressions on his face were intense. Somehow he didn't seem like the devil. He was significantly different from the first time I saw him in the Demon World.

'I can do it.'

There was a mocking smile on my face.

He might be feeling furious, but I was happy.

I had removed one of his strongest powers so I moved over there. There would be a lot of damage in my fight with Death Bringer, so it would likely be disadvantageous to my demons and creatures.

At first, he ignored me and killed my soldiers. However, he had now become hostile towards me. Once he became angry, I needed to move.

Hwiing!

I used Chaotic Blade on Wrath and the Emperor's Sword.

Paaaang!

I kicked the air. I folded my wings and flew as fast as possible towards Death Bringer.

Kwaang!

A blue barrier blocked my swords. It wasn't a shield made using magic power.

'This is a god power.'

The power to form a protective barrier.

I suddenly thought of Camael. It was an annoying power like his.

But Death Bringer shouldn't have a defensive power. Gustarte and Diablo also laughed.

Then...

‘This power originally belongs to the Hell Monarch.’

Guardian’s Power!

It was a power that used the fate of those they guarded, keeping the user in a near invincible state. In contrast, the opponent wouldn’t be able to exert their strength.

Jjejeok! Jjejeok!

The shield that received my sword was broken.

Death Bringer had no need for defenses. He was a solitary being.

On the contrary, I was protecting many. At the very least, I had to protect the soldiers following me. That was the responsibility of the demon king.

Guardian’s Power was useless in front of me. I had a lot more to protect than Death Bringer.

‘There are three powers remaining.’

Kwaang! Kwaang!

I wielded my swords in rapid succession. Every time, Death Bringer reached out and blocked my swords. Huge shock waves kept on being created as I moved sideways.

A wide valley.

Death Bringer opened his arms. Soon, a red energy wrapped around the whole valley.

This was also a power. It was a great power that dominated this space.

I frowned. From the moment I entered this space, I could tell that my stats had fallen.

Absolute Domination. I confronted it with my own power.

Diablo's voice rang out. The red magic power that Death Bringer used was Absolute Domination. I had a similar power and could defend myself with my spirit.

It was similar to the power of True Words. I wouldn't allow it to dominate me. Overlapping was possible.

"Death Bringer. I am impervious to your power."

I said with all my will.

Jjaejaeng!

Soon, the red magic power broke like a mirror.

'Indeed...now he is a demigod.'

It wouldn't have been easy if Death Bringer had his original divinity. Even with the same power, there was a clear difference between users.

However, his system was broken and his divinity barely survived.

Death Bringer's expression was stiff.

He was a god from birth. He had never experienced a situation like this before. I was a mortal demon.

But I wasn't a mere demon.

I also possessed divinity. I had absorbed Gustarte's powers and inherited the power of Diablo, the origin demon king. I had surpassed normal mortals a long time ago.

"A mortal subject...! Is this creature trying to transcend your creator?"

Death Bringer was filled with a torrent of emotion. A god was originally a perfect being. They didn't express emotions to this extent.

Now I was sure of it. He was a fallen god. It was right to call him a demigod. The boundaries between a mortal and immortal were disturbed. Due to the incomplete possession, he might have integrated with the Hell Monarch...

This was the Hell Monarch's anger. His despair was felt by Death Bringer.

'These wretched words.'

The Hell Monarch had wanted to kill a god. I didn't care. But I wouldn't ruin this game. I couldn't show him a big mistake that he would target.

There were two powers remaining. But I didn't care much.

"Death Bringer. Now I will finish this."

Pride's flames. Lightning God. Chaotic Blade. I used every attack skill at the same time. If I killed him then the army attacking the castle would also be destroyed. They existed due to his skill.

Death Bringer's expression changed. As I moved in, he smiled.

"End? ...Come, you won't be able to avoid this."

He raised his hands. Then he pointed towards me.

"The real power of the devil isn't something you can offset with your mind. I am the Creator and I have power over all my creatures. According to my authority, I will erase you now."

Death Bringer was the devil. A demon and a god. And I was part of the species that he created.

He opened his mouth and declared.

"Death."

No other words were required. One of his remaining two powers was revealed. However, it felt different from any power he had used before.

A specified task. His greatest power!

It was a proclamation of death towards the opponent.

As soon as Death Bringer said the word 'death', the world around me changed. It was black and I couldn't see anything. But I didn't die right away.

"Kkuk...!"

My body wasn't listening to me. My hands moved to choke my own neck. Even so, I was able to resist thanks to my high intelligence.

Kuuong!

I fell from the sky and crashed into the ground.

In this state, my body twisted around on the ground.

'My remaining stat points.'

I gritted my teeth. I had to hang in there.

I instinctively realized that raising my intelligence was the only way to stop this power.

In order to do this, I had to use my remaining stat points.

But how? The system had crashed so I didn't know how to raise it.

"Master!"

At that moment, I heard Yihi's voice from above me.

A hallucination?

Death Bringer’s power enclosed me in another space. I had felt my soul connection with Yihi be forcibly disconnected.

“I am a living Dungeon Core. The core is part of the system! Hurry and touch Yihi!”

My vision was tinged with darkness. I couldn’t see anything. I only felt death slowly approaching.

But I reached out. Soon someone touched my hand.

-System resume rate 0.001%.

Unable to recover.

-Status window...recovery complete.

Name: Randolph Brigsiel

Occupation: Demon King (Dungeon Master)

Title: * Dungeon Hunter (Residual stats +1 when occupying

dungeons and hunting demons)

- * Indomitable Warrior (Ex U, All stats +2)
- * First to Receive a Fairy's Blessing (U, Magic Power +6)
- * Origin Master (Epic, all stats +3)
- * Undead (Ex U, Intelligence and Stamina +5)
- * Ruler of the Underground World (Legend, all stats +5, the rating of all skills below epic grade +0.5)
- * Origin Demon King (God, all stats +10, grants a transcendent rank)

Stats

Strength: 130 (+30)

Intelligence: 149 (+25)

Agility: 125 (+30)

Stamina: 145 (+32)

Magic Power: 142 (+26)

Potential: (691+143/???)

Remaining Stat Points: 47

Electric Power: 742GW

Uniqueness: The master of the Underground World. The Heart of the Hell Monarch has completely awakened. Has a strong divinity for some reason. Inherited the power of Diablo, the origin demon king.

Skill: Combine Everything (Ex U), God's Eye (Demigod), Dark Sword (Epic), Divine Sword Unity (Epic, Passive), Lightning Elemental (Epic), Pride (Epic), Corruption (Legend), Power of Domination (Ex Epic, Passive), Spirit Communication (Epic, Passive), Reverse World (God), True Words (God, Passive) Absolute Robbery (Demigod), Chaotic Blade (Legend), Power of Destruction (God)

Skill and Item Effects: Wrath (Strength +7), Sloth (Agility +7), Pride (Stamina + 7), Divine Sword Unity (Strength and Agility +3)

Through the darkness, some words appeared in front of me.

I bit my lip hard enough to make it bleed and put all my remaining points into intelligence.

My intelligence reached 221, well over 200 points.

-The skill 'Aegis Shield (God)' has been created.

Having more than 200 intelligence was no different from having a power. Once Aegis Shield was created, the darkness that stained my surroundings quickly faded.

The world regained its original shape and I could barely open my eyes.

However, a sight I couldn't easily understand was right before my eyes.

"A fairy dares interfere with my work? You deserve to die."

Death Bringer's hand had pierced through Yihi's chest.

Yihi had a spirit body. But Death Bringer had the power to tear apart a spirit. His strength was in the realm of a god.

It was impossible for her to deal with Death Bringer, even if she

became the fairy ruler.

At the same time, Yihi gradually became dim.

“.....”

I was silent. Then Yihi stared at me and gave a small laugh.

“M-Master...yihhi.

“Did I do well?”

Yihi playfully bowed.

And she was gone in a puff of white smoke.

“.....”

My face became hard.

Ah. My mouth opened slightly, but that was it. I couldn't think of anything to say.

This was the second time I had seen Yihi die.

She had died twice on my behalf. She never resented me.

Yihi originally should have left to become the fairy queen. The contract between us should have been terminated at this point. She would build her own world out of the core. Despite having such an important mission, Yihi had continued to belong to the core.

She felt uneasy and continued to watch over me.

-Hello, Dungeon Master. I am the Dungeon Master's companion fairy, Yihi! Yihi!

-Wah, Master is amazing! Mind reading!

-Yihi was really wrong. Yihi should have been careful until the end. Please forgive me Master...hiing.

-Master! Master! En en! Don't die and leave Yihi.

In retrospect, Yihi had only caused me trouble. She didn't always do what I told her to. Her love for bees was enough to make a secret garden. Sometimes she showed amazing creativity and did something unexpected. Therefore, I stayed quiet when she was helpful.

However, despite this, I always kept Yihi by my side. Yihi never betrayed me. Even in my previous life, she was always laughing no matter how hard it was. That attitude didn't change even when she died on my behalf.

But, this was the end.

I didn't have the ability to turn back time.

It was impossible to turn back the time once it was already turned. I was sure because I realized some truths of the world after gaining divinity.

It meant I couldn't see that light anymore.

"Do you have the power of Aegis? It is still useless. A mortal wouldn't be able to properly handle that power."

Death Bringer mocked quietly.

I stared at him.

"You shall die."

And I declared.

The power of death contained a transcendent will that couldn't be stopped.

Never, he absolutely could never survive this place.

Epilogue

I plundered Death Bringer's powers after he died. The already dead enemies collapsed as my remaining troops cheered at the victory.

We had won.

I won a great victory against the devil.

We cleared up the bodies and prepared funerals. After that, a huge party was held for everyone to celebrate the victory. I was at the centre of the victory.

I killed a devil.

He was known as the Hell Monarch, but everyone here knew.

I killed him and now there was no one to stop me in the Demon World. I was the absolute. I was king of the Demon World.

In the name of the king, I promised to devote myself to the restoration of the Demon World.

At the same time, a ceremony was held for the birth of a new demon king.

Demons who survived by hiding came out one by one.

A huge crowd gathered in front of the castle.

All the demons in the Demon World had come. They didn't know the new demon king. The ruler who would govern over them for a long time had the name of Randolph Brigsiel...

After the banquet was over.

I entered the demon king's room alone.

The surrounding area was dark and silent.

Duk. Duk.

My footsteps echoed in the room.

I slowly climbed the stairs.

There was a big chair at the top of dozens of stairs.

It was made from bones of dragons and balrogs, and only the demon king was allowed to sit on it.

I sat down on the throne.

I slid in and tilted my head backwards. I took a deep breath.

It was a long journey. I had finally become the demon king and sat in this chair like I wanted.

“.....”

I slowly closed my eyes.

Soon, I feel into a deep sleep.

It was the first restful sleep after a long time.

The survivors on Earth quickly regained the glory of the past. The demons were no longer threatening humanity. Only the dungeons and creatures remained.

But there were changes.

First, the sky changed. A huge black door was located in the sky. It was a place that couldn't be reached by plane or jet. It was a territory that no one could reach. However, they were sure that door was connected to the world of the demons. No one attempted to reach it by force.

And the dungeon in Korea regained its original appearance. It became slightly bigger.

The dungeon reached into the sky. To be exact, it touched the black door in the sky. It was like a place connected with the door.

The surviving creatures transformed and quickly increased their numbers in the dungeons.

As they grew, monster waves began again. The Awakened stuck together and endured the crisis well. It was easy because the creatures that exited the dungeons weren't very strong.

As time passed, the Awakened were divided into two large groups.

The guardians of humanity. And the hunters climbing the dungeons.

They were dungeon hunters.

“Noona! Watch out!”

Edward exclaimed.

He covered Yoo Eun-hye's back and struck a creature with his sword.

Kuaaaaack!

The creature was split in two. The creature screamed.

Edward sighed as the danger disappeared.

“Phew! Really, until the end...aren’t you too clumsy?”

Edward sighed.

Then Yoo Eun-hye laughed playfully.

"Aren’t you guarding my back?”

"You should still be careful. I might not always be able to save you.”

"Aren’t you the strongest Awakened?”

“Those are just words.”

Edward shook his head.

In the meantime, Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji commenced their treatments.

"Suture."

"Healing."

The injuries on the Awakened were healed in an instant. It wasn't strange to call it an amazing ability! Yoo Eun-hye clicked her tongue despite seeing it a few times already.

"We wouldn't have come this far if it wasn't for the two of you. Thank you."

"Of course we have to do this."

Kim Yura laughed.

Just three years ago, her expression had always been dark. But three years after the transformation of the dungeon, she had recovered much of her bright self.

"By the way, how many floors are there? This is already the 54th floor..."

Yoo Eun-hye asked with a pout. Yoo Eun-hye was an Awakened who hunted dungeons. She had already conquered several dungeons. After a long trial and error, she was finally attempting to conquer the highest dungeon that was located in Korea.

But it wasn't finished yet.

"What dungeon would be safe from Noona? Just take it easy. It will soon come to an end."

Edward responded like he didn't care. So Yoo Eun-hye had to believe it.

"What will be here? I will be bored if it is just a Dungeon Core."

"This is Korea's dungeon. The demon king's dungeon! This is already the eighth challenge...isn't it obviously connected to the door in the sky?"

"Won't the world where the demons live be on the other side of the door?"

"Yes. But don't think about entering. We will check the risks. It is our job to confirm the chances of the demons returning."

In other words, the dungeon hunters acted as scouts.

"Only confirming..."

"Ah, really. Don't think otherwise. Just thinking of that time still makes me angry."

He was referring to Greenwich Observatory. Edward became agitated just thinking of that time.

“What? Didn’t you kill a lot of demons thanks to me?”

"Don't you know how dangerous it was? And you went back to save the demon king? So where is the demon king now?"

"Up there."

Yoo Eun-hye pointed to the sky.

"Yes. He went back to his world. So forget that bastard."

"I've forgotten everything."

"There will be punishment if you are lying."

“Really!”

The two of them started arguing.

Kim Yura laughed. Kim Min-ji had a small smile on her face.

"Even though time has passed, they are still the same."

Kim Min-ji nodded.

No matter how much older or stronger they became, Yoo Eun-hye and Edward remained unchanged. They never backed down and had a firm belief. Kim Yura had a lot of faith in them.

That wasn't all.

Heaven's Will became the world's strongest guild, filled with the best dungeon hunters. They were the last pioneers of the era of the demons. They were named protectors, but those who remained outside the dungeons were merely involved in the confrontation with the creatures.

But Heaven's Will didn't give up. They continued adventuring in the dungeons. If they found treasures then they handed them to those who had fallen on hard times. In addition, all the cores they obtained were used for the development of new energy technologies.

Thanks to that, the world had many energy innovations.

With a little more time, everyone could hopefully see the glory of the past.

Some people expressed concerns. The dungeons changing, the door in the sky... They were anxious about the demons coming back.

Heaven's Will moved to resolve this anxiety. They would be the light of hope to humanity.

So far, they had been completing that role well.

And there was no doubt that they would continue to do well in the future.

‘As long as both of them are here.’

They were the strongest combination. Humanity's strongest Awakened and the closest to the demon king.

Kim Yura and Kim Min-ji were praised as the Saintesses, but they were lacking compared to those two.

At that time, Kim Yura remembered one person.

Demon king. Randolph Brigsiel.

That name still caused fear in Kim Yura's mind. However, she knew that his actions played a major role in saving humanity.

If it wasn't for him, humanity would have perished. As of now, the two of them still hadn't stopped arguing.

“Stop fighting! The creatures will hear you and come flocking!”

Kim Yura exclaimed.

Yoo Eun-hye promptly responded.

"I'd like that!"

“Noona, really, phew!”

Edward shook his head.

The Korean Dungeon Core shone. Originally, it would never have lit up again. The fairy disappeared so the light of the Dungeon Core should have been lost forever.

Yet, it shone.

This meant that the fairy hadn't been destroyed.

I told Chrisley.

"Find out. Even if you need to walk through the whole world.”

I ordered.

According to my command, millions of demons moved. Millions

of demons started to search the world.

A small pond with no name.

The width was 10 metres.

It wasn't shallow or deep. It was just an ordinary pond.

I stood near the pond and stared quietly into the water.

"You were here."

I opened my mouth.

There was a seed of a fairy. It hadn't bloomed yet. A fairy was born when someone gave it a name.

If it wasn't for God's Eyes then I would have walked straight past it. But I was confident about who the fairy seed was.

"Your name is Yihi. Yihi who likes laughing like yihih. It is really important that you laugh in a silly manner."

I carefully reached out and touched the seed.

"You will be the queen of the fairies. Your mission couldn't be completed due to me. The Fairy World controlled by you will be

quite fun.”

I carefully removed my hand.

The seed was in the pond. If it left the pond or the pond disappeared then the seed couldn't bloom. It would disappear forever.

However, it took a very long time for a fairy to bloom from a seed. It wasn't one hundred or two hundred years. It wasn't even one thousand years. Maybe an even longer time was required.

I had to keep this pond safe until then. The pond was too small. The environment didn't seem good either.

I spoke to the person behind me without turning around.

"Move the demon king's castle here. Place my throne closest to the pond."

"I will follow your words. My Demon King."

It was Chrisley. She happily obeyed my command.

I was the demon king. I gained my position by killing Death Bringer. Every word had been turned into a reality. It was the same for moving the demon king's castle.

But time was needed. I looked around and cut down some trees.

A chair made of wood was created. At first glance, it looked like the throne of the demon king. However, the raw material was only wood.

Once I couldn't see any more lumps, I placed the chair next to the pond and sat down.

“Haha!”

I laughed out loud.

“Hahaha!”

Now I had truly achieved my dream.

- End

Extra

Translator's Notes:

It is the end! Thank you for everyone who stuck around to the end. I know that some of you might think the ending is rushed and the author wrote a short note after completing the series explaining this. I will summarize the main parts below.

Author's Notes:

Thank you for reading.

First of all, you will feel that the last part of Dungeon Hunter is somewhat fast. For example, there was a fight scene that ended too quickly. There are some parts that aren't done well so I apologize. Originally, I planned to have 270 chapters but that ended up decreasing by 28 chapters.

My intention to finish the novel was too strong. The hard work and stress took a toll on my body, so I went for a checkup at the hospital. I also didn't have a big stockpile. Once I started to write it all down, I didn't write it well. Just typing on the keyboard caused my heart to beat rapidly and I kept on getting the sweats.

I know it isn't a satisfactory result for everyone, but I am very thankful if you read it in a good way. In my next work, I will try to have more of a stockpile and look after my health.

(TL: Although there are some parts that could have been done better, I still thoroughly enjoyed reading and translating this story.

I hope you did as well.)

An especially large thank you to Jaspaaar, for putting up with my crazy idea of a mass release and rushing to have the chapters ready.